Q & A

Christian Communion in Questions & Answers

This is an authorized free edition from *www.obooko.com*

Q & A

Christian Communion in Questions & Answers

by

Igor Evgen

Last revised on September 26, 2026.
Kindly discard all previous copies of this book.

https://christian498979569.wordpress.com

Q & A

Christian Communion in Questions & Answers

Christian Mind Ministry

https://christian498979569.wordpress.com

The PDF copy of our Q & A Reference book is free to read & download.
No rights reserved so far but those of the Writer to correct & amend this book as appropriate.
The Writer denies any participation with Publishers, who, for whatever reasons, would deviate from the original of this book.

All Scriptures are from *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* unless stated otherwise.
(Kindly refer to *https://bibleprotector.com/index.htm*
& *https://www.jesus-is-savior.com/Bible/KJB/pce.htm* – June 2026.)

The cover – "*Saint Jerome and the Angel*," by Simon Vouet – circa 1622-1625.

Dedication

To my Lord Christ Jesus,

In Whom we have Redemption through His blood,
even the Forgiveness of sins ... (Colossians 1:14)

For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities,
nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth,
nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the Love of GOD,
which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Romans 8:38-39)

The worst thing a book can do for a Christian is to leave him with the impression that he has received from it anything really Good; the best it can do is to point the Way to the Good he is seeking. The function of a good book is to stand like a signpost directing the reader toward the Truth and the Life. That book serves best which early makes itself unnecessary, just as a signpost serves best after it is forgotten, after the traveler has arrived safely at his desired haven. The work of a good book is to incite the reader to moral action, to turn his eyes toward GOD and urge him forward. Beyond that it cannot go.

(A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)

For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. But when that which is Perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away. (1Corinthians 13:9-10)

Contents

The numbers of chapters, their subtitles, the questions.
The parallel chapters, if any, are given in brackets.

1. *Christian Understanding.* Evil. Falsehood.
2. *Christian Understanding.* Honesty. Different sins.
3. *Christian Understanding.* Satan.
4. *Christian Understanding.* The Cross. Atonement.
5. *Christian Understanding.* Religions & denominations.

6. *Christian Living.* Tithes. Prosperity.

7. *Christian Understanding.* The Word. The curse. The Truth.
8. *Christian Understanding.* Hell.
9. *Christian Understanding.* Military. Prophets.
10. *Christian Understanding.* The Works. Dreams. Salvation. The Bible.
11. *Christian Understanding.* Physical sicknesses. GOD's Plan. Witchcraft.
12. *Christian Understanding.* Funeral (426). Blasphemy.

13. *Spirit War.* Foes in a household.

14. *Christian Understanding.* The example of Prayer.

15. *Christian Living.* GOD First. Martial arts.

16. *Bible Study.* Two Covenants. New Heavens & New Earth.
17. *Bible Study.* The New Covenant.
18. *Bible Study.* The Old Covenant. Sin & death.

19. *Christian Living.* Confession – spiritual cleansing. Forgiveness.
20. *Christian Living.* Water Baptism.

21. *Christian Understanding.* Voting (670).

22. *Bible Study.* The Third Commandment. *Genesis Chapter 4*.

23. *Christian Understanding.* Spirit & soul. The Holy Ghost.
24. *Christian Understanding.* The Will of GOD for us (291). Our Prayers.

25. *Christian Understanding.* Writer, what if you are wrong?

26. *Bible Study.* Killing Canaanites. Idolatry. Ukrainian Defense.

27. *Christian Living.* The Widowhood. Church Membership.

28. *Bible Study.* The Word about animals. Creation.
29. *Bible Study.* Mind your approach.

30. *Christian Living.* Preaching Service.
31. *Christian Living.* Speaking the Truth in Love. Holocaust. Charity.
32. *Christian Living.* Communion with GOD. Adultery.

33. *Christian Understanding.* Acts of GOD.

34. *Christian Living.* Confession – Washing feet.
35. *Christian Living.* Holy Communion.

36. *Spirit War.* The power of Satan (688 & 727). Our mind.

37. *Christian Understanding.* Guardian Angels (460). *Revelation 14:10.*

38. *Christian Living.* How to forgive?

39. *Spirit War.* The War outlined.
40. *Spirit War.* Compromise.
41. *Spirit War.* Common sense. *Genesis 29:7-8*.

42. *Christian Living.* The Witness of Confession. *Numbers Chapter 18.*

43. *Bible Study.* The Twelfth Commandment (496 & 685). Hold fast.

44. *Christian Understanding.* Blessings and curses. Repentance. Salvation.
45. *Christian Understanding.* Godparents. Responsibility. Baptism.

46. *Christian Living.* Confession & Confidentiality.
47. *Christian Living.* Small Groups (286, 413, 445, & 595).
48. *Christian Living.* Thanks for the meals. Communion. Science.
49. *Christian Living.* The worldly media (563).

50. *Christian Understanding.* Modern idolatry. Satan. Patriotism. Food.

51. *Christian Understanding.* Dreams. Messages. The Spirit. It is written.
52. *Christian Understanding.* The Knowledge of GOD. Belief & Knowing.
53. *Christian Understanding.* The Peace of GOD (603 & 678). Victory (592).

54. *Christian Living.* Do we need sponsors? Our Songs.

55. *Christian Understanding.* Christian Country.
56. *Christian Understanding.* The Test of Giving.

57. *Bible Study.* The Lord's Prayer – Guidance. Do not worry.

58. *Christian Understanding.* K & U & W. A good person.
59. *Christian Understanding.* The Chosen People of GOD.
60. *Christian Understanding.* A Christian Family. The Science.
61. *Christian Understanding.* Our names. Astrology.
62. *Christian Understanding.* Doctors & medicines. Witchcraft. The Elect.

63. *Christian Living.* Sports.

64. *Christian Understanding.* GOD's Punishment. Healing.

65. *Christian Living.* Baptism in the Holy Spirit.

66. *Christian Understanding.* Threefold Baptism (672).

67. *Bible Study.* Healing Promises. Guidance. Beginning.

68. *Christian Understanding.* The Sacrifice of time. Faith & Salvation.
69. *Christian Understanding.* The Anointing.

70. *Christian Living.* Christian Education. Dating. The Rapture.

71. *Christian Understanding.* Prayer Veil.
72. *Christian Understanding.* Why Parables? Wording.
73. *Christian Understanding.* True Fast (477). Jesus (470). Called & chosen.

74. *Christian Living.* Shall we eat flesh? Marriage.
75. *Christian Living.* Giving Glory to GOD (200).
76. *Christian Living.* Our Cross. Silence.
77. *Christian Living.* The Way of Salvation (308).

78. *Christian Understanding.* The Rod of Correction.

79. *Bible Study.* The Fifth Commandment.
80. *Bible Study.* The Eleventh Commandment.

81. *Christian Understanding.* The devilish healing.

82. *Bible Study.* The days of our years. Personality.
83. *Bible Study.* New Revelations. The Name of the LORD.

84. *Christian Living.* My Church.
85. *Christian Living.* The right education. Little children.
86. *Christian Living.* How to prove what we preach?
87. *Christian Living*. Discipline in the Church. Abuse at home. Friends.

88. *Christian Understanding.* Saint Peter.

89. *Spirit War.* The evil of suicide.

90. *Christian Understanding.* Faithfulness to GOD.

91. *Bible Study.* The Fourth Commandment.

92. *Spirit War.* The evil of depression.

93. *Bible Study.* The First Commandment. Trinity. Image & Likeness (412, 510).
94. *Bible Study.* The Second Commandment. Idolatry.

95. *Christian Understanding.* Capital punishment.

96. *Bible Study.* Throw the first stone (655). Witch. Parents.
97. *Bible Study.* To each his due. The servant.

98. *Christian Living.* Facing divorce. Help.

99. *Spirit War.* A cup of water (668). Fear.

100. *Bible Study*. Tell no man. The Son of GOD.
101. *Bible Study.* Timing.
102. *Bible Study.* The Strategy. The Beginning.
103. *Bible Study.* Avoid errors. Eden.

104. *Bible Study.* The Promised Teacher.
105. *Bible Study.* Evaluation of Scriptures. *Numbers 5:1-4.*
106. *Bible Study.* Feeding our spirit.
107. *Bible Study.* Feeding our soul.

108. *Christian Understanding.* The trinity of a human.
109. *Christian Understanding.* Evil & sin. False Christianity.
110. *Christian Understanding.* Religion & theology.

111. *Bible Study.* The Moses' error (*Numbers 20*). The Lesson of *Numbers 17*.
112. *Bible Study.* The Lord's Prayer – Intercession. Prayer for the enemies.
113. *Bible Study.* The census.
114. *Bible Study.* He carried our sorrows. The days of Jesus. *John 1:1*.
115. *Bible Study.* Poor in spirit. *Numbers 8:17.*
116. *Bible Study.* Pure in heart. Salvation. *Psalm 11*.

117. *Christian Understanding.* The abomination of desolation.

118. *Bible Study.* Different translations. Yeshua or Jesus?
119. *Bible Study.* About "contradictions".
120. *Bible Study.* Animal Sacrifices. The *Book of Judges.*

121. *Christian Living.* How to make Friends? A Seventh Day Adventist.

122. *Bible Study.* Researches.
123. *Bible Study.* Who did sin? What if? Lot's daughters. Wisdom.
124. *Bible Study*. The Prayer for our Unity. The Son of GOD. Heaven.
125. *Bible Study.* The Sixth Commandment. Rapture. Mistake.
126. *Bible Study.* The Seventh Commandment. Gideon.
127. *Bible Study.* The Eighth Commandment.
128. *Bible Study.* Literally or figuratively? Discipleship. The Bread of Life.
129. *Bible Study.* The Ninth Commandment. "Impossible". *Numbers 5:11-31*.
130. *Bible Study.* The Tenth Commandment.

131. *Christian Living.* An executioner (705).

132. *Spirit War.* Tongue.

133. *Christian Understanding.* Saint Thomas (486). Faith vs reason.
134. *Christian Understanding.* Nature (321).
135. *Christian Understanding.* Love & Charity (534). Love of GOD.

136. *Christian Understanding.* Selah & Higgaion.
137. *Christian Understanding.* The number 666. The age of a sinner.
138. *Christian Understanding.* Hope (125).

139. *Christian Living.* Our Teachers. The Right Road.

140. *Bible Study.* Our Father. The Will of GOD.

141. *Spirit War.* The evil of criticism.

142. *Bible Study.* Swear by His Name.

143. *Christian Living.* Obedience to GOD.

144. *Christian Understanding.* Fear of GOD. The Law & Grace (192).

145. *Bible Study.* But I say unto you. *Jude 1:8-9*. End times.
146. *Bible Study*. Resist not evil.

147. *Christian Understanding.* Intuition.

148. *Bible Study.* Verses & Chapters.

149. *Christian Understanding.* Circumcision. Science.
150. *Christian Understanding.* Compassion. Psychopaths. Rapture.
151. *Christian Understanding.* How to seek the LORD? Faith. Prayer.

152. *Bible Study.* The Ark of Covenant.

153. *Christian Understanding.* The Kingdom of Heaven. Love & Obedience.
154. *Christian Understanding.* Soldiers. Patriotism. Sinful thoughts.
155. *Christian Understanding.* Repentance. Unintentional evil.

156. *Bible Study.* The Prayer of Repentance.
157. *Bible Study.* The Feasts. *Leviticus 22:9-11*.

158. *Christian Understanding.* Freedom.

159. *Bible Study.* Seamen. Satan.

160. *Christian Living.* Church Rules. Tattoos.

161. *Bible Study.* Jewish Creed. A House of Prayer.
162. *Bible Study.* Patching up (240). The voice of conscience.

163. *Christian Understanding.* National Repentance.

164. *Christian Living.* Parents.

165. *Christian Understanding.* Saint John the Baptist.
166. *Bible Study.* The Wisdom of GOD (613). Jesus' ancestry.

167. *Spirit War.* How to fight death?

168. *Bible Study.* Shalom.
169. *Bible Study.* The Twelfth Apostle.

170. *Christian Understanding.* Shall we cast a lot?
171. *Christian Understanding.* The spiritual starvation (734). Spiritual beings.

172. *Spirit War.* How to fight fear?

173. *Bible Study.* The Garment of Righteousness.

174. *Christian Living.* Preach Sobriety & Healthy Life.

175. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Ten Virgins. Our Prayers.

176. *Spirit War.* The evil of pride. Defining.

177. *Christian Understanding.* Truth and lie. Atheism. Faithful GOD. Destiny.

178. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Mustard Seed (214). *Amos 9:13*.

179. *Christian Living.* Praying in tongues unknown.
180. *Christian Living.* The Gift of Prophecy.

181. *Christian Understanding.* The Voice of GOD. How to find GOD?

182. *Spirit War.* Sexual perversions. Sin and the Church.

183. *Bible Study.* The Lord's Prayer – Healing.

184. S*pirit War.* Temptations. The War explained.

185. *Bible Study.* The Law & Love. Love & Sacrifice.
186. *Bible Study. Romans, Chapter 3*.
187. *Bible Study.* The Law of sin & death. Adultery.
188. *Bible Study.* The Law of the strength of sin.
189. *Bible Study.* The Law of the Knowledge of sin.
190. *Bible Study.* The Law of the curse.

191. *Christian Understanding.* Patience.

192. *Bible Study.* The Law & Grace (322).

193. *Spirit War.* Fight revenge.

194. *Christian Understanding.* The Answer or coincidence?

195. *Spirit War.* Fight self-pity. The fear of death.

196. *Bible Study. Romans, Chapter 7*. *2Peter 2:20-22*.

197. *Spirit War.* Fight shame (635).

198. *Bible Study.* The Power of the Law.

199. *Christian Living.* Evangelizing.

200. *Christian Understanding.* The Praise of GOD (75).
201. *Christian Understanding.* Shall we fear people's envy?

202. *Bible Study.* The lie punished.
203. *Bible Study.* The Parable of a Barren Fig Tree.
204. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Evil Tenants.
205. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Good Samaritan.
206. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Good Shepherd. GOD's Judgment.
207. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Great Supper.
208. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Harvest Time.
209. *Bible Study.* The Parable of the House on the Rock.
210. *Bible Study.* The Parables of Tower Builder & King at War.
211. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Laborers in Vineyard. Servants. (700)

212. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Leaven. Reward. The Holy Spirit.
213. *Bible Study.* The Parables of Lost Coin & Lost Sheep.
214. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Mustard Seed (178). Spiritual growth. Repent.
215. *Bible Study.* The Parable of the Net. Freedom from sin.
216. *Bible Study.* The Parable of the Pearl.
217. *Bible Study.* The Parable of the Persistent Widow.
218. *Bible Study.* The Parable of a Friend at Midnight. The Test.
219. *Bible Study.* The Parable of a Pharisee & a Tax Collector.
220. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Prodigal Son.
221. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Rich Fool. The Way of Giving.
222. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Rich Man and Lazarus.
223. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Talents.
224. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Sheep & Goats.
225. *Bible Study.* The Parable of a Sower. The Example.
226. *Bible Study.* The Parables of Hidden Treasure & Pearl.
227. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Unjust Steward.
228. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Unmerciful Servant. Capitalism.
229. *Bible Study.* The Parable of the Wedding Feast.
230. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Wheat and Weeds. Apocrypha.

231. *Christian Understanding.* The Lesson of Ananias & Sapphira. Disciple.
232. *Christian Understanding.* Our Prayer Backup (619).
233. *Christian Understanding.* Meeting the tornado.
234. *Christian Understanding.* Who can read our mind?

235. *Christian Living.* Our scars. Intersex.
236. *Christian Living.* Preaching in the Spirit.

237. *Christian Understanding.* Word – Hearing – Faith (687). God Son.

238. *Bible Study.* The Lord's Prayer – Thy Kingdom come (677).
239. *Bible Study.* Seek His Face. Anxiety.

240. *Christian Understanding.* Patching up (162).

241. *Bible Study.* The Salt. Do not resist evil.

242. *Christian Living.* Switching Congregations.

243. *Bible Study.* Paradise today.
244. *Bible Study.* The Transfiguration. Signs & Miracles.

245. *Spirit War.* The evil of complacency. Fallen angels.

246. *Christian Understanding.* Why do people sleep? Resurrection.
247. *Christian Understanding.* The Narrow Way to Strait Gate. Antisemitism.
248. *Christian Understanding.* An oath on the Balance.

249. *Bible Study.* Who was cruel?
250. *Bible Study.* We shall all be changed. Heaven.

251. *Spirit War.* Hatred & murder (605).

252. *Bible Study.* The Lord's Prayer – *deliver us from evil*. The Ark.
253. *Bible Study.* The Prayer o' Faith. Resurrections.

254. *The unbelievers ask:* Healing. Faith. Knowledge. Unbelief.
255. *The unbelievers ask:* Slavery. Disagreements. Prayers. GOD. What if?
256. *The unbelievers ask:* The rich. Intelligence. Eschatology. Big Bang.
257. *The unbelievers ask:* Cancer & aids. Giants. Free will & Creation.
258. *The unbelievers ask:* Which edition is the Word of GOD? Genocide.
259. *The unbelievers ask:* Christians images. Existence. The Earth.
260. *The unbelievers ask:* The Words, *I will kill her children.* Sufferings.
261. *The unbelievers ask:* Allegories. Aliens. Politics. Christian. Abraham.
262. *The unbelievers ask:* The false accusation. Ignorance.
263. *The unbelievers ask:* GOD's Forgiveness. Christians & Jesus.
264. *The unbelievers ask:* The Living Water. A crowd. Jesus & you. Criticism.
265. *The unbelievers ask: He shall be called a Nazarene.* History. Sin. Faith.
266. *The unbelievers ask:* Justice. Heathen. A non-Christian.
267. *The unbelievers ask: Matthew 27.* A guess. Truth. The Second Coming.
268. *The unbelievers ask:* Adam & Eve. Free will. Pagans.
269. *The unbelievers ask:* Why pray? Our GOD.
270. *The unbelievers ask:* Doing Greater Works. Signs. Knowledge. Satan.
271. *The unbelievers ask:* Prayer. Communion. Family. Message. Vulgarity.
272. *The unbelievers ask:* Believing falsehoods. Rationality.
273. *The unbelievers ask:* The Law. Prophecies. The Bible. Saint Mary. Humans.
274. *The unbelievers ask:* Common sense. The Power.
275. *The unbelievers ask:* The End of the World. The Sacrifice (520).
276. *The unbelievers ask:* Miracles today. Your child. Science. King. Torture.
277. *The unbelievers ask:* Our soul. A sinful attitude and Repentance.
278. *The unbelievers ask:* GOD. *Numbers 16*. Mercy. A Mass & Eucharist.
279. *The unbelievers ask:* Salvation. Science. The Name. Prayer. False beliefs.

280. *The unbelievers ask:* Humans. “Moral robots.” Angels, demons. Satan.
281. *The unbelievers ask:* GOD and we. Trusting the Bible. Creation. Jesus.
282. *The unbelievers ask:* Almighty. Christianity. Argument. The lost. Rules.

283. *Christian Understanding.* Growing of Local Churches.

284. *Bible Study.* The Lord’s Prayer – Our daily Bread.

285. *Christian Understanding.* Donations.

286. *Christian Living.* Small Groups (47, 413, 445, & 595). Friends.

287. *Bible Study.* We are not of the world. *Matthew 23:8-10*. Marriage.

288. *Christian Understanding.* Christians first. OCD.
289. *Christian Understanding.* The origin of predators.

290. *Christian Living.* Science. Interpretations.

291. *Bible Study.* Following the Will of GOD (24).

292. *Christian Living.* Fellowship with GOD. GOD’s Provision. Faithfulness.

293. *Spirit War.* The evil of anger. The devil.
294. *Spirit War.* The evil of drugs.
295. *Spirit War.* The evil of laziness.
296. S*pirit War.* The evil of poverty.
297. *Spirit War.* The evil of corruption.
298. S*pirit War.* The evil of blasphemy (492). Gambling.
299. *Spirit War.* The evil of cruelty.
300. *Spirit War.* The evil of wars.

301. *Christian Understanding.* Amen.

302. *Bible Study. ... a time & times & the dividing of time ...*
303. *Bible Study.* The tower & city of Babel.
304. *Bible Study.* Be not called *Rabbi*.

305. *Christian Understanding.* Eternity (573). Children.

306. *Christian Living.* My cats.

307. *Christian Understanding.* Heavenly Love. The Heaven.

308. *Bible Study.* Salvation (77).
309. *Bible Study.* Our failures confessed.
310. *Bible Study.* Fire Baptism.

311. *Spirit War.* The evil of emptiness. Experience.

312. *Christian Understanding.* Our spiritual Authority (36 & 313).
313. *Christian Understanding.* The Irrevocable Authority (36 & 312).
314. *Christian Understanding.* A Cheerful Giver.

315. *Bible Study.* The Understanding & Christian Living.

316. *Christian Living.* Baptism in the Name of Jesus.

317. *Christian Understanding.* A New Creature. *Footprints*. Sin. Death.
318. *Christian Understanding.* Sorrows Godly and worldly. Repentance.

319. *Christian Living.* The Beginning. Virginity. Repentance.

320. *Christian Understanding.* The Perfect Justice (697). Omnipotence.

321. *Christian Living.* Our environment (134).

322. *Christian Understanding.* Grace (192).

323. *Bible Study.* Pray for the Peace of Jerusalem.

324. *Christian Understanding.* Normal & paranormal. Saints.

325. *Bible Study.* The Law & the Cross.
326. *Bible Study.* A confounded language. Pride.
327. *Bible Study.* The Measure of Faith.

328. *The unbelievers ask:* Earth. Jews & Muslims. Justice. Worldview. Bible.
329. *The unbelievers ask:* The Order of Creation. Satan. Intercessions.
330. *The unbelievers ask:* GOD & Creation. Holiness. Repentance. Perfection.
331. *The unbelievers ask:* Sabbath. Satan. Cancer. Universe. Hell. Jesus. Faith.
332. *The unbelievers ask:* Temptation. Five questions. Patriotism.

333. *The unbelievers ask:* A talking snake. Knowing GOD.
334. *The unbelievers ask:* Ark builders. Wrath vs anger. Treasures. Jesus.
335. *The unbelievers ask:* Animals in the ark. The Bible.
336. *The unbelievers ask:* Flood. Happiness. Sophism. Education. Good person.
337. *The unbelievers ask:* With GOD on speaking terms. Punishment.
338. *The unbelievers ask:* Survival. A Prayer for a non-Christian.
339. *The unbelievers ask:* Populating. Prayer. Justice. Sin. The Commandment.
340. *The unbelievers ask:* Righteous Noah. Misogyny. Teens. Memory. Cloning.
341. *The unbelievers ask:* GOD. Promised Land. Satan.

342. "*Contradictions*". Grace Ambassadors.
343. "*Contradictions*". The Gospel. The Cross. The Kingdom.
344. "*Contradictions*". The Cross Glorious & the cross shameful.
345. "*Contradictions*". Was the Gospel made known or kept secret?
346. "*Contradictions*". Did the Twelve understand the Gospel or not?
347. "*Contradictions*". The Gospel of the Kingdom or of Grace?
348. "*Contradictions*". Justification & Works. Faith & Works. Sabbath.
349. "*Contradictions*". The blood of Christ. The Power of GOD.
350. "*Contradictions*". Do Animal Sacrifices atone for sins?
351. "*Contradictions*". Sins. Jesus & Job. *Ecclesiastes 9.*
352. "*Contradictions*". Works of Righteousness. Earth.
353. "*Contradictions*". Is Salvation of Works or not?
354. "*Contradictions*". Father Abraham. *American Atheists*.
355. "*Contradictions*". How are sins forgiven?
356. "*Contradictions*". Is Forgiveness Conditional or not? Seeing GOD.
357. "*Contradictions*". Does Grace abound or is there an unforgivable sin?
358. "*Contradictions*". Gospel, Faith, Repentance, Baptism. *An eye for an eye*.
359. "*Contradictions*". Peace with GOD. Circumcision.
360. "*Contradictions*". Are we sent to baptize?
361. "*Contradictions*". Does the Gospel include Water Baptism? Or more?
362. "*Contradictions*". Go to 'all men' or just to Israel? Incest.
363. "Contradictions". What should the Disciples carry?
364. "*Contradictions*". Should the Disciples go to all nations?
365. "*Contradictions*". Water Baptism. The story of Job.
366. "*Contradictions*". Witnessing spiritual things.
367. "*Contradictions*". A sword and the Sword of Holy Spirit. Human sacrifice.
368. "*Contradictions*". The Utterance of the Holy Spirit. The End of the World.
369. "*Contradictions*". Peter & Paul. The lifestyle.
370. "*Contradictions*". How do we know what to say and believe?
371. "*Contradictions*". The Law. The Sabbath. The Circumcision.
372. "*Contradictions*". The Law and Righteousness.

373. *"Contradictions"*. The Power of the Law & Giving.
374. *"Contradictions"*. Should Sabbath be enforced?
375. *"Contradictions"*. The Liberty. The Law. The Temple.
376. *"Contradictions"*. Abominations. Our Security in Christ. Punishing sins.
377. *"Contradictions"*. Jew & Gentile. The Timing of GOD.
378. *"Contradictions"*. The Salvation of Jews and Gentiles.
379. *"Contradictions"*. Preaching the Gospel. Throne & Audience. Temptations.
380. *"Contradictions"*. One Body of Christ. Spiritual Adoption.
381. *"Contradictions"*. Jesus' Ministry & Paul's Ministry. Mutual Faith.
382. *"Contradictions"*. The Mysteries Revealed. The Plans of GOD. Sin.
383. *"Contradictions"*. Was the Work of Jesus prophesied or kept hidden?
384. *"Contradictions"*. Can we understand the things GOD has prepared?
385. *"Contradictions"*. Personal Responsibility. Receiving the Holy Spirit.
386. *"Contradictions"*. The Wrath. The Rapture. Plowshares & Swords.
387. *"Contradictions"*. Do we need to confess sins to get Forgiveness?
388. *"Contradictions"*. Should we eat flesh and what flesh to eat?
389. *"Contradictions"*. Are we to keep Unity? To be like ants or ravens?
390. *"Contradictions"*. Should we work? Should we provide for our family?
391. *"Contradictions"*. Our Judgment. Ministry & work.
392. *"Contradictions"*. Widows. Does the Spirit stay when we do wrong?
393. *"Contradictions"*. Do we need a Teacher?
394. *"Contradictions"*. Peace of GOD. Jews. Our Spiritual Inheritance.
395. *"Contradictions"*. Second Coming of Christ. Dominion. Blessings. Priority.
396. *"Contradictions"*. The Atonement. Grace. Heavenly Reign. Resurrection.
397. *"Contradictions"*. How to pray to be answered. The Bible.
398. *"Contradictions"*. GOD's Answer to a Prayer. The Healing Power of GOD.
399. *"Contradictions"*. The Creation. Jerusalem Saints. Know the LORD.
400. *"Contradictions"*. The greater Love. The Water & the Spirit.
401. *"Contradictions"*. Angels being taught. Stumbling Stone & Cornerstone.

402. *Bible Study.* The number 153.

403. *Christian Understanding.* Idolatry. Afterlife.

404. *Bible Study.* A sound heart vs envy.

405. *Christian Living.* Confessing crimes. Protests & protesters.
406. *Christian Living.* Meeting the past.

407. *Bible Study.* Be cold or hot.
408. *Bible Study.* The number 144,000. War in Heaven.

409. *Christian Living.* Confession – here I am to help.
410. *Christian Living.* What should we do for our countries?

411. *Bible Study.* Let GOD be True, but every man a liar. Warriors.

412. *Christian Understanding.* The Image & Likeness (93, 510). Justification.

413. *Christian Living.* Small Groups (47, 286, 445, & 595).
414. *Christian Living.* Prayer. Right approach. Reason. Fast. Sacrifice.

415. *Christian Understanding.* In Promised Name of Jesus (577).

416. *Bible Study.* Give Bread & Water.
417. *Bible Study.* A man that wandereth from his place.
418. *Bible Study.* King's heart. *Exodus 21:20-21*.
419. *Bible Study*. The Food convenient. *Genesis 22* & *Judges 11*. Hypothesis.
420. *Bible Study.* The World in their heart. Live by Faith.
421. *Bible Study.* He teacheth my hands to war.

422. *Christian Understanding*. Catholicism & Orthodoxy.
423. *Christian Understanding.* "Witnesses" & Mormons.

424. *Bible Study.* The sacrifice of fools.

425. *Christian Living.* Church & Family.

426. *Bible Study.* The house of mourning (12).
427. *Bible Study.* The outward change.
428. *Bible Study*. A Wise man's heart.
429. *Bible Study.* In the place where the tree falleth.
430. *Bible Study. Ecclesiastes*. Honesty.
431. *Bible Study*. For a Memorial of her.
432. *Bible Study.* Healing Ministry. A brazen serpent (*Numbers 21:7-9*).
433. *Bible Study. The Song of Solomon.* The Image & Likeness of GOD.
434. *Bible Study.* Salt & Light (435).
435. *Bible Study.* The Light of GOD (434).

436. *Christian Living.* The Shepherds (637).

437. *Bible Study.* The Parable of Vineyard. *Chapter 25* of *Numbers.*

438. *Spirit War*. The evil power named *mammon*.

439. *Christian Living*. For all that are in Authority.

440. *Bible Study*. The Tree of knowledge of good and evil.
441. *Bible Study*. I make Peace and create evil. Divine Jealousy.

442. *Christian Understandin*g. The Life in scorn of consequences.
443. *Christian Understandin*g. The Prophecies of Isaiah.

444. *Spirit War*. Our Spiritual Weapons.

445. *Christian Living*. Small Groups (47, 286, 413, & 595).
446. *Christian Living*. Children in the Church. Family.

447. *Christian Understanding*. Righteousness vs self-righteousness.

448. *Bible Study*. The Parable of Two Sons.

449. *Christian Understanding*. Seventy years of a curse.

450. *Bible Study.* Spiritual Violence (451).
451. *Bible Study.* Reading commentaries (450).

452. *Christian Understanding.* Love and lust. The Wife. The Life.

453. *Christian Living.* To open a business and stay Christian.

454. *Christian Understanding.* Christian movies.

455. *Bible Study.* A Cornerstone in Zion.
456. *Bible Study. Isaiah Chapter 29*. *Numbers Chapter 35*.
457. *Bible Study. Isaiah Chapter 30*.

458. *Christian Understanding.* Our Christian Virtues. Prayer.
459. *Christian Understanding.* The Holy Trinity of GOD.
460. *Christian Understanding.* Holy Angels of GOD (37).

461. *Christian Living.* Discover your Ministry. Focused on GOD.
462. *Christian Living.* Monasticism.

463. *Bible Study*. The dangerous relaxation. *Numbers 6:1-4.*
464. *Bible Study*. The Voice in the wilderness (466). Modern Bible.

465. *Christian Living*. A Prayer Team. The Answer from GOD.

466. *Bible Study*. The Voice in the wilderness (464). *Matthew 7:21-23*.

467. *Christian Livin*g. Can Sisters preach in Churches?

468. *Bible Stud*y. From Faith to Love.

469. *Christian Living*. The Words of Consolation. Cremation.

470. *Bible Study.* By Prayer & Fasting (24 & 524).
471. *Bible Study*. Jacob & Israel. Wrestling with GOD.
472. *Bible Study*. GOD's Punishment exemplified. The hardened heart.
473. *Bible Study*. Peter & Paul, the Apostles of Christ. Heaven.

474. *Christian Understanding.* The incomparable Parables.

475. *Bible Study*. *Isaiah Chapter 53. Genesis 3:19.*
476. *Bible Study*. Seeing spiritual things. *Deuteronomy Chapter 12.*
477. *Bible Study*. *Isaiah 58:6-14* (73).

478. *Christian Understanding*. The Silence of GOD. The Presence of GOD.

479. *Christian Living*. Counseling Ministry.

480. *Bible Study*. The doors of our heart.
481. *Bible Study*. The Word to be fulfilled in us.
482. *Bible Study*. *Isaiah, Chapter 62*. *3John 1:2.*
483. *Bible Study*. Our Right Standing in action. Heretics.

484. *Christian Living*. Staying where we are.
485. *Christian Living*. My Prayer (486).

486. *Christian Understanding*. Faith & Trust. Faith & evidence (133).

487. *Christian Living*. Doctor's orders. Covid mask.
488. *Christian Living*. The ideal Congregation. People mentally challenged.

489. *Bible Study*. The Victory of our GOD.
490. *Bible Study.* Those who transgressed against GOD.

491. *Spirit War*. Satanic mess.

492. *Christian Understanding*. The evil of blasphemy (298).
493. *Christian Understanding.* Cruel children. Crash the curse.

494. *Spirit War.* Spam & spammers.

495. *Christian Living*. The Ministry of Adoption.
496. *Christian Living*. Following the Commandment (43 & 685). Friends.

497. *Spirit War*. Evil spirits & their weapons.

498. *Bible Study.* The Cost of Discipleship (679).

499. *Christian Living.* Christian Home.

500. *Christian Understanding*. Saint Melchizedek.

501. *Christian Living.* Smoking & smokers.
502. *Christian Living.* To a man of Authority.

503. *Christian Understanding.* The Harvest Law (508).
504. *Christian Understanding.* Giving & Receiving.

505. *Christian Living.* Grandparents (606).
506. *Christian Living.* Back to Father GOD.

507. *Christian Understanding.* Predestination (732).
508. *Christian Understanding.* The Harvest Law (503). Child abuse.

509. *Christian Living.* One lost sheep.

510. *Christian Understanding.* Image & Likeness (412). Spirit & soul. Creation.

511. *Christian Living.* Registration of the Church. Who depends on whom.

512. *Bible Study.* The spirits in prison. GOD in *Genesis 1:26.* Creation.

513. *Christian Living.* Christians vs poverty (744). Taxes. Earrings.

514. *Christian Understanding.* The Holy Bible. The Universe & the Earth.

515. *Bible Study*. *Romans 11:11-32*.

516. *Christian Understanding*. The Everlasting Covenant. Free will.

517. *Christian Living.* Excommunication.

518. *Bible Study. Jeremiah, Chapter 10*. The Perfected Praise.
519. *Bible Study*. *Ecclesiastes 3:1-8*.
520. *Bible Study.* The Ultimate Price (720 & 740).
521. *Bible Study*. *Jeremiah 13:1-9*. To be Sober & Vigilant (*1Peter 5:8*).

522. *Christian Understanding.* Conscience.

523. *Bible Study*. *Jeremiah Chapter 14*. Our Holiness.
524. *Bible Study*. *Luke 10:1-12* (470). Reconciliation.

525. *Christian Understanding.* To get the Answer.
526. *Christian Understanding.* Scriptural interconnections.

527. *Bible Study. Jeremiah, Chapter 17*.

528. *Christian Understanding.* Testing all things. A Prophecy and death.
529. *Christian Understanding.* The Holy Will of GOD. Revelation.

530. *Spirit War.* The real enemy. A Family.

531. *Christian Understanding.* Our Congregational Unity.
532. *Christian Understanding.* Who perishes and who doesn't. Aborted babies.
533. *Christian Understanding.* Strangers.

534. *Bible Study. 1Corinthians, Chapter 13* (135).
535. *Bible Study*. The Judgment of GOD.
536. *Bible Study. 1Corinthians, Chapter 7*.

537. *Christian Understanding.* A second chance. A door. Grace. Worship. Tattoo.
538. *Christian Understanding.* Our Covenant with GOD.

539. *Christian Understanding*. Freedom and slavery.
540. *Christian Understanding.* A Wife. Prosperity. Perfection.

541. *Bible Study.* Wise men (598).

542. *Christian Living.* Employment.

543. *Christian Understanding.* Avoid the curse.

544. *Christian Living.* Our Dress Code (780).
545. *Christian Living.* Breaking up the burden of debts.
546. *Christian Living.* Be neither creditors nor debtors.

547. *Spirit War.* Superstitions.

548. *Bible Study. Ezekiel, Chapter 3*.

549. *Christian Living.* Peace in a Christian Family. “Ultimatum”.

550. *Christian Understanding.* Two New Commandments. *Sola Scriptura*.

551. *Bible Stud*y. Spirit Bread vs spirit poison. *Genesis*.
552. *Bible Study.* And they shall know that I am the LORD. *Numbers 22-24.*
553. *Bible Study.* The Vision of the Glory of GOD.
554. *Bible Study.* The idolatry in the Holy Temple. Gambling.
555. *Bible Study.* The Remnant of GOD.

556. *Christian Living.* Our Christian Testimony.

557. *Christian Understanding.* Faith & Hope. Christian Faith.

558. *Bible Study. Ezekiel, Chapter 19*. To humble indeed.
559. *Bible Study. Ezekiel, Chapter 20*. Spiritual captivity got captive.
560. *Bible Study.* Why Onan was found wrong? Slavery or Freedom?

561. *Christian Understanding.* The Love of GOD (732). His Appearance.

562. *Christian Living*. Communicating with animals & plants. Cats & grass.
563. *Christian Living.* The worldly media (49).

564. *Christian Understanding.* The Prophecies of Ezekiel.

565. *Christian Understanding*. The Watchman.

566. *Bible Study.* Gog & Magog defined (567 & 718).
567. *Bible Study*. Gog & Magog exemplified (566 & 718). The Four Horsemen.

568. *Christian Understanding*. The age of our Earth.

569. *Bible Study*. *The Lamentations*. *Leviticus 21:1-4.*

570. *Christian Understanding.* Our Christian Courage.

571. *Christian Living*. Fighting the shameful past.

572. *Christian Understanding*. Departing from GOD. Adultery and fornication.
573. *Christian Understanding.* Eternity (305). Education.

574. *Bible Study*. *Daniel, Chapter 7*.
575. *Bible Study*. *Daniel, Chapter 8*.
576. *Bible Study. Daniel, Chapter 11*.

577. *Christian Understanding.* The Promised Name *Jesus* (415).
578. *Christian Understanding.* Definitions. Implementation.

579. *Bible Study.* What happened to Jerusalem?
580. *Bible Study.* The Spirit of the Word of GOD.

581. *Christian Living.* Our Christian Unity.

582. *Christian Understanding.* The Spirit of Unity.
583. *Christian Understanding.* A letter of the Law.

584. *Bible Study. The Book of Joel*.
585. *Bible Study.* GOD and Time (621). GOD and Satan.
586. *Bible Study.* The Prophecy of Micah. *Leviticus 19:19.*
587. *Bible Study.* The Books of *Jonah* & *Nahum* compared. *Numbers 19*.

588. *Christian Understanding.* The pentagram and hexagram. A Wife.

589. *Spirit War.* The evil of alcoholism.
590. *Spirit War*. The evil of pornography. You can stop it.

591. *Bible Study.* Our priorities. Liars.
592. *Bible Study.* The Four Carpenters (53).

593. *Christian Living.* Our communications. Sinful attitude.

594. *Bible Study. Zechariah, Chapters 5 & 6*. Man & Woman.

595. *Christian Living.* A Group Leader (47, 286, 413, & 445).
596. *Christian Living.* You are not alone. A Career.

597. *Bible Study.* Why *every family apart*?
598. *Bible Study.* The Wise men (541). The Bible.
599. *Bible Study.* The Children of Abraham.
600. *Bible Study.* Jesus' Baptism. The Birth of Christ.
601. *Bible Study.* Jesus' Testing & Training. The temptations.
602. *Bible Study.* Mournful & Meek. Divine Knowledge.
603. *Bible Study.* Persecutions. The Peace of GOD (53 & 678).
604. *Bible Study.* The level of Righteousness.

605. *Spirit War.* Anger & criticism (141, 251, & 293).

606. *Christian Living.* Grandparents (505). A Family.

607. *Bible Study.* The Word against the false glory. Israel.

608. *Christian Living.* Confession outlined. A Prophecy.
609. *Christian Living.* Common Confession. A Christian Fight.
610. *Christian Living.* The Golden Rule. Singing to GOD.

611. *Bible Study.* Following Christ. The Book. A Godly Marriage.
612. *Bible Study.* Willing to hear.
613. *Bible Study.* The Wisdom of GOD (166). Jesus.
614. *Bible Study.* What's easier for you to say? Diseases.

615. *Christian Living.* Stay focused on the Word. Dating. The devil.

616. *Bible Study.* The Living Ministry.
617. *Bible Study.* The Right Parallels. *Matthew 7:6*.
618. *Bible Study.* The Harvest and the Laborers. Serpents & doves.
619. *Bible Study.* Our Prayer Backup (232). Omniscient GOD.

620. *Christian Living.* Gathering and scattering. Morality.

621. *Christian Understanding.* GOD and Time (585). GOD's Patience.

622. *Bible Study.* Forgiven or not? Now is the day.
623. *Bible Study.* The Justice. Women. Flood. The Communion.
624. *Bible Study.* Things new & old. Love and pride.
625. *Bible Study.* Our parents.

626. *Christian Understanding.* Responsibility. Leaders.

627. *Bible Study.* The Church upon the Rock.
628. *Bible Study.* The unique Words. Wine. Stars. Animals.
629. *Bible Study.* The "*deep secrets*" of Satan. Leviathan.
630. *Bible Study. Mark 2:3-12*. Omnipotence.
631. *Bible Study.* The false worship.
632. *Bible Study.* Why were they offended? Jews.
633. *Bible Study.* The physical & spiritual hygiene. Murder.

634. *Spirit War.* The leaven of Satan. Denominations.

635. *Christian Understanding.* The open shame (197). The Cross.
636. *Christian Understanding.* Salted with Fire. Learning. Sin.
637. *Christian Understanding.* The Shepherds (436). *Evangelio*.

638. *Bible Study.* The curse on a fig tree.

639. *Christian Living.* The Holy Temple. Divorce. Teens and perversions.

640. *Christian Understanding.* Our spirit.

641. *Bible Study.* The Sign of spiritual darkness. A second chance.

642. *The unbelievers ask:* Religion. GOD's Justice. Science. Infant. Faith.
643. *The unbelievers ask:* Communion (32). Sex. Worship. Jesus. Miracles.
644. *The unbelievers ask:* Morality (661 & 710).
645. *The unbelievers ask:* The Characteristics of GOD. Conversion.
646. *The unbelievers ask:* The Bible. GOD & Time. Satan. *Exodus 4:24-2*.
647. *The unbelievers ask:* Religious conversion. Christianity. The Tree (440).
648. *The unbelievers ask:* Miracles. GOD's Punishment.
649. *The unbelievers ask:* Hell (8). Disagreements. The Holy Ghost.

650. *The unbelievers ask:* The Promises. The Bible. GOD. Punishment.
651. *The unbelievers ask:* GOD's Control.
652. *The unbelievers ask:* The things "impossible".
653. *The unbelievers ask:* GOD. Disasters. Child. Faith. Account. Hypothesis.

654. *Bible Study.* The Sword "It Is Written ..." Worship GOD.

655. *"Contradictions". Leviticus* & *John* (96). Nazareth & Bethlehem.

656. *The unbelievers ask:* A Christian in practice. Truth.
657. *The unbelievers ask:* Faith questions. Suffering. GOD.

658. *Christian Living.* Usury & loan. Music & songs.
659. *Christian Living.* Speaking by actions. A Godly Woman.

660. *The unbelievers ask:* Transhumanism. Hell (8).
661. *The unbelievers ask:* Morality (644 & 710). Evolution. Religion.

662. *Christian Understanding.* Satan's plans.

663. *The unbelievers ask:* World. A proof. Humanity. A person. The Bible.

664. *Christian Understanding.* The destiny of liars.
665. *Christian Understanding.* The "New Perspective on Paul".
666. *Christian Understanding.* The Promised Messiah (691). Geography.

667. *The unbelievers ask:* The credibility of the Bible. Video games. Jesus.

668. *Christian Living.* Confessing Christ (99). Birth control.

669. *Christian Understanding.* Our Meditation.
670. *Christian Understanding.* A scarecrow of anarchy (21).

671. *Bible Study.* Jesus vs hell. Prophecies about Jesus.
672. *Bible Study.* Threefold Baptism (66).
673. *Bible Study.* Our Repentance and Timing of GOD. Sufferings.
674. *Bible Study.* The shut Door. Hebrew & Greek.
675. *Bible Study.* The *abomination in the Sight of GOD*. *Anathema Maran-atha.*

676. *Christian Living.* Build on Godly Foundation.

677. *Christian Understanding.* The Kingdom within (238). Judgment. Glory.

678. *Bible Study.* The Peace of GOD (53 & 603).
679. *Bible Study.* Our Christian Discipleship (498).

680. *Christian Understanding.* The lost Salvation (77).

681. *Christian Living.* 44 questions (682, 715, & 716).
682. *Christian Living.* 44 questions continued (681).

683. *Christian Understanding.* Judas Iscariot.

684. *Bible Study.* The Bread of Life (*John 6:32-58*). Our Children.

685. *Christian Understanding.* Our Great Commission (43 & 496).

686. *Bible Study.* The Glory in Enlightenment. Pentateuch.

687. *Christian Understanding.* Spiritual hunger & thirst (237).
688. *Christian Understanding.* The crushed enemy (36 & 727).
689. *Christian Understanding.* Study or reading?

690. *Bible Study.* The Lord's Prayer – Summary. Triune GOD.
691. *Bible Study.* The Name Most Holy (22). Lord Jesus (666).

692. *Christian Understanding.* The Bible.
693. *Christian Understanding.* The Bible. The Prayer. The Church.
694. *Christian Understanding.* The Church. Serving. Christian Living.
695. *Christian Understanding.* Christian Living.
696. *Christian Understanding.* Ignorance.
697. *Christian Understanding.* GOD's Perfect Justice (320).

698. *Bible Study.* Abomination (*Proverbs 6:16-19*).
699. *Bible Study.* Purification (*Leviticus 12:1-8*). Customs (*Leviticus 19:26-28*).

700. *The unbelievers ask:* Is slavery justified by GOD? (211)
701. *The unbelievers ask:* The hard Way. The alleged intelligence.
702. *The unbelievers ask:* The wrong thinking & doing. Prayer & Faith. GOD.
703. *The unbelievers ask:* Our human value. Grace vs sins.
704. *The unbelievers ask:* Prayer. "Contradiction". Ten plagues. Animals. Bible.
705. *The unbelievers ask:* An executioner (131).

706. *The unbelievers ask:* Suffering. Justice and injustice.

707. *Christian Understanding.* Life and afterlife.

708. *The unbelievers ask:* Theology and civility. Death.
709. *The unbelievers ask:* The Design of GOD. Neanderthals.
710. *The unbelievers ask:* Legality and morality (644 & 661). Freedom.

711. *Christian Understanding.* Separating the goats. We are not alone.

712. *Christian Living.* The synagogue of Satan.

713. *The unbelievers ask:* The “big bang” theory.
714. *The unbelievers ask:* Faith & Righteousness. Repentance. Free will. Cross.

715. *Christian Understanding.* Conversation (681, 682, & 716). Innocence.
716. *Christian Understanding.* Conversation (681, 682, & 715). Consciousness.

717. *Christian Living.* Christian Marriage. A Prayer.

718. *Christian Understanding.* Gog & Magog (566 & 567). GOD’s Control.

719. *The unbelievers ask:* GOD’s Voice. The Comfort on deathbed.
720. *The unbelievers ask:* The Ultimate Price (520 & 740). Healing.

721. *Christian Understanding.* They never knew GOD. The second death.
722. *Christian Understanding.* What if?
723. *Christian Understanding.* An interpretation. Repentance.

724. *Christian Living.* A Local Church. Relationship with GOD. Children.

725. *Christian Understanding.* Sodom & Gomorrah. The Blood of Christ.

726. *The unbelievers ask:* The Bible. Cruelty. Presuppositions. Cancer. Crime.

727. *Christian Understanding.* The power of Satan (36 & 688).

728. *The unbelievers ask:* The Bible. Money. A temptation. Forgiveness.

729. *Christian Understanding.* Living a “perfect life”.

730. *The unbelievers ask:* Jesus. Witchcraft. A Prayer. Evil. The Knowledge.
731. *The unbelievers ask:* Tricked into sinning. Psycho disorders. The Sacrifice.

732. *Christian Understanding.* Predestined & Accepted (507, 561). Seek & find.
733. *Christian Understanding.* The example of a conversation.

734. *Christian Living.* Join a Christian Ministry. Home Education (171).
735. *Christian Living.* Logic and debates. A Christian fighter.

736. *The unbelievers ask:* Love. Baptism. Ordination. The Bible. Slavery.

737. *Christian Living.* Life. Faith. Joy. Hell. The Trumpets. Society.

738. *The unbelievers ask:* Christian Living. Criticism. Soul. GOD. Satan. Faith.

739. *Bible Study.* Free will. Christians. Death. The Flood.
740. *Bible Study.* The Ultimate Price (520 & 720).

741. *The unbelievers ask:* Logic. Evil. Eternity. Free will. A Prophecy.

742. *Christian Understanding.* Ugliness. Death. Sin. Toxic plants.

743. *Bible Study.* The Grace of GOD. Jesus's Teaching. The Church of GOD.

744. *Christian Living.* Charity vs poverty (296 & 513).

745. *Spirit War.* Demonic possession. "Contradictions".

746. *Bible Study.* The True Treasures. GOD & Man.
747. *Bible Study.* Overstepping the threshold.

748. "*Contradictions*". The <thoughtcatalog> questions 1-10.
749. "*Contradictions*". The <thoughtcatalog> questions 11-21.
750. "*Contradictions*". The <thoughtcatalog> questions 22-30. No fear in Love.

751. *Bible Study.* The Book of Revelation. The Bible.
752. *Bible Study.* The Sacrifices. Dying to self. Prove Love & Faith. A Prayer.
753. *Bible Study. Zechariah 13:1-6.* Curses.

754. "*Contradictions*". Dead to sin. GOD's Plan and our Prayers. The Tomb.

755. *Bible Study.* Resurrection.

756. *Christian Understanding*. Miraculous Works.

757. *The unbelievers ask:* The Prophecies fulfilled. So help me, GOD. Perverts.
758. *The unbelievers ask:* Saint Mary. Saint Lazarus. Sons of GOD.

759. *Bible Study. Revelation, Chapter 12.* The pestilence.

760. *The unbelievers ask:* Salvation. Justice. Circumcision. Taoism.
761. *The unbelievers ask:* Our Prayer & Free will. Nightmares. Slavery.

762. *"Contradictions"*. Ascending up to Heaven.

763. *The unbelievers ask:* The Bible.. Translations. Justice. The Law.

764. *Bible Study. Ecclesiastes 10:8-11 & 12:13-14*.

765. *Christian Understanding.* Questioning GOD. Prayer summary.
766. *Christian Understanding.* The Immaculate Conception.

767. *Bible Study. The Book of Matthew, Chapter 24*.
768. *Bible Study. The Book of Job*.
769. *Bible Study. The Book Exodus, Chapter 12*.
770. *Bible Study*. The Scriptures against abortion.
771. *Bible Study*. *Matthew 21:21-22 & Mark 11:23-24*.
772. *Bible Study*. *Deuteronomy 21:10-14*.
773. *Bible Study*. *John 3:3-21*.
774. *Bible Study*. *Genesis 4:7*.
775. *Bible Study*. *Genesis 15:5-8 & Luke 1:13,18-20*.
776. *Bible Study. Revelation 4:4,9-11; & 21:12-14.*
777. *Bible Study. Isaiah 53:2-3.*
778. *Bible Study. Matthew 7:22*.
779. *Bible Study. Ecclesiastes 10:19*.
780. *Bible Study.* Our Dress-Code (544).
781. *Bible Study. Genesis 30:37-39 & 2Kings 5:9-14.*
782. *Bible Study. Genesis Chapter 3.*
783. *Bible Study. Leviticus 7:15-18* & *19:5-8.*
784. *Bible Study. Psalm 139:21, Mark 8:31, & Acts 4:12*.
785. *Bible Study. Deuteronomy 7:1-5.*
786. *Bible Study. Deuteronomy Chapter 14.*

787. *Bible Study. Deuteronomy Chapter 23.*
788. *Bible Study. Deuteronomy Chapter 26.*
789. *Bible Study. Deuteronomy Chapter 28.*
790. *Bible Study. Joshua Chapter 7.*
791. *Bible Study. Joshua 10:12-13.*
792. *Bible Study. Psalms 2 & 10.*
793. *Bible Study. Psalm 3.*
794. *Bible Study. Psalm 4.*
795. *Bible Study. Psalm 1.*
796. *Bible Study. Psalm 5.*
797. *Bible Study. Psalm 6.*
798. *Bible Study. Psalm 7.*
799. *Bible Study. Psalm 8.*
800. *Bible Study. Psalms 9 & 13.*

Preface

Since I've been Christian, every possible *Communion* (to mean *communication*) with co-Workers in Christ is my strong desire. Why? Because what the LORD, our GOD, reveals is very seldom something personal or Secret, but much more often addressed His Church through ourselves.

... some things shalt thou publish,
and some things shalt thou shew Secretly to the Wise ...
(Apocrypha, 2Esdras 14:26, King James Version, 1611)

That is why the *Group Communion Services* where we can share our *Revelation Knowledge* most interested me.

The LORD GOD hath given me the tongue of the Learned,
that I should know how to speak a Word in season to him that is weary:
He wakeneth morning by morning, He wakeneth mine ear
to hear as the Learned. (Isaiah 50:4)

I believe those Groups of Believers (given everyone there has been prepared to discuss the subject proposed well in advance) are essential to our Local Churches. Even so, this book is well worth their attention.

Add to that personal recalls of myself at the very beginning of Christian Road.
There were a lot of questions to which I desperately sought the answers, apparent "contradictions" in the Written Word of GOD to be cleared up, and the differences between what I read in the Bible and saw in a Church.
I needed a Reference book like this one, or a good Teacher, or both.

Q & A is not fiction but compiled of actual questions we, Christians, ask one another, discuss, or argue over at our Small Group Meetings, including all difficult passages encountered now and again in the Written Word of GOD.

Welcome to our Communion.

Igor Evgen

Acknowledgement

Let the people praise Thee, O GOD; let all the people praise Thee.
Then shall the Earth yield her increase;
and GOD, even our own GOD, shall bless us.
GOD shall bless us; and all the ends of the Earth shall fear Him.
(Psalms 67:5-7)

Blessed be the LORD GOD of Israel from everlasting to everlasting:
and let all the people say, Amen. Praise ye the LORD.
(Psalms 106:48)

Not unto us, O LORD, not unto us, but unto Thy Name give Glory,
for Thy Mercy, and for Thy Truth's sake.
(Psalms 115:1)

Introduction

Kindly note that some “unusual” capitalization throughout this “Q & A” book is intentional and does not depend on Bible editions, Christian and non-Christian publications, Internet sites, and grammar rules. I do so to honor the Values of GOD – *Faith, Hope, Life, Love, Truth,* &c. – not to correct Translators, Writers, and Editors.
Even so, kindly note the following capitalization:

GOD – Heavenly Father, Holy Trinity.
God, Lord – God Son Jesus, God Holy Spirit.
He – GOD our Father, God Son Jesus, God Holy Spirit.
LORD – stands for and covers up the Name of Father GOD – the Most Holy.
We – the Holy Trinity.

Yet sometimes, I purposefully deviate from the above rule within the meaning of the context. Say, when the enemies of Christ speak to or about Him, or when they are ignorant to His Treasures.

Please find the details of all publications and movies (found relevant to the topics discussed) in the Reference section.

If you want to read about some specific subject, kindly go as far as the Index at the end of this book to find the right chapter(s). And if that subject is absent there, well, ask your question, even as our Christian Communion is for.

In His Service,

Igor Evgen
igorevgen@yahoo.com

Christian Mind Ministry
https://christian498979569.wordpress.com

Q & A

Christian Communion in Questions & Answers

1

Q: There is a lot of evils around: wars, crimes, cruelty. Where is your God?
Q: How come He tolerates all that?

A: According to *Genesis 1:26-31*, GOD Creator anointed us, people, Masters over His Creation.

And GOD said, Let Us make Man in Our Image, after Our Likeness:
and let them have Dominion ... over all the Earth ... So GOD created Man
in His Own Image, in the Image of GOD created He him; male and female
created He them. And GOD blessed them, and GOD said unto them, Be Fruitful,
and multiply, and replenish the Earth, and subdue it ... And GOD saw every thing
that He had made, and, behold, it was Very Good ... (Genesis 1:26-31)

So, *who* is in charge and, therefore, first guilty?

The Heaven, even the Heavens, are the LORD's:
but the Earth hath he given to the children of men. (Psalms 115:16)

GOD also offered us His Guidance:

I am the Way, the Truth and the Life ... (John 14:6)

Take this Word and prove the LORD. Then all your troubles will be over.
His Written Word is not a pack of instructions – it is *Covenant*. Enter it with Him and keep it. Then, as LORD GOD promised us, we would become *His People*, whether a person or family, community or nation. And He will be *our GOD*.

For the LORD is our Judge, the LORD is our Lawgiver,
the LORD is our King; He will save us. (Isaiah 33:22)

Q: Which do you think is *a worse source of deception* in Christianity – false teachers, or peoples' own minds?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: In my opinion, these two hardly differ. Both cannot be Christians – the false teachers and the owners of minds, seeking their own. *Proverbs 3:5*.
Please compare *1Corinthians 2:16* & *2Corinthians 4:4*.
Thank you.

2

Q: I've seen *dishonest* Believers, even Ministers.
Maybe, it's not necessary to belong with any Church, pray, sing Psalms, etc., just enough to be an *honest* man, don't kill, steal, and so on, eh?

A: First, don't think the GOD we serve is blind & deaf.

For the Eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole Earth,
to show Himself Strong in the behalf of them whose heart is Perfect toward Him.
(2Chronicles 16:9)

Second, to judge who is Honest and who is not is His Job, not ours.

... for the LORD seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)

Third, our self-estimation may prove *wrong* on *Judgment Day.*

Therefore judge nothing before the Time, until the LORD come,
Who both will bring to Light the hidden things of darkness,
and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts:
and then shall every man have Praise of GOD. (1Corinthians 4:5)

Further references: *1Chronicles 28:9* – The Profound Judgment of GOD.
Matthew 7:1-2 & Romans 2:1 – Don't judge.

Q: Do sins possess varying degrees of weight?
Q: If murder and stealing a lollipop are both sins, are they the same in terms of badness or different?.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: Please read the above-quoted *1Corinthians 4:5* and,
in the Light of this Scripture, see your question incorrect.

To put one sin above another on some "scale" would be the estimation of men.
The only Right Judgment belongs to GOD.
Far as I can see, the most dangerous sins are *intentional*, not repented of and confessed, moreover, teaching others that evil way.

3

Q: If bloody *Satan* is such a contributor to all our *sorrows*,
why hasn't GOD crushed him down as yet?

A: First, GOD created all people in His *Image & Likeness*.

And GOD said, Let Us make man in Our Image, after Our Likeness:
and let them have Dominion ... over all the Earth ... So GOD created
man in His Own Image, in the Image of GOD created He him;
male and female created He them. (Genesis 1:26-27)

He gave *us* the irrevocable Power over all Creation and the Word of Truth.

And GOD blessed them, and GOD said unto them, Be Fruitful, and multiply,
and replenish the Earth, and subdue it: and have Dominion
over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing
that moveth upon the Earth. (Genesis 1:28)

Behold, I give you Power to tread on serpents and scorpions,
and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.
(Luke 10:19)

What else do we need to live a Life free of sorrows?
Second, to destroy Satan alone is not enough. His willing servants should follow him to the pit. That immense sorry company includes most of the mankind, for they aren't Believers, not even close.
Now, it is written:

Trust the LORD with all thine heart;
and learn not unto thine own understanding. (Proverbs 3:5)

There is no wisdom nor understanding nor counsel against the LORD.
(Proverbs 21:30)

Bless, therefore, the Great *Love* & *Patience* of the LORD, our GOD, Who is waiting for more people to come to Him.

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son,
that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life.
(John 3:16)

... the notion of Satan, at least as it is popularly held, carries with it several risks. ... the belief in a powerful supernatural being of evil verges on being a denial of the Oneness of GOD ... The Christian Faith has no room for any competing deities.

A second and more pervasive danger of speaking of evil in terms of a Satan figure is that such patterns of thought can easily lead to a failure to recognize our own responsibility for evil ... Denial of personal Responsibility ... is inadequate as a way of dealing with sin and evil ...

One of the most poignant aspects of the temptation story of Adam & Eve is when they both deny Responsibility for their actions. "The woman whom You gave to be with me, she gave me fruit from the tree," said Adam, when GOD confronted him with his disobedience. "The serpent tricked me," said Eve, pointing the finger of blame elsewhere. To blame another person, our past, our society, or Satan for the evil that we do is an indication of our own moral weakness and sinfulness. Satan becomes our scapegoat, and we can rationalize our failures by locating the blame outside ourselves. If Satan is the cause, then we do not have to change. The same holds true for evil beyond our individual sins – our corporate, societal, and institutional sins. If we can blame Satan for the problems that ravage our World, we do not have to take Responsibility for trying to challenge and correct them. We feel no compulsion to confront corporate executives, politicians, and board members. After all, people are not responsible, we tell ourselves; Satan is to blame ...

Another possible problem with Satan language is that its use may lead us to "satanize" any person or institution that seems to operate contrary to the Ways of GOD. Once we have identified the person or institution as being in league with Satan, we can more easily rationalize our hatred and opposition to them. Why should I be compassionate or concerned about someone who is a manifestation of Satan? I can feel self-righteous in my attempts to discredit, malign, or destroy such an individual ...

A fourth danger of using the concept of Satan to explain evil is that eventually we may fail to recognize the human face of evil. If we can convince ourselves that evil is something outside of us, a separate entity, then we can more easily ignore it. On the other hand, if we recognize the visage of evil every time we look in the mirror, then we are apt to be more likely to confront the problem ...

A final point to be made about the danger of casting evil in the disguise of Satan is that, contrary to what was noted above, such an approach may actually lead to the trivialization of evil rather than to the recognition of its power ...

(Mitchell G. Reddish,
Smyth & Helwys Bible Commentary: Revelation, Chapter 12)

He that is not with Me is against Me;
and he that gathereth not with Me scattereth abroad. (Matthew 12:30)

... If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My Disciples indeed.
And ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free.
(John 8:31-32)

Q: When did Lucifer's rebellion take place? .When I still went to Church, I asked, and they said, long *before* the Creation of men.
Q: If the 7 days of Creation actually happened, when was that "long before"?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: As far as my understanding goes, that rebellion took place shortly *after* the Creation of Man, at the time between *Genesis 1:31* and *Genesis 3:1* –

And GOD saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was Very Good.
And the evening and the morning were the sixth day. (Genesis 1:31)

Now, the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field,
which the LORD GOD had made. And he said unto the Woman,
Yea, hath GOD said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the Garden?
(Genesis 3:1)

Q: Why did GOD create Satan? I suppose this is predicated on the assumption that He did, so correct me if that's wrong. My understanding is GOD created everything in the Universe, and the most common response to the philosophical "problem of evil" is free will. But this still doesn't answer why GOD created Satan in the first place.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: GOD didn't create *Satan*. He created Angel *Lucifer*, who used the Gift of Free will to rebel against his Creator.
Please correlate *Genesis 1:31* (the above-quoted) and *Isaiah 14:12-14*.

How art thou fallen from Heaven, O Lucifer, Son of the Morning!
How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations!
For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into Heaven,
I will exalt my throne above the Stars of GOD: I will sit also upon
the Mount of the Congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above
the heights of the clouds; I will be like the Most High. (Isaiah 14:12-14)

4

Q: Why *Jesus* had to die on that cross?

A: Speaking briefly, there is *Harvest Law* (sowing & reaping), which by the *Holy Will of GOD* dominates His Great Creation. The manifestation of this *Law* is seen around by everyone, Believer or not.

While Earth remaineth, seedtime and the harvest, and cold and heat, and summer and winter, and day and night shall not cease. (Genesis 8:22)

Be not deceived; GOD is not mocked:
for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. (Galatians 6:7)

The Harvest Law has some important implications, in particular, *everything is consequential*. Therefore all sins, yours & mine inclusive, are to be paid, whether by us or someone else. From the very first sin of man, our Father GOD appointed *animals* to make up for it. However, most of GOD's People, Israel, didn't hate sins nor had any pity for the beasts. All the LORD's Warnings fell on deaf ears.

By swearing, and lying, and killing, and stealing, and committing adultery, they break out, and blood toucheth blood. Therefore shall the land mourn, and every one that dwelleth therein shall languish ... Yet let no man strive, nor reprove another: for thy people are as they that strive with the Priest. (Hosea 4:2-4)

Then, by the Grace of GOD, it was *Jesus*, the Son of GOD, to become our Redeemer & Savior. That same Grace gave rise to another Chosen People – Christians – Followers of Christ Jesus.

People need to be reminded more often than they need to be instructed. (C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.82)

Q: I'm trying to understand Atonement. Jesus is 100% God and 100% Man. So, when Jesus became *sin*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: On the cross, when He was killed *as* a sinner. *2Corinthians 5:21*.

5

Q: Why are there so many *religions*, *denominations*, *sects* and so on?
And each one claims walking the only right way!

A: Regarding *false religions*, *superstitions*, *idolatry*, *atheism*, &c., &c.,
it is written:

... the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, Who is the Image of GOD, should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:4)

As for *denominations*, it has always been the devil's purpose & strategy to split the Body of Christ up. Why? Look at the following *John 17:21-23*. Why is it written, and what is Satan's response to it? Recognize his evil everywhere, from a betrayal & divorce in a family to political hostility and civil war in a country.
That's why the *false apostles* (2*Corinthians 11:13-14*) play Christians but, in reality, promote Satan-inspired man-made doctrines rather than our Holy Unity. They serve & belong to the evil one rather than the Church of GOD.
Note, we have been united from very long ago onward.

That they all may be One; as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee, that they also may be One in Us: that the world may believe that Thou hast sent Me. And the Glory which Thou gavest Me I have given them; that they may be One, even as We are One: I in them, and Thou in Me, that they may be made Perfect in One; and that the world may know that Thou hast sent Me, and hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me. (John 17:21-23)

Sadly, Christians standing for the *Oneness* of the Body of Christ are much less in number than those who belong to denominations. The more we learn the Word of GOD, the more we understand the evil of denominationalism.
Brother Lewis wrote:

> *... we must admit that the discussion of these disputed points has no tendency at all to bring an outsider into the Christian Fold. So long as we write and talk about them we are much more likely to deter him from entering any Christian Communion than to draw him into our own. Our divisions should never be discussed except in the presence of those who have already come to believe that there is One GOD and that Jesus Christ is His only Son. (C.S. Lewis, Mere Cristianity, Preface, vi-vii)*

References: *Jeremiah 23:1-2 & Romans 16:17* ---------- Division condemned.
John 13:34-35 ---------- The Eleventh Commandme*nt.*
John 14:6 ---------- Come to the Father GOD by Jesus only.
1Corinthians 10:17 ---------- Unity confirmed by Holy Communion.
1Corinthians 11:19 ---------- Denominationalism was predicted.
1Corinthians 12:13 ---------- Christians are baptized into One Body.
Galatians 3:28 ---------- Christians are One in Christ Jesus.
Ephesians 2:21-22 & 4:4-6,16 ---------- One Body of Christ.
Ephesians 4:13 ---------- Edifying the Church unto Unity.
Philippians 2:2 ---------- The Unity to GOD's Joy.
1Timothy 2:4-5 ---------- One GOD, One Mediator.

Q: With so many Christian denominations, Priests, Preachers, Popes, Scholars, Bishops interpreting the teachings of GOD differently through history, how do you know that the interpretation you've been taught by other humans is GOD's Truth?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: How do I know? I don't. But GOD does. And, inasmuch as I, by His Grace and my diligence, can hear *His Truth* from Him, including that spoken or written through other humans, I learn & teach it on.

Call unto Me, and I will answer thee,
and shew thee Great and Mighty things, which thou knowest not.
(Jeremiah 33:3)

Q: Do Christians from all denominations go to Heaven?.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: That depends on how Faithful they are to GOD rather than their sects. Think, for instance, about the Warning given in *1Corinthians 1:10-13*. Denominationalism *cannot* prevent Salvation, as the latter doesn't depend on denominations but our *Right Standing* with the LORD instead.

And it shall be our Righteousness,
if we observe to do all these Commandments before the LORD our GOD,
as He hath commanded us. (Deuteronomy 6:25)

Note the Vision given to Brother Robert Samuel at the end of Q & A chapter 80 (The Eleventh Commandment).

6

Q: You know, Pastors are so concerned about *Tithes & Offerings.*
How to be sure the money offered is not *misused*?

A: The Word of GOD teaches us *Giving*.
We should copy our Heavenly Father as Loving Children and love Him by following His Holy Will.

Oftentimes, by stupid *greed* Believers serve *Satan* and sow into *his* kingdom.

It is written:

> *... GOD divided the Light from the darkness. (Genesis 1:4)*

Therefore, *tertium non datur – the third term not being given (Latin).*

Note, all physical values of this world belong to *LORD GOD* only, are distributed between us, people, and our money-management is under His constant Control. So, give to *GOD* by giving to His Faithful Servants. Support them by Tithes.

In his book "*Giving And Receiving*", Brother *Morris Cerullo* wrote:

> *If we were following Tithe Principles to-day, we would be able to release about one-tenth of all Believing families into some type of full-time Ministry. (p.45)*
> *It's not good enough for modern Church Leaders to insist that their Members tithe because it's Biblical, and then to use those Tithes for an unbiblical purpose like erecting and furnishing buildings! (p.125)*
> *In the Old Testament, one-third of the people's Tithes provided food stores which were used to feed the needy in that area. A similar proportion of our Tithes could go into a fund today which Churches use to help their local poor. If Churches kept their Members' Tithes separate from their other funds, it would be easy to ensure that Tithes were used in this Biblical way – exclusively for people. Just think of the Good that one-third of the Members' Tithes could accomplish in our neighborhoods! An awesome Work of caring for the destitute could be carried out by Churches if our Tithes were used in this Scriptural way. (pp 154-155)*

Nevertheless, we must sacrifice to *GOD*, not just give away and, therefore, it is *our* duty to make sure Tithes & Offerings are not misused.

The fact that you are giving money to a Charity does not mean that you need not try to find out whether that Charity is a fraud or not.
(C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.77)

Note this good example:

And Melchizedek King of Salem brought forth bread and wine: and he was the Priest of the Most High GOD. And he blessed him, and said, Blessed be Abram of the Most High GOD, Possessor of Heaven and Earth: And blessed be the Most High GOD, which hath delivered thine enemies into thy hand. And he gave him Tithes of all. (Genesis 14:18-20)

Further references:

*Genesis 28:22*_____ Jacob's Oath to GOD.
Leviticus 27:30-32 _____ The Tithes are Holy unto the LORD.
Numbers 18:21-28 _____ Levites' & Priests' Wages.
Deuteronomy 14:22-29 _____ The Tithes directed.
Deuteronomy 14:23 _____ The Purpose: to learn GOD's Fear.
Deuteronomy 26:12-15 _____ The Statement o' Faith.
Nehemiah 10:37-39 _____ The Confirmation of the Word.
Malachi 3:8-12 _____ Prove GOD's Faithfulness.
Mark 12:41-44 _____ The Example of Sacrificial Giving.

Q: Well, was the Law of Tithes discontinued by the New Testament?
Q: Besides, there was more than one kind of Tithes demanded under the Old Testament. (?)

(*https://www.christforums.com/*, August 2019)

A: No, I don't think so. Kindly see chapters 16-18 about both Covenants. As for "more than one kind of Tithes", I believe it's a misunderstanding. Probably, you have read about several *directions* of our Tithes, thinking they are several *kinds* thereof, that's it. Nowhere in the Old Testament Scriptures is written something like, "bring this or that Tithe besides the other ones".

Webster's Dictionary (1911) runs:

[Tithe is] t*he tenth part of anything, especially the tenth part of the annual increase of the profit arising from land, stock, &c, allotted to the support of the Clergy ...*

Q: I need help. Should we tithe?.
I recently wrote a post about Tithing. Somebody breaks down every single Verse regarding Tithing and *made up Biblical proof* for that. He says it is not for this time because we live under Grace and not the Law. People called me the devil, demon-possessed, Satan, dumb, stupid, you name it.
Q: Am I wrong?
Q: I'm pretty sure I'm not, but what do you think?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020. Condensed.)

A: No, you are not wrong. Wrong are those who try to tight the Bible to this or that time only. Please see *Matthew 7:15-20* for your text I made in *italics*.
In your dispute, you and your opponents might want to start with the definitions. In this particular case, define *Tithing*, *Grace*, and *Law*. Without a sound agreement on these subjects – what Tithing is for, how Grace is manifested, and Who made the Law – any relevant discussion or debate is but a waste of time.

Q: I've been noticing different people completely content ignoring GOD and the Bible. They are just fine, live much better than Christians, and that makes me confused. What does GOD feel about this?
Q: Why does He continue to let unbelievers prosper and some Believers to live in harsh conditions? I have studied *Psalms 1 & 73*, where David felt the same. Yet David states:

Surely Thou didst set them in slippery places:
Thou castedst them down into destruction. (*Psalms 73:18*)

Q: Have I not noticed the "slippery places" these people are in, as they seem to be content raising families, having jobs, prospering, getting into relationship?
Q: Most of the school systems seem too far from teaching about God, and yet they prosper. It seems to me very strange. (?)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: The first lines of your good question are thus answered by the Bible: *Proverbs 30:12, Isaiah 5:21, John 1:5, & 1Corinthians 1:18-31*. Note it.
Your confusion is understandable. Read *Proverbs 3:5-6 & 21:30*.
And your understanding of *Psalms* is correct. The *73rd* is a *Psalm of Asaph*.
The "slippery places" are exactly where the worldly "prosperity" is.
Please find your Guidance in *Exodus 23:2*.
GOD bless you.

7

Q: One Priest teaches this, another Minister that.
Who should we listen to?

A: Stick to the *Word of GOD*.

Ye shall not add unto the Word which I command you,
neither shall ye diminish aught from it,
that ye may keep the Commandments of the LORD your GOD
which I command you. (Deuteronomy 4:2)

Anyone who has ever been to the military knows, the last order is final there.
The same rule is accepted by every sound civil institution too.
But it is not so in the Church of our GOD. *His Word* is our Supreme & Final Authority, no one having any Power to amend or correct it.

And though the LORD give you the bread of adversity, and the water of affliction, yet shall not thy Teachers be removed into a corner any more, but thine eyes shall see thy Teachers: And thine ears shall hear a Word behind thee, saying, This is the Way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left. (Isaiah 30:20-21)

Listen to that Still Small Voice of *God Holy Spirit*, your Promised Teacher.
As for the Teachers contradicting the *Holy Bible*,

Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind.
And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. (Matthew 15:14)

The above Scripture makes it clear that only *you* are responsible for *your* following GOD & Eternal destiny. Not any human leader, but *you* are to decide who & what to hear.

On Judgment Day, *you* are to stay before GOD face to face. Alone.

> *The Prophets often spake of the Day of the LORD, and many of the people expressed a desire of its arrival; either scornfully deriding His Message, or presumptuously expecting the interposition of GOD in their favour ...*
>
> *(Thomas Scott,*
> *The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes, Commentary on Amos)*

Scripture references: *Jeremiah 33:3* …..... The only Source of Knowledge.
John 8:31-32 …..... Truth – Freedom from lies.
John 14:6 …..…..... The Way, the Truth, and the Life.
Romans 10:17 ..…..... The Word – Hearing – Faith.

Hello.
Deuteronomy 23 talks about excluding people from the Assembly of GOD.
It also talks about people being excluded for "ten generations".

Q: My question is, can you be excluded from GOD & Heaven for something that happened in your family nine generations ago?

Q: It also talks about "forbidden marriage" (New International Version).
What is a *forbidden marriage* and, if someone in my lineage had one, am I not welcome in the Assembly of GOD?

(Signed: *Christian, Protestant*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: Shalom.
Deuteronomy 23, as well as the rest of our Bible, applies to nowadays.
Please also see the *spiritual* meaning of wording before the literal one.
What puzzles you here is, obviously, a *curse*, which might, nevertheless, be broken by *Repentance*. Please see chapter 44 and the Index.
We, Christians, were all excluded or separated from the Church of GOD until we broke the curse, which, in so many lives, lasted much more than ten unbelieving generations.
A *forbidden marriage* is the one which is condemned by the Law of GOD. The children born of those marriages also are under the curse above-mentioned. And that may last until their Repentance unto Salvation.
Please mind *Luke 15:20*.

Thank you for the question.

I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid.
I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD;
and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah.
For this shall every one that is Godly pray unto Thee
in a time when Thou mayest be found:
surely in the floods of great waters they shall not come nigh unto him.
Thou art my Hiding Place; Thou shalt preserve me from trouble;
Thou shalt compass me about with Songs of Deliverance. Selah.
(Psalms 32:5-7)

Q: (1) How do Christians not see that every religion claim to be the right one and others are lost? I grew up Christian and would consider myself one, *but* have been facing a conflict because *other* religions claim that they have the answers. I desperately want to keep my Faith *but* have been studying a lot of *other* religions and belief systems. I don't want to be someone that doesn't look at further information because it is sinful or will lead astray.

Q: (2) I want to understand our existence, and, it seems *crazy* to me that GOD would select only some people to have the Truth and the rest of humanity goes to hell forever to burn! *If* He created everything, He knew that they wouldn't come to Him after making them that way, didn't He?

Q: (3) I can't stand fully behind something that doesn't make any *sense* and has *holes* in the story. Most Christians will say, "Well, you can't understand all GOD's Ways. Everyone has a choice. We have Free will." My point is, *do* we have Free will if GOD knew everything?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) How do Christian not see that? As to me, I do. For GOD commands so. It is written:

Hear, O Israel: The LORD Our GOD is One LORD: And thou shalt love
the LORD Thy GOD with all thine heart, and with all thy soul,
and with all thy might. (Deuteronomy 6:4-5)

So, don't be in a "conflict". Every "but" and "other" information is wrong.

And thou shalt not go aside from any of the Words
which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to the left,
to go after other gods to serve them. (Deuteronomy 28:14)

What, "other religions claim that they have the answers"?
Of course, they do. Kindly read *2Corinthians 4:4*.

(2) Please understand, the "selection" has not yet come. But it will. Read all Parables of Jesus, where the *Judgment* and *outside darkness* are mentioned. LORD GOD revealed Himself to all (*2Chronicles 19:7* & *Romans 1:18-21*).

(3) Regarding "sense" and "holes", kindly read chapter 41 (Common sense), and switch that sense *off* every time you open the Holy Bible.
Please also see Index for *Free will*. On these pages, we speak a lot about it.
Thank you.

8

Q: Who had created *hell*? GOD is Love – He couldn't. Love doesn't create tortures. On the other hand,

All things were made by Him;
and without Him was not any thing made that was made. (John 1:3)

Q: So, *who* had made it? And *what* is it?

A: By *Smith's Bible Dictionary,* condensed,

In the Old Testament, this is the word generally and unfortunately used by our translators to render the Hebrew "Sheol". It really means "the place of the dead", "the unseen world", without deciding whether it be the place of misery or happiness. In many Passages of the Old Testament, "Sheol" can only mean "the grave", as in the Authorized Version. See, for example, Genesis 37:35; 42:38; 1Samuel 2:6; Job 14:13. In other passages, it seems to involve punishment and is rendered in the Authorized Version by the word "hell". But, in many cases, this translation misleads the reader. In the New Testament, "hell" is the translation of 2 words, "Hades" and "Gehenna".
The word "Hades" like "Sheol", sometimes, means "the grave" (Acts 2:31; 1Corinthians 15:55; Revelation 20:13), or, in general, "the unseen world". It is in this sense that the Creeds say of our Lord, "He went down into hell", meaning the state of the dead in general, without any restriction of happiness or misery. Elsewhere in the New Testament, "Hades" is used as a place of torment (Matthew 11:23; Luke 16:23; 2Peter 2:4, etc.). Consequently, "Hades" is an intermediate state between death and resurrection, divided into two parts, the abode of the blest and the other of the lost. It is used 11 times in the New Testament and only once translated as "grave" (1Corinthians 15:55). The word most frequently used (12 times) in the New Testament for the place of future punishment is "Gehenna" or "Gehenna of fire." This was originally the valley of Hinnom, south of Jerusalem, where the filth and dead animals of the city were cast out and burned; a fit symbol of the wicked and their destruction.*

* Far as I understand, it means *between physical death and Judgment*.

So, I take *hell* (a.k.a., *bottomless pit*) as a *spiritual dumping ground* separated from Paradise like *gehenna* was off Jerusalem. The position of hell (and Paradise) is in the center of our planet – "*the nether parts of the Earth*".
Read it in *Psalms 63:9; Ezekiel 26:20; 31:14,16,18; & 32:18,24*.

We, *humans,* are they who "made" hell in a *spiritual desert*.

The heathen are sunk down in the pit that they made:
in the net which they hid is their own foot taken. (Psalms 9:15)

It stems from misusing our *Free will,* even the Blessing per *Genesis 1:26-28*.
All *sins* (evil words & actions) are born in and developed by the *mind* when we give in to wrong thoughts thrown at us by the *demons*.
(Per *2Corinthians 10:3-5 & Ephesians 6:16-17,* our mind is a spirit battlefield.)
Intentional and not repented of sins produce sinful attitudes. The spiritual dumpster – *hell* – is for sinners whose time is up. For it is written,

... to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope ... (Ecclesiastes 9:4)

GOD did not create hell. He appointed the nether world for all dead, and there, *separated* Paradise from the *surrounding* it darkness – hell. Note *Isaiah 14:15*.

... between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would
pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us,
that would come from thence. (Luke 16:26, the context of Verses 19-31)

Hell is being enlarged by the unsaved souls. Regretfully, the sinners outnumber those who repented and are forgiven by our LORD GOD.

Hell and destruction are never full; so the eyes of man are never satisfied.
(Proverbs 27:20)

Therefore hell hath enlarged herself, and opened her mouth without measure:
and their glory, and their multitude, and their pomp, and he that rejoiceth,
shall descend into it. (Isaiah 5:14)

There have always been people who got *Visions* of hell. The pictures honestly described are fearful, yet, they are but *symbols*. The latter requires the right interpretations. Cf., *Daniel 8:27 & 10:1,7,8*.
In chapter 153, discussing the *Kingdom of Heaven*, we've arrived at the same conclusion. Please also see chapter 222 – The Parable of Rich Man and Lazarus.
Note, there are lying visions too. Read the Warning:

Thus saith the LORD of Hosts, Hearken not unto the words of the prophets that
prophesy unto you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own heart,
and not out of the Mouth of the LORD. (Jeremiah 23:16)

Since hell is a *spiritual* substance, the tortures therein are *spiritual* too.
The Scriptures define hell as *fire* – the *spiritual* one it is. The fearful *pain*, which *natural* fire does to our *body,* is thus well compared to the sufferings of a human *spirit* in hell – eternal agony of *conscience*, even as it is written,

... my sin is ever before me. (Psalms 51:3)

We can read about the metaphorical description of spiritual sufferings in the *Book of Revelation –*

... and the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever:
and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image,
and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name. (Revelation 14:9-11)

Therefore, the Words of Jesus, "*weeping and gnashing of teeth*" *(Matthew 8:12; 13:42,50; 22:13; &c.*), I take as "weeping for those a sinner wronged, and gnashing of teeth at own self for serving the devil".

And what about Satan & his demons? Isn't *hell* (and the *second death* following) their final destination? It is, according to *2Peter 2:4* & *Revelation 20:10.*
Again, it is expressed metaphorically –

And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone,
where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night
for ever and ever. (Revelation 20:10)

Christians, apt to *Godly sorrow* & *Repentance*, can pray, confess, and expect to be forgiven. Others cannot, as the *demons* block up the voice of their *conscience* by evil thoughts.

... the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not,
lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the Image of GOD,
should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:4)

Repentance is not possible in hell. As per *Ecclesiastes 9:4,* the time is up.
Communications, whether good or evil, are not possible too. Spiritual darkness makes for that terrible loneliness. Every spirit is *alone* to mind own sorrows:

... the wicked shall be silent in darkness. (1Samuel 2:9)

There, in hell, nobody influences the conscience. Those who messed with the minds of others are busy with personal pains.

... bring it again to mind,
O ye transgressors. Remember the former things of old: for I am GOD, and there is none else; I am GOD, and there is none like Me ... (Isaiah 46:8-9)

Prayers are not heard too. For only there the well-known worldly expression "*God-forgotten place*" is correct. Note how we and GOD may forget one another: *Deuteronomy 8:19-20, Job 8:13-14, Psalms 88:5, Hosea 4:6,* etc.

Some Believers argued with me and stated that the mentioned fire is *natural*.
Can you imagine a *fire* of *darkness*? I cannot. In the *natural,* fire produces light (& heat), and gloom is gone. In such a case, hell should shine like Sun.
No, it is *spiritual* flame & torment. C.f., *Romans 12:20.*
Luke 13:28 figuratively pictured it as spiritual "seeing" of what is lost.
Besides, how can fire or any other *natural* stuff damage *spirit & soul* which have lost a *body* to see, hear, and feel any *physical* pain?

Want to have a "glimpse" into *hell*? Try to remember at least one *evil* done by you in the past, whether confessed or not. Maybe, somebody died or got injured because of you. Or else, it was a robbery, cruelty, or other crime on your part, which brought grief to people and shame to you.
The time may darken such memories. The fire of hell brightens them up.
It is hard even to imagine our *total* recall and the power of remorse embracing *all* our past evil thoughts, words, and works. Remember *Romans 3:23*.
How much time would you manage to continue in such a state of mind?
The condemned *spirits* abide so endlessly. C.f., *Jude 1:7 & Revelation 20:10*.

The same *separation* of the Righteous and the wicked continues in Eternity, as in *Revelation 22:14-15*. Please see chapter 573 (Eternity).

> *Many persons, I am aware, have entered into ingenious debates about the Eternal Fire, by which the wicked will be tormented after the Judgment. But we may conclude from many Passages of Scripture, that it is a metaphorical expression ... Let us lay aside the speculations, by which foolish men weary themselves to no purpose, and satisfy ourselves with believing, that these forms of speech denote, in a manner suited to our feeble capacity, a dreadful torment, which no man can now comprehend, and no language can express.*
>
> *(John Calvin,*
> *Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists, pp 200-201)*

9

Q: What does our Bible teach about the *military*?

A: The Written Word of GOD is clear:

Thou shalt not kill. (Exodus 20:13 & Deuteronomy 5:17)

Every *worldly war*, standing on whatever spiritually blind reason or name – *civil, imperialistic, for independence, revolutionary, world* – is a curse.

Who among you will give ear to this? Who will hearken and hear
for the time to come? Who gave Jacob for a spoil, and Israel to the robbers?
Did not the LORD, He against Whom we have sinned? For they would not walk
in His Ways, neither were they obedient unto His Law. Therefore He
hath poured upon him the Fury of His Anger, and the strength of battle:
and it hath set him on fire round about, yet he knew not;
and it burned him, yet he laid it not to heart. (Isaiah 42:23-25)

Lo, nowhere in His Written Word, LORD teaches us to strengthen our countries by *military* stuff: arms, vigilance, training, etc. On the contrary,

... Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit, saith The LORD of Hosts.
(Zechariah 4:6)

For the Victory of battell standeth not in the multitude of an hoste,
but Strength commeth from Heauen.
(King James Version 1611, Apocrypha, 1Maccabees 3:19)

The military might is questioned by our Father GOD. See *Jeremiah 51:53*.
Lord Jesus warned:

... all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword.
(Matthew 26:52)

Therefore, nobody is or has a right to be called a “defender” of his land, people, or home. *LORD GOD* alone is our Defender. *Psalms 20:7, 127:1, Isaiah 59:19, &c.* We are supposed to be His Servants. Kindly note *Deuteronomy 5:29*.
As able members of a sinful nation, we may get punished by the curse of war. Read *Nehemiah 9:33-37*. Read the end of chapter 26 about Ukrainian Defense. Behold, it is hard to find “heroes” among the cursed people who deserved *GOD’s Punishment* (the subject of chapter 64). Note *Isaiah 34:2*.

As for the LORD, our GOD, He has never intended such a curse to fall upon us. Right & Godly *education* serves as our Good defense.

And they taught in Judah, and had the Book of the Law of the LORD with them,
and went about throughout all the cities of Judah, and taught the people.
And the Fear of the LORD fell upon all the kingdoms of the lands
that were round about Judah, so that they made no war against Jehoshaphat.
(2Chronicles 17:9-10)

Far as I know, many people, those calling themselves Christians inclusive, strongly disagree with my opinion. They stand upon their common sense.
But where is the common sense in the Holy Scriptures? Or the compromise? Please, give it a try to find any. I cannot.

For My Thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My Ways,
saith the LORD. (Isaiah 55:8)

Can any military or ex-military person be so kind as to explain to me the conquering of Jericho described in *The Book of Joshua Chapter 6*?
Kindly take a look at the book of Brother Grant R. Jeffrey, *The Signature of GOD*. There, on pages 74-75, one can read about the archeological discovery agreeing with *The Book of Joshua*.
And see *Genesis 18:22-32* (discussed in "Q & A" chapter 511) as for who depends on whom. Even so, far above all reasoning,

Trust in the LORD with all thine heart;
and lean not unto thine own understanding. (Proverbs 3:5)

Q: Were Elijah and Elisha morally deficient because they did not love their enemies, the worshipers of Baal?

(Signed: *Christian, Biblical Unitarian*.)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Kindly note that *Elijah* & *Elisha* were the Holy Prophets of LORD GOD. That fact excluded their any errors of deficiencies which might stand in the way of fulfilling their Ordained Duties.
Every word or action of those Prophets was directed by our Heavenly Father. The mistakes (e.g., *1Kings 19:9,13*) were corrected by Him.
Thank you.

Q: One thought just occurred to me. God must either be a liar or He broke His Own Word when He gave the Commandment not to kill and yet commanded others to do so. I'm sorry. But you've left me very confused.
(*https://christianwriters.com/topic/21486-military*, September 21, 2021.)

A: Kindly get your thoughts in order. Switch the worldly reason off when thinking about the LORD, our GOD.

So, to kill or not to kill? The Sixth Commandment (quoted at the opening of this chapter) was given in *Exodus* and confirmed in *Deuteronomy*. Much earlier and forever, it was written on a human heart as per *Genesis 1:26-27*.

The Exodus included the act of mass unbelief & cowardice on the part of Israelites and the following punishment of forty years walking the desert.
All the Promises of GOD are conditional, and (as it seems to me) the Promised Land was not an exception. The simple stipulation – trust the LORD and fear not – required Faith. It still does, notwithstanding our Knowledge of GOD.
Count how many times our Bible said, *Fear not*. Remember *Exodus 14:13-31*. Is there any common reason? Even so, stand upon *Joshua 1:9* & *Isaiah 41:10*.
The Strong Faith could have made conquering the Promised land much simpler.
To be ready for every battle required Courage only. The Levites were to carry the Ark of the Covenant and go before the People of GOD. (*Joshua Chapters 3 & 6*).
Mysteriously, our Father GOD left the idolaters, cannibals, and perverts to demons. Entered the enemy as in a herd of swine, the evil spirits made those heathen mad & killing one another. Thus the sin of murder remained with those who burned their babies alive in satanic fires. Cf., *Romans 1:24*.
That way, the Commandment would be honored and the land purified.

Regretfully, in reality, it was otherwise. GOD's People far not always could overcome fear & common sense. Their battles ceased to be those of the LORD but of military. Yet Father GOD still was with them. When asked whether or not the enemy would be delivered into the hands of Jews, He answered & advised.

Now, what about the *death penalty* commanded by the LORD? Or the necessary armed Law Enforcement? I see it as the only way out of the evil circumstances we made. In so many issues, the Words of Lord Jesus –

... but from the Beginning, it was not so. (*Matthew 19:8)*

– were & remain applicable.

10

Q: It is written:

Faith without works is dead. (James 2:26)

It is also said:

... by the works of the Law
shall no flesh be justified. (Galatians 2:16)

So, the question is: are not there some *contradiction* in these Sayings?

A: Actually, there aren't any "contradictions" in our *Bible*.
As Wisdom requires a *diligent seeker* (*Apocrypha, Wisdom 6:12-16*), so does *Bible Study*. Encountering any "hard" place or "disputable" matter, we ought to start from *definitions*, to think or speak as LORD GOD teaches us.

Faith was compared to *a grain of mustard seed (Luke 17:6)*, i.e., a substance to be sown to get activated. Every *act* of such sowing is a Sacrifice of time, Works, money. Thus, our Christian Faith (as per *James 2:26*) is tested & proven.

On the other hand, when we speak about *the works of the Law*, we should keep in mind that *the Law* might be defined in two ways.

First, it is whatever of the following: *the Law of GOD: the Holy Will of GOD, Ten Commandments, Torah, the Old Testament Part of the Bible, all Holy Bible*.
For all these definitions correspond to *thus saith the LORD*.
Lord Jesus said:

> *Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For Verily I say unto you, Till Heaven and Earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least Commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of Heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called Great in the Kingdom of Heaven. (Matthew 5:17-19)*

Second, it is man-made religious doctrines, such as Talmud in Judaism and other denominational writs. Those teachings were and still are a "law" to many.

... there is no new thing new under the Sun ... (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

The works demanded by Talmud (at the time of Christ in Israel), as well as all Satan-inspired man-made doctrines (now & everywhere), have been leading one anywhere but the Kingdom of GOD.
Please read *Galatians 2:16* in another translation:

And yet we, Jewish Christians, know very well that we cannot become Right with GOD by obeying our Jewish laws but only by Faith in Jesus Christ to take away our sins. And so we too have trusted Jesus Christ that we might be accepted by GOD because of Faith – and not because we have obeyed the Jewish laws. For no one will ever be saved by obeying them. (Galatians 2:16, The Living Bible)

Add to our Bible the *Catholic* & *Orthodox* "God's Mother" doctrine, or accept the false *Mormon's* gospel (*Galatians 1:8-9*), or reject the Person of the Holy Spirit as *Watchtower Witnesses* do, or compromise with unbelievers – and the measure of vain works is done. (Chapters 422 & 423 are about those teachings.)
Mind well *Deuteronomy 4:2, 12:32; Proverbs 30:5-6; & Revelation 22:18-19*.
That's why *Lord Jesus* rebuked those who had messed up *the Holy Scriptures* with *man-made laws* –

Making the Word of GOD of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye. (Mark 7:13)

As for the Law of LORD GOD, it is written:

... this is the Love of GOD, that we keep His Commandments: and His Commandments are not grievous. (1John 5:3)

Thus, the New Covenant Part of the Bible confirms the Law of GOD, Holy & Pure. At the same time, and well within the meaning of that Law, the Ultimate Sacrifice of Christ substituted forever the Animal Sacrifices, as well as all relevant Blood Ceremonies.

The *Works of GOD* done through us show & strengthen our Faith.
But all works done in obedience to *men* and not GOD will never justify us.

Q: What are the *Works* in the Bible? James said: *Faith without Works is dead*.
Q: So, are we not saved by Faith alone, like other Books state?
Q: How does one do Works?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: Generally speaking, the *Works* in your question are everything we do, which proves our Faith. That was the point of the Words of Brother James.

As for our Salvation, we are saved by the Grace of GOD, Who gave us Faith in the Cross of Christ. And that Faith we should *prove*.

The best way to do the Works of GOD (being a Good Instrument in the Hands of His Holy Spirit) is a Christian Ministry. See chapter 461.

Q: Is it a sin if I have a pornographic dream?. I hate the awful feeling of waking up after having a sexually immoral dream. I feel guilty, even though I can't control how the dream goes.

(Signed: *Christian*, *Protestant*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is not a sin, being under neither your control nor intentions.
Possibly, it is a sequence of things gone. That dung might be imprinted on the mind as something enjoyed in the past or caught your eye on the Internet, which nowadays is overloaded with it.
Please see chapter 51 and the Index section for more.
Keep your mind clear as per *2Corinthians 10:5*.

Q: Place of birth. Upbringing. Lifespan. Thousands of factors.
Does everyone have a fair and equal chance to be saved?
Q: How so?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

... there is no respect of persons with GOD. (Romans 2:11)

Kindly note *Isaiah 55:8-9* and exclude any possibility of errors on His part.

Q: Do you believe someone can be a Christian without trusting in the Bible?
Q: Why or why not?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: No, I don't believe it. Why? Because it is impossible.
Would you follow GOD without wholeheartedly believing His Words & Works, especially if those are in Perfect Harmony with His Creation?
I wouldn't.

11

Q: It is written:

Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows ...
... with His stripes we are healed. (Isaiah 53:4,5)

... Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses. (Matthew 8:17)

Heal the sick, cleance the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils:
Freely ye have received, Freely give. (Matthew 10:8)

If Jesus had taken away sicknesses, infirmities, diseases, and alike, moreover, empowered His Followers to fight those evils, the question is: why are there so many sick people in *the Church of GOD*?

A: First, let's remember the Holy Purpose of GOD for Jesus' Ministry.

... Behold the Lamb of GOD, which taketh away the sin of the World.
(John 1:29)

Who was delivered for our offences, and raised again for our Justification.
(Romans 4:25)

... For this Purpose the Son of GOD was manifested,
that He might destroy the works of the devil. (1John 3:8)

Second, we are supposed to differentiate between *spiritual* Health & Healing and the *physical* one. The last, however needful, doesn't move us any closer to GOD.

My son, attend to My Words; incline thine ear unto My Sayings. Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart. For they are Life unto those that find them, and Health to all their flesh. (Proverbs 4:20-22)

Third, we have to estimate our spiritual level determined by *Knowledge*, *Understanding*, and *Wisdom* (see chapter 58). That spirituality helps us to comprehend and obey LORD GOD. That level is generally so pitiful that it may be hard to see, grasp, and keep what GOD freely gives us.

Examine yourselves, whether ye be in the Faith; prove your own selves.
(2Corinthians 13:5)

For I say, through the Grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think soberly, according as GOD hath dealt to every man the measure of Faith. (Romans 12:3)

Add to that a great deal of Satan-inspired doctrines & denominations distorting the Truth of GOD yet, accepted by Believers and get the only answer: we should look for reasons in *ourselves* rather than question or doubt the Holy Scriptures.

Be not deceived; GOD is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. (Galatians 6:7)

Further references: *Exodus 23:24-25* (Nation's Health).
Psalm 38:3 & 1Corinthians 11:27-30 (spiritual reasons).
Luke 5:17 (Healing Power).
Romans 6:12-13 (what physical health is for).
James 5:14-15 (Healing).

Q: Does GOD really have a Plan for every single one of us?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Yes, He does.

Who hath saved us, and called us with an Holy Calling, not according to our works, but according to His Own Purpose and Grace, which was given us in Christ Jesus before the World began ... (2Timothy 1:9)

Kindly see relevant chapters: 24 (The Will of GOD for us)
& 291 (Following the Will of GOD).

Q: If you are a Christian, can others hurt you through "evil eyes" or witchcraft?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: Negative on that.

For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the Love of GOD, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Romans 8:38-39)

12

Q: Do Services for the dead help their Salvation?

A: No, they don't. It is written:

... to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope ... (Ecclesiastes 9:4)

For we must all appear before the Judgment Seat of Christ; that every one may receive the things done in his body, according to that he hath done, whether it be good or bad. (2Corinthians 5:10)

Even so, our Intercessions to GOD for persons who passed away have no spiritual Power. We are not supposed to think that the Kingdom of Heaven is guaranteed or secured to those who got "due" religious funerals, and the richer the ceremony, the better. Neither can we state such blasphemy as the Russian toast, "The Kingdom of Heaven!" at the after-funeral drinking.
I believe we are better off speaking to one another on the Kingdom of Heaven while we live this GOD-given Life and abide in this GOD-made World.

But seek ye first the Kingdom of GOD, and His Righteousness; and all these things shall be added unto you. (Matthew 6:33)

Probably, besides decent funerals, what we can do sooner or later, and more to ourselves than those whom we still love & miss, is *gather together in the Name of Jesus* and state before LORD:

This man (woman, child) has gone with no debts or bad memories left behind. If, however, there is something of the sort, we forgive it. In Promised Name Jesus ...

In our "Q & A", you may see chapters: 77 (The Way of Salvation), 222 (The Parable of Rich Man and Lazarus), and 426 (The house of mourning).

Q: I think I committed blasphemy against God. Will I be forgiven?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Your post testifies that you *live* and, therefore, have *Hope*.
Please see the above-quoted *Ecclesiastes 9:4*. Add to that *Luke 15:20*.
So, repent, confess, and follow the Right track. Godspeed.

13

Q: It is written:

... a man's foes shall be they of his own household.
(Matthew 10:36)

It is also said:

... Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ,
and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. (Acts 16:31)

Does it mean those *foes* may get saved just "accompanying" a *Believer*?

A: No, it doesn't.
Please, consider chapters 60 (Christian Family), 78 (The Rod of Correction), 209 (The Parable of the House on the Rock), and 530 (The real enemy).

Matthew 10:36. Family members become spiritual *foes* (by staying on unbelievers, idolaters, etc.) to every Christian Proselyte.
That satanic enmity – in our homes – is the worst imaginable. All worldly troubles are nothing compared to the stolen Peace of GOD.
No job or Christian Ministry can be above that Responsibility.

Acts 16:31. Those of *thy house* are Believers under your spiritual leadership, your heart (spirit) being under the Holy Ghost.

Train up a child in the Way he should go:
and when he is old, he will not depart from it. (Proverbs 22:6)

The following Scripture helps us to build a Home without foes.

And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart:
And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them
when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way,
and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up ...
And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates.
(Deuteronomy 6:6-7,9. See the repetition in *11:19-20*.)

You are welcome to the Index section to find many relevant "Q & A" chapters on the subjects of *Christian Family*, *Christian Marriage*, and other.
The book by Alex & Stephen Kendrick, *The Love Dare,* is worth your while.

14

Q: Recently I saw a Prayer printed on a calendar. It ran:

Lord, gimme courage to change what I can change,
gimme humbleness and peace to accept what I cannot change,
gimme wisdom to see the first from the second.

Is that Prayer a good one?

A: As a means of our Communion with GOD and Spirit Weapon, the Prayer is a serious business. We are not supposed to ask GOD help us in any matters contrary to His Will. Behold,

... this is the Confidence that we have in Him, that,
if we ask any thing according to His Will, He heareth us ... (1John 5:14)

In the above Prayer, the *human* will to change something is obvious; the *Holy Will of GOD* omitted. You may consider chapter 24 (The Will of GOD for us). Mind the Words *Thy Will be done* in the Lord's Prayer.

Therefore, kindly consider the following proposition:

Lord, gimme Knowledge and Understanding of Your Will,
gimme Humbleness and Peace to embrace Your Will,
gimme Wisdom and Courage to follow Your Will.

Be sincere in your Prayer.

Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by Prayer and Supplication
with Thanksgiving let your Requests be made known unto GOD.
And the Peace of GOD, which passeth all understanding,
shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.
(Philippians 4:6-7)

Please, see the examples of good and wicked approaches to our Father GOD in the *Parable of a Pharisee & a Tax Collector*. (We discussed it in chapter 219).

... for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased;
and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. (Luke 18:14)

15

Q: What does it mean, *put GOD First in your Life*?

A: It is written,

... The LORD our GOD is one LORD:
And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart,
and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. (Deuteronomy 6:4-5)

So, to answer this question, let's try the following questionnaire.
This way, we can check out our Right-Standing with the LORD our GOD.

1. Giving time.
Do I daily sacrifice my time for Communion with the LORD GOD by Prayer and Bible Study? Read *Deuteronomy 6:4-5*.
Do I always come to Church Services and Small Groups well before they begin, prepared for the subject to be discussed, having my routine business left behind and mobile phone off? See *Luke 10:41-42*. Chapter 591 (Our priorities).

2. Giving property.
Am I Honest to GOD in Tithes & Offerings? *Malachi 3:8-11*. Is my dress code for the Church Service higher than for elsewhere? *Ezekiel 42:14 & 44:17-19*.
Am I ready to welcome needy folks into my house? Remember *Isaiah 58:7*.

3. Giving labor.
Do I serve LORD to the best of my (GOD-given) abilities? *Deuteronomy 15:21*.

4. Giving life.
Am I ready to deny myself, leave all, and follow Him? *Mark 10:28*.

5. Obedience.
Is the Word of GOD the Highest & Final Authority for me? Do I always answer *No* to whosoever, all common sense, any legal rules, Church regulations, traditions, &c., &c., contradicting the Holy Scriptures?
Do I seek the Will of GOD before taking whatever important step in my Life?
Do I always follow the Guidance of the Holy Ghost without any compromising?

6. Faith.
Do I go to GOD first in case of any evil (sickness, disaster, loss, etc.)?

7. Last but never least – *Family*. Is my Spouse a Christian? My children?
Do I understand that serving the Holy LORD per the above points, I do best to my Family? Am I aware that GOD does not accept our "serving Him" at the cost of His Word – *Genesis 2:24* – broken? Lo, it is the Holy Ghost, Who gives me & my Family Peace and the best of time we spend together – He, my Family, and I.

See chapters 56 (The Test of Giving), 60 (Christian Family), 73 (True Fast).

May the LORD our GOD bless you & me so that we might honestly answer *Yes* to all these questions. If you think a checklist is not your thing, it's okay. We all are free in our choices. However, you may just have a second look at the above writings and imagine yourself doing something (What exactly?) contrarywise.

> *Our break with the world will be the direct outcome of our changed relation to GOD. For the world of fallen men does not honor GOD. Millions call themselves by His Name, it is true, and pay some token respect to Him, but a simple test will show how little He is really honored among them. Let the average man be put to the Proof on the question of who is above, and his true position will be exposed. Let him be forced into making a choice between GOD and money, between GOD and men, between GOD and personal ambition, GOD and self, GOD and human love, and GOD will take second place every time. Those other things will be exalted above. However the man may protest, the proof is in the choices he makes day after day throughout his life. (A.W. Tozer, The Pursuit Of GOD, p.97)*
>
> In the Christian film "Overcomer", I love one conversation. Answering the question, "Who are you?" the man put "Christian" at the very end of his long list of occupations. And to the second question of a sick man, "Did you pray for me (as yesterday you promised)?" the honest answer was, "No".

Q: I'm curious about health-oriented martial arts.
Are they considered okay?

(Signed: *Seventh Day Adventist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Those arts are okay, *if* they have their due secondary place in your Life.
See chapter 63 (Sports).

For we wrestle not against flesh and blood,
but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness
of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. (Ephesians 6:12)

16

Q: There are two Covenants a.k.a., Testaments in the Holy Scriptures. Hadn't the *New Covenant* revoked the *Old* one?

A: No, it hadn't. The following Scriptures may help us out to see it better.

... And He wrote upon the Tables the Words of the Covenant, the Ten Commandments. (Exodus 34:28)

None of those Ten has ever been terminated. Note *Deuteronomy 29:14-15*.
It is also said,

As for Me, this is My Covenant with them, saith the LORD; My Spirit that is upon thee, and My Words which I have put in thy mouth, shall not depart out of thy mouth, nor out of the mouth of thy Seed, nor out of the mouth of thy Seed's Seed, saith the LORD, from henceforth and for ever. (Isaiah 59:21)

... I am the LORD, I change not ... (Malachi 3:6)

The above Words alone can answer the question.
And Jesus said,

> *Think not that I am come to destroy the Law or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil*. For Verily I say unto you, Till Heaven and Earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least Commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of Heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach Them, the same shall be called Great in the Kingdom of Heaven. (Matthew 5:17-19)*

However, the *Ultimate Sacrifice of Christ* ended (substituted) the former GOD-Ordained *Animal Sacrifices* (and relevant *Blood-Ceremonies*) for our sins.

Who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the Will of GOD and our Father: To Whom be Glory for ever and ever. Amen. (Galatians 1:4-5)

* Nobody can *fulfill* the Law of GOD or any country, as if carrying it out today to be free of it tomorrow. We obey or disobey. Our Lord Jesus sacrificed Himself following the Holy Law and Will of GOD. Consider *Zechariah 11:10-14*.

Kept or not by us, called Old or New – GOD's Covenant is *Eternal*, even as His Written Word. Kindly read & meditate on *Jeremiah 33:20-26*.
Father GOD made the Covenant with all Creation. Sadly, most of us violated it. Yet, there have always been Faithful Servants of Him. The unfaithfulness of many has never been able to make void what LORD called Eternal.

Hear and pay Attention, do not be arrogant, for the LORD has spoken.
(Jeremiah 13:15, New International Version)

Q: In *Hebrews 8:8-13*, Apostle Paul quoted the Old Testament Scripture and concluded,

In that He saith, A New Covenant, He hath made the First old.
Now that which decayeth and waxeth old is ready to vanish away.
(Hebrews 8:13)

A: True. The Apostle quoted *Jeremiah 31:31-34*.

... which My Covenant they brake, although I was an Husband unto them,
saith the LORD ... (Jeremiah 31:32)

Brother Paul also explained:

... because they continued not in My Covenant,
and I regarded them not, saith the LORD. (Hebrews 8:9)

The Everlasting Covenant & the Law of GOD is to live in our hearts:

But this shall be the Covenant that I will make with the House of Israel. After those days, saith the LORD, I will put My Law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their GOD, and they shall be My People. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know Me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more. (Jeremiah 31:33-34)

The above is confirmed –

... I will put My Laws into their mind,
and write them in their hearts: and I will be to them a GOD,
and they shall be to Me a People ... (Hebrews 8:10)

Please see chapters 17 (The New Covenant), 18 (The Old Covenant),
145 (But I say unto you), 538 (Our Covenant with GOD),
and 583 (A letter of the Law).

Further references: *Deuteronomy 6:4-5* – The Way to obey the Law.
Jeremiah 31:33-34 – LORD GOD remains the same.
Malachi 3:6; Galatians 3:8 – ditto.
John 14:6 – The New Way commanded by GOD.
Romans 3:31 – ... we establish the Law.

Brother A.W. Tozer expressed his view on the Old Covenant this way:

> *The weakness of the Old Testament Law was that it could not deal with the life motivations of any person. ... The Old Covenant was imperfect by the nature of it, temporary in its continuance and inadequate in its effect.*
> (*A.W. Tozer, Experiencing The Presence Of GOD*)

I respectfully disagree. The words "The weakness of the Old Testament Law" are wrong. In my opinion, the *Spirit* of the Law of GOD is as True & Perfect & Unchangeable even as our LORD GOD Himself. We are to mind our approach to His Word. Kindly see chapters 29 & 58. Please note well *Jeremiah 33:3*. But the *letter* of the Law is something else. It is "clear" to everybody who can read (see chapter 583).

Q: What is the significance of Jesus' Saying, "*Behold I make all things New*" (*Revelation 21:5*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: It is written:

And He that sat upon the Throne said, Behold, I make all things New.
And He said unto me, Write: for these Words are True and Faithful.
(Revelation 21:5)

It means New Heaven & New Earth will come up.

For, behold, I create New Heavens and a New Earth:
and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.
(Isaiah 65:17)

17

Q: What was the Purpose the *New Covenant* was made for?

A: We can find the *Scriptures*, which may best answer the question.

... I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father but by Me. (John 14:6)

For there is One GOD, and One Mediator between GOD and men,
the Man Christ Jesus; Who gave Himself a Ransom for all,
to be testified in Due time. (1Timithy 2:5-6)

First, that *New Way* was established by GOD because the *Old Covenant* had been broken by most of the Believers – there & then His Chosen People *Israel*.

Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a New Covenant with the House of Israel, and with the House of Judah: not according to the Covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which My Covenant they brake ...
(Jeremiah 31:31-32)

Kindly note the Words "they brake" spoken by GOD to His Servant Jeremiah. The LORD did not tell "you brake", thus addressing him as a representative of those people or seeing Jeremiah (and his likes) a part of one unfaithful crowd.
And has that unfaithfulness stopped in the New Testament Era? No way.
The Covenant of the LORD, our GOD, is *Everlasting*, the Old & New ones being just the constituents or different forms thereof or expressions of one another.
GOD laid down that Covenant is between Him and His *True* Servants. The total number of Servants is subject to change since many enter the Covenant and then break it. A good Parallel is in Jesus' Parable of Sower ("Q & A" chapter 225).

Using the program *e-Sword*, I've searched the Holy Scriptures and found fifteen Verses containing the Words "Everlasting Covenant". And nowhere these Words are accompanied by "in a manner of speaking", or "sort of", or suchlike.

Thus saith the LORD; If ye can break My Covenant of the day, and my Covenant of the night, and that there should not be day and night in their season;
Then may also My Covenant be broken with David My Servant,
that he should not have a son to reign upon his Throne;
and with the Levites the Priests, My Ministers. (Jeremiah 33:20-21)

Second, the New Covenant forever terminated Animal Sacrifices by Ultimate & Substitutional Sacrifice of Christ.

> *For such an High Priest became us,*
> *Who is Holy, Harmless, Undefiled, Separate from sinners, and made Higher than the Heavens; Who needeth not daily, as those High Priests, to offer up Sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's: for this He did once, when He offered up Himself. (Hebrew 7:26-27)*

By those *Animal Sacrifices*, the sins committed were forgiven. But could people become Righteous and loving GOD as per *Deuteronomy 6:4-5*? Nay.

> *... and from all things from which ye were not able in the Law of Moses to be declared Righteous, in this One* [Jesus] *every one who is believing is declared Righteous ... (Acts 13:39, Young's Literal Translation, 1890)*

Well, no more blood of animals is required. Our Lord paid the best possible Price for our Reconciliation with Father GOD. But are we saved when just "accepted" Jesus to be our Lord & Savior? Again, Nay. Take up the *Cross* and follow Him to be *in* Him per the above Scripture. Note *Matthew 10:38*. See chapter 77.

The *New Covenant* is between the *Body of Christ* – meaning all those who Truly belong there – and the same ever unchangeable *LORD GOD*.

For I am the LORD, I change not;
therefore ye Sons of Jacob are not consumed. (Malachi 3:6)

Kindly see chapters 4 (The Cross), 16 (Two Covenants), 18 (The Old Covenant), and 538 (Our Covenant with GOD).

Further references.

Exodus 34:28 & Deuteronomy 6:4-6 ------- GOD's Commanded Condition.
Isaiah 53 & Jeremiah 23:5-6 ---------- Christ Jesus, our Lord.
Jeremiah 31:33 & 1John 5:3 ---------- GOD's Covenant renewed.
Matthew 5:17-19 & Luke 16:16-17 -------- New Way by the same Law.
John 14:6 & Galatians 3:26 ---------- ditto.
Romans 8:4 ---------- Following the Holy Ghost.
1Corinthians 11:25 ---------- New Covenant of Blood.
Hebrews 9:11-14 ---------- Our True Purification.

18

Q: Do Old Testament Scriptures continue to teach us?

A: Yes, sure. Every Scripture, or Chapter, or Book of the Bible demands of us, the Disciples, to answer two crucial questions:
First, what is the spiritual import meaning thereof?
Second, what is the daily implementation thereof?

For instance,

... man doth not live by bread only, but by every Word
that proceedeth out of the Mouth of the LORD doth man live.
(Deuteronomy 8:3)

The *Meaning* (or the *Message* or the *Lesson*): the Word of GOD is that only food, without which our spirit lay dormant & deaf to the Holy Ghost. And our soul (left without due control of the heart) is opened to every lie of the devil.
The parallel Scripture is,

Give us this day our daily Bread. (Matthew 6:11)

Daily following *Deuteronomy 8:3* is nothing but *Bible Study*, which is much more than reading in a bed.

My Son, attend to My Words; incline thine ear unto My Sayings.
Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart.
For they are Life unto those that find them, and Health to all their flesh.
(Proverbs 4:20-22)

That Study – under Good Guidance of our Promised Teacher the Holy Spirit – raises many questions, while at the same time, provides all the answers. For nothing else can explain or prove the Word of GOD other than the Word itself.

Bible Study also demands the uncompromising following or Obedience.

... If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My Disciples indeed;
And ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free. (John 8:32)

In the Old Testament Scriptures, we meet the names *Israel* & *Twelve Tribes* more than once. That shouldn't make us think that the Scriptures were actually written to *them*, and therefore, have lost much of the Signification nowadays.

For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our Learning, that we through Patience and Comfort of the Scriptures might have Hope. (Romans 15:4)

True, the LORD our GOD did call Jews to be His Chosen People.
Deuteronomy 7:6, 15:5-6, 33:27-29; Isaiah 41:8, 43:4, & 49:3.
Kindly see chapter 59 (The Chosen People of GOD).

Reading in the Bible about the development of old Israel, and comparing the corresponding maps of the Promised Land in the times of David & Solomon with the modern political one, we might guess the case closed. At least, regarding those Chosen People or "the first among equals". However, it is not so.
The Book of Revelation brings us back to Israel. *Revelation 21:12*.

Moreover, you can take whatever Old Testament Book, Chapter, or Scripture and put the name of your country or nation instead of *Israel* or any of her Tribe, or even their heathen enemy, depending on the problem your people may face. And find the Word of GOD very instructive here & now.
For,

The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be;
and that which is done is that which shall be done:
and there is no new thing under the Sun. (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

Mind well these Parallels: *Matthew 22:32, Mark 12:26-27, & Luke 20:37-38*.

Therefore,

Hear ye, and give ear; be not proud: for the LORD hath spoken. (Jeremiah 13:15)

Kindly see chapters 16 (Two Covenants), 17 (The New Covenant), and 538 (Our Covenant with GOD).

Q: Is there an explanation anywhere for *why* the wages of sin is death?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Why? Please read *Genesis 1:4*. There are many Lessons to learn from that Scripture, one of them – we can be with or without LORD GOD in Eternity, following & communing with Him or the devil – *tertium non datur*.
Please also compare *Genesis 2:16-17 & Genesis 3:4-6*. Disobedience to our Father GOD is the sin leading to death.

19

Q: Do we need Confession?
Q: Isn't Bible Study enough for spiritual cleansing?
It is written,

Now ye are Clean
through the Word which I have spoken unto you. (John 15:3)

Husbands, love your wives, even as Christ also loved the Church,
and gave Himself for it; that He might sanctify and cleanse it with
the washing of Water by the Word ... (Ephesians 5:25-26)

A: The Purifying Word of GOD also said,

If we say that we have no sin,
we deceive ourselves, and the Truth is not in us.
If we confess our sins, He is Faithful and Just to forgive us our sins,
and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.
If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar,
and His Word is not in us. (1John 1:8-10)

Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another,
that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent Prayer of a Righteous man
availeth much. (James 5:16)

The thing is, both these ways – *Bible Study** and *Confession* – indeed cleanse ourselves, but do it differently. The Sacrament of Confession uproots the evil seeds and stops dead the demerit of our sinful past, whereas, the Written Word of GOD studied and meditated upon purifies our mind of all evil thoughts and, therefore, helps out to avoid sins in the future.

* The above-quoted *John 15:3* teaches on *Purifying Communion with GOD* via *His Word.* As *Ephesians 5:25-26* clarifies, *Love* helps that *Communion.*

Cleansing by the Written Word of GOD is *conditional*, as the following Scriptures well explain.

Do not let this Book of the Law depart from your mouth;
meditate on it day and night. (Joshua 1:8)

Thou wilt keep him in Perfect Peace, whose mind is stayed on Thee:
because he trusteth in Thee. (Isaiah 26:3)

Be Honest to the Lord Jesus. He does not want us to turn *temporarily* back to Father GOD when overwhelmed by the demerit of our sins, we ask for His Help. So, exclude any compromise with the devil taking you back on a sinful track. We should *prove* our Repentance worded in Confession.

> *... they all murmured, saying, that He was gone to be guest with a man that is a sinner. And Zacchæus stood, and said unto the Lord, Behold, Lord, the half of my goods I give to the poor, and if I have taken any thing from any man by false accusation, I restore him fourfold. And Jesus said unto him, This day is Salvation come to this house, forsomuch as he also is a Son of Abraham. (Luke 19:7-9)*

Being One in Christ Jesus, help one another to confess sins.

> *Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are Spiritual, restore such an one in the Spirit of Meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted. Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the Law of Christ. (Galatians 6:1-2)*

There is a good custom in the Catholic and Orthodox Churches to combine Confession and Holy Communion (Eucharist), namely, the first to precede the second. In my experience, which, hopefully, doesn't speak of all Protestants, the latter ignore the Sacrament of Confession.

You can read more about Confession in
Leviticus 26:40-42 (Teaching) & *2Samuel 12:13* (Answer);
Psalms 32:5 (Testimony) & *Proverbs 28:13* (Teaching);
*Jeremiah 14:7,20 (*Examples); *16:19* (Predicted); *& Daniel 9:3-19* (Example);
Matthew 3:6 (Baptism) & *27:3-5* (Negative).

See relevant chapters: 34, 35, 42, 46, 405, & 608.

Q: Should I ask for Forgiveness from people that I've hurt in the past even though they don't hold it against me?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: I guess you should. Your question testifies that you may know some things that those people are unaware of. For instance, your bad example of living, selfishness, tolerating errors, unwillingness to help, hidden anger, etc.

20

Q: It is written:

... He said unto them, Go ye into all the World, and preach the Gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. (Mark 16:15-16)

It is also said:

*And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with Me in Paradise. (Luke 23:43)**

From the second Scripture, we can see that no *Water Baptism* was possible, as the criminal had been nailed down unto the cross. But the *Promise* had been given. Does it mean that *Water Baptism* is not compulsory at all?

A: No, it doesn't.
Note, the first Scripture – *Mark 16:15-16* – runs *believeth not*, not *is not baptized*. The second one – *Luke 23:43* – actually presumes impossibility of *Water Baptism* in the circumstances. However, the Right attitude of that man's heart had been made clear to *Jesus* by the *Holy Ghost*.

... for out of abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. (Matthew 12:34)

That spiritual attitude was obviously seen by Father GOD and His Decision (by the same Spirit) passed onto Jesus.

Blessed are the Pure in heart: for they shall see GOD. (Matthew 5:8)

The circumstances may force us to deviate from the conventional procedures. Led by the Holy Spirit of GOD we can baptize (using just cup of water) in prisons, hospitals, homes, etc., seeing Water Baptism a Symbol of *Cleansing***, not immersion, like some Believers think.
Sincere Confession should be held high above other details. *Matthew 3:6*.

I advise most strongly to confess sins at the *Water Baptism*, whether or not your Pastor demands it.

* *Luke 23:43* is discussed separately in chapter 243.
** By *Zondervan Bible Dictionary*, Jewish word *baptizo* means *cleansing*.

In his comments to *John 19:34*, Brother William Barclay wrote,

> *It was a Symbol of the two Great Sacraments of the Church. There is one Sacrament which is based on Water-Baptism; and there is one which is based on blood – the Lord's Supper with its Cup of Blood – red wine. The water of Baptism is the Sign of the Cleansing Grace of GOD in Jesus Christ; the wine of the Lord's Supper is the Symbol of the blood which was shed to save men from their sins. The water and the blood which flowed from the side of Christ were ... the Sign of the cleansing water of Baptism and the cleansing blood commemorated and experienced in the Lord's Supper. (The Daily Study Bible)*

Kindly consider chapter 66 (Threefold Baptism).

The references:

> *Ezekiel 36:25* _____ *Foreshadow & Meaning of Baptism.*
> *Matthew 3:6 & Luke 3:7-14* _____ *Spiritual Cleansing.*
> *Acts 22:16* _____ *... wash away thy sins ...*

Water Baptism is well pictured in the following movies.

Matthew	*The Case For Christ*
The Gospel Of John	*Jimmy*
Jesus (1979)	*Let There Be Light* *

* Mind the words,

Baptism is a public Proclamation of Faith for all to see, and that's so nobody can cop out and say it never happened.

Q: Can you be a real Christian if you haven't been baptized/christened?
Q: Do you see unbaptized Believers as the same as an ordinary Christian?
Q: How important is Baptism to you?

(Signed: *Agnostic*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: Kindly be reminded that a *real* Christian is a Follower of Christ Jesus.
So, your words "unbaptized" & "an ordinary Christian" are not correct.
Please see the Index for *Christian* and *Baptism*.
See the answer to your third question in the quotation right above.

21

Q: What's a *Christian* approach to *voting*?

A: The Word of GOD clears it up for *Christian* countries (chapter 55). Local authorities are elected, their *Godliness* is compulsory.

> *Judges and Officers shalt thou make thee in all thy gates, which the LORD thy GOD giveth thee, throughout thy tribes: and they shall judge the people with Just Judgment. Thou shalt not wrest Judgment; thou shalt not respect persons, neither take a gift: for a gift doth blind the eyes of the Wise, and pervert the words of the Righteous. That which is altogether Just shalt thou follow, that thou mayest live, and inherit the Land which the LORD thy GOD giveth thee. (Deuteronomy 16:18-20)*

The Ruler of a country is to be chosen by *LORD GOD* only, not by men. Unbelievers must not be Presidents. These two good translations confirm that.

> *Thou shalt in any wise set him King over thee, whom the LORD thy GOD shall choose: one from among thy Brethren shalt thou set King over thee: thou mayest not set a stranger over thee, which is not thy Brother. (Deuteronomy 17:15, King James Version, Pure Cambridge Edition)*

> *... thou shalt surely set over thee the Ruler whom the LORD GOD shall choose: of thy Brethren thou shalt set over thee a Ruler; thou shalt not have Power to set over thee a stranger, because he is not thy Brother. (Deuteronomy 17:15, Septuagint, L.C.L. Brenton, 1844)*

All relevant questions based upon *common sense* had been answered by our GOD long ago:

> *Hear and pay attention, do not be arrogant, for the LORD has spoken. (Jeremiah 13:15, New International Version, 1973)*

Further references: *Deuteronomy 17:16-20* – The Law all Kings are to follow.
1Samuel chapter 8 – Chosen without asking GOD's Will.
Nehemiah 9:37 – The evil Kings.
Hosea 8:4 – The evil elections.
Hosea 13:9-11 – GOD's Punishment – the evil Kings.

Relevant chapters: 418 (King's heart) & 670 (A scarecrow of anarchy).

22

Q: What is the meaning of the *Third Commandment* of the Law?

A: The Name of our Father GOD should be revered, which presumes unwavering & uncompromising Faith in its Power, proper pronunciation (No traditional misspelling!) and keeping *Most Holy.*

We must avoid using it in whatever other way but *Communion with Him,* alone in a Secret Room or among Faithful Fellow-Believers.

Thou shalt not take the Name of the LORD thy GOD in vain;
for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh His Name in vain.
(Exodus 20:7 & Deuteronomy 5:11)

I believe the Name *Jesus*, besides other Purposes, is GOD-Ordained *Shield* to His Sacred Name. The Name *Jesus* (or LORD GOD, Father GOD, &c.) protects us from a great offense against the Third Commandment.

... whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him:
but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him,
neither in this world, neither in the world to come. (Matthew 12:32)

Note, in *Matthew 6:9-13* (a.k.a., the Lord's Prayer) Jesus glorified our Heavenly Father without actual pronouncing His Name. He simply said,

Hallowed be Thy Name. (Matthew 6:9)

Hallowed means Separated. For what other purposes should we separate that Name but Worship, Prayer, and Meditation? GOD's Name should never be used in trivial conversation, preaching, publishing. Say just GOD or LORD. Amen.
Not agree? Come on, one of the Ten Commandments, even the tenth part of the Holy Law, is dedicated to that Sacred Name!

I wil geue Thankes vnto the LORDE with my whole herte:
Secretly amonge the Faithfull, and in the Congregacion.
*(Psalms 111:1, Miles Coverdale Version, 1535) **

Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs,
neither cast ye your Pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet,
and turn again and rend you. (Matthew 7:6)

See chapters 142 (Swear by His Name), 161 (Jewish Creed),
& 691 (The Name Most Holy).

... if two of you shall agree on Earth as touching any thing that they shall ask,
it shall be done for them of My Father which is in Heaven.
For where two or three are gathered together in My Name,
there am I in the midst of them. ()

Psalms 20:1, 91:14-16, 96:8 ---------- The Power to glorify.
* *Psalms 22:22* ---------- The Parallel.
Isaiah 9:6; Mark 16:17-18; Matthew 18:19-20; Philippians 2:9-11 ----------
---------- Mighty Name of Jesus.
Luke 24:47 ---------- The Great Commission.
John 1:12-13; 1John 3:23 ---------- Faith in His Name.
John 14:14 ---------- The Name to pray in.
Acts 4:12 ---------- Our Great Salvation.
10:43 ---------- The Remission of sins.
Ephesians 5:20 ---------- Thanking GOD.
Colossians 3:17 ---------- Living in His Name.

Q: Why Cain was so protected? *Genesis 4:15*.

A: Far as I get it, he understood and, however awkwardly, confessed his sin.
In a way, the matter resembled *Luke 15:2*0.
But what we see in *Genesis 4:23* went a step further, even matching this Scripture:

We acknowledge, O LORD, our wickedness, and the iniquity of our fathers:
for we have sinned against Thee. (Jeremiah 14:20)

Brother Lamech (even ignoring *Genesis 2:24* by his taking two wives) confessed the sin of his forefather Cain, apparently seeing the evil harvest thereof in his life.

And Lamech said unto his wives, Adah and Zillah, Hear my voice;
ye wives of Lamech, hearken unto my speech: for I have slain a man
to my wounding, and a young man to my hurt. (Genesis 4:23)

That corresponds to *James 5:16*.
And *Genesis 4:24* may support my opinion.

23

Q: Is there any difference between *spirit* and *soul*?

A: Yes, there is. We, humans, are triune beings: *spirit* (a.k.a., heart – not a physical one), *soul* (comprising mind, will, feelings), and (physical) *body*. By *Kenneth Copeland*, as I once heard him preached, *Man is a spirit, he has a soul and lives in a body.* This way, every member is put in its right place.

Deuteronomy 6:4-5 (a.k.a., Jewish Creed) runs:

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our GOD is One LORD:
and thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD
with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.

In this Scripture, we can see a clear distinction to sort all three out.
In *Mark 12:30*, stating the *First Great Commandment*, Lord Jesus even spoke of *mind* – the core value of our *soul.*

... thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thy heart, and with all thy soul,
and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength ...

The we read in the *Book of Isaiah*:

Thou wilt keep him in Perfect Peace,
whose mind is stayed on Thee: because he trusteth in Thee. (Isaiah 26:3)

Our spirit may have such powerful positive qualities as Love, Faith, Hope, or else these negatives: fear, pride, enmity, cruelty, greed, lust, unbelief, &c. Thus, it is utmost important who indwells & rules our heart: the Holy Spirit of GOD or a demon of Satan. Yea, *tertium non datur* – the third term not being given (Latin).

My flesh and my heart faileth: but GOD is the Strength of my heart,
and my Portion for ever. (Psalms 73:26)

Our soul is under a spirit. When the last is Godly, i.e., opened to the Holy Ghost, then intellect – the power of a mind – accumulates Knowledge & Understanding from GOD and finds means & ways to obey & follow Him. A Godly intellect will never seek reasons & excuses for disobedience to LORD.

In Whos Hond the soule is of ech lyuynge thing, and the spirit, that is,
resonable soule, of ech fleisch of man. (Job 12:10, John Wycliffe Translation)

But there is a spirit in man: and the Inspiration of the Almighty
giveth them Understanding. (Job 32:8)

Note, only the heart (spirit) could have thus commanded:

Prayse the LORDE, O my soule: and all that is within me
prayse His Holy Name. (Psalms 103:1, Miles Coverdale Bible, 1535)

A Believer's mind is not apt to compromise & common sense. The latter two are to rule simple natural things only.

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself
against the Knowledge of GOD, and bringing into captivity every thought
to the Obedience of Christ ... (2Corinthians 10:5)

The LORD, our GOD, is always quick to answer our seeking Him and bless us with more spiritual abilities.

A New heart also will I give you, and a New spirit will I put within you:
and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh,
and I will give you an heart of flesh. And I will put My Spirit within you,
and cause you to walk in My Statutes, and ye shall keep My Judgments,
and do them. (Ezekiel 36:26-27)

See parallel chapter 108 (The trinity of a human).
You may read more on the subject in these books –

Kenneth E. Hagin, Man On Three Dimensions
Kenneth Copeland, Sensitivity Of Heart
Gloria Copeland, Walk In The Spirit

Biblical references:

Proverbs 11:17, 14:30, 18:14 …….. Spiritual & physical health.
Jeremiah 10:23 …….. GOD rules hearts.
Matthew 12:43-45 …….. Evil spirits.
1Corinthians 2:14-16 …… Understanding.
Hebrews 4:12 …….. Spirit & soul.
1John 3:21 …… Conscience.

Q: (1) Are all souls equal & identical?.
Q: (2) If souls are immaterial and “made in the Image of God”, does that mean that all souls are fundamentally the same?
Q: (3) Does it imply that all people are of the same fundamental value as human beings?
Q: (4) Is my soul different from your soul?
Q: (5) Are some souls worth more than others?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) All souls are equal. *Romans 2:11*. But not identical. That you can see in the brief description of Adam & Eve given in *Genesis 3:12-13* (find more in chapter 147) and up to the persons you deal with here & now.
(2) I believe the Image & Likeness of GOD dwells in our spirit (a.k.a., heart). The latter determines such spiritual quality as Righteousness and (hopefully) holds spiritual Gifts: Love, Faith, Hope, etc.
Ruled by our hearts, souls make different personalities.
Thus souls are fundamentally the same only in the order of subordination.
(3) You can call it “the same fundamental value” standing on the above-mentioned *Romans 2:11*.
(4) As I said, our souls are different.
(5) That worthiness is to be made known on the Judgment Day. Until then, mind *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.

Q: Does the Holy Spirit ever leave a Believer?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: Strictly speaking, No. Since LORD GOD is *Omnipresent*, His Holy Spirit doesn’t leave anybody, Believer or not.

But the Holy Ghost can withdraw from us His Guidance and Protection. That happens when we willingly stop following GOD, do evil, and compromise with the devil. *1Samuel 16:14*.

Create in me a Clean heart, O GOD; and renew a Right spirit within me.
Cast me not away from Thy Presence; and take not thy Holy Spirit from me.
Restore unto me the Joy of Thy Salvation; and uphold me with Thy Free Spirit.
(Psalm 51:10-12)

Considering the above Scripture a Prayer, see the Promised Answer of GOD in *Ezekiel 36:26-27* quoted earlier in this chapter.

24

Q: How to know the *Will of GOD* for our life?

A: That we should know indeed to serve Him better, willingly – not under obligation, provided we do love LORD GOD by keeping His Holy Law. But to discover our personal Ministry in the Body of Christ, we ought to consider those Good Gifts we have been blessed with, since –

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above,
and cometh down from the Father of Lights ... (James 1:17)

We can see it in our level of *spirituality* (Love, Faith, Patience, Knowledge, Understanding); *intellectual* abilities; *physical* health & strength, etc.
You and I should pray LORD GOD to show us where *He* is willing to send us, rather than to strengthen us as we follow *our* will or understanding.
With all due respect (and obedience) to Pastors, we cannot find *our* Ministry in *their* orders to serve here or there, do this or that.

Following *Matthew 28:19-20*, some Elders send us to so-called *Evangelization* (in my experience, to little avail) by preaching and distributing leaflets & booklets around.
The thing is, we all should follow that Commandment of our Lord in the circumstances given, communicating with our neighbors, colleagues, or fellow passengers. Be careful to stop talking about spiritual Values in time to avoid *blasphemy* spoken by unbelievers. Remember *Matthew 7:6*.
Please see chapter 199 (Evangelizing).
You may, say, mention your Church in a pass-time conversation and watch the reaction of your listeners to know whether to continue speaking on the subject and communicate at all.

But to evangelize as *a Minister* is a job not for everyone. We should love the Work we do and be confident that it is ordained and (per *Matthew 28:20*) backed by Lord Jesus.
He gives every Gift to the right person.

And He gave some, Apostles; and some, Prophets; and some, Evangelists; and some, Pastors and Teachers; for the Perfecting of the Saints, for the Work of the Ministry, for the Edifying of the Body of Christ: till we all come in the Unity of the Faith, and of the Knowledge of the Son of GOD ... (Ephesians 4:11-13)

In chapter 15, we discussed the relative subject – GOD First in our Life. In both cases, we should *seek* the His Holy Will for ourselves to *know* it for sure.
A Full-time Ministry may require *backup* from our Congregation.
Please see chapter 54 regarding the sponsors to be avoided.
Take time to meditate on the Written Word of GOD. His Still Small Voice may remind you of the Scriptures answering every question of yours.

Having then Gifts differing according to the Grace that is given to us,
whether Prophecy, let us prophesy according to the proportion of Faith;
or Ministry, let us wait on our Ministering: or he that teacheth, on Teaching;
or he that exhorteth, on Exhortation: he that giveth, let him do it with Simplicity;
he that ruleth, with Diligence; he that sheweth Mercy, with Cheerfulness.
(Romans 12:6-8)

Kindly take a look at chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry).

Please read: *Morris Cerullo, Knowing GOD's Will For Your Life*
Gloria Copeland, GOD's Will For You
Gloria Copeland, GOD's Will Is The Holy Spirit

Q: (1) How has GOD answered your Prayers or the Prayers of others?
Q: (2) What does the Answered Prayer mean to you?

(Signed: *Christian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Edited. Condensed.)

A: (1) He always does it according to His Word.

And this is the Confidence that we have in Him,
that, if we ask any thing according to His Will, He heareth us.
And if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have
the Petitions that we desired of Him. (1John 5:14-15)

(2) It is always the Confirmation that the Holy Ghost dwells in me.
However, the more I know Him, the more I comprehend *Philippians 4:6-7*.
And I end my Prayers with the Words: *Thy Will be done*.

Now unto Him that is Able to do exceeding abundantly above all
that we ask or think, according to the Power that worketh in us,
unto Him be Glory in the Church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages,
World without end. Amen. (Ephesians 3:20-21)

25

Q: Writer, what if you are wrong?

A: If you mean my book, it is only our Christian Communion, conversation, discussions, exchange of opin*ions.* My purpose is to stir up a *spiritual hunger* for GOD's Word, not to teach or preach the word of mine.

... for One is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are Brethren.
(Matthew 23:8)

If you disagree with me on any topic – it is okay – speak up (contact me).

For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. (1Corinthians 13:9)

But first, please, search your Bible. If all you can say is, *Sorry, I don't remember where I put it* ... – hold your peace.
Brother *Luther* said at the Court of the Diet of Worms:

Unless I am convicted by Scriptures ... my conscience is captive to the Word of GOD. I cannot and I will not recant anything, for to go against conscience is neither Right nor Safe. GOD help me. Amen.
(Roland H. Bainton, Here I Stand, A Life Of Martin Luther, p.185)

Therefore, I may be wrong (in folks' eyes), yet don't do them wrong. I converse with my listeners and readers, tell many Friends in Christ of my personal Experience with GOD, not tutoring anybody. In my humble opinion, this is the way to avoid lies and to draw every attention to our Holy Bible.

If there are ten different Churches (representing ten denominations) in your area, ask every Pastor what he preaches. Most probably, the answer would be: "I preach the Word." But do they? If their preaching the Truth differs from one another, then at least nine Pastors lie. That's a risky business.
(Please see "Q & A" chapters 5 & 7.)

... every Church and its Ministers put their own meaning upon the Word of GOD, and that often contrary to the Truth ... every Prophecy has its precise and determinate Meaning, which no human ingenuity can alter ... We ought therefore to exercise our judgment, with Proper Help, and in Dependence on Divine Teaching ...
(Thomas Scott, The Holy Bible, Commentary, vol.6, 1866)

26

Q: Why GOD commanded His People Israel to kill Canaanites, *women* & *children* inclusive, even their *livestock* when the Promised Land was being conquered?

A: As far as I understand, the LORD ordered it to exterminate all things contaminated by sin. That action might be compared to amputation in medicine when a still functioning limb is cut off to save a life.

The sin there & then was the abominable idolatry worst manifested in sacrificing *little children* to false gods, that is, to Satan.

For it was Thy Will to destroy by the handes of our fathers both those old inhabitants of Thy Holy Land, whom Thou hatedst for doing most odious workes of witchcrafts, and wicked sacrifices; and also those mercilesse murderers of children, & deuourers of mans flesh, and the feasts of blood; with their Priests out of the midst of their idolatrous crew, and the parents that killed with their owne hands, soules destitute of helpe: that the Land which Thou esteemedst aboue all other, might receiue a Worthy Colonie of GODs Children.
(Wisdome of Solomon 12:3-7, King James Version, 1611)

The ancient Israelites learned that abomination of the heathen nations. Kindly read the following Scriptures: *2Chronicles 28:3, 33:6; Psalms 106:36-38; Jeremiah 7:30-31, 19:4-5, 32:34-35; Ezekiel 16:20-21, & 23:37-39.*

I beg to note, nowadays, that *sin* is still going on, even the more heinous way. Because when we send our sons & daughters to schools where teachers are not Christians, don't we *sacrifice* the children? Not exactly, you may say. Right. For those evil fires of old killed poor innocents relatively quickly and that, most probably, followed by *Paradise* and their *Eternal Life*, whereas now, brought up *unbelievers*, our children might end up in a much worse *fire of hell* (see "Q & A" chapter 8) and *death eternal*. Kindly see parallel chapters 50 & 573.

The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be;
and that which is done is that which shall be done:
and there is no new thing under the Sun. (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

Regarding *animals*, the reason they got slaughtered was the same as *amputation* mentioned at the beginning of this chapter. Please, see *Genesis 1:28,* where our Authority over all Creation stated.

Our GOD-given *Dominion* is on the *spiritual* level. (And only He can revoke it. Kindly refer to chapters 312 & 313.) Therefore, all human actions, Good or evil, proportionally command the relevant move in nature to better or worse. Regretfully, the worst it was and continues.
Our Dominion is still in force. However, note well *2Corinthians 4:4.*
Human *spiritual blindness* had started from Genesis times. GOD's Peaceful Nature became unreasonable, dangerous, predatory. That's why, there & then, the *evil Canaanites* contaminated everything around there, animals inclusive.

For the worshipping of idoles not to be named,
is the beginning, the cause, and the end, of all euill.
(Apocrypha, The Wisdome of Solomon, 14:27, King James Version, 1611)

Q: Why does the Old Testament tell people to kill unbelievers?.
I'm a Christian and found out recently some Old Testament Verses talking about it being alright to kill unbelievers, family, etc.
Q: What is the context of this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: The reason why and the list of Verses you can find in chapter 95.
We discussed Good Judgment in chapters 96 & 655.
Please note that GOD does not tolerate sin & lawlessness.
The Way to repent is *Luke 15:20*.
And, where you question Verses, kindly consider the context right there.

Q: Okay. What about your civic position in what is going on now in Ukraine, even the fascist invasion of Russia and heroic Ukrainian defense?

A: I volunteered in the Right Sector Corps of the Ukrainian Defense.

Q: But in those Military Forces, you have to take arms and kill. Doesn't that contradict your Christian standpoint?

A: No, it doesn't. The Written Word of GOD demands the death penalty for murderers. So, as Believers or not, Ukrainian Military Forces (ZSU) execute the Judgment of our LORD GOD.
At the same time, as a Christian, I believe that the Prayer of Faith is more than any weapon, even as our Heavenly Father is mightier than Satan.

(The talk took place in our regional Territorial Defense Center in March 2022.)

27

Q: What does the *Word of GOD* teach us on *widowhood*?
Q: Is it a *betrayal* to marry again when one has lost a spouse?

A: The matter is strictly personal, with no counseling or teaching.
Only you may decide for yourself what is *Love*, *Family*, *betrayal*.

In *Matthew 22:30*, our *Lord Jesus*, answering *the false Teachers*, said,

... in the Resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage,
but are as the Angels of GOD in Heaven.

Thus, in *Heaven*, the People of GOD are supposed to *love one another*, married or not. Nevertheless,

... the two become One. (Genesis 2:24, Revised English Bible, 1989)

So they are no longer two but One ...
(Matthew 19:6 & Mark 10:8, Good News Bible, 1976)

When *Love* does exist in a *Christian Family*, then nothing, *death* inclusive, can separate at all, much less forever. *Divorces & remarriages* can & do.
In Resurrection, the Loving couple will meet up to *reunite*.

Yet, the most valuable thing is *Salvation* for both spouses. That Salvation should be fought for (by following Lord Jesus no matter what) as a Family and continued after one spouse passed away by another one for both.

See parallel chapters 60 (*Christian Family*), 307 (*Heavenly Love*),
& 596 (*You are not alone*).

Scriptural references –

Romans 8:6,11,13 ……..... Death, Resurrection, Life.
Proverbs 10:2, 11:4 & John 8:51 ….. The Power of Righteousness.
1Corinthians 7:14,16 …….. A Widow can work out Salvation.
1Corinthians 7:40 ……..... A widow is happier.
1Timothy 5:3-13 ……..... The Widowhood explained.

Please, watch the Christian movie *Pamela's Prayer*.

If you don't agree with me and the above film, it's okay.
Kindly try the following *Christian* movies.

Robber Of The Cruel Streets
After the Promise
The Lost And Found Family
GOD Bless The Broken Road

Love Saga: *Love Begins*
Love's Everlasting Courage
Love Comes Softly
Love's Enduring Promise
Love's Long Journey
Love's Abiding Joy
Love's Unending Legacy
Love's Unfolding Dream
Love Takes Wing
Love Finds Home
Love's Christmas Journey

Q: If I am trying to renew my Faith after a long estrangement, where to begin? I used to be a regular attendee of the Church with my family. However, I grew preoccupied with working and could get antsy sitting in Church. I hate singing Songs and dancing of Praise – that was probably the most frustrating thing for me. It's been a good seven years, and I haven't touched a Bible or gone to Church.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: Please understand that being an "attendee" is not enough. Aim to be a Member, that is, find your *Ministry*. The latter can be within your Local Church or elsewhere. Kindly consult chapter 461.

That personal Ministry – the Work of the Holy Ghost through you – is more important than singing & dancing you mention and, apparently, feel hypocritical.
A good beginning (you ask about) is *Confession*.
You can find the relevant "Q & A" chapters in our Index section.
Being busy is OK. Just make sure your current employment doesn't contradict the Word of GOD. So, the Bible should be seriously studied.
Godspeed.

28

Q: Does GOD by His Word teach us something about *animals*?

A: He does and a lot. The following Scripture references are but some of many.

GOD willing, the animals may see the spirit world: *Numbers 22:22-33*.

They are spirit & soul: *Numbers 16:22, Job 39:3, Psalm 104:30, & Ecclesiastes 3:18-21*.

Demons might indwell them: *Matthew 8:31-32, Mark 5:12-13, & Luke 8:32-33.*

They are accountable to GOD: *Genesis 9:5 & Exodus 21:28-29.*

Goodness unto animals is ordained: *Exodus 23:4-5,12; Deuteronomy 22:6-7, 25:4; Proverbs 12:10; & Isaiah 32:20*.

Cruelty to animals is cursed: *Habakkuk 2:17*.

They show kindness to men: *Luke 16:21*.

They are GOD's Praise: *Isaiah 43:20 & Revelation 5:13*.

GOD cares for animals: *Genesis 8:1,21; 9:8-13; Exodus 23:11-12; Leviticus 25:6-7; Psalms 36:6; 104:10-14; 136:25; 145:16; 147:9; Isaiah 11:6-9; 65:25; Hosea 2:18; Joel 1:20; 2:22; Jonah 4:11; Matthew 6:26; 10:29; & Luke 12:6,24*.

Animals remained under our Spirit Dominion: *Psalms 8:6-8 & 115:16.*

GOD promised them Future: *Job 5:23; Isaiah 11:6-9, 65:25; Jeremiah 31:27; Hosea 2:18; & Joel 2:22*.

Be not afraid, ye beasts of the field: for the pastures of the wilderness do spring, for the tree beareth her fruit, the fig tree and the vine do yield their strength. (Joel 2:22)

That was our Beginning:

> *And GOD said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the Earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the Earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the Earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. And GOD saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was Very Good. (Genesis 1:29-31)*

Relevant chapters: 74 (Shall we eat flesh?), 120 (Animal Sacrifices),
249 (Who was cruel?), 289 (The origin of predators),
306 (My cats), & 562 (Communicating with animals & plants).

You may like these movies: *GOD Of Wonders*
Genesis: Paradise Lost
Francis Of Assisi
A Street Cat Named Bob

Q: Where does the Record of the Creation come from?
Q: Did Moses have a Vision? It isn't mentioned in the Bible.

(Signed: *Christian, Protestant*)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: It is written,

> *All Scripture is given by Inspiration of GOD,*
> *and is Profitable for Doctrine, for Reproof, for Correction,*
> *for Instruction in Righteousness: that the Man of GOD may be Perfect,*
> *throughly furnished unto all Good Works. (2Timothy 3:16-17)*

> *... no Prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation.*
> *For the Prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but Holy Men of GOD*
> *spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2Peter 1:20-21)*

The Written Word of GOD was written down by His Holy Men but inspired (revealed, dictated, made known, etc.) by His Holy Spirit.
As for Brother Moses, he, like anyone else, could have a Vision. Why not? The Bible recorded only things, which we can grasp, sooner or later.
Thank you.

29

Q: Some Bible editions suggest a reading plan, say, all Holy Scriptures in one year. Is such a study okay?

A: It is not *Bible Study* at all, just reading.

To get Learned per *Isaiah 50:4* takes hard work with the Written Word of GOD and obtain the *Knowledge* of His Truth. Backed by Faith, that Knowledge leads to *Understanding* what is going on around us. (See chapter 58.) Moreover, the Bible Study is a tested way to communicate with our LORD GOD.

> *We have also a more sure Word of Prophecy; whereunto ye do well that ye take heed, as unto a light that shineth in a dark place, until the day dawn, and the day star arise in your hearts: knowing this first, that no Prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation. For the Prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but Holy Men of GOD spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2Peter 1:19-21)*

One may recollect study in a school or college when the purposefulness determined the approach. Nobody would have read handbooks some fifteen minutes before night rest (if not too tired) and expected any progress and success from that kind of learning.

Holy Bible is “impenetrable” for the fools in the Eyes of GOD – unbelievers.
See *Psalms 14:1 & 53:1*. They call us “Bible-thumpers”. That’s understandable.

Some “researchers” look for contradictions & discrepancies.
Well, by *Matthew 7:7 & Luke 11:9, ask, and it shall be given you.*

By Brother Martin Luther,

> *This is the beginning and the main part of every temptation, when reason tries to reach a decision about the Word and GOD on its own without the Word.*
> *(Luther’s Works, vol.1, Lectures on Genesis, edited by Jaroslav Pelican, p.154)*

As for me, I prefer to work with my Bible from *Genesis* to *Revelation*, not fast, listening to *Still Small Voice* of the Holy Ghost, searching & correcting my notes. GOD has blessed me with a computer, which is of great help being well-packed with so many Bible Editions, Dictionaries, Concordances, and Christian books.

All Scripture is given by Inspiration of GOD, and is Profitable
for Doctrine, for Reproof, for Correction, for Instruction in Righteousness:
that the Man of GOD may be Perfect, throughly furnished
unto all Good Works. (2Timothy 3:16-17)

Download your favorite Bible editions, choose the right font, parallels, relevant quotations, your comments. See for the most comfortable background color to enjoy the Word without getting tired to your eyes.

However, some paper books along with a notebook & pen ought to be kept too. I'm reminded about that every time of blackout in our house or district.

In our "Q & A" book, there are many chapters titled "Contradictions" and "The unbelievers ask". Sadly, many more blasphemous inquiries are published on the Internet. One can find it, say, on

https://thoughtcatalog.com/jim-goad/2014/05/30-pairs-of-bible-verses-that-contradict-one-another/ (June 2026)

Suchlike lies are endless, as well as debates with atheists, agnostics, etc.
However, I advise you to have a look at those sites and check it out for yourselves. Can you hear the Holy Spirit and answer the evil one?

... the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not,
lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the Image of GOD,
should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:4)

Kindly see relevant chapters 101 – 107.

Note well the Scriptures: *Deuteronomy 8:3 & Matthew 4:4* – Bread of Life.
Jeremiah 33:3 – Communion with the Teacher.
Hosea 4:6 – The dangerous ignorance.
Mark 4:24 – Sowing & reaping.
Romans 10:17 – Hearing Him.

Good reference: *E.W. Bullinger, The Companion Bible*

Good program for OS Windows:

e-Sword – the Sword of the LORD
with an electronic edge, <https://e-sword.net/>, June 2026.

30

Q: (1) Who has a right to preach in the Church?
Q: (2) And what ought to be preached?

A: (1) Normally, it is a *Pastor* and those appointed or asked by him.

To this rule, I may only add my sincere wish that every Preacher would have been aware of such a thing as *Time-Sacrifice* offered by the Church to his Sermon. That's calculated by multiplying the number of persons present by the average time each of them spends –

Folks x *Time* (spent on the way to & from the Service and listening) =
Total Time Sacrifice.

Kindly recall this formula next time you hear something dull & boring from the Pulpit or, even much better, when you are going to preach yourself.

Have you ever encountered the practice of some Pastors to teach young Preachers by giving them (your) time to preach from the Pulpit? I have. That's why I answer the question from experience. Read the example in chapter 35.

(2) When asked, don't preach something you, in your opinion, know best. That may happen to be not the thing needed most by that particular Congregation. Know your Church. If you are a guest-Preacher take the pain to think more about our common problems. Or else, inquire of the Pastor.

> *... why do the very Ransomed Children of GOD themselves know so little of that habitual, conscious Communion with GOD which Scripture offers? The answer is because of our chronic unbelief. Faith enables our spiritual sense to function. Where Faith is defective the result will be inward insensibility and numbness toward spiritual things. This is the condition of vast numbers of Christians today. No proof is necessary to support that statement. We have but to converse with the first Christian we meet or enter the first Church we open to acquire all the proof we need.*
>
> *(A.W. Tozer, The Pursuit Of GOD, p.50)*

Scriptural references: *Isaiah 58:1* (wake up rather than lullaby).
James 3:1 (be not many Masters).

31

Q: Brother, *speaking the Truth in Love* per *Ephesians 4:15,* what does it mean?

A: Let's take *Love* as evidence & determiner of *Truth*.

GOD is Love; and he that dwelleth in Love dwelleth in GOD, and GOD in him. (1John 4:16)

Obedience to GOD is a sure way to *Love* & *Truth*:

If a man love Me, he will keep My Words: and My Father will love him, and We will come unto him, and make Our Abode with him. (John 14:23)

We can also see that *Love* & *Truth* have One Source – *GOD*.

Now, back to *Ephesians 4:15*.
Here, we have to come to the correct conclusion: there is no Truth separated from Love. It does not matter what people may call "truth" – TV news, scientific evidence, newspapers, doctor's opinion, legal documents, and so on. If a statement *contradicts* the Written Word of GOD and does not stand upon His Love, be sure: it is a lie, willing or not.

And we have known and believed the Love that GOD hath to us. GOD is Love; and he that dwelleth in Love dwelleth in GOD, and GOD in him. (1John 4:16)

Even those two or three witnesses demanded by *Deuteronomy 19:15* to help investigations might mistake.

A doctrine has practical value only as far as it is prominent in our thoughts and makes a difference in our lives. (A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)

To speak the Truth in Love, we ought to *walk* in Love, be Jesus' Disciples indeed. Then, we shall *know* the Truth from a lie.

If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My Disciples indeed; and ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free. (John 8:31-32)

Q: Holocaust ethical question.
Is ethical responsibility transferred from person to person?
Example: Nazis at the door, Jews in the attic, the person answers the door.
Q: Does he (she) tell the truth or lie?
Q: Does the ethical responsibility transfer to the Nazi that kills the Jew, or did it lie upon the person that told the truth?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: Your question is relevant to the preceding discussion.
What you call *ethical responsibility* is not stable among the unbelievers.
It varies from person to person, country to country, etc., depending on the policies and local standards, including the holocaust.

Christian is accountable firstly to the LORD GOD. See *Proverbs 24:21*.
Our Christian Truth is defined contrary to that of the world. Please, read the first conversation of this chapter. And kindly note *Isaiah 16:4*.

In your example, therefore, *Christians* would behave in favor of Jews.
All – a landlord/lady, Jews, Nazis – are personally accountable before GOD first. Any "transfer" of such a Responsibility is impossible.

Q: What does it mean to "*let all that you do be done with Love"* per *1Corinthians 16:14*?

A: Since all Holy Scriptures do not contradict one another, the word *Love* in *1Corinthians 16:14* has the same meaning as in *1Corinthians Chapter 13.*
Kindly read it.
Now, by *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition,*

Let all your things be done with Charity. (1Corinthians 16:14)

That is achievable only by the *Holy Ghost* working through ourselves.
GOD is Love, as we quoted at the beginning of this chapter. Otherwise, as folks correctly observed, "Wishing for the better, I get the usual."
The same is true regarding our words. Read the above talk about *Ephesians 4:15.*
Therefore, *Quench not the Spirit. 1Thessalinians 5:19.*

Let Love to GOD, to Man, and to one another be the motive of all your conduct.
(Adam Clarke,
The New Testament, with A Commentary and Critical Notes, NY, 1884)

32

Q: How can we possibly communicate with GOD?

A: We all, Believers & unbelievers, *are* in that Communion daily, perceiving it or not. Behold some of the ways the LORD, our GOD, speaks.

= Bible Study. See *Joshua 1:8 & Proverbs 4:20-22.*

= Our meditation on GOD and His Word. *Psalms 104:34 & Jeremiah 33:3.*

= The Blessings (inherited inclusive) responding to Obedience to Him. *Deuteronomy 5:29, 28:1-14; Psalms 128:1-6; Isaiah 56:1-2; & Malachi 3:10.*

Heare Me, and I will instruct thee,
hearken to the thing that I say, & I shal tell thee more.
(Apocrypha, 2nd Esdras 5:32, King James Version, 1611)

= Our thoughts, the voice of Conscience. *Proverbs 1:23 & 2Corinthians 1:12.*
The Word of Knowledge. *Isaiah 30:20-21; John 8:31-32; 15:15.*

= Prayers, Intercessions, Confessions. *1Chronicles 21:26 & Matthew 6:9-13.*

= Communion of Saints, Church Services, Devotions. Read *Malachi 3:16.*

= Night dreams. Read the *Book of Daniel, Chapters 2 & 4.*

Meditating on the *Book of Daniel Chapter 2, Verses 17-19,* we may grasp that *Revelations* come over when the solution for every issue is sought from LORD GOD only. See *Psalms 139:23-24.*

= His Servants, Teachers – their Sermons & Books. See *Isaiah 30:20-21.*
= His Servants, the Prophets. See *2Chronicles 20:20.*

= Good Example of our co-Workers in Christ. *Book of Acts & Book of Martyrs.*
= Our own Preaching, leading us therein. See *Matthew 28:19-20.*

= Circumstances of our Life. Consider *Job 33:14-30.*
= His Great Creation, overruling human science. See *Isaiah 29:14.*

In all our troubles we should place our whole Confidence in the Mercy of GOD; and should take Warning and Encouragement to return to Him, and exhort others to do the same. He afflicts us in Providence, that we may look to Him to restore our Prosperity : He convinces and humbles our hearts by His Holy Spirit, and often fills the Conscience with remorse and dismay, in order to prepare us for the Healing Balm of His Salvation, and the Consolations which He bestows on the Contrite Believer ... No affliction or temptation therefore, no guilt or power of sin, no wounded spirit or terrified Conscience, should induce us to despair of Help and Comfort from GOD ...

(Thomas Scott,
The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes ... The Book of Hosea)

So, pray to our Heavenly Father, listen to the *Still Small Voice* of His Holy Ghost, and praise the LORD when the Answer comes.

... GOD does not operate on our time schedule – the only way we're going to hear His Voice directing us and leading us is by spending time with Him, and lots of it ... A weak and spiritually debased Church has deemphasized the Closet of Prayer and a good old carpet imprint on the forehead from hours spent on our faces before GOD. But you will not hear from GOD if you don't spend Time with Him.

(Morris Cerullo, Son, Build Me An Army, p. 248)

I remember a friend of mine shared this Answer for his Prayerfully expressed willingness to meet Father GOD more often: *Better you don't leave Me*.

See chapters 181 (Hearing the Voice of GOD),
237 (Word – Hearing – Faith), 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit),
485 (My Prayer), & 669 (Our Meditation).

Q: My dad, still married to my mom, is having an affair with a married woman. I know it for a fact. What should I do? I'm a 16-year-old guy who has no idea how to handle this. I feel so lost and conflicted right now.

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: I am sorry to hear that. One you should turn to is GOD. Give more time to Communion with Him. See the above part of this chapter. Seek the Backup of the Local Church. Even if you have lost Dad & Family, your Mom is with you and, most important, your GOD. I pray for you. Be Blessed.

33

Q: By *Webster's Dictionary (2001),*
Act of God, (law) – a direct, sudden, and irresistible action of natural forces such as could not reasonably have been foreseen or prevented, as a flood, hurricane, earthquake, or other natural catastrophe.

So, the question is: does it agree with the Word of GOD?

A: To some extent, it does, since "*natural*" and "*reasonably*" apparently belong with the *natural* realm, whereas "*sudden ... action of natural forces such as could not reasonably have been foreseen or prevented*" applies only to *unbelievers* who don't want to hear about any *spiritual* reasons or forces.

No disrespect to the above-named Dictionary (which I like & use myself), but the Christian mind ought to define the subject in question another way, say –

By the Act of GOD, His Great Creation came into being. According to Genesis 1:26-28, our LORD GOD gave us, humans, irrevocable spiritual Authority over the Earth. Therefore, any direct, sudden, and irresistible action of natural forces such as a flood, hurricane, earthquake, or another natural catastrophe, can be well foreseen & explained as a due result of our disobedience to the LORD and efficiently prevented only by our Right Standing with Him.

See chapters 64 (GOD's Punishment), 134 (Nature), 233 (Meeting the tornado), 312 (Our spiritual Authority), & 472 (GOD's Punishment exemplified).

References: *Psalms 115:16; Lamentations 5:7* ..…... The reason why.
Hosea 4:2-3; Malachi 3:9 ……. ditto.
Leviticus 26:3-12; 2Chronicles 7:14 ..... GOD's Conditions.
Micah 5:10-15 ….…..... GOD's Anger.
Galatians 6:7..... The Harvest Law.

For they went and served other gods, and worshipped them, gods whom they knew not, and whom He had not given unto them. And the Anger of the LORD was kindled against this land, to bring upon it all the curses that are written in this Book. And the LORD rooted them out of their land in Anger, and in Wrath, and in Great Indignation, and cast them into another land, as it is this day. (Deuteronomy 29:26-28)

34

Q: In some *Protestant* Churches, there is a custom of *washing feet* – in others is not. Which of those two ways is Right?

A: That depends on what every Local Church *means* by practicing or not practicing that Ceremony. The last is based on *John 13:1-17*.

1 Now before the Feast of the Passover, when Jesus knew that His Hour was come that He should depart out of this World unto the Father, having loved His Own which were in the World, He loved them unto the end. 2 And supper being ended, the devil having now put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon's son, to betray Him; 3 Jesus knowing that the Father had given all things into His hands, and that He was come from GOD, and went to GOD; 4 He riseth from supper, and laid aside His garments; and took a towel, and girded Himself. 5 After that He poureth water into a bason, and began to wash the Disciples' feet, and to wipe them with the towel wherewith He was girded. 6 Then cometh He to Simon Peter: and Peter saith unto Him, Lord, dost Thou wash my feet? 7 Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter. 8 Peter saith unto him, Thou shalt never wash my feet. Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with Me. 9 Simon Peter saith unto Him, Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head. 10 Jesus saith to him, He that is Washed needeth not save to wash his feet, but is Clean* every whit: and ye are Clean*, but not all. 11 For He knew who should betray Him; therefore said He, Ye are not all Clean*. 12 So after He had washed their feet, and had taken His garments, and was set down again, He said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you? 13 Ye call Me Master* and Lord*: and ye say Well*; for so I am. 14 If I then, your Lord* and Master*, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one another's feet. 15 For I have given you an Example*, that ye should do as I have done to you. 16 Verily, Verily, I say unto you, The Servant* is not greater than his Lord*; neither he that is sent greater than He* that sent him. 17 If ye know these things, Happy are ye if ye do them. (John 13:1-17)*

* The Words of spiritual significance & implementation.

Many Scriptures in our *Holy Bible* have more than one interpretation & Lesson. And that is done without any *contradictions* with one another.
In this regard, *John 13:1-17* is not the exception. Generally, this Scripture is understood as teaching us to serve one another and fight such *evils* as pride, division, indifference, criticism, unforgiving, etc.

No Scripture in the *Bible* is comprehended profoundly at first reading. Therefore, in *Verse 7*, the Lord said:

... thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter ...

Remember, the *Word of GO*D is not about folks thousands-years-dead but written independently to time & place unto everyone who would study it and take it to heart. So, what by this Verse are we supposed to comprehend here & now?

In the *natural*, we usually wash our body, starting from the head down to the feet. And the more poor conditions we live in, the more washing feet is quite a separate procedure.

In the *Spiritual Realm*, the Water Baptism makes us Clean from worldly (ungodly) dirt and Upright before GOD. However, as we continue to live in the world, all sorts of a (heathen) mud stick up upon ourselves again.

Let's read how this Scripture was commented on by *Brother Calvin*.

> *... if the Holy Spirit occupied every part of us, we would no longer have anything to do with the pollutions of the world; but now, by that part in which we are carnal, we creep on the ground, or at least fix our feet in the clay, and, therefore, are to some extent unclean.*
>
> *(John Calvin, Commentary on the Gospel According to John, 1847)*

That's why, in *Verse 8*, Lord Jesus said:

If I wash thee not, thou hast no part with Me.

Thus the importance of Washing feet was underlined.
In *Verse 10*, it is written:

... He that is washed needeth not save to wash his feet ...

There is nothing wrong with what some Christian Congregations do, namely, actually washing one another's feet as a rule, in particular, before the *Eucharist*.
As some Pastors explained that procedure to me, it is an act of *Love* & *Humility*.
But better do others – e.g., *Catholic* & *Orthodox* Christians – who practice the Sacrament of *Confession* before that of Eucharist (a.k.a., the Lord's Supper, Holy Communion, Breaking Bread), especially when they *understand* what they do.

Still better off are those Believers who are Blessed with more Understanding and *confess* their sins to one another, custom or not.

Me, I welcome the only Way of following *John 13:1-17*: *Confession*.

> *For when the body is bent at the feet of a Brother, the feeling of Humility is made to rise in the heart, or, if it be there already, is confirmed. But besides this moral meaning, is not a Brother able to change a Brother from the pollution of sin? Let us confess our faults one to another, forgive one another's faults, pray for one another's faults. In this way we shall wash one another's feet ... (St. Augustine, quoted by S. Thomas Aquinas)*

See more in chapters – 19 (Confession – spiritual cleansing),
42 (The Witness of Confession),
46 (Confession & Confidentiality),
409 (Confession – here I am to help),
608 (Confession outlined),
609 (Common Confession).

You may kindly read *1John 1:8-10* as for the need for Confession.

Orthodox booklet, *Confession & Holy Communion*, runs:

> *Why is it necessary to speak your sins up?*
> *Firstly, it is for a Priest to understand the soul's condition of a Confessionalist and to determine the heaviness of sins, which he would, in the Name of GOD, give Absolution and forgive.*
> *Secondly, as all sins come up from our selfishness, a sincere Confession may serve as the manifestation of the readiness of a Confessionalist to abandon self-esteem and take care of the personal Correction.*
> *And thirdly, only at an oral Confession, a Priest can offer a Confessionalist a kind Pastoral advice following the soul's condition of a Confessionalist, and, in a case of need, impose an Epitimia* to speed up the Correction.*
>
> [*A disciplinary duty aimed at exterminating the sin(s).]
>
> *... Confession is neither a discussion about personal shortcomings nor Confessioner's inquiring about a Confessionalist nor, and the very least, a "pious custom". It is hot Repentance of a heart, thirst for Purification coming from a sense of the Sacrament, dying to the sin, and Revival for Holiness.*
>
> (My translation)

35

Q: The way of *Eucharist* or *Holy Communion* differs from one Church to another. Pastors insist on attending. Does it mean we *should* participate in any Church, say, when away from our hometown or homeland?

A: No, it doesn't.

First of all, before taking part in the Holy Communion, we are supposed to examine ourselves, as *1Corinthians 11:28* demands, to make sure we are *Worthy* to participate. With all due Reverence to the Sacrament, it is far better not to attend it at all than show up spiritually unclean.

For as often as ye eat this Bread, and drink this Cup,
ye do shew the Lord's Death till He come.
Wherefore whosoever shall eat this Bread, and drink this Cup of the Lord,
unworthily, shall be guilty of the Body and Blood of the Lord.
But let a man examine himself,
and so let him eat of that Bread, and drink of that Cup.
For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily,
eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's Body.
For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.
(1Corinthians 11:26-30)

Therefore, get prepared to the Sacrament of *Confession*, having checked yourself over by every Commandment of the *Holy Law of GOD* and, whether or not it is the custom of a Congregation, confess your sins privately before LORD in the presence of one Believer prior the Eucharist. Kindly see chapters 34 & 42.

For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.
(1Corinthians 11:31)

If something prevents the Confession or goes wrong (sorry, no time, no man, etc.), leave the Service. Sadly, far not every Congregation of Saints keeps the Eucharist *Holy* indeed. Kindly note that following *Acts 2:46*, we may break Bread anytime at home with *Christian* families & friends.

There is one more thing about the *Holy Communion*. It must be meaningful.
I remember one notable (Charismatic) Service. A young Preacher got a chance to practice. No supervision. (We talked about that in chapter 30.)

The guy preached on a subject that had nothing to do with the *Eucharist*.
At the very end of the Service, he just spoke: “Now, there is one more thing to deal with. The Lord’s Supper.” He said no more.
The *Sacrament of Holy Communion* was just a simple distribution of pieces of bread and small cups of juice.

So, what had happened there but sowing the evil seeds of formalism and disrespect to *GOD*?

In another (Baptist) Church, there was a rule to preach on the subject of Eucharist on the *eve* of the Sacrament. Much better, wasn’t it?

> According to *A Theological Dictionary, by Charles Buck, 1826,*
> Eucharist is *the Sacrament of the Lord’s Supper. The word properly signifies giving Thanks ...*
>
> By *John Robinson, A Theological, Biblical and Ecclesiastical Dictionary, 1835,* Lord’s Supper is *an Ordinance instituted by our Saviour in Commemoration of His death and sufferings ...*
>
> *Smith’s Bible Dictionary, 1863*, runs:
> *The Words which thus describe the Great Central Act of the Worship of the Christian Church occur but in one single passage of the New Testament (1Corinthians 11:20).*

I believe the Holy Communion (a.k.a., *Lord’s Supper, Eucharist, Breaking of Bread*) is to educate our Congregations and, therefore, should be well regarded in the Rules of Local Churches. See relevant chapter 160.

> *And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the Disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is My body. And He took the cup, and gave Thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is My blood of the New Testament, which is shed for many for the Remission of sins. (Matthew 26:26-28)*
>
> See the same in *Mark 14:22-24 & Luke 22:17-20*.

> *Ye cannot drink the Cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be Partakers of the Lord’s Table, and of the table of devils.*
>
> *(1Corinthians 10:21)*

36

Q: *Jesus is Lord.* So, what kind of spiritual authority has Satan?

A: Zero. Neither he ever had. Welcome to "Q & A" chapters 688 & 727.

At the same time,

> *... the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, Who is the Image of GOD, should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:4)*

The evil one's authority is quite comparable to that of the *mafia* – real & illegal. It is written,

> *How art thou fallen from Heaven, O Lucifer, Son of the Morning! How art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into Heaven, I will exalt my throne above the Stars of GOD: I will sit also upon the Mount of the Congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the Most High. Yet thou shalt be brought down to hell, to the sides of the pit. (Isaiah 14:12-15)*

In full accord with *Genesis 1:26-28*, we, humans, have our *irrevocable spiritual Dominion* over this Earth, sealed up by the Word of LORD GOD. That kind of Power Adam couldn't pass on or hand over, or surrender to Satan (as some expositors teach), even kneeling & praying the evil one. However, considering *2Corinthians 4:4*, we can & do open or close up our *mind* to/on whomsoever we please, and eventually become the *Servants of GOD* or the *puppets of the devil.*

> *Why do ye not understand My Speech? Even because ye cannot hear My Word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the Beginning, and abode not in the Truth, because there is no Truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the Truth, ye believe Me not. (John 8:43-45)*

As his puppets, silly folks gradually destroy the beautiful World they live in. The powerless evil spirit, actually, rules like a King. The Blessed Statement of Jesus in *Matthew 28:18* made no difference in this regard – we, people, remain free to serve Him or the evil one.

Judged & cursed, Satan is still the *god of this world* steadily leading his demons & foolish unbelievers to *eternal death*.

Woe to the inhabiters of the Earth and of the sea!
for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath,
because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. (Revelation 12:12)

Let us neither underestimate the *enemy* nor forget what we confess:

For Thine is the Kingdom, and the Power, and the Glory, for ever. Amen.
(Matthew 6:13)

References: *Ezekiel 28:3-5 & Daniel 8:24-25* ..... The wise foe.
Matthew 4:4,7,10 ..... Our Weapon – *It Is Written* ...
Matthew 28:18 ..... Mind the Power of Jesus.
John 12:31 & 16:11 ..... Satan is judged.
2Corinthians 11:13-14 & Ephesians 2:2-3 ..... The satanic lie.
Ephesians 6:10-18 ..... Our spiritual Weapons.
1Peter 5:8-9 ..... Don't underestimate the enemy.
1John 3:8 ..... Jesus vs Satan.
1John 5:18 ..... Withstand the devil.

Q: Why is, if so, that when I try to become a better Christian, sinful thoughts pop up in my head? For example, when I try to worship Jesus, in my head, it comes out, "worship the devil".
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: Regarding the reason why, as well as what to do, it is written,

Above all, taking the Shield of Faith, wherewith ye shall be able to quench
all the fiery darts of the wicked. And take the Helmet of Salvation,
and the Sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of GOD ... (Ephesians 6:16-17)

Those "fiery darts" of *lies*, even those "sinful thoughts" are the only means of the devil. And our Sword of the Word of GOD is mightier –

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself
against the Knowledge of GOD, and bringing into captivity every thought
to the Obedience of Christ ... (2Corinthians 10:5)

37

Q: Are there any *Guardian Angels*?

A: There are just *Angels* which guard, help, fight, punish, etc., following direct Orders of GOD and subordinated to Him only.

Bless the LORD, ye His Angels, that excel in Strength, that do His Commandments, hearkening unto the Voice of His Word. (Psalms 103:20)

They are Messengers – *Judges 6:11-23; Daniel 5:5; 10:5-21; chapters 11-12; Zechariah chapters 1-6; Luke 1:11-20.*

They are Ministers – *Psalms 34:7; 91:9-11; Ezekiel 1:4-24; 3:12-13; 10:1-22; Hebrews 1:14.*

They are Warriors – *Daniel 12:1; Revelation 12:7.*

They are our co-Workers & Backup – *Isaiah 63:9; Matthew 18:10.*

They are our Witnesses – *Hebrews 12:1.*

I cannot agree with the Catholic & Orthodox Christians, who believe that upon *infant* Baptism a Guardian Angel is commissioned to protect a human.
Too many *baptized* children suffer. Too many grow up unbelievers & evildoers.

... they received not the Love of the Truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause GOD shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: that they all might be damned who believed not the Truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. (2Thessalonians 2:10-12)

In no way may I follow those who teach to pray to Angels or give them orders "standing upon" the Written Word of GOD. Don't play God.

And who are we to "remind" the Word to those who abide therein for thousands of years? Mind *Luke 1:11-20.*

An Angel of GOD does not accept any Worship or Prayer any other way but redirects us to the LORD. See *Revelation 19:10 & 22:9.*

Q: Brother, how do you understand the Words of *Revelation 14:10 –*

... he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the Holy Angels, and in the presence of the Lamb ...

Q: Does it mean that our Lord and His Angels are to watch those sufferings eternally?

A: No, it doesn't. Let's see the whole text.

9 And the third Angel followed them, saying with a loud voice, If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, 10 The same shall drink of the Wine of the Wrath of GOD, which is poured out without mixture into the Cup of His Indignation; and he shall be tormented with fire and brimstone in the presence of the Holy Angels, and in the presence of the Lamb: 11 And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name. (Revelation 14:9-11)

In many chapters of this Q & A book (number 8, in particular), we considered the subjects of *hell* and *death eternal*. Kindly refer to the *Index*.

As spiritual beings (per *Hebrews 1:14*), the Holy Angels are able to *see* the Spiritual World. God Son Jesus certainly can see it also. *John 1:3.*
According to the above *Revelation 14:10, the* saved humans are not supposed to possess such an ability.
In *Verse 10*, "*in the presence of"* cannot compulsorily mean supervision, overseeing, onlooking, and so forth – rather, it is sure knowledge & awareness. Note *Genesis 1:4, Luke 16:26,* and every Scripture about *the outside darkness*.
In that separated wilderness, The LORD GOD & His Angels may well recognize the shadows of those not allowed to enter the Kingdom of Heaven.
We read about the Omnipresence & Omniscience of our Heavenly Father in *1Samuel 16:7, 1Chronicles 28:9, 2Chronicles 16:9, Psalms 139:1-6,* etc.

Thus far, it is opened unto me.

For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.
But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part
shall be done away. (1Corinthians 13:9-10)

38

It is written,

... if ye forgive men their trespasses, your Heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. (Matthew 6:14-13)

Q: The question is: how to forgive?
Q: What about *murders*, *cruelty*, and alike?

A: It is also said:

... Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do. (Luke 23:34)

Thus, our Blessed Lord forgave those who crucified Him. Yea, even murderers, violating their law, which commanded to render to everyone his due. Why did He? Because Christ Jesus hated *evil*, not blind evildoers led by the devil to hell and eternal death. Following the Lord, we are also supposed to forgive the ignorant fools, acting as Satan's puppets and deprived by him of Understanding.

Our ability to forgive stems from Love. The latter, together with Faith & Hope, determines the power of our spirit. On the other hand, unforgiving, if tolerated, may be developed by the devil into whatsoever up to murder.
Lord Jesus taught us:

... Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do Good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you ... (Matthew 5:44)

Therefore, we should love those we are tempted to label "enemies", remembering *who* our real enemy is. Love by doing them Good and praying for them. Pray that GOD would give Repentance to those spirit-weak people enslaved by the devil. Instead of ignoring, hand them over to GOD, saying: May GOD bless you. The Blessing might turn out to be His *Rod of Correction*.
(Here, we don't touch on relationships within our families.)

Note, *Forgiving* has nothing to do with *fear,*

For GOD hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of Power, and of Love, and of a Sound mind. (2Timothy 1:7)

Neither has *Forgiving* anything to do with *compromise*.

... For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are enemies of The Cross of Christ ... who mind earthly things ...
(Philippians 3:18-19)

Meditate on *Luke 17:3-4*. Can GOD demand of us anything which Himself doesn't do? Verily, we cannot reach the level of His Love & Forgiving Attitude. See *Isaiah 55:8-9*. Let us be the Followers of Him, as *Ephesians 5:1* teaches us.

It is easier to forgive when we try to see the Spirit Realm.
On the dark side, there are demons armed with pride, anger, despair, &c., trying to make us see ourselves offended, wronged, screwed up.
On the Light side, there is GOD and His Written Word.
The Question of *Genesis 3:9* stands on. The choice is ours.

Scripture further references: *Matthew 5:39* (Turning other cheek.)
Luke 17:3-4 (Repentance & Forgiving.)
Acts 7:59-60 (The Example of Saint Stephen.)
Romans 2:1 (Avoid criticism.)
Romans 12:19-21 (Give place unto Wrath.)
1Corinthians 4:5 (Perfect Justice.)
Colossians 3:13 (Even as Christ forgave you.)
James 4:7 (Resist the devil.)
1John 4:18 (There is no fear in Love.)

Q: I keep meaning to get to Mass, to ask a Priest about this, but I haven't managed to make it yet. My parents abused me, and I hate them for it, but I realize (based on reading *1John 4:20-21*) that this affects my relationship with GOD. How do I forgive them and yet keep myself safe?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: I'm very sorry about what has happened to you.
As I wrote, answering the first question of this chapter, try to see what's going on in the Spirit Realm. Your abusers acted as blind servants of Satan. Stand on the Word of GOD and forgive per *Matthew 5:44*.
At the same time, as a citizen of your country, you are to report the case of physical abusing to the Police. Mind *Proverbs 24:21*. Because our Forgiving should not stay in the way of following the law of the state if it doesn't contradict the Law of GOD. In this case, it doesn't.

39

Q: What is the *Spirit War*?

A: The *Spirit War* is the continuous combat between Good & evil, commenced upon the Creation of Man and to be finished at the End of this World.
The spiritual forces of Good are Angels of GOD & His People, the evil forces comprise Satan, his fallen angels (a.k.a., evil spirits or demons), and his human puppets.

People say the first rule of war is "Don't underestimate your enemy." In this regard, the *Spirit War* is not an exception. For Satan & his evil spirits had so great opportunity to observe and study us, people, for millenniums and become quite psychologists.
Besides, we live in the *natural*, and our minds (if not filled up with the Word of GOD) are opened wide to the devils. Kindly remember *Matthew 12:43-45*. They operate in the *spiritual* and are well hidden from us other than under the Mighty Light of the Holy Scriptures.

Sometimes, demons are given names, e.g., the demon of lie, the demon of pride, the evil spirit of murder, and so forth.
However, well regarding *Ephesians 6:16*, we have business with the spirits armed with their evil weapons – the ill thoughts aimed to form corresponding attitudes – lie, pride, murder, envy, enmity, anger, compromise, etc., etc., which are "the fiery darts of the wicked".
Evil spirits can be compared with dung-flies carrying different infections.

The following Scriptures disclose more.

The world divided: *Genesis 1:4 & Luke 12:51.*

The Question to answer: *Genesis 3:9.*

Satan & his servants: *John 8:44; 16:11;*
2Corinthians 4:4, 11:13-14; Ephesians 2:2-3;
1Peter 5:8; 1John 3:8 & Revelations 12:12.

Our Power: *1Samuel 10:6-7, Isaiah 54:15-17,*
Matthew 28:18, Mark 16:17-18, Luke 10:19;
2Timothy 1:7, & 1John 5:18.

Our Victory & Peace*: John 16:33; 1John 3:8 & 5:4.*

Our Spirit Weapons: *Deuteronomy 6:17-19 (Obedience);*
Isaiah 59:17 (Zeal);
Luke 6:27-28,35 & 1Corinthians 13:8 (Love);
Malachi 3:10 & Luke 6:38 (Giving);
Ephesians 6:10-18 (Truth, Righteousness, Faith, Hope, Word of GOD, & Prayer);
James 4:7 (Courage) & 5:14-16 (Confession, Intercession).

Many Christians find that the more they draw close to GOD, pray, and read the Bible, the more trouble they have with evil spirits harrassing them. This is easy to understand, since the closer to GOD you are, the more of a threat you are to the devil. If you are filled with the Holy Spirit and share the Good News of the Gospel with others who don't know Jesus yet, you're making it harder for Satan and his demons to lead people away from the Lord ...

(Danelle Ice, Dangerous But Good: A no-nonsense Guide to casting out demons & evil spirits, p.9)

See relevant chapters: 36 (The power of Satan), 87 (Discipline in the Church), 117 (The abomination of desolation), 444 (Our Spiritual Weapons), 497 (Evil spirits & their weapons), & 574 (*Daniel, Chapter 7*).
In the Contents, note every chapter under the title "*Spirit War*."

Kindly consider these books on the subject of Spiritual warfare:
John Fox, Book of Martyrs
Morris Cerullo, GVA Financial Breakthrough Spiritual Warfare Bible
Kenneth E. Hagin, The Believer's Authority
Danelle Ice, Dangerous But Good: A no-nonsense Guide ...

... be Strong with the Strength Christ Jesus gives you. For you must teach others those things you and many others have heard me speak about. Teach these Great Truths to Trustworthy men who will, in turn, pass them on to others. Take your share of suffering as a Good Soldier of Jesus Christ, just as I do. And as Christ's Soldier do not let yourself become tied up in worldly affairs, for then you cannot satisfy the One Who has enlisted you in His Army. Follow the Lord's Rules for doing His Work, just as an athlete either follows the rules or is disqualified and wins no prize. Work hard, like a farmer who gets paid well if he raises a large crop. Think over these three illustrations, and may the Lord help you to understand how they apply to you. (2Timothy 2:1-7, The Living Bible)

40

Q: Can any *compromise* be possible with *unbelieving* kin, friends, colleagues?

A: No, it can't, at least in the matters where our *Faith* is concerned.

No man can serve two masters ... (Matthew 6:24)

In Spirit Realm, *compromise* is the *demonic force* directed to turn Christians aside from the Right Way of GOD. That force tries to persuade us that there is no sin in following the Word "not strictly", "wisely", "in a measure", and alike. It points out to (devil-made) circumstances, as well as (devil-instituted) rules of this world, common sense (reason), human logic, intelligence, experience, &c.
A demon will never tell us to boldly disobey the Word of GOD and thus take his mask off. No. The trick is to convince you & me to move just one degree off the Right Course, gradually deviating more & more.

Often, when it comes down to telling something about our life or selves, we speak a *half-truth* presenting listeners with what may seem fine and avoiding lousy data. We know and pretty well that our CV (curriculum vitae) must look "attractive" to have a chance to get a "good" job. The wisdom of this world, along with the other stuff, teaches us to keep our mouths shut.

Let's study *Matthew 7:21-23*. (Please, see the parallel notes in chapter 466.)

> *21 Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven; but he that doeth the Will of My Father which is in Heaven. 22 Many will say to Me in that Day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy Name? and in Thy Name have cast out devils? and in Thy Name done many Wonderful Works? 23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity.*
>
> *(Matthew 7:21-23)*

Probably, it is one of the most Fearful Scriptures in all the Bible, arising the same question recorded in *Matthew 19:25, Mark 10:26, & Luke 18:26 – who then can be saved?*

Verse 21 is addressed to all Believers. Our Faith should be *proven* in many ways, including how it is standing against the evil of compromise – one of the most dangerous plagues in the Body of Christ.

Verse 22 exhibits a negative example of some good-looking Christian record or resume, which may quite impress anybody but GOD.

Verse 23 – Warning of Judgment – addressed those who might have had their Christian Testimonies – Revelation Knowledge received, Prayers answered, Miracles happened, Spirit Battles won – that Precious part of every human experience. These Christians are called Apostles, Prophets, Bishops, Pastors, Teachers, &c., &c. Nevertheless, they remain human beings and, notwithstanding their Victories over the devil, should still be Vigilant against *compromise*, worldly reason (common sense), complacency, pride, lust, mammon, and so on.

For it is impossible for those who were once Enlightened, and have tasted of the Heavenly Gift, and were made Partakers of the Holy Ghost, and have tasted the Good Word of GOD, and the Powers of the World to come, if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto Repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of GOD afresh, and put Him to an open shame. (Hebrews 6:4-6)

We ought to make our choice and pray GOD to give us the Right Words unto others to answer the first Question of GOD written down in the Holy Scriptures:

And GOD saw the Light that it was Good: and GOD divided the Light from the darkness ... And the LORD GOD called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? (Genesis 1:4 & 3:9)

Our Lord Himself demands the choice to be made and due steps to be taken:

... These things saith the Amen, the Faithful and True Witness, the Beginning of the Creation of GOD; I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of My Mouth. (Revelation 3:14-16)

Conventionality is not morality. Self-righteousness is not Religion. To attack the first is not to assail the last. To pluck the mask from the face of the Pharisee, is not to lift an impious hand to the Crown of Thorns. These things and deeds are diametrically opposed : they are as distinct as is vice from Virtue. Men too often confound them : they should not be confounded : appearance should not be mistaken for Truth ; narrow human doctrines, that only tend to elate and magnify a few, should not be substituted for the world-redeeming Creed of Christ. There is – I repeat it – a difference ; and it is a good, and not a bad action to mark broadly and clearly the line of separation between them.

(Charlotte Bronte, Jane Eyre, Preface, xxxiv)

Like in the case of *common sense* – that's our next chapter 41 – the *compromise* is to be well secluded where it belongs, namely, our daily affairs, such as laundering, cleaning, repairs, and so forth. The compromise *must not* overstep its bounds and horn in on our relationship with GOD and one another, political and business matters, etc., which should be regulated by the *Holy Scriptures* only.

Commenting on *James 4:4 & 1John 2:15-16*, Brother A.W. Tozer wrote,

> *These Words of GOD are not before us for our consideration; they are there for our Obedience and we have no right to claim the Title of Christian unless we follow them. (A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)*

Since our "Q & A" book deals a lot with *Spiritual Warfare*, every time you read here about *compromise*, kindly take it as the *evil thought* shot at a human mind.

References.

Thou shalt not follow a multitude to do evil; neither shalt thou speak in a cause to decline after many to wrest Judgment. (Exodus 23:2)

... We ought to obey GOD rather than men. (Acts 5:29)

Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils:
ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's Table, and of the table of devils.
(1Corinthians 10:21)

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath Righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath Light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the Temple of GOD with idols? for ye are the Temple of the Living GOD; as GOD hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their GOD, and they shall be My People. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the LORD, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My Sons and Daughters, saith the LORD Almighty. (2Corinthians 6:14-18)

... know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with GOD? Whosoever therefore will be a friend of the world is the enemy of GOD. (James 4:4)

41

Q: The term *common sense* is often used by unbelievers as opposition to *Faith* matters. How should Believers handle that subject?

A: In *Christian Faith* matters, we ought to differentiate between *Good sense*, which is of *GOD* and thus rests upon His Word, and *common sense* (a.k.a., *reason*) – the logic & wisdom of the world.
To prove my point, I may only suggest: do find *common sense* in the Bible.

Now, in search of things relevant, we may scrutinize some denotations.

> *Webster's Dictionary (2001)* defines *reason* as, *... the mental powers concerned with forming conclusions, judgments, or inferences ... sound judgment, good sense ... normal or sound powers of mind, sanity ... the faculty or power of acquiring intellectual knowledge ...*
>
> *Noah Webster's Dictionary (1911)* runs: *... that mental faculty in man which enables him to deduce inferences from facts, and to distinguish between right and wrong; right judgment ...*

That's why, in every argument or controversy, it is most *reasonable* to start with *definitions*, namely, what we mean using this or that key term.

> *... I deny not that these* [human] *sentiments are true, when they are applied to things which are subject to reason; such as the management of cattle, the building of a house, and the sowing of a field. But in the Higher and Divine things, they are not True ... since reason is filled with ignorance of GOD, and aversion to the Will of GOD; – how can reason be called Good, in this sense? ...* *(Martin Luther, The Creation: Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, p.192)*

Good sense teaches us to sort out priorities. *GOD First*. Our spirit (heart) should be under the *Holy Ghost*. The soul, containing (among other things) the intellect & reason, is to be under our spirit.

Common sense (*reason*) is okay in cooking, carpentry, gardening, and every other craft in which good spiritual training is not required to get any plausible result.

Evil spirits (demons) of Satan try their best to lie us into a mess where common sense gets beyond its bounds into *spiritual* matters where it does not belong.

In such a case, common sense gets exaggerated and becomes the evil standing in the way of Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom (chapter 58 – K & U & W).

Naturally, a newborn child does not possess the wisdom of this heathen world. More often than not, parents suffer their children to lose their innate purity. Then, a lot later, our children are going to have to be *born again*.
Kindly consider *Matthew 18:3, Mark 10:15, & Luke 18:17*.

Throughout this book, the term *common sense* means the devil's instrument as the unbeliever's argument.

The following Scriptures teach us Good sense.

Joshua 1:8-9; Proverbs 3:5-7; 2Timothy 1:7; John 1:5; 1Corinthians 1:18-21.

In chapter 167, note the words of *Danelle Ice, Dangerous But Good ...*

Q: In our Bible, some passages folks find boring or little instructive, e.g., agricultural & housing business. What's your opinion?

A: It is written:

For My Thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My Ways, saith the LORD. For as the Heavens are higher than the Earth, so are My Ways higher than your ways, and My Thoughts than your thoughts. (Isaiah 55:8-9)

The Written Word of GOD is "boring" to simpletons and "little instructive" to snobs.

And he said, Lo, it is yet high day, neither is it time that the cattle should be gathered together: water ye the sheep, and go and feed them. And they said, We cannot, until all the flocks be gathered together, and till they roll the stone from the well's mouth; then we water the sheep (Genesis 29:7-8).

Kindly consider "*the flocks be gathered together"* as the required Unity of Saints and "*roll the stone from the well's mouth"* as removing any obstacles from tour Understanding the Truth.

See *Q & A – Index – Unity of Saints, Giving.*

42

Q: Who should we confess our sins to?

A: We are to confess our sins to the LORD our GOD only.

I, even I, am He that blotteth out thy transgressions for Mine Own sake,
and will not remember thy sins. (Isaiah 43:25)

I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid.
I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD;
and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah. (Psalm 32:5)

Considering *Matthew 18:20* & *James 5:16*, we are going to have our Confession *witnessed* by one Believer, as we are guilty before the Church of GOD too.
So, our Brother or Sister in Christ is to be chosen by us as the Representative of His Body. Possibly, but not compulsorily, it can be our Pastor.

Note, it is written:

> *... He breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost: Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained. (John 20:22-23)*

Therefore, our Witness at Confession should be a Christian able to *hear* the Voice of the Holy Spirit of GOD. And both we & our Witness are to be well *prepared* for the Sacrament of Confession.

On our part, it means to take time to meditate on the Ten Commandments of the Law and the Two (Eleventh & Twelfth) Commandments of Christ. These Twelve are our Highest Directions and embrace all aspects of our Christian Life. In their Light, we can see our spiritual growth as well as our every failure.
So, the best way to get prepared to confess is to *write the sins down*.

On the part of a Witness, to get thus prepared presumes personal experience as a Christian Counselor, not only a patient listener. Our Confession best goes when parallel to Counseling. And should end up with a Prayer.

In *James 5:16*, note the Precious moments right after the Confession, when we get spiritually cleansed. As mere humans, we may err again later on, but now *Righteous* and our Prayer is the one of *Power*.

It is not a matter of foolish interest to hear sinful stories of others* but a grave *Responsibility* to serve as a Witness when sins are confessed unto the LORD.
* Verily, a lot of personal spirit dirt – especially not yet repented of and confessed – should be given our first attention.

The *Sacrament of Confession* is not to be a dull routine.

So, hear as a Learned one, as per Is*aiah 50:4*, lead the Confession by reminding your Fellow-Believer one Commandment of the Holy Law after another.
Search for probable stumbling therein to recognize, condemn, and draw out demons from their darkness into the Light of GOD – the right place for their spiritual slaughter.

Then stand together in *Prayer* for your Co-Worker in Christ to be forgiven and thus the whole Body of Christ to benefit.

Note well these Scriptures: *Galatians 6:1-2 & James 5:16.*
Read more about Confession in chapters 19, 34, 46, 405, 409, & 608.

Q: What is our Lesson in *Numbers Chapter 18*?

A: Please open your Bible on that Chapter.
It covers the Duties of our Pastors (Priests) & Levites (Ministers).

Verses 1 states the Responsibility of Pastors for the Church of GOD.
Verses 2-7 speaks of the Service of their different Assistants – whether full- or part-time Ministers.

Verse 8 put Pastors in Charge of all our Offerings to LORD GOD.
Verses 9 made the Offering for sin as Most Holy. Mind the Cross of Christ.
Verses 10-14 clarify that our Giving to GOD & Pastor is the same.
Verses 15-19 remind us of the First Fruits Offerings. But the Animal Sacrifices have been discontinued by the Ultimate Substitutive Sacrifice of Lord Jesus.
Verses 20-21 ordered the Status of Christian Ministers in a Christian Country.
Verse 22. Mind *Matthew 27:51 & Mark 15:38 & Luke 23:45.*
Verses 23-24 state the Responsibility of Levites for utilizing our Tithes.
Verses 25-29 command Levites to offer the tenth of Tithes received.
Verses 30-32 emphasize Giving the best by Levites from the Tithes received.

43

Q: It is written:

Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the world. Amen. (Matthew 28:19-20)

Standing upon this Scripture, many Pastors regularly send their Sheep to preach around. That is called *Evangelization*. Yet, far not everybody feels able and, therefore, willing to. The question is: how to do it?

A: These Words of Jesus are well-known as our *Great Commission*. (I call it the *Twelfth Commandment*.) Thus our Lord addressed His Church so long ago for thousands of years ahead. In chapter 24, we discussed the matter along with the *Holy Will of GOD* for our Life.

In the Light of *Ephesians 4:11-13*, our investment in *Preaching the Good News of the Gospel* well depends upon relevant *Gifts* & *Abilities* we are Blessed with. Pray to our LORD GOD for those Blessings –

And He gave some, Apostles; and some, Prophets; and some, Evangelists; and some, Pastors and Teachers; for the Perfecting of the Saints, for the Work of the Ministry, for the Edifying of the Body of Christ: till we all come in the Unity of the Faith, and of the Knowledge of the Son of GOD, unto a Perfect Man, unto the Measure of the Stature of the Fulness of Christ ... (Ephesians 4:11-13)

Evangelists compose the specific part of the Church of GOD, preaching the Word of Truth, Gifted, trained & Anointed for the Purpose, guided by the Holy Ghost. Therefore, the Ministry of Evangelist and Preaching the Gospel by every Christian are two different Duties. The first is the Anointed full-time or part-time Labor, whereas the second is all our Christian Way of Living and *Conversation* as the LORD sends our way people ready & willing to hear.
Please take a look at chapter 199 (Evangelizing).

So, per *Ephesians 4:11-13,* pray *for the Perfecting of the Saints, for the Work of the Ministry, for the Edifying of the Body of Christ*. That will strengthen our Congregations from inside. Stand firm against denominationalism, crowding Christian Churches by passers-by, compromisers, ruling “sponsors”, &c.

Remaining responsible for following our Great Commission, we should not forget Who, as per *Acts 2:47*, actually determines the growth of our Local Churches. Let us do our Job. The LORD, our GOD, does and will do His.

And when it was evening, His Disciples came to Him, saying,
This is a desert place, and the time is now past; send the multitude away,
that they may go into the villages, and buy themselves victuals.
But Jesus said unto them, They need not depart;
give ye them to eat. (Matthew 14:15-16)

Presently, we can see that "*desert place*" all-around and, in many aspects, "*the time is now past*". Yet, bound by the Twelfth Commandment, we are supposed to feed spiritually hungry crowds. Kindly note *Matthew 9:37-38 & Luke 24:49.*

I was told that when our old passenger steamer *Admiral Nakhimov* had been sinking after the collision, there, among so many others, had been one distinctive tragedy. A man could not tear his shocked wife off from some handrails. So, he secured a life jacket on his little son, threw him overboard, and continued to try to save the spouse. Seeing it impossible to undo that dead grip, he left her and jumped into the water. Later on, he failed to find his son among the survivors.
That poor woman may resemble so many people of this world going to hell & eternal death, holding fast to its doomed values, and deaf unto the Call of Salvation. Regretfully, sometimes, we should let go of them and look after those we still are able to save.

Q: What does it mean *to hold fast (Deuteronomy 10:20)*?

A: By *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition,*

Thou shalt fear the LORD thy GOD; Him shalt thou serve,
and to Him shalt thou cleave, and swear by His Name. (Deuteronomy 10:20)

"To Him shalt thou cleave" or "*to hold fast"* means the same as the above-quoted *Deuteronomy 10:20*, *Deuteronomy 6:4-5*, and all the Holy Bible – Love LORD GOD and serve Him only. It is the same as the above Words "*fear the LORD thy GOD*" or "*swear by His Name*". All Truths are interconnected.
"To hold fast" also stands for "to love & serve GOD *uncompromisingly*".

See chapters 142 (Swear by His Name), 144 (Fear of GOD), 161 (Jewish Creed), and the Index.

44

Q: How do Blessings and curses interact?

A: Before we proceed any further, one thing should be made clear: only those Blessings & curses (*B & C*) which follow out *the Word of GOD* have real power. See, for instance, *Proverbs 26:2*.

The interaction of B & C is determined by the Harvest Law. See *Genesis 8:22 & Galatians 6:7*. The seeds planted, Good and evil, all grow up together. Nevertheless, Confession, following *1John 1:8-10*, roots up the evil & the curse.

B & C may be inherited as per *Exodus 34:6-7*, the Blessings being mightier. Again, Confession, as per *Leviticus 26:40-42*, roots out old sins and their curses.

There are unconditional Blessings, e.g., *Genesis 1:22,28*, or *Ecclesiastes 9:4*. See conditional Blessings, say, in *Deuteronomy 28:1-14* or *Malachi 3:10-12*.

Conditional are also curses, e.g., *Deuteronomy 27:15-26 & 28:15-68*.

Obedience to GOD is a Key to receive His Blessings and passed them on to our descendants. See *Genesis 22:17-18.*
Now, it is written,

... if any man be in Christ, he is a New Creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become New. (2Corinthians 5:17)

This Scripture stops dead all inherited curses: *"old things are passed away"*. And *"all things are become New"* may well stand for the Beginning of New Conditional Blessings (e.g., *Matthew 5:3-12*) regarding those people who are now in Christ Jesus.

Considering *2Chronicles 19:7*, *Romans 2:11*, *Ephesians 6:9*, and other Scriptures, there is no respect of (for) persons with the LORD, our GOD. So, notwithstanding our "keen" outward observations, there have never been folks blessed or cursed life-long. And all our Gifts & Powers are well balanced with relevant Responsibility.

Please see chapters 155 (Repentance), 163 (National Repentance), & 317 (A New Creature).

Further references: *Job 5:17* …….. Blessing of Correction.
Psalm 32:5-6 ..... Confession wins.
Psalm 33:12 .... National Blessing.
Psalm 84:12 ……..... Blessing of Faith.
Psalm 128:1-4 ……..… Blessing of GOD's Fear.
Proverbs 28:13 ……. Confession & Mercy.
Jeremiah 48:10 ……. Cursed compromise.
Ezekiel Chapter 18 ….. Stop dead the curses.
Hosea 4:2-3 ……..... The harvest of evil.
Matthew 13:24-30 ……. Growing together.
Luke 6:24-26 ……..... Woes.
Luke 15:20 ..... Blessed Right Way.
John 3:18-19,36 ……. Great condemnation.
James 5:16 ..... Confession & Healing.

Q: (1) My heart is hardened by sin. (2) I don't know if I can repent.
(3) A hard heart can't repent. (4) What can I do?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: It's not your first post in this forum. Presuming that you search for the Truth, I numbered your sentences to answer them separately.
(1) You aren't alone. *Romans 3:23*.
(2) You most surely can. *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
(3) Negative on that. Same, *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
(4) Follow the Way of *Luke 15:20*. Godspeed.

Q: All people were atheists at some point in life. If the atheists are not to go to Heaven, at what point of becoming Christians would they be worthy of Heaven?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: Small correction: all people were atheists at some *period* in *existence*.
As somebody correctly said, *there are no unbelievers in hell*.

My answer to your question is, *at the moment of Repentance*.
Read *Luke 23:39-43*. We discussed this Scripture in chapter 243.
Kindly note: that Precious moment is just the Beginning of the Road, which ends when one dies, or Lord Jesus comes, whatever happens first.
So, after Repentance, the Believer may suffer the loss of Salvation.
Please, see chapters 77, 308, & 680. Thank you.

45

Q: How to be good *Godparents?*

A: That sounds like “the mission impossible”.
Why? Have a look at what the *Catechism* runs.

Question: What is required of persons to be baptized?
Answer: Repentance, whereby they forsake sin: and Faith, whereby they steadfastly believe the Promises of GOD made to them in that Sacrament.
Question: Why then are infants baptized, when by reason of their tender age they cannot perform them?
Answer: Because they promise them both by their Sureties: which promise, when they come to age, themselves are bound to perform.

The above is quoted from *The Book of Common Prayer and Administration of the Sacraments and other Rites and Ceremonies of the Church according to the use of The Church of England, 2004, p.167.*
You can refer to *https://www.churchofengland.org/prayer-and-worship/worship-texts-and-resources/book-common-prayer/catechism* (December 2021).

You might see the same Order of things in *The Book of Common Prayer and Administration of the Sacraments, and other Rites and Ceremonies of the Church according to use of The Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States of America, New York, 1803, p.207.*

You can take the pain and check over other *Catechisms.*
To avoid any misunderstanding (which I had regretfully encountered), please note that I referred to the above writings as the *negative* examples only.

Now, think of the *Responsibility* taken up lightly. Do you have full access to a baptized baby as its parents? Have you been educated enough to teach others the Truth of GOD? Is your word as for bringing up the child so decisive to its parents? If your answer is honest *Yes* to all these questions, then you are good Godparent. But I doubt whether many can frankly answer so.

So, if you have ever gotten that *Godfather* or *Godmother* title, I believe the best thing to do is the following.
First, *confess* your *error* to GOD.

Second, approach the *Priest* who allowed that act and *recant*.
Third, ask the parents concerned to forgive you and (if they still believe in the *infant baptism*) tell that you have nothing to do with the last anymore.
Be ready to answer comments, better by *Matthew 12:36*.

Q: Hypothetically, if I were to have a child, yet I knew with absolute certainty that that child would grow up to be a tyrannic human in the league of Hitler, would choosing to have that child make me responsible for the atrocities that I know my child will commit?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: Yes, it would. For it is written:

Train up a child in the Way he should go: and when he is old,
he will not depart from it. (Proverbs 22:6)

Read *Kenneth & Gloria Copeland*, *From Faith To Faith* (*December 06*).

Q: Why does *Numbers 35:28* say that a person who unwillingly killed someone should stay in a refugee city until the death of a High Priest?

A: That Rule presumed the Responsibility we spoke about in the previous question.
A High Priest is accountable to GOD for Godly Education of his Sheep. *Deuteronomy 6:6-7, 32:46*, and other relevant Scriptures addressed him first. Otherwise, what is he for, in the first place?
The death of a Priest ends his responsibility, and the next one takes it over.

Q: Can someone be baptized more than once?

(Signed: Christian.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020.)

A: That depends on the approach to the Sacrament of Baptism.
At the age of one, I was baptized. That was followed by the long years of unbelief. Then I came to GOD, and my *Threefold Baptism* (the subject of chapter 66) took place.
Please read *Mark 16:15-16* and note that the Word *believeth* certainly stands above *baptized*. In this regard, see “Q & A” chapters 20 (*Water Baptism*) and 243 (Paradise today).
Thank you.

46

Q: How to make sure my *Confession* stays confidential?

A: First, keep that confidentiality yourself.
All the matter should firmly stand on these two Scriptures,

I, even I, am He that blotteth out thy transgressions for Mine Own Sake,
and will not remember thy sins. (Isaiah 43:25)

Be ye therefore Followers of GOD, as Dear Children ... (Ephesians 5:1)

The confidentiality is the Responsibility of both – the *Confessionalist* (the person confessing) & the *Confessor* (the person witnessing).

Death and Life are in the power of the tongue:
and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof. (Proverbs 18:21)

Second, concerning *Confessors.* To take out those *forgiven* & *forgotten* by GOD sins from the *Confessional* (the place set apart for the purpose) and let anybody in on the stuff confessed is a manifold sin, namely:

– against *LORD GOD*, by ignoring His Example as to forget the sins forgiven;
See the above-quoted *Isaiah 43:25 & Ephesians 5:1*.

– against the *Confessionalist*, as it is a betrayal of Believer's Honesty to GOD, false witnessing and sowing in the Believer worldly sorrow & prudence;

Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are Spiritual,
restore such an one in the Spirit of Meekness; considering thyself,
lest thou also be tempted. Bear ye one another's burdens,
and so fulfil the Law of Christ. (Galatians 6:1-2)

– against the *Church*, by spreading around there the unfriendliness & division.

Now I beseech you, Brethren, mark them which cause divisions
and offences contrary to the Doctrine which ye have learned;
and avoid them. (Romans 16:17)

Third, regarding the broken Secrecy. Some Christians are afraid of sinful gossips if the Confidentiality of their Confession is broken due to whatever reasons.

True, it is painful to know that many in your spiritual Family (Congregation or Ministry) – got familiar with what should have been forgotten. But sort out the priorities: what is more dangerous to you, the empty gossip (the false witnessing of others), or your unclean heart?
Lord Jesus said:

Peace I leave with you, My Peace I give unto you:
not as the world giveth, give I unto you.
Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. (John 14:27)

Pray to GOD for Wise Confessors & Counselors in His Church.

Fourth, some sins should not be left in Confessional.
It is written,

My son, fear thou the LORD and the King ... (Proverbs 24:21)

> *Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of GOD: the powers that be are ordained of GOD. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the Ordinance of GOD: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. (Romans 13:1-2)*

See also *1Peter 2:13-17*.
It means that whatever government we may ever have – Christian or heathen, as our Blessing or Punishment – is Justly given us by the LORD, our GOD.

That's why, such sins as *murder* which cannot be made up for, should be reported by the *Confessionalist* to the nearest Police Office right after the Confession.*

Lo, when GOD's Forgiveness has been obtained, and no Wrath remained – *what* are all subsequent worldly judgments and punishments put together?

And the Work of Righteousness shall be Peace ... (Isaiah 32:17)

* Q: Don't you think the *Pastor* or *Confessor* should do the same?

A: Why not? But that should be stipulated in the respective *Church Rules* (see chapter 160), posted in a prominent place in the Church building. Only this way, it would be an open *report*, not a cowardly *ratting*. Kindly consider parallel chapters 19, 42, 405, & 409.

47

Q: How to make the *Communion of Saints* (a.k.a., *Home Groups*, *Small Groups*, &c.) more effective?

A: It is written,

... when ye come together, every one of you hath a Psalm, hath a Doctrine, hath a Tongue, hath a Revelation, hath an Interpretation. Let all things be done unto Edifying. (1Corinthians 14:26)

Therefore, I am of the opinion that a good point in our Christian Communions is equal participation of everyone, which demands that we all – not only Elders – should come over there *prepared*. And, once the Scripture made stress on *Edifying*, the main reason for our every meeting is *Bible Study*.

Sometimes, our Elder or Group Leader may choose a specific topic for Discussion, say, Giving, or Charity, or whatever else. The subject matter should never surprise the participants but rather be made known to them well in advance to get well prepared. That way, we might expect our Edifying to be Fruitful, and the Communion more interesting. See *Proverbs 15:23*.

I remember the practice of our Pastor to inform us (Group Leaders) on the topics planned for the next Elders' Meetings. And you know what? That was a hard time for him. For being prepared, we stopped him preaching more than once for disagreements. Since the man was not without some pride, he discontinued those announcements of the next topics. See *1Thessalonians 5:11*.
Well, I don't want us to make any "hard" times for our Pastors. My point is that their aim was our *spiritual growth*. But the last is impossible without our being actively involved. See *2Thessalonians 3:10*.

I don't know about you, but walking my way to those Meetings, I used to pray GOD inviting His Holy Spirit to our Communion, to help me *hear* & *speak* as the Learned. See *Isaiah 50:4*.

See parallel chapters 286, 413, 445, & 595.
You may kindly visit <*http://www.smallgroupchurches.com*> (December 2021).

The following Scriptures are well worth discussing in Christian Small Groups.
Psalm 34:3, Acts 2:46-47, Malachi 3:16-18, & Hebrews 13:16.

48

Q: You know, some Christians always give their *Thanks for meals* – some not. Which of them are better off?

A: The first ones are. It is written:

Giving Thanks always for all things unto GOD and the Father
in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ ... (Ephesians 5:20)

Who satisfieth thy mouth with Good things;
so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle's. (Psalm 103:5)

Yet, apart from being Thankful, do consider the *Power* of sincere Praise:

But Thou art Holy, O Thou that inhabitest the Praises of Israel. (Psalm 22:3)

That Power is indeed needful to *cleanse* our food, as things offered to idols are met much more often in our supermarkets than simple folks may guess. I mean, many food products are made by the principle "end justifies means". Lo, a lot of stuff thus made has preservatives, substitutes, and other chemicals harmful to our physical health yet financially profitable for manufacturers, sellers, suppliers, etc. It is nothing but the food offered to the idols, even such evils as mammon, lie, compromise, common sense, and so forth.

However, according to *Luke 17:11-19*, Faith is all we need for Cleansing.

The sincere Thanksgiving should be mindful. Otherwise, in the middle of eating and talking you may find yourself asking one another a silly question, *Hey, did we give Thanks?*

> *Our Rule is, that whether we eat or drink, or whatever we do, we do all to the Glory of GOD; and True Christians will aim to receive all with that Thankfulness, and use all with that Moderation, which may render even their meals Honourable to His Name. (Thomas Scott)*

Last but not least: after Thanks are said to the LORD, your GOD, take care to avoid any words of displeasure if the stuff on a table is not to your taste. Be silent and continue to praise GOD in your thoughts. Make due corrections to your shopping & cooking later.

... every Creature of GOD is Good, and nothing to be refused,
if it be received with Thanksgiving.
For it is Sanctified by the Word of GOD and Prayer. (1Timothy 4:4-5)

Please see chapters 75 (Giving Glory to GOD) & 200 (The Praise of GOD).

The Scriptures to mind:

And when ye will offer a Sacrifice of Thanksgiving unto the LORD,
offer it at your own will. (Leviticus 22:29)

... when thou shalt have eaten and be full; then beware lest thou forget
the LORD, Who brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt,
from the house of bondage. (Deuteronomy 6:11-12)

When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shalt bless the LORD thy GOD
for the Good land which He hath given thee. (Deuteronomy 8:10)

Q: What shall I do when I'm sick of my Church & Clergy, tired of Prayer and Service, and feel far from GOD?

(Signed: *Episcopalian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020.)

A: If I understood the question correctly, you were unhappy with the Local Church and her Leaders, got no visible Answer to personal & Common Prayers, the Congregational Service became a dull routine to you, and Communion with GOD was lost.
What I believe is appropriate to remind here, is that nobody but you alone is responsible for your Eternal destiny.
You might feel far from GOD, but that does not mean *He* is far from you.
Something should be changed in your Christian Life, that's for sure.
You may see chapters 32, 242, 461, 525, and the Index section for more.

Q: Is ... the Church traditionally anti-science?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: If, by saying "the Church," you mean what I do, namely, the One Indivisible Body of Christ and "anti-science" means "the position contrary to *atheistic* science, the last seeking & concocting a 'no-God-evidence'", then my answer is only affirmative. Kindly find "science" in the Index.

49

Q: How should Christians take media information?

A: Do you mean the *worldly* media? Well, it is as wrong to ignore it totally as watching the stuff for hours and get overloaded with the *lies of the devil*.

Woe unto them that call evil good, and Good evil; that put darkness for light, and Light for darkness; that put bitter for sweet, and Sweet for bitter! Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight! (Isaiah 5:20-21)

The more we are fed by the Written Word of GOD the more we can see the *Truth*, even through the distortions of the worldly media.
See chapters 177 (Truth and lie) & 563 (The worldly media).

He that is not with Me is against Me;
and he that gathereth not with Me scattereth abroad. (Matthew 12:30)

As for me, I look at what's on either on the Internet or TV for just several minutes a day to know about *wars* & *disasters*, whether personal or national, totally ignoring the comments. For they blame whosoever but the *real* enemy – Satan, as well as *never* praise our LORD GOD. Their *truth* is not spoken in *Love.*

Why inquire on wars & disasters? – To remember people suffering over there in my morning *Lord's Prayer.* Offered up in *Faith,* it is much more Powerful & needful than military, money, and the truth deprived of Love.
See chapter 31 (Speaking the Truth in Love).

I beg to note that every worldly media speaker is personally responsible for the lie spread around (see *Proverbs 12:22*), as well as every person – director, staff-manager, camera-man, driver, handyman, janitor, and so forth – employed in the worldly media business.

Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt Good manners. (1Corinthians 15:33)

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers:
for what fellowship hath Righteousness with unrighteousness?
and what communion hath Light with darkness? (2Corinthians 6:14)

50

Q: It is written:

The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be;
and that which is done is that which shall be done:
and there is no new thing under the Sun. (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

The question is: do folks *idol-worship* today all the same *detestable* way?

A: Yes, they do, and even worse.
All idolatry, ancient or modern, has always come from *Satan*. Whether called by abominable names of ancient false deities or modern evil of *atheism, communism, fascism, nationalism, racism*, &c. – the condemned one is always behind all that spiritual dung.

Why nowadays is idolatry worse? They say that *Christians* comprise the one-seventh part of humankind. That includes all denominations, confessions, sects – all folks who call themselves Christians. Anyway, what part of us will get saved? Look at these two Scriptures:

Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven; but he that doeth the Will of My Father which is in Heaven. Many will say to Me in that Day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy Name? and in Thy Name have cast out devils? and in Thy Name done many Wonderful Works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21-23)

For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the Cross of Christ: whose end is destruction, whose god is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things. (Philippians 3:18-19)

In both, it is written: *many*. Why? The answer is in our subject – *idolatry*. Mind also two most hidden evils: *compromise* & *common sense*. Chapters 40 & 41.

Speaking of modern idolatry, children are being sacrificed in more fearful ways. We send our kids to schools where teachers are not Christians.
Is it not the evil sacrifice? Yes, it is. For those abhorrent fires of old killed babies relatively quickly set against the fire of hell, which compulsory follows our modern atheistic education & worldly careers. We viewed that in chapter 26.

Q: Why does Satan want to destroy humans?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: He does want so (see that in *1Peter 5:8*) because of his stupidity.
And stupid he is, opposing *Genesis 1:27,31*.

Jesus said, *I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life. (John 14:6)*
So, who but *the trap, the lie, and the death* is Satan?

If I am right and the *hell & second death* is nothing but eternal agony of conscience (see chapters 8 & 573), who can imagine Satan's pain there when his corrupted conscience will get awaken?

Q: (1) Would you consider *patriotism* sinful, benign, or generally positive?.
Q: (2) Would you consider it to be an example of the kind of *pride* warned against in the Bible?
Q: (3) If not, what separates it? Thanks in advance!
(Signed: *Christian, Protestant*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021.)

A: Far as I understand, *patriotism* may be very different.
Webster's Dictionary (2001) defines it as,
devoted love, support, and defense of one's country; national loyalty.

That love, support, defense, and loyalty may quite vary, depending on our heart attitudes. And of those attitudes, I take *Faith* first. Christians love their countries not the same way as unbelievers. Please, see chapter 55 (Christian Country).

Therefore,
(1) Patriotism is secondary (or one of the secondary things) to our Faith.
(2) It can be (but should not) tied up with pride (national pride, nationalism) – all that must be kept off our Christian Church.
(3) It can be separated from whatever evil in a Christian heart.
Thank you.

Q: Are Christians prohibited from eating food blessed by other religions?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: Yes, we are, since "blessed by other religions" means "encouraged by Satan". Kindly see chapter 48 (Thanks for the meals) and the Index.

51

Q: How to interpret dreams?

A: It is written:

Do not interpretations belong to GOD? (Genesis 40:8)

That's why the Believers of not yet adequate *Understanding* are not supposed to try to interpret dreams themselves, neither look for interpretations provided by whosoever but *LORD GOD.*

I will bless the LORD who hath given me Understanding:
even now at night my reins have instructed me.
(Psalm 16:7, Septuagint by Charles Thomson, 1904)

Prophets should be seriously tested before being accepted as such.
Kindly consider *Numbers 12:6 & 2Chronicles 20:20.*

Now, when we go to bed tired, still thinking about the hard time passed or yet to come, our dreams at night might only testify to our inability to relax.

... a dream cometh through the multitude of business ...
(Ecclesiastes 5:3, Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition)

... a dream cometh by much temptation ...
(Ecclesiastes 5:3, Septuagint by Charles Thomson, 1904)

Please consider also *Ecclesiastes 5:7 & Jeremiah 29:8.*

Mostly, our night dreams are gone when we wake up. But the one from GOD is different, being sealed up in our memory. See *Job 33:14-17 & John 14:26*.
Remember, in a dream or otherwise, the LORD will never contradict His Written Word. See *2Timothy 2:13*.

Q: I'm just wondering, how do you know if GOD, or Angel, or a deceased relative is trying to send you a Message?
Q: And how do you correctly interpret the message?.
Sometimes, I feel like I get signs or messages, but it can be confusing as it feels like mixed messages. So, it is hard to interpret, or even say if I'm getting a message in the first place.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: To begin with, the most needful Message – the Written Word of GOD – has already been sent. It is the best Guide to know for sure whether any other message (or sign) is from GOD or not. You may kindly look at chapter 32, dealing with the ways of our Communion with GOD.

Don't pay attention to "mixed messages" or "from deceased relative" or other satanic bull. When GOD speaks through His Spirit or Holy Angel, all other voices shut up. The only thing which can mess with the Voice of GOD is your reason, which only you can and should stop dead to hear the LORD.

Q: How can you distinguish the working of the Holy Spirit from your own imagination?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Your question resembles our second conversation in chapter 181. There we drew a borderline between the Voice of GOD and our "making up".
Here, I may add that our every contemplating, meditating, rationalizing, etc., when focused on the Word of GOD, inevitably leads us to a conversation with Him. So,

... whatsoever things are True, whatsoever things are Honest, whatsoever things are Just, whatsoever things are Pure, whatsoever things are Lovely, whatsoever things are of Good Report; if there be any Virtue, and if there be any Praise, think on these things. (Philippians 4:8)

Q: Brother, is there any particular difference between "thus saith the LORD", "It is written", "the Bible says", etc., we should note?

A: Speaking of *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*, the first two expressions are in the Scriptures, the third not. You know, when it was *written*, the term "Bible" was not used.

Speaking of myself, I say & write, "thus saith the LORD" or "It is written", when these words are part of the quotation or else, it is the *Holy Ghost* Who reminds them to me. That is important in every case of following the *Spirit* of the Word, not a letter. Per the Example of Christ, when thus speaking, I am not supposed to quote our Bible exactly, simply retelling the written Truth, instead.
The third expression – "the Bible says" – is more appropriate in the conversation about different translations & editions of the Holy Scriptures, to mean, "the New International Version says" or "Good News Bible runs" or alike.

52

Q: What is the *Knowledge of GOD*?

A: The Knowledge of GOD is His Blessing bestowed upon Believers, which unites Christian Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom in one Beatitude, since apart from Godly Intelligence – Knowledge & Understanding – it is manifested in Righteous deeds – Wisdom. Kindly read chapter 58. *Jeremiah 31:33-34; 1John 2:3 & 4:2-8* may well testify to this.

The complete Knowledge of GOD is impossible to whosoever outside His Holy Trinity. Please, mind *1Corinthians 13:9.*
Knowledge of GOD is developed & strengthened on by our Christian Experience, which is the best part of our GOD-given lifetime. Then, the Precious Communion with Him is sought for and becomes evident. Consequently, we get to know that His Holy Spirit is right here at Communion of Saints, Healing Ministry, etc.

To some extent, we can compare the Knowledge of GOD with our information about a human. We get advised by what we hear (or read) about that character. But that is only data, orientation, report, not the knowledge from experience.

Put some money in your pocket – do you have to *believe* it's there? Nope. You *know* that. Let somebody tell us about returning a debt tomorrow. Being *confident* or not is up to us, but nobody *knows* for sure.

When you read the Bible and *believe* the Word of GOD, it is *Faith*. But when *experience* with GOD comes over, which Miraculously substantiates His Holy Scriptures, there is no more need to *believe* – you *know* it is True.

> *Wherever Faith has been original, wherever it has proved itself to be real, it has invariably had upon it a sense of the Present GOD ... Where True Faith is, the Knowledge of GOD will be given as a fact of consciousness altogether apart from the conclusions of logic ... Whatever else it embraces, True Christian Experience must always include a genuine Encounter with GOD. Without this, Religion is but a shadow, a reflection of reality, a cheap copy of an original once enjoyed by someone else of whom we have heard.*
>
> *(A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)*

See relevant chapters: 32 (Communion with GOD), 181 (Jewish Creed), & 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit).

Q: Do you agree with the Apostles' Creed published, say, by <h*ttps://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Apostles'_Creed*>?

A: No, I don't.

In paragraph 5, it stated that our Lord Jesus "*descended into hell*".
In my opinion, the Lord and the hell are incompatible.
Kindly see our Q & A chapters 8 (hell) and 243 (Paradise today).

In paragraph 11, the words "*the resurrection of the body*" might be replaced by *the Resurrection of the Just* (*Righteous, Redeemed, Christians).* A human body (different from the one created by GOD – see chapter 709) will be changed per *1Corinthians 15:51 –*

Behold, I shew you a Mystery;
We shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed ...

You may also consider Q & A Index – Resurrection.

Q: (1) Belief vs Knowing.
(2) I am a Catholic and believe in GOD.
(3) What bothers me is wanting to *know* Him.
(4) A philosophical argument won't get me there.
(5) And Prayer hasn't worked yet, at least, in the way I want it to.
(6) I want to *know* Him. Please help.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: (1) What about Belief & Knowing? These two are different, yet helping one another, not contradicting. Faith goes before Knowledge. *Hebrews 11:6*.
(2) One presumes another, doesn't it?
(3 & 6) That's a good desire. Please note the Scriptures quoted in the first part of this chapter. Please read & follow the Teaching of *Isaiah Chapter 58.*
(4) Correct. Philosophy remains a theory. Knowledge requires practice.
Please see chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry). That will help.
(5) Prayer seldom works as *we* expect it to. Please see chapter 478 (The Silence of GOD) and the Index for *GOD's Answer* and *Prayer Answered*.
And how to know GOD without Communion with Him?
Please go as far as chapter 32 (Communion with GOD), mentioned above.
GOD bless you.

53

Q: What is the *Peace of GOD?*

A: The *Peace of GOD* is a manifold *Blessing* of His, manifested in such Beatitudes as *Love, Faith, Hope, Knowledge, Understanding, Wisdom.*

In the natural, Peace of GOD makes impossible anger, cruelty, depression, envy, fear, lie, murders, poverty, pride, revolts, unbelief, theft, wars, and other evils* to rule the Life of a human, family, or nation. (* Here, given alphabetically.)
The Peace of GOD has nothing to do with the peace worldly. The last presumes the absence of war between nations bought with a sinful harmony with Satan and conformity with his rules for this world.

The following Scripture references may better explain the Peace of GOD.

No wars, weapons, military training: *Isaiah 2:4 & Micah 4:3.*
Mind & believe Him: *Isaiah 26:3 & Romans 5:1.*

The Works of GOD in us: *Isaiah 26:12.*
The Peace Promised: *Isaiah 54:10,13; Ezekiel 34:25; & Matthew 11:28-30.*

The Peacemakers: *Jeremiah 29:7; Matthew 5:9 & 10:12-13.*
No worldly peace: *Matthew 10:34-36, John 14:2 & 16:33.*

The Peace in Churches: *1Corinthians 14:33.*
The Answer to Payers & Works: *Philippians 4:6-9 & 1Thessalonians 5:16-23.*

By the Cross of Christ: *Isaiah 53:5 & Colossians 1:20.*
Keep the Peace of GOD in One Body of Christ: *Colossians 3:15.*

Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by Prayer and Supplication
with Thanksgiving let your Requests be made known unto GOD.
And the Peace of GOD, which passeth all understanding,
shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. (Philippians 4:6-7)

To exemplify the *Peace of GOD*, we may consider *Matthew 8:24* (in the context of *Verses 23-26*).
I don't know about you but, from experience, I do know what *storm* is all about. To sleep in such circumstances (much less in poor conditions of a fishing boat), one must be tired indeed. Or else, to have that *Peace of GOD*. Or both.

Another example is the Blessed *Book of Martyrs* by Brother John Fox.
Read it, at least once, to memorize for the rest of your Life what it means to die in satanic torches – possibly, without pain and, definitely, without incertitude.

Mind well the Promise of GOD in *Isaiah 54:4-10.*
Please see chapters 52 (Knowledge of GOD), 158 (Freedom),
& 678 (The Peace of GOD).

Q: What does the Ascension and Exaltation of Christ do, exactly?
Q: What changes now that Jesus is enthroned at GOD's Right Hand?
(Signed: *Biblical Unitarian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

... All Power is given unto Me in Heaven and in Earth.
(Matthew 28:18)

The *Gospels* end and the *Book of Acts* begins with the Ascension & Exaltation of Jesus Christ, plus, important, Empowering His Disciples by the Holy Ghost. Thus the Promises of GOD were fulfilled, and Victory of His Church was proclaimed & established from her very beginning.
The Twelfth Commandment was given, and the New Way to GOD opened.

Q: What did Jesus mean when He said, *Peace I leave with you. (John 14:27)*?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: As we made clear in the first part of this chapter, the Peace of GOD differs from that of the world.

But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, Whom the Father will send in My Name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. Peace I leave with you, My Peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. (John 14:26-27)

In this Scripture, please see the Promise & Presence of the *Holy Ghost* as the compulsory Condition & Essence of Peace. Keep it as your most Precious Treasure. Wholeheartedly trust & Communicate with Him.
GOD bless you.

54

Q: How to find *sponsors* for our Local Churches & Christian Ministries?

A: We don't need any. Please, mind *Malachi 3:8-12* & *Mark 12:41-44*.

Malachi teaches that it is better to sew up the rotten bag rather than look for more stuff to put in. *Mark* clearly shows the best *sponsors* – the poorest of you.

> *And Jesus sat over against the Treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the Treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. And there came a certain poor widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. And He called unto Him His Disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, that this poor widow hath cast more* in, than all they which have cast into the Treasury. For all they did cast in of their abundance; but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living.*
>
> *(Mark 12:41-44)*

* I believe what *Jesus* called *more* applied not only to that poor woman's "budget" or "business plan", but also to the Temple, where she sacrificed.

The silver is Mine, and the gold is Mine, saith the LORD of Hosts.
The Glory of this latter House shall be greater than of the former,
saith the LORD of Hosts: and in this place will I give Peace,
saith the LORD of Hosts. (Haggai 2:8-9)

Hard to understand? Well, imitating some troubleshooting guides, open the page "*heart*" and tune "*Faith*" up to the maximum, open the page "*mind*" and switch off (uncheck) "*common sense*". And not only in this particular case, but every time you open your *Bible*.

For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the Cross of Christ: whose end is destruction, whose god is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame, who mind earthly things.
(Philippians 3:18-19)

I remember one *Testimony*.
A friend of mine testified that, following my strong advice on *Tithing*, she obediently brought the tenth of her small salary to the next Church Service. But when at the Giving Ceremony we offered up our money into the Church Treasury, she listened to the second thought and refused.

The day following, all her salary, which she carried somewhere, was stolen on a bus. Does it not resemble (in the negative) *Verse 11* of the following Scripture?

10 Bring ye all the Tithes into the Storehouse,
that there may be Meat in Mine House, and prove Me now herewith,
saith the LORD of Hosts, if I will not open you the Windows of Heaven,
and pour you out a Blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.
11 And I will rebuke the devourer for your sakes,
and he shall not destroy the fruits of your ground; neither shall your vine
cast her fruit before the time in the field, saith the LORD of Hosts.
(Malachi 3:10-11)

Years ago, when I trained me in one good gym, I happened to overhear some stories about getting sponsors to better oneself for important national and international competitions.
The sponsors might provide you with the money needed, but required to sign the receipt for the amount exceeding the one received – for tax purposes or so. I have every reason to believe that that monkey-business does exist.

Then shall ye return, and discern between the Righteous and the wicked,
between him that serveth GOD and him that serveth Him not.
(Malachi 3:18)

So, I pray, may those deeds will never mar our Ministries & Churches.
In Promised Name *Jesus*.

Please see parallel chapters 6 (Tithes & Offerings), 56 (The Test of Giving), & 285 (Donations).

Q: Why is there so much attention to singing in the Church?.
In some Bible Verses, the person sings as an expression of Joy or Worship.
Q: But why is there kind of a “social rule” that you *must* sing in the Church?
In some cases, they directed it like a Choir.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: I think the reason why is an outward view. I don’t support it too.
Read *Ephesians 5:19* & *Colossians 3:16*.
Following these Scriptures, put your attention to *inward* singing.
What Local Church or Christian Ministry to join is up to you.
Thank you.

55

Q: How would you define a *Christian country?*

A: It is every country whose Constitution begins with a statement like, *Nothing in here in any way might ever contradict the Written Word of GOD – the Holy Bible.*

What, it looks like a fairy tale? Possibly. But I believe on Judgment Day, most of us will be asked *why* did we personally invest in darkness instead of Light. About 500 years ago, against all reason & fear of death, Brother Luther said:

My conscience is captive to the Word of GOD.
I cannot and will not recant anything, for to go against conscience
is neither Right nor safe. GOD help me. Amen.
(Here I Stand, A Life Of Martin Luther, by Roland H. Bainton, p.185)

See chapters 163 (National Repentance), 439 (For all that are in Authority), & 502 (To a man of authority).

Further references:
Deuteronomy 6:4-7, 11:19-20, & 32:46 … Law & Education.
Deuteronomy 16:18-20 ….…..... Law & Justice.
Deuteronomy 17:15-20 ….…..... The Government.
Psalm 91:11 ….…..... The Promised Power.
Isaiah 32:17-18 ….…..... The Promised Prosperity.
Isaiah 51:12-13 & 54:13-17 ……. Promised Peace & Power.
Zechariah 4:6 ….…..... The Word against the military.
Matthew 5:8 ….…..... Pure heart & conscience.
Matthew 6:33 ….…..... The Promised Prosperity.
Matthew 10:34-39 ….…..... The Courage needful.
Luke 22:25-26 ….…..... The Government.
John 8:31-32 ...….... The Discipleship, Truth & Freedom.
2Corinthians 10:5 ….…..…..... Our Education.

And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken Diligently unto the Voice of the LORD thy GOD, to observe and to do all His Commandments which I command thee this day, that the LORD thy GOD will set thee on High above all nations of the Earth. And all these Blessings shall come on thee, and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the Voice of the LORD thy GOD.
(Deuteronomy 28:1-2)

56

Q: What's the hardest ever Test for Christians?

A: In my experience, it is *Giving* – our first stone of stumbling. *Luke 16:10-11*.

In chapter 6, we discussed the subject of *Tithes & Offerings*.
Let's talk now about *Christian Giving Attitude* – the sure Blessing of GOD.
You might have read or heard,

... GOD loveth a Cheerful Giver. (*2Corinthians 9:7*)

Have you ever heard this stupid interpretation: "It is better to give little but cheerfully, rather than more with bitterness."? I have. From experience, I also know how to stifle all common sense and, with great effort, give more than you can "afford". And get blessed.

Have you ever compared these two Miracles:
Matthew 14:15-21 (5 loaves & 2 fishes to feed about 5.000 men besides women & children, 12 baskets leftovers), and
Matthew 15:32-38 (7 loaves & few little fishes to feed 4.000 men besides women & children, 7 baskets leftovers)?

Why in the first Scripture had *more* folks been so miraculously fed up with *less* foodstuff than in the second? I dare tell (or remind) you *why*. The foodstuff amount and the number of folks to feed didn't matter. What did, in both cases, Jesus commanded to give away *everything* His Disciples had with them.

Giving Attitude is Blessing & Reward. *Mark 10:28*.

Please, see chapters 54 (Do we need sponsors?), 314 (A Cheerful Giver),
504 (Giving & Receiving), & 628 (The unique Words).

References: *Exodus 29:37* & *Isaiah 61:8* – Offer Honestly.
Deuteronomy 6:4-9; Proverbs 3:7-10 – Prove your Love.
Malachi 3:8-12 & Matthew 19:21 – Challenged Giving.
Matthew 8:4, Mark 1:44, & Luke 5:14 – Giving for a Testimony.
Revelations 6:9 – Giving Life for a Testimony.

57

Q: There are two different opinions about the *Lord's Prayer.* By the first, it is compulsory to be prayed, by the second, it is not, as our Lord Jesus just "outlined" or "blueprinted" a Prayer. What is your opinion?

A: My opinion is close to the first one.
The *Lord's Prayer* has been commented on quite extensively by many expositors, my humble self inclusive. In short, it is a very needful *Intercession* for the Body of Christ and all humanity. Therefore, I offer it up every morning, slowly enough to remember everything my GOD revealed me thereby, as well as all persons I intercede for at the moment.
Please read the following notes of the Teachers.

By Brother Martin Luther,

... You do not need to convince Him with words, or instruct Him at length; for He knows beforehand better what you need than you do yourselves ... for He will give in such a way that His Name may be Hallowed and His Kingdom and His Will may be advanced and promoted ... See, such Acknowledgment in Prayer is pleasing to GOD, and is the True, Highest and Most Precious Worship which we can render to Him; for thereby the Honor and Gratitude that are due are given to Him. This the others do not do, but they seize and devour all the Gifts of GOD, just as hogs ... an Excellent brief form, how and what we are to pray, that embraces all kinds of wants that are to drive us to Prayer ... it is a very Good practice ... to pray the whole of the Lord's Prayer daily, morning and evening and at table, and also at other times, so that one may present to GOD in it all our needs in general ... (Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount, p.250-253)

By Brother John Calvin,

... No man will pray Aright, unless his lips and heart shall be directed by the Heavenly Master. For that Purpose He has laid down this Rule, by which we must frame our Prayers, if we desire to have them accounted Lawful and approved by GOD. It was not the Intention of the Son of GOD ... to prescribe the Words which we must use, so as not to leave us at liberty to depart from the Form which He has dictated. His Intention rather was, to guide and restrain our wishes, that they might not go beyond those limits : and hence we infer, that the Rule which He has given us for praying Aright relates not to the Words, but to the things themselves ...

(Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists Matthew, Mark, and Luke, volume 1, p.316)

By Brother Thomas Scott, the Lord's Prayer,

> *... contains more important Instruction, than can any where else be found in so few words ... No doubt the form has been greatly misused, by unmeaning repetitions, to the exclusion of real Prayer ; and it is often repeated, even by Protestants, with very little Understanding, and not without some degree of superstition. But, perceiving these mistakes, some pious persons have run into the opposite extreme, and have improperly objected to the use of it, and even in a measure have overlooked the Abundant Instruction contained in it ... It may often be proper to use the very Words, but it is not always necessary ...*
>
> *(The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes ... vol.5, Matthew ch. 6)*

By Brother Adam Clark,

> *... it is a Plan for a more extended Devotion ... We do not sufficiently consider the Value of this Prayer, the Respect and attention which it requires, the preference to be given to it, its fulness and Perfection, the frequent use we should make of it, and the Spirit which we should bring with it ... for unless we are Divinely instructed in the manner, and influenced by the Spirit of True Devotion, even the Prayer taught us by Jesus Ciirist may be repeated without Profit to our souls ...*
>
> *(The New Testament, with a Commentary and Critical Notes, vol.1, p.85)*

By Brother William Barclay,

> *The Lord's Prayer is specifically and definitely stated to be the Disciple's Prayer; and only on the lips of a Disciple has the Prayer its full Meaning. To put it in another way, the Lord's Prayer can only really be prayed when the man who prays it knows what he is saying, and he cannot know that until he has entered into Discipleship.*
>
> *(The Daily Study Bible, The Gospel of Matthew, vol.1, p.198)*

Q: "*Do not worry about tomorrow*." *(Matthew 6:34)* – is that even possible?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: Yes, it is.
Jesus said:

> *... with GOD all things are possible. (Matthew 19:26)*

To that, I may only add my suggestion: put GOD first in your Life. Take Him on His Word, even as He challenges in *Malachi 3:10*. And see what happens next.

58

Q: How would you define *Knowledge*, *Understanding*, and *Wisdom* for Christians?

A: The Bible *translations* (*King James Pure Cambridge* inclusive) do not differentiate between these three (*K & U & W*) very strictly. In fact, they often are presented as *synonyms*. Look at these *references* –

Only GOD gives K & U & W: *1Chronicles 22:12, Psalm 119:104, Proverbs 2:6, 1Corinthians 12:8, & James 1:5.*
Fear of & Obedience to GOD are K & U & W: *Deuteronomy 4:5-6; Job 28:28; Psalm 111:10; & Proverbs 1:7; 9:10.*
K & U & W are with Godly man: *Proverbs 10:13, 14:29, 15:14, & 24:5.*

Nevertheless, trying not to deviate from the Spirit of Holy Scriptures, I defined for myself these three Blessings as follows.

Knowledge –
GOD-given Measure of revealed information regarding every existing thing, natural and spiritual. The only Source of True Knowledge is the Word of GOD. This enlightenment is fundamentally essential to comprehend the Laws of GOD & His Holy Will. The Truth of the Written Word of GOD and His Will do not contradict one another. We can develop the Gift of Knowledge on, along with our spiritual hearing, by being subordinated to the Holy Ghost, our Promised Teacher. In chapter 52, I tried to differentiate the Beginning Knowledge based on Faith and the Advanced one based on the Walking with the Holy LORD GOD.

Understanding –
GOD-given Measure of ability to discern the spiritual reasons for every process around us. Understanding is based on Knowledge and may grow up as well. It enables us to recognize the Truth of the Word of GOD in all given circumstances & conditions. Thus, the Holy Spirit of GOD teaches us on.

Wisdom –
GOD-given Measure of competence to use & rule the existing things Godly way. That competence stands upon and is backed up by *Knowledge* & *Understanding*. Wisdom is united with *GOD's Fear* and *Obedience* to His Word. It is an actual implementation of Knowledge & Understanding from a single word or action to steadfast practice. God Holy Spirit gives us all the Power needful.

There is no Truth apart from the Spirit. The most brilliant intellect may be imbecilic when confronted with the Mysteries of GOD. For a man to understand Revealed Truth requires an Act of GOD equal to the original Act which inspired the Text ... True spiritual Knowledge is the result of a Visitation of Heavenly Wisdom, a kind of Baptism of the Spirit of Truth which comes to GOD-Fearing men. (A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)

Please see parallel chapters: 287 (We are not of the world) &
292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit).

Kindly note that all chapters of this book named
Bible Study and "*Contradictions*" pertains to *Knowledge*,
Christian Understanding and *Unbelievers ask* – to *Understanding*,
Christian Living and *Spirit War* – to *Wisdom*.

Q: If someone doesn't believe in GOD but is a *good person*, will he (she) go to Heaven?
Q: How does that work?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: To start from, "a good person" we all define very differently.
But what does the Bible say?

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above,
and cometh down from the Father of Lights, with Whom is no variableness,
neither shadow of turning. (James 1:17)

Add to that the Image & Likeness of GOD we all are created after (*Genesis 1:27*) and see your question in the Light of the above two Scriptures.
It is hard to be "a good person" in this corrupted world, even in the Body of Christ. Read *Matthew 7:21-23*.
It seems to me, the way of *Luke 15:20* is the only good one.
And Lord Jesus is the only Right direction –

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

As for *how does that work*, nobody can answer profoundly. We can only reap what we sow. Kindly note *Mark 4:26-29* & *Galatians 6:7*.

59

Q: There are two opinions about *Jews*.
By the first, they are *Chosen People of GOD*, by the second, they are not.
What's your position as for them?

A: I support the second opinion. Kindly consider the following Scriptures.

Isaiah 62:2 & *65:15 – The name* of GOD's Faithful Servants.
Acts 11:26 – mentioned that *New Name*, even *Christians*.
Matthew 8:11-12 & 21:43 – warned some chosen on *hell*.
John 15:5, Acts 15:9, Romans 2:10-11, Galatians 3:26-29, & Ephesians 3:6 – made no distinction among *Christians.*
John 8:39 & Galatians 3:7 – explained who are *True Children of Abraham.*
John 1:12-13 & Romans 8:14 – taught who are *the Children of GOD.*
Colossians 3:11-12 – presented all Christians *Chosen.*

Search the Bible – there are more to that subject.

The above arguments – the Words of GOD followed by humble conclusions of mine – are to serve our *Unity*, not any *nationalism*.
Mind *Ezekiel 11:19-20; Hebrews 2:11; 1John 1:7; 4:7,11,12,21; & 5:1-2*.

True, in the Holy Scriptures, Jews are shown in their failures and unfaithfulness to LORD GOD. But that doesn't make any nation any better. I believe the history of Israel is the picture of and the lesson to all, give or take.
Deuteronomy 32:1 & Jeremiah 13:15.

In this "Q & A" book, we discuss such important matters as implementation of this or that Book or chapter which belongs to the Old Covenant part of the Holy Bible. Well, put the words Christian Church or Ministers instead of Israel or Judah or Jerusalem, replace Jew by Christian and find the Teaching needful for you, your Local Church, Ministry, and Shepherds. *Isaiah 43:7*.

For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that Circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and Circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose Praise is not of men, but of GOD. (Romans 2:28-29)

You may find more references in our Index section.

Q: In what light then are we supposed to take *Romans 11:17-27*?
By *Verse 24*, Jews *are* the People of GOD.

A: Consider all *Epistles* (and all our Bible) in Good Light of the *Gospels*.

For instance, *John 15:5* (mentioned above) well clarifies the term "Vine", so applicable to "olive tree" in *Romans 11:24*. In the latter Scripture, kindly note the word "grafted", as applied to both repented Jews and repented Gentiles.

As for "their own", this Wording doesn't exclude "our own", since we are *One* in Christ Jesus. (Same as, say, *Romans 11:11*. Is "to provoke them to jealousy" the *only* Purpose of Salvation?)

... For they are not all Israel, which are of Israel: neither, because they are the seed of Abraham, are they all Children ... (Romans 9:6-7)

We can go back to the Promises which the LORD our GOD gave to Abraham.
It is written "seed" and "children", isn't it, yet the *spiritual* quality is not stated. That True Meaning got clear later, when, over time, few Jews proved Faithful, and many didn't.

But let's consider *Romans 11:17-27,* which you mentioned.

In *Verses 17-23*, Jews & Gentiles, whether Godly or worldly, are recognized.
Fallen away are cut off, repented are grafted in, praise GOD.

In *Verse 24*, as well as in the earlier mentioned *Matthew 8:11-12 & 21:43*, Jews are presented as Children of the Kingdom. However, they are as free to hold it or lose as Gentiles.

Verse 25 tells about the losses on the part of Jews and Repentance unto Salvation of Gentiles. Well, that's what the Spirit War is for. Sadly, most people are lost.

In *Verses 26 & 27*, we read again about Spiritual Israel – the Olive Tree of GOD.

Thank you. I respect your opinion. And stay on mine.

See chapters 149 (Circumcision), 288 (Christians first),
323 (Pray for the Peace of Jerusalem), 555 (The Remnant of GOD),
& 599 (The Children of Abraham).

Q: Why would GOD want to live in *your* presence forever?.
Q: We talk about living with GOD forever, but why would He want to spend Eternity with *you*?
Q: What do you think GOD loves about *you* that He would be prepared to spend Eternity in *your* presence for? Thanks.

(Signed: *Christian, Ex-atheist. https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: It is written,

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life. (John 3:16)

That *Promised* Everlasting Life is possible only in the Kingdom of GOD and His Holy Presence. E.g., *Isaiah 64:4*.

As for the reason why GOD would love to spend Eternity with His People, you can find many Scriptures speaking on GOD's Image & Likeness, Chosen People of GOD, Eternal Covenant, the Love of GOD, etc., on the subject. Please refer to the Index section for "GOD's ..." to find the relevant "Q & A" chapters.

And regarding you & me, the Love of GOD doesn't stand on *our* exploits & accomplishments. Actually, it is *His* Works through ourselves. He loves our keeping the Right Way. *Luke 15:20*.

Thank you for your question.

Q: So, what does "Chosen People" mean?
Q: Why would GOD select one group to reveal Himself instead of everyone?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: Could it not occurred to you that the answer might be as simple as that: GOD, our Maker, had chosen those who had Gratefully followed Him?

... GOD is not respecter of persons. But in every nation he that feareth Him, and worketh Righteousness, is accepted with Him. (Acts 10:34-35)

Please see the previous questions of this chapter for more references.

60

Q: How would you define and characterize a *Christian family?*

A: It may be simply defined as that of *Christians – Followers of Christ.* Please consider the Scriptures following.

The Holy Union :	*Matthew 19:6 & Mark 10:8-9.*
Husband :	*Ephesians 5:25 & 1Peter 3:7.*
Wife :	*Ephesians 5:22 & 1Peter 3:1.*
Parents :	*Deuteronomy 6:6-9; 11:18-21 & 32:46-47.*
	Proverbs 22:6,15; 23:13-14 & Matthew 19:14.
Children :	*Exodus 20:12 & Deuteronomy 5:16.*
Adoption :	*Matthew 18:5, Mark 9:37 & Luke 9:48.*
Home :	*Acts 16:31.*

It is written:

> *Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be One flesh. (Genesis 2:24)*

Years ago, when something was misplaced, broken, lost, or otherwise wrong around our home, my wife Lydia and I used to ask one another, *who* had done that? If none of us remembered any lapse on our part, she asked the son why *he* had done that. And if he also refused to accept the responsibility for the damage, Lydia explained to him, "*Neither I nor dad did that. So, only you remained who could.*" Sure thing, our son wasn't much pleased about that kind of logic.

Praise GOD – our son has already had his family and the kids to bring up.
But now & again, when something untoward continues to pop up around here, the reasoning, "if not I, then who but *you*?" is first ready at hand.

Whether such a course of thought & argumentation pertains only to our family or not doesn't matter. The above-quoted *Genesis 2:24* suggests that husband & wife are *One* person. There are no more *I, me, you* – only *we*. And, when our children live with us, it is *One* team. Well, at least in a *Christian* family.

Q: What should *Evangelical* parents do with a teen daughter who has a high IQ and got seriously into *science*? It's causing problems.

She's a quiet & polite girl but, the more parents limit her access to science-based shows & programs on the Universe, the more it caused her resentment. She questioned their religious beliefs at her younger age. As her questions weren't answered to her satisfaction, she eventually tuned them out. She never outright said anything negative about Religion until they started restricting her access to programs on the Universe, biology, and evolution.
By 11, she wasn't interested in their beliefs. I saw her rolling up eyes when mom said that the reason why labor hurts was in the failure of *Eve* in the Garden.
She's now 15 and wants to continue taking college-level classes. However, her parents are not allowing her to take any more of those classes, especially science-related. They want her to go to a Christian college. But she stated that she would file to court to get emancipated at 16.

> I think her parents are on the wrong way.
> Growing up an unbeliever she remains their daughter.
> So, I'm looking for other opinions on this issue before it ends up badly.
> (*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Condensed.)

A: Well, sorry to hear.
For the sake of brevity, I had to cut off the girl's discussion about the alleged connection between Santa Claus and poverty. Regretfully, the Local Church answered her no better than her mother's teaching about Eve and hard labor.

Since you are looking for opinions that might better the relationship, her parents should seek Guidance in the Word of GOD. The Scriptures which crossed my mind as I read your post are the *Confession*-related ones. See the Index section.
You write that the parents are Evangelical Christians. Does it mean *Baptists*? For, when I attended Baptists' Services and Communion Groups, Confession was never mentioned. The Church had a banner "Christians of Evangelical Faith".

I cannot be sure that my advice will be taken seriously by those particular parents. But, to those who might encounter a similar situation, I strongly recommend starting from the Top. *You*, Christian parents, were wrong. For, when Christians stand firmly on the Word of GOD, then *atheistic* "science" and other satanic stuff would have only to keep off. *James 4:7*. So, repent before GOD.
Years ago, I heard about one teacher who was asked by a young lady, "My baby is 4 months old. When should I start to educate him?" And the teacher answered, "You are 4 months late."

May GOD bless you and the family you've written about.

61

Q: They say, *names* mean a lot and therefore should be chosen carefully for our children. Are those folks right?

A: No, they aren't. Let's check out the Scriptures.

In *Genesis 4:1-2,* we can see the names *Cain* & *Abel* and, according to *Bible Dictionaries*, find out that the first name meant *possession,* whereas the second *vanity*. Thus, the name *Cain* carried more *hope* for his parents than *Abel*. And?

The second example, *1Samuel 8:1-3*. In both names of Prophet Samuel's two sons – *Joel* & *Abiah – GOD Himself* was mentioned. Samuel made them *Judges* over Israel – and was wrong. His sons did *evil* in the Eyes of the LORD.

The third example – *Judas Iscariot*. His name means *Praise & Confession*, but what had turned out? By *John 17:12,* he became "*the son of perdition"*.

And the last example, *Matthew 1:21*. The *Angel of GOD* commanded Joseph to call his son *Jesus: for He shall save His People from their sins*.

Can you see the difference? Therefore, having not *GOD's Direct Command* to the contrary (e.g., *Hosea 1:4,6,9; Luke 1:13*) let's put aside the *superstitions* and feel free to give our children whatever names we like.

As for what should be chosen indeed carefully, kindly note these chapters: 50 (Modern idol-worship), 60 (Christian Family), 70 (Christian Education), 78 (The Rod of Correction), & 85 (The right education).
All are dedicated to really important family matters.

Q: Is it true that zodiac signs are a sin to believe?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: Yes, it is. The following Scriptures condemned astrology.
Deuteronomy 4:19, Isaiah 47:13-14, & Jeremiah 10:2.

Ye cannot drink the Cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils:
ye cannot be Partakers of the Lord's Table, and of the table of devils.
(1Corinthians 10:21)

62

Q: It is written,

I am the LORD that healeth thee. (Exodus 15:26)

... Who healeth all thy diseases. (Psalm 103:3)

... with His stripes we are healed. (Isaiah 53:5)

– along with many other *Healing Promises.*
The question is: why do *Christians* go to doctors & medicines?

A: We do so from the lack of *Faith*. I cannot explain that otherwise.
Welcome to *Matthew 17:20*, saying,

... Because of your unbelief: for Verily I say unto you, If ye have Faith as a grain of mustard seed, ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place; and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you.

In this book, we talk about many subjects. But the points of *Christian Faith* and *common sense* (worldly reason) are present in most of them.
From personal experience, I dare say that the more active is our Christian Ministry, the fewer problems with *physical* wellness we may encounter, let alone *spiritual* health.
I'm also sure that all Healing Promises of the Bible, being Conditional, relate to our spiritual health firstly.
But lacking Faith, we have to pray for our doctors to be Christians.

No disrespect to talented medics, but pay attention to the *negative* examples of sorting out the priorities in favor of physicians (doctors) –

... Asa in the thirty and ninth year of his reign was diseased in his feet, until his disease was exceeding great: yet in his disease he sought not to the LORD, but to the physicians. (2Chronicles 16:12)

And a certain woman, which had an issue of blood twelve years, and had suffered many things of many physicians, and had spent all that she had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worse, when she had heard of Jesus, came in the press behind, and touched His garment. (Mark 5:25-27)
Read the same in *Luke 8:43-44*.

There is nothing wrong with seeking help from physicians.
However, our first option should be *the LORD, our GOD*. In every emergency, pray first, call 911 second. Don't stop praying when you or your loved ones are under a doctor's care.

Please see chapters 11 (Physical sicknesses), 67 (Healing Promises),
183 (The Lord's Prayer – Healing), 253 (The Prayer o' Faith),
465 (Prayer Team), & 487 (Doctor's orders).

Q: The Bible mentions *witchcraft*. What is witchcraft?
Q: What *powers* can a person exercise through witchcraft?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: I understand & define *witchcraft* (a.k.a., magic, sorcery, etc.) as whatever speech & work producing an "extraordinary" result – sickness, healing, illusion, and so on – *contrar*y to the Will & Word of GOD.
When working healing or other help, a witch (or warlock, magician, sorcerer, &c.) would *never* give Glory to GOD.
Practicing witchcraft, magic, or alike, a person is backed up by the demon(s) and leads people away from GOD.

Please see the Index section for *Healing devilish*, *Paranormal*, *Witchcraft*.

Q: (1) What is your view of the "Elect"?.
Q: (2) Do you believe those who are Elect predestined by God to be Christians, or do you believe the "Elect" is some other idea?
Q: (3) Why would God have "Elect" in the first place if we're supposed to have Free will?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: (1) Per our Bible, the Elect ones are Jesus, His Holy Angels, and all Chosen People of GOD (Spiritual Israel – Christians). Just search the Bible yourself.
(2) The ones Elect are *predestined & foreseen*, as we may only try to comprehend LORD GOD, Who lives independently of created Him Time.
(3) Why would He not? His Elect are those, who have chosen the Light of GOD instead of the darkness of Satan and used the Blessing of *Free will* to serve the LORD, our GOD, not the devil.
Thank you.

63

Q: Does our *Bible* say anything about *sports*?

A: Actually, not much. However, what GOD said is enough to put the *sport* in the right place in our life. Since *sports* deal a lot with our *physical health*, let's regard these Scriptures:

I beseech you therefore, Brethren, by the Mercies of GOD,
that ye present your bodies a Living Sacrifice, Holy, acceptable unto GOD,
which is your reasonable Service. (Romans 12:1)

... know ye not that your body is the Temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you,
which ye have of GOD, and ye are not your own?
For ye are bought with a Price: therefore glorify GOD in your body,
and in your spirit, which are GOD's. (1Corinthians 6:19-20)

Both Scriptures bring us back to the earlier discussed question – *GOD First*.
Kindly see chapter 15. At the same time, nowhere in the *Bible*, we can read about any negligence to our *physical* health (second to a *spiritual* one). *1Timothy 4:8-9*.

Before you speak, learn, and before you fall ill, take care of your health.
(The Book of Sirach 18:19, Revised Standard Version)

Physical exercises are helpful for every good work and healthy Life.
But I cannot support *professional* sports, addictive & time-consuming, national & international competitions full of anger, corruption, defeat, envy, lie, mammon, pride, and shame. *Isaiah 55:2 & 1Corinthians 9:24-25*.
Please see the relevant words of Brother *C.S. Lewis* at the end of chapter 303.
The training (jogging, skiing, weightlifting, swimming, &c., &c.) ought to be flexible enough and, the less competitive, the better.
When you work out alone following a personal program, please note that the best indicator of following the right track is your *physical health*, nothing else. Our sportive results ought to *slowly*, I repeat, *slowly* grow up. And we all have our reasonable limits, should know them, and never overstep.

Sports are also concerned about *morale*. The last belongs to the *soul*, subordinated to our *spirit*, which, in turn, should be under the *Holy Ghost*. Therefore, the sportive morale is OK, when, and only when, not in conflict with the *Christian* one, never demanding more time & energy sacrifices. GOD First.

64

Q: If *GOD is Love*, how does *GOD's Punishment* work?

A: The subject is parallel to our earlier discussion about *hell* in chapter 8. Sin draws humans and demons to the dreadful lot in hell & eternal death (chapter 573). The same is true regarding due punishment.

Let's see the Scriptures.

The Angel of the LORD encampeth round about them that fear Him,
and delivereth them. (Psalm 34:7) See also *Psalm 125:2.*

Because thou hast made the LORD, which is my Refuge, even the Most High,
thy Habitation; there shall no evil befall thee, neither shall any plague
come nigh thy dwelling. For He shall give His Angels Charge over thee,
to keep thee in all thy Ways. (Psalm 91:9-11)

Here, we can see the Mighty Work of *GOD's Protection* over *His People*.

Search the Old Testament Scriptures and find there the *Divine Shelter* over Israel. As LORD promised, He gave to His People *the best* land on the face of Earth, asking in return only their Faithfulness to Him. They were more than protected winning battles using no arms – *GOD* did that for them.
Exodus 14:13-14, Deuteronomy 31:6, 2Kings 6:16-17, 2Chronicles 20:15, &c.

In the same Holy Writings, we can also see the opposite pictures.
People turned their backs to their Father GOD and got into abominable idolatry.
Read the above-quoted *Psalms 34:7 & 91:9-11* and imagine everything to the contrary: godless people, Guardian Angels step back, demons move forward.
Cf., *Deuteronomy 28:15-68 & 31:17; Lamentations Chapter 5*.
Please, see "in negative" *Leviticus 26:3-12, 2Chronicles 7:14, John 8:31-32, & 1John 1:9*.
See also *Isaiah 50:1 (ye sold yourselves) & Hosea 9:12* (GOD departs).

As it seems to me, GOD's Punishment is not about doing evil. It is the *termination* of doing Good. For how long? That depends on ourselves.

Be not deceived; GOD is not mocked:
for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. (Galatians 6:7)

Brother Martin Luther considered the subject of GOD's Punishment another way. I read it as the Act *controlled* or *regulated*.

> *... the Long-Suffering of GOD is great. Therefore, He does not punish sin immediately. If He did, the moment we sinned, we should perish. This Long-Suffering of GOD Satan ever abuses. And it just suits his purpose, that man should not immediately feel his sin. For because Punishment is thus deferred, Satan fills the mind with security and unconcern. So that a man is not only kept blind to the fact that he has sinned, but is caused to take delight and to glory in his sins. (Martin Luther, The Creation, p.213)*

Please, note "Q & A" chapters 8, 33, 472, and 508.

Q: (1) I saw a post from an *atheist* asking, "I wonder, why none of these Evangelists have been showing up to hospitals and performing Miracles on these corona-virus patients?" The post had photos of Kenneth Copeland, Joel Osteen, and Benny Hinn.
Q: (2) While I understand that these are considered by many to be *false teachers*, it got me thinking, why aren't Christians every day in hospitals healing people of diseases by laying hands on them?
Q: (3) If *Mark 16:18* is True, shouldn't they be able to?
Q: (4) Doesn't the Holy Spirit indwell & empower a Believer to do such acts?
Q: (5) Why even bother going to a doctor when we can just lay hands and ask for Healing in Jesus' Name?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Edited.)

A: (1) I'm sorry for that atheist. Please see chapter 141 (The evil of criticism).
(2) Please be warned by *Exodus 23:2*. Read chapters 104 (Our Promised Teacher) & 139 (Our Teachers). And see the answer to your question (3).
(3) To understand *Mark 16:18*, ponder preceding *Mark 16:17*.
Note, *these Signs shall follow them that believe*. So, see it tightly connected with *Matthew 9:28*. Both – the healer & the sick – should have Faith.
(4) Aye, He does. Now, where is a Believer?
(5) Kindly see chapters 62 (Doctors & medicines), 415 (In Promised Name of Jesus), & 577 (The Promised Name Jesus).

To the above, I may add this question, *What do folks need Healing for?*
To continue as *atheists*, or unbelieving believers, or what?
Kindly read *Deuteronomy 28:15,27,28 & Joshua 24:15*.

65

Q: What's the *Baptism in the Holy Spirit* for?

A: It is a *part* of what I call *Threefold Baptism*,

... in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit.
(Matthew 28:19)

Baptism in the Holy Spirit gives us more *Experience with GOD* – our Christian Testimony – even more Understanding, Power, and Courage. The Scriptural references below will say better.

My experience *with* the Holy Ghost might differ from that of other Christians. The thing is, I encountered Him five years before the actual Baptism *in* Him.
It was in the time of need, and He was coming forth from *inside* of me in answer to Prayer. It is hard to explain or describe that invisible Cloud, which I sensed around myself.

What I received later at the Baptism in the Holy Spirit was a mighty flow of words from myself in the *unknown tongue.* Yet, that was not against my will. I could (and can) control it, like a water flow from a tap (*1Corinthians 14:32*).
On the day following the Baptism, that sensation was gone, but what still stays unchanged is my ability to pray in the language I don't understand.

... In this fire he prayed with a loud voice, "Lord Jesus, have Mercy upon me! Lord Jesus receive my spirit!" And these were the last words he was heard to utter. But when he was black in the mouth, and his tongue so swollen that he could not speak, yet his lips went until they were shrunk to the gums: and he knocked his breast with his hands until one of his arms fell off, and then knocked still with the other, while the fat, water, and blood dropped out at his fingers' ends, until by renewing the fire, his strength was gone, and his hand clave fast in knocking to the iron upon his breast. Then immediately bowing forwards, he yielded up his spirit. Thus was he three quarters of an hour or more in the fire ...
(John Hooper, Bishop of Worcester & Gloucester. *John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Chapter XVI, Persecutions in England During the Reign of Queen Mary*)

O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory?
(1Corinthians 15:55)

Scriptural references.

Baptism of Power.

And the Spirit of the LORD will come upon thee, and thou shalt prophesy with them, and shalt be turned into another man. And let it be, when these Signs are come unto thee, that thou do as occasion serve thee; for GOD is with thee. (1Samuel 10:6-7)

But ye shall receive Power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you: and ye shall be Witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judæa, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the Earth. (Acts 1:8)

Baptism of Authority.

... Peace be unto you: as My Father hath sent Me, even so send I you. And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost: Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained. (John 20:21-23)

Baptism of Enlightenment.

Now we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of GOD; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of GOD. (1Corinthians 2:12)

Baptism of Christian Unity.

For by One Spirit are we all baptized into One Body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into One Spirit. (1Corinthians 12:13)

I therefore, the Prisoner of the Lord, beseech you that ye walk Worthy of the Vocation wherewith ye are called, with all Lowliness and Meekness, with Longsuffering, forbearing one another in Love; endeavouring to keep the Unity of the Spirit in the Bond of Peace. There is One Body, and One Spirit, even as ye are called in One Hope of your Calling; One Lord, One Faith, One Baptism, One GOD and Father of all, Who is above all, and through all, and in you all. (Ephesians 4:1-6)

66

Q: Speaking of *Baptism*, how would you define *Threefold Baptism?*

A: I define it as a Symbol or Image of our return to GOD.

Notwithstanding whatever religious traditions, the Threefold Baptism is the Way of transforming a man or a woman of this world into a *Christian* and should include the following Sacraments.

The first is *Water Baptism*, unto which we are supposed to come with *Confession* and our ways already corrected to the best following of good conscience.
It is the Baptism of *Repentance & Spiritual Cleansing* and, thus, the Sign of our return to Father GOD. See chapters 19 (Confession) & 20 (Water Baptism).

The second comes *Baptism in the Name of Jesus*, which is not "accepting", but *coming to* Christ Jesus, our only Lord & Savior. We become *Christians*, Candidates for Members or Members of a Local Church (as per her relevant Regulations), all Duties & Responsibilities inclusive. We receive our Great Commission (the Twelfth Commandment). *Matthew 28:19-20*. It is the *Baptism into One & Indivisible Church of GOD*. You may refer to "Q & A" chapters 43 (The Twelfth Commandment) & 316 (Baptism in the Name of Jesus).

The third Sacrament is *Baptism in the Holy Spirit*, which is obtaining the Power to be Christians. Please, see chapter 65 (Baptism in the Holy Spirit).

Only Water Baptism is dealing with *water*, thus symbolizing *Purification*.

The above sequence, however desirable, cannot be a mandatory one, given a lot of differences from one *denomination** to another, as well as the circumstances & conditions we may happen to find ourselves in.
* The subject of *denominationalism* is considered separately.
See chapter 124 (Jesus' Prayer for our Unity) and the Index section.

Therefore, it is not essential where & how (outwardly) we get baptized.
For that may be done (seemingly) right, but what then – a compromise with the world and fall away? Only our *spiritual attitude* manifested in the *Fruits* we bring to the Kingdom of GOD under the Guidance of His Holy Spirit matters.

Please consider the following references.

1. Due amendments were made by the Disciples to see to it that all three Sacraments of *Threefold Baptism* were performed.

Now when the Apostles which were at Jerusalem heard that Samaria had received the Word of GOD, they sent unto them Peter and John: who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghost. (For as yet He was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus.) Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost. (Acts 8:14-17)

While Peter yet spake these Words, the Holy Ghost fell on all them which heard the Word. ... And he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. (Acts 10:44,48)

And it came to pass, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having passed through the upper coasts came to Ephesus: and finding certain Disciples, he said unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghost since ye believed? And they said unto him, We have not so much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghost. And he said unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they said, Unto John's Baptism. Then said Paul, John Verily baptized with the Baptism of Repentance, saying unto the people, that they should believe on Him which should come after him, that is, on Christ Jesus. When they heard this, they were baptized in the Name of the Lord Jesus. And when Paul had laid his hands upon them, the Holy Ghost came on them; and they spake with tongues, and prophesied. (Acts 19:1-6)

2. Baptism of Unity.

For by One Spirit are we all baptized into One Body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into One Spirit. (1Corinthians 12:13)

3. Threefold Baptism – our Unity with GOD.

*For there are Three that bear Record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these Three are One. And there are Three that bear Witness in Earth, the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood * : and these Three agree in One. (1John 5:7-8)*

* Here, I see the third, first, and second Sacraments we discussed in this chapter.

67

Q: Can *Healing Promises* in the *Holy Scriptures* apply to some particular cases?

A: They can, given our *Faith* is applied first. Take the LORD, our GOD, at His Word, even the Scriptures He may remind you in time of need. Check out the following references – all were found relevant.

Right Approach:	*Proverbs 3:5, Jeremiah 17:14, & James 5:14-16.*
Spiritual weakness:	*Deuteronomy 6:4-6 & 32:46-47; Psalms 30:2 & 38:3; Proverbs 4:20-22 & 18:14; Jeremiah 31:33-34; & Romans 10:17.*
Depression (*):	*Psalm 41:4, Proverbs 17:22, & Isaiah 53:4.*
Insomnia (*):	*Psalms 3:5; 4:4,8; 63:5-6; & Isaiah 26:3; Matthew 8:24*, 2Corinthians 10:5, & Philippians 4:8.*

* See chapter 53.

All physical sicknesses:	*Exodus 23:25, Isaiah 53:4-6, & Matthew 8:3.*
Old age weaknesses:	*1Kings 3:14 & Isaiah 46:4.*
Mental disorders:	*Isaiah 26:3 & 2Corinthians 10:5.*
Speech problems:	*Joshua 1:8 & Isaiah 32:4.*
Teeth sicknesses:	*Psalms 103:5* (see chapter 485*) & Matthew 6:11*
Feet unhealthiness:	*2Samuel 22:34, Psalm 18:33, Isaiah 52:7, Jeremiah 14:10 (reason), & Habakkuk 3:19.*
Eyes' troubles:	*Job 17:5,7.*
Childlessness:	*Deuteronomy 8:1, 1Samuel 1:11, 2Samuel 6:6-23, Isaiah 54:1; Psalms 113:9.*
Evil spiritual attacks:	*Isaiah 53:4-6, Matthew 8:16-17, Mark 16:17, & Luke 10:19.*

After Healing: *Matthew 8:4,15; Mark 1:44; Luke 5:14; 11:24-26; John 5:14; Romans 6:13; 1Corinthians 6:19-20; & 1John 5:18.*

Mind *Matthew 7:6*. Your *Faithful Testimony* is not for all. Avoid *blasphemy*.

Q: How do I recognize Right from wrong on the issues for which there is no clear Biblical Guidance?
Q: Do you have to trust your conscience or something like that?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: Our Bible has the Guidance literally on every matter of Life. You can find the relevant text even in Ten Commandments of the Law of GOD. *Exodus 20:2-17* & *Deuteronomy 5:6-21*.

Of course, the Commandments give us the General Direction on how to deal with this or that issue or problem. But it is impossible to find the Right Way and the Scripture closest to the question at hand without standing on the Law, which is Righteousness. Your conscience should tell you the same.

So, *seek and ye shall find.*

Q: Can you please explain the Basis of Christianity to me. Like the Holy Trinity, for example? I'm very new to Christianity, and I know nothing about it, besides I want to be a Christian. If you can inform me of the core Beliefs, that would be awesome. Thanks.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: Nobody can explain that *Basis* better than Lord Jesus Himself.
Study the New Covenant. Kindly note: Understanding the Holy Scriptures will come as the Answer of GOD to your Faith & Obedience. No vice versa.
The *Holy Trinity of GOD* is incomprehensible. Read chapter 459.
The *core Beliefs* is a personal staff. You can develop yours.
There is a *Faith Statement* on many Christian sites.
See mine on <*https://christian498979569.wordpress.com*>.
Remember, the Written Word of GOD has the Answer to every question.
See *Jeremiah 33:3* and "Q & A" chapters 319 (The Beginning) & 461 (Discover your Ministry).
Thank you.

68

Q: What is *a Sacrifice of time*?

A: Actually, we all know it, at least worldly. For a disciplined *Christian*, it is a sequence to the Rule "GOD First", which we discussed in chapter 15.

The more we value our job, business meeting, flight, etc., the less possible is our being late thereto. The same is applicable for *Church Services*. The more important for us are people we talk to and the subject of a discussion, the less possible is our "*sorry*" when our mobile phone interrupts. The same is true for Communion with GOD by Prayer and Bible Study.

Have you ever been so busy and tired that there was just no time for the Bible? Well, what about your meals? Sure, it happens (How often?), no time for meals, but the thing is, our stomach always reminds us thereof.
What about *spiritual hunger* – do we feel it?

Our Sacrifice of time may be compared to that of money. In both cases, the amount qualified as *Sacrificial* depends on what is left. And the amount given determines what we expect to receive.

> *... she* [Eliza] *had evidently no time to talk. I never saw a busier person than she seemed to be : yet it was difficult to say what she did : or rather, to discover any result of her diligence ... (Charlotte Bronte, Jane Eyre, p.283)*

Q: How much Faith is required for Salvation?. I ask this because it's commonly held (at least among Protestants) that we are saved by Faith alone.
Q: So, is there a specific aspect of Faith needed to qualify for Salvation?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, March 2021. Condensed.)

A: Good question.
It is written:

... Faith without Works is dead ... (James 2:20,26)

Thus we are saved by Faith *proven*. The Works of GOD done through us by His Holy Spirit is that "specific aspect of Faith needed to qualify for Salvation". Please visit chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry).
Thank you.

69

Q: What is the *Anointing?*

A: In the Church matters, *Anointing a Believer with Oil* is a Symbol of personal Commission to follow the Holy Will of GOD for Life by serving the LORD in a particular Office.

Brown's Bible Dictionary (1789): ... to set apart to some noted Service ...

Calmet's Bible Dictionary (1832): Anointing, in general, was emblematical of a particular Sanctification ; a Designation to the Service of GOD, to a Holy and Sacred use ...

Most important, Anointing with oil is inseparable from the LORD's Will.
Nobody has any right to anoint (set apart for a Christian Service) whosoever without the direct *Command of GOD* given in His Written Word or otherwise.

There is also *Spiritual Anointing* made on *Believers* by LORD GOD Himself as per *Psalm 23:5; John 2:27; 4:4.*

Preaching *in the Power of Anointing of the Holy Ghost* strengthens your spirit, free up the mind, and heal the body. It enables you to see beyond natural devil-made circumstances & conditions.
The *Book of Acts* and *Book of Martyrs* well prove & exemplify that.

Thus, in *GOD-given Authority,* we proclaim:
– it is not too late for every sinner to repent,
– right now, stop stupid fighting one another in revenge,
– no grief can overshadow our Promised Salvation and the Joy in the LORD.

It means leading the prodigal ones back to the Right-Standing with Father GOD and producing Good Fruits for His Kingdom unto His Eternal Glory.
That way, you may experience the phenomena of non-stop-Preaching and hearing the Spirit speaking through yourself. See more in chapter 236.

That *Anointing* brings about the *Responsibility* too, because,

... unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required ...
(Luke 12:48)

70

Q: How do you understand *Christian Education*?

A: It is every schooling system that is not in conflict with *the Word of GOD*.

Christian education does not demand young people to become full-time Church Ministers. No. Every walk of life not conflicting with *the Law of GOD* is good. However, seeking such education is not easy since, inasmuch as possible, the perspective schools & colleges ought to be free of any heathen programs.

But what if, for whatever reasons, ungodly programs are unavoidable? Then, one should remember that grading (scoring, evaluating) a student's work is based not on an individual *spiritual* position but instead reflects the formal knowledge of (or academic achievement in) a particular subject.

What I recommend to our children is an adequate study of official handbooks, even atheistic, thus familiarizing with the arguments of our spiritual opponents. Write or speak something like, *according to the program* or *handbook* (name it) and then full ahead, quote the stuff required, up to "GOD does not exist".
That, however, must be followed up by a short statement like, *as for me, I don't accept it and stand on the Word of GOD*. No compromises. It is a matter of our Christian Honor (see *Matthew 26:34 & Luke 12:8*).
The grade (mark, score, etc.) should correspond to the demonstrated knowledge of the subject, full stop. The mentioned Statement of Faith is our strictly personal business with the LORD, our GOD, and not a concern of any unbelieving teachers & examiners.

In many countries, our *constitutional rights* include so-called freedom of word & freedom of conscience. Well, in every case of need, those rights & liberties ought to be used by parents & students to defend our Christian Faith and stated before the respective administrations and whosoever teaching unbelief, compromise, common sense, and other lies of Satan.

(That way Brother Paul used his worthless Roman citizenship.
Kindly read *The Acts of the Apostles 22:25-27 & 23:27*.)

References: *Deuteronomy 6:4-9; 11:18-21; 32:46; & Proverbs 22:6* – Parents.
Psalms 78:7-8 – The Blessed Teaching.
Isaiah 30:20-21 – The Promised Guidance.

Q: If you could give your younger self dating advice, what would it be?
Q: What advice did you take on board that you now regret?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020.)

A: Since I and my son are happy-married, I'd give such dating advice to my young Christian readers.

Long story short, value GOD-given Life-time of others & yours.
In chapter 132, the good questions – *Is it True? Is it needful? Is it Kind?* – related to the words we speak up – you can well extend to your time spent with folks.

> As for the multitude of information from every direction I received, rejected, or accepted in my youth, the regretful stuff was repented of, confessed, and forgotten. *Philippians 3:13-14*.
> Please see chapter 319, the first question, paragraphs 4, 8, and 9.

Q: (1) What will happen to the teenagers whose parents go to Heaven during the Rapture, but they don't?
Q: (2) I heard a lot about the Rapture and it makes me *fearful*. (?)
(3) A lot of my friends live very *sinful* lifestyles (sex, drugs, etc.) and have *Christian* parents. (4) I have never had drugs or premarital sex, but I'm not a model of a Christian Lifestyle, just trying to. I do believe in God.
Q: (5) I guess, *if* God comes back, most of us won't go to Heaven. (?)
(6) I've read that God holds a kid my age on the same level of Accountability as a full-grown adult. (?)
Q: (7) So, *if* the Rapture were to happen, would God let the teenagers of my age live orphans through the period of the antichrist that follow the Rapture?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: (1) A member of a Christian Family, will never be left behind. *Acts 16:31*.
(2) Why are you fearful? Follow your Christian Way and wait for the Lord. See *Matthew 28:20 & John 10:27-29*.
(3) Negative on that. Sin and Christ don't mix. See *2Corinthians 6:14*.
(4) That's good. Study the Word. Follow the way of *Luke 15:20*.
(5) However I don't like the "if" in this context, you are correct, speaking about so-called "Christians". See *Philippians 3:18-19*.
(6) It is good that you feel that Accountability. See *2Corinthians 5:10*.
(7) No "if" again. Confirming the answer to your first question, the parents will sooner get left behind than children. See *2Corinthians 12:14*.

71

Q: Standing upon the same Scripture, namely, *1Corinthians 11:2-16*, Church Rules & customs differ. Why?

A: I'm of the opinion, the *Prayer Veil* is GOD-ordained by this Scripture. Let's read & consider it, trying to find the Right Parallels, and –

Knowing this first, that no Prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation. (1Peter 1:20)

2 Now I praise you, Brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the Ordinances, as I delivered them to you.

That *Obedience*, Saint Paul told us about, is the best way to communicate with our LORD GOD. Kindly see chapter 87 (Discipline in the Church) for more.

3 But I would have you know, that the Head of every Man is Christ; and the Head of the Woman is the Man; and the Head of Christ is GOD.

The Parallels are *Genesis 1:27; 2:18;* & *Ephesians 4:15-16.*

4 Every man praying or prophesying, having his head covered, dishonoureth his head. 5 But every woman that prayeth or prophesieth with her head uncovered dishonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if she were shaven. 6 For if the woman be not covered, let her also be shorn: but if it be a shame for a woman to be shorn or shaven, let her be covered.
7 For a Man indeed ought not to cover his head, forasmuch as he is the Image and Glory of GOD: but the Woman is the Glory of the Man.

The Right Parallel to *Verses 4-7* is *Genesis 1:27* because *Prayer Cover* & *Spiritual Head* relate as *Man* and the *Image of GOD*. There are many examples of Worship – *Genesis 17:3, Exodus 34:8, 2Chronicles 20:18,* &c.

In the time of Prayerful Communion with LORD GOD, a man's covered head means the *shut-up* attitude to Revelations coming spiritually into his heart & mind. An uncovered head symbolizes his *opened* heart & mind.
On the other hand, a Veil (dedicated solely to Praying) on a woman's head stands for her *Obedience* to GOD-established Authority of Man.
An ordinary daily communication between man & woman is not spiritual.

Of course, there are times of urgency or emergency when (in the circumstances) the *Prayer Veil* is not within the reach of a woman, and she has to pray with her head uncovered. But that's quite an understandable exception.

> *8 For the Man is not of the Woman; but the Woman of the Man.*

The Parallel is *Genesis 2:21-23*.

> *9 Neither was the Man created for the Woman; but the Woman for the Man.*

The Parallel is *Genesis 2:18*.

> *10 For this cause ought the Woman to have Power on her head because of the Angels.*

I believe *Angels* here denote our *Church Leaders* as per *Revelation 2:1,8,12,18 & 3:1,7,14*, and not the *Holy Angels of GOD*. The latter are our *Fellow-Servants* rather than any superiors, in full accordance with *Revelation 19:10* & *22:9*.
Church Shepherds are accountable to the LORD for their *Sheep*, namely, how their *Church Members* follow the *Word of GOD*. The *Laity*, however, may happen to be more learned than some *Clergy*. Note *Matthew 15:14*.

> *11 Nevertheless neither is the Man without the Woman, neither the Woman without the Man, in the Lord. 12 For as the Woman is of the Man, even so is the Man also by the Woman; but all things of GOD.*

Behold here a *Family* as GOD's Divine Establishment. *Genesis 2:18,24*.
In chapter 147, you may read the words of Brother Cerullo about a great woman.

> *13 Judge in yourselves: is it comely that a woman pray unto GOD uncovered? 14 Doth not even Nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? 15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a Glory to her: for her hair is given her for a covering.*

A short haircut for a man and long hair for a woman has the same meaning of Authority discussed in the notes to *Verses 4-7*. Mind *Proverbs 12:4*.
Our Prayer to LORD GOD requires a spiritual Approach, including a Prayer Veil for a woman and an uncovered head for a man. The haircut and the Prayer Veil work differently. The first means our constant attitude toward GOD and one another, whereas the second relates to the time specially devoted.

16 But if any man seem to be contentious, we have no such custom, neither the Churches of GOD. (1Corinthians 11:2-16)

By this, the *Discipline* is reminded of again. Chapter 87.

All Scripture is given by Inspiration of GOD, and is Profitable for Doctrine, for Reproof, for Correction, for Instruction in Righteousness: That the man of GOD may be Perfect, throughly furnished unto all Good Works. (1Timothy 3:16-17)

Therefore, we should be careful as to the correct implementation of this Epistle, as well as every other Scripture. See *Jeremiah 13:15*.

To make a conclusion, a *Christian man* should have a short haircut.
His head should be uncovered at the *Church Service* and in *Prayer*.

A *Christian woman* should have a long haircut.
A special Veil is to cover her head at the *Church Service* and the time of *Prayer*. She should thus cover her head when entering the Temple (as well as every other place of *Prayer Service*) and take it off leaving the *Service* or ending the *Prayer*.

Why is the *Prayer Veil* to be thus separated? Note *Ezekiel 42:14 & 44:17-19*. Written for Priests, along with the *28th Chapter of Exodus*, those Scriptures well teach us the *personal* Dress Code. Otherwise, why it's written?

GOD is not the God of the dead, but of the living. (Matthew 22:32)

Christian women are free to wear or not whatever kind of head-dress they like outside the Church. Nevertheless, those hats or something and *Prayer Veils* are not the same thing, and therefore, entering any place of Service, our Sisters should put their *Prayer Veils* on. Those Veils are not to be worn in the street or on the way to and from the Church.

Is it so hard, offensive, intimidating, not worth obeying? Or else, is there any other reason which can convince us more than the Written Word of GOD?
Whatever, but thus saith the LORD:

If thou hast run with the footmen, and they have wearied thee, then how canst thou contend with horses? and if in the Land of Peace, wherein thou trustedst, they wearied thee, then how wilt thou do in the swelling of Jordan? (Jeremiah 12:5)

The expositors, such as *Frederick W. Grant (Numerical Bible, p.502)*, were firm regarding *GOD's Order* to be followed.
Others, e.g., *William Barclay (Daily Study Bible, www.studylight.org)*, taught that *1Corinthians 11:2-16* was written for the particular time, place, and people, and therefore, was not relevant here & now.

If you agree with Brother Barclay, kindly note the above-quoted *Matthew 22:32*.
For this reason, I cannot support any *flexion* when it comes to the Word of GOD.

> *Before thou prayest, prepare thy selfe, and be not as one that tempteth the LORD. (Apocrypha, Sirach 18:23, King James Version, 1611)*

We are also not supposed to distort the *Truth* by exaggerations.
Once upon a time, I attended the Services of one Pentecostal Church and noticed that all *Sisters* had their veils on continuously. I asked the Pastor about the reason. He explained that by quoting the same *1Corinthians 11:5* and said, "Sisters are in constant Communion with GOD."
Well, what about *Brothers*? Shall we always, for the same reason, have our heads *uncovered*, summer or winter? Nonsense.

See relevant chapters: 87 (Discipline in the Church), 103 (Avoid errors),
160 (Church Rules), 544 & 780 (Our Dress Code).

Further references.

Genesis 22:16-18 …..... The Obedience Praised.
Deuteronomy 4:2 & 12:32 …..... No amendments to the Word.
Deuteronomy 30:11-14 …..... Not impossible to follow.
Proverbs 30:6 …..... No amendments to the Word.
Revelation 22:18-19 …..... ditto
1Samuel 15:22 …..... Obedience valued.
Matthew 11:30 …..... Not impossible to follow.

In the *References* section of our "Q & A" book, please see *Bible Commentaries* of Brothers John Calvin, Thomas Scott, Adam Clarke, Frederick W. Grant, and William Barclay.
Those PDF books you may find freely on the Internet.
The addresses are in the same section, under the title, *Helpful Library sites*.

72

Q: Speaking of *Bible Study*, why did our *Lord Jesus* use *Parables?*
It is written:

10 And the Disciples came, and said unto Him, Why speakest Thou unto them in Parables? 11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the Mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven, but to them it is not given. 12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath. 13 Therefore speak I to them in Parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing they hear not, neither do they understand.
14 And in them is fulfilled the Prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive: 15 For this people's heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.
(Matthew 13:10-15)

The explanation given in *Matthew 13:11-15* (and repeated in *Mark 4:11-12* & *Luke 8:10*) seems not fair.

A: Does it? *Mark 10:28* gives another Good reason:

Lo, we have left all, and have followed Thee.

The same stated in *Luke 5:11*.
That Sacrifice was not much noticeable in those crowds that followed Christ Jesus (on feet), heard Him (audibly), got themselves, their kin, and friends healed (physically), and went back to their busy lives. Then someday, they shouted: *crucify him!* Yea, even among His Twelve, one became a traitor.

There is one more reason for *Parables.* Let's consider our own selves. We people are blessed with *intelligence* that allows us to get educated, pass exams, study hard, and win in every walk of life. The more *money* is at stake, the harder we think and work.
So, can we try that hard to understand the *Teaching,* which, by the way, is designed for everybody, not only professors?
And not only learn but obediently follow?

Heare Me, and I will instruct thee, hearken to the thing that I say, & I shall tell thee more. (Apocrypha, 2Esdras 5:32, King James Version, 1611)

Now, look again at the above *Matthew 13:15*. What was the *reason* for that (physical) healing the folks looked for when their hearts were not turned to GOD? Was it not to get (physically) strong and go on sinning around?

That's why *He spake many things to them in Parables* and cleared up nothing. Search the *Gospels* – His every Phrase, sometimes, a single Word requires our maximum consideration, and far not always is comprehensible at first reading. Please see chapters 29 & 104.

References: *Deuteronomy 29:29* ..... Revelation Knowledge.
Matthew 13:34-35 ..... The Reason why.
Mark 4:24 ..... Purified Hearing.
8:34 ..... Our Cross.
Luke 10:21 & John 4:13-14 ..... Knowledge vs reason.
John 8:31-32 ..... True Discipleship.
John 8:43-45 ..... The Reason why.
James 1:22 ..... Obedience.

Q: (1) How do Christians feel about *Luke 14:26*? (2) This Verse has always been challenging for me. (3) The word *hate* (*miseo*) is also used later in *Luke 16:13*, presumably, by the same author, to mean *hate* – not to *love less*. (*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: It is written,

26 If any man come to Me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, Yea, and his own Life also, he cannot be My Disciple. 27 And whosoever doth not bear his Cross, and come after Me, cannot be My Disciple. (Luke 14:26-27)

(1) We "feel" about any Scripture per our K & U & W (kindly see chapter 58).
(2) Okay, your statement is that of a Christian.
(3) It's *love less*. Please go as far as <*https://www.biblegateway.com*> and check out every "hard" Verse by another translation, *AMP* and *EXB*, in particular.
Read the words of Brother Luther about *grammarians* in chapter 103.
Kindly note that "the same Author" is GOD. So, try *Jeremiah 33:3*.
Godspeed.

73

Q: Do we need to *fast*?
Q: And if we do, then how to do it?

A: Yes, we do. But, firstly, we ought to have it clearly defined.

Reading *Isaiah 58:6-14*, we learn that *Fast* has nothing to do with abstaining from natural food & drink. What should be refrained from is every *evil* the LORD our GOD Himself detests. Moreover, it is a sure way to get our Prayers answered. I call it the *First Fast.*

What about other instances described in the Bible when abstaining from earthy food & drink had been taken by people and accepted by GOD?
That is the *Second Fast.*

What I mean, there are two Fasts for us, Christians.
The *First* one is chief, constant, and never-ending. The *Second* is commanded by a Local Church or taken personally to back up a Prayer or an Intercession in some exceptional circumstances, such as death, sickness, disaster, &c.
However, without the First Fast, the Second one is powerless & useless.
Here, you can see why the Prayer Teams in Churches should consist of the People o' Faith, who keep the First Fast.
Therefore, whenever and on whatever exceptional occasion, we take the Second Fast personally or as a Team, let us take the following Strategy.

(1) The First Fast (according to *Isaiah 58:6-14*) is factually kept by us, our spouses inclusive (*1Peter 3:7*).
(2) We have searched and well noted *the Scriptures* dealing with the evil to hold out against.
(3) We rule out all *strange spiritual food*, i.e., all *worldly* media, as well as every *worldly* conversation, including telling whosoever in *the world* about our Fast.
It is also desirable to obtain leave on our present employment.

Otherwise, our Fasting is aimed at nowhere.

Before thou prayest, prepare thy selfe; and be not as one that tempteth the LORD. (Apocrypha, Sirach 18:23, King James Version, 1611)

Before Prayer prepare thy soul : and be not as a man that tempteth GOD. (Apocrypha, Sirach 18:23, Douay-Rheims Bible, 1911)

See relevant chapters: 465 (Prayer Team), 470 (By Prayer & Fasting),
477 (*Isaiah 58:6-14*), & 525 (To get the Answer).

References.

The First Fast – *Jeremiah 7:5-7 & Mark 9:28-29.*
The Second Fast (national) – *2Chronicles 20:1-3, Ezra 8:21-23;*
Joel 1:14-15, & Jonah 3:5-10.
The Right way – *Zechariah 8:19 & Matthew 6:17-1.*
The wrong way – *1Samuel 14:24-32; Isaiah 58:1-5; Zechariah 7:9-10, 7:11-14;*
& Matthew 6:16.

Relevant books: *Kenneth E. Hagin, A Commonsense Guide to Fasting*
Kenneth Copeland, Honor
Danelle Ice, Dangerous But Good: A no-nonsense Guide to
casting out demons & evil spirits

Q: (1) Why did Jesus pray?
Q: (2) If Jesus prayed, doesn't that show that He was in need of Someone Higher than He?
Q: (3) But if He was God, there is nothing Greater than Him. So, why would God pray to Himself?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Corrected)

A: (1) By Prayers, our Lord communicated with His Father GOD, just as we should.

For there is One GOD, and One Mediator
between GOD and men, the Man Christ Jesus ... (1Timothy 2:5)

(2) Yes, it does. The Man Christ Jesus needs that Powerful support.
His praying before the crucifixion well exemplified that.
(3) Christ Jesus was God Son from Eternity to Eternity, but the Man for 33 years, as His Ministry so required. His Communion with Heavenly Father is the Example for us. Read, for instance, *Mark 9:29* and relevant chapter 470.

Q: Called by God, we come to be Christians. Why isn't everyone called?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: All are called. But few answered, and so, are chosen. *Revelation 3:20*.

74

Q: You know, some people – *vegetarians* – criticize eating *flesh*, others say it's okay. Who is right?

A: Me, I agree with vegetarians, not criticism. Especially *if*, besides their abstaining from eating flesh, they also reject *leather* shoes, belts, handbags, &c., as well as *animal-tested* cosmetics and a great lot of chemicals we use daily. Hats off to them. Really.

... GOD said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed,
which is upon the face of all the Earth, and every tree,
in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat.
And to every beast of the Earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing
that creepeth upon the Earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb
for meat: and it was so. And GOD saw every thing that He had made,
and, behold, it was Very Good ... (Genesis 1:29-31)

Eating flesh was (and still is) decidedly against the *Holy Will of GOD*. The meat on our tables nowadays is nothing but the terrible harvest o*f sin*, which affected our human nature and through us all the World, we live in. Is it reversible? Probably, considering vegetarians.

Yet, observing a human body changed to worse by *sin*, the LORD said to Noah,

Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you;
even as the green herb have I given you all things. But flesh with the life thereof,
which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat. (Genesis 9:3-4)

Thus, only food with *blood* was prohibited. Later, in *Leviticus Chapter 11*, the LORD specified *clean* & *unclean* flesh. Why? I believe the reason was the same, even our *sinfulness*, which worsened people, including the changes that happened to our bodies. We spoke on that subject in chapter 709.

So, Father GOD made the specific allowances, at *animals'* (*) expense, for us yet to remain *Holy* unto Him.

For I am the LORD your GOD: ye shall therefore sanctify yourselves,
and ye shall be Holy; for I am Holy ... (Leviticus 11:44)

Now, read these remarkable Passages of *Matthew 19:8* & *Mark 10:5-6*:

... because of the hardness of your hearts ... from the Beginning it was not so.

Yes, sure, that was said on another subject, *divorce*, but isn't it well applicable to our question?

Once, talking about *New Heaven & Earth*, one Pastor guessed that even air would differ from what we breathe now. I couldn't agree. How then to understand the Words *Very Good* in above-quoted *Genesis 1:31*?

People say, "The new is the old well forgotten."

GOD said, *... I am the LORD, I change not ... (Malachi 3:6)*

* For more about animals, please see chapters 28, 120, 249.

The references: *Leviticus 17:10-14 (eating blood is prohibited)*
1Corinthians Chapter 8 (prohibited food)

Q: If two Christians want to get married, do they need a third party involved (e.g., Pastor, Witnesses) for the Marriage to be Valid to God?
For example, two Christians are in an area without other Christians, say, they are doing Medical Relief Volunteer Work for an extended period in a place where the dominant religion is strange.

Q: Do they have to wait until they return to a place where there is a Church & Pastor to do the Ceremony, or can they do a Ceremony by themselves and it be Valid?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

... the LORD hath been Witness
between thee and the Wife of thy youth ... (Malachi 2:14)

In your example, Christians should have what is most necessary: Love, Faith, Prayer, Witness, and Responsibility.
A Christian Marriage Ceremony is also important. So, it can take place as the relevant *Confirmation* later on.
Please, see our discussion in chapter 717 (Christian Marriage) and visit the Index. Thank you.

75

Q: How are we supposed to give *Glory* to GOD?

A: Well, definitions first.

By *John Brown's Dictionary of the Holy Bible (1789) –*

> *GOD is glorified by Christ, or by creatures, when His Perfections are acknowledged or manifested by their praising, trusting in Him, or serving Him ; or are displayed in His Favours and Judgments executed on them (Leviticus 10:3; Psalm 50:23; Isaiah 44:23; John 17:4; Romans 4:20).*
> *Christ is glorified, in GOD's receiving Him into Heaven, bestowing on Him the Highest Honour, Power, and Authority, as our Mediator (John 17:1,5); and in the Holy Ghost's declaring and revealing His Excellencies, and communicating His Fulness to men (John 16:14); and in His People's believing on Him, walking in Him, praising, obeying, and imitating Him; and in His exerting and manifesting His Power and Wisdom, by doing Good to them (John 11:4; 2Thessalonians 1:10,12).*

By *Webster's Dictionary (1911) –*

> *Glorify = to raise in Honor and Dignity; magnify and honor in Worship; adore; beautify.*
> *Glory = Splendor; Magnificence; Brightness; Praise ascribed in Adoration; Distinction; Renown; Honor; the Divine Perfection or Presence; the Felicity of Heaven ...*

We are supposed to glorify *GOD* – the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost. That we do by diligent Bible Study to obtain more *Knowledge*, by spending time with Him in Prayer to receive more of His Holy Spirit, Who gives us *Understanding*, and by trusting Him and uncompromisingly following, as here is *Wisdom*.
See chapter 58 (K & U & W). Note well the Words of Lord Jesus in *John 15:8*.
Please mind the old books as well:

When you glorifie the LORD exalt Him as much as you can :
for euen yet wil He farre exceed, and when you exalt Him,
put foorth all your strength, and be not weary :
for you can neuer goe farre enough.
(Apocrypha, The Wisdome of Iesus the Sonne of Sirach, or Ecclesiasticus, 43:30)

Praise your LORD GOD to have Him nearby:

But Thou art Holy,
O Thou that inhabitest the Praises of Israel. (Psalm 22:3)

Give Him His Due Glory:

Give unto the LORD, O ye mighty,
give unto the LORD Glory and Strength. Give unto the LORD the Glory Due unto His Name; worship the LORD in the Beauty of Holiness.
(Psalm 29:1-2)

Nobody can stop you to glorify GOD:

I am the LORD: that is My Name:
and My Glory will I not give to another, neither My Praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

Glorify Him in the Works of GOD:

Let your Light so shine before men,
that they may see your Good Works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven. (Matthew 5:16)

Do not be proud:

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above,
and cometh down from the Father of Lights, with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. (James 1:17)

The words of Teachers:

> *... But let us remember, whatever temporal or spiritual advantages we possess, by whatever means, instruments, or endeavours ; to give all the Glory of them to GOD with Humble Thanksgivings and Praises. Thus all things will be sanctified to us, lead our thoughts to the Great Source of Felicity, and help to prepare us for the Enjoyment of His Favour for ever.*
> *(Thomas Scott, Commentary on Habakkuk)*

> *Keep reminding GOD in our times of private Prayer that we mean every act for His Glory; then supplement those times by a thousand thought-Prayers as we go about the job of living. Let us practice the fine art of making every work a Priestly Ministration. Let us believe that GOD is in all our simple deeds and learn to find Him there. (A.W. Tozer, The Pursuit Of GOD, p.117)*

Kindly see relevant chapters: 48 (Thanks for the meals), 157 (The Feasts), & 200 (The Praise of GOD).

76

Q: Brother, how would you define & exemplify *our Cross*?

A: Our Cross got closely connected with our being Christians – the Followers of Christ Jesus. For it is our constant Free-Will Sacrifice to GOD of our time, works, money, Life – whatever it takes.

When for sickness or injury, a lot of time is spent in or by a bed of pain, or else we suffer or serve for own fault or crime, or disaster comes round – whenever it doesn't matter *who* we are, Christian or heathen – all that is not a Cross. Wrong are those who mix up all trials of the world and the Cross in one sorry mess. Note *1Peter 2:19-20.*

Thus saith the Lord:

> *... a man's foes shall be they of his own household. He that loveth father or mother more than Me is not Worthy of Me: and he that loveth son or daughter more than Me is not Worthy of Me. And he that taketh not his Cross, and followeth after Me, is not Worthy of Me. (Matthew 10:36-38)*

> *... Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the Gospel's, but he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the World to come Eternal Life. (Mark 10:29-30)*

In the first Scripture, the keyword is *foes*. When our kin stand(s) out against the LORD, our GOD, we should leave on them and the worldly peace we had with them (thus taking up the Cross) and to follow Christ.

However, we must not get involved with whatever Christian Ministry at the cost of breaking up with our families, which are not those heathen foes to us. Our Christian Family is our first Ministry & Responsibility. See chapters 13 & 60.

The Cross is evident,

> *... when men shall revile you, and persecute you, and shall say all manner of evil against you falsely, for My sake. (Matthew 5:11)*

As for the examples, nothing can give them better than the *Book Of Martyrs,* by Brother *John Fox. <http://www.ccel.org/f/foxe/martyrs/home.html>* (Last checked on June 2026). Read it at least once – it is well worth your while.

> (John) *The "Beloved Disciple", was brother to James the Great. The Churches of Smyrna, Pergamos, Sardis, Philadelphia, Laodicea, and Thyatira, were founded by him. From Ephesus he was ordered to be sent to Rome, where it is affirmed he was cast into a cauldron of boiling oil. He escaped by Miracle, without injury. Domitian afterwards banished him to the Isle of Patmos, where he wrote the Book of Revelation. Nerva, the successor of Domitian, recalled him. He was the only Apostle who escaped a violent death. (John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Chapter 1)*
>
> *... it is impossible to ascertain the numbers martyred, or to enumerate the various modes of martyrdom. Racks, scourges, swords, daggers, crosses, poison, and famine, were made use of in various parts to dispatch the Christians; and invention was exhausted to devise tortures against such as had no crime, but thinking differently from the votaries of superstition.*
> *(John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Persecutions under Diocletian, A.D. 303)*

Further references: *Matthew 5:10-12 (Blessed), Mark 8:34-35 (Cross), Mark 13:13 (Endure), Luke 7:23 (Blessed), & John 17:14 (Separateness).*

"Q & A" relevant chapters: 99 (A cup of water), 287 (We are not of the world), 442 (The Life in scorn of consequences), & 498 (The Cost of Discipleship).

Q: Should I tell people I believe the Bible if I know (for a fact) they have no interest and are just going to wind me up and give me a hard time about it?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: If you know that for a fact, be silent. It is written:

... I will take heed to my ways, that I sin not with my tongue:
I will keep my mouth with a bridle, while the wicked is before me. I was dumb with silence, I held my Peace, even from Good; and my sorrow was stirred.
(Psalms 39:1-2)

Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs,
neither cast ye your Pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you. (Matthew 7:6)

77

Q: Christians call themselves *saved*. Are they right?

A: Not exactly. A *Christian* – a Follower of Christ Jesus – is on the Way of Salvation. That long Road leading to the Heavenly Kingdom, cannot be liken to a bus stop to stick around at and wait to get picked up.
It is the Way of *Spirit War* which, sadly, and much as every other war, is not only about Victories and Rewards. We suffer losses too. Kindly consider, for instance, *Amos 5:3*.

When you were "baptized" in your tiny days or (later) pushed to "accept" Lord Jesus not sure what for, attend Church Services every Sunday, wear a cross on your neck, and so forth – all that doesn't mean *saved*. Not yet. For,

> *... from the days of John the Baptist until now the Kingdom Of Heaven suffereth Violence, and the Violent take it by Force. (Matthew 11:12)*

> *The cruelties used in this persecution were such that many of the spectators shuddered with horror at the sight, and were astonished at the Intrepidity of the Sufferers. Some of the Martyrs were obliged to pass, with their already wounded feet, over thorns, nails, sharp shells, etc. upon their points, others were scourged until their sinews and veins lay bare, and after suffering the most excruciating tortures that could be devised, they were destroyed by the most terrible deaths.*
> *(John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Persecutions under M.A. Antonius, A.D.162)*

> *Now I begin to be a Disciple. I care for nothing, of visible or invisible things, so that I may but win Christ. Let fire and the cross, let the companies of wild beasts, let breaking of bones and tearing of limbs, let the grinding of the whole body, and all the malice of the devil, come upon me; be it so, only may I win Christ Jesus!*
> [The words of *Ignatius*, Bishop of Antioch, next to St. Peter. Thrown to beasts. *John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Persecutions under Trajan, A.D. 108*.]

Seek the LORD: *Isaiah 55:6, Amos 5:4, &c*.
The Way: *Matthew 7:13-14, Luke 13:24, 2Corinthians 6:2, & Philippians 2:12*.
Don't belong to this world: *Matthew 10:22 & 24:12-13*.
Take up your Cross: *Mark 8:34, Luke 9:23, & John 12:24-25*.
No compromises: *Hebrews 6:4-6, & 10:26,29*.

78

Q: *Proverbs 13:24; 19:18; 22:15; 23:13-14; & 29:15,17* suggest parents a *physical punishment* to be inflicted on their children. *Proverbs 13:24* even call it *love*. How to take all that in?

A: The *Rod of Correction* is far above a mere *physical punishment.* The Scriptures you named teach us on more efficient means.

.

Physical punishment is the *last* measure parents may take up. That sorry step only means that a lot of time has been spent on whatever things but the Right Christian Education. Nevertheless, when you find yourself in the middle of the disobedient family playing with the fire of *hell*, well, a rod (preceded by a strict warning and every reasonable restriction) is not so bad, given the Christian Living and not your pride is at stake. The rod of pride will never help Education. Do your best to bring about *Fear of GOD* rather than a primitive fear of a rod.
We parents are going to have to sort out our priorities and put such things as money-making and children-rearing in their right places depending on what is more important. But the LORD, our GOD, should always be First, no matter what. Then and only then, a *word* of a Spiritual Leader of that family is final for every crucial decision to be taken. That word should never be "I want" or "I don't like", but rather, *It Is Written*. Mind your *parental word* – the best Rod of Correction – time-wise, correct, concise – under Guidance of the Holy Ghost.

But what to do when the children have already got lost to all evil things and you have no possibility left to make due corrections?
Father GOD said to all such folks, defeated & brokenhearted,

> *... to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope ... (Ecclesiastes 9:4)*

> *For this is Satan's manner of cutting short the ruin of those who sin under his temptations; when they have sinned, he leaves them to perish in despair.*
> *(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, pp 219-220)*

Behold, it's never too late. What really can & should be done is repent, kneel before the LORD GOD, confess *your* disobedience to Him, *your* listening to Satan rather than Father GOD, and *your* sowing evil seeds into *your* family.
Pray to be forgiven as well as for His Rod of Correction be upon *you* & *your* lost children. Get Church Prayer Support and believe your Heavenly Father only.

79

Q: How can young Christians possibly follow the *Fifth Commandment* (*Exodus 20:12* & *Deuteronomy 5:16*) if their parents are unbelievers?

A: GOD First. Remember the Creed of *Deuteronomy 6:4-5* –

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our GOD is One LORD:
And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart,
and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.

This way, we can see the only exemption (to the necessary extent) from following the Fifth Commandment of GOD. We are not supposed to obey our parents when they directly or indirectly demand us to disobey our LORD GOD.
See *Psalm 27:10*.
Consider, however, will it be the exemption from and not the way of following the Holy Commandment in the circumstances? Don't we honor our parents and do them Good when we refuse to sin, as they may so ignorantly demand?

Under the Fifth Commandment, it is our Christian Duty to preach the Word of Truth to unbelieving father & mother.

We should not criticize our parents, living or dead, knowing *Who* is the only Judge and *who* is our real enemy.
Honoring parents, we give Glory to the LORD GOD, our Maker, since He had chosen them to be His Instruments to give us Life.
See relevant chapters: 13 (Foes in a household) & 625 (Our parents).

Kindly read these books: *Kenneth Copeland, Love Never Fails.*
Alex & Stephen Kendrick, The Love Dare.

Watch the relevant movie *Like Arrows*.

It is Good for a man that he bear the Yoke in his youth. He sitteth alone and keepeth silence, because he hath borne it upon him. He putteth his mouth in the dust; if so be there may be Hope. He giveth his cheek to him that smiteth him: he is filled full with reproach. For the LORD will not cast off for ever: but though He cause grief, yet will He have Compassion according to the multitude of His Mercies. For He doth not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men.
(Lamentations 3:27-33)

80

Q: What is the meaning of the *New Commandment* given in *John 13:34-35*? It looks like repeating or reminding the *Second Great Commandment* as per *Matthew 22:39 & Mark 12:31*.

A: *John 13:34-35* and *Matthew 22:39 & Mark 12:31* are very different.

The New Commandment of Christ is about our *Unity* as GOD's Chosen People – Christians – and essential for One Indivisible Body of Christ.
The Second Great Commandment constitutes the Second Tablet of LORD's Commandments from Fifth to Tenth and is about Love to our neighbor – every person we meet – Christian or not. Cf., *Luke 10:25-37*.
The Commandment of Lord Jesus is New indeed –

A New Commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know that ye are My Disciples, if ye have Love one to another. (John 13:34-35)

I call this Scripture the *Eleventh Commandment*. It nails down our Righteous Christian Position against the evil of denominationalism, which is a split, and coming from Satan only.
The LORD, our GOD, by His Christ, commanded so His People Christians & Church Leaders. It is GOD-ordained Unity.
What else? Thus saith the LORD. He is our Highest & Final Authority.
So, let us love one another, seek *Brotherhood*, and may the One Who gave the Commandment take care of the rest.

> *When Robert Samuel was brought forth to be burned, certain there were that heard him declare what strange things had happened unto him during the time of his imprisonment; to wit, that after he had famished or pined with hunger two or three days together, he then fell into a sleep, as it were one half in a slumber, at which time One clad all in white seemed to stand before him, who ministered Comfort unto him by these Words: "Samuel, Samuel, be of Good Cheer, and take a Good Heart unto thee: for after this day shalt thou never be either hungry or thirsty." No less memorable it is, and Worthy to be noted, concerning the three Ladders which he told to divers he saw in his sleep, set up toward Heaven; of the which there was one somewhat longer than the rest, but yet at length they became One, joining (as it were) all three together. (John Fox, Book of Martyrs, ch.16)*

81

Q: How can you explain away the facts of healing made by magicians, witches, and other characters, who are far from the LORD?

A: I call it *devilish healing.* And will try to explain my point.

For physical pain, whether suffered personally or by their loved ones, people run first to doctors, then to whosoever (a Church or witches – doesn't matter). They follow the devil-instituted rule "the end justifies means". See *Hosea 4:6*.

Earlier, we discussed the spiritual reasons for our physical sufferings*, why we come to doctors*, and how GOD's Punishment* works. (* Kindly see the Index.)

Now, let's consider the *devilish healing*.
But before we proceed any further, please, get one thing straight: *Satan* is the main reason why every pain, sickness, distortion & death comes up in our GOD-given Life, as well as the only source of all evil ever existed.
We read about the devil in *Isaiah 14:12-15 & Ezekiel 28:3-19*.

The evil one is not omnipresent and operates by his demons & human puppets. He cannot create – only corrupt, destroy, steal. *Daniel 8:24-25 & John 10:10*.

As we have earlier clarified (as in chapters 11, 36, 41, 62, & 64), Satan has no fixed authority over whoever and whatever. *Genesis 1:26-28 & Psalms 115:16*.

Yet, he still lives & operates in the spiritual realm and from there readily receives all those who buy his lies. He, the evil one, rules fallen angels (which had long ago become demons) and, by the latter, the minds of most people.
Please, read *John 8:43-45 & 2Corinthians 4:4*.

So, when we turn our backs on GOD, His Holy Angels have to step back; demons gladly jump forward and damage our spiritual, mental, and physical health. If we don't repent, move farther on from the LORD, run to witches & alike, some devil (ruling around that district) commands the demon, indwelling a sick person, to leave the latter alone (for a while). Thus the devil promotes trust in witchcraft and speeds up simple folks toward hell (see "Q & A" chapter 8).
Mind *Psalms 9:15 & Isaiah 5:14*.

That's it. The choice is yours.

82

Q: If there are no *contradictions* in our Bible,
then how to connect these two Scriptures,

And the LORD said, My Spirit shall not always strive with man,
for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.
(Genesis 6:3)

The days of our years are threescore years and ten;
and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength
labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away. (Psalms 90:10)

A: By *Genesis 6:3*, the LORD GOD assumed the lifetime limit of humankind steadily coming to 120 years limit for the reason of our sinfulness.
What is written in *Psalms 90:10* is the Statement of fact – a sad statistic – because it is *we*, not GOD, who had shortened our Life even more.

90th Psalm is ascribed to Brother Moses. In accord with *John Brown's Bible Dictionary*, Moses, the Man of GOD, lived his 120 years 2433-2313 BC.
Well, after more than 4,300 years since, all for the same reason, we can also make some sorry statement of that sort, can't we?

Q: (1) How do a personality form?.
Q: (2) Is it a part of a soul?
Q: (3) God created us. Did He have any part to play in our personalities?
Q: (4) God created DNA/genes. Is there anything about that in the Scriptures?
Q: (5) Or do you think personality only forms from environmental factors?
(Signed: *Christian (non-denominational)*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1-2) Before birth, a human has inherited Blessings and curses.
Kindly consider chapter 44 (B & C). Then, rearing & education step in.
See *Proverbs 22:6* and chapter 70. After that, it is a matter of adulthood.
(3) Yes, He did. See *Genesis 1:27* & *John 1:3*.
(4) No, there are not, at least, in plain text. However, those details could not have been formed any other way but by COD, our Creator.
(5) Negative on that. Humans have Power over nature, not vice versa.
You may read chapters 312 & 313 regarding our spiritual Authority.
Thank you.

83

Q: In one Teacher's opinion, we shouldn't write *our* commentaries to the Holy Scriptures but ought to read those already published, as "*there is no new thing under the Sun"*. Do you think he is right?

A: I don't think so. On the contrary, every diligent Bible Study *requires* those personal notes. We have already discussed the matter in chapter 29.
The Words of *Ecclesiastes 1:9* are irrelevant here, being all about the matters of our human living, not Bible Study. For it isn't written, "*under the Heaven*", thus reminding us, "under Dominion of the Spirit World, which is under our LORD GOD via His Word". No. The Scripture is clear – there is no new thing on this natural Earth under the natural Sun.
Some Teachers ought to consider *James 3:1* and think about Responsibility.
Therefore,

Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind.
And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. (Matthew 15:14)

Let me also remind you of *Jeremiah 33:3* –

Call unto Me, and I will answer thee,
and shew thee Great and Mighty things, which thou knowest not.

These Words teach us that many *Revelations* are yet to come.
And come they will in answer to our diligent study.

Q: How is the Name of the LORD a Strong Tower (*Proverbs 18:10*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org,* January 2021. Edited.)

A: Standing upon the Promise of GOD in *John 14:26,*
let's hear the Spirit, Who reminds us the right parallel Scriptures:

The LORD is my Rock, and my Fortress, and my Deliverer;
my GOD, my Strength, in Whom I will trust; my Buckler,
and the Horn of my Salvation, and my High Tower. (Psalms 18:2)

Because he hath set his Love upon Me, therefore will I deliver him:
I will set him on High, because he hath known My Name. He shall call upon Me,
and I will answer him: I will be with him in trouble; I will deliver him,
and honour him. With long Life will I satisfy him, and shew him My Salvation.
(Psalms 91:14-16)

84

Q: What's *the Church* and/or *Confession* you belong with?

A: My Church is *the Body of Christ One & Indivisible.*

It means that I do not belong to whatever *denomination* or Local Congregation, which does not indeed seek *GOD-ordained Unity* in the Body of Christ as per *John 17:21-23*, *Ephesians 4:1-6*, &c.

I communicate with all people, Believers or not, on the subject of my Faith. Unbelievers mostly lose their interest in me pretty quickly. It's commonplace. There is no new thing under the Sun. Now & again, Christians invite me to their Church Services & Small Groups*. I prefer the second, declining only Mormons, Watchtower Witnesses, Catholics, and Orthodox Communities.
* Some Baptist Pastors forbade me to join that Communion. No comments.

Mormons spread around nothing but *another gospel*. That is forbidden by *2Corinthians 11:4, Galatians 1:6-10, & 2John 1:10*. Their founder, one Smith, said to have a vision of *the Angel of Light,* which could be nobody but *Satan,* condemned in *2Corinthians 11:13-14*.
Watchtower Witnesses firmly violate the *Third Commandment* by their official name (which is the misspelled *Name of GOD*). That question we discussed in chapter 22. They also reject the Person of the *Holy Spirit of GOD*. Those two disagreements makes it hard to communicate with them.

Since Mormons & Watchtower Witnesses mostly preach in our streets, we occasionally meet up and talk. Sometimes, they even listen. I have a strong feeling that those people personally don't intend to lie or mislead their listeners. It is Satan who uses them to spread his *lies*. That evil happens because they listen & read the words of men ("*The Book of Mormon – Another Testament of Jesus Christ*" and "*New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures"* with the adjacent comments) instead of the *Word of GOD*.

The same is about *Catholics* and *Orthodox* Believers, who have become *idolaters* following their respective doctrines.

Search me, O GOD, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts:
And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the Way Everlasting.
(Psalms 139:23-24)

85

Q: Speaking of *Christian education*,
what would you suggest as for choosing it rightly?

A: Notwithstanding the choice is individual, parents, considering all their relevant experience, are supposed to help their kids take the right road.

I beg to note, the following (as well as all this book) should be understood as our Communion, sharing the Knowledge & Understanding, not a Sermon or lecture.

Therefore, first of all, mind the LORD, our GOD, as per *Deuteronomy 6:4-5*.

Standing on *Jeremiah 33:3*, ask for His Holy Will to be done. See *Matthew 6:10*.
Pray for GOD's Divine Help according to *Mark 11:24* & *1John 5:14*, and seek only *Christian* education for your children.

Second, we ought to see the difference between educating *boys* & *girls*.

You know, boys are to become *men* – heads & spiritual leaders of their families – and as such should be educated to the best of their *GOD-given abilities*.
Those Blessings their parents are supposed to discover, and the earlier – the better, since the *Holy Will of GOD* for their Life is, most probably, right there.
Those abilities, kids' wishes, and parents' ideas may conflict with one another – *the devil* will see to it. But the LORD's Will should always prevail.

I believe Christian education has nothing to do with the *military* (that we discussed in chapter 9), the *alcohol & tobacco* industry, as well as every other *ungodly* path.
To be more specific, Good walks of life are Charity, rescue, medicine, law enforcement, construction, transport, etc., etc. – whatever, only walk with GOD and be needful to people.

Girls are to be *women* – the soul of every family & home.
Their children (adopted inclusive) need *mothers*, not businesswomen.
Therefore, kindly plan the respective education and subsequent employment as readily (for their family's sake) turned down any moment, having implemental skills (such as first aid, sports, languages, cooking, arts, etc.) retained.

You may consider relevant chapters: 50, 60, 70, 164, & 291.

Therefore shall ye lay up these My Words in your heart and in your soul, and bind them for a Sign upon your hand, that they may be as Frontlets between your eyes. And ye shall teach them your children, speaking of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt write them upon the door posts of thine house, and upon thy gates: that your days may be multiplied, and the days of your children, in the land which the LORD sware unto your fathers to give them, as the days of Heaven upon the Earth. (Deuteronomy 11:18-21)

And thine ears shall hear a Word behind thee, saying, This is the Way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left. (Isaiah 30:21)

The books to read: *Gloria Copeland, GOD's Will For You*
Morris Cerullo, Knowing GOD's Will For Your Life

Q: What are some right Bible resources for young children? I'm looking for resources to introduce my son to Christianity. He is only five months old, but I want to start looking into books or activities that acquaint him with my Faith. Mostly, I'm hoping to find resources appropriate for a small child. I'm Protestant and, while I don't go to Church regularly, still searching for a Church that I feel a part of; I want to bring my son up to at least the understanding of Christianity.

(Signed: *Christian, non-denominational*.)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: Friend, the end of your post is uncertain, whether you want to bring up your son a *Christian* or to give him a worldly "freedom" to choose.

Train up a child in the Way he should go:
and when he is old, he will not depart from it. (Proverbs 22:6)

In my opinion, your search for "resources" other than the Holy Bible itself is wrong. Study the Written Word of GOD *yourself*. Behold, your parental word, firmly standing on the Scriptures, is all your child needs. GOD bless you.

And these Words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: and thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. (Deuteronomy 6:6-7)

86

Q: How can we *prove* what we preach, even such subjects as *GOD, Creation*, *Salvation*, *Truth of the Scriptures*, etc.?

A: Hard to prove, at least employing conversations. As it is well said in a good Christian movie (*A Matter Of Faith*), *"it's a matter o' faith"* (or *Faith*) to stand up for whatever position, *Believer's* or *atheistic*.

When we argue, it's good to end up (or avoid) a controversy by calling for a *judge* recognized by both parties. Here, as it seems to me, *Time* is that judge.

To every thing there is a season, and a Time to every purpose under the Heaven: a Time to be born, and a Time to die; a Time to plant, and a Time to pluck up that which is planted; a Time to kill, and a Time to heal; a Time to break down, and a Time to build up; a Time to weep, and a time to laugh; a Time to mourn, and a Time to dance; a Time to cast away stones, and a Time to gather stones together; a Time to embrace, and a Time to refrain from embracing; a Time to get, and a Time to lose; a Time to keep, and a Time to cast away; a Time to rend, and a Time to sew; a Time to keep silence, and a Time to speak; a Time to love, and a Time to hate; a Time of war, and a Time of peace. (Ecclesiastes 3:1-8)

Yet, after the respective *Verdict of GOD*, the party which is found wrong may find themselves worse than sorry. That's why our right after-dispute choice is a *Prayer* for the opponents. For if the better-off party would be able to take a good look at *hell* ... No, let us better pray for *unbelievers*. Yea, and ourselves as well.

We can also ask an unbeliever or an ex-believer to refer to personal experience. Is our disputant happy with what has been achieved? Meaning family & home, career & friends, peace of mind? If a person is "okay" without GOD, what's the point of that dispute? Mind *Matthew 7:6* and politely stop it.

But the best way to prove the Truth is by *the Power of GOD*:

... my speech and my Preaching was not with enticing words of man's wisdom, but in demonstration of the Spirit and of Power: that your Faith should not stand in the wisdom of men, but in the Power of GOD. (1Corinthians 2:4-5)

That *demonstration* of the Power of the Holy Spirit of GOD is a Core Value in the Ministry of every *Evangelist*. See *Matthew 10:8 & 1Corinthians 4:20*.

The above said & understood, we ought to note the meaning of the "*demonstration of the Spirit and of Power*". For it is more than so valuable Miracles of Healing. There are many other Gifts of the Spirit for us to pray for, be blessed with, value, and use. Note:

... the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of GOD:
for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them,
because they are spiritually discerned. (1Corinthians 2:14)

There are many Scriptures as to the Reason why starting from *Genesis 1:4*.
Still another way to prove the Truth is following the *Eleventh Commandment*:

A New Commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another;
as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know
that ye are My Disciples, if ye have Love one to another. (John 13:34-35)

See chapters: 31 (Speaking the Truth in Love), 80 (Eleventh Commandment),
292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit), & 610 (The Golden Rule).

I beseech you therefore, Brethren, by the Mercies of GOD, that ye present
your bodies a Living Sacrifice, Holy, Acceptable unto GOD, which is your
reasonable Service. And be not conformed to this World: but be ye transformed
by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that Good,
and Acceptable, and Perfect, Will of GOD. (Romans 12:1-2)

Q: Are *near-death experiences* (NDE) plausible evidence for GOD and the *afterlife*, or are NDEs explainable by science? I am confused and want to believe in GOD, but struggling to find the proof.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: So, you would believe, but first, you need the proof. That's a hard way. Why? Because the devil will put your way all his "proofs" & "puzzles" to dissuade you. NDE is just one of his many *stumbling stones*.
Note *2Corinthians 4:4*.

How about the contrary: you start believing, and the LORD Himself gives you every Proof? See *Psalms 55:22, Jeremiah 33:3, Romans 10:17, & Hebrews 11:1*.
It is not just a bunch of references. These Scriptures will feed your Faith.
Meditate on them. You may also see chapter 58 (K & U & W) and the Index.
GOD bless you.

87

Q: Talking in my Church about our conduct, I often hear the argument: *It is not an army here!* What would you say to that?

A: In chapter 15 (GOD First), we touched on that subject.

If you mean the Believers are late to Church Services & Small Groups – it is a sure sign that GOD is not First for them. As to the argument you mentioned, make sure the people *know* what they talk about. Verily, far not everyone has ever been to the military.
As for me, I've been there (USSR navy) and can better speak on those lost years of mine. Sure, the Church of GOD is neither army nor navy and should not have anything to do with their order & disorder, both of one evil origin.

Let us consider the Scriptures on the Rules we need.

> *When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first ... (Matthew 12:43-45)*
>
> *... Ye know that they which are accounted to rule over the Gentiles exercise lordship over them; and their great ones exercise authority upon them. But so shall it not be among you: but whosoever will be great among you, shall be your Minister: And whosoever of you will be the chiefest, shall be Servant of all. (Mark 10:42-44).* Cf., *Matthew 20:25-28* & *Luke 22:25-27*.
>
> *Is any sick among you? Let him call for the Elders of the Church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the Name of the Lord ...*
> *(James 5:14)*

So, what do you think is comparable or parallel in the above Verses?
In Spiritual Warfare, some regulations quite resemble one another on *both* sides of the front line. Those standards are not even close to those of the worldly military. In the spiritual, higher ranks presume more abilities, knowledge, understanding – nothing empty or false. For millenniums both fighting sides have seen their victories impossible without *that* kind of order & discipline.

He openeth also their ear to discipline,
and commandeth that they return from iniquity. (Job 36:10)

W*ho is there even among you that would shut the Doors for nought?*
neither do ye kindle Fire on Mine Altar for nought. I have no Pleasure in you,
saith the LORD of Hosts, neither will I accept an Offering at your hand.
(Malachi 1:10)

See relevant chapters: 68 (The Sacrifice of time), 160 (Church Rules),
424 (The sacrifice of fools), & 446 (Children in the Church).

Q: How should a Christian deal with *abuse*?. I'm a 16-year-old, who lives in an emotionally and verbally abusive household. The abuse has gotten to the point where my parents threaten to hit me.

Q: What should I do? I've been asking GOD to give me a Sign on how to deal with this situation, but He's not answering. I'm scared, and I don't know what to do.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: I'm sorry to hear that.
It is written,

... fear thou the LORD and the King ... (Proverbs 24:21)

It means you should trust GOD and stand firmly on His Word. You prayed for His Guidance, and you've received it by right & helpful responses from this Forum. But I think they are limited to the USA. So, let my answer extends their borders and supports young Christians in other countries.

In the above Scripture, to *fear the King* stands for following your *civic duties* as far as they don't contradict the Word of GOD. Therefore, please, inform the local Authorities: Social Service, Police, etc.

Since you've started from the Top – the LORD, our GOD – don't be afraid.
GOD bless you.

Q: Shall I leave friends who are blasphemous?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: If you are a Christian, do it.
Please read *John 15:14* as for how Jesus defined Friends.

88

Q: When our Small Group discussed *The Gospel according to St. Matthew, Chapter 26*, we considered the subject of *Peter's denial* foretold by Jesus in *Matthew 26:34* (repeated in *Mark 14:30, Luke 22:34, & John 13:38*). What do you think about it?

A: I think we ought to watch better what we say (and print in the form of synopsis or comments in some Holy Bible editions).

It is written:

> *Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.*
> *(Exodus 20:16*, repeated in *Deuteronomy 5:20)*

Note also *Proverbs 18:21* & *Matthew 12:36*.

Now, what *Christ Jesus, Son of GOD, our Lord, the Head of Christian Church* had told to *Saint Peter, His Apostle & Martyr*, earlier? (Please mind these Titles.)

> *... thou art Peter, and upon this Rock I will build My Church;*
> *and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. (Matthew 16:18)*

Mind the Holy Will of our Father GOD:

> *Awake, O sword, against My Shepherd, and against the Man that is My Fellow, saith the LORD of Hosts: smite the Shepherd, and the Sheep shall be scattered: and I will turn Mine Hand upon the little ones.*
> *(Zechariah 13:7)*

> *All ye shall be offended because of Me this night: for it is written, I will smite the Shepherd, and the Sheep of the Flock shall be scattered abroad.*
> *(Matthew 26:31*)

The LORD has never been a God of traitors. *Isaiah 5:1-7*. His Will is the most fearful business to remove anyone standing in the Way thereof. *Isaiah 46:9-11*.

And such Words as "*thou shalt deny Me thrice*" (*Matthew 26:34,75*) spoken by *GOD* to somebody who was by far better than ourselves are not allowed to *us*, His People, to be repeated any other way than edifying or correcting *our* persons.

It is wonderful that the other Disciples, after Peter had been reproved, still break out into the same rashness ; and hence it is evident how little they knew themselves. We are taught by this Example, that we ought to attempt nothing, except so far as GOD stretches out His Hand ; for nothing is more fading or transitory than inconsiderate zeal. The Disciples perceive that nothing is more base or unreasonable than to forsake their Master; and, therefore, they justly detest so infamous an action : but, having no reliance on the Promise, and neglecting Prayer, they advance with inconsiderate haste to boast of a constancy which they did not possess ...

(John Calvin, Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists, Matthew, Mark, and Luke, vol.3, p.221)

He does not take the Warning which his Lord gave him – he trusts in the warm sincere attachment to Christ which he now feels, not considering that this must speedily fail, unless supported by the Power of GOD ...

(Adam Clark, The New Testament, with a Commentary and Critical Notes, p.126)

Notwithstanding the Disciples' decision to follow their Teacher no matter what – *Matthew 26:35, Mark 14:31, & Luke 22:33* – when (following the Will of GOD) the *Holy Spirit* left them, they fled. Read *Matthew 26:56 & Mark 14:50*.
Disciple *John* was safe at that time. Note *John 18:15*.
Apostle *Peter* risked his life, following arrested Jesus. He fought fear alone, without the Holy Ghost.
Read attentively *Matthew 26:58, Mark 14:54, Luke 22:54, & John 18:10,15*.
Peter's "denial" from the worldly "tactical" viewpoint was "heroism", wasn't it?
However, we have been taught otherwise. To hold out against *the evil of criticism* is an integral part of our Teaching. See *Romans 2:1 & James 4:11-12*.

Let us not cut off the Branch we sit upon and, rather than speak anything against our *Brother Peter, the Disciple of and Holy Martyr for Lord Jesus*, better humbly confess how many times *we*, Christians, have already *betrayed* our Lord. That includes those of us who even passed the Baptism in the Holy Spirit.

See relevant chapters: 132 (How to tame a tongue) & 141 (The evil of criticism).
Kindly watch the good Christian film "Silence" (2016).

Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again. (Matthew 7:1-2)

89

Q: How can we qualify *suicide?*

A: It is an act o' *final & crucial disobedience* to our LORD GOD.

In chapter 64, we talked about *GOD's Punishment*. Notwithstanding, even punishing, the LORD GOD provides a sinner with means of escape back to Him.

> *There hath no temptation taken you but such as is common to man:*
> *but GOD is Faithful, Who will not suffer you to be tempted above that*
> *ye are able; but will with the temptation also make a Way to escape,*
> *that ye may be able to bear it. (1Corinthians 10:13)*

There are devilish temptations and the ways of sin taken by men, as it is written in *Romans 1:18-32*. Those are followed by GOD's Punishment as more temptations are allowed by Him over the sinners. If the last don't repent but proceed on, from off GOD, demons own up more power over the sinful minds. They tempt on and lie their victims into the mess of pessimism, defeat, self-pity, depression, despair, and suicide. Some believe & buy it. See chapters 92 & 114.

> *... the form of all Satan's temptations is the same. He first plies his temptation upon a man's Faith, and then draws him away from the Word. Upon this follow various sins against the Second Table. This procedure of Satan we may see plainly manifested in our own experience.*
>
> *(Martin Luther, The Creation:*
> *A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, p.218)*

Mind the first rule of every war: *don't underestimate the enemy*. See Q&A chapters: 36 (The power of Satan), 39 (The War outlined), & 184 (Temptations).

Demons lie: *there is no way out.*
But our Lord *Jesus* teaches us to the contrary:

> *... I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life ... (John 14:6)*

Please read the following Scriptures.

> *Be of Good Courage, and He shall strengthen your heart,*
> *all ye that hope in the LORD. (Psalms 31:24)*

GOD is our Refuge and Strength, a very present Help in trouble.
Therefore will not we fear, though the Earth be removed, and though
the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea; though the waters thereof
roar and be troubled, though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof.
Selah. (Psalms 46:1-3)

I called upon the LORD in distress: the LORD answered me,
and set me in a large place. The LORD is on my side; I will not fear:
what can man do unto me? (Psalms 118:5-6)

Q: Does the reason for suicide count?. The Bible says that suicide is wrong.
Q: But couldn't the context matter in the Eyes of GOD?
Q: For example, I'm in a situation where I face this choice: shoot myself in the head or be slowly burned to death, would suicide be acceptable then?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2019. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

... to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope ... (Ecclesiastes 9:4)

Killing ourselves, we stop the Hope dead.
A noteworthy example might be *Judas Iscariot*. He betrayed God, felt remorse, confessed his sin to the Priests, but then committed suicide instead of repenting in action, even living a Godly Life.

Q: Please, if anyone knows how to kill myself painlessly, tell me.
I really can't do this anymore.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/helpme*, June 2020.)

A: Please understand, painlessly or not, nobody can stop human existence.
After physical death, one continues to be. The question is: where & how?

Q: I've been told that killing yourself sends you to hell.
Is there any Bible Verse that says this?
(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, September 2020.)

A: Kindly see chapter 125 (The Sixth Commandment). Thus saith the LORD:

Thou shalt not kill. (Exodus 20:13 & Deuteronomy 5:17)

90

Q: What would you suggest to business-people bound by contracts, agreements, obligations, promises, &c., legally recognized & certified, but *contradicting* the Law of GOD?
Q: Is it possible to be Faithful *both* to partners, colleagues, clients, friends, families, public, etc. – and GOD?

A: Any business contradicting the LORD's Law is *sinful* & *unlawful*. Whatever laws that allow or demand that are abominable in GOD's Eyes. Those two sides – Light and darkness – are incompatible. See chapter 40.

And GOD saw the Light, that it was Good:
and GOD divided the Light from the darkness. (Genesis 1:4)

Our LORD GOD forever made *null & void* every law contradicting His Law.

And your covenant with death shall be disannulled,
and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge
shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it. (Isaiah 28:18)

Therefore the best way out – Faithful to GOD & men – is the following.
First, repent before the LORD. (You may see the Index for Repentance.)
Second, discontinue your participation in any ungodly business, explain the decision to all folks concerned, and ask their forgiveness for your negative example, as being mistaken, taking part in the wrong, and supporting others in the same. See *Exodus 23:2 & Acts 5:29*.

And the Work of Righteousness shall be Peace; and the Effect of Righteousness
Quietness and Assurance for ever. (Isaiah 32:17)

No compromises. Take the LORD, our GOD, up on His Promises:

Have not I commanded thee? Be Strong and of Good Courage;
be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the LORD thy GOD is with thee
whithersoever thou goest. (Joshua 1:9)

Fear thou not; for I am with thee: be not dismayed; for I am thy GOD:
I will strengthen thee; Yea, I will help thee; Yea, I will uphold thee
with the Right Hand of My Righteousness. (Isaiah 41:10)

91

Q: How can we possibly follow the *Fourth Commandment*, which some Churches (e.g., Adventist) demand to be observed on Saturday and some on Sunday (e.g., Catholic, Baptist, Orthodox, Pentecostal)? You know, there are jobs (e.g., rescue, security, transport), which really make it impossible.

A: Our Lord Jesus well explained that away saying,

... The Sabbath was made for man, and not man for the Sabbath ... (Mark 2:27)

It means that, as far as possible, we all should rest from any daily activity we want to have success at (including our main job, study, works around our home, sports, &c.) and go to *Church Services* to praise GOD together with our Congregations.
However, everybody has a right to dedicate (separate, keep Holy) any other weekday for this Purpose as our paid employment or Charity Work may demand.
The same is okay for *Small Groups Communion* too, to keep ‘em on a flexible timetable. Occupations, such as those exemplified in the question, are often on a one-day-on-two/three-days-off basis. So, only some of the Common Services might be not attended reasonably.
That doesn’t permit or excuse *laziness* or any *ungodly* business.

To follow the Fourth Commandment Peacefully, plan your every business to free the *Sabbath Day*. There shouldn’t be any job in progress, which is possible to complete the day previous or postpone until the next one.
Moreover, LORD GOD Himself is our Example & Supporter. His Great Creation was not a spontaneous boom, but the Work Wisely planned and Blessedly ended by the Estimation spoken by *Genesis 1:31*.

Parallel Scriptures: *Exodus 16:5, 23:11-12, & 34:21* – Thus saith the LORD.
Ezekiel 20:12,20 – The meaning of Sabbath.

See chapters: 73 (True Fast), 90 (Faithfulness to GOD),
& 143 (Obedience to GOD).

Relevant reading: *William Barclay, The Daily Study Bible, Mark 2:27.*

Relevant movies: *Hacksaw Ridge*
The Stranger (TV series), Episode 3 – Mary & Martha

92

Q: How to properly define *depression* and help people off from it?

A: By *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary, 2001*, it is ... *emotional dejection (lowness of spirits) greater than that warranted by any objective reason*.

Depression may also be defined as a defeated state of spirit and subsequent disordered condition of mind caused by a demon, drawing all our attention to personal loss, fault, or sin, at the same time trying to lie us away from GOD.

The person taken over by that spiritual infection should not stay *alone*. Years ago, several persons I knew were depressed and ended up by *suicide*. Others, seeking escape, got lost to unbelief, alcoholism, and mental disorders.

All in all, I can explain that evil no other way but ignoring GOD by unbelievers and living without the Bible – a sure way leading to spiritual weakness – on the part of Believers. In both cases, effective spiritual backup ought to be provided by Christians better fed by the Word of GOD. The final purpose is to restore a suffering one to a previous job and Christian Ministry.
You may see chapters: 114 (He carried our sorrows) & 232 (Our Prayer Backup).

Thou wilt keep him in Perfect Peace, whose mind is stayed on Thee: because he trusteth in Thee. (Isaiah 26:3)

Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by Prayer and Supplication with Thanksgiving let your Requests be made known unto GOD. And the Peace of GOD, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. (Philippians 4:6-7)

Is any sick among you? let him call for the Elders of the Church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the Name of the Lord. And the Prayer of Faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent Prayer of a Righteous man availeth much. (James 5:14-16)

Read these books: *Danelle Ice, Dangerous But Good: A No-Nonsense Guide ...*
Kenneth Copeland, Sorrow Not!
Richard Carlson, Don't Sweat The Small Stuff, chapter 56.

93

Q: How to follow *the First Commandment*,
written down in *Exodus 20:2-3* & *Deuteronomy 5:6-7*, today?

A: Actually, our *Obedience* to *the Law of GOD* doesn't depend on time.

> *I am the LORD thy GOD, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. Thou shalt have none other gods before Me.*
> *(Deuteronomy 5:6-7)*

Our Father GOD begins with the Greatest Blessing – *I am the LORD thy GOD ...*
In all the Holy Scriptures, we cannot find a Blessing or a Treasure comparable to that. Why? Because we are promised & given the best Teacher, Guide, Judge, Protector, and Savior.
According to *1John 4:8,16*, our GOD is Love, as *John 3:16-17* so wonderfully proved. Moreover, this Blessing made it forever possible to follow the Law of GOD. How? Just keep going GOD-ward Way of Love. He will meet you halfway. Consider well *Luke 15:20*. Note "Q & A" chapters 15 & 76.

The LORD, our GOD, continued: ... *which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage.*
In these Words, our total Freedom & Independence from whatsoever powers of this evil world – heathen, legal, illegal, social, physical, spiritual, and so forth – are commanded & granted. Not sure? Read *Romans 8:38-39.*
As to *the land of Egypt*, it is just where you & I are, right now, all-round.
For that land – the world of unbelievers – was, is, and will be around until the End of these Earth. And regarding those ancient Israelites, it was also not limited by the borders of ancient Egypt.

Our LORD GOD concluded: *Thou shalt have none other gods before Me.*
It means that we must not obey, follow, or accept any religion, doctrine, teaching, tradition, law, or rule which does not welcome & revere the LORD, our GOD.
No exemptions, exceptions, excuses, flexions, or compromises are here.
Hard? Maybe, but not with GOD. See chapters 52 & 292.
Still in doubt? Check up on your *common sense* – it should always be in the "off" position when we talk with or about the LORD our GOD.

> At the end of chapter 129, we outlined the importance and the general meaning of the First Holy Commandment. Kindly read.

Q: Regarding *Deuteronomy 6:4-9*..
How can Christians today reconcile the idea of the Trinitarian GOD concept with the Declaration in *Deuteronomy*? From what I understand, GOD is One in the sense that He has no components, cannot be divided, and is composed of a Unity that extends beyond the numerical sense of the word *one*.
Thanks in advance for helping me clear this up!
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: Please, see chapter 459, which deals with the subject of the *Holy Trinity of GOD*. The "idea of the Trinitarian GOD concept" you wrote about, many accept as *Trinity*. You can see it, say, in *Matthew 28:19*.
Add to *Deuteronomy 6:4-5* the Old Testament Scriptures, for example, *1Samuel 10:6* & *Isaiah 53*, and see the same.

What you wrote from "GOD is One" to "the word *one*" I support.
GOD is Triune: One in Three and Three in One. That is hard to comprehend since we cannot find any good example in our human affairs. Neither can any language clear this up.

Q: (1) If we are made in *GOD's Image*, how can we know for sure what that means? Some say *Kindness*, or what we see in the best of humanity.
Q: (2) But there is the problem of *evil*. It exists and not from nowhere. Everything was created by GOD. So, everything comes from Him. (?)
Q: (3) Is there a possibility that the *cruelty* we see in humanity is also because we are made in GOD's Image?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: (1) It is written,

GOD is Love. (1John 4:8,16)

Take it (in the context of *1John Chapter 4*) for the answer to your question.
Kindly see "Q & A" chapter 730 regarding the reading of *Isaiah 45:7*.
(2) The Creation was completed per *Chapter 1* of *Genesis*, period.
It is we, *humans, who* are the authors of all corruption & deterioration, not GOD.
See chapters 312 (Our spiritual Authority) & 313 (Irrevocable Authority).
(3) See chapters 299 & 726 dealing with the subject of *cruelty*.
Be so kind as not to mix any evil, the cruelty inclusive, with the Image & Likeness of the LORD GOD. Don't get into the dirt of *blasphemy*.
Kindly see chapters 412 & 510 (The Image & Likeness).
Thank you.

94

Q: How should we follow the Second Commandment of the Law given by *Exodus 20:4-6* & *Deuteronomy 5:8-10*?

A: In the first part of the Commandment, it is written:

Thou shalt not make thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in Heaven above, or that is in the Earth beneath, or that is in the waters beneath the Earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself unto them, nor serve them ...
(Deuteronomy 5:8-9)

Hereby, any idolatry is prohibited.
What are those idols? I believe it is all things revered by unbelievers: their state emblems & banners, memorials & monuments, masterpieces & awards, &c., &c.
How come? Only because those who hate GOD may kneel before all that stuff and thus clearly mark it as abominations. Everything which has nothing to do with Christian Faith has nothing to do with Christians, full stop. You know where vultures are gathered and where flies fly to. So, leave it alone.
In the second part, the LORD, our GOD, warned:

... for I the LORD thy GOD am a Jealous GOD, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate Me, and shewing Mercy unto thousands of them that love Me and keep My Commandments. (Deuteronomy 5:9-10)

Here, the Harvest Law is in action. Behold the last line: for thousands of Believers, as declared possible to follow the Law of GOD.
Chapters 50 (Modern idol-worship), 403 (Idolatry), 503 & 508 (Harvest).

Q: What made idolatry in the Old Testament attractive to the ancient Israelites?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: To begin with, it is not “what” but *who* – the devil.
His approach was as subtle as to Adam & Eve – the Truth & Commandment of GOD was changed over by compromise, worldly reason, disobedience.

Please read more in *Deuteronomy 4:15-19; 7:1-5,25-26; & Isaiah 42:8.*
You are welcome to visit our “Q & A” Index section.
Thank you.

95

Q: Speaking of a Christian country,
is it all right for *capital punishment* to be there or not?

A: It is. Moreover, our LORD GOD commanded so.

As far as I understand the Word of GOD, the very reason why the death penalty was commanded is sin. Called now capital punishment, it was established not for the sake of killing as many criminals as possible, but to exterminate all kinds of crime from the Land where GOD's Servants lived.
Regretfully, His People Israelites have never been Perfect. But who was?

Therefore, the LORD said,

... and all Israel shall hear and fear ...
(*Deuteronomy 13:11; 17:13; 21:21*)

But the *fear of punishment* (in the mind of every ungodly person) has nothing to do with the Sacred *Fear of GOD* pertinent to His People. The fear of the death penalty does not belong in the hearts & minds of Godly people.

The institution of capital punishment is to improve the present state of things, whereas GOD's Fear, provided by Right Education, eliminates all future crime.

We are supposed to differentiate between the justice corrupted by false humanism, which is the work of *lie* – the chief weapon of the evil one – and True Justice of GOD, with an eye on those Scriptures, which establish His Holy Will by the death penalty for the servants of Satan.
Capital punishment should not depend on the lame jurisdiction in the time of war. Every military invader & murderer should be thus punished right on the spot.

Hear ye, and give ear; be not proud: for the LORD hath spoken.
(Jeremiah 13:15)

See relevant chapters: 26 (Killing Canaanites), 55 (A Christian country),
& 144 (The Fear of GOD).

Please note the following references.

Exodus 21:12,14,23 (murder)

Exodus 21:15,17 (striking father or mother)
21:16 (kidnapping & slave-trade)
21:28-29 (goring ox & owner)
22:18 (witch)
22:19 (sex with animal)
22:20 (idol-worshiper)
31:14-15; 35:2 (defiling Sabbath)
Leviticus 20:2 (idolatry)
20:9 (cursing father or mother)
20:10 (adultery)
20:11-12 (sex with kin)
20:13 (homo-sex)
20:14 (espousing mother & daughter)
20:15-16 (sex with animal)
20:27 (witchcraft)
21:9 (Priest's daughter a whore)
24:16 (blaspheming LORD's Name)
24:17 (murder)
Numbers 1:51; 3:10,38; 18:7 (stranger nearing Holy thing)
25:4 (leaders of sinful people)
35:16-21,30,31 (murder)
Deuteronomy 13:1-5; 18:20 (false prophet)
13:6-10,12-16; 17:2-5 (idolatry)
17:12 (*disobedience to Priest or Judge*)
19:11-13 (murder)
21:18-21 (disobedient son)
22:13-27 (sexual immorality, rape)
24:7 (kidnapping & slave-trade)
24:16 (parents' & children's sins)
Joshua 1:18 (disobedience to authority)

And he went after the man of Israel into the tent, and thrust both of them through, the man of Israel, and the woman through her belly. So the plague was stayed from the children of Israel. ... And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Phinehas, the son of Eleazar, the son of Aaron the Priest, hath turned My Wrath away from the children of Israel, while he was Zealous for My Sake among them, that I consumed not the children of Israel in My Jealousy. ... Behold, I give unto him My Covenant of Peace. And he shall have it, and his seed after him, even the Covenant of an Everlasting Priesthood; because he was Zealous for his GOD, and made an Atonement for the children of Israel. (Numbers 25:8,10-13)

96

Q: Speaking of *capital punishment*, why had *Jesus* forgiven *the crime*, as in *John 8:3-11*?

A: He didn't. Let us read the story.

> *And the Scribes and Pharisees brought unto Him a woman taken in adultery; and when they had set her in the midst, They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act. Now Moses in the Law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou? This they said, tempting Him, that they might have to accuse Him. But Jesus stooped down, and with His finger wrote on the ground, as though He heard them not. So when they continued asking Him, He lifted up Himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her. And again He stooped down, and wrote on the ground. And they which heard it, being convicted by their own conscience, went out one by one, beginning at eldest, even unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst. When Jesus had lifted up Himself, and saw none but the woman, He said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more. (John 8:3-11)*

Now, what had happened? Israel was a Roman colony. The then Roman law had little in common with the Law of GOD. Instead of Justice, those characters – the Scribes & Pharisees – cared more about their stupid pride. They asked Jesus questions to which they didn't know the proper answers. Whatever answer to their every evil question, was wickedly expected by them to be wrong.
But GOD has never been the right choice to dispute with.
You may go to the long list we made up referring to the question of capital punishment ("Q & A" chapter 95) and find *Numbers 25:4*. It is those accusers who should have been stoned first, even the spiritually blind guides of spiritually blind people, false teachers leading from off the Truth, evil leaders, which had brought Israel right into Roman abominable slavery.

Ye shall be Holy: for I the LORD your GOD am Holy.
(Leviticus 19:2)

The stoning for *adultery* was ridiculous in the midst of that *adulterous* nation. (Liken it to the fines for littering after a devastating earthquake.) Too many things were to be restored first. The same looks true for many modern societies.

Do we not yet ... feel how foul and horrible a thing sin is? For lust is the only thing that can be cured by no remedy! Not even by Marriage, which was expressly ordained from Above to be a Remedy for this infirmity of our nature. For the greater part of married persons still live in adultery ...

(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary On The First Five Chapters Of The Book Of Genesis, p.224)

Nevertheless, *Jesus* gave that woman (and us) the chance of *Reconciliation*.

For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the Love of GOD, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Romans 8:38-39)

We briefly spoke about the above incident in chapter 655 too.

References: *Deuteronomy 16:18-20 (Judges & Justice).*
Matthew 12:39 (adulterous generation).

Q: *Thou shalt not suffer a witch to live. (Exodus 22:18)*
How do you interpret that particular Verse?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: The capital punishment discussed in chapter 95, the witchcraft in 62 & 730.
A criminal should be and has always been well aware of the death penalty according to the Law of GOD.
Deuteronomy 16:18-20 & *Proverbs 24:21*.
Thank you.

Q: Do you, as a Christian, consider this a contradiction?
The *Fifth Commandment* vs *Matthew 10:34-37* & *Luke 14:26*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: The *Fifth Commandment* (*Exodus 20:12* & *Deuteronomy 5:16*) is all about the respect paid to parents by GOD-fearing children.
However, LORD GOD is First. *Deuteronomy 6:4-5 & Matthew 22:36-38*.
Matthew 10:34-39, Luke 14:26-27, and their Parallels teach us that Priority.
And that without any “contradiction”. Kindly read chapter 79 of this book.
Thank you.

97

Q: Speaking on about the *hard questions of Pharisees*,
how would you interpret Jesus' answer,

Render therefore unto Caesar the things which are Caesar's;
and unto GOD the things that are GOD's. (Matthew 22:21)?

A: The hard question – the hard answer. Let's read the story.

15 Then went the Pharisees, and took counsel how they might entangle Him in His Talk. 16 And they sent out unto Him their disciples with the Herodians, saying, Master, we know that thou art true, and teachest the way of God in truth, neither carest thou for any man: for thou regardest not the person of men. 17 Tell us therefore, What thinkest thou? Is it lawful to give tribute unto Cæsar, or not? 18 But Jesus perceived their wickedness, and said, Why tempt ye Me, ye hypocrites? 19 Shew Me the tribute money. And they brought unto Him a penny. 20 And He saith unto them, Whose is this image and superscription? 21 They say unto Him, Cæsar's. Then saith He unto them, Render therefore unto Cæsar the things which are Cæsar's; and unto GOD the things that are GOD's.

Those spiritual leaders of Israel resemble many characters burdened by authority today. Due to personal ungodliness, more than once, they had led their people into idolatry and the pit o' foreign slavery. Not realizing they were following the devil, those officials challenged our Lord Jesus. However, they were unable to recognize the Messiah of GOD, much less prove Him the false one.

Their difficult question much resembled the one we considered in chapter 96.
So, it was whether to pay taxes to those who invaded the Holy Land. Moreover, answer them by the Law of GOD. Satan's purpose was to trap God Son Jesus.
How? The affirmative answer would be against LORD GOD and draw up Christ Jesus' inevitable fall in the eyes of people. The negative reply would be a call to a mutiny, the desirable case to be brought up by those traitors before the colonial authorities.
I believe the Answer was unto all (here & now inclusive).

To those seeking a fight with Jesus:

Hold your peace. It is neither *your* fight nor *your* hard talk.
Get better off fighting the devil from off *your* hearts & minds.

To those always happy under *any* imperial power:

Submit unto the Kings *you fools* deserved.

To those seeking freedom from Rome:

Serve your LORD GOD. As for the invaders, go ahead,
give them back everything which is theirs, starting from every
Roman coin in *your* pocket. Accept nothing of the sort ever again.

To those ever seeking *Truth*: Behold your Teacher, listen to Him.

> When we give GOD what is His, even the first place in our lives, then little remains with us of the world. We may throw away all the values cherished by this kingdom of evil. Why? Because those things have become but dung to ourselves. Please, read *Philippians 3:7-8*.

Q: What does *Matthew 24:45* mean, and how would I fit into this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: It is written:

> *45 Who then is a faithful and wise servant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his household, to give them meat in due season? 46 Blessed is that servant, whom his lord when he cometh shall find so doing. 47 Verily I say unto you, That he shall make him ruler over all his goods. 48 But and if that evil servant shall say in his heart, My lord delayeth his coming; 49 And shall begin to smite his fellowservants, and to eat and drink with the drunken; 50 The lord of that servant shall come in a day when he looketh not for him, and in an hour that he is not aware of, 51 And shall cut him asunder, and appoint him his portion with the hypocrites: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew 24:45-51)*

See yourself Accountable to LORD GOD for those He put under your care.
They are members of your family, co-Servants in a Christian Ministry, Members of your Church, colleagues at work, neighbors (all people).
Note, "*ruler over his household*" does not compulsorily mean your official or a social position of authority. Your Knowledge & Understanding signify more.
The "*meat in due season*" is the Word of GOD (or silence), which His Holy Spirit (not your logic) reminds you of in this or that situation or conversation.

98

Q: How should Christians deal with divorce?

A: They should *hate* it as our LORD GOD does.

> *... the LORD hath been Witness between thee and the Wife of thy youth, against whom thou hast dealt treacherously: yet is she thy companion, and the Wife of thy Covenant. And did not He make One? Yet had He the residue of the spirit. And wherefore One? That He might seek a Godly Seed. Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the Wife of his youth. For the LORD, the GOD of Israel, saith that He hateth putting away: for one covereth violence with his garment, saith the LORD of Hosts: therefore take heed to your spirit, that ye deal not treacherously. (Malachi 2:14-16)*

Many believe, and I agree, every split up is the result of a carnal & unwise approach to the Covenant of Matrimony by both spouses. Mind *Proverbs 19:14*. That, in turn, is a matter of ill spiritual inheritance and poor education in our families & schools. See *Deuteronomy 6:6-7 & 32:46*.

Yet, when the conflict is so bad, and at least one of the spouses is Christian, the best thing to do is seek GOD's Guidance in Confession & Prayer.
Reunion is always possible because LORD GOD says so. He hates divorce.
Mind *Malachi 2:16*.

In *Matthew 5:32,* Lord Jesus saw fornication as the only reasonable ground for a divorce. The Amplified Bible runs: "unfaithfulness".
Kindly read *Exodus 20:14 & Deuteronomy 5:18*.

It takes one spouse to stand firm on the ground of godlessness, and such Values as Love & Union are more often than not changed over by disrespect, contempt, hostility, and so forth. Read *Proverbs 2:13-15, Isaiah 59:8, & 2Corinthians 4:4.*

So, marital unfaithfulness is evidenced not only by adultery & fornication in the way commonly interpreted but in every evil way leading to the total corruption of the family. Read *Hebrews 12:1-2*.
Christians might consider unfaithfulness a sure reason for divorce when, following the Holy Spirit of GOD, all have been honestly said & done to the contrary. Read *Psalms 125:5 & Ecclesiastes 1:15*.

... For it cannot be otherwise upon Earth; there must daily much inconvenience and discomfort occur in every house, city and country; and there is no condition upon Earth in which one must not have much to endure that is painful, both from those that belong to him, as wife, child, servants, subjects, and externally from neighbor's and all kinds of accidental mishaps. When now one sees and feels this, he is soon tired of his condition and discontented with it, or breaks out with impatience, scolding and cursing; and if he cannot avoid or get rid of this annoyance, he will change his condition, thinks every one's condition and state better than his own, and when he has been long changing about he finds he has been going farther and faring worse. For to change is soon and easily done; but to improve is doubtful and rare ... If one wants to undertake anything that he wishes to be Blessed and Successful, also in temporal affairs, as in marrying, remaining at home, accepting a position, etc., that he appeal to GOD and seek Counsel from Him Who is to give it, and Whose it is ...

(Martin Luther, Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount, p.170)

Good reading: *Alex & Stephen Kendrick, The Love Dare*

Q: Is it possible to pray for parents to get back together?. My parents are divorced, and I feel so much pain from that day. I want my pain to end!

Q: How to ask the LORD to bring my parents back together?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: Sorry to hear. I prayed that the Peace of GOD come back to you.

Please open the Bible on *Matthew 6:9-13*. This Scripture is well known as the Lord's Prayer. If you don't know it by heart, read this Prayer slowly aloud and see your trouble answered by its every Line.

Go to a Christian Church or Ministry next to where you are, and ask for Prayer Backup.

Go to your father, then to your mother, and speak with them separately. Ask about the reason for a split. Don't worry about what to tell. After your sincere Prayer, the LORD, your GOD, will give you the right words.

Know that being Christians is crucial for you and your parents.

After that, please, spend more time with Father GOD and His Written Word. Be Blessed.

99

Q: In *Matthew 10:42* & *Mark 9:41*, Lord Jesus promised a Reward for just a cup of water given to His Disciple. Isn't it a bit easy way to be rewarded?

A: No, it is not. Have a closer look at the Scripture.

And whosoever shall give to drink unto one of these little ones
a cup of cold water only in the name of a Disciple, Verily I say unto you,
he shall in no wise lose his Reward. (Matthew 10:42)

Surely we can give a drink to a stranger in the heat of a day, why not? But what about our giving against all *reason*, no matter what, *Giving to a Disciple?*
Let's make up a scenario.

Persecutions are on the go. Once on some open ground, tormentors set up a stage of execution for a Christian. The last question unto the condemned one was: "Will you deny your Faith and live or confirm it and die?" The answer likened many written in the *Book of Martyrs*: "I prefer to die for GOD rather than living for the devil." Thus, True Discipleship had been proven. And the verdict was death. After the last wish got enquired, *a cup of water* was asked for.
There was a crowd around there – people of very different views. The water was available too. The commanding officer asked: "Will anybody please bring some water over here? But on one condition: get the same death penalty."

You are there in that crowd. What would *you* do?

Relevant chapters: 172 (How to fight fear), 287 (We are not of the world), 570 (Our Christian Courage), & 668 (Confessing Christ).

Relevant Christian film: *Silence* (2016).

Q: Since finding your Faith, has your *fear of death* dissipated?
(Signed: Baptist.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: Let me answer by the words taken from a Christian movie "*The Island*":

It is not frightening to die. To stand before GOD is.
(My translation)

100

Q: Why Jesus so often told the persons healed to *tell no man*?

A: Indeed, we can read it in *Matthew 8:4; Mark 8:26; Luke 5:14, 8:56;* etc.

And Jesus saith unto him, See thou tell no man; but go thy way,
shew thyself to the Priest, and offer the Gift that Moses commanded,
for a Testimony unto them. (Matthew 8:4)

In *Luke 8:56*, our Lord commanded to tell no man notwithstanding the crowd would surely hear, eyewitness, and speak about the Miracle all around.
I heard this explanation: "Jesus intentionally said so, knowing the people would do to the contrary and spread the desirable news of Him throughout the land."
But in *Mark 8:30 & 9:9*, Jesus charged His Disciples to tell nobody Who He was.
No, such a thing as public fame was not the Purpose of His Ministry. Jesus came to heal *spiritually*. Healing a human spirit means to turn him back to our LORD GOD and thus establish a Strong Victorious Position against whatever evil spirits and their sicknesses.
When persons physically healed are quick to boast around, even "witnessing" in Congregations, without the Offering commanded by the Law of GOD – the very Proof of restored Right-standing with Him – they lie. How come? Simply because it is neither profound Healing nor Testimony to the Glory of GOD.
As for the Truth, it remains "out there".

Look at this Verse [the suggestions in brackets are mine]:

> *... and great multitudes followed Him, and He healed them all; and charged them that they should not make Him* [the Son of Man] *known* [but give the Father GOD all Glory] ... *(Matthew 12:15-16)*

Our Lord charged people against false testimony. For without comprehending the Work of the Holy Spirit done through Jesus, they would spread around the gossips to the glory of Man, not GOD.
That was why Lord Jesus had commanded: "Tell nobody!" Liken it to any work in whatever trade, yet unfinished, but presented in the name of the author.
On the other hand, Obedience to GOD testifies to the Truth:

... If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My Disciples indeed;
and ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free. (John 8:31-32)

Q: Why did Jesus admonish “not to tell anyone that He was the Messiah” after Peter’s declaration and not to tell that He was the Son of the Living GOD as is declared? See *Matthew 16:20*, the context of *Matthew 16:13-20*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: Indeed, it is written,

Then charged He His Disciples that they should tell no man
that He was Jesus the Christ. (Matthew 16:20)

And you mentioned the context correctly.

Please see the reason in the following Scriptures.

Who hath believed our Report?
and to whom is the Arm of the LORD revealed? (Isaiah 53:1)

And they come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee
as My People, and they hear thy Words, but they will not do them:
for with their mouth they shew much Love, but their heart goeth
after their covetousness. And, lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely song
of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument:
for they hear thy Words, but they do them not. (Ezekiel 33:31-32)

And the Disciples came, and said unto Him, Why speakest thou unto them
in Parables? He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you
to know the Mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven, but to them it is not given.
For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance:
but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.
Therefore speak I to them in Parables: because they seeing see not; and hearing
they hear not, neither do they understand. And in them is fulfilled the Prophecy
of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand;
and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive. For this people’s heart
is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes
they have closed; lest at any time they should see with their eyes,
and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart,
and should be converted, and I should heal them. (Matthew 13:10-15)

Then Peter began to say unto Him,
Lo, we have left all, and have followed Thee. (Mark 10:28)

101

Q: How to study the Bible when I have no time?
You know, family, work, Church ...

A: I know. You are not alone. Please, have your priorities sorted out.

Before studying the Word, you ought to get this straight: there is only One GOD, and with all due respect, it is not you, your spouse, pal, teacher, Pastor, etc.

Therefore (Hey, the following relates only to Bible Study time, okay?), switch off common sense, forget your life experience, trash away your political views, put on hold any business promises & obligations, and kick out all present problems.

Ignore the denomination *you* belong to, the Local Church with her Rules & strategy, the Ministry, etc. Put aside whatever respectable comments to the Holy Bible and dismiss all Christian books *you* are reading or have ever read.

Pray LORD GOD in Promised Name *Jesus* for the *Holy Ghost* to teach you.

Your Time Sacrifice should be substantial and Holy – separated & dedicated for the Purpose. If busy, sacrifice a part of night rest.
Faithful GOD will pay you back well.

Godspeed.

See chapters: 15 (GOD First), 104 (The Promised Teacher),
106 (Feeding our spirit), & 107 (Feeding our soul).

The references: *Psalm 119:125* – The Prayer before Study.
Proverbs 4:20-22 – Priority: Life & Health.
Hosea 4:6 – Priority: Knowledge.
Haggai 1:5-7 – Sort out your priorities.
Matthew 6:33 – Priority: the Kingdom of GOD.
Matthew 11:12 – The spiritual Violence.
2Corinthians 6:2 – Priority: Salvation.
Hebrews 4:12 – Priority: spiritual Power.

Good reading: *A.W. Tozer, The Pursuit Of GOD*
Kenneth E. Hagin, Growing Up, Spiritually

102

Q: Does Bible Study need any specific way, or will just attentive reading do?

A: The Written Word of GOD needs Strategy. The intent reading is presumed.

In Bible Study, kindly pay attention to two things.
The first is the *spiritual meaning* – the Teaching – of what you read.

For instance,

A Wise man is Strong; Yea, a man of Knowledge increaseth Strength. For by Wise Counsel thou shalt make thy War: and in multitude of Counsellors there is Safety. (Proverbs 24:5-6)

In the above Scripture, we ought to take *Wise*, *Strong*, *Knowledge*, *Strength*, *Wise Counsel*, and *War* in their *spiritual* import. (The capitalization is mine as per the rules of our book.) This way, the *multitude of Counsellors* might be seen as People of GOD taught by Him.

> *In every exposition or explanation of the Scriptures, therefore, the subject-matter is first to be considered; that is, we are first clearly to see the thing or matter spoken of in each case. When this is strictly first done, then next the words are to be brought to a due application to the thing (if the grammatical laws of the language will permit); but the things are never to be made to bend to the words ... And although a knowledge of the words is prior in order; yet the Knowledge of the things is better, and the more important. (Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary On The First Five Chapters Of The Book Of Genesis, p.349)*

And, when it comes down to people described in the Bible, within the spiritual import mentioned above, see *yourself* literally in every *evil* & *erring* human. That's for better Understanding what our Blessed Lord Jesus did for you.

For Christ also once suffered for sins, the Just for the unjust, that He might bring us to GOD, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit ... (1Peter 3:18)

This approach may also help us avoid "putting forth an accusation finger" at whosoever. Note well *Isaiah 50:4*.

The second is *Implementation* – following the Teaching. See *2nd Esdras 5:32*.

> *... our Prayer, as our Work, would not avail or effect anything; but its efficacy comes from this, that it is done in accordance with His Command & Promise, so that it may well be regarded as a Sacrament, and rather as a Divine Work than as one of our own ... if you do a Work prompted by the Word & Promise, then you have a sure Proof that GOD is Gracious to you ...* *(Martin Luther, Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount, p.261)*

Kindly see chapters: 29 (Mind your approach) & 104 (The Promised Teacher).

References: *Jeremiah 13:15* ….... Maximum attention required.
Mark 4:24-25 …..... Hear & keep.
John 6:63 ..... Mind the spiritual meaning.

Q: I just started a Study on the *Book of Romans* and was wondering if you had any suggestions on ways to make understanding Paul's Writings easier?
Q: I've prayed the Spirit to guide me but found myself getting hung up on every other Verse because I just don't get it. (?)
Q: Can you suggest any help on Study tools, other books to read first, etc.? I'm open to whatever will help in digesting the Word better.
Thank you, and GOD bless!
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020. Condensed.)

A: Please go as far as the Index at the end of this book to the *Bible Study* subject. In the same section, you can find some chapters dedicated to the topic of *"Romans, the Epistle to"*.
And, of course, note how many chapters under the title *Bible Study* are in Contents. Your seeking Guidance from the Holy Ghost is correct.
May GOD bless you.

Q: Which English translation do you recommend for someone reading the Bible for the first time?
Q: And in which order should they read the Bible?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Read chapter 118 (*Different translations*). To less depend on Translators, have several Versions at hand. See <*https://www.biblegateway.com*>.
The best order, in my opinion, is Genesis – Revelation non-stop.
Godspeed.

103

Q: Speaking on, are there any *errors* to be averted in Bible Study?

A: Yes, sure. One terrible mistake should be avoided – *following lies.*
I mean some words of men printed as commentaries.

Many teach and get taught that the Holy Bible was written in "the days of old", and some Scriptures are not instrumental for us today.
To that effect, the false teachers & preachers bring about a ton of historical stuff, even the old written *lies* cooked up, collected, selected, adopted, and accepted by generations of *unbelieving* scholars as "documents". Every stress in their handbooks is made on "very special" circumstances & conditions the ancient Servants of GOD acted on. Their limited worldly logic can comprehend the Scriptures no other way but.
Thus, the Holy Word of GOD is set up as writings of mere men *there & then*, rather than Divinely inspired Teaching to be most diligently studied, uncompromisingly obeyed, and lived by *here & now.*
Add to that many errors made by our Brethren Translators & Editors, and the *Truth* comes out even more impenetrable.

> *The cause of all this* [translation] *error is, that some are grammarians only, but know nothing of the Divine things concerned ...*
>
> *(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of The Book of Genesis, p.391)*

In one modern Bible Commented Edition, I read this dissident prescription: "Apostle Paul's Teachings ought to be used very cautiously today."
Of a Truth, every *lying* comment *contradicting* the Word of GOD should be taken as heresy.

> *False teaching is eminently characteristic of satanic power at all times, and far more successful than open violence.*
>
> *(F.W. Grant, The Numerical Bible, Hebrews to Revelation, p.428)*

All historical documents, written by whosoever and *disputing* our LORD GOD in whatsoever way, should be discarded by Believers. The Eternal Written Word is our *Right Weights & Balances* to weigh up all historical writings, and the latter should be used *very cautiously* indeed.

Now, let us consider the "scientific" opposition.

Webster's Dictionary (2001), defines *science* as,

> *1. a branch of knowledge or study dealing with a body of facts or truths systematically arranged and showing the operation of general laws ...*
> *2. systematic knowledge of the physical or material world gained through observation and experimentation. 3. any of the branches of natural or physical science. 4. systematized knowledge in general. 5. knowledge, as of facts or principles, knowledge gained by systematic study. 6. a particular branch of knowledge. 7. skill, especially reflecting a precise application of facts or principles, proficiency ...*

Reading the above definitions, (1) *Who* determines those "facts & truths & laws" to study? – Scientists. Are they Believers? – Not compulsory.* (2) Should we accept that "systematic knowledge" by natural "observation & experimentation" made by unbelievers? (3) Can "natural or physical science" positively judge spiritual matters? (4) What would unbelievers thus "systematize"? (5) What kind of "knowledge" would study the generations of unbelievers? And so on.
* You can see the beautiful exceptions in Christian films "*GOD Of Wonders"* and "*Genesis: Paradise Lost*".

The Bible does not need any "scientific proof" from the world. The Word of GOD has His Confirmation and the *Power* to judge that heathen world.

> Moreover, we should watch our words, bearing in mind *Matthew 12:36-37*. The Account is due for every word spoken. Say: "*this* or *that scientific data is* (or *is not*) *proven by the Word of GOD"*, rather than vice versa.

Q: (1) Was (or is) the *Garden of Eden* a real place?
(2) If so, where is it located?
(3) Is the Flaming Sword still guarding the Garden?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: (1) The *Garden of Eden* was & is real because thus says the Word of GOD. It existed as such *physically* before the Flood and continues *spiritually* as Paradise in the underworld after it.
Kindly see chapter 573 and the Index section.
(2) Studying the Scriptures, we can presume that the physical place of Eden was about Jerusalem & Promised land.
See *Genesis 2:8-14 & Ezekiel 31:16*.
(3) Hardly the Flaming Sword is needful anymore to guard the Garden. Nobody can get there contrary to the Holy Will of GOD. Chapter 222.

104

Q: Where can one find a good *Teacher* for Bible Study?

A: We don't have to. Our *Promised Teacher* – the Holy Ghost – is with us.

But the Anointing which ye have received of Him abideth in you,
and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same Anointing
teacheth you of all things, and is Truth, and is no lie,
and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in Him. (1John 2:27)

This Guidance of the *Holy Spirit of GOD* is promised to us when we study His Written Word, read Christian Books, preach & listen to Sermons, communicate with Brethren, &c., &c. Praise GOD!

And though the LORD give you the bread of adversity, and the water of affliction, yet shall not thy Teachers be removed into a corner any more, but thine eyes shall see thy Teachers. And thine ears shall hear a Word behind thee, saying, This is the Way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand,
and when ye turn to the left. (Isaiah 30:20-21)

Efficient Bible Study using different translations is impossible without that Blessed Guidance. Behold, it is impossible to express in any human language and put on paper the Wisdom of LORD GOD. Add to that the concept that the Holy Word of GOD demands the hard work of the *mind* to comprehend Him.

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our GOD is One LORD:
And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart,
and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. (Deuteronomy 6:4-5)

Think about that Creed in connection with a so needful Prayerful Approach to the Sacred Writings.
Mind the simple fact: studying the Word of GOD, we all see but a top of an iceberg. To prove this, you may ask everybody who has ever read the Holy Bible more than once to recall those many *New Revelations* received of the LORD every subsequent time. Yea, this is an interminable process.

... Heare Me, and I will instruct thee,
hearken to the thing that I say, & I shal tell thee more.
(Apocrypha, 2nd Esdras 5:32, King James Version, 1611)

At the same time,

> *... we have a Letter from GOD in our hands. Put that in the hands of a professor with thick glasses, and in a very short time, he would produce theology that nobody would read.*
> *... we have the Bible – the Letters from GOD to His People. Then we take it, reduce it and systematize it, and soon you need a good education to understand it at all. The LORD never meant that. His Word is meant for all of His Children.* *(A.W. Tozer, Experiencing The Presence Of God: Teachings From The Book Of Hebrews)*

See chapters: 29 (Mind your approach), 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit), 451 (Reading commentaries), & 723 (Interpretation).

Good reading: *Kenneth E. Hagin, Seven Vital Steps to Receiving the Holy Spirit.*
Kenneth Copeland, Sensitivity Of Heart.
Gloria Copeland, GOD's Will Is The Holy Spirit.
Walk In The Spirit.

Q: Are there any books out there that explain all the arguments?.
I've heard of a few arguments for Christianity, like Kalam, Ontological, Fine-Tuning, etc. I was wondering if there is a book that goes through all of these that I could purchase.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: A Book "that goes through all of these" is the Bible.

Our "Q & A" stands on and refers to the Scriptures. The Christian Library provided here (in the Reference section) is but *second* to the Word of GOD. No one Christian book written by whoever, this "Q & A" inclusive, cannot be so authoritative as our Holy Bible, not even close. Yes, "that explains all the arguments" (as you put it).
I've never heard of the writs you mentioned and am all right without 'em.
At the same time, the Written Word of GOD can answer *every* question which might ever cross the human mind, even the modern one full of nowadays stuff. The latter you may kindly challenge with simple questions. Does it Good or evil? Or, does it the LORD GOD Service? Or three wise questions quoted in chapter 132.
See our Index section for more references.
Thank you.

105

Q: How to know what Scriptures are more important and what less?

A: We are not supposed to judge the Written Word of LORD GOD this way.

Reading a novel, we hardly think so. Because all chapters are essential parts thereof. Every interesting book would have never been such had something been cut off from it.

The same is true for the Holy Bible – our indispensable Handbook. Some Books, Chapters, or Verses may be more *relevant* to this or that subject, some less, but every single word or line is needful and belongs in there. Just like every Christian belongs in the Church of GOD.

Reading long lists of names, measurements, detailed descriptions of the Holy Temple or Tabernacle, Priests' Clothes, etc., we often wonder: "Why? What for?" Wouldn't it be more proper to confess: *this Scripture is shut on me as yet*?

> That's why there is no reason to blot our Bibles with pencils, ball-pens, markers, and alike, to highlight the passages "more important" than the rest of the Holy Scriptures. Have your scratch-book at hand instead.

Q: Please explain *Numbers 5:1-4*. In what way can it stay relevant today?

A: It is written:

> *1 And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying,*
> *2 Command the children of Israel, that they put out of the Camp every leper, and every one that hath an issue, and whosoever is defiled by the dead.*
> *3 Both male and female shall ye put out, without the Camp shall ye put them; that they defile not their Camps, in the midst whereof I dwell. 4 And the children of Israel did so, and put them out without the Camp: as the LORD spake unto Moses, so did the children of Israel. (Numbers 5:1-4)*

That was the needful sanitary step, which has never become outdated.
Moreover, these Words remain forever *spiritually* instructive.
We should excommunicate from our Congregations people worldly, infected by *mammon, lust, laziness, pride*, etc. For their perverse example may pollute others. Mind those who defiled themselves by satanic *compromise & common sense*. We are supposed to be Wise in Church Membership matters.

106

Q: How to define our *spiritual food*?

A: The *right* spiritual food is the Written Word of GOD – our Holy Bible.

... Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the Mouth of GOD. (Deuteronomy 8:3, Matthew 4:4, Luke 4:4)

Our spirit (spirit man, heart) is the command center, which our health (spiritual & physical) depends on. The human, created in the Image of GOD, is spirit being. The soul was not designed or created to command the heart. So, it must not to. On the contrary, our heart, being in turn under the Holy Ghost, should direct the soul to Obedience to the Word of GOD. But to be able to do so, our spiritual being should be rightly fed & trained. Get involved, therefore, in Communion with GOD through Bible Study. Receive your Precious Guidance into all Truth.

... when He, the Spirit of Truth is come, He will guide you into all Truth ... (John 16:13)

Communion with GOD resembles the way we communicate with people. Therefore, studying the Bible, we are going to have to converse with God Holy Spirit and wait for His Answers to our questions. We ought to stop at the difficult Verses and well think them over. The Spirit draws our attention to keywords and/or other Scripture(s) of the Parallel Meaning – Parallel Truth.

My son, attend to My Words; incline thine ear unto My Sayings.
Let them not depart from thine eyes; keep them in the midst of thine heart.
For they are Life unto those that find them, and Health to all their flesh.
Keep thy heart with all diligence; for out of it are the issues of Life.
(Proverbs 4:20-23)

This Promise is confirmed in *John 6:63* –

It is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing:
the Words that I speak unto you, they are Spirit, and they are Life.

In the natural, we like to eat & drink something pleasant to our taste.
Blessed are those who feel the *spiritual hunger* for and find the *spiritual taste* in the Written Word of GOD.

107

Q: Is the feeding of a *spirit* the same as that of a *soul*?

A: Not really. For needing the same *spiritual food*, our spirit & soul get & use it differently. See chapter 23 (Spirit & soul).

Our spiritual being (a.k.a., *spirit* or *heart*) controls the feeding of its possession – soul. That is seen in our decisions about what to read, watch, listen to, and so forth. When our heart is subdued to the *Holy Ghost*, the last is happy to teach us what to take in and what to throw away. He speaks to us via our *conscience*. Under that Good Guidance, our spiritual being works as a filter & processor of spiritual food. It filters out what is found (by the Holy Spirit) the junk or poison. And our heart (taught by the same Spirit) accepts what is needful and passes it on to the soul. You may consider chapter 476 (Seeing spiritual things).

... whosoever drinketh of the Water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the Water that I shall give him shall be in him a Well of Water springing up into Everlasting Life. (John 4:14)

The soul "consumes" the spiritual food thus selected and gets busy developing or amending our Knowledge & Understanding. The central part of our soul is the *mind*, of the mind – our *memory*, of the memory – our *intellect*. The last determines the quality of our mind. The intellect contains & operates with our most needful possession – the Christian Knowledge. In chapter 58, we discoursed Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom. By meditating on the Scriptures, we communicate with GOD and renew (refresh, correct, purify) our mind.

... Brethren, whatsoever things are True, whatsoever things are Honest, whatsoever things are Just, whatsoever things are Pure, whatsoever things are Lovely, whatsoever things are of Good Report; if there be any Virtue, and if there be any Praise, think on these things. (Philippians 4:8)

If I remember correctly, Brother Kenneth Copeland taught that Meditation on the Word was essential for Bible Study to resist the devil. Our *mind* is the very aim for his fiery darts – *evil thoughts*. When occupied with the Word of GOD, the mind is locked up on the evil one.

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the Knowledge of GOD, and bringing into captivity every thought to the Obedience of Christ ... (2Corinthians 10:5)

108

Q: Some teach *two*- and some *tri-fold-man* theory.
What about you?

A: I prefer the second, two *spiritual* parts thereof being *indivisible*.
GOD said,

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our GOD is One LORD:
And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart,
and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. (Deuteronomy 6:4-5)

Some Christian Teachers criticize the *trinity* or *triunity* of a man (which they call *trichotomy*) preaching instead of *dichotomy*.
See, for instance, *A. H. Strong, Systematic Theology (1889), p.245*.

They call it even dangerous as splitting up human spiritual being.
But the same might well be said of their dichotomy. Both definitions – trichotomy & dichotomy – imply *division*, yet, hardly it is "dangerous".
See *Webster's Dictionary, 2001*, for example.

And the more such a division of constituents of a human being is present and serve their independence, the sooner we, simple folks, name it *psycho*.

Yet, I don't seek a dispute, arguing who of us is a fool or worse. I'm for *Unity*.

May dichotomists kindly note these Scriptures:
1Samuel 10:6; Luke 11:13; John 14:17 & 20:22; Acts 1:8, 2:38, 8:17, 10:44, & 19:6; Romans 8:11; 1Corinthians 2:12, 3:16, & 6:19; Ephesians 3:16 & 5:18; 2Timothy 1:7; 1John 2:27 & 4:4,13.
They teach us on the *Holy Spirit of GOD* indwelling True Believers.

In that case, I would gladly accept their dichotomy, now broaden out as the Person of *the Holy Ghost* has been included. See *Ezekiel 36:26*.
For it is my deep desire to have *Him* in charge of me instead of my self-ruling.

And the very GOD of Peace sanctify you wholly;
and I pray GOD your whole spirit and soul and body be preserved
blameless unto the Coming of our Lord Jesus Christ. (1Thessalonians 5:23)

109

Q: How to compare *evil* and *sin*?

A: We can first define them, preferring the *Christian* authors as our source.

> So, by *Noah Webster Dictionary, 1911*,
> *evil = morally bad; wicked; sinful; unfortunate; mischievous; disastrous; worthles; badly; unkindly; moral depravity; injury; affliction.*
> *sin = wilful transgression of the Divine Law; neglect of the laws of morality and religion; violation of propriety; transgression; iniquity;*
> *to commit sin; transgress or offend.*

> According to *Watsons' Biblical and Theological Dictionary, 1851*,
> *Evil is distinguished into natural and moral. Natural evil is whatever destroys or any way disturbs the perfection of natural beings, such as blindness, diseases, death, &c. Moral evil is the disagreement between the actions of a moral agent, and the rule of those actions, whatever it be. Applied to choice, or acting contrary to the moral or revealed Laws of GOD, it is termed wickedness, or sin.*

Now, following the above, we can see the main difference.

Evil comprises all our wicked thoughts, words, and actions, eventually leading us to a disaster.

However, the violation of the Divine Law is *sub-conscious** or *unawares of* here.

* I have used this term to indicate that people profoundly *unaware* of GOD's Law, or Good & evil, haven't ever existed, bar those mentally disordered or yet undeveloped. How come? Simply because we all are created in the Image & Likeness of LORD GOD. See *Genesis 1:26-27*.

Sin is a willful transgression of GOD's Law, the last being well-known to the transgressor. That's why there is very little difference between *sin* & *evil*, and the Holy Scriptures often synonymizes them.

> *Sin is any thought, word, desire, action, or omission of action, contrary to the Law of GOD, or defective when compared with it.*
>
> *(Calmet's Dictionary of the Holy Bible, 1832)*

Scriptural references: *Hebrews 6:4-6 & 10:26-29 (willful sin).*
James 1:14-15 (evil chain) & 4:17 (sin).
2Peter 2:12-22 (evil & sin).

Q: (1) In this Forum, when reading a comment under a question that asked if all forms of Christianity will join Christ, I came across someone who said this: "Scripture tells us that many (almost certainly, most) self-identified Christians are going to *hell,* because Jesus does not recognize them, and their works are not what He wants." (?) I have several questions, which follow.
Q: (2) How can we tell which self-proclaimed Christians will inherit the Kingdom of God and which will be denied?
Q: (3) How can we know that we are doing what Jesus wants and not what a corrupt form of Christianity teaches?
Q: (4) If Christians will go to hell because they are not doing GOD's Works, how can we know that our Works do not contradict His Teaching?
Q: (5) What should we do with this knowledge, i.e., that Christians who believe they are following the Holy Ghost, will be cast out from Christ?

Q: I'm already worried about my Asperges' syndrome confusing with GOD and, possibly, leading me astray from Christ's True Will. But this is just blowing that up by a thousand and causing me to be even more confused. (?)
Q: Am I just destined for the death pit?
Q: Is everything I know about Christianity wrong, and will the errors in my human mind cause me to be sent away? Please answer this.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: (1) Kindly note that "all forms of Christianity" is what Satan wants the Body of Christ, One & Indivisible, to be. Probably, the correct commentary you've read stood on *Matthew 7:21-23*. Take a look at chapter 308.

(2) We cannot tell that for sure. Only GOD can. See *1Corinthians 4:5*.
(3) Study the Written Word of GOD and listen to the Holy Ghost. *John 14:26*.
(4) Again, listen to nobody but the Holy Spirit of GOD. See *1John 2:27*.
(5) Pray that the Spirit gives you the right Words to Brethren. *Galatians 6:1*.

As for the last paragraph & questions of your post, the confusion here is caused by some traditions, misunderstanding, and whatever else but the lack of Zeal.
For Knowledge, hell, eternal death, and other subjects, please see the Index.
Communicate with GOD. Mind *Jeremiah 33:3*.
Godspeed.

110

Q: How to take in and use the terms *religion* & *theology*?

A: Again, we are going to have to start with definitions.

By *Noah Webster's Dictionary (1911),*
Religion = (n) any system of faith or worship; love and obedience towards God; piety; monastic vow or state.
Theology = (n) the science that treats of the existence, nature, and attributes of God, especially of man's relations to God; divinity.

Since, according to the above, religion & theology do not compulsory denote *Christianity* and require further relevant clarification, we are free to decide for ourselves whether to include them in our vocabulary to use in Sermons & Communions or not.

Be ready to meet very different comments and explanations as to using both.
For instance, "*religion*" was accepted by the song *Old Time Religion* in a Christian movie "*A Man Called Peter" (1955),* yet rejected in *"Another Perfect Stranger" (2007)* and *"The Stranger TV Series" (2007) Episode 1 – "The Woman at the Well"*. In *Episode 4 – "Salt"*, that term was changed over by *Faith*.
No comments. All these movies are estimable & educational.

As for *theology*, when we discussed the *trinity of a human* (chapter 108), the mentioned Handbook – *A.H. Strong, Systematic Theology (1889)* – clearly states the disagreements between theologians about that topic.
In different denominations and their Churches, we can meet up with Pastors & Teachers who have degrees in theology. Nevertheless, some of those theologians insist on Water Baptism repeated when a person leaves one denomination for another. Nonsense. Let alone the fact that their degrees received in different Christian Institutions are not recognized when, for some reason, the holders switch denominations. Another mess.

Personally, neither "religion" nor "theology" is my word.
I prefer *Faith* & *Bible Study* instead. However, may we respect other opinions.

> *... the word Religion as I use it ... means the total of GOD's Work in a man and the total of the man's response to that inner Working.*
>
> *(A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)*

111

Q: Why *Moses, the Man of GOD,* was deprived of entering the *Promised Land* (*Numbers Chapter 20*)?

A: It is written:

... unto whomsoever much is given,
of him shall be much required ... (Luke 12:48)

Indeed, much is given by the LORD GOD to our *Leaders*. Anointing, Testimony, the Precious Communion with and the Guidance of the Holy Ghost, Authority, Knowledge, Understanding – all connoting *Duty & Accountability*.
Analyze well *Exodus 17:1-7* & *Numbers 20:2-12.* There were two almost identical scenarios: physical thirst, murmur, and hostility of Jewish crowds; Intercession of *Moses* & *Aaron* met by the Power of GOD's Grace.

So, what was Brother Moses' fault? GOD commanded His Man to serve Him as the Instrument of His Power. *Numbers 20:8* runs:

> *Take the rod, and gather thou the assembly together, thou, and Aaron thy brother, and speak ye unto the rock before their eyes; and it shall give forth his water, and thou shalt bring forth to them water out of the rock: so thou shalt give the Congregation and their beasts drink.*

The Servant of GOD did not follow the Word exactly – read *Numbers 20:10-11:*

> *And Moses and Aaron gathered the Congregation together before the rock, and he said unto them, Hear now, ye rebels; must we fetch you water out of this rock? And Moses lifted up his hand, and with his rod he smote the rock twice: and the water came out abundantly, and the Congregation drank, and their beasts also.*

He was told to take a rod and *speak* to the rock to teach people the Power of the Word of Faith. Instead, in apparent irritation, Moses *smote*. And the word of man to a lifeless stone could have produced water – that sounded (and still does) incredible. That Task indeed required *Faith*. Later on, Lord Jesus would say:

Verily I say unto you, If ye have Faith as a grain of mustard seed,
ye shall say unto this mountain, Remove hence to yonder place;
and it shall remove; and nothing shall be impossible unto you. (Matthew 17:20)

Consequently, that was *the Finding of fact –*

And the LORD spake unto Moses and Aaron, Because ye believed Me not, to sanctify Me in the eyes of the Children of Israel, therefore ye shall not bring this Congregation into the Land which I have given them. (Numbers 20:12)

That Verdict given to the Shepherds was a Lesson to the Sheep as well.
But why Moses, the Man of GOD, did act so? Some expositors suggested his *pride* & *anger.* I cannot support such an opinion. According to *Numbers 12:3*,

... the man Moses was very Meek,
above all the men which were upon the face of the Earth.

Considering the people I have ever known and myself, we may get tired of walking the roads of Life, working hard, doing Good, fighting evil, encountering thanklessness & injustice, and thus getting impatient, irritated, angry. Or get lost to self-pity. Yet, read again *Luke 12:48* quoted above.

The errors & failures found in Brothers Adam, Moses, David, Solomon, or whosoever else do not allow us to act Judges. Every stumbling or error described in the Holy Bible is GOD's Teaching & Warning. We ought to take the pain to recollect our Life stories and uncover a lot of episodes to be ashamed of.

See chapters: 75 (Giving Glory to GOD) & 436 (The Shepherds).

Q: How to implement *Chapter 17* of the *Book of Numbers* nowadays?

A: It is written:

... behold, the rod of Aaron for the house of Levi was budded, and brought forth buds, and bloomed blossoms, and yielded almonds. ... And the LORD said unto Moses, Bring Aaron's rod again before the Testimony, to be kept for a Token against the rebels; and thou shalt quite take away their murmurings from Me, that they die not. (Numbers 17:8,10)

Our Lesson is in these two Verses. Be Obedient to the Word of GOD and do not rebel against Him. For even as the staff of Brother Aaron blossomed and those of the tribal Leaders remained simple sticks, thus in the Eyes of the LORD, our GOD, the rebels are as useless as dead wood, while the Righteous stay Precious.
If the Holy Spirit of Life resurrected a simple rod into fruitfulness, how much more will He bless the Godly hearts which welcome the Holy Ghost?

112

Q: Brother, back to the *Lord's Prayer*, why do you think it is the *Intercession*?

A: Reading *Matthew 6:9-13* attentively, you can find *ten* indications thereto.

Behold, all pronouns in the *Lord's Prayer* are plural. Nowhere is written *my, me, I* or *myself*, but *nine* times (in the King James Version) there are *our, us, we.*
I believe that points out that *the Body of Christ* is One Church to be prayed for. Otherwise, how can you & I include in that *we* those who *don't believe* a single word here?

But the Line – *Thy Will be done in Earth* – is definitely about *all humanity.* For not only Christians populate our planet. By these Words, we intercede and pray for the Holy Will of GOD, embracing His Love & Perfect Justice, to come over upon *unbelievers* first, considering their majority.

Now unto Him that is Able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the Power that worketh in us, unto Him be Glory in the Church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, World without end. Amen. (Ephesians 3:20-21)

These chapters are dedicated to the Lord's Prayer: 57, 183, 238, 252, 284, & 690.

Good reading: *Kenneth E. Hagin, Praying To Get Results*
Kenneth Copeland, Prayer – Your Foundation For Success

Q: (1) Thoughts on imprecatory Prayers and asking God to vex your enemies?.
Q: (2) Are there New Testament Scriptures encouraging imprecatory Prayers?
Q: (3) What about asking God to vex your enemies?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: (1) Such thoughts are determined as per our definition for "enemy".
For me, it is *Satan* only. He makes his demons and, through them, many humans act *as* my enemies. Therefore, the Words *Thy Will be done* in the Lord's Prayer, calling for Justice of GOD, are, in a way, "imprecatory".
(2) Negative on that.
(3) Please see the above-discussed line *Thy Will be done in Earth.*
It is our Intercession for the heathen part of humankind. We pray for those unbelievers to stop living as the *enemies* of our LORD GOD.

113

Q: In *2Samuel 24:1-15* & *1Chronicles 21:1-14*, we can read about the *census* commanded by *King David* and found by GOD *the sin*. Moreover, He punished His People with a plague. Could you please explain that?

A: I thought those Passages over and consulted with several expositors. As it seems to me, the reason why *the people* were punished can be found in *2Samuel 20:1-2*, even the *disobedience* to GOD and His King.

The sin of GOD's Servant David is *how* the census got performed – the people of Israel and Judah were counted severally. Probably, that was done to assess their separate military might. Only the men of Judah had proven their loyalty as per *2Samuel 20:2*.
Possibly, nobody gave GOD Glory or paid Atonement as per *Exodus 30:11-16*. And, most important, by no means the Will of LORD GOD for that deed was asked by the King, who consulted with Him in so many other cases.

> *... if Dauyth hadde chose hungur of VII yeer, he and riche men wolden haue purueyed to hem silf of liyflode, and pore men schulden haue be turmentid gretly; and if he hadde chose fliyt bifor enemyes, he and myyty men schulden haue be defendid and pore men slayn, therfor he chees pestilence, comyn peyne to alle, for he tristide in Goddis Mersi.*
>
> *(John Wycliffe, The Holy Bible, vol.2, p.156, marginal notes)*

By *2Samuel 24:8*, the census lasted 9 months 20 days. It was not completed (see *1Chronicles 27:23-24*) as the Punishment started. The last well explains away the discrepancies between the two reports, *2Samuel 24:9* & *1Chronicles 21:5*.
The life of King David was that of a warrior. He suffered a lot from envy, enmity, hardships, betrayals, unfaithfulness, and personal errors. He loved the LORD his GOD and spent time with Him, yet believed in the military.
We all follow worldly reasons now & again. But the more we trust in the abilities of men, the less Faith in our GOD remains in us.
But GOD, Whom we serve, teaches us otherwise:

Not by might, nor by power,
but by My Spirit, saith the LORD of Hosts. (Zechariah 4:6)

That chosen dependence on the military instead of Almighty GOD has always been a sin. You may kindly read chapters 9 & 64 dedicated to the questions of *military power* and *GOD's Punishment*.

114

Q: How to explain the Words *carried our sorrows* in *Isaiah 53:4*?

A: Let's see them in the Scriptures.

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son,
that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life.
(John 3:16)

That *perishing* includes ending up in the *death eternal* by being lost in defeat, sorrow, self-pity, depression, and so on.
In *Matthew 14:3-13*, we read about the Martyr's death of John the Baptist and Jesus' immediate response to that, even His separation from all and Communion with GOD through Prayer. Because, notwithstanding being the Son of GOD from Eternity to Eternity, Jesus was a Man for thirty-three years (*1Timothy 2:5*), and, as such, did get His share of all human *sorrows*.
In that particular case, He (and we in suchlike times) needed our Father GOD, Who might remind Him (and us) that nothing extraordinary had happened – it had been commonplace in the heathen world.
Thus, the strange spirit with sorrow was gone, and *the Holy Spirit of Love* continued to operate. *Matthew 14:14*.
The LORD led our Lord onward through the greatest fear we people ever experienced – *the fear of death*. How? As it seems to me, by taking away the Holy Ghost from Him. That way, the heaviest strike of Satan – fear – had come.
Again, Lord Jesus needed only a Prayer, and the Angel was sent to strengthen the Christ of GOD just enough to enable Him to go on through flogging, cross, and death. See *Matthew 26:36-44 & 67-68; 27:29-31,35, & 39-44.*

And He was withdrawn from them about a stone's cast, and kneeled down,
and prayed, Saying, Father, if Thou be willing, remove this Cup from Me:
nevertheless not My will, but Thine, be done. And there appeared an Angel
unto Him from Heaven, strengthening Him. (Luke 22:41-43)

His *physical pain* was so overwhelming that even the *mind* got affected:

And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying,
... My GOD, My GOD, why hast Thou forsaken Me? (Matthew 27:46)

That fearful way, *the Ultimate Price* for crushing all our *sorrows* had been paid in full. We discussed *the Cross of Christ* in chapter 4.

Grace be to you and Peace from GOD the Father, and from our Lord Jesus Christ, Who gave Himself for our sins, that He might deliver us from this present evil world, according to the Will of GOD and our Father. To Whom be Glory for ever and ever. Amen. (Galatians 1:3-5)

Now, the best *proof* that His death and Resurrection did free us, *Christians*, from all *fears*, *sorrows*, and *pains* is the Blessed Book of *Testimonies* ever written – the *Book of Martyrs*.

Q: What happened to Jesus on the three days after He was put in the tomb?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: Search the *Holy Scriptures*.
On your question, it is *Ephesians 4:9-10*. There, in "the lower parts of the Earth", there are our lost *Paradise* and the damned *hell*.
Consider *Luke 16:19-31, 23:43,* & *1Peter 3:18-20*.
See also chapters 8, 222, 243, and 512 (Spirits in prison).

Lord Jesus' conscience was clean and could not suffer in *hell*.
He preached to those who awaited their destiny, even Eternal Life.

Q: Can you explain to me where/what Jesus was doing during His undocumented years? I believe it was when He was 12-29.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: I think Jesus was a carpenter by trade and got His simple education.
Please read *Isaiah 53:2, Matthew 13:55-57, & Mark 6:2-4*.
Let me also take your words "undocumented years" as those not confirmed by the Written Word of GOD. Thanks for your question.

Q: What does it mean that the *Word* was in the Beginning (*John 1:1*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: It means that the LORD, our GOD, created everything that was created with Eternal & All-Powerful Word of His Mouth.
See *Psalms 33:6, Isaiah 55:10-11, & Luke 21:33.*
It also means that God Son – our Lord Jesus – is the Living Word.
The Heavenly Father did His Mighty Works of Creation through Jesus.
John 1:1-5,14; 14:10; Ephesians 3:9; & Colossians 1:16-17.
Thank you.

115

Q: What does it mean, *the poor in spirit (Matthew 5:3)*?

A: I think it means the total opposition to what heathen calls “spiritually rich”. Satan’s servant, Mr. Lenin, once declared, “You might become a communist only by enriching your mind with the knowledge of all the riches which the humankind made up.” [My translation.]
(Please find the parallel sayings here:
https://www.azquotes.com/author/6758-Adolf_Hitler/tag/lying).

So, to become *poor in spirit*, we should do contrary to the above lying words, even jettison from off our hearts & minds everything which the world of unbelievers values & cherishes above GOD –

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself against the Knowledge of GOD, and bringing into captivity every thought to the Obedience of Christ. (2Corinthians 10:5)

Kindly see relevant chapters: 58 (K & U & W), 106 (Feeding our spirit), 107 (Feeding our soul), & 287 (We are not of the orld).

Q: Brother, please interpret *Numbers 8:17*.

A: It is written:

When I killed all the first-born in Egypt, I consecrated as My Own the oldest son of each Israelite family and the first-born of every animal. (Numbers 8:17, Good News Translation)*
* See *Exodus 12:12,13,29.*

Within the context of *Numbers 8:5-26, Verse 17* was preceded by the Sacrifice for sins, as in *Verses 8 & 12*.

Now, implementation. In every Family of a Christian Country, the first-born son should have Clerical Education and become a full-time Minister employed as per the Gifts he is blessed with.

Trust in the LORD with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct thy paths. (Proverbs 3:5-6)

116

Q: Please explain *the pure in heart* in *Matthew 5:8*.

A: We are *spiritually pur*e or *pure in heart* when our spirit has been purified or cleansed from that same worldly wealth – the idols – we talked about in chapter 115 (our discussion about *the poor in spirit*).

Many evils should be repudiated: anger, corruption, criticism, defeat, denominationalism, envy, fear, laziness, lust, mammon, pride, self-pity, unforgiving, and such.

Common sense (a.k.a., *reason*) & *compromise* should know their right place, such as housekeeping, cooking, gardening, mending clothes & shoes, and alike, never intruding the sphere of spiritual matters.

As bodily cleanness is attained by water-washing, the state of *spiritual purity* is arrived at by *Confession*. See chapter 19 (Confession – spiritual cleansing).

Therefore, I'm of the opinion that the Sacrament of Confession is a matter of must to be followed at the Sacraments of *Water Baptism* and *Holy Communion*. See chapters 20 & 35, respectively.

But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that Bread,
and drink of that Cup. For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily,
eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's Body.
For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep.
For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.
(1Corinthians 11:28-31)

A Confession is the most needful procedure for every *Healing Ministry* (chapter 432) and much desirable in our *Godly Living*.

Q: What was the criteria for Salvation in the Old Testament times?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* February 2021. Condensed.)

A: It is the same as LORD GOD Himself.

... As I live, saith the LORD GOD,
I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked;
but that the wicked turn from his way and live ... (Ezekiel 33:11)

Q: Can we explain *Psalm 11* by Parallel Scriptures?

A: Per *Isaiah 34:16,* there are such Parallels and, by *Matthew 7:7 & Luke 11:9*, we can find them. Let us consider the *Eleventh Psalm* Verse by Verse.

1 In the LORD put I my Trust: how say ye to my soul, Flee as a bird to your mountain?

... If GOD be for us, who can be against us? (Romans 8:31)

2 *For, lo, the wicked bend their bow, they make ready their arrow upon the string, that they may privily shoot at the upright in heart.*

Stand therefore
... having on the Breastplate of Righteousness ... (Ephesians 6:14)

3 If the Foundations be destroyed, what can the Righteous do?

... whosoever heareth these Sayings of Mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock ... (Matthew 7:24)

4 The LORD is in His Holy Temple, the LORD's Throne is in Heaven: His Eyes behold, His Eyelids try, the children of men.

... the LORD seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)

5 The LORD trieth the Righteous: but the wicked and him that loveth violence His Soul hateth. 6 Upon the wicked He shall rain snares, fire and brimstone, and an horrible tempest: this shall be the portion of their cup.

... GOD is Faithful, Who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able ... (1Corinthians 10:13)

Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire. (Matthew 7:19)

7 For the Righteous LORD loveth Righteousness; His Countenance doth behold the Upright.

He loveth Righteousness and Judgment: the Earth is full of the Goodness of the LORD. (Psalms 33:5)

117

Q: What is the *abomination of desolation* as it is written in *Daniel* & *Matthew*?

A: Searching my PDF library, I've found the most concise explanation in *John Robinson's Theological, Biblical & Ecclesiastical Dictionary (1835)*:

> *The abomination of desolation, foretold by Daniel (11:31) denotes, according to the best interpreters, the idol of Jupiter Olympius, which was erected in the Temple of Jerusalem, by the command of Antiochus Epiphanes (1Maccabees 6:7; 2Maccabees 6:2). By the same abomination of desolation (Matthew 24:15) seen at Jerusalem during the last siege of that city by the Romans, under Titus, is meant the ensigns of the Roman army, upon which were formed the images of their gods and emperors, and which were placed in the Temple, after it and the city were taken.*

Yet, the most concise does not mean the most convincing, as it lacked spiritual guidance. Me, I accepted the above account as the *examples* of abominations.
Other descriptions of the sort can be found in our Holy Bible, *Book of Martyrs*, and Christian handbooks.

Generally, *abomination* means every idolatrous evil such as war, massacre, murder, human sacrifice, satanism, witchcraft, atheistic propaganda, moral corruption, etc.

The *abomination that makes desolate* – leads to death eternal every person directly engaged therein and thus affects every society tolerating it.

The Words of Lord Jesus recorded in *Matthew 24:15-25; Mark 13:14-23; & Luke 21:20-24* were indeed the Warning & Advice to His contemporaries, as actual destruction of Jerusalem drew near. But when that tragedy had happened, His Words, however, fulfilled, remained standing on.

Heaven and Earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away.
(Matthew 24:35, Mark 13:31, & Luke 21:33)

Our Spirit Warfare continues (*Luke 12:51*). Satan still blinds the minds of unbelievers (*2Corinthians 4:4*) unto abominations & persecutions.
That threatens our lives and tests our Faith, let alone seriously affects the destiny of spiritually blind persecutors.

118

Q: What Bible Translation is better to study?

A: Since very few Christians have the old Hebrew & Greek tongues to be able to read the original text, we have to study the translations.
Probably, the most popular in the World (and found by many GOD best inspired) is *King James Version*. I use it myself for this book.

Nonetheless, from time to time, when I encounter some passage hard to comprehend, my PDF library is always within reach to read other Versions.

I always start from the oldest: *John Wycliffe (1382), William Tyndale (1530), Miles Coverdale (1535), John [Thomas Matthew] Rogers (1537),* and so forth. Why? To honor the Holy Martyrs of GOD. (They, by the Will of GOD, had never been familiar with such things as honorarium, royalties, copyright, &c., knowing well what was the Holy Inquisition instead.)

Hard to read? Come on, English is my second language, and I'm okay with that. Well, at least dealing with the *Holy Scriptures*. The last is very different from other old writings, yet the *Holy Ghost* helps out a lot to pull me through.

Every Bible Translation – old, new, printed, electronic, &c. – has its advantage. Whatever Version you might choose, mind some other Versions also. Among those others, kindly consider *Robert Young's Literal Translation (1890)* and *Amplified Bible (1954).* Try to find a good *expanded* translation.

You may visit *www.biblegateway.com* to "bookmark" some Editions.
I often visit that site to check out the *Literal Translation* first.

The best electronic Version I've found (for Windows OS) is *e-Sword – the Sword of the LORD with an electronic edge, www.e-sword.net* (the last check was on June 2026). Please see the References at the end of this book.

In pre-GPS sea navigation, to find our ship's position on the chart, we used to plot so-called *position lines*, say, several bearings and/or distances to some charted objects. Those position lines crossed on the chart around our whereabouts at the moment of observation, and the more position lines, the more accurate *fix* we got.

Studying different Bible Versions, we also "plot our position lines" around the Right Word of True Knowledge. Reading a book of Brother *Roland H. Bainton, Here I Stand – A Life Of Martin Luther*, one can find this interesting passage:

> *He did not attempt any minor harmonization of discrepancies, because trivial errors gave him no concern. If on occasion he could speak of every iota of Holy Writ as Sacred, at other times he displayed blithe indifference to minor blemishes, such as an error in quotation from the Old Testament in the New Testament. The Bible for him was not strictly identical with the Word of GOD. GOD's Word is the Work of Redemption in Christ which became concrete in Scripture as GOD in Christ became incarnate in the flesh; and as Christ by the incarnation was not denuded of human characteristics, so the Scripture as the Medium of the Word was not divested of human limitations. (p. 331)*

Even so, study your Chief Handbook – *the Holy Bible* – hearing to the only Teacher thereof – *the Holy Spirit* – to have your spirit saturated with Truth.

Scriptural references: *Deuteronomy 29:29* – Revelation & Secret.
Jeremiah 11:18; 33:3 – Knowledge is the Gift of GOD.
Daniel 2:21 – ditto.
Hosea 4:6 – The dangerous ignorance.
John 8:31-32 – Obedience & Knowledge.

Q: Why continue calling *Yeshua* Jesus after knowing it is a mistranslation?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020. Condensed.)

A: Good question. Every language calls Him some other way.
But what did our Lord say about His Person?

Take My Yoke upon you, and learn of Me; for I am Meek and Lowly in heart: and ye shall find Rest unto your souls. (Matthew 11:29)

... whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. (Matthew 12:32)

These Scriptures, among other important issues, say that *Yeshua* is not offended by "a word against" Him, much less (not disrespectful) misspelling His Name. His First Priority is Father GOD & His Truth.

119

Q: What can you say about the *discrepancies* or *contradictions* in our *Bible*?

A: I am sure there is nothing of the sort in the *Holy Word of GOD.*

For example, in chapter 113, we talked about the census which King David ordered (*2Samuel 24:1-15*) and GOD's Punishment following.
Answering David's sincere *Confession* (*Verses 10 & 17*), the LORD GOD commanded His Servant to build an Altar to offer Burnt Sacrifices and thus restore Peace (*Verse 18*). To do that, Brother David had to buy the place that happened to belong to one Araunah (Ornan). The last offered his property for *free* to the King (*Verses 22-23*). But King David resolutely refused, as every *Sacrifice* had to cost something (*Verse 24*).

So David bought the threshingfloor and the oxen for
fifty shekels of silver. (2Samuel 24:24)

So David gave to Ornan for the place
six hundred shekels of gold by weight. (1Chronicles 21:25)

Considering the *spiritual attitudes* of Brethren David & Ornan, the Servants of GOD, I may offer this quite possible explanation against the apparent discrepancy between the above Scriptures.

David paid Ornan the amount of 600 shekels of gold, which could, very probably, be more than enough for the place. Thus, David's Sacrifice was a substantial one. Ornan, in turn, could not object to the decision of the King and accepted the money without further arguments.

However, King David could not forbid his subject from sacrificing freely to the LORD their GOD, the amount of Sacrifice being left with Ornan.

So, Ornan could well sacrifice that day so much that the difference between the money accepted from the King and the estimated value of Ornan's Giving to GOD that day was but the 50 shekels of silver. Thus, arithmetically, that day, David spent 600 shekels of gold, whereas Ornan got 50 shekels of silver.

I daresay also that Brother David could have received much more in the Kingdom of GOD than he had sacrificed. But, considering their different social and financial status, Brother Ornan obtained still more.

If the above conclusions are correct, well, the Sacrifice of Ornan was (if not more than that of David) indeed quite an *Investment* into what followed up:

... the LORD was intreated for the land,
and the plague was stayed from Israel. (2Samuel 24:25)

Now, we can see that the seeming "discrepancy" may lead us to not only clarification in figures, but into deep things of the Word, provided, you & I take the pain to think as per *Deuteronomy 6:5*.

Because the foolishness of GOD is wiser than men;
and the weakness of GOD is stronger than men. (1Corinthians 1:25)

You may also consider the Parallel Scripture, where the Wisdom of GOD stands Mighty against any common sense & arithmetic.

> *Jesus sat over against the Treasury, and beheld how the people cast money into the Treasury: and many that were rich cast in much. And there came a certain widow, and she threw in two mites, which make a farthing. And He called unto Him His Disciples, and saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That this poor widow hath cast more in, than all they which have cast into the Treasury: for all they did cast in of their abundance; but she of her want did cast in all that she had, even all her living. (Mark 12:41-44)*

The following words of Brother John Calvin might help us understand the apparent "discrepancies" in the Gospels.

> *The Spirit of GOD, Who had appointed the Evangelists to be His Clerks, appears purposely to have regulated their style in such a manner, that they all wrote one and the same history, with the most Perfect agreement, but in different ways. It was intended, that the Truth of GOD should more clearly and strikingly appear, when it was manifest that His Witnesses did not speak by a preconcerted plan, but that each of them separately, without paying any attention to another, wrote Freely and Honestly what the Holy Spirit dictated. (John Calvin, Commentary on Harmony of the Evangelists)*

Our references: *Isaiah 30:21 & John 16:13* …….. Listen to the Holy Ghost.
Jeremiah 33:3 ……..... Contradictions? – ask Him.
Mark 4:24 ……..... Clear out your mind and think Right.

Q: (1) Does GOD care for the nations?. Most contemporary interpretations of the *Book of Jonah* emphasize GOD's final Word, reading it as a question.

> *... should not I spare Nineveh, that great city, wherein are more than sixscore thousand persons that cannot discern between their right hand and their left hand; and also much cattle? (Jonah 4:11)*

Q: (2) So, GOD does care about pagan cities and pagan peoples, even the most wicked among them. But does a *contradiction* emerge from this reading when we compare it with the Statements found in other Prophets?

> *All nations before Him are as nothing; and they are counted to Him less than nothing, and vanity. (Isaiah 40:17)*

> *... all the inhabitants of the Earth are reputed as nothing: and He doeth according to His Will in the Army of Heaven, and among the inhabitants of the Earth: and none can stay His Hand, or say unto Him, What doest Thou? (Daniel 4:35)*

Q: (3) Would it, therefore, be better to read GOD's final Words in *Jonah* as a Statement rather than as a Question? Under this reading, GOD would vindicate Jonah's concern for Justice, affirming that He will indeed destroy Nineveh (cf., the Book of *Nahum*), and neither the city's size nor its ignorance will restrain His Wrath.

(Signed: *Biblical Unitarian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed. *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* quoted.)

A: (1) In *Jonah 4:11*, I see GOD of Love giving a chance to repent unto all.

(2) *Isaiah 40:17, Daniel 4:35, the Book of Nahum*, &c., is His Justice.
As for "contradictions", there is not a single one in the Word of GOD.

(3) When the Hope (as per *Ecclesiastes 9:4*) expires, nobody & nothing can stop LORD GOD to shut the Door of His Kingdom on whatever multitude of evil-doers. Their Punishment is self-inflicted. See chapter 64.
The LORD saw the *future* destruction of Nineveh. But, t*here & then* (in the *Book of Jonah*), He accepted the Repentance of that city.

Please also note our *limited* comprehending of His Word.

120

Q: You preach the Written Word is alive & active.
What about *Animal Sacrifices*?

A: The Word is alive & active indeed as per *Hebrews 4:12 –*

... for the Reckoning of GOD is living, and working, and sharp above every two-edged sword ... (Robert Young Literal Translation, 1898)

Animal Sacrifices were Divinely ordained to pay for human *sins* until *Jesus' Ministry*. The last is well said about in *John 3:16-17, 3:36; 11:25-26; 14:6; Colossians 1:14; 1Timothy 1:15; 2:5; 2Timothy 1:9; Tit 3:4-7;* and many more.

Now, Lord Jesus paid the *Ultimate Price* for our sins – the Cross of Christ provided that *Substitutional Sacrifice*. Animals were thus forever freed from that hard burden. See, for instance, *Hebrews 7:26-27 & 9:13-14,28.*

However, Christ Jesus hasn't exempted us from all *Sacrifices* to LORD GOD & His Church by means of giving money, time, and Charitable Works.
Lo, Sacrificial Giving is the best proof of *Love*.

The Purpose of Tithing is to teach you always to put GOD First in your Lives.
(Deuteronomy 14:23, The Living Bible Translation 1971, by Kenneth Taylor)

I am not giving you an order; I am not saying you must do it,
but others are eager for it. This is one way to prove that your Love is real,
that it goes beyond mere words.
(2Corinthians 8:8, The Living Bible Translation 1971, by Kenneth Taylor)

That's why, when we read about Animal Sacrifices in the Old Testament Scriptures, first, let us give GOD Glory in our heart for the Cross of Christ saving us as well as animals from that.

Second, think about how those Sacrifices of old may concern you & me nowadays, what & how we should sacrifice in this or that case, especially when it comes down to GOD's Ordinance.

Please see chapter 56 and the Index on the subject of *Giving*.

Q: Brother, what Teaching do we receive in the *Book of Judges*?

A: In that Book, we read:

In those days, there was no King in Israel:
every man did that which was right in his own eyes. (Judges 21:25)

There & then, indeed had been the *King* absent, even the *LORD, our GOD,* in the heart of every human. And that remains relevant here & now.
Behold the *evil chain* brought to light in the *Book of Judges*.

Chapter 1. Not all heathen were exterminated from the Promised Land, notwithstanding Israel had been commanded so by the LORD GOD.
Christians are not supposed to kill unbelievers & idolaters in their lands. But our Warfare as per *Ephesians 6:12* (within the context of *Verses 10-18*) must go on.

Chapters 2-18. The people of Israel turned their back to GOD, followed the detestable idolatrous ways of pagans, and got enslaved. Nevertheless, the LORD had given them Judges to rescue them.
There are many idolaters in our countries and the Body of Christ. And the only way for them is that of *Luke 15:20*. For our Father GOD acts per that Scripture.

Chapter 19. Certain Levite, apparently not satisfied with one wife, took for himself a concubine. The latter followed his example and played a harlot. On their way home, they were attacked by the degraders. The man acted cowardly and gave his woman up unto them. The sinners raped her to death. The Levite reported a half-truth to all Israel to vindicate himself for his loss.
Look at that evil and be courageous & honest.

Chapter 20. When Israel fought with Benjamin, thousands of Jews perished.
The more we communicate with our GOD and follow the Guidance of His Holy Spirit, the less our losses are.

Chapter 21. The “wise” patching up in the natural cannot make up for the human losses in Eternity. Thus teaches the LORD:

Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a new heart and a new spirit: for why will ye die, O House of Israel? For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the LORD GOD : wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye. (Ezekiel 18:31-32)

121

Q: How to make friends following *Luke 16:9*?

A: The *King James Version* runs:

... Make to yourselves Friends of the mammon of unrighteousness;*
*that, when ye** fail***, they may receive you into Everlasting Habitations.*

** Robert Young Literal Translation (1898)* runs *"out of"*.
** American Standard Version (1901)* runs *"by means of"*.

***The Revised Version (1872) & American Standard Version (1901)* run *"it"*.
So, by those translations, "*when it fail*" might stand for "*if our finances are expired as means to do Good Works*".

**** Thomas Matthew (1537) & Richard Taverner (1539) Versions* run "*departe"*, i.e., *die.*

Different translations run differently. But *Robert Young Literal Translation (1898)* here, far as I understand, is the best way to follow the Spirit of the Word.
So, make Friends by tearing folks *out of* a deadly grip of mammon. Kindly note our conversation in chapter 56 (The Test of Giving). And let us define the term *Friends* as Lord Jesus did –

Ye are My Friends, if you do whatsoever I command you. (John 15:14)

Now, it is clear *who* our True Friends are: *Christians.*

We should *make Friends*, i.e., call unbelievers into the Body of Christ.
That we do, according to our Great Commission (*Matthew 28:19-20*).
And ought to do better, considering the following:

*... the children of this world are in their generation wiser**
than the Children of Light. (Luke 16:8)

* Here, "wiser" might stand for "better using brains to arrive at the purpose".
Is it not a shame that serving the mammon, folks use their intellectual abilities better than we do following our Father GOD?
Therefore, make Friends by your best *financial investments* into Christian Charitable Services. Kindly see chapters 205 & 429.

Do we make Friends with our Fellow-Christians per *Luke 16:9*? No, because we are such as belonging to One Body. Our financial supporting one another is a matter of must (see *Galatians 6:2*), not making Friends.
We should reenforce our Friendship by correcting & edifying (per *Galatians 6:1*) those Believers who compromise with the world and therefore are,

> *... the enemies of the Cross of Christ ... who mind Earthly things.*
> *(Philippians 3:18-19)*

Brother Kenneth Taylor in his Version – *The Living Bible (1971)* – suggested this (paraphrased) translation:

> *But shall I tell you to act that way, to buy Friendship through cheating?*
> *Will this ensure your entry into an Everlasting Home in Heaven? No!*

Brother Morris Cerullo, in "*God's Victorious Army Financial Breakthrough Spiritual Warfare Bible*" (*page 1401),* commented:

> *... What Christ meant is that, while we are living upon the Earth, we should make Good use of the worldly riches He gives us, so that when we stand before GOD to give an Account of our Stewardship, we will be received into Heaven and receive His Reward.*
>
> Whatever explanation of *Luke 16:9* you may choose or have already had, share it with your Friends at your next Small Group Meeting.

Q: How to communicate with a Seventh Day Adventist?
(Signed: *Christian, non-denominational*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: Your post (which I had to shorten to save some space here) pictures a typical dispute between Christians belonging to different denominations.
In Christian Forums, I call myself *non-denominational* too. So what?
Shall we forget the *Eleventh Commandment* of Christ? Or shall we start arguing in front of *unbelievers* and thus nullify the *Twelfth Commandment*?
My good Friend in Christ is an *Adventist Pastor.* One of my favorite movies – *Hacksaw Ridge* – is about an *Adventist Believer.*
So, how to communicate? Be Friends. Serve the same Christian Ministry.
May GOD be with you.

122

Q: Don't you think that searching the Scriptures,
as we did in the previous question, is a bit too much?

A: "Too much" is *unreal*. Take "not enough" as way more likely.
How come? Simply because *GOD's Word* is unsearchable.

Listen to Me, ... and I shall instruct you;
attend carefully, and I shall tell you more.
(Apocrypha, 2nd Esdras 5:32, Revised English Bible, 1989)

Those who teach young Christians to learn the existing comments and not write their own are wrong. May LORD GOD forgive & correct such Teachers.
They even misuse *Ecclesiastes 1:9,* saying: *there is no new thing under the Sun*.
In chapter 83 (New Revelations), we discussed that issue.
Even the heathen teachers say that reading & writing well work together for better learning. How much more thoughtful writing might contribute to our better meditation on the Word of GOD!
Thus saith the Lord:

I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.
(John 16:12)

In this Scripture, we can read about *His Willing Heart* on the one hand and *our self-tolerated limits* on the other. Can we take the pain to change the latter?

See chapters: 29 (Mind your approach) & 104 (The Promised Teacher).

This Book of the Law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way Prosperous, and then thou shalt have Good Success. (Joshua 1:8)

Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. But his Delight is in the Law of the LORD; and in His Law doth he meditate day and night. And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his fruit in his season; his leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper. (Psalms 1:1-3)

123

Q: *John 9:1-3* runs:

And as Jesus passed by, He saw a man which was blind from his birth.
And His Disciples asked Him, saying, Master, who did sin, this man,
or his parents, that he was born blind?
Jesus answered, Neither hath this man sinned, nor his parents:
but that the Works of GOD should be made Manifest in him.

The question is: if nobody sinned, why had the man suffered blindness for so many years?

A: Neither that man nor his parents were *sinless* in the first place.
Kindly note *Romans 3:23.*

In the Answer to His Disciples, Lord Jesus meant the sin(s), which had directly led to the evil of that man's *natural* blindness.
Since Jesus answered negatively, what is the only plausible (and Scriptural) reason? I think it is only the multiple sins of Israel as one body. And that should include the *spiritual* blindness of the man inherited from his parents. See, for instance, *Proverbs 13:22*.
Long before Jesus' Ministry, Father GOD promised:

And ye shall serve the LORD your GOD, and He shall bless thy bread,*
and thy water; and I will take sickness* away from the midst of thee.*
(Exodus 23:25)

* Apparently, both *spiritual* & *physical* things were meant, as it is so in many other Scriptures. Please see chapter 44 (B & C).
To that effect, by the way, was the Purpose of the Ministry of our Lord:

This is a Faithful Saying, and Worthy of all acceptation,
that Christ Jesus came into the world to save sinners ... (1Timothy 1:15)

The Gospels show us plainly how few were those who *did* believe. Here & now, we can also see how many folks *do.* Remember *Ecclesiastes 1:9.*

And this is the condemnation, that Light is come into the world, and men
loved darkness rather than Light, because their deeds were evil. (John 3:19)

Q: What would Life be like if we followed *everything* the Bible tells us to and have never sinned in our lives? If it was possible.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: That depends on who are those *we*. Where to start from?
To the devil, Adam & Eve could have only said, *Nay*.
Cain might well consider: *Something is wrong. I'd have a word with Dad.*
Now, the sinners, we have Hope, as per *Ecclesiastes 9:4*,
and the Way of Jesus, as per *John 14:6*.
So, the answer to your question is: Yes, it was & is possible.

For this Commandment which I command thee this day,
it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off ...
But the Word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart,
that thou mayest do it. (Deuteronomy 30:11,14)

Q: Why did Lot's daughters rape their dad?. I can't understand why Lot's daughters wanted to become impregnated that way.
Q: Was there a deeper motive, or were they just attracted to him, or was he the only man around, or something else?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: The story told in *Genesis 19:30-38* is the negative example of first, the poor education in that family and second, the sequential, the worldly reasoning ruling the minds and leading to sins. Please note the understandable motive in *Verses 31-32*, the ungodly way taken, and the harvest in *Verse 38*, namely, the foolishness gave birth to the sinful nations.

Q: What does it mean to not be "wise in your own eyes" (*Proverbs 3:*7)?

A: It is written:

7 Be not wise in thine own eyes:
fear the LORD, and depart from evil. 8 It shall be health to thy navel, and marrow to thy bones. 9 Honour the LORD with thy substance, and with the firstfruits of all thine increase: 10 So shall thy barns be filled with plenty, and thy presses shall burst out with new wine. (Proverbs 3:7-10)

The parallel Words are in preceding Verses – *Proverbs 3:5-6.*
Both Scriptures teach us against the reason of this evil world. See chapter 41.
Instead, we are supposed to wholeheartedly trust LORD GOD. See chapter 58.

124

Q: Brother, Lord Jesus prayed:

That they all may be One; as Thou, Father, art in Me, and I in Thee,
that they also may be One in Us: that the World may believe
that Thou hast sent Me. And the Glory which Thou gavest Me
I have given Them; that They may be One, even as We are One:
I in Them, and Thou in Me, that They may be made Perfect in One;
and that the World may know that Thou hast sent Me,
and hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me. (John 17:21-23)

Now, *contrary* to this Scripture, there are so many *denominations of* Christians. The question is: shall we take it that Jesus' Prayer hasn't been answered as yet?

A: No. Christ Jesus' Prayer – corresponding to His Eleventh Commandment *(John 13:34-35)* – was *immediately* answered by Father GOD.
Any disagreements within the Holy Trinity of GOD are impossible.
And we are with Him. *John 10:27-30*.
We can see the actual Manifestation of the LORD's Answer.

For one, by *Acts 2:44-47* & *4:32-37*, the LORD, our GOD, proved that Union possible, spiritually Strong, Secure, and Fruitful. Only Faith & Obedience were required on the part of True Believers.

For two, per *Acts 5:1-11*, Father GOD strengthened His First Church by His Holy Spirit of Justice to condemn any compromising with the world and robbing Him.

For three, according to the Book of Martyrs, LORD GOD demonstrated Mighty Union of the Holy Ghost with those Christians who did not fear persecutions & death for One Lord, even Jesus.

For four, it is written,

There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free,
there is neither male nor female: for ye are all One in Christ Jesus.
(Galatians 3:28)

Under that, we are seen, counted upon, Blessed, and judged by Almighty GOD as Members, Workers of, and Investors into *One* GOD-ordained Body.

For five, the Body of Christ, *One & Indivisible*, does exist and comprises all Believers who stand against *the devil-inspired denominational division*. How so? It is written,

... Christ: from Whom the whole Body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the Body unto Edifying of itself in Love. (Ephesians 4:15-16)

Q: Can Jesus be God if He is not Omniscient?

(Signed: *Christian, Evangelical*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020. Condensed.)

A: Friend, your (post's name and) the question both are incorrect.

Jesus *is* God from Eternity to Eternity. During only thirty-three years of all that immeasurable time, He *was not* God, but a (Son of) Man, the Christ of GOD, neither Omniscient nor Omnipotent, as He Honestly declared, say, in *John 14:10*. Please note *1Timothy 2:5* too. But the Holy Spirit *was in* Jesus.

That *was* two thousand years ago. Now, Jesus *is* God, the Second Person of the Holy Trinity of GOD. See *Matthew 28:18-20*.

I appreciate your extensive study, which is seen in your very long post, and which I could not quote here for the sake of brevity. Thank you.

Q: What did Jesus mean by saying,

... no man hath ascended up to Heaven, but He that came down from Heaven, even the Son of Man which is in Heaven. (John 3:13)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: His Words means that, before Judgment Day, no Righteous human can join Father GOD in His Eternal Kingdom. Paradise comes first.

The same Judgment separates hell & eternal death.

Please, see chapter 573 (Eternity) and the Index section for more.
Thank you.

125

Q: What deeds go against the *Sixth Commandment* written in *Exodus 20:13* & *Deuteronomy 5:17*?

A: There are many such deeds. In chapter 9, we talked about the *military*, which stands most close to the issue.

Whatever action, which stops, ignores to save or protect, harms, shortens, or any other evil way affects GOD-given Life is prohibited by the Sixth Commandment. That includes encouraging people to murder, or else inventing, creating & using weapons of mass destruction, as well as every stuff potentially dangerous for people's life & health. Kindly note *John 10:10 & 3John 1:2*.

Even not directly mentioned in the Holy Scriptures, such innovations of men as abortion & drugs (tobacco inclusive) are expressly prohibited by GOD, as contradicting the Spirit of His Word & the Sixth Commandment. *2Samuel 23:2.*

War veterans tell that to kill is not so easy, especially at first. It is much easier later on. Murder is against human nature – we are created in GOD's Image & Likeness. We are able, however, to force ourselves to serve the devil.
See *Joshua 24:15*.
It becomes a lot easier to become killers when murder is tied up with "patriotism" or "line of duty" or "gallantry" or whatever other lies. The examples of the "heroes" of war are so encouraging. Movies about "supermen" killing around are so popular. Satan personally sees to all that. See *John 8:44*.
But what about the Commandment of GOD? If we take it seriously enough, all *heroes* of war are but the *victims* thereof. See *Hosea 10:13*.

Killing animals, birds, or fishes to eat their flesh was not in the Beginning.
Later on (because of our spiritual degrading and consequent bodily change), Father GOD permitted us to eat meat. Yet He imposed relevant Restrictions and forbade us to kill for a sport. See *Leviticus 17:3-5 & Habakkuk 2:17*.
A child cruel to animals won't compulsorily become a murderer, but every maniacal killer was inhumane in childhood. *Deuteronomy 25:4 & Proverbs 22:6*.

> *They say he's a sociopath, because they don't know what else to call him. He has some of the characteristics of what they call a sociopath. He has no remorse or guilt at all. And he had the first and worst sign – sadism to animals as a child. (Thomas Harris, Red Dragon)*

Violating the *Sixth Commandment* should be included in our *Confessions.*
The thing is, there are a lot more ways for us to transgress it unwittingly than we can imagine. Like what? By being citizens of a military country (not permanently neutral). That way, we directly (by voting) or indirectly support militarism.
See chapter 9 (Military).

Scriptures to mind: *Proverbs 20:3* – A matter of Honor.
Matthew 5:9 – Blessed are the Peacemakers ...
Matthew 5:22 – Anger without a cause.
Matthew 5:44-45 – Fight the real enemy.
Romans 12:17-21 – Be an Overcomer.
Colossians 3:13 – Forgiving.
1John 5:18 – Born of GOD.

Q: If you believe in pre-tribulation *Rapture*, why are there *Martyrs* during the tribulation and the *Two Witnesses*?.
Q: If all Christians are supposed to be raptured, why does it speak about *Saints* being killed for their Faith?
Q: And why are the *Two Witnesses* going through the tribulation if they were supposed to be raptured up?

(Signed: *Christian, non-denominational*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: I do believe in what is called the *Rapture* as per *1Thessalonians 4:16-17*.
To your first question, my answer is, *Holy Martyrs of GOD* have always been, starting from Abel and those *Two Witnesses* (*Revelation 11:3-13*) inclusive. For such is the Holy Will of GOD and our *Spirit War*.
As for your second & third questions, we should remember *Ecclesiastes 9:4*. The Scripture is to stand on until the last moments of the latest persons living on this Earth. Therefore, Our Heavenly Father, GOD of Love, sends His Messengers to them. Please visit the Index section for references.

Q: Have a surgeon who made a mistake that killed someone or couldn't save a patient broke the Sixth Commandment?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: No, he didn't.
If the death of a patient was not an evil intention but resulted from a lack of competence, experience, negligence, tiredness, etc., a doctor cannot be blamed. However, every particular case is to be investigated thoroughly.

126

Q: What's the meaning of the *Seventh Commandment of the Law (Exodus 20:14* & *Deuteronomy 5:18)*?

A: This Commandment condemns *adultery*, which comprises quite a scope of evils. Adultery is lustful words & deeds, the "secret" thoughts of lust (where that sin begins), all sexual perversions, and our tolerance thereof.
All that displeases GOD, for we are His Temple.
Mind well *1Corinthians 3:16-17*.

The Seventh Commandment is closely connected with all GOD's Law clarified in *Matthew 22:37-40*. For adultery – as per *Exodus 20:3-5* & *Deuteronomy 5:7-9* – is a sin against the LORD GOD & our neighbor. GOD also warns us of the relevant compromise with the devil. Note *Revelation 3:15-16*.

Lust is the evil dart (thought, seed) of the enemy (the demons of Satan), which becomes the attitude of adultery. And the sinful union. *1Corinthians 6:16*.

The evil spirits (demons, angels of Satan) back up the dart of lust by:
(1) common sense spreading around some lying "scientific" data & governing morale advocating adultery;
(2) compromise pointing out the examples of movie-heroes as well as the real people, said to be honest in many other aspects but indulging themselves some affairs;
(3) mammon supporting the "profitable" sex business all over the heathen world;
(4) foolishness, which is the spiritual & mental degenerating;
and other evils.

For GOD wants you to be Holy and Pure, and to keep clear of all sexual sin so that each of you will marry in Holiness and Honour – not in lustful passion as the heathen do, in their ignorance of GOD and His Ways.
(1Thessalonians 4:3-5, The Living Bible)

> *Do we not yet ... feel how foul and horrible a thing sin is? For lust is the only thing that can be cured by no remedy! Not even by Marriage, which was expressly ordained from Above to be a Remedy for this infirmity of our nature. For the greater part of married persons still live in adultery ...*
>
> *(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, p.224)*

Q: Please, see the *Book of Judges, Chapter 8*.
Can that story of Gideon exemplify violating the Seventh Commandment of God?

A: I think your answer is here –

... judge nothing before the Time,
until the Lord come, Who both will bring to Light
the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts:
and then shall every man have Praise of GOD. (1Corinthians 4:5)

Kindly see chapter 141 (The evil of criticism).

Secondly, why should only Brother Gideon be in question? How about the rest of humankind, you & me inclusive? For, probably, few are those who have never opened their minds to the evil thoughts of lust.

Besides,

> *Gideon refused the government the people offered him. No good man can be pleased with any honour done to himself, which belongs only to GOD. Gideon thought to keep up the remembrance of this Victory by an ephod, made of the choicest of the spoils. But probably this ephod had, as usual, a teraphim* annexed to it, and Gideon intended this for an oracle to be consulted. Many are led into false ways by one false step of a good man. It became a snare to Gideon himself, and it proved the ruin of the family. How soon will ornaments which feed the lust of the eye, and form the pride of life, as well as tend to the indulgences of the flesh, bring shame on those who are fond of them!*
>
> *(Matthew Henry,*
> *Concise Commentary on the Bible, the Book of Judges 8:31-38)*
>
> * Idolatry. <*https://www.jw.org/en/library/books/bible-glossary/teraphim*>, August 2021.

But speaking on the Seventh Commandment of the Holy Law, we can find other examples of acting contrary to the Written Word of GOD – *Genesis 2:24* – say, *1Kings 11:1-8*. Please see chapter 137 (The number 666).

Q: So, shall we follow the example of Gideon or not?

A: We should be courageous as he was, but not copy his errors.

127

Q: How to interpret the *Eighth Commandment*?

A: This Commandment – *Exodus 20:15* & *Deuteronomy 5:19* – teaches against all kinds of stealing, from small pilferage to a great robbery.

Whether violently or not, unlawful taking money or other values is prohibited by the Word: *Thou shalt not steal.* But what is behind the evil of stealing?

First of all, it is *mammon*.

For the love of money is the root of all evil:
which while some coveted after, they have erred from the Faith,
and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. (1Timothy 6:10)

Stealing is hardly possible without that love of gain. The border between Just and unjust is often very tiny – the same as the Light and the darkness.

The second backing up evil is the *compromise* – the flexible policy of this world.

The third is the evil of *lie* – advertising stealing. You may note in how many movies the heroes are mere thieves. Those "goodies" are present in comedy, a psychological novel, drama, etc. The authors try to wring off the tears of sympathy to those sinners from you & me. Why? For the love of money.
Every "profitable" business is assessed only by what one pockets – the end justifies means.

What's the way out from the sin of stealing? – It is coming to Christ. People of this world may put their finger at some "Church-workers" who quickly get wealthy from Tithes & Offerings misused.
Whether those critics & scoffers speak the truth or not – it doesn't matter. Why? We all have grave personal Accountability to GOD. It will be hard to blame any character who allegedly misled us in Life gone when standing alone before the Judgment seat of Christ.

Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden,
and I will give you Rest. Take My Yoke upon you, and learn of Me;
for I am Meek and Lowly in heart: and ye shall find Rest unto your souls.
For My Yoke is easy and My Burden is light. (Matthew 11:28-30)

128

Q: It is written:

And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee:
for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish,
and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.
And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off, and cast it from thee:
for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish,
and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.
(Matthew 5:29-30)

How to understand this Scripture – *literally* or *figuratively*?

A: Neither. Because to understand it *literally* is foolish – same as to be angry at the weapon of murder instead of the murderer. Taking Jesus *figuratively* is also wrong as making Him a speaker, not a Teacher. Here, He spoke too straightforward to be understood in a metaphorical sense.
What I suggest, take the above Words *Scriptually*, i.e., spiritually.

An eye cannot offend or mislead. It grasps (reflects) physical matters as they are and sends the information off to our mind (indwelling a brain). The information thus sent got sorted out and passed on to a spirit. The latter decides what to do with the stuff seen. As simple as that. A hand also does not get into another person's pocket or elsewhere without a direct command from our heart (spirit).
Therefore, a lustful eye is the one with a concupiscent expression betraying an adulterous heart. Likewise, a stealing hand is but a tool of a thief.
Why was mentioned the right and not left eye & hand? Probably, because mostly, they are chief and, therefore, symbolize an *attitude*.

Those Words about the right eye & right hand in *Matthew 5:29-30* may also be taken as our Lord's sorrowful *Sarcasm* – go, cut off *if* it causes the problem.
But it does not. (Note other chapters mentioning *GOD's Sarcasm* in the Index.)
There is one more point in *Matthew 5:29-30*. Excommunicate a willful offender from your Church or Ministry to preserve the whole Body. *1Corinthians 5:4-5*.

They say *Matthew 5:29-30* indeed was followed by some folks, apparently, not in their right mind, literally, willing to root out the lust and thus get into the Kingdom of Heaven. Sorry. It has never been that simple.
Our Bible teaches us another way.

I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid.
I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD;
and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah. (Psalm 32:5)

Q: I came across *Luke 14:33*, and it says that we cannot be Disciples of Jesus Christ (Christians) if we do not forsake all that we own. (?)
Q: What should be a sincere approach to this Verse?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: A sincere approach to the Bible presumes diligent study and obedient following. *Luke 14:33* states:

... whosoever he be of you
that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be My Disciple.

We read on the same in *Luke 14:26*:

If any man come to Me,
and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren,
and sisters, Yea, and his own life also, he cannot be My Disciple.

The entire context these Scriptures belong in is all the Teaching of Christ given us in four Gospels. The main point is *Good sense* against *common sense*.

And whosoever doth not bear his Cross,
and come after Me, cannot be My Disciple. (Luke 14:26-27)

Q: (1) What does it mean that man shall not live by bread alone (*Deuteronomy 8:3*)?
Q: (2) What does it mean to spend your money for that which is not Bread (*Isaiah 55:2*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, February 2021.)

A: (1) It is written:

... man doth not live by bread only, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the LORD doth man live. (Deuteronomy 8:3)

So, the answer is in the same Scripture – live by the spiritual Bread of Life. Study hard the Written Word of GOD. See chapter 106 (Feeding our spirit).

(2) *Isaiah 55:2* teaches us the same thing: value that Bread of Life and spend your money wisely – on the Works of GOD first. Read *John 4:34.*

129

Q: How to follow the *Ninth Commandment* *(Exodus 20:16* & *Deuteronomy 5:20)*?

A: We are going to have to consider all the ways of *false witnessing* (which this Commandment forbids) and do to the contrary.

This *evil* incorporates whatsoever *lie* – always working against us, our listeners, and (sometimes) those we lie about. Behold the following examples of lying.

We *lie* by following ungodly man-made traditions.
(Isaiah 29:13; Matthew 15:3,6; & Mark 7:8,9,13.)

We *lie* by contradicting the Written Word of GOD in whatever way.
(Deuteronomy 4:2, Job 38:2, & Jeremiah 8:8.)
See chapter 177 (Truth and lie).

We *lie* to our children by teaching them evil. *(Matthew 18:6.)*

We *lie* by playing Christians but staying worldly.
(1Corinthians 3:4 & Colossians 3:9-10.)

We *lie* by criticizing people on sin(s) yet sinning ourselves.
(Isaiah 58:9 & Romans 2:1.)

We *lie* by cooking up our resume per common sense. *(Jeremiah 9:6.)*

We *lie* by speaking not in Love. *(Ephesians 4:15.)* See chapter 31.

We *lie* if our speech differs from our deeds. *(1John 3:18.)*

We *lie* by verbalizing our plans. *(James 4:13-15.)*

We *lie* by promising. *(Matthew 5:37 & James 5:12.)*

We *lie* by violating the Secrecy of Confession. *(Isaiah 43:25 & Ephesians 5:1.)*
See chapter 46.

We *lie* by mentioning somebody we don't well know. *(1Corinthians 4:5.)*

We *lie* by playing *eyewitnesses* without Understanding. *(1Corinthians 1:19.)*
See chapter 100 (Tell no man).
That is well cleared up in the Christian movie *I am Gabriel (2012)* –

"*There is a big difference between what you saw and what happened.*"

By *John 8:43-44*, lie prevents Understanding.
You may find examples of satanic lies (last checked on June 2026) on <*https://www.azquotes.com/author/6758-Adolf_Hitler/tag/lying*>.

Last but not least: the *Ninth Commandment* of the Holy Law is against the evil of *criticism* too. Mind well *1Corinthians 4:5*.

Thus far, the above was revealed to and understood by me.

Q: Is it impossible for people not to tell lies?.

(Signed: *Buddhist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: Negative on that.
Otherwise, the Ninth Commandment of the Holy Law is "impossible".
It is written,

For this is the Love of GOD, that we keep His Commandments:
and His Commandments are not grievous. (1John 5:3)

Q: What is the implementation of *Numbers 5:11-31* today?

A: For the sake of brevity, I will not quote this Scripture here.
Please visit *https://www.biblegateway.com* to read several Translations thereof, including *Young's Literal Translation* and the *Amplified Bible*.

Numbers 5:11-31 do not justify either adultery of a Wife (seen in *Verses 12-13*) or doubt & jealousy of a Husband (as in *Verses 14-15*).
Our following this Scripture should foremost remind us that Marriage – the beginning of a Family – is the utmost serious business. Good Guidance of the Holy Ghost should be sought for and never be forgotten.
However, when we turn our hearts to GOD *after* becoming Husband & Wife, the Sacrament of Confession (*Verses 16-22* stand for) is our constant backup.

130

Q: What does the *Tenth Commandment* of the Law *(Exodus 20:17* & *Deuteronomy 5:21)* mean?

A: Besides giving a Commandment, these Scriptures help us to hold out against the sin of *envy* and its evil backups & follow-ups: lust, jealousy, adultery, anger, enmity, strife, stealing, corruption, and so forth.

How does it possibly help? In the same way, the Spirit Sword *It Is Written* helped out Jesus to throw off Satan in *Matthew Chapter 4, Verses 4, 7, & 10*.

Now, what about envy? The *world* may teach –

> *Listen, pal, there was a man name Dante, who said that the truly proud man who knew his own worth could never commit the sin of envy, for he could believe that there was no one for him to envy. He might just as well have said that the proud man who knew his own worth would not be susceptible to flattery, for he would believe that there was nothing anybody else could tell him about his own worth he didn't know already.*
>
> *(Robert Penn Warren, All The King's Men, 1974, English Edition, PDF, no page numbers, the passage may be found by the search tool.)*

I liked the above reasoning way back in the world. That's why, there & then, I memorized it, give or take. But after becoming a Christian, there was opened unto me quite a tricky guide in those words, even from envy & flattery to pride – definitely not acceptable.

Now, LORD GOD guides us better: *Charity envieth not ... (1Corinthians 13:4)*

Don't envy sinners. *Proverbs 3:31-32 & 23:17-18*.

Don't underestimate the evil of envy. *Proverbs 27:4 & James 3:16*.

Remember your Divine Provider:

Be careful for nothing;
but in every thing by Prayer and Supplication with Thanksgiving
let your Requests be made known unto GOD. And the Peace of GOD,
which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds
through Christ Jesus. (Philippians 4:6-7)

131

Q: Regarding your being that firm about *capital punishment* we spoke in chapter 95 about, will you take on the job of *Executioner*?

A: It looks like proposing *non-vegetarians* to work *a butchery*.
Yes, I will, on a couple of conditions.

First, it better be a *Christian* country specified in chapter 55.
The *Christian* Court of Justice is to try criminals.
All relevant files should not be classified.
The verdicts are to strictly correspond to the *Law of GOD*.

And it shall be our Righteousness, if we observe to do all these Commandments before the LORD our GOD, as He hath commanded us. (Deuteronomy 6:25)

To do Justice and Judgment is more acceptable to the LORD than Sacrifice. (Proverbs 21:3)

Second, it is either *the direct Will of GOD* for me to do that or, at least, that step of mine does not contradict *His Holy Will*. E.g., In March 2022, I joined Ukrainian Right Sector Corps as a Christian to execute the Russian murderers.

Only be thou Strong and very Courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the Law, which Moses My Servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest ... Have not I commanded thee? Be Strong and of a Good Courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the LORD thy GOD is with thee whithersoever thou goest. (Joshua 1:7,9)

Behold, to obey is better than Sacrifice,
and to hearken than the fat of rams. (1Samuel 15:22)

The steps of a Good man are ordered by the LORD:
and He delighteth in his way. ...
The Law of his GOD is in his heart; none of his steps shall slide.
(Psalms 37:23,31)

See parallel chapters 24 (The Will of GOD for us), 95 (Capital punishment), & 705 (The Executioner).

132

Q: It is written,

Death and Life are in the power of the tongue:
and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof. (Proverbs 18:21)

... the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil,
full of deadly poison. (James 3:8)

Does it mean that our *spirit* has no power over this bodily member?

A: No, it doesn't. The second Scripture relates to those whose hearts are subjected to *Satan*.
When we submit our spirit (heart) to *the Holy Spirit of GOD*, the situation dramatically changes:

Set a Watch, O LORD, before my mouth; keep the door of my lips.
(Psalms 141:3)

We know that whosoever is born of GOD sinneth not; but he that is begotten
of GOD keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. (1John 5:18)

Once, a friend told me the old verse ascribed to *Beth Day (1835)*. By that verse, before spoken up, our thoughts should pass through the Three Golden Gates: the first – "*Is it true?*" the second – "*Is it needful?*" and the third – "*Is it Kind?*"

In his *Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount*, Brother Luther wrote:

> *... if you have the Word of GOD [on your side], then may GOD give you Grace right away to swear, to rebuke, to be angry, and to do all that you can. But whatever is aside from this, not commanded, nor for your neighbor's need or advantage, in that case you should do none of these things. For GOD wants nothing at all that you do of your own motion, without His Sanction, be it what it may, even if one could raise the dead. Much less will He tolerate it, that one should abuse His Name ...*
>
> *(pp 184-185)*

I anticipate how *unbelievers* might react to the above prohibitions. However, our book is written to those who is willing to understand the meaning.

Q: I read somewhere,

"Life teaches, loosing a tongue we compulsory say something which eventually is used against us. Therefore, when you feel talkative, talk to yourself. A sincere conversation makes us open, whereas, in this world, the less frank, the less vulnerable we are."

Do you agree with that?

A: Sure, especially as it runs, "in this world". The rule is simple, sad, and correct. It even reminded me of *Psalm 39:1-2* & *Matthew 7:6*, as for how to direct or stop dead our chats with unbelievers, strangers, scoffers, etc. And, compared to the above worldly observation, how good is our Communion with the Holy Spirit of GOD and Christian Friends, isn't it?

See relevant chapters: 31 (Speaking the Truth in Love),
129 (Ninth Commandment), & 141 (The evil of criticism).

Good reading: *Kenneth Copeland, The Power of The Tongue*

Kindly note all chapters named "Unbelievers ask."
The authors of questions so often don't watch what they speak.

The Bible says,

In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin:
but he that refraineth his lips is wise. (Proverbs 10:19)

The heart of the wise teacheth his mouth, and addeth learning to his lips.
(Proverbs 16:23)

... out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.
(Matthew 12:34)

... every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof
in the Day of Judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified,
and by thy words thou shalt be condemned. (Matthew 12:36-37)

... with the heart man believeth unto righteousness;
and with the mouth Confession is made unto Salvation. (Romans 10:10)

133

Q: Why do people call an unbelieving or doubting man *Thomas*?

A: Good question. I think folks do so ignoring the Warnings given in *Matthew 12:36-37, Romans 2:1*, etc.

In *John 20:27-29,* Lord Jesus admonished Apostle Thomas (and through him many, you & me inclusive) to have more Faith. That's it. Can we leave Brother Thomas alone? Oh no, not so fast. These words of Disciple Thomas became the ground for many unwise remarks spoken by generations of Believers and unbelievers (whether familiar or not with the Scriptures):

Except I shall see in His hands the print of the nails,
and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thrust my hand into His side,
I will not believe. (John 20:25)

Apostle Thomas was not the only one who doubts – you may read *Mark 16:11 & John 20:20* (and watch the reality here & now) – but only his honest words to that effect got noted.
One of my spiritual Teachers – Brother Kenneth Hagin – in his work *The Real Faith,* quoted the above *John 20:25* blaming what he called "Thomas' Faith".
Yet, the Teacher wrote that that kind of Faith most of us, Christians, possessed.
Go on, let's consider *John 20:19-21*:

> *... when the doors were shut where the Disciples were assembled for fear of the Jews, came Jesus and stood in the midst, and saith unto them, Peace be unto you. And when He had so said, He shewed unto them His hands and his side. Then were the Disciples glad, when they saw the Lord. Then said Jesus to them again, Peace be unto you ...*

Call me slow, but could anybody tell me why after three years of daily communicating, Lord Jesus had to show His Friends His wounds for any other reason than their *unbelief* up to a dread? Or maybe, it has always been normal to produce first some ID when visiting our close friends?

The real reason *why* Brother Thomas was thus set up is in *John 20:24*:

But Thomas, one of the Twelve, called Didymus,
was not with them when Jesus came.

I never doubt the Words of our Lord Jesus, Who admonished His Disciple Thomas in *John 20:29*. I believe that Correction stays pertinent for most of us, not that Brother only. Saint Thomas was as much an "unbeliever" or a "doubter" as Saint Peter a "traitor" (see chapter 88).

Amazingly, these other words of Brother Thomas are much less known and, therefore, not favorite or popular at all:

... Let us also go, that we may die with Him. (John 11:16)

In his comments to *Chapter 20 of John*, Brother Barclay wrote:

> *The character of Thomas stands out clear before us. He made one mistake. He withdrew from the Christian Fellowship. He sought loneliness rather than togetherness. And because he was not there with his fellow Christians he missed the first coming of Jesus. We miss a great deal when we separate ourselves from the Christian Fellowship and try to be alone. Things can happen to us within the Fellowship of Christ's Church which will not happen when we are alone. When sorrow comes and sadness envelops us, we often tend to shut ourselves up and refuse to meet people. That is the very time when, in spite of our sorrow, we should seek the Fellowship of Christ's People, for it is there that we are likeliest of all to meet Him face to face. But Thomas had two great Virtues. He absolutely refused to say that he understood what he did not understand, or that he believed what he did not believe. There is an uncompromising Honesty about him. He would never still his doubts by pretending that they did not exist. He was not the kind of man who would rattle off a creed without understanding what it was all about. Thomas had to be sure – and he was quite right ... Thomas' other great Virtue was that when he was sure, he went the whole way. "My Lord and my God!" said he. There was no halfway house about Thomas. He was not airing his doubts just for the sake of mental acrobatics; he doubted in order to become sure; and when he did, his surrender to certainty was complete. And when a man fights his way through his doubts to the conviction that Jesus Christ is Lord, he has attained to a certainty that the man who unthinkingly accepts things can never reach.*
>
> *(William Barclay, The Daily Study Bible)*

Now, according to our Christian belief, Thomas, the Disciple & Apostle of Christ, became His Holy Martyr.

As for myself, I believed only when I had seen & heard (by TV) the Proof, even the *Testimonies* of people healed during Healing Prayer Services of Brethren Morris Cerullo, Benny Hinn, and Kenneth Copeland.
I remember Brother Benny Hinn once said: *This is not the work of a man but the Holy Spirit*. Then I believed, like Brother Thomas.

The references: *Exodus 20:16 & Deuteronomy 5:20* (The Ninth Commandment).
Matthew 7:3 – Mind your business.
1Corinthians 4:5 – Don't play GOD.
Galatians 6:1 – The Right Way.

Q: How can you believe in your heart and be saved, when the heart is deceitful above all things?
See *Romans 10:9* vs *Jeremiah 17:9 (New International Version)*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* September 2020. Condensed.)

A: Let me quote the *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*.

9 The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it? 10 I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings. 11 As the partridge sitteth on eggs, and hatcheth them not; so he that getteth riches, and not by right, shall leave them in the midst of his days, and at his end shall be a fool. (Jeremiah 17:9-11)

... The Word is nigh thee, even in thy mouth, and in thy heart: that is, the Word of Faith, which we preach; 9 That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that GOD hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved. 10 For with the heart man believeth unto Righteousness; and with the mouth Confession is made unto Salvation.
(Romans 10:8-10)

In *Jeremiah 17:9*, we read about the heart of an unbeliever moved by *worldly* reason, the main point of which is explained by *Verse 11*, even getting riches.
In *Romans 10:8-10*, the same ordinary heart is presented with another option: Faith. There are many Scriptures in the Bible supporting this Truth.
For instance,

Behold, I stand at the door, and knock:
if any man hear My Voice, and open the door, I will come in to him,
and will sup with him, and he with Me. (Revelation 3:20)

134

Q: You believe that *GOD's Law* covers every subject of our life, okay.
The question is: by what Commandment the LORD speaks on *Nature*?

A: By the First one:

I am the LORD thy GOD ... Thou shalt have none other gods before Me.
(Exodus 20:2-3 & Deuteronomy 5:6-7)

Regarding Nature, it is also written:

And GOD saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was Very Good.
(Genesis 1:31)

Later on, the Bible said:

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our GOD is One LORD:
And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart,
and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. (Deuteronomy 6:4-5)

Now, it is easy to deduce that to love the LORD, our GOD, we have to love His Great Creation as well, considering His Own Estimation thereof.

The Heavens declare the Glory of GOD;
and the firmament sheweth His Handywork. Day unto day uttereth speech,
and night unto night sheweth knowledge. (Psalms 19:1-2)

See parallel chapters: 28 (The Word about animals),
93 (The First Commandment), & 321 (Our environment).

Watch these movies: *GOD Of Wonders.*
Genesis: Paradise Lost.

Let the Heavens rejoice, and let the Earth be glad; let the sea roar,
and the fulness thereof. Let the field be joyful, and all that is therein:
then shall all the trees of the wood rejoice before the LORD: for He cometh,
for He cometh to judge the Earth: He shall judge the World with Righteousness,
and the people with His Truth. (Psalms 96:11-13)

135

Q: How to differentiate between *Love* & *Charity*?

A: We may first try to define both.

By *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary, 2001,*
Love is *... the Benevolent Affection of GOD for His Creatures, or the Reverent Affection due from them to GOD ...*
Charity is *... generous actions or donations to aid the poor, ill, or helpless ...*
... something given to a person or persons in heed; alms ...
... a Charitable act or work ...
... Benevolent feeling, esp. toward those in need or in disfavor ...

So, we can define *Love* as one of the three* most important Virtues and Power qualities of our *heart* (*spirit*), opening the last to LORD GOD and His Creation. *Charity* is Love in action.
* By *King James Version* of *1Corinthians 13:13*, it is *Faith, Hope, Charity.*

Yet, let us consider other definitions and opinions.

By *Robinson's Theological, Biblical, and Ecclesiastical Dictionary, 1835,*

*Charity is to be understood not of gifts to the poor, though that be one of the external actions of Charity, but of that internal Principle whence proceed all outward Good actions. This Principle is Love, Kindness, Affection, Sympathy. The bases of Charity are Love to GOD, and Good-will to man. These Principles will regulate the mind to Complacency**, Forgiveness, Meekness, and a desire to promote the Welfare of others. Charity views dubious things in the most Favourable light, and never makes the worst of bad things. Charity is not wearied out by disappointed hopes, nor overwhelmed by too plausible fears. It is not satisfied with empty wishes only, but uses endeavours and exertions to accomplish its Benevolent purposes. It is not confined to a family, a tribe, or a nation, but embraces all mankind. In some degree, Charity is rewarded in this world; but in the World to come, it may Justly expect the Most Gracious Remuneration ...*
*Love has been defined a partial leaning of the heart towards a particular object. It is a natural passion of the human mind, given to man for the most important purposes. Though the affections often operate on the mind, yet the conviction of the mind will be found to give the strongest and most lasting bias*** to the affections ...*

Our love of any object is usually preceded by a consciousness, arising from experience or observation, that it possesses some amiable qualities, which spontaneously excite our kind regard; or that Goodness, under some of its various forms, is a prevailing ingredient in its nature, and one of its predominant characteristics.

** By *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary, 2001*, it is (archaic) *friendly civility; inclination to please ...*

*** By *Samuel Johnson's Dictionary of the English Language, 1756,* it is
... Any thing which turns a man to a particular course ... inclination ...

By *Buck's Theological Dictionary, 1826,*

... True Charity is an active principle ... Towards our enemies, it inspires Forgiveness and Humanity ... It prompts corresponding Sympathies with them who rejoice, and them who weep. It teaches us to slight and despise no man. Charity is the Comforter of the afflicted, the Protector of the oppressed, the Reconciler of differences, the Intercessor for offenders. It is Faithfulness in the friend, public Spirit in the magistrate, Equity and Patience in the judge, Moderation in the sovereign, and Loyalty in the subject. In parents it is Care and attention; in children it is Reverence and Submission. In a word, it is the Soul of social life ...

We cannot do great things on this Earth. We can only do little things with great Love. (The words ascribed to *Mother Teresa*).

See relevant chapters: 150 (Compassion) & 534 (*1Corinthians, Chapter 13*).

Good reading: *Kenneth Copeland, Love Never Fails.*
Gloria Copeland, Love – The Secret Of Your Success.
Alex & Stephen Kendrick, The Love Dare.

Q: Is part of God's infinite Love also Love for Himself?. God is Love.
Q: But is this Love also centered around Himself, like all other things?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Edited.)

A: Sorry, but your question looks like whatever but a Christian one.
Kindly read *John 3:16 & 10:11* about the Love of GOD.

136

Q: What does the word *Selah* mean?

A: This search ought to start up from *Dictionaries.*
Of all my sources, I found the following definition the most acceptable.

> *... Selah is both a musical note, and a note of emphasis in the sense, by which we are called to observe something more than usually remarkable. It ... denotes elevation of the voice in singing, and at the same time the lifting of the heart, the serious considering and meditating on the thing that is spoken ... It is highly probable that the meaning here assigned to Selah is the true one, as it corresponds to the Dignity and Chief end of Devotional music, in which the Singers and Players were frequently reminded of the Sacred Intention of their Solemn Prayers, Praises, and Adoration. All were designed to magnify the Name, the Nature, the Perfections, the Excellencies, and Works of LORD, the only True GOD. In this Sublime Exercise the Church on Earth are Fellow-Worshippers, in Perfect Concord with the Church in Heaven ...*
>
> *(Robinson's Theological, Biblical, and Ecclesiastical Dictionary, 1835)*

Let us note the use of *Selah* connected with *Higgaion*:

> *The LORD is known by the Judgment which He executeth: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands. Higgaion. Selah. (Psalms 9:16)*

By *Smith's Bible Dictionary*,

> *Higgaion, or, more accurately, Higgayon ... – to think, to think aloud, to speculate, to speculate philosophically, to separate, to pronounce, to play fantasias ...*
>
> *I wil geue Thankes vnto the LORDE with my whole herte:*
> *Secretly amonge the Faithfull, and in the Congregacion.*
> *(Psalm 111:1, Miles Coverdale Version, 1535)*

Kindly see parallel chapters 83 (New Revelations) & 122 (Researches).

Read about Mystery & Power of Praise in *Psalms 22:3 & 67:5-6.*

137

Q: What is your opinion about the number 666 in *Revelation 13:18*?

A: Studying the Scriptures and reading many commentaries, I daresay that the only Right Teaching we may receive in another Time and from the LORD, our GOD, only. Until then, considering that every Scripture may have more than one meaning & interpretation, all our explanations can be taken up, given they do not contradict the Written Word of GOD and one another. And the best commentaries are those based on the Revelations from GOD.

What I've found so far is the Parallel between *The First Book of Kings* and *The Book of Revelation*.

Now the weight of gold that came to Solomon in one year was six hundred threescore and six talents of gold ... (1Kings 10:14 & 2Chronicles 9:13)

And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: and that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is Wisdom. Let him that hath Understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred threescore and six. (Revelation 13:16-18)

To find this Parallel & Exposition, one does not need to know world history, the names of many hundred years dead Emperors, Pops, and other "fruits" of humankind, Hebrew letters, Roman figures, etc., as that was required for another explanation. What we need is only our Holy Bible.

Sure, we can convert *talents* into *tons of avoirdupois* or whatever else and receive some other figures. But that is not important. The point of *The First Book of Kings Chapter 10* is the Power of GOD-given best-ever intellectual abilities (translated in the Bible as "wisdom"), misdirected to get worldly wealth. Yeah, the last was impressive. One may imagine the fame & envy.

Now, once the first link in the evil chain of misdirection is *mammon*, what next? That wisdom was wasted on the unbelievable crowd of wives – all contrary to *Genesis 2:24*. Per *Ecclesiastes 12:12*, GOD's Gift was silly spilled over the profound knowledge of secondary things. And for what eventually to come up with? Only to find oneself in the dead-end of idolatry. Read *1Kings 11:1-10*. Kindly read the words of Sir Arthur Conan Doyle in chapter 290 (Science).

At the same time, GOD's People Israel lacked Education in the Sacred Fear of the LORD, which such Blessed abilities – given, by the way, as the Answer to a Prayer for a Righteous Reign (see *1Kings 3:5-14*) – ought to be zeroed in at.
Lo, even the King's children were not reared in Righteousness. Look at what happened after Solomon's death: conflict, corruption, and sorrowful split up.
Mind the King's doubts recorded in *Ecclesiastes 2:18-19.*

Now, *Revelation 13:16-18*. The same mammon – the same way of living. How can we possibly live in this godless world without a "mark" on our right hand (the mammon in action) and our foreheads (the mammon in mind)? Satan teaches us all to think and act this way. Therefore, 666 is the label of mammon, our bookmark for future reference. But far be it from us to criticize Brother Solomon or anybody, remembering the own shame.

> You may say that other expositors *counted* 666, whereas I just *bookmarked* it. Okay, we can do count. I have good reason to believe that most Believers ought to compare their monetary income (since the day they have become Christians) and the corresponding Tithes & Offerings (withheld) to find themselves right under that evil label.
> The same is True for Father GOD's other Blessings (kept back as well) – health, intellect, education – you name it. For future Judgment.

Q: At what age does a sin count?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, March 2021. Condensed.)

A: It is written:

> *If a man have a stubborn and rebellious son, which will not obey the voice of his father, or the voice of his mother, and that, when they have chastened him, will not hearken unto them: then shall his father and his mother lay hold on him, and bring him out unto the Elders of his city, and unto the Gate of his place; and they shall say unto the Elders of his city, This our son is stubborn and rebellious, he will not obey our voice; he is a glutton, and a drunkard. And all the men of his city shall stone him with stones, that he die: so shalt thou put evil away from among you; and all Israel shall hear, and fear. (Deuteronomy 21:18-21)*

Per this Scripture, the age at which a child is considered an *intentional* sinner is left with the parents and the Judges. See chapter 78 (The Rod of Correction).

138

Q: What is the meaning of *Hope*?

A: We have to define it first.

By *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary, 2001*,

> *Hope* is *... the feeling that what is wanted can be had or that events will turn out for the best ...*

By *Theological, Biblical, and Ecclesiastical Dictionary by John Robinson, 1835*,

> *Hope is the desire of some Good attended with at least the possibility of obtaining it, and is enlivened with Joy, greater or less, according to the probability of possessing the objects of our Hope. Whatever may be the sufferings in this life to which we are exposed, Hope is the Balm that heals our present woes. Hope, of which those who trust in GOD can never experience the privation, is, in itself, a most pleasurable feeling ...*

We cannot just *believe* in our Salvation – that Treasure is yet to fight for. *Matthew 11:12*. But we should *hope* for it, as we *believe* in the Cross of Christ.

For to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope:
for a living dog is better than a dead lion. (Ecclesiastes 9:4)

Hope is nothing else than perseverance in Faith.
(John Calvin, Comments to 1Corinthians.)

In this regard, we can note the *Parable of the Prodigal Son* (chapter 220).
What is covered by *Luke 15:18-21*, doubtlessly dedicated to *Hope*. Because the son could not and did not believe to be forgiven – he only *hoped* to get accepted as a servant to live in some palatable conditions.

It is wrong to think of Hope as something "always out there in the future". On the contrary, our future is in the right place only when Hope is here & now.

For us Christians, Hope is the expectation of GOD's Promises to be fulfilled. We *trust* Almighty GOD, our Father & Teacher, Loving & Faithful, and therefore, *believe* in the Grace of His Good Guidance to Salvation & Eternal Kingdom.
In the Christian mind, is no place for *doubt* as for the above things.

The closest to Hope stand Love, Faith, Patience, Courage, Joy – the spiritual Powers we are blessed with by the LORD, our GOD.

Yet, every power, physical or spiritual, ought to be maintained & developed.
To strengthen the spirit, we have two proven Sources. The first is *Communion* with GOD (see chapter 32), His Written Word being the integral part thereof. And the second Source is our Christian Living by *following* His Teaching.

... we look not at the things which are seen, but at the Things
which are not seen: for the things which are seen are temporal;
but the Things which are not seen are Eternal. (2Corinthians 4:18)

Kindly see chapters: 444 (Our Spiritual Weapons) & 557 (Faith & Hope).

Further references: *Lamentations 3:21* – Mind & Hope.
Jeremiah 17:7; Tit 2:13; 3:7 – The Life of Hope.
Romans 5:3-5; 8:24-25; 15:4 – The Source of Hope.
2Thessalonians 2:16; 1Peter 1:3 – ditto.
Romans 4:18; Colossians 1:23 – Hope vs common sense.
1Corinthians 13:13 – One of three spirit powers.
1Thessalonians 5:8 – ditto.
1Peter 1:3 – A Lively Hope.

Q: (1) What happens to *atheists* who were forced to be *atheists* or never exposed to Religion, such as people in China? I have been thinking about this and what would be their stake in the *afterlife*.
Q: (2) Will they be sent to *hell*?
Q: (3) Will they be given a chance? Or what?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: (1) Your words “never exposed to Religion” are wrong.
All people *have* their Chance for Salvation. It is written in *Matthew 24:14.*
(2) Nobody is *separated* from the Kingdom of Heaven blindfold.
(3) All *are* given that Chance.

Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My Voice,
and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him,
and He with Me. (Revelation 3:20)

139

Q: Brother, who are your *Spiritual Teachers*?

A: GOD our Father, God Son – our Lord Jesus, God Holy Spirit.
See *Jeremiah 33:3; Matthew 23:8,10; & John 14:26*.

But speaking of people – *Brothers & Sisters in Christ* – my Teachers are those, living or dead, who became Christians earlier than I and got anointed to preach & teach the Word of GOD. You may find their names in this book. I quote their words now & again.
See *Ephesians 4:11-13* speaking about our different Works, Teaching inclusively.

What have they taught me? To think as a Believer should. Every Christian Teacher must *listen* for and *hear* the Message of Truth from the Holy Ghost to pass it on to the next generation of Disciples, who, by the same Spirit, should listen, comprehend, follow, and pass the Truth further on. That is how our Learning & Teaching works. Note well *Isaiah 30:20-21 & Romans 12:2*.

Yet, the distortions made by the devil are inevitable. Even so, we all – Bishops & Pastors, Doctors of Theology & Seminary Students, Teachers & Disciples – are supposed to seek always GOD's direct Guidance (by the same Spirit) when studying His Holy Scriptures. See *Joshua 1:8* & *John 8:31-32*.

At that point, we might do well even to *leave* on our Teachers when seeing they follow denominations, doctrines, traditions, etc., more than LORD GOD. For, Verily, Believers are in no way "obliged" to stay faithful to whosoever or whatsoever – teaching or tradition, Local Church or Christian Order, Ministry or Service – when finding it contradicting or deviating from the Truth.

But the Anointing which ye have received of Him abideth in you,
and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same Anointing
teacheth you of all things, and is Truth, and is no lie,
and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in Him. (1John 2:27)

The Written Word of GOD makes all compromising commitments null & void. Be never afraid to dump all ungodliness.

We should recant our teaching or doctrine when our *conscience* convicted us of wrong interpretation of the Holy Bible and preaching lies. Repent of sin, and the sooner, the better.

I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid.
I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD;
and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah. (Psalms 32:5)

That's why my spiritual Teachers, living or dead, are those I refer to in this Q & A. Some of their words still teach me, and some I had to reject and will never repeat. The Holy Spirit of GOD Himself teaches us through Pastors, Teachers, and all our Friends in Christ Jesus we communicate with.

Yet, as I've already pointed out, the distortions of Satan come over now & again. Listen to the Holy Ghost always.

For as many as are led by the Spirit of GOD, they are the Sons of GOD.
(Romans 8:14)

See relevant chapters: 242 (Switching Congregations), 304 (Be not called Rabbi), & 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit).

Q: (1) Do I have to worry about choosing the wrong version of Christianity?. There are different branches of Christianity: Methodist, Pentecostal, and more. All of these versions are under the same Religion. Now, for example, I believe in the Methodist way. (2) What may happen when I die and find out that the Pentecostal way was the "correct" version of Christianity?

Q: (3) Will I go to hell despite my belief in GOD? I might follow the wrong practices, but I still believed and accepted Christ in my Life.
It also runs into a similar question –

Q: (4) Do I have to worry about trusting a "wrong" interpretation of the Bible?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: (1-2) Please see the right from the wrong "version of Christianity" through the Written Word of GOD only. Note well *2Timothy 2:5-8*.
The same is correct regarding the Local Christian Congregation you may choose. Have a look at chapter 242.
(3) Please read *James 2:19-20* and put your *following* above your *believing*. You may note chapters 40 & 41 and read chapter 461.
(4) The *interpretation of the Bible* is a good point. You have not got to trust whosoever with your Salvation & Life Eternal. Read *Matthew 15:14*.
Study the Holy Bible and take the LORD GOD at His Word, written in *Jeremiah 33:3*. Refer to chapter 32 (Communion with GOD). Godspeed.

140

Q: How to interpret *Matthew 23:9?*

A: It is all about the *Title* of Highest Honor & Praise –

And call no man your Father upon the Earth:
for One is your Father, which is in Heaven. (Matthew 23:9)

You & I have to comprehend that we, humans, (by the Grace, Will, and Wisdom of GOD) may give birth to the *flesh* only, not to spirit & soul. The only Author & Maker of the latter two is the LORD, our GOD.

> *The True meaning, therefore, is, that the honor of a father is falsely ascribed to men when it obscures the Glory of GOD ...*
>
> *(John Calvin, Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists, Matthew, Mark, and Luke, vol.3, p.80)*

I believe the Title *Father* (so firmly laid down in the Catholic & Orthodox Churches) might be used only when the Spiritual Fatherhood of GOD via that Servant of His is personally experienced.
Otherwise, may we call him "Brother" as per *Matthew 23:8.*
Not agree? Consider well *Matthew 12:36-37* and suit yourself.

Apostle Paul wrote,

I write not these things to shame you, but as my Beloved Sons I warn you.
For though ye have ten thousand Instructors in Christ, yet have ye not many Fathers: for in Christ Jesus I have begotten you through the Gospel.
Wherefore I beseech you, be ye followers of me. (1Corinthians 4:15)

Kindly see chapters 164 (Parents) & 304 (Be not called Rabbi).

The LORD hath chastened me sore:
but He hath not given me over unto death. (Psalms 118:18)

Thou shalt call Me, My Father; and shalt not turn away from Me.
(Jeremiah 3:19)

Be ye therefore Followers of GOD, as Dear Children ... (Ephesians 5:1)

Q: Could you please explain the Will of GOD in *Judges 7:5-7*?

A: Let us read the Scripture as the *Expanded Bible* runs it.

> *5 So Gideon led the men down to the water. There the LORD said to him, "Separate them into those who drink water by lapping it up like a dog [with cupped hand making a bowl] and those who bend down [kneel] to drink [with faces in the water]." 6 There were three hundred men who used their hands to bring water to their mouths, lapping it as a dog does [lapping]. All the rest got down on their knees [kneeled] to drink. 7 Then the LORD said to Gideon, "Using the three hundred men who lapped the water, I will save you and hand Midian over to you [give the Midianites into your hand]. Let all the others go home." (Judges 7:5-7, Expanded Bible)*

Imagine soldiers spiritually & physically strong, not exhausted by a long walk, who bent to grab a bit of water and were ready to go on, and those spiritually weak and bodily tired, falling on their knees before water to drink.
In his respective comments, Brother Thomas Scott wrote:

> *TSB: ... Perhaps they were led to the water after the fatigue of a long march, under the idea that they were going directly to attack the enemy. It seems to have been customary for them to drink as the cattle do, by putting their mouths down to the water, and drawing it in ; but they who only took a little into their hands, and sucked it up, (as dogs are remarked to lap a little water hastily), might be supposed to be less enslaved to their appetite, more able to endure hardship, and more eager to engage. It may be presumed that most of this very small company, by whom GOD was pleased to save Israel, were men of genuine Faith and Piety, as well as of steady Courage ...*

All that was sequential to the Holy Will of GOD stated in *Verse 2*:

And the LORD said unto Gideon, The people that are with thee are too many for Me to give the Midianites into their hands, lest Israel vaunt themselves against Me, saying, Mine own hand hath saved me. (Judges 7:2)

And the above is supported by the Lord's Prayer:

Our Father Who art in Heaven, Hallowed be Thy Name.
... Thine is the Kingdom, and the Power, and the Glory, for ever. Amen.
(Matthew 6:9,13)

141

Q: How do you understand *Romans 2:1*?

A: Foremost, it is GOD's Warning against the satanic attitude of *criticism* indwelling our hearts.

Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest:
for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself;
for thou that judgest doest the same things. (Romans 2:1)

Reading the Bible, we are tempted to criticize the People of Israel for so many a time provoking GOD to Anger by their betrayals. But shall we forget *our* manifold sins & falls before and, especially, after becoming Christians?

Looking back upon my life, I can but agree with the above Scripture.

Years ago, I served with Mercy Ships in Mission to Sierra Leon 2001-2002. In a casual conversation, I spoke something negative about *Watchtower Witnesses*. (Let me omit their official name for fear of the Third Commandment.) A friend of mine answered something like, "Why do you speak of them so? Thanks to *them*, I became a Christian and got here."

Once, arguing with my colleague – he belonged to *an Orthodox Church* – I used quite a commonplace gesture pointing at him with a forefinger. I keep off that body talk ever since, but back then, the Orthodox Brother told me: "Pal, look at your hand – you are pointing at me with *one* finger, whereas *three* are pointing at you."

Q: Apparently, you don't like to be criticized, do you?

A: No, I don't. What about you? Show me anyone who says,
"I like to be criticized", and I show you a *liar*.
(You may like the book of *Richard Carlson, Don't Sweat The Small Stuff.*)
The reason is simple: criticism opposes our human nature.
Whether Believers or atheists, we all are created in the Image & Likeness of the LORD. Watching our spiritual failures, we can see, the moment we start to criticize, foolishness & division "jump in" being that tricky linked up.

Kindly note that there is a difference between worldly criticism and Correction or Admonishing in the Church of GOD.

The *unbelievers* so often are quick to speak like,
"fool, you are doing this not the way normal people do",
whereas *Christians* (ought to) use such an argument as *It is written ...*

Brethren, if any man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are Spiritual,
restore such an one in the Spirit of Meekness; considering thyself,
lest thou also be tempted. (Galatians 6:1)

I guess the following are logical conclusions.

1. Pray for more Wisdom to withstand any temptation to criticize.

If any of you lack Wisdom, let him ask of GOD, that giveth to all men Liberally,
and upbraideth not; and it shall be given him. (James 1:5)

2. Do contrary to the lie of the devil.

This Book of the Law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt
meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to
all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy Way Prosperous,
and then thou shalt have Good Success. (Joshua 1:8)

3. Silence yourself when not directed by the Holy Ghost to the contrary.

In the multitude of words there wanteth not sin:
but he that refraineth his lips is Wise. (Proverbs 10:19)

4. Confession is a tested spiritual brush against criticism.

If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the Truth is not in us.
If we confess our sins, He is Faithful and Just to forgive us our sins,
and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned,
we make Him a liar, and His Word is not in us. (1John 1:8-10)

Further references: *Proverbs 16:23 & Matthew 12:34* – The heart & mouth.
Isaiah 50:4 – Pray to get Learned.
Matthew 7:3-5 – The folly of criticism.
Matthew 12:36-37 – The Account in Judgment.
1Corinthians 4:5 & Jude 1:9 – Judgment belongs to GOD.
James 4:11-12 – Criticism is forbidden.

142

Q: How to relate these two Scriptures:

And ye shall not swear by My Name falsely, neither shalt thou profane the Name of thy GOD: I am the LORD. (Leviticus 19:12)

Thou shalt fear the LORD thy GOD, and serve Him, and shalt swear by His Name. (Deuteronomy 6:13)

A: By *Noah Webster's Dictionary* (1908, 1911), *swear = ... to make a Solemn Declaration by appealing to GOD for the Truth of what is affirmed ...*

To obey *Leviticus 19:12,* we should follow *Deuteronomy 6:13* – first, in Sacred Fear of the LORD, our GOD, and second, by serving Him wholeheartedly to be filled by His Holy Spirit. This way, we have a Right to *swear** by the Name Most Holy without any danger to profane but glorify it.

* I understand "swear" only this way: state His Most Holy Name along with the Statement of Truth in your *Prayer Closet* or before the most Trustful Friend(s) in Christ. Otherwise, say "GOD" or "LORD" when preaching or communicating.

I wil geue Thankes vnto the LORDE with my whole herte: Secretly amonge the Faithfull, and in the Congregacion. (Psalm 111:1, Miles Coverdale Version, 1535)

See relevant chapters: 22 (Third Commandment), 75 (Giving Glory to GOD), 200 (The Praise of GOD), & 691 (The Name Most Holy).

... ye heard that it was said to the ancients: Thou shalt not swear falsely, but thou shalt pay to the LORD thine oaths; but I – I say to you, not to swear at all; neither by the Heaven, because it is the Throne of GOD, nor by the Earth, because it is His Footstool, nor by Jerusalem, because it is a City of a Great King, nor by thy head mayest thou swear, because thou art not able one hair to make white or black; but let your word be: yes – Yes, no – No*, and that which is more than these is of the evil. (Matthew 5:33-37, Young's Literal Translation)*

* The spelling & punctuation corrected.

But above all things, My Brethren, swear not, neither by Heaven, neither by the Earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea be Yea; and your nay, Nay; lest ye fall into condemnation. (James 5:12)

143

Q: How to stay Obedient to the LORD, our GOD, in a rebellious country?

A: In chapter 40, we spoke on the subject of *compromise* and found the last impossible as per *Hebrews 6:4-6.*

Now, it is written:

My son, fear thou the LORD and the King:
and meddle not with them that are given to change ... (Proverbs 24:21)

My sonne, feare the LORD, and the King, & medle not
with them that are sedicious. (Proverbs 24:21, Geneva Bible, 1569)

The governments & laws make the countries we live in the *non-Christian* ones.
But the Scriptures give us the reason why: it is *our sins*.
See *Nehemiah 9:37 & Hosea 13:11*.
Our being Christians now does not make much difference to the present state of things – most of us were & still are the sinful investors therein.

Note,

When Faith becomes Obedience, then it is True Faith indeed.
(A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)

Romans 13:1-7 teaches us Obedience. However, when it comes to either following the Law of LORD GOD or that of the country, we have no other option – GOD First, no matter what.

No man can serve two masters ... (Matthew 6:24)

Remember the first Question of the LORD recorded in the Holy Scriptures:

And GOD saw the Light that it was Good: and GOD divided the Light from the darkness ... And the LORD GOD called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? (Genesis 1:4 & 3:9)

The following Scriptures teach us about Christian Living:

Exodus 23:2, Deuteronomy 5:32-33, Acts 5:29, & 2Corinthians 6:14.

144

Q: How to define the *Fear of GOD*?

A: I define Fear of GOD as the state of a human heart (united with and subordinate to the *Holy Ghost*, by Whom it is) blessed with Love, Reverence, and Obedience to the LORD GOD.

That *Sacred Fear* has nothing in common with the *fear* (*dread*) we might experience in the natural, for,

> *There is no fear in Love; but Perfect Love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made Perfect in Love. (1John 4:18)*

The Fear of the LORD is associated with our deep spiritual recognition of unlimited and unsearchable Love, Wisdom, and Power of GOD, and therefore, tightly bound with Faith & Righteousness.

Fearing the LORD, we fear losing our Heavenly Father, the Teacher of Wisdom, and get off the Right Track. Therefore, Christians need the constant Guidance of His Holy Spirit. Fearing to become powerless against temptations, we ought to diligently feed and train our spirit from two Great Sources: Bible Study and Obedient following the Written Word of GOD. That motivates all our Christian Works, Worship, and Communion with Heavenly Father.

The Sacred Fear of GOD prohibits us from questioning Him, commanding us instead to stand immovable upon His Word. That Great Blessing sorts out everything in our life, removing old priorities. The Fear of Father GOD is incompatible with such spiritual dung as pride, dignity, prestige, etc.

GOD-fearing Believer is concerned about his Friends in Christ, Congregation, and the Church of GOD. For we are not independent Servants, neither there are any “free” Churches, but *One* Body of Christ by the Sacred Will of the LORD.

Kindly note how Christian Teachers defined the Fear of GOD.

> *... that Holy Affection wrought in men’s soul by the Holy Ghost, as a Spirit of Adoption, whereby it is inclined and disposed, kindly to regard GOD’s Authority, obey His Commandments, and hate and avoid whatever is sinful ... (Dictionary of the Holy Bible by John Brown, 1789)*

... The Fear of the LORD is the Beginning of Wisdom (Psalms 111:10) and to fear GOD, and keep His Commandments, is the whole Duty of man (the Book of Ecclesiastes 12:13). It deserves notice, that True Religion is more frequently described as the Fear of GOD in the Old Testament than in the New ... (Calmet's Dictionary of the Holy Bible, 1832)

... It refers to Awe and Reverence for Piety rather than to dread of GOD. The Love of GOD is not so plainly revealed in the Old Testament as in the New. The attributes of GOD's Holiness and Power are most strongly emphasized. Hence the frequent exhortation to fear GOD ...
(Dictionary of the Bible by Philip Schaff, 1885)

Q: Is there a difference between the *Fear of GOD* and the *fear of hell*?
Q: If so, what is it?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: To know the difference, we are going to have to define both subjects.
The *Fear of GOD* we clarified above, and *hell* in chapter 8.
Note the definition for hell offered by Brother John Calvin:

"... a dreadful torment, which no man can now comprehend, and no language can express ..."

So, the fear of such a destiny is understandable too.

Q: (1) How to distinguish Works (Old Testament) vs Grace (New Testament)?
Q: (2) Shall we still follow all 600+ Laws & 10 Commandments?
Q: (3) How do you distinguish the Law of the Old Testament from Grace?
Q: (4) How to balance God's Grace & Old Testament Laws?
(Signed: *Christian (non-denominational)*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021. Edited.)

A: (1) Kindly see them both as two aspects of One Law of GOD.
(2) Yes, we should. Kindly remove the Holy Commandments, as well as the Rules prohibiting sexual perversions, from questioning. As for the Animal Sacrifices, Ceremonies, Festivals, &c., – they are substituted, not revoked.
(3) I see Grace as the Power to follow the Law of GOD. Read chapter 322.
(4) You may refer to chapter 192 (The Law & Grace).
Please also visit our Index section.
Thank you.

145

Q: In His Sermon on the Mount, Christ Jesus more than once said, "*But I say unto you ...*"
Do these Words mean that He altered, corrected, or amended what had been written in the *Old Testament Scriptures*?

A: Negative on that. Lord Jesus said,

> *Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For Verily I say unto you, Till Heaven and Earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least Commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of Heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called Great in the Kingdom of Heaven. (Matthew 5:17-19)*

As for His Words "*But I say unto you ...*" – it was GOD's Correction to the common wrong understanding of the Holy Scriptures based upon false interpretations of the then Teachers of the Law. Our Lord used these Words on many occasions.

Thus, the Christ of GOD spoke *But I say unto you ...* , and taught:

in *Matthew 5:21-22*, on the danger of the *evil spirit of enmity* corrupting a heart;
in *Matthew 5:27-28*, on the right definition of *adultery* indwelling human heart;

in *Matthew 5:31-32*, on the *sin* of *adultery* ever-present in every *divorce*;
in *Matthew 5:33-37*, on the power of our words, vows, and promises;

in *Matthew 5:38-42*, on resisting *evil spirits*, not their *blind* human puppets;
in *Matthew 5:43-48*, on seeing our real *enemy*, not those we've used to;

in *Matthew 11:20-24*, on *Repentance*, ignored along with the Power of GOD;
in *Matthew 12:1-8*, on Himself as the Lord of the *Sabbath*;

in *Matthew 12:36*, on our *Account* for every idle word in the Day of Judgment;
in *Matthew 17:12*, on the fulfillment of Holy Scriptures in *John the Baptist*;

in *Matthew 26:29*, on His abstaining from *wine* until the Kingdom of Heaven;
in *Mark 9:13*, on Brother *John the Baptist*, as in *Matthew 17:12*;

in *Luke 6:27-36*, on so-called *enemies*, as in *Matthew 5:43-48*;
& in *Luke 10:10-12*, on the Right way to answer when *Truth* is not received.

Q: In the *Book of Jude*, there is a Passage that briefly mentions an incident where Michael the Archangel battled Satan over Moses' body.
Please explain.

(Signed: *Christian, Evangelical.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

... these filthy dreamers defile the flesh, despise Dominion, and speak evil of Dignities. Yet Michael the Archangel, when contending with the devil he disputed about the body of Moses, durst not bring against him a railing accusation, but said, The Lord rebuke thee.

(The General Epistle Of Jude, 1:8-9)

In the *General Epistle of Jude*, I can see the following two points.
The first: the Apocryphal Book this Verse stands on, is accepted as True.
And the second: we should wholeheartedly trust LORD GOD, our Judge.
Please see *Romans 12:19 & 1Corinthians 4:5*.
Thanks for the question.

Q: Does the Bible prophesy a one-world government and a one-world currency in the end times?

A: No, it does not.
Possibly, the inquirer means what is written in *Revelation 13:16-18*.

16 And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: 17 And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. 18 Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is six hundred threescore and six. (Revelation 13:16-18)

This Scripture is about Satan. We discussed his evil being in chapter 36.
Here, the Word of GOD summarizes all the satanic works on humanity written and warned on throughout the Bible. *And there is no new thing under the Sun*.
Please read about the number 666 in chapter 137.

146

Q: Brother, let's follow up on chapter 145 and discuss *Matthew 5:39*.

A: As we have already made clear in the previous conversation, the Scripture is all about *Spirit War* matters.
Let me start from the preceding *Verse 38*.

38 Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth. 39 But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. (Matthew 5:38-39)

An eye for an eye principle was (and still is) commanded by these Scriptures:
Exodus 21:24-25 – the penalty imposed is to correspond to the damage done;
Leviticus 24:17-22 – the same but in a more detailed way;
Deuteronomy 19:16-21 – how to deal with a false witness.

The above three references were GOD's Ordinances for *Judges* regarding how to conduct their business, not commoners thinking themselves qualified to judge.
What Lord Jesus clarified in *Verse 39* went deeper and concerned with the correction of hearts where the evil dwelt. Because, notwithstanding all worldly reasoning to the contrary, we, Christians, are not supposed to fight back our offenders any other way but with the Spirit Sword – *It Is Written.*
Kindly note that the Words of *Matthew 5:38-39* have nothing to do with cowardice nor excuse the last.
By *Verse 38*, men of Authority are reminded about Justice over criminals, whereas *Verse 39* teaches us how to exterminate the crime. See chapter 358.

Q: (1) *The First Corinthians* touches the Gifts of the Spirit. So, for the Gift of tongues, what is your take on it?
Q: (2) Is it okay to pray in tongues alone?
Q: (3) And what is the Gift of Prophecy Apostle Paul wants us to ask for?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) You can read about the Gift of tongues in *1Corinthians Chapter 14*.
We discussed it in chapter 179. Please take a look.
I use this Gift in Prayers & Intercessions with the laying on of hands.
(2) It *is* correct to pray in tongues in your Prayer Room. See *Matthew 6:6*.
(3) Take the Gift of Prophesy (*1Corinthians 14:1*) *literally*. Thus we can hear the Voice of GOD clear, which is the best way to commune with Him.

147

Q: How to comprehend *intuition?*

A: By *Webster's Dictionary (2001)*, it is,
... direct perception of truth, fact, etc., independent of any reasoning process, immediate apprehension ... the quality or ability of having such direct perception or quick insight ...

I believe *intuition* is the Voice of the Spirit since,

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above, and cometh down from the Father of Lights, with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. (James 1:17)

As for the first mention of that Gift, which is still in power,
we can see it in *Genesis 3:15* –

And I will put Enmity between thee and the Woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel.

Many Educators commented on this Passage as having something to do with Mary, the Mother of Jesus – our Blessed Lord – and all Christians as her Seed. However, Christ Jesus was called the Son of David (his seed) or the Son of GOD (His Seed) and never "Son of Mary" (her seed). His human genealogy is shown at the beginning of the Gospels by *Matthew* & *Luke*, with no women mentioned. Besides, there should have been about 4.000 years (!) passed until Christian Church founded, viz., quite a "dead time" for the Promise of GOD to be fulfilled (per *Galatians 4:4*). What did we have to suffer in the meantime?

In our Bible, many Passages have more than one meaning (not contradicting one another, of course). That's why the following brief may be the Parallel Truth.

LORD GOD is Love, and even punishing He provides us the way out of the curse we deserve. GOD is also Spirit. When (in the above-quoted *Genesis 3:15*) He said *Enmity*, it was the serious, spiritual, irrevocable, long-term business – much the same as our spiritual *Dominion* over the Earth as per *Genesis 1:26,28*.

Seed in the Bible is used, generally, as belonging to men, not women.
And, once the LORD, our GOD, said *her seed*, it means something exclusive, concerning women only & collectively.

Women (Exclude those possessed by the devil. That evil, praise the LORD, is not commonplace. Cf., *Acts 5:1-10*.) – mothers, sisters, wives – loving their families & homes, from that historical moment forward, have been blessed with *intuition*. Like every other Blessing, it was far not always embraced, valued, praised, and employed.
This Gift enables a woman to ever feel, i.e., *hear* the Warning of the Holy Ghost on a danger approaching, or else when some wrong decision is about to be taken by her husband, brother(s), or children. Cf., *Matthew 27:19*.

The devil, wiser than any human being, can plan and set around his traps against people expertly, but that (Holy Spirit's Unction via) woman's intuition can mess all that up. The demons can never win if their approach is not in secret. Why? Just because the LORD had said so in *Genesis 3:15*.
Let's compare the devil's many thousand years of age & experience to that of an ordinary woman – unbelievable! But thus saith the LORD: *Enmity* – that is, the spiritual combat of the enemies worthy of one another. That's why Satan's head is to ache forever: *he doth bruise thee – the head (Young's Literal Translation).*
As for a woman, she is to encounter the evil attacks, which will ever steal her peace & rest: *thou dost bruise him – the heel (Young's Literal Translation).*
Well, except the case of *1John 5:18* –

We know that whosoever is born of GOD sinneth not; but he that is begotten of GOD keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not.

We can also consider our history: who are political leaders, kings, warriors? – men. Women have always been a small percent in those professions. Men are traditionally called "defenders" as (spiritually blind) they take up the weapons of war to "defend" their lands against other (spiritually blind) guys led by the devil.
Look at our children: boys like to play with toy weapons – girls play mothers to the dolls. Boys – not girls – for the most part, are engaged in street fights.
So, from kindergarten strife to a bloody battlefield, *who* – men or women are fooled around by Satan? How can we forget *Proverbs 22:6*?

According to *Genesis 3:13*, Eve, yet far from Righteousness, didn't blame GOD or Adam. Could it, to some extent, "patch up" the situation? Hardly. But the LORD could not overlook her heart attitude.
Thus the "weak" half of humankind was well strengthened against Satan.

They say that behind every successful man, there is a great woman.
(Morris Cerullo, Son, Build Me an Army, p.127)

148

Q: I heard somebody taught that it was wrong to comment any *Verse* of the Bible separated from the *Chapter* where it belongs. What do you think about that?

A: To some extent, it is correct. But it is not the whole story.

The thing is, that Chapters & Verses, as they are now, however most useful & needful for Bible Study, do not belong to the *original* Manuscripts.

The Chapter division was developed by Brother Stephen Langton, in the 13th century, and Verses were first marked off by Brethren Robert Estienne (Stephanus) & William Whittingham in the 16th century.

Kindly refer to *Encyclopedia of Religion*, NY, 1945, pages 137 & 811.

That's why it is better not to say that some *Verse* was picked from its *Chapter* but operate such terms as *Scripture* & *context* instead.

We should also remember that Scriptures may carry more than one meaning (without mutual contradictions) as the LORD, our Father, by the Apostle Paul's Epistle, made clear:

For it is written in the Law of Moses, Thou shalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth GOD take care for oxen?*
Or saith He it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, this is written: that he that ploweth should plow in Hope; and that he that thresheth in Hope should be partaker of his Hope. (1Corinthians 9:9-10)

* See *Deuteronomy 25:4.*

Many *Scriptures* may be taken both within and without the *context*.

Seek ye out of the Book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail, none shall want her mate: for My Mouth it hath commanded, and His Spirit it hath gathered them. (Isaiah 34:16)

Please, note the words of Master Luther in "Q & A" chapter 102 (The Strategy).

149

Q: What is the reason for and the meaning of *circumcision*?

A: They say that, by modern scientific discoveries, *physical circumcision* does nothing wrong unto a male's body.* Hygienically, as well as sexually, it's even useful. Neither does it any harm to an eight-days-old baby since that time was confirmed best for the procedure.
(* Some idiots do that to females also. No comments. <*https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Female_genital_mutilation*> June 2026).

Well, if scientists & doctors do say so, the Bible confirms that. No vice versa. Now, thus saith the LORD:

> *This is My Covenant, which ye shall keep, between Me and you and thy seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised. And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a Token of the Covenant betwixt Me and you. And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of thy seed. He that is born in thy house, and he that is bought with thy money, must needs be circumcised: and My Covenant shall be in your flesh for an Everlasting Covenant. And the uncircumcised man child whose flesh of his foreskin is not circumcised, that soul shall be cut off from his People; he hath broken My Covenant. (Genesis 17:10-14)*

In the above Scripture, we ought to note the following important points:

1. The Covenant is *Everlasting.* See chapter 516 (The Everlasting Covenant).
2. The Covenant Token of Circumcision is to be made on *males* only.
3. GOD's People of *all* nations are to obey the Covenant.

Now it happened at the lodging place, that the LORD met Moses and sought to kill him [making him deathly ill because he had not circumcised one of his sons]. Then Zipporah took a flint knife and cut off the foreskin of her son and threw it at Moses' feet, and said, "Indeed you are a Husband of blood to me!" So He let Moses alone [to recover]. At that time Zipporah said, "You are a Husband of blood" – because of the Circumcision. (Exodus 4:24-26, Amplified Bible)

Kindly note that even in so-called Old Testament times, the physical circumcision was taught to be but a Sign for a *circumcised heart.*

Please, note the Scriptures: *Deuteronomy 10:16; 30:6; & Jeremiah 4:4; 9:25-26.*

In accordance with the Teaching of our Lord Jesus Christ – *Matthew 22:37-40; Mark 12:29-31 & Luke 10:26-28* – the following Scriptures confirm the Eternal Covenant of Circumcised heart for *Christians* –

Romans 2:28-29; Corinthians 7:19; Galatians 5:6 & 6:16;
Philippians 3:3; & Colossians 2:11.

Q: What are your thoughts on stem cell research?.
(1) I'm a Christian. But this is such a debated and touchy subject that I am curious about. Both sides have huge pros and cons.
Q: (2) On one hand, stem cells can completely change people's lives and solve medical problems.
Q: (3) But on the other hand, the cost of it is the soon-to-be lives of the fetuses.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1) If you are a Christian, kindly leave researches & researchers alone. And pay no attention to every "touchy subject" (orchestrated by professor Satan) that comes over again & again to make us "curious" and doubt the Word of GOD.

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing
that exalteth itself against the Knowledge of GOD, and bringing into captivity
every thought to the Obedience of Christ ... (2Corinthians 10:5)

(2) Kindly note the Opinion of our LORD GOD as to what "can completely change people's lives & solve medical problems".

And ye shall serve the LORD your GOD, and He shall bless thy bread,
and thy water; and I will take sickness away from the midst of thee.
(Exodus 23:25)

(3) Please read the following is about "the cost":

Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not Bread? and your labour for that which satisfieth not? hearken diligently unto Me, and eat ye that which is Good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness. (Isaiah 55:2)

150

Q: What is the Christian meaning of *Compassion*?

A: Let me first refer to these two Dictionaries.

> By *Webster's Dictionary (2001),*
> *Compassion is a feeling of deep sympathy and sorrow for another who is stricken by misfortune, accompanied by a strong desire to alleviate the suffering.*
>
> By *Theological Dictionary of Charles Buck (1826),*
> *Compassion is that species of affection which is excited either by the actual distress of its object, or by some impending calamity which appears inevitable.*

In the Preface to his famous novel – *Impatience Of The Heart* (a.k.a., *Beware Of Pity*) – Stefan Zweig wrote about two kinds of Compassion. He defined the first one as but *impatience of the heart*, running away from seeing the neighbor's suffering. And there is another one – *active, demanding a sacrifice*.

In chapter 135, we made clear that *Love* is one of the GOD-given Power qualities of our spirit. Consequently, *Compassion* (active, as in the above paragraph) might be well defined as a sure indicator of Love.

We are made in the Image & Likeness of the LORD GOD (*Genesis 1:26-27*).
He is Love *(1John 4:8,16)* and full of *C*ompassion *(Psalm 86:15; 111:4; 112:4; 145:8; &c.)*.
Therefore, seeing in ourselves or others the Compassion defective, selective, or compromising – be sure that the evil one is at work on that heart.

1John 4:7 directs our Love toward one another. That ought to be taken seriously. The problems & troubles of our Friends in Christ and neighbors should be dealt with as our very own.

Moreover, considering "Q & A" chapter 28, dealing with animals, and the relevant Scriptures, we are not supposed to be either cruel or negligent toward those creatures of the LORD, our GOD, as well.

The following Scriptures tell us more on the subject of Compassion.

Exodus 33:19 & Romans 9:15 – By the Holy Will of LORD GOD.
2Chronicles 30:9 – the LORD's Compassion for our Repentance.
Psalms 78:38 – GOD's Compassion is far above human reason.
Lamentations 3:22,32; Daniel 9:9-10; & Micah 7:10 – ditto
Psalm 86:15, 111:4, 112:4, & 145:8 – the LORD is full of Compassion.
Matthew 18:12 – Compassion is normal for every human being.
Matthew 9:36 & Mark 6:34 – Compassion was a Core of Jesus' Ministry.
Luke 10:29-37 – the Parable of Good Samaritan – Example of Compassion.
Luke 15:11-32 – the Parable of Prodigal Son – Father GOD's Compassion.
Matthew 14:14, 15:32-38, & 20:30-34 – The Miracle-Working Compassion.
Mark 1:40-42, 6:34-44, 8:2-9, Luke 7:12-15, & John 11:32-44 – ditto
1Peter 3:8 – Compassion is ordained by our GOD to Christians.

Q: What happens to psychopaths after death?.
Psychopaths (as I define them) are those born without any moral compass and emotions. They hurt people just for amusement. They don't do this because they like it or hate a person. Killing people gives them an adrenaline kick, and they have gotten themselves addicted to that. They harm folks, but they don't do it out of the ill will. They don't feel bad for their actions, but that's because they physically can't. It's like they were born to go to hell, but at least to me, that doesn't seem very fair.
Q: Do these kinds of psychopaths go to Heaven or hell?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020. Condensed.)

A: To begin with, a person, who is born with that disease, should stay in a *mental hospital* to prevent any harm. There are people responsible for that, e.g., kin, neighbors, authorities.
There is no sin where the mind is sick. Thus, that person's destiny is Heaven. I can't say the same about the *ancestors* who sowed the evil seeds in such a mentally disordered person's life.
Matthew 10:8 commands Christians to try their best to help.
Please see the Index section for more references.

Q: How can you be prepared for the Rapture?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: What I can do to be thus prepared is keeping Faith and proving the latter by Good Works. Those Works the Holy Ghost appoints & does through me. That is the best way to follow *Luke 15:20*.
Good question. Thank you.

151

Q: It is written:

Seek ye the LORD while He may be found,
call ye upon Him while He is near: let the wicked forsake his way,
and the unrighteous man his thoughts: and let him return unto the LORD,
and He will have Mercy upon him; and to our GOD,
for He will abundantly pardon. (Isaiah 55:6-7)

The question is: how to seek the LORD GOD?

A: This good question may only mean the deep need for GOD and *Communion with Him*, the subject discussed in chapters 32, 104, & 181. Please also note that the answer is in the same Scripture.

First: *let the wicked forsake his way.*
Believers might also see themselves as the *wicked* in this Scripture. Why? Read *1John 1:8-10*. Therefore, may we find the evil way(s) of ours – every *compromise* in spiritual matters, empty talks, shameful deeds, robbing GOD (of time & money Sacrifices), unfaithfulness to our families, &c., &c. All that separate us from the LORD, our GOD.

Second: *and the unrighteous man his thoughts.*
Behold your "secret" thoughts. Mind your mind!

Third: *and let him return unto the LORD.*
Isaiah 55:6-7 is the Call to unbelievers to return unto their Heavenly Father. Read *the Parable of the Prodigal Son* (*Luke 15:11-32*). *Verse 20* is the key there. In *Godly Sorrow,* the people should come to the LORD with *Confession*. That topic was dealt with in chapter 19 (Confession – spiritual cleansing).

These three steps explain the Words, *Seek ye the LORD while He may be found, call ye upon Him while He is near*.

And when the above steps are made, the following Promise is most expected to come, even – *He will have Mercy upon him ... He will abundantly pardon.*

Now, it is written:

I am sought of them that asked not for Me;
I am found of them that sought Me not: I said, Behold Me, behold Me,
unto a nation that was not called by My Name. (Isaiah 65:1)

It means that *National Repentance* is always possible for literally every nation, even a godless one. Please see chapter 163 for more.

See parallel chapters: 19 (Confession – spiritual cleansing), 73 (True Fast), 239 (Seek His Face), & 477 (*Isaiah 58:6-14*).

The relevant Scriptures: *Psalms 9:10 & Hebrews 11:6* – Seek Him Faithfully.
Jeremiah 29:13 – Seek wholeheartedly.
Matthew 6:33 – Seek the Kingdom & Righteousness.
Matthew 7:7 – Seek, and ye shall find.
Luke 12:31 – Seek the Kingdom of GOD.
Luke 15:11-32 – The Parable of the Prodigal Son.
Acts 17:27 – He is not far from every one of us.

Q: How to believe?. I've tried so many times. I prayed, went to Church, opened my heart, etc. I was raised in the Church and now sit here at 30, and the only thing I've ever felt or heard from God is crickets.
I truly believe Religion is not for some people.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: Make sure that "etc." in your question includes a Christian Ministry.
Only there you may find good Christian Friends, Communion, and Works.
Please visit the Index section of this book. Godspeed.

Q: (1) Why does it happen after I pray?.
(2) Every time I pray for something, it only gets worse.
(3) On a few occasions only, my Prayers were answered.
(4) Before you say that I can't just pray and expect it to work, I want you to know that I do try to better myself.
(5) This makes me more skeptical and cynical about Christianity.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: (1) The reason is seen in your last sentence and resembles *Genesis 4:6-7*.
(2) That happens when you pray in case of need only.
(3) Probably, those few Prayers were in line with the Holy Will of GOD.
(4) Kindly try Repentance & Confession. (You may refer to the relevant "Q & A" chapters are in the Index section.)
Reading your post, I doubt whether you are a Christian. Make sure you are.
(5) Please, read chapter 503 (Harvest Law).

152

Q: What do you think happened to the *Ark of Covenant*?
Nobody has ever found it.

A: We may try to find the answer in the Scriptures.

Kindly differentiate between the making of the Sacred Ark of the Covenant and erecting of the Temple to the Name of the LORD. The last was built by the initiative of His Servant David and supported by GOD.
See *2Samuel 7:2-13* & *1Chronicles 17:1-12*.
Following the people's attitude toward GOD, the Temple was built, sanctified, robbed, polluted, ruined, rebuilt, rededicated, and destroyed again & again.
But it was the Holy Will of the LORD for the Ark of the Covenant of GOD to be.
See *Exodus 25:10-16*.
In this book, and more than once, we made very clear that the Holy Will of GOD is very serious business, even Everlasting. So, once our LORD GOD commanded the Ark to be – there it was, is, and will be forever.

Note, *the staves* were ordained by *Exodus 25:14-15* to have been continuously in a standby position, that is, always ready for GOD's Anointed Servants Levites (as per *Numbers 3:31, Deuteronomy 10:8, & 2Chronicles 35:3*) to carry the Sacred Ark (overlaid with pure gold) away from robbers, heathen, and unbelievers.

Any try to find the Ark is useless. Why? By the Holy Will of GOD, it is hidden.
And the reason why is simple: the mass unbelief.

> *... the Prophet, warned by an Oracle, gave orders for the Tabernacle and the Ark to go with him when he set out for the mountain which Moses had climbed to survey GOD's Heritage. On his arrival Jeremiah found a cave dwelling, into which he brought the Tabernacle, the Ark and the Altar of Incense, afterward blocking up the entrance. Some of his companions came up to mark out the way, but were unable to find it. When Jeremiah learned this, he reproached them: "The place is to remain unknown", he said, "until GOD gathers His People together again and shows them His Mercy. Then the LORD will bring these things once more to light, and the Glory of the LORD will be seen, and so will the Cloud, as it was revealed in the time of Moses and when Solomon prayed that the Holy Place might be Gloriously hallowed."*
>
> *(Apocrypha, 2Maccabees 2:4-8, The Jerusalem Bible)*

By the mouth of Prophet Jeremiah, the LORD, our GOD called His People to National Repentance. He promised them His Holy Presence instead of the Ark.

And it shall come to pass, when ye be multiplied and increased in the land,
in those days, saith the LORD, they shall say no more,
The Ark of the Covenant of the LORD: neither shall it come to mind:
neither shall they remember it; neither shall they visit it;
neither shall that be done any more. (Jeremiah 3:16)

Looking for something the hardest to find and unsafe to touch (!) is ridiculous. See *2Samuel 6:6-7* & *1Chronicles 13:9-10.*
Where can the Ark of Covenant be seen? In the Heavenly Kingdom of GOD.

And the Temple of GOD was opened in Heaven,
and there was seen in His Temple the Ark of His Testament ...
(Revelations 11:19)

Even so,

Come and see ... (Revelations 6:1,3,5,7)

Behold some descriptions of the Holy things.

And Moses said unto Aaron, Take a pot, and put an omer full of Manna therein,
and lay it up before the LORD, to be kept for your generations. (Exodus 16:33)

And the LORD said unto Moses, Bring Aaron's rod again before the Testimony,
to be kept for a token against the rebels; and thou shalt quite take away
their murmurings from Me, that they die not. (Numbers 17:10)

There was nothing in the Ark save the Two Tables of stone,
which Moses put there at Horeb, when the LORD made a Covenant
with the Children of Israel, when they came out of the land of Egypt.
(1Kings 8:9 & 2Chronicles 5:10)

And after the Second Veil, the Tabernacle which is called the Holiest of all;
which had the golden Censer, and the Ark of the Covenant
overlaid round about with gold, wherein was the golden pot that had Manna,
and Aaron's rod that budded, and the Tables of the Covenant;
and over it the Cherubims of Glory shadowing the Mercy Seat.
(Hebrew 9:3-4)

153

Q: How would you describe *the Kingdom of Heaven?*

A: Cannot. Moreover, I believe nobody of all the living (and those in Paradise) can. Kindly note *Isaiah 64:4* & *1Corinthians 2:9*.

Much the same way as earlier (in chapter 8) discussed hell, *Heaven* is impossible to imagine, comprehend, or explain away while we live here & now.
The reason for such difficulty or incomprehensibility of the spiritual matters is nothing but our human limitations, which, in turn, are caused by the lack of Communion with LORD GOD. See *Jeremiah 33:3* & *John 16:12*.
In chapter 32, we discussed the subject of our Communion with GOD.
It is only you & I who are supposed to answer why we do not communicate with Him better.

Like the Visions of hell, there have always been people blessed with the Visions of the Heavenly Kingdom. Those people testified honestly, no doubts, but all their Visions* were but images & symbols, not the actual pictures. How come? Again, due to our human limitations.
Far as I understand, to give any of us a clear picture of the Spirit World, the LORD would have to make that person jump quite high above the level of personal intellect at the moment. Yet, that's up to GOD.
Please understand, the *Right Way* into that Blessed Kingdom is open unto all who welcome the Holy Spirit of GOD in their hearts.

... the Reign of GOD is within you.
(Luke 17:21, Young's Literal Translation)

See more in chapters 238 (Thy Kingdom come) & 677 (The Kingdom within).
Probably, we all can have a "*glimpse*" into the Kingdom of Heaven. (The same was suggested in chapter 8 about hell.)
Have you ever had *your* Prayer answered by GOD? Were His Works of healing the sick, raising the dead, casting out evil spirits, &c., done through *you* by the Holy Spirit? Did *you* experience His unforgettable Presence? Each of those states of the heart might give the resemblance of Life & Peace out there, in *Heaven*.

* These movies exemplify the Visions – *Heaven Is For Real*
Miracles from Heaven
90 Minutes In Heaven

Q: Are people in Heaven now?. I feel it's in only a colloquial reference that when someone dies, they go to Heaven while we stay alive on Earth.

Q: And this is not the case. The Bible says we'll be risen from the dead all at once, then judged and then sent to Heaven. That makes more sense than the idea about the passed-away persons in Heaven with Jesus. (?)

Q: This debunks Catholic Saints. The Saints are dead and have not risen yet from their graves. (?)

Q: If Jesus rose from the dead and went to Heaven, He is alive in Heaven and not with other dead humans. It seems to me that you must be risen from the dead, just like Jesus, to get there. (?)

Q: There are no Saints, relatives, looking down on us from Heaven, hearing Prayers, etc., in the present. They are all dead and have not risen yet to be judged by GOD. No one is in Heaven yet. Only Jesus, GOD, and His Angels are in Heaven. Humans are all dead. (?)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020. Condensed.)

A: As far as I understand the Word of GOD, nobody (meaning human spirit & soul) is dead in the grave after physical death. There are what remains from human physical bodies there.
Kindly see chapter 573 (Eternity).
I agree that there is no way to Heaven right after physical death.
Your opinion regarding Saints is correct. Yet, they are not dead in graves.
Are they with Jesus after death? Yes, in Paradise. But not yet in Heaven.

Q: There are Christians who believe that, after death, we're unconscious until the Resurrection of a body. Is it correct?
Please only answer the questions about New Earth. Thank you so much.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: Well, I don't belong to those who think so. Please, see *Luke 23:43* and chapter 243 (Paradise today). I'll try to answer your questions one by one.

Q: (1) Do we keep our memories & thoughts, likes & dislikes in Heaven, even the things of *us*?

A: Yes, *if* those things are renewed:

... if any man be in Christ,
he is a New Creature: old things are passed away;
behold, all things are become New. (2Corinthians 5:17)

Q: (2) What will we be doing in Heaven? Just waiting for New Earth?

A: It is hard to tell. Please go as far as the beginning of this chapter.

Q: (3) Are victims of rape and murder whose attackers happened to be saved before death, expected to have forgiven them?

A: Yes, they are. Kindly read the answer to your first question.

Q: (4) Where do you get your ideas of Heaven & New Earth besides Scripture?

A: Nowhere else. The Scriptures can answer *any* question. See *Jeremiah 33:3*.

Q: (5) Do we age in Heaven or on New Earth?
Q: (6) Do babies who died stay babies?
Q: (7) Do the mentally handicapped stay such?
Q: (8) Do we keep the intelligence we died with?

A: See the answer to all four questions is in *Genesis 1:27*, even in our Creation in the *Image & Likeness of GOD*. Therefore, no aging, babyhood, infirmity, and the previous level of intelligence should be in Heaven.
Thank you for your questions.

Q: Jesus tells us that the Greatest Commandment is this: *love the LORD, your GOD, with all your heart, and love others as you love yourself*. ... How could Adam & Eve obey that Commandment *before* eating the *apple* of the knowledge of good and evil? To love, they had to have a choice. ...
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: The Commandment you speak about was given to Adam & Eve in the very creating them in the *Image & Likeness of GOD* by *Genesis 1:26-27* and the Prohibition per *Genesis 2:17*. Their (and our) Free will was first formulated in *Genesis 1:28* – by the Power of Dominion (see chapters: 312 & 313), then in *Genesis 2:17* – by choice between Obedience and death.
(And who in the world told you about an *apple*? Why not pear or cherry?)
Please, see chapter 440. It is about *the tree of knowledge of good and evil.*
To love GOD, they had to *avoid* the tree of Prohibition, not tasting the fruit. By tasting what was prohibited by LORD GOD, they (and we after them) got but the experience of sin, no more.
Thanks for the question. Take care.

154

Q: Once you are against the *military* – you made it very clear in chapter 9 – does it mean that *soldiers* cannot be *Christians*?

A: It depends on their hearts. It's hard to trust GOD *and* military power jointly. For a Christian, LORD GOD is First. Otherwise, search the *Book of Martyrs* – even the mere *murderers* called themselves the "Servants of God".
And kindly regard chapter 26 (Killing Canaanites. Ukrainian Defense.)
Brother Ezra, who, per *Ezra 7:11*, was the Priest & Scribe for GOD, wrote,

... I was ashamed to require of the King a band of soldiers and horsemen to help us against the enemy in the way: because we had spoken unto the King, saying, The Hand of our GOD is upon all them for Good that seek Him; but His Power and His Wrath is against all them that forsake Him. (Ezra 8:22)

I believe the Words spoken by Brother John the Baptist to the *soldiers* (there & then serving as Roman *army & police*), were in no wise the justification of *military*, rather Good Instruction given to *law-enforcement* men.

And the soldiers likewise demanded of him, saying, And what shall we do? And he said unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuse any falsely; and be content with your wages. (Luke 3:14)

All in all, in the above Scripture, we can find the right opposition to militarism (*do violence to no man*), false justice (*neither accuse any falsely*), as well as thieves & marauders (*be content with your wages*).
Also, considering a broader meaning of *wages*, see *Romans 6:23.*

Further references: *Psalm 44:6-8 (GOD is our Power).*
Psalm 46:9 (GOD can stop wars).
Psalm 89:18 (LORD is our Defense).
Psalm 91 (GOD is my Fortress).
Psalm 118:10 (Mighty Name of GOD).
Ecclesiastes 9:18 (Wisdom of GOD vs weapons of war).
Isaiah 34:2 (GOD is against a military).
Isaiah 54:15-17 (GOD is our Protector).
Jeremiah 51:53 (LORD's Might).
Haggai 2:22 (GOD is against military).
Zechariah 4:6 (by the Power of Holy Spirit).
Matthew 26:52 (Prophecy against military).

See parallel chapters: 15 (GOD First), 125 (Sixth Commandment),
248 (An oath on the Balance), & 300 (The evil of wars).

The relevant movies: *Hacksaw Ridge.* *GOD Bless The Broken Road.*
Silent Night. *Luther (2003).*

Q: Loving a country *vs* loving God..
(1) If you had to choose between fighting for God *vs* fighting for your country, which would you choose if they contradict?
Q: (2) What would you do when the actions of your country don't line up with the Word of God?
Q: (3) Are you a *patriot* first or a *Christian* first?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: For me, the first line (the title) of your post may well go with "and" instead of "vs". However, once you prefer "vs", let me assume that the country in question is not a Christian one (kindly see chapters 55 & 484).
I came to the same conclusion reading the rest of your post.
(1) In such a case, fighting for GOD is the answer to the first question. That, in turn, means two different kinds of fighting. You may briefly have a look at the chapters titled "Spirit War" in the Contents section.
(2) And read *Ephesians 6:10-18*. A Prayer for the Will of GOD to be done, whether at the time of war or peace, is the answer to your second question.
(3) The answer to your last question is, *Christian*. Note *Romans 8:38-39*.

Q: (1) Is having bad thoughts on purpose a sin, and
Q: (2) how do you know those thoughts are on purpose?
(3) I'm just a kid, and I don't want to be in hell forever.
(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, November 2020.)

A: (1) Dear Christian, "bad thoughts" – not yet grown into wrong attitudes, words, and actions – are not sins. However, and, especially, "on purpose", they are a sure way to sin. Therefore *2Corinthians 10:5* is your Scripture.
(2) By the same Scripture, you can see your reaction to the evil thoughts from the devil – whether they are quickly kicked off or kept in your mind. That foolish keeping is the wrong purpose.
(3) Your desire is Good, for LORD GOD doesn't want the hell for you too. May GOD bless you.

155

Q: What is *Repentance*, and how does it work?

A: *Repentance* is the positive turn from the life of sin back to GOD.

Robinson's Theological Dictionary (1835) runs:
Repentance signifies a sincere Sorrow for all past transgressions of GOD's Laws, an unfeigned disposition of mind to perform the Will of GOD better for the future, and an actual avoiding and resisting of those temptations to sin by which we have been overpowered.

The Work of Repentance (on our part) is simple: we repent *wholeheartedly* before the LORD, our GOD. We are supposed to *prove* our Repentance. Father GOD will take care of the rest.

The following Scriptures are some of many teaching us on the subject.

Leviticus 26:40-42; Psalms 32:5 & 51; & Jeremiah 14:20 ..... Confession.
2Chronicles 7:14, Hosea 6:1, & Jeremiah 3:12-15 .... National Repentance.
Job 33:27-28 & Luke 15:20 ..... GOD welcomes Repentance.
Proverbs 28:13, Luke 19:8-9, & Acts 26:20 ..... The Way of Repentance.
Jeremiah 4:1-4 & 18:11 ..... GOD warned.
Jeremiah 26:3, Ezekiel 14:6, Joel 2:12-13, & Zechariah 1:3 ... GOD's Call.
Lamentations 3:40 ..... May we consider our ways and repent.
Ezekiel 33:11 & 2Peter 3:9 ..... The Holy Will of GOD.
Zechariah 12:10 & John 6:65 ..... Repentance is GOD's Blessing.
Luke 3:2-14 ..... Baptism of Repentance.
2Corinthians 7:10 ..... Godly Sorrow.
Hebrews 6:4-6 & 10:26-29 ..... Beware of willful sin.

Q: Can one repent of *unintentional* sins?. Sometimes, I ask GOD to forgive me for evil possibly done. However, when I pray so, the sorrow is not present.
Q: How can it be otherwise if I'm not sure of guilt?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: One cannot wholeheartedly repent for what the Holy Ghost does not rebuke.
Yet, you are right to pray to be forgiven for the sins committed unaware.
The words in *Matthew 6:12* and Prayer in *tongues* can help.
May GOD bless you.

156

Q: Speaking of *Repentance*, we have been taught that commonly known *Prayer of Repentance* is based on *Psalm 51*. How do you understand that?

A: Let us study the *51st Psalm* and listen to the Holy Ghost.

> *1 Have Mercy upon me, O GOD, according to Thy Lovingkindness: according unto the multitude of Thy Tender Mercies blot out my transgressions. 2 Wash me throughly from mine iniquity, and cleanse me from my sin.*

We come to our Father GOD – Who Alone can forgive & cleanse us from our sins. See the lines "*forgive us"* & "*deliver us from evil"* in *Matthew 6:12-13*. Stand on His Credentials – GOD of *Love, Justice, Power*.

> *3 For I acknowledge my transgressions: and my sin is ever before me.*
> *4 Against Thee, Thee only, have I sinned, and done this evil in Thy Sight: that Thou mightest be justified when Thou speakest, and be Clear when Thou judgest. 5 Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me.*

We remember our sins, take them seriously, and approach our Heavenly Father with *Godly Sorrow* & sincere *Confession*.
The Word of LORD GOD is Highest & Final Authority, which makes all worldly laws & regulations, oaths & promises, public opinions & religious traditions – which may "justify" us – null & void. We understand that. Note chapter 309.
See many parallels in *Genesis 1:4, Proverbs 21:30, Isaiah 28:18, &c.*
The fact that we were born sinful does not excuse us too.

> *6 Behold, Thou desirest Truth in the inward parts: and in the hidden part Thou shalt make me to know Wisdom.*

GOD demands of us His Truth in the hearts to restore His Image & Likeness. The latter is forgotten & estranged by, moreover, unknown & incomprehensible to the heathen world. Yet, without such Restoration, we cannot be enlightened by our Heavenly Father.
Please find parallel chapters under "GOD's Image & Likeness" in the Index.

> *7 Purge me with Hyssop, and I shall be Clean: wash me, and I shall be whiter than snow.*

Verses 2 & 7 state GOD's Ability to forgive us and purge our spiritual dirt.

8 Make me to hear Joy and Gladness; that the bones which Thou hast broken may rejoice.

His Forgiveness is the True *Joy*, notwithstanding all sufferings caused by our sins. And to *hear* Joy & Gladness means to restore the lost ability to perceive His Voice. Verily, in sins, we lost a lot.
Regarding the bones broken – GOD's Punishment – please see chapter 64.

9 Hide Thy Face from my sins, and blot out all mine iniquities. 10 Create in me a Clean heart, O GOD; and renew a Right Spirit within me.

We declare our Faith in GOD's Power & Willingness to pardon us and recreate our hearts (spirits) in His Image & Likeness. Renewal of a Right Spirit means the Reestablishment of the Holy Ghost within our spiritual beings. He is to be in charge of us. Otherwise, GOD's Image & Likeness are just mere words.

11 Cast me not away from Thy Presence; and take not Thy Holy Spirit from me.

By speaking of the Holy Spirit, *Verse 11* is connected with *Verse 10*. Here, the *Sacred Fear of GOD* is expressed as we *fear* to lose our only Treasure – Him, His Holy Ghost. The Spirit is *Omnipresent* and watches over all Creation. *Psalms 139:7-8*. His leaving means our death, followed by death eternal.
See parallel chapters under "God Holy Spirit" in the Index section.

12 Restore unto me the Joy of Thy Salvation; and uphold me with Thy Free Spirit. [By other translations, it is "*Willing Spirit*".]

GOD's Compassion & Absolution means *Hope of Salvation* – our greatest *Joy*. Our Salvation cannot be "guaranteed" (chapter 308). We should *walk* the Right Track under the Guidance of the Holy Ghost.

13 Then will I teach transgressors Thy Ways; and sinners shall be converted unto Thee.

Forgiven and brought back on the Right Road, we can teach & preach the Truth unto others. No otherwise. A *personal example* is crucial. *Matthew 11:28-30 & 28:19-20* are some of many parallels.

14 Deliver me from bloodguiltiness, O GOD, Thou GOD of my Salvation: and my tongue shall sing aloud of Thy Righteousness. 15 O LORD, open Thou my lips; and my mouth shall shew forth Thy Praise.

People think *murder** is the most deadly sin. Our Father GOD is Able to take off that heavy burden and lead us on to His Eternal Salvation.
How then not to praise Him? Yet again, it is He only Who can give us the Right Words of His Praise & our Testimony.
* Please see our discussion on Confession in chapters 46 & 405.

> *16 For Thou desirest not Sacrifice; else would I give it: Thou delightest not in Burnt Offering. 17 The Sacrifices of GOD are a Broken spirit: a Broken and a Contrite heart, O GOD, Thou wilt not despise.*

It is impossible to get Righteousness in exchange for Sacrifices, to pay for sin while remaining ready to commit another one. What the LORD GOD wants of us is *Repentance*, which makes future sin impossible. Chapter 155 (Repentance).

> *18 Do Good in Thy Good Pleasure unto Zion: build Thou the Walls of Jerusalem. 19 Then shalt Thou be pleased with the Sacrifices of Righteousness, with Burnt Offering and Whole Burnt Offering: then shall they offer bullocks upon Thine Altar.*

We confess that it is LORD GOD only, Who can Bless His Church with all Spirit Riches – Love, Faith, Hope, Knowledge &c. – unto Right Relationship with Him.
May we intercede for all True Believers to get strengthened as One Body.
Then Sacrifices are most welcomed by Father GOD. *Acts 2:44-47 & 4:32-37*.

These points we can see in *Psalm 51*, which might well be taken for Prayer of Repentance – not only for New Converts but every Christian who might stumble on the Right Way now & again – and serves as such.
Every book of Kenneth & Gloria Copeland ends with the *Prayer for Salvation and Baptism in the Holy Spirit*. There is nothing wrong with that Prayer too.

In many Protestant Churches, Pastors & Preachers, after their Sermons, call unbelievers to step forward and repeat after them the words of Repentance.
I have seen & heard people did that, and, far as I know, the results were very different – from zero to New Creatures as per *2Corinthians 5:17*. No comments.
Kindly read chapter 317 (A New Creature).

Verily, it doesn't matter where the act of Repentance takes place – in the Temple or at home – and what words we might take to pray – repeating after Preachers or speaking our own, reading aloud from a Christian booklet or kneeling in the Lord's Prayer *(Matthew 6:9-13)*. Read again *Verse 17*.

157

Q: Should we celebrate the *Feasts* as per the Old Testament Scriptures?
Q: And if we are, what are they and how to do it?

A: Yes, we are. The respective dates & ways of Celebration should be laid down by our *Local Churches*.

In *Leviticus Chapter 23*, the LORD, our Heavenly Father, ordained the Feasts to keep by His People. For every Feast, the respective Sacrifices were specified. *Numbers Chapters 28-29*, *1Chronicles 23:31*, etc.
The Ultimate Substitutional Sacrifice of Christ had put an end to all Animal Sacrifices but not to the Sacrificial Giving to be made by us.
So, once thus saith the LORD, we should keep these Feasts Congregationally or personally. Since nowadays the time is measured not as in Old Testament times, we can observe (the spirit of) Festivals accordingly, by the solar calendar.

Sabbath.

In chapter 91, we studied the Fourth Commandment (*Exodus 20:8-11* & *Deuteronomy 5:12-15*) and *Mark 2:27*. It is our Holy Rest *(Genesis 2:3)* in Commemoration of Creation of the World by the Holy LORD, our GOD.

New Moon.

This Feast ought to be observed on the first day of the month.
We give Glory to GOD Who appointed times & seasons (*Genesis 1:14-18, Psalms 81:3, & Ezekiel 46:6*). This Festival can be observed monthly on the first Group Communion Service by testifying on our Works & Studies done.

Passover & Unleavened Bread & First-Fruits.

Passover is observed on the 14th day of the 1st month (Spring) in the evening.
It is the Pilgrimage Feast. See *Exodus Chapter12; 23:14-17; & 34:18,23,25; Leviticus 23:4-8; Numbers 9:1-14 & 28:16-25; Deuteronomy 16:1-8,16-17; & Ezekiel 45:21-24.*
The purpose is Commemoration of our Homecoming to Father GOD, now made possible through Lord Jesus' Ultimate Sacrifice only.
Unleavened Bread is to last seven days, beginning with the evening of the 14th day until the evening of the 21st day of the 1st month (*Leviticus 23:6-8 & Deuteronomy 16:3*), each day eating the unleavened bread & offering Sacrifices.

The unleavened bread is the image or symbol of the only True Teaching – the Written Word of GOD.
First-Fruits is prescribed on the 16th day of the 1st month (*Leviticus 23:10-12, Numbers 28:26, & Romans 8:23*). We testify on the New Fruits brought about by Father GOD through us into the Body of Christ during the year passed.

Pentecost (*Weeks, Harvest*).

The date is *50 days* from the Day of First Fruits (*Exodus 23:16 & 34:22; Leviticus 23:15-18, Numbers 28:26-31, & Deuteronomy 16:9-12*). It is the Commemoration of our Covenant with GOD & Christian Church's Birthday.

Trumpets (*New Year*).

The day is observed on the first day of the seventh month
(*Leviticus 23:23-25, Numbers 29:1-6, & Nehemiah 8:2,9,10*).
Following a good tradition – there is no Scriptural reference – we honor the LORD's Supreme Judgments on His Great Creation.

Atonement (*Expiation*).

On the tenth day of the seventh month (*Leviticus 23:26-32 & Hebrews 9:11-12*), we praise the LORD's Forgiving our sins through the Sacrifice of Christ Jesus.

Booths (*Tabernacles, Tents*).

Observed on the fifteenth day of the seventh month and lasted seven days, it is also the Pilgrimage Feast (*Leviticus 23:33-36,39-43; Deuteronomy 16:13-17; & Ezekiel 45:25*). We praise GOD for His Welcoming us back to Him.

Sabbatical Years & Year of Jubilee.

According to *Deuteronomy 15:1-6*, every seventh (*Sabbatical, Release*) year, all debts get axed, and our land lays fallow (*Exodus 23:10-11 & Leviticus 25:1-7*).
Every fiftieth (*Jubilee*) year, the property deposited should be returned to its original owner (*Leviticus 25:8-55*). See also *Matthew 6:12 (King James Version)*.

Other Holidays.

The Scriptures don't forbid us to celebrate other Holidays (second to the above), whether personal or National, provided they do not contradict the Holy Bible.

Thus we celebrate *Sunday* (a.k.a., the *Lord's Day*) as Jesus Christ's Resurrection *(Revelation 1:10)* & *Christmas* as His Birthday (as per *Isaiah 9:6*).
There are also Jewish National Holidays, such as *Purim* (*Lots*, according to *Esther 9:20-32*) and *Dedication* (*Hanuka*, *Lights*, as per *1Maccabeus 4:52-59* & *John 10:22*). However, these Feasts were ordained by men and not by GOD.
The same one can say about Catholic & Orthodox Festivals.

Therefore let no one judge you in regard to food and drink or in regard to [the observance of] a Festival or a New Moon or a Sabbath Day. Such things are only a shadow of what is to come and they have only Symbolic value; but the Substance [the reality of what is foreshadowed] belongs to Christ. (Colossians 2:16-7, Amplified Bible)

Q: Brother, how do you understand *Leviticus 22:10-11*?

A: It is written:

9 They shall therefore keep Mine Ordinance, lest they bear sin for it, and die therefore, if they profane it: I the LORD do sanctify them. 10 There shall no stranger eat of the Holy thing: a sojourner of the Priest, or an hired servant, shall not eat of the Holy thing. 11 But if the Priest buy any soul with his money, he shall eat of it, and he that is born in his house: they shall eat of his meat. (Leviticus 22:9-11)

By *Verse 9*, our Salvation & Understanding are subjected to Obedience to GOD.
Verse 10 has this Parallel:

Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your Pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you. (Matthew 7:6)

In *Verse 11*, "*buy* any soul** with his money**" does not "justify slavery" as some scoffers "see" there. No. Find the Parallel here:

... Follow Me, and I will make you Fishers of men. (Matthew 4:19)

[* Kindly see the *spiritual* meaning. ** Best translated by *King James Version*.]
The same is True about the Words, "*born in his house*", which remind us of the New Birth in Christ –

Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of GOD. (John 3:3)

158

Q: How to understand *Freedom?*

A: We, Christians, can define True Freedom, as our *Unity* with Lord Jesus. *Romans 8:1-2.*

The Source & Carrier of True (*spiritual*) Freedom is God Holy Spirit.
See *2Corinthians 3:17.*
That Spirit leads us and moves to call others into GOD's Kingdom o' Freedom.
See *Isaiah 61:1-2, Matthew 6:10, & 1Corinthians 9:1,19.*
We cannot be *Free Godly* and *free worldly* at the same time.
See *Genesis 1:4, Romans 6:18, & Galatians 5:16.* Kindly read chapter 40.

Seeking the Holy Will of GOD and walking in Obedience to it are the compulsory Conditions to obtain & keep True Freedom.
See *Psalms 119:45 & John 8:31-32.*
Living in GOD-given Freedom requires willpower.
See *Galatians 5:1 & James 1:25.*

Note:

Submit yourselves to every Ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the King, as supreme; or unto Governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. For so is the Will of GOD, that with well doing ye may put to silence the ignorance of foolish men: as Free, and not using your Liberty for a cloke of maliciousness, but as the Servants of GOD. (1Peter 2:13-16)*

* Here, "*every ordinance of man*" is certainly to be such as not contradicting the *Written Word of GOD* – our Highest & Final Authority.

Kindly see chapters: 15 (GOD First), 90 (Faithfulness to GOD),
143 (Obedience to GOD), & 248 (An oath on the Balance).

Read about our Free will in *Joshua 24:14-15.*
Read about our Freedom & Love in *Galatians 5:13.*

Good books: *Kenneth Copeland, Freedom From Fear*
The Power To Be Forever Free

159

Q: What does our Bible say about *seamen*?

A: That trade has not been much distinguished from others.
Yet, the following Words should be noted by *Christian seafarers.*

Mind the LORD your GOD always: *Deuteronomy 6:4-5 & Psalms 29:3; 95:5*.

Trust GOD and fear not: *Psalms 18:16, 46:1-3, 65:5-7, 89:9, & 93:3-4;*
Isaiah 43:2-3; Luke 8:23-25; & John 6:18-21.

Pray to the LORD: *Psalms 69:13-17, 144:7; Jonah 2:1-10; & Philippians 4:6-7*.

Praise GOD: *2Samuel 22:17; Psalms 63:5-6; 103; 107:23-31; & Isaiah 42:10.*

Holy LORD our GOD knows your hardships: *Proverbs 27:8*.

Take care of His sea: *Genesis 1:26-28,31; & Revelation 11:18*.

Pure Mind: *Ephesians 5:18-20 & Philippians 4:8*.

Discipline & Obedience: *Proverbs 24:21 & Ephesians 6:5-9*.

Honor & Honesty: *Deuteronomy 25:13-16; Proverbs 11:1; 16:11; 20:10,23;*
Jeremiah 22:13; Colossians 3:17; 4:1; & 1Timothy 6:1-2.

Try your best to find the right employer: *Genesis 1:4 & 2Corinthians 6:14*.

Hold out against mammon: *Proverbs 23:4; Matthew 6:24; Luke 16:13;*
& 1Timothy 6:6-10,17-19.

Deal thus with sea-sickness (mal-de-mere): *Acts 27:33-36*.

The symbol of Hope is mentioned: *Hebrews 6:19*.

Those perils are not against you: *Psalms 83:15*.

The End of the Merchant Marine serving mammon: *Revelation 18:17-19*.

The above references may exceed the pertinence sought for by my former colleagues, as some Scriptures overlap the borders of the Merchant Navy and are relevant for other walks of life.
If, however, this chapter does not cover every aspect of a seaman's life, search the Word of GOD – your Answers are there.

Kindly note these chapters: 73 (True Fast), 90 (Faithfulness to GOD), & 144 (The Fear of GOD).

Q: (1) According to *Revelation 12:7,* Satan is in Heaven right now and remains there until the War in Heaven, as depicted in *Revelation*. (?)
Q: (2) How does this square with your current thinking on Satan and GOD? Since none of this has occurred as of yet, Satan is in Heaven.
Q: (3) How would your current thinking on Satan square with the fact that he has not yet left Heaven?
Q: (4) Is he taking soles and corrupting minds from Heaven?
Q: (5) Is he hatching schemes and attempting to fool the World from Heaven? (*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Edited, condensed.)

A: Negative on all that, including "*Revolution"* put twice instead of *Revelation*.

(1) Far as I understand the Holy Scriptures, there is Heavens natural (the sky surrounding the Earth and the Universe) and spiritual (Spirit World).
See *Genesis 1:1; Deuteronomy 10:14; & Nehemiah 9:6.*
The Spirit World has three levels: the Underworld (Paradise & hell), the unseen World upon & around the Earth, and the Highest Heaven (Heaven of Heavens per *Psalms 148:13* and the Third Heaven per *2Corinthians 12:2*) where the LORD GOD, His Holy Angels, and His People (found Worthy at Judgment) abide. See *Revelation 21:2*.
Yet, our Understanding is limited. *Job 38:33* & *1Corinthians 13:9-10.*
(2) So, Satan & his demons are on the "second" level of the Spirit World, right here, around us. Kindly read *Isaiah 14:12*.

(2 & 3) These questions cannot move or baffle any Christian mind.
You may refer to *Deuteronomy 6:4-5 & Isaiah 26:3*.
(4 & 5) Yes, he is – *2Corinthians 4:4* – but not from Heaven.
Kindly see *Genesis 1:4*.

Thank you for your questions.
You are welcome to find the relevant chapters in the Index.

160

Q: Brother, do our Local Churches need such a thing as *Church Rules?*

A: I think they do, for several reasons.

Church Rules are to clarify the Way of actual following our Lord Jesus by a particular Local Church, taking into account her geographical position, number, occupations, age & experience of the Members (meaning Ministers, not visitors).

Every man visiting or willing to join a Local Church should be able to see (in a prominent place) the Preamble to those Rules, e.g.,

> *Nothing in our Rules, whether accepted as final, corrected, or amended, is supposed to contradict in whatever way the Written Word of GOD – the Holy Bible. The Spirit of the last is to be consulted whenever following these Rules, our Bible having every Priority over them.*

The Rules, which Preamble likens to the above example, should make whatever compromise with the world quite harder. Some Believers may say they follow the Word of GOD without any other written stuff. If they do, Blessed they are. But I have already seen the Rules made up on one page only, and that solely for the local worldly authorities, as it had been chosen to get registered with them.

The Preamble might further run,

> *The following Rules should serve One & Indivisible Church of GOD in this Local Congregation of Saints.*

That may prevent any *denominationalism* in the Congregation.

The Rules should cover all aspects of the Christian Life of a Local Church. See relevant chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry). Laid down (and amended, as appropriate) by the Members of the Congregation, those regulations provide the Believers joining that Church with a better possibility to get familiar with it.

And they continued stedfastly in the Apostles' Doctrine and Fellowship, and in Breaking of Bread, and in Prayers. And Fear came upon every soul: and many Wonders and Signs were done by the Apostles. And all that believed were together, and had all things common ... (Acts 2:42-43)

161

Q: Sometimes, you mention *Deuteronomy 6:4-5* as Jewish Creed.
How do you understand it as being extended to *Verse 9*?

A: Briefly, it is the only way to follow the Law of GOD.

Now, let's consider the Scripture Verse by Verse.

4 Hear, O Israel: The LORD our GOD is One LORD:

Christians are GOD's Israel, the spiritual descendants of Abraham. *Galatians 3:7*. The Oneness of GOD is declared. Only the *LORD* is our GOD. His Written Word is our Highest & Final Authority, no matter what. See *Jeremiah 13:15*.

5 And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart,
and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.

It is the fullest possible extent of *Love* – by the whole of our spirit, soul, and body – commanded us by the Holy LORD our GOD. He hasn't ever demanded any impossible thing. See *Deuteronomy 30:11-14*, *Matthew 11:30, & 1John 5:3*.

6 And these Words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart:

We are supposed to be willing to obey the Written Law of GOD indeed.
He will take care of the rest. Kindly read *Isaiah 41:10*.

7 And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.

To *teach diligently* means not only to talk, lecture, preach, but to be the example, oversee, and control so that what is told is obeyed, followed, and carried out.
Talk here means that our verbal conversation is strictly parallel to the Written Word of GOD. Our (thine) house is such, when and only when, our word (as the spiritual Leaders thereof) is the law for all family members, and what we tell 'em is not just a whim, but rather, what the Holy Ghost commands through ourselves.
For all circumstances & conditions of our life, there can be found relevant Scripture(s) in our Bible. May all the world call us sheltered, but, praise be to our Heavenly Father, we have nothing to do with all foolish, ungodly, and useless conversations suggested by the devil. Note *1John 5:18*. See "Q & A" chapter 60.

8 And thou shalt bind them for a Sign upon thine hand,
and they shall be as Frontlets between thine eyes.

These Words should rule our general behavior, occupations, and every action. They determine all our Understanding (the subject of chapter 58), which enables us to *see* the natural world as the LORD GOD wants us to – through His Word. The Right personal example is commanded here too.

9 And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates.

Inasmuch as it is within our power, the Written Word of GOD should be Holy to everyone under our roof. Do whatever things possible so that the Word rules your land as well. *Numbers 35:34 & Deuteronomy 5:33; 8:10*.

Q: Why does God call His House a House of Prayer (*Isaiah 56:7*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: It is written:

4 ... thus saith the LORD unto the eunuchs that keep My Sabbaths, and choose the things that please Me, and take hold of My Covenant; 5 Even unto them will I give in Mine House and within My Walls a Place and a Name better than of Sons and of Daughters: I will give them an Everlasting Name, that shall not be cut off. 6 Also the sons of the stranger, that join themselves to the LORD, to serve Him, and to love the Name of the LORD, to be His Servants, every one that keepeth the Sabbath from polluting it, and taketh hold of My Covenant; 7 Even them will I bring to My Holy Mountain, and make them Joyful in My House of Prayer: their Burnt Offerings and their Sacrifices shall be accepted upon Mine Altar; for Mine House shall be called an House of Prayer for all people. (Isaiah 56:4-7)

In this Scripture, *Verse 7* is conclusive to the preceding Words. Looking on the hearts (*1Samuel 16:7*), LORD GOD sees His True Servants and listens to their Prayers – an integral part of our Communion with Him. Please see chapter 32.

In *Matthew 21:13 & Mark 11:17*, Lord Jesus reminded these Words to false teachers & servants. For every place of Prayer means much to GOD.

Have you ever felt the Presence of the Holy Ghost in a Christian Temple?
Please, find & watch a beautiful Christian movie, “War Room”.

162

Q: Lord Jesus said,

No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved. (Matthew 9:16-17)

The question is: how to implement these Words in our *Christian* Living?

A: This Scripture *is* at work in many aspects of life.
And to answer the question, we have to let go of its good *literal* meaning, dealing with a material business only.

Christians have to get prepared & trained (*Joshua 1:8*):

– to receive the renewed & deepened Teaching or Revelation (*John 16:12*);
– to get ready for new aspects of personal *Ministry* (*Luke 14:26-27,33*);
– to serve & work among new people (*Matthew 5:5,7,9*);

– to reach a new level of Wisdom to be a husband or a wife, a father or a mother (*Genesis 2:24 & Deuteronomy 6:6-7; 32:46*);

– to keep the Secrecy of every Confession (*Isaiah 43:25 & Ephesians 5:1*);

– following the Twelfth Commandment, to keep Sacred the Written Word of GOD against *every* blasphemy facing the unworthy audience (*Matthew 7:6*);

– serving as Pastors or Teachers, to be able to guide the new Converts the Right way, lose no one, and to train new Ministers as per their Gifts & abilities (*Ephesians 4:11-12 & Revelation ch.2-3*);

– to be continuously able to provide proper administration of whatever valuables under their care to avoid damages and losses (*Colossians 3:17 & 1Peter 2:12*);

– to be always able to perform safe management to avoid a loss of human life and to prevent any injuries (*Romans 13:10; Galatians 5:14 & James 2:8-9*);
– to qualify for promotions (*Matthew 20:25-28 & Mark 10:42-45*).

The above Parable of Lord Jesus, repeated in the *Gospel by St. Luke*, was followed by another, sequential:

No man also having drunk old wine straightway desireth new:
for he saith, The old is better. (Luke 5:39)

Here, we again have to let go of the *literal* meaning and the drinking business.
Most people, especially those blessed by stable living, are conservative. That's why not so many folks followed *Jesus* during His three-years Ministry.
Yea, a few could honestly tell Him:

Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed Thee. (Matthew 19:27)

The comparability of the new & old ways and the new & old wines is correct here: the old wine (more strong & less healthy) is not so promptly left for the new one (less strong & more healthy).

And there is another problem here: the New Way might seem harder than the old sitting around loaded up with the devilish thoughts full of common sense. See *Luke 9:23-24.*
Please consult chapters 41 (Common sense) & 76 (Our Cross).

Q: How am I supposed to live in line with *Romans 14:23*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: It is written:

21 It is Good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak. 22 Hast thou Faith? Have it to thyself before GOD. Happy is he that condemneth not himself in that thing which he alloweth. 23 And he that doubteth is damned if he eat, because he eateth not of Faith: for whatsoever is not of Faith is sin. (Romans 14:21-23)

The above Scripture has this Good Parallel:

... if our heart condemn us,
GOD is Greater than our heart, and knoweth all things. 21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, then have we Confidence toward GOD. (1John 3:20-21)

So, if the Holy Ghost lives in your heart, listen to Him speaking to you through the voice of your conscience. Kindly see chapter 104 (The Promised Teacher).

163

Q: In chapter 155, speaking on *Repentance*, you mentioned a *National Repentance.* Doesn't it sound like a fairy tale?

A: No. It doesn't sound like a fairy tale for *LORD GOD,* in the first place. And He doesn't demand of us impossible things. Please, read *Deuteronomy 30:11-14* & *Matthew 11:30.*

Let's consider the Scriptures.

> *If My People, which are called by My Name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek My Face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from Heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land. (2Chronicles 7:14)*

It is not enough to be called Christians, have Bibles in our homes and Courts of Law, attend the Churches, &c., &c., – we must act as the LORD, our GOD, commands. We – the people in our right mind – do know what to do. *Hosea 6:1.*

Throughout the Earth and our human history, the LORD, our Heavenly Father, teaches & corrects us. *Psalms 103:8-14 & Jeremiah 3:13,15.*

Our sincere *Repentance* will move the LORD to bless us with the *Godly Government,* which our present voting system can never provide. Chapter 21. According to *Zondervan Bible Dictionary,*

> *Repentance* is *... Divinely wrought Conviction of sin in the heart that the soul is guilty before GOD, and a resolute turning away from sin in which the sinner identifies himself with the Gracious Act of GOD redeeming him. Repentance involves both a change of mind about sin, and a change of heart-attitude toward sin. It is at the time a Renunciation of sin and an Acceptance of the Holy Spirit's Enablement to Holy Living. Repentance is necessary to Salvation. Jesus asserted that it was necessary Condition (Matthew 4:17), while both Paul and Peter identified it with True Salvation (Acts 20:21; 2Peter 3:9) ...*

Our sins might be ugly, and the Way seemed hard, yet the LORD GOD is Faithful to meet us halfway to help us keep going. *Isaiah 55:6-7 & Luke 15:20.*

164

Q: Now & again, we hear stories about the children who were lost, adopted, lived with a foster family, and then found by their first parents. What do you think is the best solution to the problem?

A: Speaking not of legal but *Christian* approach, it is *Love*.

Children may be separated from their *biological* parent(s) due to many reasons: selfishness, natural disasters, crime, poverty, sin, war, and so forth.
Because of many other reasons, such as conscience, repentance, responsibility, evil interest, etc., – biological parents may seek & find their lost children.

So, when Christians get involved, whether as biological or foster parents, both parties ought to meet up to decide what is best and less stressful for their children, the age and wishes of last being well noted.

Speaking of parents, we ought to note that a human being may happen to have more than one father or mother. Let me explain my point.

The instrument used by GOD to give a natural birth is a *physical* father.

A man who provides a home, food, clothes, and social teaching to his physical or adopted children, is a *soul* father.

Happy are those who have those two fathers in one person.
A man who brings you up *spiritually* is your spiritual father.
Blessed are those who have such fathers, let alone those who happen to have the above three men in one.

The same applies to mothers.

But He – the LORD GOD – is always our Chief Father, even of body, soul, and spirit. It is He Who works through us giving our offspring Life & Light. He gives and blesses, and we are given a Free will to Thankfully receive or foolishly destroy what our Holy GOD blesses us with.

... there is no happiness like that of being loved by your fellow-creatures, and feeling that your presence is an addition to their comfort.

(Charlotte Bronte, Jane Eyre, 1890, p.298)

165

Q: We can read very different comments on *Matthew 11:11*.
What is yours?

A: I've read such opinions. Let us consider the Scripture.

Verily I say unto you, Among them that are born of women
there hath not risen a greater than John the Baptist: notwithstanding
he that is least in the Kingdom of Heaven is greater than he.
(Matthew 11:11)

Some Teachers commented on this Scripture comparing the spiritual Gifts given to Servants of GOD before and after Saint *John the Baptist*, not forgetting to mention *Matthew 11:3* as John's "doubt" and *Matthew 11:6* as Christ's "rebuke." Yet, it is not my business to comment on their commentaries, bearing in mind that many Holy Scriptures have more than one meaning. The Day will come when we all shall hear the Comments of our Father GOD.

What I see in *Matthew 11:11* is Lord Jesus' highest estimation of Brother *John the Baptist*, the first person who Truly recognized Him (*John 1:29*).

As for Jesus' concluding Words here, I'm of the opinion that every person in the Heavenly Kingdom is greater than whosoever outside it, even the most Worthy ones like John the Baptist. We touched on the subject of Salvation in chapter 77, considering that all Christians are yet subjected to the Final Judgment, even Separation of Sheep from goats (*Matthew 25:31-46*) on the Last Day.

For nobody is saved when he (she) has kindly "accepted" Christ Jesus as Lord & Savior, but rather when He will Mercifully accept us, where *many are called, but few are chosen*.

Kindly see chapters: 76 (Our Cross), 247 (Narrow Way to Strait Gate),
287 (We are not of the world), 308 (Salvation), & 450 (Spiritual Violence).

Scriptural references: *Matthew 7:21-23* – I never knew you.
Matthew 11:12 – Spirit War.
Philippians 3:18-19 – The enemies of the Cross of Christ.
Hebrews 6:4-6 – The fall away.
Hebrews 10:26-29 – The willful sin.

166

Q: How would you explain *Matthew 11:25-26?*

A: It is the Wisdom of GOD versus the wisdom of the world (common sense).

> *At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank Thee, O Father,*
> *Lord of Heaven and Earth, because Thou hast hid these things*
> *from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes.*
> *Even so, Father: for so it seemed Good in Thy Sight.*
> *(Matthew 11:25-26)*

The Wisdom of GOD is Worthy of all Praise for Eternal separating His Light from our darkness, His Wisdom from our reason, and His Truth from our lies.

Little children, not yet spoiled by the world, are more capable of learning & practicing Love. They need our care and bringing up, but, at the same time, ought to be taught of, as we are those *wise & prudent*, our adult reason standing in the way of Love, Faith, Hope, and Giving.

May *Matthew 11:25-26* help our better *Knowledge of GOD*.

> *I thank my Maker that in the midst of Judgment He has remembered Mercy. I humbly entreat my Redeemer to give me Strength to lead henceforth a Purer Life than I have done hitherto! (Charlotte Bronte, Jane Eyre, p.549)*

See chapters: 41 (Common sense) & 58 (K & U & W).

The Scriptures about Simplicity.

Joshua 1:8 & Philippians 4:8 ---------- Simple mind.
Proverbs 3:5 ---------- Simple Understanding.
Matthew 18:3 ---------- Be Simple.
Matthew 19:14, Mark 10:14, & Luke 18:16 ---------- Simple Kingdom.
Matthew 19:21, Mark 12:41-44, Acts 2:44-47 & 4:32-37 --- Simple Giving.
Matthew 21:21-22 & Philippians 4:6-7 ---------- Simple Faith.
Luke 10:29-37 & 1Corinthians 13:4-8 ---------- Simple Charity.
John 8:31-32 ---------- Simple Wisdom.
Romans 8:24-25 ---------- Simple Hope.
Philippians 3:8 ---------- Simple Knowledge.

Q: (1) I've been studying the Book of *Genesis* and need to understand some of the relationships and actions of Abraham and his lineage. (?)
Q: (2) In *Genesis 28:1,8*, we see that a woman of Canaan was not pleasing to Abraham as a wife for Isaac. (?)
Q: Esau took a wife from the Hittites, and that behavior was not praised. (?)
Q: Yet later, we see Joseph took a wife from the Egyptians, and it's seemingly glossed over. (?)
Q: (3) *Chapter 38* shows us that Tamar *knew* three men. Judah slept with what appeared to be a random woman, yet GOD blessed him. (?)
Q: (4) Why are certain groups considered appropriate while others are not?
Q: Neither the Canaanites nor the Egyptians followed GOD, so why wouldn't both be off-limits?
Q: If it was important to call one group out, why not do the same for others?
Q: (5) As for Judah, wouldn't his actions be considered adultery?
Q: (6) Why was it glossed over?
Q: (7) Why was Jesus a descendant of a seemingly adulterous relationship?

(Signed: *Christian, Evangelical*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) Please read chapter 29 (Mind your approach).
(2) *Genesis 28:1,8*. Correction: not *Abraham* & *Isaac*, but *Isaac* & *Jacob*.
You may also differentiate between a Command of GOD, whether direct or given through His Servant, and what a person said or done without consulting the LORD first.
Joseph's Wife was his only option there & then and, probably, not against the Will of LORD GOD.
(3) Judah, like his brothers (and all mankind), was far from sinlessness.
The same is about Tamar.
Blessings & curses of everybody, whether inherited or passed over to descendants, are regulated by the Harvest Law (kindly see it in the Index).
(4) There & then, there were Chosen People of GOD *Hebrews*, and here & now, there are *Christians* – as per LORD's Promises to Abraham.
The idolatrous people, tribes, or nations are such, who willingly rejected our Father GOD. It has always been their free will & choice.
(5 & 6) In the Bible, adultery is not welcome. The Repentance is.
(7) Lord Jesus' ancestry (like any other) is not sinless. So what?
In the Books of *Matthew* & *Luke*, Lord's lineage was given not to single out any better persons but to prove His reality. Besides, this record makes clear the age of our Earth.
Thank you.

167

Q: Does our Bible teach us something about *fighting* death?

A: Yes, it does.

A demon working *physical* death operates in the *natural* realm ("till death do us part"). He is backed by evil spirits creating sickness, unbelief, fear, murder, &c. His main objective is to stop GOD-given Life –

(1) where Righteous ones are concerned, to terminate the Works of the LORD done through them, and,

(2) for sinners, to put to end all their chances for Reconciliation.

However, all evil powers exist under the Supreme Control of the LORD GOD and are subject to His Word.
Please consider the following references.

Our choice of Eternal Life or eternal death: *Luke 16:31; John 3:36 & 11:25-26.*

For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is Life and Peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against GOD: for it is not subject to the Law of GOD, neither indeed can be. (Romans 8:5-7)

The Will of Holy LORD, our GOD: *John 6:39-40*.

The Power of GOD: *Deuteronomy 32:39, Matthew 10:28, Luke 8:54-55, & Revelations 1:18*.

But if the Spirit of Him that raised up Jesus from the dead dwell in you, He that raised up Christ from the dead shall also quicken your mortal bodies by His Spirit that dwelleth in you. (Romans 8:11)

The Power of His Love: *1Thessalonians 5:10, Hebrews 2:14-15, & Revelations 21:4*.

The Reward o' Faith: *Mark 10:29-30, Acts 16:31, & Romans 10:8-10*.

The Reward for Righteous: *Proverbs 10:2 & 11:4; Matthew 24:13 & John 8:51*.

Sorrow not: *2Corinthians 7:10 & 1Thessalonians 4:13*.

Our GOD-given Power: *Matthew 10:8 & Luke 10:19*.

The danger of compromise: *Hebrews 6:4-6 & 10:26-29*.

The end of death: *1Corinthians 15:26 & Revelations 20:14*.

The spiritual dumping ground of the second death: *Revelations 20:12-15 & 21:8*.

> *For when the terror, and the power, and the sting of death are taken away, it can no longer be considered death indeed. The greater therefore the Faith of the dying man is, the weaker is death in him. On the contrary, the weaker the Faith of the dying man is, the more bitter to him is death.*
>
> *(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, p.460)*

Sometimes when people die, they are not really dead. They have been entered by the demon named "death", which is an actual spirit creature. What it does to people, it makes them appear to be dead. It causes their bodies to cease exhibiting outward signs of life. A doctor examining them will find no pulse, no heartbeat, no breathing, and no warmth. Their bodies will go cold and begin to stiffen, just as a body who is actually dead. But this is a type of paralysis – a hold. The person may be aware and awake inside or may just be "paused", or unconscious. They may be "dead" for hours, days, or even a week. The supposed "dead" person may still really be alive even after being refrigerated in an icy morgue. The demon can hold on long enough that it actually kills the person. As in the case where a person pronounced dead is sealed into a coffin, they can actually suffocate from lack of oxygen. Many times, persons who were believed dead "came back to life" in the funeral home or at the burial service at the cemetery. The reason for this was the amount of Praying going on and the Presence of the Holy Spirit with those gathered together to pray forces the demon to let go – the people unknowingly cast the demon "death" out with their Prayer. ... Do not trust the physical outward signs of life or death as your indicator; instead, pray for GOD's Discernment to know if the person has truly died or is being held captive by the demon of death ...

(Danelle Ice, Dangerous But Good: A No-Nonsense Guide To Casting Out Demons & Evil Spirits, pp 54-56)

168

Q: How to understand *Matthew 10:12-13*?

A: In chapter 53, we differentiated the Peace of GOD from worldly peace.

It is written:

*And when ye come into an house, salute it *.*
And if the house be Worthy, let your Peace come upon it:
but if it be not Worthy, let your Peace return to you. (Matthew 10:12-13)

* *John Wycliffe* (1850 edition): *... grete ye it, and seyn, Pees to this hous.*
Douay-Rheims (1911 edition): *... salute it, saying: Peace be to this house.*

Most translations & editions stand upon "*salute it*", no *Peace* added.
However, *Verse 13* presumes *Shalom* (*Peace*) in that salutation.

We are supposed to salute people and their homes without any concern, whether or not they would answer us with the same, or whether they are Worthy in the Eyes of GOD. It is written: *salute*. May the *Holy Ghost* take care of the rest.

Our Heavenly Father Himself stands behind His Written Word, this Scripture being not an exception (*Isaiah 55:11 & Hebrews 4:12*).

Considering *Matthew 10:12-13* (within the context of *Verses 5-15*), we can see it as a part of the Ministry of Reconciliation (*Matthew 11:28-30; Colossians 1:20*). There & then, it was the backslidden Israel. Here & now, it concerns Christians, who, for some reason, left the Church.

That's why per *Matthew 10:12-15*,

– we are sent not to unbelievers or falsehood-followers (*Verse 5*),
– but to the lost Christians (*Verse 6*),
– preaching Confession unto Reconciliation & Salvation (V*erse 7*),
– backing up our Words by the Power of GOD (*Verse 8*),
– believing the LORD is our Provider (*Verses 9-10*),
– seeking Christian backup (*Verse 11*),
– coming in Peace (*Verses 12-13*),
– leaving unbelieving ones to the Holy Ghost (see *Verses 14-15*).

169

Q: According to *Acts 1:26*, Brother *Matthias* got inaugurated the *Apostle*.
How come, Brother *Saul*, later named *Paul*, had also been chosen?

A: Before we proceed any further, we have to find the definition for "*Apostle.*"

John Robinson's Theological Dictionary (1835) runs,
Apostle ... properly signifies a Messenger, or person sent by another on some business. Hence, by way of Eminence, it denotes one of the Disciples commissioned by Jesus Christ to preach the Gospel ...

Zondervan Compact Bible Dictionary runs,
Apostle (one sent forth, a Messenger) – one chosen and sent with a Special Commission as the fully authorized Representative of the Sender.

Now, we can consider the Scripture.

And they appointed two,
Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias. (Acts 1:23)

The keywords here are, "they appointed two". Who were those they? – Men. The word "two" stands for the number of choices the LORD GOD was limited to take. But Who had chosen the first Twelve? – Jesus, the Christ of GOD, led by His Holy Spirit. And who in the World could have ever limited His Will?
Well, go on.

And they prayed, and said, Thou, LORD, which knowest the hearts of all men, shew whether of these two Thou hast chosen ... (Acts 1:24)

Call me slow, but how to know the Holy Will of Father GOD offering Him only *two* "strongly recommended" options?

And they gave forth their lots; and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with eleven Apostles. (Acts 1:26)

No disrespect to those First Apostles of Lord Jesus – His Faithful Holy Martyrs – in the case of *Acts 1:15-26*, they were all wrong. And nothing is extraordinary here – we all are liable to and do err now & again.
However, whatever mistakes can be avoided by standing firm on *Acts 1:8*, that is, receiving, listening, and following the *Holy Spirit of GOD*.
As for the Apostle Paul, his Commission, well described in the *Book of Acts*, was given by our Lord Jesus.

170

Q: It is written:

The lot is cast into the lap;
but the whole disposing thereof is of the LORD. (Proverbs 16:33)

The question is: can we cast a lot to communicate with Father GOD?

A: Yes, we can. However, it is not the best way to know His Holy Will.

First, whether using dices, or coins, or other things, we should previously think well and write down as many ways (not contradicting the Holy Bible) as we can for the LORD to compare them with His Will, half of the options being all forms of *Yes*, and half those of *No*. Kindly include such suggested answers as "nothing of the above named" and "stop it, for you are not yet ready".

Second, we should approach it Prayerfully and be ready to follow the outcome no matter what. Please note that not following the lot cast so seriously is a sin of disobedience to GOD. In *Numbers Chapter 22*, kindly compare *Verses 12 & 22*. (Kindly see chapter 552 – *And they shall know that I am the LORD*).

Therefore it is much better (and safe) to follow other ways of Communion with GOD (see chapter 32). Patiently train yourself to hear the Still Small Voice of His Holy Spirit (see chapter 181). Withdraw yourself from casting a lot (hoping for a "convenient" outcome) and get tempted to listen to worldly reason later.
The above is not just a guess. I speak from my sorrowful experience.

Reading the following Scriptures, you may consider how the way of a lot commanded by the LORD, our GOD, was followed by His People –

Borders: *Numbers 26:52-56, 33:54; Joshua 13:6; Ezekiel 47:22; & Acts 13:19*.
To order of Church Service: *1Chronicles 24:5, 25:8; & Luke 1:9*.
In searching for the right person: *Nehemiah 11:1*.
Solving a problem: *1Samuel 14:9-10, Esther 3:7, & Proverbs 18:18*.
The reason to follow: *Psalms 16:5, Proverbs 16:33, & Isaiah 34:17*.
And the wrong way: *Acts 1:15-26*. See chapter 169 (The Twelfth Apostle).

... many who, with apparent conscientiousness enquire the Truth and Will of GOD, prove indisposed to embrace the one, or to practice the other ...
(Thomas Scott, The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes ...)

171

Q: Does our Bible say something at what age a child should start reading it?

A: It does not strictly specify that. However, in *Mark 5:42-43*, we can read about the *spiritual starvation* – the reason for *death* – at 12 years old.

And straightway the damsel arose, and walked; for she was of the age of twelve years. And they were astonished with a great astonishment. And He charged them straitly that no man should know it; and commanded that something should be given her to eat.
(Mark 5:42-43)

I exclude that the damsel's parents were so negligent or impoverished that they could have failed to give their daughter her *natural* food enough.
Neither do I accept opinions that Jesus had commanded so for the proof of raising the dead up. There were other Miracles of that kind. But such a Command is recorded only in this particular case, along with the age of *twelve* mentioned. Please compare *2Kings 21:1-2* & *Chronicles 33:1-2* with *Luke 2:42*.

In chapter 72, we spoke about the reason for the Parables and noted the simple fact that Lord Jesus had never profoundly explained anything He talked or done. No, He did not speak mysteries. His Words – which He, by *John 12:39-50*, attributed to Father GOD – demanded all our *Faith* and a hard work of the *mind*.

That's why here, we encounter again the unanswered questions, *why* no man should know it and *why* something should be given her to eat. The first question we ask more than once when reading the Gospels. So, we tried to answer it in chapter 100. As for the second one, I can see no other explanation other than that the parents had provided their child with everything but the Right *spiritual* food. Even so, our Lord said so, and off He went. That was His custom.

In chapter 734, we are back to the question of the Word & our children.

Q: What are spiritual beings?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, February 2021.)

A: They are GOD – Father, Son, the Holy Ghost; His Holy Angels; humans; Satan & his demons. All spiritual beings are eternal. Those of GOD belongs to the Heavenly Kingdom & Eternal Life, those of Satan – to eternal death.

172

Q: Brother, how to fight *fear?*

A: There is only one way proven best so far – *by the Word of GOD*.

The evil of *fear* is not as subtle as a compromise or common sense (worldly reason). The last two are used by evil spirits to back the fear up and lie us into some "peaceable solution" to whatever "fearful" (devil-made) problem.
Fear is a needful weapon for demons since fearful folks are folks defeated.

All satanic darts (wrong thoughts) are aimed at our minds to sow worry, anxiety, nervousness, apprehension, uneasiness, &c., based upon a misunderstanding of evil events & problems around, as well as their "impending" consequences.
Eventually, thoughts of worry become the mental state of fear. This fatal attitude is based solely & firmly upon such demonic ground as unbelief & doubt.
The devil's purpose is creating a fearful mess: stress, panic, anguish, depression, mental disorder, suicide, death.

May we spend our GOD-given lifetime on Communion with Him by studying His Written Word and meditating therein, praying alone and united, preaching to Christians and heathen, and serving Ministries. Thus we grow up intellectually and get stronger spiritually to be always ready to lay down our lives for Christ.

Please consider the following references.

Real & present danger: *Zechariah 13:7* & *Matthew 26:56* – Holy Will of GOD.
Matthew 18:18-20 – That works for Christians.
Mark 16:17-18 – The real Power o' Faith.
John 14:14 – Take Him up at His Word.

Train yourself spiritually: *Psalms 31:24, Jeremiah 12:5, & 1John 5:18.*

Our spiritual weapons: *Psalms 46:1-3, Mark 5:36, Ephesians 6:10-18, 2Timothy 1:7, & 1John 4:18.*

Guard your mind: *Isaiah 26:3, 2Corinthians 10:5, & Philippians 3:18-19.*

The LORD GOD is with you: *Joshua 1:9; Isaiah 51:12-13, 54:15-17; Matthew 28:20; Luke 12:11-12; & John 10:28-29.*

The Sacred Fear of GOD: *Matthew 10:28 & Luke 12:4-5,*

The Peace of GOD: *Matthew 5:10-12 & John 14:27.*

... why should I allow myself to be frightened by these wretched people, who indeed rage and foam in hostility against GOD, but who suddenly vanish like smoke or like poor soap-bubbles?

(Martin Luther, Sermon On The Mount, page 85)

John Fox, Book Of Martyrs:

Timothy was the celebrated Disciple of St. Paul, and Bishop of Ephesus, where he zealously governed the Church until A.D. 97. At this period, as the pagans were about to celebrate a feast called Catagogion, Timothy, meeting the procession, severely reproved them for their ridiculous idolatry, which so exasperated the people that they fell upon him with their clubs, and beat him in so dreadful a manner that he expired of the bruises two days later.

(Persecutions under Domitian, A.D. 81)

At Utica, a most terrible tragedy was exhibited: three hundred Christians were, by the orders of the proconsul, placed round a burning limekil. A pan of coals and incense being prepared, they were commanded either to sacrifice to Jupiter, or to be thrown into the kiln. Unanimously refusing, they bravely jumped into the pit, and were immediately suffocated. (Persecutions under Valerian, A.D. 257)

Romanus, a native of Palestine, was Deacon of the Church of Caesarea at the time of the commencement of Diocletian's persecution. Being condemned for his Faith at Antioch, he was scourged, put to the rack, his body torn with hooks, his flesh cut with knives, his face scarified, his teeth beaten from their sockets, and his hair plucked up by the roots. Soon after he was ordered to be strangled ...

(Persecutions Under Diocletian, A.D. 303)

Kindly see chapters: 99 (A cup of water) & 570 (Our Christian Courage).

Relevant books: *John Fox, Book Of Martyrs*
Kenneth Copeland, Freedom From Fear

Relevant thoughtful movies: *Paul, Apostle Of Christ*
Silence
Hacksaw Ridge

173

Q: How to comprehend *Matthew 22:11-14?*

A: Those are Verses ending the *Parable of Great Supper* – Lord Jesus' picture of the Kingdom of Heaven, Salvation, and hell.

> *And when the King came in to see the guests, He saw there a man which had not on a Wedding Garment: And He saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a Wedding Garment? And he was speechless. Then said the King to the servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. For many are called, but few are chosen. (Matthew 22:11-14)*

Brother *William Barclay* wrote,

> *Too often we go to GOD's House with no Preparation at all; if every man and woman in our Congregations came to Church prepared to Worship, after a little Prayer, a little thought, and a little self-examination, then Worship would be Worship indeed – the Worship in which and through which things happen in men's souls and in the Life of the Church and in the affairs of the world.*

I agree with Brother Barclay regarding compulsory self-preparation before *every* Church Service, Yea, and before *every* Prayer, Study, or Ministry Work. That cannot be just commanded & followed – we should take the pain to work up a sort of Right habit. Don't be disappointed by such a "hardship". Read again this Powerful Scripture, which we earlier (in chapters 77 & 165) discussed:

> *... from the days of John the Baptist until now the Kingdom of Heaven suffereth Violence, and the Violent take it by Force. (Matthew 11:12)*

But what are the *Wedding Garments* all about? Christians should not think that the Outfit of Righteousness either Holiness will be kindly given us later, before entering the Promised Kingdom, and there is little we can do about it now. No. Right now, straight away, our Sacrifice of Time to GOD in Bible Study, Prayer, Meditation, and Ministry Works should dress ourselves up in Right-Standing with Him. That would never allow us to show up late to the Service, and there be absent in mind while present in the body. We won't forget our Prayer Devotions and Small Groups or cut the Sacrificial Giving to GOD. Don't serve two masters changing into Godliness in the Church and back into worldliness outside it.

174

Q: How to preach Sobriety & Healthy Life, that is, staying off alcohol, drugs, tobacco?

A: First of all, *do* what you preach to avoid hypocrisy. No matter if you sinned this or that way in your past, make sure it has been confessed & gone.

Let your Light so shine before men, that they may see your Good Works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven. (Matthew 5:16)

Our first audience to preach the Healthy Life to is *families*. When the last is not the Christian ones, we should speak to parents about Salvation, the Kingdom of Heaven, Life Eternal, the Holy Bible.

When those seeds don't fall on the good ground, switch the subject to physical exercises & bodily health – both are neither hard nor impossible. And such garbage as alcohol, drugs & tobacco hardly coexists with sport & healthiness.

Don't ever accept such a counterargument as "no time". Everybody manages to have it for TV. (Isn't the last in every home?) Testify how your sacrificing time to Father GOD (e.g., Bible Study) provides you more of it from Him in return.

The same is correct about such an excuse as "no health". The less health, the more exercises are needed, only find the right ones. Underline the Promised Healing Power of GOD. Again, mind the importance of a personal example.

Our second audience is Teachers – from Elementary to University institutions. The more Teachers we approach & convince to be those needful models of health, the healthier our kids and society will be.

Cross-references: "Q & A" chapters 60 (Christian Family),
63 (Sports), 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit),
294 (Fight the evil of addictions), & 589 (The evil of alcoholism).

Your Scriptures: *Joshua 1:9 & Luke 10:16* – The LORD, our GOD, is with us.
Isaiah 53:1 & Matthew 7:6 – Be ever ready to meet unbelief.
Matthew 10:8 & 1Corinthians 2:4-5 – Prove your words.
2Corinthians 4:4 – Be ready for satanic resistance.

175

Q: Please explain Jesus' *Parable about Ten Bridesmaids* (a.k.a., the *Parable of the Ten Virgins*), *Matthew 25:1-13*.

A: I have read & heard many explanations of this Parable, including a mere plagiary without due references to first authors. Whatever.

> *1 Then shall the Kingdom of Heaven be likened unto ten virgins, which took their lamps, and went forth to meet the Bridegroom. 2 And five of them were Wise, and five were foolish. 3 They that were foolish took their lamps, and took no oil with them: 4 But the wise took oil in their vessels with their lamps. 5 While the Bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept. 6 And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the Bridegroom cometh; go ye out to meet Him. 7 Then all those virgins arose, and trimmed their lamps. 8 And the foolish said unto the Wise, Give us of your Oil; for our lamps are gone out. 9 But the Wise answered, saying, Not so; lest there be not enough for us and you: but go ye rather to them that sell, and buy for yourselves. 10 And while they went to buy, the Bridegroom came; and they that were ready went in with Him to the Marriage: and the Door was shut. 11 Afterward came also the other virgins, saying, Lord, Lord, open to us. 12 But He answered and said, Verily I say unto you, I know you not. 13 Watch therefore, for ye know neither the day nor the hour wherein the Son of Man cometh.*
>
> *(Matthew 25:1-13)*

Brother *John Calvin* in his respective comments wrote:

> *... the plain and natural meaning of the whole is, that it is not enough to have ardent zeal for a short time, if we have not also a constancy that never tires ... as the wick of the lamp, if it be not supplied with oil, gradually dries up, and loses its brightness, Christ now says, that Believers need to have incessant supplies of Courage, to support the Flame which is kindled in their hearts, otherwise their Zeal will fall ere they have completed the Journey.*
>
> *(Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists, Matthew, Mark, and Luke, volume third, p.170)*

True, isn't it? Now, let us think on. Read this Good Parallel:

Ye are the Light of the world ...
Let your Light so shine before men, that they may see your Good Works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven. (Matthew 5:14,16)

I believe, as the *Light* is a chief point in the above Scripture, so it is in the Parable about Ten Bridesmaids. What was the problem – oil, vessels, lamps, &c., and what terms the Lord used to describe it – is not important at all. Spoken modern, it could have been batteries, collectors, accumulators, &c. There is one thing Lord Jesus made crystal clear: *we are the Light*. Think, therefore, whether *you* give all the Light expected of *you*.

Many Scriptures in our Holy Bible have more than one interpretation and teach us more than one Lesson. *Matthew 25:1-13* is not an exception. What about *Faith* and the *Works of Faith*? Verily, *James 2:14-26* is a good parallel.
Therefore, in its general meaning, *Matthew 25:1-13* teaches us to be very careful when sorting out our priorities. Otherwise, when taking such an important thing as *Lamp*, we may forget to take the second to it, even *Oil*.

Note, *Verses 8-9* do not speak about any lack of *Love* among Believers. Nay.
We cannot *parasitically* depend on our Oneness in the Church and enter the Promised Kingdom of Heaven sharing the Works of other Christians and misunderstanding the Grace of the LORD, our GOD.

See chapters: 15 (GOD First), 56 (The Test of Giving), 76 (Our Cross),
241 (The Salt), & 434 (Salt & Light).

Q: When praying, is there any Biblical evidence to suggest a candle would make the Prayer better heard?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: There is not a word "*candle*" in the Written Word of GOD. But many a time, you can find another word – *fire* (*Fire)* there. Within the context, it may stand for many things of GOD, such as Love or Indignation. Or our Zeal. Or the fire of hell.
You may see the first part of this chapter and read the commentary of Brother John Calvin. Welcome to the Index section too.

But speaking of a Prayer heard & answered by our Father GOD, a candle itself helps little. We should wholeheartedly follow the LORD. Then and only then our Prayers are heard. Read, for instance, *Isaiah Chapter 58*.

Then shalt thou call, and the LORD shall answer;
thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am. (Isaiah 58:9)

176

Q: Brother, how to fight the *evil of pride*?

A: First, we ought to define that evil.

> *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary (2001)* provides several denotations which may be found helpful, namely,
>
> *1. a high or inordinate opinion of one's own dignity, importance, merit, or superiority, whether as cherished in the mind or as displayed in bearing, conduct, etc.*
> *2. the state or feeling of being proud.*
> *3. a becoming or dignified sense of what is due to oneself or one's position or character; self-respect, self-esteem.*
> *4. pleasure or satisfaction taken in something done by or belonging to oneself or believed to reflect credit upon oneself ...*

Pride may also be defined as a *spiritual infection* (gradually developing into a hard-headed, obdurate, obstinate, stubborn attitude). It lies us into believing that we are spiritually, intellectually, and physically strong enough to live by our (so little) understanding & experience without the Truth of GOD.

But what does the Holy Bible say about pride?

Our Father GOD had condemned this evil (including every worldly honor, "proper" or professional or national pride, prestige, reputation, etc.):

Numbers 15:30, Proverbs 16:5, Isaiah 23:9, & 1Corinthians 4:7.

The LORD teaches us to fight pride by Humility and giving Glory to GOD:

Proverbs 11:2, 16:18-19; Jeremiah 9:23-24;
John 3:27; 1Corinthians 1:27-31; Galatians 6:14; Ephesians 2:8-9, 3:20-21;
James 1:17, 4:10; & 1Peter 5:5.

We should not underestimate the enemy – the demon tempting to pride – which causes dangerous separation from our Heavenly Father and leads to destruction:

Deuteronomy 8:13-20, Proverbs 16:18, Jeremiah 49:16, & Habakkuk 2:4.

That's why we ought to purify our heart & mind to uproot that evil:

Jeremiah 13:15 & 2Corinthians 10:5.

And this is the Word to Kings and all men of Authority: *Deuteronomy 17:18-20.*

Mind The Example of our Blessed Lord:

> *All Power is given unto Me in Heaven and in Earth. (Matthew 28:18)*

Christ Jesus thus acknowledged Him – the Holy LORD GOD our Father – Who alone is Able to give that Power.

> *And this indeed is the common pestilence of our nature. We rest not content with the Gifts which GOD has bestowed upon us, but abuse them through pride, and insult our Bountiful Creator and Giver.*
>
> *(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, page 325)*

One of the saddest observations I've made centers around how reluctant many of us are to learn from the people closest to us – our parents, spouses, children, and friends. Rather than being open to learning, we close ourselves off out of embarrassment, fear, stubbornness, or pride ... It's sad, because often the people closest to us know us the best. They are sometimes able to see ways in which we are acting in a self-defeating manner and can offer very simple solutions. If we are too proud, or stubborn to learn, we lose out on some wonderful, simple ways to improve our lives. I have tried to remain open to the suggestions of my friends and family. In fact, I have gone so far as to ask certain members of my family and a few of my friends, "What are some of my blind spots?" Not only does this make the person you are asking feel wanted and special, but you end up getting some terrific advice. It's such a simple shortcut for growth, yet almost no one uses it. All it takes is a little courage and humility, and the ability to let go of your ego ... (Richard Carlson, Don't Sweat The Small Stuff, ch 68)

Even so, when we have ever done something worthy, may the Holy Spirit of GOD remind us:

> *Now unto Him that is Able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the Power that worketh in us, unto Him be Glory in the Church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, World without end. Amen. (Ephesians 3:20-21)*

177

Q: How to better discriminate between *Truth* and *lie* and separate them?

A: To do that, we ought to define them both by the *Holy Scriptures.*

It is written,

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

So, define *Truth* as the Written Word of GOD, the last represented, interpreted, and taught by our Lord Jesus. (See *Revelation 19:10* quoted in chapter 180).

Why do ye not understand My Speech? even because ye cannot hear My Word.
Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do.
He was a murderer from the Beginning, and abode not in the Truth,
because there is no Truth in him. When he speaketh a lie,
he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it.
And because I tell you the Truth, ye believe Me not. (John 8:43-45)

Hence, a *lie* is whatsoever statement, teaching, information, etc., contradicting, distorting, or questioning the Holy Scriptures in whatever way and to any extent.
We ought to remember that lying is the chief way of the devil.
Note a lie is not always easily recognized as such. Masterly masqueraded by the demons, that evil gets into the minds of Believers who overestimate the opinions of some Preachers, Teachers, and Priests. Unfortunately, those Servants of GOD may also err, being, in turn, wrongly taught by other "recognized" sources.
GOD's People should never underestimate their real enemy – Satan. The lying one is not that stupid to speak up big lies. It is rather enough for him to add just a bit of falsehood into, say, commentaries to the Holy Scriptures or a textbook.

The Written Word of GOD is the only source of Truth (see *John 14:6* above), and to follow the Word is the only way to prove (and know more of) that Truth.

If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My Disciples indeed;
and ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free. (John 8:31-32)

See relevant chapters: 31 (Speaking the Truth in Love), 100 (Tell no man),
103 (Avoid errors), 129 (Ninth Commandment),
11 (Let GOD be True, but every man a liar), & 631 (The false worship).

Q: Many folks like to point out that religious people and converts are nothing more than “sheep indoctrinated by flawed ideologies”. (?)
Q: Is it possible to be *indoctrinated* by atheism?
Q: And what do you classify as *indoctrination*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: Yes, *indoctrination* is possible. Those “many folks” are living proof of that. See *Romans 2:1*. As for my classification of *indoctrination*, and not much contradicting *Webster’s Unabridged Dictionary (2001)*, it is the *satanic brainwash*.

But if our Gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:
in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them
which believe not, lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ,
Who is the Image of GOD, should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:3-4)

Q: Why do you think GOD tolerates atheists, even those who are outright rude to anyone, even remotely religious? It doesn’t make much *sense* for Him to allow it. Even Free will does seem *reasonable s*ince the Bible showed GOD as the One Who doesn’t permit a lot of things.
Q: So, why doesn’t He mind those slandering His Name?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Edited.)

A: The LORD GOD does not have *our* sense & reason.

If we believe not,
yet He abideth Faithful: He cannot deny Himself. (2Timothy 2:13)

The LORD is not slack concerning His Promise, as some men count slackness;
but is Longsuffering to usward, not willing that any should perish,
but that all should come to Repentance. (2Peter 3:9)

Q: If the way to Heaven is through Jesus Christ,
does it mean there are six million Jews in hell with Hitler?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: Cannot answer. Only Father GOD determines our Eternal destiny.
See chapter 707 (Life and afterlife).

... judge nothing before the Time,
until the Lord come, Who both will bring to Light
the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts:
and then shall every man have Praise of GOD. (1Corinthians 4:5)

178

Q: How to interpret the *Parable of Mustard Seed* written down in *Matthew 13:31-32, Mark 4:30-32,* and *Luke 13:18-19*?

A: Most of the expositors saw the Miraculous Growth of Christianity out of small Beginnings. Here, we won't repeat that good point.

Instead, we can presume that that *seed* is also the Word of GOD spoken by Him through a Believer and heard by an unbeliever. If the Word falls on good ground of the heart, it is welcome there by the conscience. It is passed to the mind to get fed on the Scripture and find the way to follow it.

... behold, the Kingdom of GOD is within you. (Luke 17:21)

That *Kingdom within* is in the human spirit (heart). Why? Because we all created in the Image & Likeness of GOD. So, whether or not defiled by the devil, we remain His Creation during this lifespan.

For to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope ... (Ecclesiastes 9:4)

Now, to *use* this (as well as every other) Parable of Lord Jesus, we ought to wholeheartedly *believe* in and *do* what we preach.

Q: Please help me understand *Amos 9:13.*
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: Let me rewrite the *King James Version* you quoted in your good post, and change the capitalization per the rules of our book.
Also, in brackets, I put my notes.

Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that the Plowman shall overtake the Reaper (Great will be the Harvest of Christian Converts),
and the Treader of Grapes him that soweth Seed (ditto)*;*
and the mountains shall drop Sweet Wine (the Nature proves the Truth),
and all the hills shall melt (the old worldly values will be gone).
(Amos 9:13)

You may also visit *https://www.biblegateway.com* and find the *Amplified Bible* and the *Expanded Bible* Translations – the parallel Truth. Thank you.

179

Q: Brother, do we need the *tongues unknown* in Prayer?

A: Yes, we do.

First, that kind of Prayer is offered up according to the Will of GOD:

> *... the Spirit doth help our weaknesses; for, what we may pray for, as it behoveth us, we have not known, but the Spirit Himself doth make Intercession for us with groanings unutterable, and He Who is searching the hearts hath known what is the Mind of the Spirit, because according to GOD He doth intercede for Saints.*
>
> *(Romans 8:26-27, Robert Young's Literal Translation, 1898)*

Second, a Prayer in tongues works up our Edification. *1Corinthians 14:2,4,14*.

The above two reasons only should raise our attention to this particular spiritual Gift, which is received at the *Baptism in the Holy Ghost* (see chapter 65).

> *I have found in my own life that the more I pray and worship GOD in tongues, the more Manifestation of other Gifts of the Spirit I have. The less I talk in tongues, the less Manifestation I have. Speaking with tongues is the door into the rest of the spiritual Gifts. (Kenneth Hagin, Why Tongues?)*

References.

> *Isaiah 28:11 – stammering lips and another tongue ...*
> *Mark 16:17 – they shall speak with new tongues ...*
> *Acts 2:4 – began to speak with other tongues ...*

Relevant reading: *Kenneth E. Hagin, Praying To Get Results*
Why Tongues?

The movies about the Power of Prayer:

Robber Of The Cruel Streets	*Miracles From Heaven*
Hacksaw Ridge	*Breakthrough*
The Island	*War Room*

180

Q: Brother, how to receive, recognize, and use the *Gift of Prophecy* spoken about in *The First Epistle to Corinthians, Chapter 14?*

A: Since it is a *Gift*, we may and do receive it without asking, by the Holy Will of GOD. Yet, per *1Corinthians 14:1*, we are supposed to desire, pray for, and receive it, subject to our *following after Charity.*

Follow after Charity, and desire Spiritual Gifts,
but rather that ye may prophesy. (1Corinthians 14:1)

You may see how the spiritual Gifts worked in and were used by Lord Jesus.

And the Spirit of the LORD shall rest upon Him,
the Spirit of Wisdom and Understanding, the Spirit of Counsel and Might,
the Spirit of Knowledge and of the Fear of the LORD; and shall make Him
of quick Understanding in the Fear of the LORD: and He shall not judge
after the sight of His eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of His ears:
But with Righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with Equity
for the Meek of the Earth: and He shall smite the Earth with the Rod
of His mouth, and with the Breath of His lips shall He slay the wicked.
(Isaiah 11:2-4)

To expect Father GOD to answer our Prayer for the Gift of Prophecy – which is the best *Communion with Him* – we ought to walk GOD-ward. Read *Luke 15:20*.

Christians receive & walk in that Gift, not as the thieves who misused that Blessing or, worse, become the servants of Satan. They accepted demonic backup to show up their “extrasensory abilities”, spread around lies, and teach people the superstitious fear of satanic dung. Nay! Following the Holy Will of GOD, we should be Wise & Courageous.

Who is the Wise Man, that may understand this?
And who is he to whom the Mouth of the LORD hath spoken, that he may
declare it, for what the land perisheth and is burned up like a wilderness,
that none passeth through? (Jeremiah 9:12)

And seekest thou great things for thyself? Seek them not: for, behold,
I will bring evil upon all flesh, saith the LORD: but thy Life will I give unto thee
for a prey in all places whither thou goest. (Jeremiah 45:5)

When Father GOD answers our Prayers and gives us the Spirit of Prophecy, we ought to recognize Him by His Word.

Howbeit when He, the Spirit of Truth, is come, He will guide you into all Truth: for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear, that shall He speak: and He will shew you things to come. (John 16:13)

... For the substance (essence) of the Truth revealed by Jesus is the Spirit of all Prophecy [the Vital Breath, the Inspiration of all Inspired Preaching and Interpretation of the Divine Will and Purpose ...] (Revelation 19:10, Amplified Bible)

Note well,

... in them is fulfilled the Prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive ... (Matthew 13:14)

... Prophesying serveth not for them that believe not, but for them which believe. (1Corinthians 14:22)

Therefore,

Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your Pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you. (Matthew 7:6)

See relevant chapters: 52 (Knowledge of GOD), 181 (The Voice of GOD), 236 (Preaching in the Spirit), 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit), & 565 (The Watchman).

Scripture further references: *2Peter 1:19-21* – Prophecy & the Word of GOD.
1John 4:1-2 – Single out the Holy Spirit of GOD.

Good reading: *Kenneth Hagin, The Gift Of Prophecy*
Kenneth Copeland, Sensitivity Of Heart

The movies about Prophets: *The Ten Commandments*
Paul, Apostle Of Christ
The Song Of Bernadette
Amazing Love
Acts
The Island

181

Q: Brother, how to hear the Voice of GOD?

A: As we've already made clear in the previous conversation, to *hear* Him, one ought to *walk* GOD-ward.

To do that, we should put the LORD in His due first place and sacrifice our time for Communion with Him (see chapter 32). We ought to Live the Fast Life (*Isaiah 58*), value the Bible Study (*Hosea 4:6*), Prayers & Intercessions (*Jeremiah 33:3*), and Confessions (*1John 1:8-10*). Prove your Love for your Heavenly Father by Sacrificial Giving (*Malachi 3:10*).
In this book, we discussed all these subjects. Please see the Index section.
On the other hand, the more we communicate (other than Preaching the Gospel) and compromise with *unbelievers*, the less able we are to hear the *Still Small Voice* of God Holy Spirit. Note *Psalms 39:1-2 & Matthew 7:6*.

I believe the following Scriptures – taken seriously enough – may be found very helpful by every Christian willing to hear the Voice of our Father GOD.

Joshua 1:8; Psalms 95:7-8; Proverbs 1:23; Ecclesiastes 5:1;
Isaiah 30:20-21 & 58:6-14; Mark 13:11; 2Corinthians 10:5; & *Hebrews 3:15.*

Try these books: *Kenneth Copeland, Sensitivity Of Heart*
Gloria Copeland, Walk In The Spirit

Q: How can you tell the difference between GOD speaking to you and your just making it up?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: Speaking of myself only, I cannot memorize all the Bible by heart. Moreover, it is above my abilities to quickly find the right Scripture every time I speak, read, or write on whatever subject.

But GOD promised,

I will pour out My Spirit unto you,
I will make known My Words unto you. (Proverbs 1:23)

I'm also sure that "making it up" will stop my hearing from Him.
Please also see the Index section for *Communion with GOD*.

182

Q: What is your opinion as to how to fight *sexual perversions* – homosexuality, bisexuality, and so on?

A: Actually, that "so on" may stand for a great lot of other *evils* – pedophilia, necrophilia, zoophilia – to name a few.
Sexologists & psychopathologists know more of the sort.

Belonging neither with those professionals nor their area of specialization, I would (from a Christian viewpoint) add to the sad list of perversions such evils as *lust*, *fornication*, *adultery*, and *porno business*.

Earlier, we discussed such topics as a Christian Country (chapter 55), Christian Family (chapter 60), and Christian Education (chapter 70). All are relevant here, for it is much easier to prevent a fire than to fight it. However, once there are those perversions in the world we live in, it is our job to exterminate them.

In many non-Christian countries, those sinners are called "sexual minorities". The latter managed to get their back-up from atheistic science and legislation, an all-tolerant society, and perverted "churches". But to have GOD on their side remains impossible. It is equally out of the question for rulers, scientists, citizens, legislators, business-people, or Clergymen to serve the LORD and Satan at once.

> We are not meant to do GOD's Job – bringing the sinners to Confession & Repentance unto Salvation. We must do ours – even LORD's Work through ourselves – *preach* the Word of Truth and *pray* for GOD's Mighty Rod of Correction to come on perverts and their falsely compassionate supporters.

Q: Okay. But what can you advise to those who have already made what they call "gender transition", meaning, *if* they repent?

A: I would advise the way quite painful but proving their Repentance.
In the first place, the sinner should confess to LORD GOD that offense against His Word – in particular, *Genesis Chapter 1 Verses 27 & 31*.

The sinner should pray to be forgiven & supported by Father GOD to make due restoration in His Creature – heart, mind, and body. A Prayer Team of a Local Church might do well to back that wayward person up.
And then, go ahead to doctors (preferably, those who participated in that sin) and do everything backward. It is possible, but as you said *if* they repent.

The following is our *Spirit Sword*, even *Thus Saith the LORD.*

Exodus 20:14 & Deuteronomy 5:18 – the Seventh Commandment;
Exodus 22:19 – the death punishment for sex with animals;
Leviticus 18 – the Word against sexual abominations;
Leviticus 20:10-21 – GOD-ordained punishments for sexual perversions;
Deuteronomy 21:1-4 – divorce;
Deuteronomy 22:13-30 – dealing with sexual immorality;
Deuteronomy 23:17 – no whores, no perverts;
Deuteronomy 27:20-23 – the cursed perversions;
Psalms 101:3 & 119:37 – the Word against pornography;
Proverbs 6:20-35, 7:1-27, & 23:27 – the Warning against adultery;
Proverbs 27:20 – the evil eyes;
Hosea 4:13-14 – the perversions are inherited curses for sins;
Malachi 2:13-16 – the Faithfulness ordained;
Matthew 5:27-32 & 19:3-9 – the Word against adultery;
Matthew 6:23 – the evil eyes;
Romans 1:26-27 – the perversions are GOD's Punishment for sin;
Romans 1:32 – the evil mind;
1Corinthians 5:1-13 – purify the Church;
1Corinthians 6:15-20 – flee sexual immorality;
Ephesians 5:3 – flee fornication and all uncleanness;
James 4:4 – adulterers & adulteresses are the enemies of GOD;
Jude 1:7 – the Everlasting Fire is waiting for perverts.

Q: Is it acceptable to sin for the sake of the Gospel? Paul talks a lot about the limits to Christian Freedom in *1Corinthians 8-10.* And those limits are primarily defined around what is Good for the Gospel.
Q: Shall we limit our range of acceptable actions in that regard?
Q: Would it be possible to do the opposite?
Q: For example, would it be morally okay to *accept immoral sexual relations* into the Church because it might be for the Betterment of the Gospel?
Q: If not, why?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: Negative on all that. Any sin is not “acceptable”, as it is against the Gospel. Tell the devil to shut up. *Matthew 4:10; 1John 5:18; &c.* See chapter 40. In *1Corinthians Chapters 8-10*, kindly find relevant *8:9; 9:27;* & *10:8,9,21*. See chapter 126 (The Seventh Commandment) and the Index.

183

Q: Are there in the *Lord's Prayer* some *Healing Words*?

A: Yes, there are. Behold this line,

And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. (Matthew 6:12)

Here, the first word *forgive* is indeed a Healing one and, *as we forgive our debtors* is the Lord's Compulsory Condition thereof.
Consider the following Parallel.

And, behold, they brought to Him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their Faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of Good cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee ... But that ye may know that the Son of Man hath Power on Earth to forgive sins, (then saith He to the sick of the palsy), Arise, take up thy bed, and go unto thine house. And he arose, and departed to his house. (Matthew 9:2,6-7)

In the above Scripture, we can see these two notable spiritual connections:
sin – sickness and *Forgiving – Healing*.

There are also these alleviating Words in the Lord's Prayer:

And lead us away from temptations, but deliver us from evil ... (Matthew 6:13)*

By this Verse, we seek the needful Help to avoid any *sin*, the *spiritual weakness* & *physical sickness* being the contingent & inevitable evil sequels thereof.

So, the Words of *Matthew 6:12,13* are Prayer & Intercession to our Father GOD for Merciful *Forgiving* and, therefore, *Health & Healing*.

Kindly see chapters: 57 (The Lord's Prayer – Guidance), 67 (Healing Promises), 112 (The Lord's Prayer – Intercession), & 253 (The Prayer o' Faith).

The further references: *Exodus 15:26* – Promised Healing and Condition.
Psalms 38:3 & John 5:14 – Sin & sickness.
Matthew 26:41 – Pray for Support of the Spirit.
James 1:13-15 – A temptation explained.

* Instead of *"lead us not into temptation"*. Kindly note chapters 284 & 690.

Q: Concerning *Matthew 6:12*, the question is, how to understand it correctly? Most translations – *Geneva Bible, King James Bible, American Standard Version, The Amplified Bible, English Standard Version, New International Version,* etc., etc., – run "debts". However, *Expanded Bible, International Standard Version,* and *The Living Bible* run "sins"; *Good News Bible, New English Bible,* and *Common English Bible* run "wrongs"; and *Hebraic Roots Bible* runs, "offenses".

Q: What translation of the above is best accurate?

A: I think we can use all those publications for Bible Study.
You may see chapter 118, dealing with different translations.

As for the words, *debts, sins,* and *wrongs* – they denote various issues of one evil origin – the devil. Chapter 284 offers my way of praying this Scripture. We just cannot pay our due (debts) to our Father GOD & people when, having lost His Image & Likeness, we walk a sinful way. Read chapter 412. We sin when unknowingly or intentionally go against the Law of our GOD. And we can do nothing but wrongs to ourselves & others when, buying the "freedom" of Satan, get enslaved by the last. See chapter 158 (Freedom).

Q: Thank you. Again, in most Bible editions, we read "deliver us from evil", but *American Standard Version, Common English Bible, Christian Standard Bible, Expanded Bible*, and *Good News Bible* say, "deliver us from the evil one". Some editions even *capitalize** the last two words.
What can you say to that?

A: In chapter 252, we deal with the words, *deliver us from evil*.
And zero power of Satan we discussed in chapter 36. Kindly take a look.
* You may read about my way of capitalization in the Introduction article.

Regarding the difference between "*deliver us from evil"* and "*deliver us from the evil one*", much the same as in the previous question, these two expressions are different but announce the same *evil*. For when a satanic bait lured us, and we get into a trap of temptation (chapter 184), that *evil* becomes a part of ourselves.
So, we are those who can *deliver us from the evil one.* And this book more than once underlines the need for the Holy Ghost to rule our hearts accordingly.

We know that whosoever is born of GOD sinneth not;
but he that is begotten of GOD keepeth himself,
and that wicked one toucheth him not. (1John 5:18)

184

Q: Could you please clarify the term “temptation”?

A: I define *temptation* as every work of the devil aimed at making us think, speak, and act *contrary* to the Holy Will & Word of GOD.

Some Believers think that our GOD may “tempt” us. That error is based on some translations for *Genesis 22:1-13*. Well, I cannot take both wording & opinion. The English language is rich enough to express the Truth of GOD.
So, differentiate between the Test of GOD (by allowing some provocations to come our way for Proving, Improving, or Reproving Purposes) and the satanic work of temptation. We’ve already talked about different translations of the Holy Bible in chapters 118, 119, and others. But, believe me, the harder we *think* when studying the Scriptures, the less we blindly *depend* on errors & discrepancies.
Kindly compare the following translations for *Genesis 22:1*.

And aftir that these thingis weren don, GOD assaiede [examined, tested, tried] *Abraham ... (John Wycliffe Later Translation)*

After these dedes, GOD dyd proue Abraham ... (William Tyndale Translation)

And it came to pass after these things, that GOD did tempt Abraham ...*
(King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition)

And after these things GOD did proue Abraham ... (Geneva Bible)

And it cometh to pass after these things that GOD hath tried Abraham ...
(Robert Young’s Literal Translation)

* Per my reasoning above, I disagree, with all due respect to this good Edition.

Okay, that will do. Hopefully, this Scripture may help out to prove my point:

> *Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of GOD: for GOD cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth He any man. But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed. Then when lust hath conceived, it bringeth forth sin: and sin, when it is finished, bringeth forth death.*
> *(James 1:13-15, King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition)*

People say that human *character* would get only worse when getting older.
I think it is correct, but only for *unbelievers*. For the condemned one does not lead folks just up to some "level of wickedness" and then leaves them alone. No, the devil sweats that out for all their lifetime, directing all the way hell-ward.
Therefore, we can even see the character as our ability to withstand temptations. Well, as our Christian Experience (along with Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom) grows up, that ability should only improve.
And, yes, Christians may look worse from the *worldly* point of view.

> *... the form of all Satan's temptations is the same. He first plies his temptation upon a man's Faith, and then draws him away from the Word. Upon this follow various sins against the Second Table. This procedure of Satan we may see plainly manifested in our own experience.*
>
> *(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, p.218)*

> *Only those who try to resist temptation know how strong it is ...*
> *and Christ, because He was the only Man Who never yielded to temptation, is also the only Man Who knows to the full what temptation means – the only complete Realist. (C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.142)*

> *It is far better to endure patiently a smart which nobody feels but yourself, than to commit a hasty action whose evil consequences will extend to all connected with you ... (Charlotte Bronte, Jane Eyre, p.61)*

Q: How have you experienced Spiritual Warfare in your Life?
Q: How do you know it was Spiritual Warfare?
Q: Even though warring in the spirit is an everyday thing for me, I find it tough to explain to people, especially unbelievers, how real it is. Can you?

(Signed: Christian, non-denominational.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: I experience our Spirit War continuously on my Christian Way & Ministry.
It is a real War (yet, nota bene, won per *John 12:31*) when the enemy still confronts you by hardships & temptations.
It is indeed hard to explain to some Christians, let alone unbelievers.
As for the latter, the only interpretation or illustration I can offer is this: their *unbelief* is proof of the loss in that War.
You may have a look at the Contents section – how many chapters are titled "Spirit War" there.

185

Q: How to understand the *Teaching of Apostle Paul* on the *Law of Moses*?

A: Foremost, the named Teaching and the Law are *One* Word of GOD.
And the term *Law* may be defined more than one way, say,

1. The Holy Will of GOD.
2. The Ten Commandments.
3. Torah – first five Books of the Old Testament part of our Holy Bible.
4. All the Old Testament Books.
5. Whole the Holy Bible – Eternal Written Word of GOD.
6. Christian Religion (Teaching) – our Bible best edited & explained.*

* Please note that,

... our Beloved Brother Paul also according to the Wisdom given unto him hath written unto you; as also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, unto their own destruction. (2Peter 3:15-16)

It means that our Religion might be taken *wrongly* by those who don't study the Written Word of GOD hard enough.
You may see chapters: 186–190, 192, 196 – dealing with Saint Paul's Teaching.
So, what exactly did our Brother Paul mean by *the Law?* (Remember: there are no contradictions in the Bible.) Apostle Paul could not oppose *Lord Jesus*, Who taught on *the Law of GOD –*

Think not that I am come to destroy the Law,
or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. (Matthew 5:17)

So, Apostle Paul wrote:

Do we then make void the Law through Faith?
GOD forbid: Yea, we establish the Law. (Romans 3:21)

Furthermore, Lord Jesus taught:

... Thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the First and Great Commandment.
And the Second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.
On these Two Commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.
(Matthew 22:37-40)

Taking *Love* as a keyword here, one can come to the only conclusion that by loving our Heavenly Father – i.e., placing Him in the very first place in our Life – and loving every human being (in word & deed), the Holy Law is fulfilled.
On the other hand, hypothetically, take *Love* out of the equation. No matter how hard we try to follow the Law of GOD, we inevitably fail.

GOD is Love; and he that dwelleth in Love dwelleth in GOD,
and GOD in him. (1John 4:16)

For this is the Love of GOD, that we keep His Commandments:
and His Commandments are not grievous. (1John 5:3)

The rule for all of us is perfectly simple. Do not waste time bothering whether you 'love' your neighbour; act as if you did. As soon as we do this we find one of the Great Secrets. When you are behaving as if you loved someone, you will presently come to love him.

(C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.131)

The references: *Joshua 1:8* – How to make the Law possible to follow.
Psalms 119:73 – Pray for GOD's Help to obey Him.
John 3:16 & 10:11 – The Blessed Examples of Love.
Romans 13:10 – The Law & Love.

Q: GOD wants our Love, not our Sacrifice. Is this in the Bible?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: No, it is the misunderstanding.

Think yourself, can Love be without Sacrifice? The first is *proved* by the second. And the second becomes dull routine – following a letter, not the Spirit – without the first.

More than once, I heard the statement part of your question, which was spoken by Believers, ready to sacrifice their time for a Christian Ministry, but unwilling to give *money*. Kindly see chapters 41 & 56.

Your question resembles *1Samuel 15:22 – to obey is better than Sacrifice*. Yet, in that case, Obedience & Sacrifice go hand-in-hand, and the above Love & Sacrifice logic well fits in here.

186

Q: Please explain the Teaching of Apostle Paul in *Romans Chapter 3*.

A: Let us study it together. I take the *New International Version (NIV)* parallel to the *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition (KJPC).*

KJPC: 1 What advantage then hath the Jew? or what profit is there of circumcision? 2 Much every way: chiefly, because that unto them were committed the Oracles of GOD.

NIV: 1 What advantage, then, is there in being a Jew, or what value is there in Circumcision? 2 Much in every way! First of all, the Jews have been entrusted with the very Words of GOD.

Verses 1-2 are the continuation of *Romans 2:28-29*, providing the Meaning of *Jew* & *Circumcision*. We are supposed to keep that Message in mind throughout all Brother Paul's Letters to discern things *spiritual* from *natural*. The Holy Will of LORD GOD for and His Love to us are honored here. We discussed the subjects of *Chosen People* and *Circumcision* in chapters 59 & 149, respectively.

KJPC: 3 For what if some did not believe? shall their unbelief make the Faith of GOD without effect? 4 GOD forbid: Yea, let GOD be True, but every man a liar; as it is written, That Thou mightest be justified in Thy Sayings, and mightest overcome when Thou art judged.

NIV: 3 What if some were unfaithful? Will their unfaithfulness nullify GOD's Faithfulness? 4 Not at all! Let GOD be True, and every human being a liar. As it is written: "So that You may be proved Right when You speak and prevail when You judge."

Verses 3-4. Unbelief & following lies, affecting so many of the People of GOD, cannot affect the Faith & Truth of the *Holy LORD. Psalm 51:4* is quoted here.

KJPC: 5 But if our unrighteousness commend the Righteousness of GOD, what shall we say? Is GOD unrighteous Who taketh Vengeance? (I speak as a man.) 6 GOD forbid: for then how shall GOD judge the World? 7 For if the Truth of GOD hath more abounded through my lie unto His Glory; why yet am I also judged as a sinner? 8 And not rather, (as we be slanderously reported, and as some affirm that we say,) Let us do evil, that Good may come? whose damnation is Just.

NIV: But if our unrighteousness brings out GOD's Righteousness more clearly, what shall we say? That GOD is unjust in bringing His Wrath on us? (I am using a human argument.) 6 Certainly not! If that were so, how could GOD judge the World? 7 Someone might argue, "If my falsehood enhances GOD's Truthfulness and so increases His Glory, why am I still condemned as a sinner?" 8 Why not say – as some slanderously claim that we say – "Let us do evil that good may result"? Their condemnation is Just!

Verses 5-8 teach us that the LORD, our GOD, is Righteous & Just independently of anything, and not only against our unrighteousness. The same is for the *Truth* & *Glory* of GOD vs our *lying*. All slanderers are warned of *Just Judgment*.

KJPC: 9 What then? are we better than they? No, in no wise: for we have before proved both Jews and Gentiles, that they are all under sin;

NIV: 9 What shall we conclude then? Do we have any advantage? Not at all! For we have already made the charge that Jews and Gentiles alike are all under the power of sin.

Verse 9. Jews or *Believers* by personal efficacy are not any better than *Gentiles* or *unbelievers* because *sinfulness* is so commonplace to the human race.

KJPC: 10 As it is written, There is none Righteous, no, not one: 11 There is none that understandeth, there is none that seeketh after GOD. 12 They are all gone out of the Way, they are together become unprofitable; there is none that doeth Good, No, not one. 13 Their throat is an open sepulchre; with their tongues they have used deceit; the poison of asps is under their lips: 14 Whose mouth is full of cursing and bitterness: 15 Their feet are swift to shed blood: 16 Destruction and misery are in their ways: 17 And the Way of Peace have they not known: 18 There is no Fear of GOD before their eyes.

Verses 10-18. There have never been *Love*, *Truth*, *Righteousness*, *Understanding*, and *Seeking GOD* in the heathen world. Instead, the deadly poison of lie, cruelty, hatred, and envy abound. The *Peace & Fear of GOD* is unknown to heathen.

KJPC: 19 Now we know that what things soever the Law saith, it saith to them who are under the Law: that every mouth may be stopped, and all the World may become guilty before GOD. 20 Therefore by the deeds of the Law there shall no flesh be justified in His Sight: for by the Law is the Knowledge of sin.

NIV: 19 Now we know that whatever the Law says, it says to those who are under the Law, so that every mouth may be silenced and the whole World held accountable to GOD. 20 Therefore no one will be declared Righteous in GOD's Sight by the works of the Law; rather, through the Law we become conscious of our sin.

Verses 19-20. The Law of GOD reproves humankind of sin, stops every lie, and shows our guilt before the Holy LORD. Sinners are *under the Law*, which means they are condemned by it. And as such, we are *unable* to Rightly follow the Commandments of GOD. All Good Works ordered by the Law and tried to follow by people got polluted by *sin* indwelling human hearts & minds. So, regardless of the expressed* possibility to obey the Holy Scriptures and all our endeavors to do that, Father GOD does not accept us. (* See, e.g., *1John 5:3*.)

KJPC: 21 But now the Righteousness of GOD without the Law is manifested, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets; 22 Even the Righteousness of GOD which is by Faith of Jesus Christ unto all and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference: ...

NIV: 21 But now apart from the Law the Righteousness of GOD has been made known, to which the Law and the Prophets testify. 22 This Righteousness is given through Faith in Jesus Christ to all who believe. There is no difference between Jew and Gentile, ...

Verses 21-22. The *Righteousness of GOD* is the Virtue, which is free of the Law, that is, not under the Judgment thereby. The Innocence through Faith in Christ Redeemer has forever made every True Believer (Christian) Remitted, Justified, and thus Pure in the Eyes of the LORD. Chapter 59 (Chosen People of GOD).

KJPC: 23 For all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of GOD;

Verse 23. The *sinfulness* of humankind that had lost *Glory* – the Image & Likeness of GOD and His Eternal Kingdom – is stated here.

KJPC: 24 Being justified freely by His Grace through the Redemption that is in Christ Jesus: 25 Whom GOD hath set forth to be a Propitiation through Faith in His Blood, to declare His Righteousness for the Remission of sins that are past, through the Forbearance of GOD; 26 to declare, I say, at this time His Righteousness: that He might be Just, and the Justifier of him which believeth in Jesus.

NIV: 24 and all are justified freely by His Grace through the Redemption that came by Christ Jesus. 25 GOD presented Christ as a Sacrifice of Atonement, through the shedding of His blood – to be received by Faith. He did this to demonstrate His Righteousness, because in His Forbearance He had left the sins committed beforehand unpunished – 26 He did it to demonstrate His Righteousness at the present time, so as to be Just and the One Who justifies those who have Faith in Jesus.

Verses 24-26. By the *Grace* (the undeserved Mercy) of GOD, *in* Christ Jesus, we have had His Justification & Redemption. Our Father GOD provided for us the *Atonement* & *Remission* of sins through our *Faith* in the Holy Blood of His Son. Thus, the Love, Righteousness & Perfect Justice of GOD is best explained.

KJPC: 27 Where is boasting then? It is excluded. By what Law? of works? Nay: but by the Law of Faith. 28 Therefore we conclude that a man is justified by Faith without the deeds of the Law.

NIV: 27 Where, then, is boasting? It is excluded. Because of what Law? The Law that requires Works? No, because of the Law that requires Faith. 28 For we maintain that a person is justified by Faith apart from the Works of the Law.

Verses 27-28 exclude *pride*. The Law is fulfilled by *Faith.* We are justified by our Heavenly Father – not by any faithless works. See chapter 10 (Works of Faith).

KJPC: 29 Is He the GOD of the Jews only? is He not also of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles also: 30 seeing it is One GOD, which shall justify the Circumcision by Faith, and uncircumcision through Faith.

Verses 29-30. There is *One* LORD GOD for all people. He justifies spiritual Circumcision & physical uncircumcision by & through *One* Faith. Chapter 149.

KJPC: 31 Do we then make void the Law through Faith? GOD forbid: Yea, we establish the Law.

Verse 31. Faith in Christ Jesus does not make the Law of GOD null & void. On the contrary, the Holy Law is thus confirmed and more welcoming us to follow.

... it would not be sufficient for us to teach this subject, unless the Thunders of the Holy Spirit laid low our dignity by the Greatness of His Power. (John Calvin, Commentary on Pistle to the Romans, p.180)

187

Q: In *Romans 8:2,* St. Paul referred to *the Law* as that *of sin & death.* Why?

A: Indeed, it is written:

For the Law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus
hath made me Free from the Law of sin and death. (Romans 8:2)

Here, *the Law of sin & death* ought to be taken as the curse & condemnation unto *death eternal.* That directly followed the *sin of disobedience* to the Holy Law of GOD. The Scriptures clearly stated Conditional Blessings and curses.
Kindly refer to the *Book of Deuteronomy*, *Chapters 27* & *28*.
That's why, within the limits of *One* Holy Law of the LORD, our Father, through His *Love* & *Grace* manifested in the Ultimate Sacrifice of Christ Jesus, we have been made *Redeemed* & *Free* from that curse. We talked about that in the previous conversation – chapter 186 (*Romans*, *Chapter 3*).
See also next chapters 188 (The Law of the strength of sin),
189 (The Law of the Knowledge of sin), and 190 (The Law of the curse).

Moreover, our Heavenly Father has given us *His Holy Spirit* to fellowship with.

There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus,
who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. (Romans 8:1)

Q: Is lusting after a single woman a sin?
Q: Does *Matthew 5:27-28* is limited to married people only?
Q: How to do what is Right in GOD's Eyes?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time,
Thou shalt not commit adultery. But I say unto you, That whosoever
looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery
with her already in his heart. (Matthew 5:27-28)

Kindly note: *adultery* is defined differently by GOD and the unbelieving world.
So, if you are single and want *to do what is Right in GOD's Eyes*, ask Him to send your way the right woman for you.
You may see chapters: 60 (Christian Family), 126 (Seventh Commandment),
& 452 (Love and lust).

188

Q: Brother, please explain Paul's expression, "*the strength of sin is the Law*".

The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the Law.
(1Corinthians 15:56)

A: The following Parallel may help.

... by the Law is the Knowledge of sin. (Romans 3:20)

In the above two Scriptures, the *Law of GOD* is mentioned as a kind of *Balance* for His Perfect Justice.

For the Word of GOD is Quick, and Powerful,
and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even
to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow,
and is a Discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. (Hebrews 4:12)

We are not supposed to think that the Holy Law of GOD in any way "strengthen" or "hyperbolize" a sin. On the contrary, by the Law, every evil is detected, investigated, and condemned. Even so, *the strength of sin* is *the heaviness of evil* in the heart of man, weighted up by the Law of the LORD.
Note the Scripture immediately following the one in question:

... and to GOD – Thanks, to Him Who is giving us the Victory through our Lord Jesus Christ ... (1Corinthians 15:57, Robert Young's Literal Translation, 1898)

The *Righteousness* of the LORD, our Lawgiver, is not limited to His Just Punishment for every sin committed. Nay. It is the opening of the Way of Salvation to all who believe in Him. *Romans 3:21-26.*

See chapters: 64 (GOD's Punishment), 187 (The Law of sin & death),
189 (The Law of the Knowledge of sin), 190 (The Law of the curse).

Scriptural references: *1Samuel 16:7; 1Chronicles 28:9* ..... Judgment of GOD.
Nehemiah 9:33 ..... Justice of GOD.
Isaiah 5:1-6 & Jeremiah 32:18-19 ..... ditto.
Lamentations 3:25 ..... Goodness of GOD.
Malachi 3:5 ..... GOD's Punishment.

189

Q: It is written:

... by the Law is the Knowledge of sin. (Romans 3:20)

The Holy Law should and had its beginning – the time of *Exodus.*
If so, how then to understand the reason for GOD's Punishment –
the Flood – even before *the Law* & *the Knowledge of sin*?

A: The *beginning,* you mentioned, is that of the *Covenant*, not of the *Law*.

In this light, the heart of the *Covenant* – the Law of GOD, and the heart of that Law – the Ten Commandments – were *reminded* GOD's People, not *introduced* unto them. As for the *beginning* of the Law, it was right before the Creation of Man. Please note *Genesis 1:26*.

Due to that Precious *Image & Likeness of GOD*, the Holy Law was written on the tables of every human heart. It is still there, whether our spirit is corrupted or not.
How come? Because *thus saith the LORD* in His Written Word.
And His Holy Will, as I often point out, *is very serious business*.
Not agree? Think twice before teaching somebody to the contrary.

The ante-deluge human race *knew* their sinfulness, which corrupted them and Nature. However, at the same time, those few people like *Enoch* or *Noah* continued to *walk* with the LORD, their GOD.

Please see these Scriptures:

Genesis 6:5-7 – The Reason why.
Exodus 34:28 – The Covenant – Ten Commandments.
Deuteronomy 6:4-5 – The Heart of our Covenant.
Malachi 3:6 – The same GOD.
Romans 13:10 – The Power of Love.

Relevant "Q & A" chapters: 64 (GOD's Punishment),
187 (The Law of sin & death),
188 (The Law of the strength of sin),
& 190 (The Law of the curse).

190

Q: How to understand the expression, *the curse of the Law*?

Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the Law,
being made a curse for us ... (Galatians 3:13)

A: Do it much the same way as *the Law of sin and death* in *Romans 8:2* – the subject discussed earlier, in chapter 187.

In both cases – *Romans 8:2* & *Galatians 3:13* – we have to deal with the Holy Law of GOD, according to which such evils as a curse, sin, and death are the matters of our personal choice, once the Way of Blessing, Righteousness, and Life has been turned down.

Just as "*the Law of sin and death"* (in *Romans 8:2*) so "*the curse of the Law"* (in *Galatians 3:13*) ought to be understood as a *curse* or *condemnation*, directly following the *sin of disobedience* to the Law of GOD.

Mind His Conditional *Blessings* and *curses* (*Chapters 27* & *28 of Deuteronomy*).

Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a New creature:
old things are passed away; behold, all things are become New.
(2Corinthians 5:17)

The relevant Scriptures –

Exodus 34:7 – The inherited curses.
Deuteronomy 27:15-26 & 28:15-68 – The curse by GOD's Law.
2Chronicles 7:14 & Malachi 3:7-12 – The Way from curses to Blessings.
Jeremiah 17:5 & John 3:18-19,36 – The curse of unbelief.
Jeremiah 48:10 – The curse of deceit.

The relevant "Q & A" chapters: 187 (The Law of sin & death),
188 (The Law of the strength of sin),
189 (The Law of the Knowledge of sin).
196 (*Romans, Chapter 7*).

191

Q: What does our Bible teach on *Patience*?

A: In brief, it is a time-tested *spiritual weapon* used by *both* sides in Spirit Warfare. To know more, we ought to search the Scriptures.

Our backup in *trials*: *Hebrews 10:36; James 1:2-4, 5:7-11; & Revelation 13:10.*

Our backup for *Righteousnes*s: *1Peter 2:20.*

Our backup for *Faith*: *Proverbs 3:5.*

Our backup for *Hope*: *Psalms 123:2 & Lamentations 3:24-26.*

Our backup for *Obedience*: *Revelation 14:12.*

Our backup for *Perseverance*: *1Kings 17:21-22 & Hebrews 12:1.*

Our backup for *Knowledge*: *2Peter 1:5-8.*

Our backup for *Fast: Psalms 30:6 & Matthew 17:21.*

Our backup for *Prayers*: *Ephesians 6:18; Colossians 4:2; 1Thessalonians 5:17; & James 5:16.*

Our backup for *Worship & Praise*: *Psalms 30:12, 34:1, 42:5, 71:8, 86:12, 104:33, 145:2, & 146:2; Ephesians 3:20-21; & Hebrews 13:15.*

Our Power in GOD: *Isaiah 54:15-17; Mark 16:17-18; Luke 10:19, 21:19; 2Corinthians 10:4; Ephesians 6:10-13; James 4:7; 1John 4:4, & 5:18.*

Our *stumbling stone*: *Matthew 24:12-13.*

The devil is patient: *Matthew 12:43-45 & John 5:14.*

See chapter 39 (The War outlined) and the Index section for more.

192

Q: How to understand the Words,
"*ye are not under the Law, but under Grace*", per *Romans 6:14*?

A: The first part of *Romans 6:14* may well help to comprehend the second.
Or else, take *Verses 12-14* as one text.

> *12 Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. 13 Neither yield ye your members as instruments of unrighteousness unto sin: but yield yourselves unto GOD, as those that are alive from the dead, and your members as Instruments of Righteousness unto GOD. 14 For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the Law, but under Grace. (Romans 6:12-14)*

Being Obedient to *Romans 6:12-13*, we may find ourselves in a good position of not under the dominion of sin as per *Romans 6:14*.

Now, to be not under the Law in no way means whatever exemption from following the Law of GOD. The only meaning is: in Christ Jesus, we are Free from sinning and, therefore, from GOD's Punishment due for sinners.

The LORD, our GOD, is Love and has not given us some "cruel law intentionally designed to be impossible to follow".

On the other hand, Grace is not the blind forgiving of whatever we do. No, it is GOD-given undeserved Mercy manifested in the Blessing of Power unto Obedience unto Righteousness & Holiness, to stay Christians, no matter what.

Scriptural references.

1. *Grace*

John 1:17 (Grace through Christ Jesus).
Tit 2:11-14 (Grace of Good Teaching) & *3:7* (Grace of Justification).
Hebrews 2:9 (Grace through sufferings of Christ Jesus),
4:16 (our Approach to GOD), & 13:9 (spiritual Power).
1Peter 5:5 (to Humble ones).
2Peter 1:2 (through Knowledge of GOD).

2. *The Law of GOD*

Deuteronomy 30:11-14 (the Law is not too hard to obey).
Psalms 119:97 (Love), *119:111* (Eternal Heritage & Joy),
119:165 (Peace), *119:166* (Hope), & *119:172* (Righteousness).
*Proverbs 6:23 (*Guide) & *13:14* (Life).
Isaiah 2:3 (unto Spirit Israel), *8:16* (True Discipleship), & *8:20* (Light).
Jeremiah 31:33 (the Law is to be written on our hearts).
Hosea 4:6 (the dangerous ignorance).
Micah 4:2 (unto Spirit Israel).
Matthew 5:17-18 (standing on).
Luke 16:16-17 (standing on).
James 4:11-12 (judge not the Law of GOD).
1John 5:3 (standing on).

Q: What are the signs that a person has *fallen from Grace*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

2 ... if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. 3 For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole Law. 4 Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified by the Law; ye are fallen from Grace. 5 For we through the Spirit wait for the Hope of Righteousness by Faith. 6 For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but Faith which worketh by Love. (Galatians 5:2-6)

The above Scripture is to all who have ever followed the Law of GOD under the (broken) Old Covenant and have not accepted the Ultimate Sacrifice of Christ and His Words,

... I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

Therefore, to fall from Grace per *Galatians 5:4* is a deliberate act of whosoever, whether Believer or not.
It is also said,

Grace be with all them
that love our Lord Jesus Christ in Sincerity. Amen. (Ephesians 6:24)

193

Q: How to fight the evil of *revenge?*

A: Every evil is to be cast out by the Word of GOD – *It Is Written*.

We can define revenge (vengeance, payback, etc.) as an action taken in return for an injury or offense. That action is preceded by the corresponding resentful, unforgiving, or implacable state of heart & mind. See *Leviticus 19:18*.
To effectively hold out against the demon tempting to avenging – the evil spirit, which sweats to load up our mind with the thoughts of counterblow and developing in us the ungodly retaliatory attitude full of offensive words & actions – we ought to seek the Guidance in our Bible.

1. See every evildoer but a spirit-blind puppet of our chief enemy – Satan.

   Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do Good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; that ye may be the Children of you Father which is in Heaven.
   (Matthew 5:44-45)

2. Don't think, speak, or act as if you are the only competent Judge, thus assuming that our Father GOD is blind & deaf. *Deuteronomy 32:35-36*. Obey to what you are told by His Word.

   Recompense to no man evil for evil. ... Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto Wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is Mine; I will repay, saith the LORD. Therefore if thine enemy hunger, feed him; if he thirst, give him drink: for in so doing thou shalt heap coals of fire on his head. Be not overcome of evil, but overcome evil with Good.
   (Romans 12:17-21)

3. Don't forget the Word,

   ... even as Christ forgave you, so also do ye. (Colossians 3:13)

4. Forgive spiritually blind people. *Luke 23:34*.

   It is a happy thing that time quells the longings of vengeance, and hushes the promptings of rage and aversion. (Charlotte Bronte, Jane Eyre, p.278)

194

Q: How to distinguish an *Answered Prayer* from a mere *coincidence*?

A: Well, try to follow these Scriptures when you pray. Later, when you get what you need or even something better, be sure, it is not a *coincidence*,

... for He is Faithful that promised ... (Hebrews 10:23)

Faith & Wholeheartedness: *Jeremiah 29:13, Mark 11:24, John 15:7, Philippians 4:6-7, Hebrews 10:36, James 1:6, & 1Peter 5:7.*

True Fast & Righteousness: *Psalms 34:15,17* – Righteousness.
91:14-15 – Love, that is Obedience.
Isaiah 58:5-9 – GOD-commanded Conditions.
John 9:31 – a Worshipper & Doer of His Will.
James 4:2-3 – Good Reason.

Accordance to the Will of GOD: *Ecclesiastes 5:2* – Let words be few.
Jeremiah 33:3 – Prayer for Knowledge.
James 1:5 – Prayer for Wisdom.
Luke 11:13 – Prayer for Holy Spirit.
Romans 8:26-27 – Prayer in Tongues.
1Corinthians 14:2,4 – ditto.
1John 3:21-22 & 5:14-15 – Confidence.

Repentance & Confession: *Job 33:27-28* – ... if any say ...
Psalms 32:5 – Do confess.
Jonah 2:10 – The example of.
James 5:16 – Before an Intercession.
1John 1:9 – Do confess.

Praise LORD GOD: *Psalms 103, 104, 111, 116, 145, & 146; Ephesians 3:20-21 & 5:20; & 1Thessalonians 5:18.*

Christian Family Requirements: *1Peter 3:7.*

The Lord's Prayer: *Matthew 6:9-13.*

In the Name of Jesus: *Matthew 18:19-20, John 14:13-14, & Ephesians 5:20.*

195

Q: How to fight *self-pity*?

A: Our *Spirit Weapons* stay the same in full accordance with *Ephesians 6:14-18.*

Like every other evil, the *self-pity* (a.k.a., the *syndrome* "*poor me*") deserves its name by actual achievements of demons in the world of unbelievers.
Other evil states of mind – *defeat, fear, sickness, unbelief,* &c. – well contribute to self-pity.

Pity, of course, is a self-defeating emotion that does nothing for anyone, except to make everyone feel worse than they already do.
(Richard Carlson, Don't Sweat The Small Stuff, chapter 17)

Whatever circumstances & conditions you might find yourself in, stand on upon the Promises of the LORD our GOD.

Fear thou not; for I am with thee: be not dismayed; for I am thy GOD:
I will strengthen thee; Yea, I will help thee; Yea, I will uphold thee
with the Right Hand of My Righteousness. (Isaiah 41:10)

He is Faithful that promised. (Hebrews 10:23)

Kindly see chapters: 92 (The evil of depression) & 158 (Freedom).

Q: If the afterlife is so better, and we will meet with beloved ones there, why are Christians afraid of dying?
Q: If a Christian fears to die, not knowing what is after death, doesn't it mean that such a person does not indeed believe?
Q: So why the People, who are committed to GOD, are so afraid of dying?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Corrected.)

A: In chapters 114 & 520, we touched on the subject of the *fear of death*.
Chapter 58 contains the discussion about Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom – the matters relevant to your question.
Please mind your wording. Speaking of people, it is better to add "some" or even "many", not implying "all" or "most", as if you *do* know that.
Kindly read the *Book of Martyrs* for Right examples & future reference.
Thank you.

196

Q: How to understand *Saint Paul* in *Romans, Chapter 7?*

A: Kindly get your Bible opened thereat.

1 Know ye not, Brethren,
(for I speak to them that know the Law), how that the Law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? 2 For the woman which hath an Husband is bound by the Law to her Husband so long as he liveth; but if the Husband be dead, she is loosed from the Law of her Husband. 3 So then if, while her Husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her Husband be dead, she is free from that Law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. 4 Wherefore, my Brethren, ye also are become dead to the Law by the Body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to Him Who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth Fruit unto GOD.

Verses 1-4. Brother Paul illustrated the dominion of the Law of GOD by one example – let me offer another. Imagine a drug dealer traveling with his evil cargo. The country of his destination, per the criminal code, imposes the death penalty for such a business. Will that man be afraid? Yes, sure. At the same time, when an honest man has to visit the same country, will that person be alarmed? Most probably, the straight one won't even be interested in their criminal code. Why? Just because that code is not for good people. So, praising the Justice, the honest people are not *under*, but rather, *free from* or *dead to* that criminal code.

5 For when we were in the flesh, the motions of sins, which were by the Law, did work in our members to bring forth fruit unto death. 6 But now we are delivered from the Law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we should serve in Newness of Spirit, and not in the oldness of the letter.

Verses 5-6. When we lived a worldly life and were ruled by physical needs only, our eventual sinfulness, condemned by the Law of GOD, could lead us directly to death eternal. Delivered from the sin, dwelling in our hearts & minds, as well as the equating Lawful Punishment and looming death, we can serve our Father GOD as His Reborn ones, no more labeled "guilty".
As for *the oldness of the letter*, we ought to take this line not as "the outdated Law". Nay. Compare it to reading a book. Understanding of the language comes first. But the deep comprehension of the text is always second. It is especially true about the Bible.

... there is nothing new under the Sun ... (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

When I asked a friend of mine whether she read the Bible, the answer was *no*. And thus she explained to me why: *I don't understand anything in it*. That was another example of how the *Letter* of the Scriptures and the *Spirit* thereof correlate. We touched on this subject in chapter 29. And, once the Word of GOD is Holy, so should be our approach to it.

> *7 What shall we say then? Is the Law sin? GOD forbid. Nay, I had not known sin, but by the Law: for I had not known lust, except the Law had said, Thou shalt not covet. 8 But sin, taking occasion by the Commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiscence. For without the Law sin was dead.*

Verses 7-8. GOD forbid. This expression Brother Paul used 14 times in his apostolic letters. Therefore, we should be watchful regarding using the term *Law*. As we underlined earlier (see chapter 192), *GOD is Love.* He could never burden humans with any "impossible" laws. *Genesis 1:27* draws our attention to the *Image & Likeness of the LORD.* And this is what follows: *every* human knows Good from evil, period. So, consciously or subconsciously, we *all* know Father GOD & His Law. As we got fooled around by Satan, the LORD reminded us of the *Law.* Dictated by the Holy Ghost, the Servant of GOD Moses wrote it down. Later on, some *translation divergence* might creep in – but that is another story.
In chapter 189, we discussed the subject of the *Knowledge of sin (Romans 3:20)*. Sin, condemned by our Heavenly Father, is present in all satanic *evils* and is commonplace in the heathen world. The different forms of those evils cannot be recognized & fought otherwise but by *the Holy Commandments.* See the Index.

The expression "*sin, taking occasion by the Commandment*" (*Verses 8 & 11*) ought to be taken only as a figure of speech, to mean *sin shown* & *damned by the Commandment*, not as any "conjunction" of a devilish sin and the Holy Law.

From the above Verses, it is also clear that speaking of the Law, Apostle Paul deals with the *Ten Commandments* – the very heart of the Law of GOD.

> *9 For I was alive without the Law once: but when the Commandment came, sin revived, and I died. 10 And the Commandment, which was ordained to Life, I found to be unto death. 11 For sin, taking occasion by the Commandment, deceived me, and by it slew me.*

Verses 9-11. Without *the Knowledge of sin* provided by *the Law of GOD*, we may see ourselves just fine. Yet when the Holy Law is made known to us, our *conscience* adjudged us.

The *Commandment* is to save us from *death*, but it is seemed not so easy. How come? Simply because the dirty devil lies: “there is no way out”.

> *12 Wherefore the Law is Holy, and the Commandment Holy, and Just, and Good. 13 Was then that which is Good made death unto me? GOD forbid. But sin, that it might appear sin, working death in me by that which is Good; that sin by the Commandment might become exceeding sinful.*

Verses 12-13. The Law of GOD and every Commandment thereof are “*Holy, and Just, and Good”*. Amen. We cannot blame the Law for its Just Verdict. Damn the ugly devil & his deadly sins, which are made open in the Light of the Law. Why “*working death in me by that which is Good”*? Because *Satan*, firstly, fools us into sin, and secondly, accuses us in the same thereafter: “boo, no way out!”

> *14 For we know that the Law is Spiritual: but I am carnal, sold under sin.*

Verse 14. *The Law is Spiritual*, i.e., perceived by the heart (*spirit*). When our spirit is dormant, we are but *soul* & *flesh* – so easy prey to the evil demons.
Throughout our Holy Bible, we can see the heinous works of Satan. Starting from deceiving Adam & Eve, the lying one has been busy throwing (by his demons) the sinful *temptations* at us. Even the Righteous Law of GOD – as we can see in the Scriptures – became a *spiritual battlefield*. Just accept a single evil seed of *lie*, and here you are – exceeding sinful, “*carnal, sold under sin”*.

> *15 For that which I do I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I. 16 If then I do that which I would not, I consent unto the Law that it is Good. 17 Now then it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.*

Verses 15-17. Spiritually (and therefore, not so perceptibly), one got ruled by the indwelling demon. We can *allow not, would*, and *hate* as much as we please – it is all useless. One may also *like* Goodness of *the Law* (or other Godly things) to no avail. Why? For “*it is no more I”* – GOD’s Image & Likeness – Nay, it is Satan’s puppet, a corrupted human being, which had become our proper name.

> *18 For I know that in me (that is, in my flesh) dwelleth no Good thing: for to will is present with me; but how to perform that which is Good I find not. 19 For the Good that I would I do not: but the evil which I would not, that I do. 20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but sin that dwelleth in me.*

Verses 18-20. The LORD, our GOD, Mercifully gives us the Understanding: our *flesh* & (the *will* of) *soul* are too weak to withstand sin and do what is Right, as only willing is not enough. The fact that Satan's demon rules us is evident.

> *21 I find then a law, that, when I would do Good, evil is present with me.*
> *22 For I delight in the Law of GOD after the inward man: 23 but I see another law in my members, warring against the Law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.*

Verses 21-23. The *evil* takes roots – it doesn't matter anymore what we would – it is the bloody *devil* who takes decisions, not us. The broken Image & Likeness of GOD longs for His Law, but the rest of our being remains captive to *Satan*.

> *24 O wretched man that I am! who shall deliver me from the body of this death? 25 I thank GOD through Jesus Christ our Lord. So then with the mind I myself serve the Law of GOD; but with the flesh the law of sin.*

Verses 24-25. Looking for the way out, we get desperate. But the Heavenly Father be praised, for He ordained *Jesus to be* our Blessed Lord. We become well aware of the spiritual frontline passing through our very selves.
Now, the Law is best explained here –

The LORD our GOD is one LORD:
And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart,
and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. (Deuteronomy 6:4-5)

And the Guidance is given –

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

Q: What do you think about *2Peter 2:20-22*?.
Q: How do we escape our sins and not do them anymore?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: To understand better *2Peter 2:20-22*, please read that Epistle from the beginning. The First Chapter might well answer your question. The Second Chapter shows false prophets & teachers and their followers, whose end is well predicted by the Scripture in your first question.
Many Parallel Scriptures also answer your second question.
For instance, follow *Luke 15:20*. Then, keep *1John 5:18*.
Godspeed.

197

Q: How should we fight *shame*?

A: Do it by the Written Word of GOD – *It Is Written* – much as we deal with every other evil of the wicked one.
Mind the Words of the Lord,

Howbeit this kind goeth not out
but by Prayer and Fasting. (Matthew 17:21)

That was confirmed by *Mark 9:29*.
You could notice that when Jesus was casting out demons, He was not praying. The Lord prayed many a time before. Neither did He fast by a mere abstaining from food – His Fast was that by *Isaiah 58*. We discussed the latter in chapter 73.
The above Scriptures teach us to be always ready for whatever spiritual combat. Moreover, when we fast as per *Isaiah 58* and commune with GOD by Prayer, we don't have much to do with fighting. The evil spirits have to keep off as the Power of GOD steps in. (You may kindly see the *opposite* picture discussed in chapter 64 – Guardian Angels step back, demons step forward.)

We know that whosoever is born of GOD sinneth not; but he that is begotten
of GOD keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. (1John 5:18)

A demon tries to keep us embarrassed of speaking – *it is written* – by, say, the scorn of bystanders. That may rule our mind out from standing in Prayer and casting out the spirits who work sickness & death. How can we touch and pray for a sick or wounded animal or bird which folks pass by?
To deal with the spirit making up all that mess of *shame*, we have to develop an opposite attitude, namely, to be ashamed not to act as Lord Jesus would. So, what do we have to do? – Act contrary to the satanic rules of the world.

Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do,
forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things
which are before, I press toward the Mark for the Prize
of the High Calling of GOD in Christ Jesus. (Philippians 3:13-14)

Take up your *Cross*, walk with the LORD, your GOD, and such a trifle as *shame* will get lost to sight.

Apart from sin, we have nothing of which to be ashamed.
(A.W. Tozer, The Pursuit Of GOD, p.109)

198

Q: How to understand the *"weakness of the Law"* in *Romans 8:3*?

A: That "*weakness"* may well stand for *fruitlessness* of Good & Precious Seeds of the Word of GOD on the hard ground of human *foolishness*.

Such is the *Power* of Eternal Wisdom of the Holy Law of GOD, Who never forces the free will of Man when the last might happen to choose the spiritual *weakness* and follow Satan. That Power of Wisdom & Love is explained in the second half of *Verse 3* and *Verse 4* right following it –

3 For what the Law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, GOD sending His Own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh:
4 That the Righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. (Romans 8:3-4)

The Eternal Law of GOD cannot be "weak" in any possible way. But the thing is, the LORD has never intended for His Holy Law to be comprehended by the *sinful* folks. Impenetrable to a carnal mind, the Written Word of GOD is not for sinners. That's what we can read in *Verses 5-8* –

5 For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. 6 For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is Life and Peace. 7 Because the carnal mind is enmity against GOD: for it is not subject to the Law of GOD, neither indeed can be. 8 So then they that are in the flesh cannot please GOD. (Romans 8:5-8)

To compare the *weakness* & *darkness* of the heathen world with the *Power* & *Wisdom* of the LORD, take this Scripture –

For the Preaching of the Cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved, it is the Power of GOD. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? Where is the scribe? Where is the disputer of this world? Hath not GOD made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the Wisdom of GOD, the world by wisdom knew not GOD, it pleased GOD by the foolishness of Preaching to save them that believe. (1Corinthians 1:18-21)

So, let us be ready to walk with our Father GOD, contrary to *worldly reason*.

199

Q: Brother, earlier (in chapter 43), you spoke about two ways of following the *Twelfth Commandment*: as full or part-time *Evangelist*, on the one hand, and every *Christian* as GOD gives an opportunity, on the other.
Could you please exemplify the second way?

A: I can give an example from personal experience. You know, every time* I watch *Another Perfect Stranger* I recall this remarkable story.

(* Good Christian movies are well worth of our time to watch them more than once.)

Back in the year 2004, I had to take a business trip from Odesa to Kyiv, by railway, in a four-persons compartment. My three fellow passengers were of about the same age as myself, and one of them started the conversation by asking me what I was reading. As far as I remember, that was something of Brother Kenneth Copeland, and I just showed it up. Not much understanding English the book was written in, he asked me what it was about. To be brief, I didn't explain the exact topic and answered as that seemed right regarding most Christian publications: a sort of commentary on the Bible.

That happened to be of interest to all the folks present, and they started to ask questions, which I answered as best I could. The conversation lasted several hours, well into the night, kept up in the main by the man who had started it and myself. Tired, we two were last to take a nap but continued in the morning. The train came to a stop in Kyiv, and we parted.

It came about that my business was over that same day, and I got me a ticket for the next scheduled train back to Odessa.
I knew that our conversation had had the Purpose of GOD the moment we two met again on the same train & car and shared the same compartment. Unbelievable as it was, we continued our discussion right from the point we had left it off, our new fellow passengers listening and asking something from time to time. On arrival to Odessa, we had to part, shook hands, and never met again.

Or so it seemed. For years later, in our Local Church, I met one guest-Pastor. He looked familiar to me as well as I to him. Maybe, he was the man from the train, maybe not, at the moment I didn't remember that remarkable talk on those two trains in a row. What I do know is that the man I met had come to Lord Jesus.
Praise GOD!

200

Q: What does our Bible say about the *Praise* to be given unto GOD?

A: The following reference might but only partly serve the answer.

By the Holy Will of GOD: *1Thessalonians 5:18.*
In Communion with Him: *Psalms 95:2, Jeremiah 17:14, Philippians 4:6, & Colossians 4:2.*

In the Fear of the LORD: *Isaiah 38:18-19 & Jeremiah 13:16-17.*
In Righteousness: *Deuteronomy 10:21, Psalms 96:9, 118:28, & 119:7.*
In the Right Assembly: *Psalms 111:1.*

To the Name Most Holy: *Psalms 92:1, 99:3, & 115:1; & Matthew 6:9.*
In the Name of Jesus: *Ephesians 5:20 & Colossians 3:17.*

For His Answer: *Psalms 28:6 & Ephesians 3:20.*
For His Goodness & Mercy: *Deuteronomy 8:10; Psalms 107:1,8,15,21,31; 118:29; & Isaiah 12:1.*
For His Greatness: *Psalms 96:4.*
For His Holiness: *Psalms 30:4 & 99:5.*
For His Rescue: *Psalms 50:15 & 59:16.*
For His Righteousness: *Psalms 7:17.*
For His Teaching: *Psalms 119:108.*
For His Wisdom & Power: *Daniel 2:20.*

For our Joy: *Psalms 30:11.*
For our Salvation: *Psalms 68:19 & 1Peter 1:3 .*

The LORD GOD inhabits the Praise of His People: *Psalms 22:3.*

His Praise has *Power*: *Psalms 67:5-6.*
His Praise purifies our tongue: *Psalms 71:8.*
His Praise is Eternal: *Psalms 34:1, 86:12, 104:33, 145:2, & 146:2; Ephesians 3:21; Hebrew 13:15; & Revelation 7:12.*
His Praise National & International: *Psalms 117:1,2.*

See chapters: 48 (Thanks for the meals), 75 (Giving Glory to GOD), & 157 (The Feasts).

201

Q: They say that the fewer people know about your plans for the future, the better. I guess that's for *fear of envy*. Is it correct?

A: Your guess is correct – folks do fear the envy of others. And they are wrong. What are folks which do fear the evil of envy? – They are those who let in the demon in their hearts and the dung of fear in their minds.
For it is written,

For GOD hath not given us the spirit of fear;
but of Power, and of Love, and of a Sound mind. (2Timothy 1:7)

We are not supposed to fear either envy or other evils. What we should fear is the separation from the LORD GOD. Sometimes, we behave foolishly and let the evil spirits in where they do not belong. At other times, we are so "prudent" as to tell nobody. Our Heavenly Father knows our hearts and wants to talk with us about our plans & reasoning. But we stupidly ignore Him now & again.

Woe to the rebellious children, saith the LORD, that take counsel,
but not of Me; and that cover with a covering, but not of My Spirit,
that they may add sin to sin. (Isaiah 30:1)

Therefore, making our plans for the future, we ought to start from the Top. Welcome in the Conversation with the Father seeking His Holy Will & Guidance. After that, we can share our plans with those who will understand and Prayerfully back us up – our Friends in Christ Jesus.

See chapters: 32 (Communion with GOD), 158 (Freedom),
& 232 (Our Prayer Backup), 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit).

Scriptural references:
Deuteronomy 29:29 … Differentiate between secret things.
2Kings 20:12-18 ……. Mind your secret things.
Nehemiah 2:12,16 ….. Keep GOD's Work in secret.
Psalms 51:6 ……..... The Secret Communion with GOD.
Proverbs 11:13 ……..... Know your Right friend.
Proverbs 27:1 ……..... Don't boast about tomorrow.
Isaiah 39:1-7 ……..... A negative example.
Matthew 6:3 ……..... Keep Right deeds in secret.
James 4:15 ……..… Mind your words.

202

Q: *2Samuel 1:1-16* tells us how the man was put to death just for following the wounded King Saul's order to kill him for fear of being taken prisoner and martyred. How could that be?

A: The answer can be found in *1Samuel 31:3-5 & 1Chronicles 10:4-5*, whereby we know that the story told to King David about the death of King Saul had been a *lie*.

The liar aimed to get favor with the King, who got more & more powerful.
The folks that liar belonged with had already shown themselves unable to withstand Brother David.

Most probably, that scavenger just happened to pass by the dead body of Saul before the Philistines, his enemies, got there.

By King David's words (*2Samuel 1:5,14*), he didn't know the truth, at least there & then. For him, the King's crown & bracelet served as sufficient proof for Saul's death. As for the Amalekite, which allegedly killed the King of Israel by the *coup de grace*, he had no place among GOD's People and was destined to be put to death by the LORD's Order. Note *Deuteronomy 25:17-19.*

Here, we are reminded of the creepy approach of Satan's servants to the Body of Christ and the Judgment following. C.f., *Acts 5:1-11*.

Relevant chapters: 26 (Killing Canaanites), 177 (Truth and lie),
& 231 (The lesson of Ananias & Sapphira).

... they bend their tongues like their bow for lies:
but they are not valiant for the Truth upon the Earth;
for they proceed from evil to evil, and they know not Me, saith the LORD.
Take ye heed every one of his neighbour, and trust ye not in any brother:
for every brother will utterly supplant, and every neighbour
will walk with slanders. And they will deceive every one his neighbour,
and will not speak the Truth: they have taught their tongue to speak lies,
and weary themselves to commit iniquity. Thine habitation is
in the midst of deceit; through deceit they refuse to know Me,
saith the LORD. (Jeremiah 9:3-6)

203

Q: Speaking on of *Jesus' Parables* and, especially, their implementation, what would you say about *Barren Fig Tree* told about in *Luke 13:6-9*?

A: There are many good commentaries on that Parable, including the named in the References to this book. Well, the Scripture runs,

6 ... A certain man had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and sought fruit thereon, and found none. 7 Then said he unto the dresser of his vineyard, Behold, these three years I come seeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground? 8 And he answering said unto him, Lord, let it alone this year also, till I shall dig about it, and dung it: 9 And if it bear fruit, well: and if not, then after that thou shalt cut it down. (Luke 13:6-9)

Verse 6 implies that everything in the LORD's Great Creation carries His Design & Reason. The Design is far above our comprehension, but the Reason is quite understandable – to bear Fruit. Implementation is clear.

Verse 7 states the Warning, which we can also find in *Matthew 3:10 & 21:19*.

Verse 8 teaches on the Love of GOD manifested in the Ministry of Jesus Christ. We all have another chance – but don't procrastinate.

Verse 9 confirms the Judgment. The conclusion is the same – bear Fruit. What Fruit? In chapter 24, we spoke about the Will of GOD for our lives and personal Ministry in the Church. See also chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry).

You & I ought to find out where & how we are most Fruitful for our Father GOD. We shall never be left alone on whatever hard road. Just keep going. Our Heavenly Father will meet us halfway. Remember *Luke 15:20*.

It is always Jesus' Way to give a man chance after chance ... GOD is infinitely Kind to the man who falls and rises again ... But the Parable also makes it quite clear that there is a final chance. If we refuse chance after chance, if GOD's Appeal and Challenge come again and again in vain, the day finally comes, not when GOD has shut us out, but when we by deliberate choice have shut ourselves out. GOD save us from that!

(William Barclay, Commentary to the Gospel according to Saint Luke)

204

Q: How to implement *The Evil Tenants (Husbandmen) Parable,* as it is in *Matthew 21:33-44, Mark 12:1-11, & Luke 20:9-18*?

A: Regarding the Lesson that Parable taught us, our Lord Jesus spoke in *Matthew 21:42-44:*

42 ... The stone which the builders rejected, the same is become the head of the corner: this is the LORD's Doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes? 43 Therefore say I unto you, The Kingdom of GOD shall be taken from you, and given to a nation bringing forth the Fruits thereof. 44 And whosoever shall fall on this Stone shall be broken: but on whomsoever it shall fall, it will grind him to powder.

Here, in *Verse 43*, we can read His *Warning* –

The Kingdom of GOD shall be taken from you,
and given to a Nation bringing forth the Fruits thereof.

And right from this Warning, the *implementation* follows (the same as in our preceding discussion – about the Parable of the Barren Fig Tree) – to bring *Fruits* the LORD, our Father, expects from us, Christians.

Q: Does it mean that these two Parables have an identical implementation?

A: No, it doesn't. The Parable of Evil Tenants shows something else as well. Behold those tenants – they saw themselves masters rather than servants – didn't they? Can't we read about their kind in human world history and continue to see around? Those evil tenants think themselves sure as hell. So, what side of the line are *you* on?

Some Believers may remind me (on many good old comments teaching us) that *the evil tenants* stand for ancient Israel, whereas we, Christians, are New People of GOD. Well, those comments are correct. But Pharisees & their blind followers are so long gone, whereas the Eternal Word of the LORD lives & teaches us on.

In this regard, we ought to note that the Kingdom of our Father mentioned in the above *Verse 43* is the same spoken of in *Luke 17:21*. And that Eternal Realm is not cut off from a particular religious sect. But every human being, who has willingly alienated from the LORD, our GOD, will lose the Heavenly Kingdom.

205

Q: How to employ the *Parable of Good Samaritan* (*Luke 10:30-35*)?

A: Like all Parables of Jesus, this one has not whatever connection with reality. By historians, the road *Jerusalem – Jericho* for more than a thousand years, was known as a snake-nest of robbers. Nobody dared to travel that way alone. And what we hear of Lord Jesus? Four men did that one by one, in one day? That's hardly possible.
But the Parable does not tell us a story but a Lesson. And a hard one. Since more often than not, every one of us is on that road, full of dangerous indifference & common sense. Even as those Priest & Levite – taught by the LORD GOD to love our neighbor – we may see a man in need and pass by.

For I desired Mercy, and not sacrifice;
and the Knowledge of GOD more than burnt offerings. (Hosea 6:6)

Join me to read the Parable closely.

> *30 ...A certain man went down from Jerusalem to Jericho, and fell among thieves, which stripped him of his raiment, and wounded him, and departed, leaving him half dead. 31 And by chance there came down a certain Priest that way: and when he saw him, he passed by on the other side. 32 And likewise a Levite, when he was at the place, came and looked on him, and passed by on the other side. 33 But a certain Samaritan, as he journeyed, came where he was: and when he saw him, he had Compassion on him,*
> *34 And went to him, and bound up his wounds, pouring in oil and wine, and set him on his own beast, and brought him to an inn, and took care of him. 35 And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave them to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him; and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee. (Luke 10:30-35)*

Verses 31-32 certainly provide a *negative* example, don't they?

Verse 33 supports a well-known idea that some unbelieving & non-Christian folks are closer to Father GOD than people religious & clerical. For Samaritans*, as those who allegedly distorted the Written Word of GOD, were detestable to *Jews* at the time of Christ Jesus' Ministry.

Verses 34-35 teach us about *Charity* as Love in action. The Samaritan did the best he could for the man in casualty with injuries.

* *Theological Dictionary* by *Charles Buck* runs,

> *Samaritans – an ancient sect among the Jews, whose origin was in the time of King Rehoboam, under whose reign the people of Israel were divided into two distinct Kingdoms, that of Judah and that of Israel. The capital of the Kingdom of Israel was Samaria, whence the Israelites took the name of Samaritans ...*

Now, *Luke 10:37* clarifies the implementation: *Go and do thou likewise.*

Here – *likewise* – means to have the same Compassion as *Verse 33* teaches and show the same Charity as *Verses 34-35* exemplify.

> *The rule for all of us is perfectly simple. Do not waste time bothering whether you 'love' your neighbour; act as if you did. As soon as we do this we find one of the Great Secrets. When you are behaving as if you loved someone, you will presently come to love him.*
>
> *(C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.131)*

See chapters: 135 (Love & Charity), 150 (Compassion),
& 429 (*In the place where the tree falleth*).

Scripture references:
Isaiah 58:7 ---------- The part of our True Fast.
Matthew 5:44-45 ---------- Love your enemies.
Matthew 22:39 ---------- The Second Great Commandment.
1Corinthians 13:1-13 & 1John 3:18 ---------- Charity.
1John 4:16 ---------- Love Attitude.

Good reading: *Kenneth Copeland, Love Never Fails*
Gloria Copeland, Love – The Secret Of Your Success

Good movies about *Go and do thou likewise.*

Schindler's List.
Seven Pounds.
WWJD.
Pay It Forward.
The Fourth Wise Man.
Do You Believe?
Same Kind Of Different As Me.
A Street Cat Named Bob.
The Lost And Found Family.
Love's Saga, Episode 7 (Love's Unending Legacy) & Episode 9 (Love Takes Wing).
Robber Of The Cruel Streets.

206

Q: What does the *Parable of Good Shepherd* (*John 10:1-5*) teach us on?

A: It teaches us to differentiate between *True Christian Shepherds* and the *evil ones*. The Teaching embraces the whole *Chapter 10* of *the Gospel of John*.

The first five Verses teach us the need of Shepherds, the Chief of them being Jesus the Christ, our Blessed Lord.
In the military, the last order is final. In every case of need, a Junior Officer has a right to annul any order(s) of his superiors. But in the Church of GOD, *nobody* can countermand or overrule the Written Word of the LORD, our GOD.

> *1 Verily, Verily, I say unto you, He that entereth not by the Door into the Sheepfold, but climbeth up some other way, the same is a thief and a robber. 2 But he that entereth in by the Door is the Shepherd of the Sheep. 3 To Him the Porter openeth; and the Sheep hear His Voice: and He calleth His Own Sheep by name, and leadeth them out. 4 And when He putteth forth His Own Sheep, He goeth before them, and the Sheep follow Him: for they know His Voice. 5 And a stranger will they not follow, but will flee from him: for they know not the voice of strangers. (John 10:1-5)*

The Door is the Written Word of GOD, the Voice of GOD, our Lord Jesus Christ & His Teaching – all never contradicting one another. See *Verses 7 & 9*.
The Sheepfold is GOD's People Christians, the Indivisible Body of Christ, the One Church of GOD. There is a Church visible, where (as Brother Thomas Scott in his corresponding Comments well taught) many are externally admitted in. There is also Church Eternal which populates the Heavenly Kingdom.

The Shepherd of the Sheep stands for a Christian Bishop, Pastor, Group Leader, Teacher, and others of and for True Believers – the Followers of Christ.
The Porter is the LORD GOD. He opens the Gate of His Kingdom to His Sheep. They hear the Voice of their Lord and follow Him only. He knows us by name, as good friends do. The Lord's Voice differs from those of liars. See *Matthew 15:14*.

We ought to obey the Anointed Shepherds of GOD. However, not blindly.
By *Verses 4*, *5*, *27*, we should know the Voice of our Lord. That kind of Knowledge is achievable only through personal Bible Study, Prayerful Communion with GOD, and compulsorily implementation of what is learned.
Communion of Saints, Church Services, Christian Schools, and Christian books are needful, have no doubt on that, but remain only second to the above-said.

Otherwise, bunching up with the strangers (per *Verses 8 & 10*) is inevitable.

In *Verse 8, the Sheep* are True Believers –

All that ever came before Me
are thieves and robbers: but the Sheep did not hear them.

Verse 11 runs,

I am the Good Shepherd:
the Good Shepherd giveth His Life for the Sheep.

In his Commentaries, Brother William Barclay well described the hard work of shepherds in old times. That trade required a lot of love, knowledge, and courage.

Verses 12 & 13 warn on false shepherds who are not to be followed.
Verses 14 & 15 remind us Who our True Shepherd is.

And this is *Verse 16:*

And other Sheep I have, which are not of this Fold:
them also I must bring, and they shall hear My Voice;
and there shall be One Fold, and One Shepherd.

Do you hear the Question of the Holy Spirit, even, is *your denomination* (so resolutely rejecting all others) leading you to that *One Fold*?
And what does this *One Fold* stand for? Only the Sheep per *John 10:27-29.*

Q: What did Jesus mean by "*the first will be last and the last will be first*"?

A: We read these Words in *Matthew 19:30, 20:16,* and *Mark 10:31.*
(*https://www.gotquestions.org,* February 2021.)

The meaning is determined by *Matthew 20:1-16*. Please, see "Q & A" chapter 211 (The Parable of Laborers in Vineyard). There, in *Verse 15*, the Holy Will of GOD stands contrary to the reason of this world.

Please also note the Accountability of a Church Leader (Shepherd) before the LORD GOD for Believers (Sheep) under his care.
In the natural, when sheep come back from a pasture to their pen, a shepherd steps aside to let them in. The shepherd may thus come in after the sheep.
But will not the owner ask of a shepherd about any missing sheep?
The Judgment of our Father GOD may well resemble that. *Luke 12:48*.

207

Q: How can we exercise daily the *Parable of Great Supper* written in *Matthew 22:2-14* & *Luke 14:16-24*?

A: Since the wording of that Parable differs in these two Gospels, we'll try to present our explanation for implementation to cover both Writings. *Matthew 22:2-14* runs,

2 The Kingdom of Heaven is like unto a certain King, which made a Marriage for His Son, 3 And sent forth His Servants to call them that were bidden to the Wedding: and they would not come. 4 Again, He sent forth other Servants, saying, Tell them which are bidden, Behold, I have prepared My Dinner: My oxen and My fatlings are killed, and all things are ready: come unto the Marriage. 5 But they made light of it, and went their ways, one to his farm, another to his merchandise: 6 And the remnant took His Servants, and entreated them spitefully, and slew them. 7 But when the King heard thereof, He was Wroth: and He sent forth His Armies, and destroyed those murderers, and burned up their city. 8 Then saith He to His Servants, The Wedding is ready, but they which were bidden were not Worthy. 9 Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the Marriage. 10 So those Servants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the Wedding was furnished with Guests. 11 And when the King came in to see the Guests, He saw there a man which had not on a Wedding Garment:
12 And He saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither not having a Wedding Garment? And he was speechless. 13 Then said the King to the Servants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. 14 For many are called, but few are chosen.

As *Verses 2-8* point at *the LORD GOD* calling His People *Israel* to Him & His Kingdom, the meaning is – *Life* or *death*, *Blessings* or *curses* – you pick.

The same stands true for us, Christians, to employ daily, even to answer every Call of GOD, no compromises, no excuses, and lo, don't deceive or betray Him!
For as the citizens of non-Christian states (discussed in chapters 53, 90, and 143), whether wittingly or not, directly or not, we may support anti-Christian policies in more ways than simple minds can grasp.
Ask yourself a question: *WWJD – what would Jesus do?* – and act accordingly.

Verse 7 teaches us to *fear LORD GOD* only. His Judgment is to come.

Verse 8 makes it clear that the *ungodliness* (be it old or present) is not unexpected. See *2Corinthians 4:4*.

Verse 9 reminds us of the *Great Commission* – the *Twelfth Commandment* – discussed in chapter 43.

Verses 8-10 have the Parallel – *Matthew 8:11-12*.

Verses 11-14 clarify that our Membership of some Local Church is neither sufficient for us nor qualify us to join the Church *Eternal*. In our previous discussion – chapter 206, we touched on that issue.
To get and have on the *Wedding Garment* – standing for outward *Christian* distinction manifested in and proved by Godly Living – is possible, and GOD the King right away can see the difference in His guests' *attitude* toward Him.*

Exemplifying the *Wedding Garment, Luke 14:12-14* runs:

> *... When thou makest a dinner or a supper, call not thy friends, nor thy brethren, neither thy kinsmen, nor thy rich neighbours; lest they also bid thee again, and a recompence be made thee. But when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind: and thou shalt be Blessed; for they cannot recompense thee: for thou shalt be recompensed at the Resurrection of the Just.*

* You may kindly read the *Parable of Great Supper* in *Luke 14:16-24* (which I don't quote here for the sake of brevity) to find our explanation quite acceptable.

Matthew 22:11-14 – the ending Verses of the *Parable of Great Supper* (a.k.a., *Parable of Wedding Feast*) – was also discussed in chapter 173.

The references: *Exodus 23:2* – Christian Way.
Deuteronomy 6:4-5 – Love your LORD GOD.
Deuteronomy 28 – Life or death, Blessings or curses.
Psalms 111:10 – Fear GOD.
Proverbs 3:5 – Trust GOD.
Proverbs 21:30 – Nothing can oppose LORD GOD.
John 1:5 – Don't marvel at unbelief.
1Corinthians 1:18-31 – The evil of unbelief.

208

Q: Does the *Parable of Harvest Time* (a.k.a., *the Parable of Seed Growing*) in *Mark 4:26-29* has any practical use besides the Teaching on Harvesting?

A: Yes, it does. Every Parable of Lord Jesus has so needful Guidance.
We ought to see the Scripture.

> *26 ... So is the Kingdom of GOD, as if a man should cast seed into the ground; 27 And should sleep, and rise night and day, and the seed should spring and grow up, he knoweth not how. 28 For the earth bringeth forth fruit of herself; first the blade, then ear, after that the full corn in the ear. 29 But when the fruit is brought forth, immediately he putteth in the sickle, because the harvest is come. (Mark 4:26-29)*

I suggest that searching for keywords is a correct approach to many Scriptures. Thus, in *Verse 27*, the keyline is "*he knoweth not how*". Therefore, the obvious question is: do we need to know all the Mysteries of the Kingdom? (It is not my intention to challenge *Mark 4:11*. I only attempt to tell apart the things freely given to us and closed up for the time being to learn later on and locked up forever by the Wisdom of our Father GOD.)
When in chapter 137, we spoke about the number *666* and touched the subject of so famous *wisdom* of Brother Solomon, I dared to question the *fruits* thereof. Here, I guess we encounter the same thing.
Read and think well over the following Apocryphal Writing:

Seek not what is too difficult for you, nor investigate what is beyond your power.
Reflect upon what has been assigned to you, and do not be curious about
many of His Works, for you do not need to see with your eyes what is hidden.
Do not meddle in what is beyond your tasks, for matters too great
for human understanding have been shown you.
(Sirach, 3:21-23, Revised Standard Version (The Ignatius Bible), 1952)

On the other hand, we need to remember the *Harvest Law* of GOD (considered in chapter 503), as it is observable in *Verses 28-29*.

Henceforth is the implementation:

... let us not be weary in Well Doing:
for in Due Season we shall reap, if we faint not. (Galatians 6:9)

209

Q: How to best use the *Parable of House on the Rock,* taught by Lord Jesus in *Matthew 7:24-27* & *Luke 6:47-49*?

A: In my humble opinion, this Parable has more than one Teaching and, therefore, interpretation & implementation.

> *Therefore whosoever heareth these Sayings of Mine, and doeth them,*
> *I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock ...*
> *(Matthew 7:24)*

The Signification of the Scripture is the *Written Word of GOD* – the *Holy Bible* – our Highest & Final Authority in every walk & issue of Life.

Yes, we should obey the laws of the country we are citizens of or reside in.
But that obedience ought to take place until the time when a law of men begins contradicting the Holy Law of GOD. All regulations & traditions – family, community, business, military, Church, and so forth – conflicting with the LORD have been forever made null & void by Him. Mind well *Isaiah 33:22*.

Kindly note the following comments.

> *The general meaning of the passage is, that True Piety is not fully distinguished from its counterfeit, till it comes to the Trial. For the temptations, by which we are tried, are like billows and storms, which easily overwhelm unsteady minds, whose lightness is not perceived during the season of prosperity.*
>
> *(John Calvin,*
> *Commentary on the Harmony of the Evangelists, vol.1, p.370)*

To the above, I would add a good point of Brother William Barclay – the false worship – written in his comments to *John 4:22-24*.

> *GOD is a Spirit: and they that worship Him*
> *must worship Him in spirit and in Truth. (John 4:24)*

We cannot love & worship our Father GOD halfheartedly and study & obey His Word selectively. We cannot build up other than on a dependable foundation. And for our spirit being – the Abode of the Holy Ghost – that basis is the Truth of the Written Word of GOD. Verily, otherwise, it would be but a waste of time.

210

Q: What do these two short *Parables – of Tower Builder (Luke 14:28-30)* and *of King at War* (*Luke 14:31-32*) – teach us?

A: They teach us True *Christian Discipleship*.

26 If any man come to Me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, Yea, and his own life also, he cannot be My Disciple. 27 And whosoever doth not bear his Cross, and come after Me, cannot be My Disciple. 28 For which of you, intending to build a tower, sitteth not down first, and counteth the cost, whether he have sufficient to finish it? 29 Lest haply, after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finish it, all that behold it begin to mock him, 30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finish. 31 Or what King, going to make war against another King, sitteth not down first, and consulteth whether he be able with ten thousand to meet him that cometh against him with twenty thousand? 32 Or else, while the other is yet a great way off, he sendeth an Ambassage, and desireth conditions of peace. 33 So likewise, whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be My Disciple. (Luke 14:26-33)

Verse 26 teaches how to make GOD First in our Life. Chapter 15 (GOD First).
Verse 27 teaches us on Our Cross. You may refer to chapter 76 (Our Cross).

Verses 28-30: Count the cost of Discipleship. (See chapter 498.) Note, in the long run, the price of unbelief is much higher. Mocking will surely come down on us from unbelievers whenever we fail to act as Christians should. Read chapter 442.

Don't take *Verses 31-32* literally. In no way we are supposed to "consider" the power of Satan (who uses witchcraft, atheistic science, public opinion, &c., &c.) and seek any *compromise* with him. No. Christ teaches us to get prepared, never stepping away if the cost of Discipleship is too high. (Verily, the fire of hell is weightier.) Know the Gifts you have already been blessed with. Get ready for the spiritual battles to come up. Never seek "peace" with the enemy, but rather arm yourself with the Spirit Weapons promised in *Ephesians 6:11-18*. Chapter 444.

Verse 33: Again, GOD is First. To *forsake all that we have* means to take all our worldly possessions from the first place in life and replace them with Lord Jesus, not loving the material things more than the Promised Kingdom where we belong. We should comprehend what our real Treasure is and what is not.

211

Q: Please explain the Teaching given in the *Parable of Laborers in Vineyard, Matthew 20:1-15.*

A: Here, as in many other Parables, the *Love of GOD* conflicts with the *common sense* (a.k.a., *reason*) of the world.

1 For the Kingdom of Heaven is like unto a man that is an householder, which went out early in the morning to hire labourers into his vineyard. 2 And when he had agreed with the labourers for a penny a day, he sent them into his vineyard. 3 And he went out about the third hour, and saw others standing idle in the marketplace, 4 And said unto them; Go ye also into the vineyard, and whatsoever is right I will give you. And they went their way. 5 Again he went out about the sixth and ninth hour, and did likewise. 6 And about eleventh hour he went out, and found others standing idle, and saith unto them, Why stand ye here all the day idle? 7 They say unto him, Because no man hath hired us. He saith unto them, Go ye also into the vineyard; and whatsoever is right, that shall ye receive. 8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard saith unto his steward, Call the labourers, and give them their hire, beginning from the last unto the first.
9 And when they came that were hired about eleventh hour, they received every man a penny. 10 But when the first came, they supposed that they should have received more; and they likewise received every man a penny. 11 And when they had received it, they murmured against the goodman of the house, 12 Saying, These last have wrought but one hour, and thou hast made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day. 13 But he answered one of them, and said, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didst not thou agree with me for a penny? 14 Take that thine is, and go thy way: I will give unto this last, even as unto thee. 15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? Is thine eye evil, because I am good? 16 So the last shall be first, and the first last: for many be called, but few chosen. (Matthew 20:1-16)

> *Verse 1* introduces our *Salvation* and Gracious Admittance into the *Kingdom of Heaven* as the first subject matter here.

Verses 2,4,7 clarify, & *Verse 13* reminds us of the Agreement (Covenant) between LORD GOD and ourselves. The respective Duties of both parties are stipulated.

Verses 1-8 show the Will of GOD for all to live, work, and receive the Reward.

Verses 10-12 picture the conflict between our reason and the Wisdom of GOD.

However,

There is no wisdom nor understanding
nor counsel against the LORD. (Proverbs 21:30)

In *Verses 13-16*, LORD GOD of Heaven & Earth Patiently explained it away.

> *Let us then remember, that we are all condemned criminals ; and that our Wise and Righteous Sovereign does no one any injustice, and that He dispenses His Unmerited Favours as He sees Good : let us forego every proud claim, and seek Salvation as a Free Gift and let us never envy or grudge ; but always rejoice, and praise GOD, for every display of His Mercy to the vilest of our fellow sinners.*
>
> *(Thomas Scott, comments on Matthew 20:1-16)*

References.

The Wisdom of GOD vs worldly reason – *Proverbs 3:5; Isaiah 29:14 & 55:8; 1Corinthians 1:19 & 3:18-19; & James 3:17.*

Righteousness of GOD – *Deuteronomy 32:4; Psalms 145:17; & Isaiah 51:6.*

The Purpose of GOD – *Psalms 33:11.*

The Judgment & Justice of GOD – *1Samuel 16:7; Psalms 33:5 & 89:14; Proverbs 20:27; & Jeremiah 32:18,19.*

Q: In what context is *Exodus 21:20-21* good?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

And if a man smite his servant, or his maid, with a rod, and he die under his hand; he shall be surely punished. Notwithstanding, if he continue a day or two, he shall not be punished: for he is his money.
(Exodus 21:20-21)

The above (as well as any other) Scripture does not promote & excuse any atrocity or compromise with the evils of slavery, cruelty, or injustice.
In *Exodus Chapter 21*, *Verses 2-11, 26-27, & 32*, Father GOD stipulated the relationship between *Jewish* masters and *Jewish* servants in *Israel*.
See *Leviticus 25:39-46 & 47-55* for the relationship between *Jewish* masters and *foreign* servants (as well as vice versa), respectively. Mind well *Galatians 3:28*.
Take a look at the discussion in chapter 700. Note, the Bible is shut on those who ignorantly single out the “evil passages” therein and even advise to cut ‘em off.

212

Q: What's the use of the *Parable of Leaven* (*Matthew 13:33* & *Luke 13:20-21*)?

A: *Matthew 13:33* runs:

The Kingdom of Heaven is like unto leaven,
which a woman took, and hid in three measures of meal,
till the whole was leavened.

Luke 13:20-21 confirms that.

Considering the Word –

... the Kingdom of GOD is within you. (Luke 17:21)

– we may conclude that every human spirit, created in GOD's Image & Likeness, is Divinely purposed for the Kingdom of GOD.

Therefore, those *three measures of meal* well stand for our spirit, soul, and body. The *leaven* is our Precious Treasure – (the Spirit of) the Written Word of GOD – needful to recreate (or bring back) the worldly man into the Image & Likeness (I&L) of GOD. That I&L belongs to the Heavenly Kingdom but was lost for sins. Even as a leavened loaf differs from an unleavened one, the folks knowing & walking in the Truth of GOD are different from what they were in the world.

And the Spirit of the LORD will come upon thee, and thou shalt prophesy
with them, and shalt be turned into another man. (1Samuel 10:6)

Thus *the whole was leavened* when the Holy Ghost was in command of our spirit. The latter develops into a strict ruler of our soul to make it think in line with the Written Word of GOD and operates the body so that it acts accordingly.

We should use the *Parable of Leaven* in a tight connection with *Matthew 6:11*. Why? Because our *daily Bread* – the Written Word of GOD – must be leavened with His Holy Spirit of Truth only, not with *the leaven of Pharisees* (warned against in *Matthew 16:6,11; Mark 8:15; Luke 12:1*).
That wrong leaven – the lies of Satan – is represented today by so many *denominational* doctrines contradicting the LORD, our Father, and one another.

Listen to the Holy Spirit of GOD – the Guide promised in *Isaiah 30:20-21* – when hearing or reading whatsoever.

Q: Is this a contradiction?. In *Mathew 6:1*, Jesus says doing Good Works openly, in public, leads folks to no reward, but in *6:2*, He says they have received their *reward* in full.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: There is neither a "contradiction" in *Matthew 6:1-2* nor in the rest of the Holy Bible. (In the Contents section, see the chapters "Contradictions".)
It is written,

1 Take heed that ye do not your Alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no Reward of your Father which is in Heaven. 2 Therefore when thou doest thine Alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the Synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. 3 But when thou doest Alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: 4 That thine Alms may be in Secret: and thy Father which seeth in Secret Himself shall reward thee openly. (Matthew 6:1-4)

In *Verse 1*, Jesus rebukes doing Alms for the sake of the worldly crowd's reward.
In *Verses 2-4*, He teaches on the Secrecy of Alms, so that our LORD GOD only might see & reward them.
Verse 2 confirms the public "reward", which costs little in Heaven.

Lord Jesus, Himself didn't seek public rewards. He praised His Father GOD, taught so others, and asked to "tell no man" (the subject of chapter 100). Thus Our Lord was not sure that the persons were healed indeed until they would properly glorify the LORD, their GOD.

Q: What does it mean that "greater is He that is in me than he that is in the world" (*1John 4:4*)?

(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, February 2021.)

A: It is written:

... many false prophets are gone out into the World. ... Ye are of GOD, little children, and have overcome them: because greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world. (1John 4:4)

These Words are given to Christians, who welcomed *the Holy Ghost* in their hearts. He – the Holy Spirit of the LORD GOD – is indeed *greater* than Satan and all his evil puppets put together. They belong to *the world* of unbelievers.
Please, read the context – *1John 4:1-6*.

213

Q: Is there any difference between the subjects of two *Parables,* of *Lost Sheep (Luke 15:4-6)* and of *Lost Coin (Luke 15:8-9)*?

A: Kindly read the Scripture.

4 What man of you, having an hundred sheep, if he lose one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderness, and go after that which is lost, until he find it? 5 And when he hath found it, he layeth it on his shoulders, rejoicing. 6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together his friends and neighbours, saying unto them, Rejoice with me; for I have found my sheep which was lost. 7 I say unto you, that likewise Joy shall be in Heaven over one sinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine Just persons, which need no Repentance. 8 Either what woman having ten pieces of silver, if she lose one piece, doth not light a candle, and sweep the house, and seek diligently till she find it? 9 And when she hath found it, she calleth her friends and her neighbours together, saying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had lost. 10 Likewise, I say unto you, there is Joy in the Presence of the Angels of GOD over one sinner that repenteth. (Luke 15:4-10)

In the Parallel Discourse – *Matthew 18:12-14* – we see the Holy Will of GOD.

Even so it is not the Will of your Father which is in Heaven, that one of these little ones should perish. (Matthew 18:14)

So, what do both the above Parables teach us on?
First, it is so encouraging *Love* of the Father GOD for us. See *Romans 8:38-39*.
Second, Christian *Mercy* is to be shown to our Friends in Christ as well as many lost souls of this world. See chapter 509 (One lost sheep).
Third, True *Joy* when this Work of the Lord Jesus is done through us to fulfill His Eleventh & Twelfth Commandments. See chapters 80 & 43, respectively.
Verses 7 & 10 secure that resemblance in chief Meaning.
Yet, there, we can see a bit of difference in implementations.
Extending the above principal Meaning, the *Parable of Lost Sheep* might also call us to save animals in need, the Call well known to those who love them.
The *Parable of Lost Coin* is applicable when we, busy with so many cares of this life, sometimes happen to forget and lose something of True Value, especially when other Values are not neglected and work well.
For "*ten pieces of silver*" might stand for completeness of spiritual Treasures, which integrity is broken when one piece thereof is lost.

214

Q: What is the *spiritual* meaning of the *Parable of Mustard Seed* (*Matthew 13:31-32, Mark 4:30-32, & Luke 13:18-19*)?

A: In chapter 178, we discussed the *Evangelical* point of this Parable.

In his respective comments, Brother Thomas Scott (1747-1821) used the term "*small beginnings*" for a "*Gospel-dispensation*".
The same term denotes "*the starting point of the Kingdom*" can be found in the work of Brother William Barclay (1907-1978).

Brother Adam Clarke (1760-1832) also saw here a "*representation of the progress of the Gospel in the World and of the growth of Grace in the soul*".
The same application – general & individual – we can find in commentaries of Brother Henry Alford (1810-1871).

The books of those Teachers you may see in the *References*.

To check up on those explanations, we ought to go to personal Christian records and recollect the starting points.

... The Kingdom of Heaven is like to a grain of mustard seed, which a man took,
and sowed in his field: which indeed is the least of all seeds:
but when it is grown, it is the greatest among herbs, and becometh a tree,
so that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.
(Matthew 13:31-32)

My Christian *Beginning* is mentioned in chapter 133, dedicated to *Saint Thomas*, and my Witnessing of another person's *Beginning* is described in chapter 199.

Lord Jesus often preached on the Heavenly Kingdom of GOD, always in Parables. Since many Scriptures in the Bible may have several interpretations (not contradicting one another), one may kindly accept the following comment.

Take the "rather small mustard grain" for the concise Word of Truth and "the garden" for a human spirit. You may recognize "the seed growing up into quite a tree" in our spiritual growth and "a shelter for fowls" in the Peace of mind. (One may refer to chapters 53, 603, and 678 – the Peace of GOD.) We attain that Peace by Godly Understanding (kindly see chapter 58 – K & U & W) and right sorting out all thoughts coming up. Read *2Corinthians 10:5*.

Further references: *Jeremiah 24:7 & 31:33* – A New heart promised.
Ezekiel 11:19 & 36:26-28; & Revelation 2:17 – ditto.
Ezekiel 18:31 – Make you a New heart.

Q: Regarding *spiritual growth*, why is it so easy to stop growing in Faith? When we become Christians, we are on Fire to serve GOD. But as time goes by, we stop seeking more of GOD & Truth. I face this a lot.
Q: Do you feel the same?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: What you wrote about, our Lord Jesus mentioned in His *Parable of a Sower* – the subject of our "Q & A" chapter 225. There, you can read that far not all folks answered the Call of GOD, and, of those who do, a few continued to be "on Fire to serve GOD," as you correctly put it. I observe that too. But, I guess it is wrong to use the word "we" – as per the same Parable. Many Christians do bring Fruits. Kindly note the *Parable of Sheep & Goats*.
Do I feel the same? Negative on that. *Satan* wants of us these attitudes: apathy, defeat, laziness, pessimism – to name a few.
When feeling so, shake up and move on. Read *Luke 15:20*. Godspeed.

Q; How did you Truly repent? I started reading my Bible and praying to God only after I did something wrong. I regret it later and have been hating myself since. I've felt so depressed and, when I read the Bible, I get even sadder. I want some advice. Please help me.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Edited.)

A: Please, don't study the Bible and pray *after* you err but do that *continuously*. Thus, the Guidance of the Holy Ghost is most distinctive, your future errors will lessen, and the way out becomes simple.
And, if you & I understand "Truly repent" the same way, follow His Directions. Note, you are not alone who err. We all do.
Communicate with GOD the way described in *Luke 15:20-22*.
The Peace promised us should come. For, *He is Faithful that promised*.

Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by Prayer and Supplication
with Thanksgiving let your Requests be made known unto GOD.
And the Peace of GOD, which passeth all understanding,
shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.
(Philippians 4:6-7)

215

Q: In what way the *Parable of the Net (Matthew 13:47-48)* remains actual?

A: It is written:

> *... The Kingdom of Heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. So shall it be at the End of the World: the Angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the Just, and shall cast them into the Furnace of Fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew 13:47-50)*

Here, we can see the Warning to all people, regardless of their position, esteem, or belief, as also is written in the following Parallel:

... For many walk,
of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping,
that they are the enemies of the Cross of Christ: whose end is destruction ...
who mind earthly things ... (Philippians 3:18-19)

Consequently, our Communion with GOD must be constant, and our Spirit Weapons ready always,

... that ye may be Able to withstand in the evil day,
and having done all, to stand. (Ephesians 6:13)

Q: *Romans 6:7*. Anyone who died is free from sin. Does that mean there is no hell? Because if you are free from sin, it means that your sins won't follow you after your death.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: It is written,

... our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. For he that is dead is freed from sin. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him: knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over Him. (Romans 6:5-9)

Thus, *he that is dead is freed from* [doing] *sin* [anymore]. So, don't do it. However, the previous sinning must be *repented* of to be forgiven. *Luke 15:20*. Otherwise, the Door of the Kingdom is shut on the sinner. *Matthew 25:10-12*.

216

Q: What should be our following the *Parable of the Pearl* written in *Matthew 13:45-46*?

A: The Parable runs,

> *... the Kingdom of Heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it. (Matthew 13:45-46)*

Consider the Parallel to the above:

> *... the Kingdom of GOD is within you. (Luke 17:21)*

Seeing the Kingdom in *Matthew 13:45-46* & *Luke 17:21* (which is the *Image & Likeness of GOD* in every human being, Believer or not), we can come to correct interpretation & implementation of the *Parable of the Pearl*. It is the Right Way of walking before our Heavenly Father. So, sort out the priorities in your Life.
In his respective comments, Brother *John Calvin* wrote,

> *We are greatly in need of such a Warning ; for we are so captivated by the allurements of the world, that Eternal Life fades from our view ; and in consequence of our carnality, the Spiritual Graces of GOD are far from being held by us in Estimation which they deserve.*
>
> *(Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists, Matthew, Mark, and Luke, 1845, Volume 2, Page 131)*

There is one more Parallel to *Matthew 13:45-46*, even the Words of Lord Jesus in *Matthew 19:21 –*

> *... go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have Treasure in Heaven: and come and follow Me.*

But here, the *poor* are those unlearned in the Word, not only the beggars.
You are welcome to our conversation in chapter 121 (How to make Friends).

References: *Proverbs 4:7* – Wisdom & Understanding.
Hosea 4:6 – The Rejected Knowledge.
Matthew 6:33 & Luke 12:31 – The Kingdom & Righteousness.
Hebrews 12:1-2 – Sort out your priorities.

217

Q: What is the Message of the *Parable of Persistent Widow* (a.k.a., the *Parable of Unjust Judge*) written in *Luke 18:2-5*?

A: Let us see the *Parable (Verses 2-5)* and the *Teaching (Verses 1,6-8).*

1 And He spake a Parable unto them to this end, that men ought always to pray, and not to faint; 2 Saying, There was in a city a Judge, which feared not GOD, neither regarded man: 3 And there was a widow in that city; and she came unto him, saying, Avenge me of mine adversary. 4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he said within himself, Though I fear not GOD, nor regard man; 5 Yet because this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, lest by her continual coming she weary me. 6 And the Lord said, Hear what the unjust Judge saith. 7 And shall not GOD avenge His Own Elect, which cry day and night unto Him, though He bear long with them? 8 I tell you that He will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of Man cometh, shall He find Faith on the Earth?

Verses 6-8 have this Parallel:

If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in Heaven give Good things to them that ask Him? (Matthew 7:11)*

* *Luke 11:13* presented the "*Good things"* as "*the Holy Spirit*."

But there is also this Hard Question in *Verse 8*:

... when the Son of Man cometh, shall He find Faith on the Earth?

As it seems to me, *Faith* here stands for *Faith in action.*

Romans 1:17 – ... The Just shall live by Faith.
Romans 10:17 – Faith comes by Hearing ...
Galatians 2:20 – ... I live by the Faith ...
Ephesians 6:16 – ... taking the Shield of Faith ...
Hebrews 11:1 – ... the substance of things hoped for ...
James 2:26 – ... Faith without Works is dead ...
1John 5:4 – ... the Victory that overcometh the world ...

218

Q: The *Parable of a Friend at Midnight (Luke 11:5-8)* is of the same Meaning as the *Parable of Persistent Widow* (*Luke 18:1-8*), isn't it?
Q: So, what's the reason for repetitions?

A: To start from,

There is no wisdom nor understanding
nor counsel against the LORD. (Proverbs 21:30)

It is written:

> *5 ... Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves; 6 For a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him? 7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee. 8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him, because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth. 9 And I say unto you, Ask*, and it shall be given you; seek*, and ye shall find; knock*, and it shall be opened unto you. 10 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. (Luke 11:5-10)*
> * Within the meaning of the text, all three presume to do it *persistently*.

Speaking of the Meaning, *Luke 18:5* & *11:8* do have a resemblance, both picturing the *unloving worldly mind*. But the Parables – *Luke 18:2-5* & *11:5-8* – differ because the first is about *worldly corrupted justice*, while the second brings to the Light of GOD *worldly false friendships*.

Still less in common have two respective Teachings: *Luke 18:1,6-8, & 11:9-10.*

Stating a distinct contrast between *Godly* and *worldly* values, both Parables call us to steadfast *Prayers.* But the first winds up to face the *Hard Question* (see *Luke 18:8*), whereas the second, being instrumental for *Christians,* also depicts *worldly searches* (even in the Holy Bible) for whatever but the *Truth of GOD* (read *Luke 11:10*). We touched on that matter in chapter 29.

See relevant chapters: 151 (How to seek the LORD?),
156 (The Prayer of Repentance), & 239 (Seek His Face).

References.

Our True Friends: *Psalms 119:63 & Proverbs 27:6*.

Chose Right Friends: *Proverbs 13:20, 14:7, 20:19, 22:24-25, & 24:21*.

Mind worldly friends: *Micah 7:5*.

The Hard Test: *Mark 9:41* (*A cup of water.* See "Q & A" chapter 99.)

Be a Friend: *Luke 14:12-14 & 16:9* (See chapter 121).

Lord Jesus' Definitions: *John 15:13-15 & 17:21-23*.

The Eleventh Commandment: *John 13:34-35* (see chapter 80).

The Great Example: *Acts 2:44-47 & 4:32-37*.

Q: (1) If GOD knows everything, including our deepest desires & thoughts (*1John 3:20*), why didn't He know whether or not Abraham feared Him?

Q: (2) Why did GOD need Abraham to threaten his son with death in order to show Him what He already knew?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

GOD tested Abraham's Faith. (Genesis 22:1, Expanded Bible)

It is also said,

... there is no iniquity with the LORD our GOD,
nor respect of persons ... (2Chronicles 19:7)

Father GOD does know everything. But Omniscience does not stand in the Way of His continuous Testing His Servants. Those Tests are more needful to *us* than to our Omniscient GOD.

Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a season, if need be,
ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations: that the Trial of your Faith,
being much more Precious than of gold that perisheth,
though it be tried with fire, might be found unto Praise and Honour
and Glory at the Appearing of Jesus Christ. (1Peter 1:6-7)

219

Q: Does the *Parable of the Pharisee and the Tax Collector*, a.k.a., *Pharisee & Publican*, written in *Luke 18:10-13*, stay instrumental at present?

A: Yes, it does. Kindly read the Scripture.

> *9 And He spake this Parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were Righteous, and despised others: 10 Two men went up into the Temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a Publican. 11 The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, GOD, I thank Thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this Publican. 12 I fast twice in the week, I give Tithes of all that I possess.*
> *13 And the Publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto Heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, GOD be Merciful to me a sinner. 14 I tell you, this man went down to his house Justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. (Luke 18:9-14)*

In *Verses 9 & 14*, we can see this clear Teaching: the self-righteousness, which always stems up from pride, is the satanic evil leading us away from the Holy LORD, our Father. See chapter 447 (Righteousness vs self-righteousness).
On the other hand, the best way GOD-ward is the Sacrament of Confession.
Kindly note that neglecting that Sacrament is not so far from self-righteousness.

What was wrong with that Pharisee? To begin with, he was a representative of those Spiritual Leaders & Teachers of Israel first guilty of religious & physical slavery of their people. He called other people ungodly names, forgetting his being their chief guide into sins. He mentioned the Fast (note *Isaiah 58*), which was unknown to him, and the *false tithing*, which Lord Jesus condemned (*Matthew 23:23* & *Luke 11:42*). We spoke on *the evil of criticism* in chapter 141.

Therefore, *the Parable of the Pharisee and the Tax Collector* has always been very useful for Christians, nowadays inclusive.
In chapter 102 (The Strategy), we came to this recommendation: see *yourself* literally in *every* negative & erring human being our Bible depicts. This way, being not much mistaken, we can better understand what Jesus, the Son of GOD, did for us on that dreadful cross.

220

Q: To whom the *Parable of a Prodigal Son (Luke 15:11-32)* is addressed?

A: In fact, the Parable is for all people, you & me inclusive. Read it closely.

11 ... A certain man had two sons: 12 And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. 13 And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. 14 And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. 15 And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. 16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. 17 And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! 18 I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against Heaven, and before thee, 19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. 20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had Compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. 21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against Heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. 22 But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: 23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: 24 For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. 25 Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing. 26 And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. 27 And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. 28 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him. 29 And he answering said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:
30 But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. 31 And he said unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. 32 It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.

How come the Parable is for all? Read *Verse 12* – it is the Blessing of *Free will*.

And it is written,

All we like sheep have gone astray;
we have turned every one to his own way ... (Isaiah 53:6)

The fact that once upon a time, you & I became Christians has not made us Holy, Perfect, and Righteous (H & P & R). All these Virtues we have but *in* Christ Jesus our Lord, i.e., as Members of His Body – the Church of GOD. In no way are we those H & P & R *without* Him. One may quickly find him (her) self in the sorry company of dogs & swines warned on in *Luke 15:16* & *Matthew 7:6.*

The Christian Way has never been an easy road for anyone. The necessary *Tests* of Father GOD allow some *temptations* of Satan to creep in. That may and do result in our errors, doubts, stumblings, failures, falls, etc. So what? Shall we forget the Holy Commandments, eat spirit refuse, and sit around in the spiritual dirt surrounded by spiritual swine? Or should we rather stand up and walk in the well-known direction, even GOD-ward?

Lo, *Verse 20* is so Mighty Encouragement. Just get out of the worldly mire and go (or get back to) the Right Way. And even when we, His Children, are yet a great way off (from K & U & W – see chapter 58), the LORD GOD, our Father, Himself will run to meet us halfway. He has promised that by this Scripture. Verily, *Luke 15:20* alone is the Right Word to be told unto every unbeliever as per the Great Commission of Christ – the Twelfth Commandment.

We are not supposed to (forget the existence of GOD our Judge and) put forth a finger at others who proved themselves spiritually weak. Or so it may seem to us.

> *When we, Christians, behave badly, or fail to behave well, we are making Christianity unbelievable to the outside world.*
>
> *(C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.208)*

Last but not least: what about the elder son mentioned in *Verses 25-32*? Had he got disappointed? Yes, he had. We all might be.
And where to find Guidance? Well, that's what our Communion with GOD is for. Note well *Jeremiah 33:3*.
Could the elder son (and his likes) get so angry as to fall away? No way. Read *Verse 29* and the spiritual sequential, *Verse 31* –

Son, thou art ever with Me, and all that I have is thine.

221

Q: The *Parable of Rich Fool* (*Luke 12:16-20*) is addressed to rich folks only, isn't it?

A: No, it's not. *The love of money* (the Parable is about) is a *spiritual infection*, which doesn't depend on our financial state. Let us read *Luke 12:15-21*.

> *15 ... Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's Life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth. 16 And He spake a Parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully: 17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits? 18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods. 19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years; take thine ease, eat, drink, and be merry. 20 But GOD said unto him, Thou fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be, which thou hast provided? 21 So is he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not Rich toward GOD.*

Verses 15, 20, & 21 contain the Teaching.

As far as I understand the Lord, by *Life*, Jesus means *GOD's Blessing of time* to be spent living in *His Image & Likeness*. GOD asks us the Question, the best answer to which we should find in the following Scriptures –
Deuteronomy 6:6-7 & 32:46; & Proverbs 22:6 – are all about the most needful Inheritance we are supposed to leave to our children.

All material stuff is very nice, but how much does it cost in *Eternity* & *the Kingdom of GOD*?

Probably, the best *financial inheritance* was left by *King Solomon*, wasn't it?
Okay, how long did it last, and where are the remaining thereof now? *Kaput*?
We touched on that subject in chapter 137 (The number 666).

What Lord Jesus calls "*treasure for himself*" is His sad *Sarcasm* (see the Index section for more). Such a "treasure" does not work in our favor. And those acts of foolishness resemble one another. How do they? – By hyperbolized *common sense* (a.k.a., reason). We discussed it in chapter 41 and some others. The conflict – *wisdom of this world* vs *Wisdom of GOD* – the Lord pictured in *Luke 12:15-21*.

References: *Proverbs 23:4* – Avoid worldly wisdom.
Isaiah 55:2 – What to spend money for.
Ezekiel 7:19 – The stumbling block of iniquity.
Matthew 6:19-21 & Luke 12:33-34 – The Treasures in Heaven.
Matthew 6:24 – The LORD GOD or mammon?
Matthew 6:33 – Set out your priorities.
Matthew 19:24, Mark 10:21-31, & Luke 18:22-25 – Make a choice.
Luke 6:24 – Woe to rich folks!

Q: (1) How do you interpret *Jesus and the rich ruler*?.
Q: (2) *Deuteronomy 15:7, Proverbs 19:17, Mathew 6:24 & 19:16-30, Mark 10:17-31, Luke 18:18-30, 1Timothy 6:10, Hebrews 13:5, James 5:1-6,* etc. – honestly, I can go on and on with the Scriptures on this subject.
It seems pretty settled that our Lord wants us to care for the poor.
Q: (3) My question is, how far does Lord Jesus want us to go?
Q: (4) It almost appears that taking a Vow of poverty is commanded to us (?), especially considering the "camel going through the eye of a needle" line.

(Signed: *Christian, Catholic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) Lord Jesus best interpreted that story in *Mark 10:23-24,* saying,

... how hard is it for them that trust in riches
to enter into the Kingdom of GOD!

I cannot say better. You may refer to "Q & A" chapters 41, 56, and 438.
(2) Right. And note: the Lord does not demand of us anything impossible. Among the Scriptures you mentioned, please find *Matthew 19:26* –

... With men this is impossible; but with GOD all things are possible.

See the same in *Mark 10:27 & Luke 18:27*.
(3) How far? Into His Kingdom, and definitely, not via lack.
Good question. The answer is in *Proverbs 19:17,* which you mentioned.
Have a look at chapter 504 (Giving & Receiving).
(4) I have nothing against *Brother Francis*, depicted in so good Christian film "Francis Of Assisi".
Yet, I'd call it the Way of Giving. And, even standing on personal experience, support it wholeheartedly. Note *Acts 20:35*.

222

Q: Please explain the *Parable of Rich Man and Lazarus (Luke 16:19-31).*

A: The Parable teaches us several important things. We ought to note them.

> *19 There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: 20 And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, 21 And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores.*

Verses 19-21. Undoubtedly, *Deuteronomy 15:7-11* and so many other Scriptures, commanding to care of poor neighbors, were ignored by the rich guy.

> *22 And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the Angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; 23 And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom.*

Paradise and hell could hardly be visible to one another other than *spiritually* revealed. Besides, the Parables of Christ do not depict actual events – they carry only *spiritual* meaning and teach us. Ask the Holy Spirit, your Teacher, can in the outside darkness (hell), a tormented spirit (stripped of a body) "see" anything?
Refer to chapters: 8 (Hell), 573 (Eternity), 707 (Life and afterlife), and the Index.

> *Though Christ is relating a history, yet He describes spiritual things under figures, which He knew to be adapted to our senses. Souls have neither fingers nor eyes, and are not liable to thirst, nor do they hold such conversations among themselves as are here described to have taken place between Abraham and the rich man ; but our Lord has here drawn a picture, which represents the condition of the life to come according to the measure of our capacity ... (John Calvin Harmony of Evangelists, volume 2, p. 188)*

Kindly see *Revelation 1:10, 4:2, 17:3, & 21:10*. Mind *1Corinthians 15:44* and our discussion on *1Corinthians 15:51-53* in chapter 250 (We shall be changed).
Lord Jesus taught,

> *I have yet many things to say unto you,*
> *but ye cannot bear them now. (John 16:12)*

In chapters 8 & 153, we talked about *hell* & the *Kingdom of Heaven*, respectively. So, *Verses 22 & 23* remind us of GOD's Fundamental *Harvest Law*. Kindly read *Genesis 8:22 & Galatians 6:7.*
And, as Brother John Calvin rightly observed in the above-mentioned book of his, any pompous burial, which in the case of poor Lazarus could have never taken place at all, would not have any importance in *Eternity*.
Please, see "Q & A" chapter 12 (Funeral).

> *24 And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have Mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. 25 But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented.*

Verses 24 & 25. That spiritual torment was also clarified in chapter 8. A bit of water the tormented man asked for might denote some Consolation. But the latter is impossible neither in hell nor in the death eternal.

> *26 And beside all this, between us and you there is a great gulf fixed: so that they which would pass from hence to you cannot; neither can they pass to us, that would come from thence.*

Verse 26 confirms: once somebody crossed the *Life-death* border, neither Prayers nor Intercessions can help that person anymore. Note well *Ecclesiastes 9:4.*

> *27 Then he said, I pray thee therefore, Father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: 28 For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.*

Verses 27 & 28. There are no unbelievers in hell. The devil cannot blind a human mind anymore, as *2Corinthians 4:4* states.

> *29 Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the Prophets; let them hear them. 30 And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. 31 And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead.*

In these last Verses, Lord Jesus reminded us that the Written Word of GOD (even the Scriptures that later on would be called the Old Testament) could have well saved those who had heard and obeyed it.

223

Q: Why are there some discrepancies between the *Parable of the Talents* (a.k.a., *the Parable of Servants*) in *Matthew 25:14-30* & *Luke 19:11-27*?

A: *Matthew 25:14-30* runs:

14 For the Kingdom of Heaven is as a man travelling into a far country, who called his own servants, and delivered unto them his goods. 15 And unto one he gave five talents, to another two, and to another one; to every man according to his several ability; and straightway took his journey. 16 Then he that had received the five talents went and traded with the same, and made them other five talents. 17 And likewise he that had received two, he also gained other two. 18 But he that had received one went and digged in the earth, and hid his lord's money. 19 After a long time the lord of those servants cometh, and reckoneth with them. 20 And so he that had received five talents came and brought other five talents, saying, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me five talents: behold, I have gained beside them five talents more. 21 His lord said unto him, Well done, thou good and faithful servant: thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. 22 He also that had received two talents came and said, Lord, thou deliveredst unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beside them. 23 His lord said unto him, Well done, good and faithful servant; thou hast been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord. 24 Then he which had received the one talent came and said, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou hast not sown, and gathering where thou hast not strawed: 25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, there thou hast that is thine. 26 His lord answered and said unto him, Thou wicked and slothful servant, thou knewest that I reap where I sowed not, and gather where I have not strawed: 27 Thou oughtest therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and then at my coming I should have received mine own with usury. 28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give it unto him which hath ten talents. 29 For unto every one that hath shall be given, and he shall have abundance: but from him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath. 30 And cast ye the unprofitable servant into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.

The Meaning is,

... the Axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth Good Fruit is hewn down, and cast into the Fire. (Matthew 3:10)

Even so, as *Verse 15* makes it clear, we all are blessed with some spiritual Gifts from our Heavenly Father. According to those abilities, the LORD GOD gives every one of us the Task to perform in our lifetime.
Our respective Account is to follow. Per *Verse 19*, in the Time Appointed, Father GOD is going to ask us what His Blessings & properties were spent for.

Verses 16 & 17 give us good illustrations of using the Talents of GOD.
Per *Verse 18*, some dig in the dust the Blessings of the LORD. It is a negative example not to be followed. But once the Lord said so, the bitter verity is here.

Verses 24-25 metaphorically describe the superstitious fears of many ignorant people. They may even call themselves or be called religious. But their superstitions are based on a mere worldly fear and therefore have nothing in common with the Sacred Fear of GOD, not even close.

We can see the LORD's coming *Judgment. Verses 21, 23 & 28-29* depict the *Reward* of GOD, whereas *Verse 30* describes *GOD's Punishment* – all according to His Perfect Justice.

Luke 19:12-27 is all of the same *Meaning*, yet adds up some things more.

12 ... A certain nobleman went into a far country to receive for himself a kingdom, and to return. 13 And he called his ten servants, and delivered them ten pounds, and said unto them, Occupy till I come. 14 But his citizens hated him, and sent a message after him, saying, We will not have this man to reign over us. 15 And it came to pass, that when he was returned, having received the kingdom, then he commanded these servants to be called unto him, to whom he had given the money, that he might know how much every man had gained by trading. 16 Then came the first, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained ten pounds. 17 And he said unto him, Well, thou good servant: because thou hast been faithful in a very little, have thou authority over ten cities. 18 And the second came, saying, Lord, thy pound hath gained five pounds. 19 And he said likewise to him, Be thou also over five cities. 20 And another came, saying, Lord, behold, here is thy pound, which I have kept laid up in a napkin: 21 For I feared thee, because thou art an austere man: thou takest up that thou layedst not down, and reapest that thou didst not sow. 22 And he saith unto him, Out of thine own mouth will I judge thee, thou wicked servant. Thou knewest that I was an austere man, taking up that I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow: 23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?

24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give it to him that hath ten pounds. 25 (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds). 26 For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him. 27 But those mine enemies, which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay them before me.

In this Version of the Parable, *Verses 12 & 15* give us an Image of *GOD's Purpose & Victory*.

The Counsel of the LORD standeth for ever,
the Thoughts of His Heart to all generations. (Psalms 33:11)

So shall My Word be that goeth forth out of My Mouth:
it shall not return unto Me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please,
and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it. (Isaiah 55:11)

Verse 14 tells of many folks which being blinded by *Satan*, hated the LORD, their GOD, and served Him not.

Verse 22 reminds us:

Death and Life are in the power of the tongue:
and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof. (Proverbs 18:21)

... every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account
thereof in the Day of Judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified,
and by thy words thou shalt be condemned. (Matthew 12:36-37)

Verse 25 & 26 teach about the difference between our judgment and that of GOD.

For My Thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My Ways,
saith the LORD. For as the Heavens are higher than the Earth,
so are My Ways higher than your ways, and My Thoughts than your thoughts.
(Isaiah 55:8-9)

Verse 27 warns on the death eternal waiting for every enemy of the LORD GOD.

Therefore, in *Matthew 25:14-30* & *Luke 19:11-27*, we can see no "discrepancies" but two discourses of the same Teaching given by our Lord Jesus on *two* different occasions and heard & retold by His *two* Disciples.

224

Q: Are there *Parallels* in the Holy Scriptures to help us comprehend the *Parable of Sheep & Goats* (*Matthew 25:31-46*)?

A: Yes, there are. And not only for this particular Parable.
For it is written,

Seek ye out of the Book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail,
none shall want her mate: for My Mouth it hath commanded,
and His Spirit it hath gathered them. (Isaiah 34:16)

The following is the *Parable of Sheep & Goats* and the Parallels.

31 When the Son of Man shall come in His Glory, and all the Holy Angels with Him, then shall He sit upon the Throne of His Glory: 32 And before Him shall be gathered all nations: and He shall separate them one from another, as a shepherd divideth his sheep from the goats: 33 And He shall set the sheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

Parallels: *Ecclesiastes 12:14 – GOD shall bring every work into Judgment.*
Romans 14:10-12 – ... all stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ.
1Corinthians 4:5 – will bring to light the hidden things of darkness ...
2Corinthians 5:10 – ... all appear before the Judgment Seat of Christ.

34 Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come, ye Blessed of My Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you from the Foundation of the World: 35 For I was an hungred, and ye gave Me meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave Me drink: I was a stranger, and ye took Me in: 36 Naked, and ye clothed Me: I was sick, and ye visited Me: I was in prison, and ye came unto Me.

Parallels: *Job 34:11 – He ... cause every man to find according to his ways.*
Psalms 18:25-26 & 62:12 – ditto.
Isaiah 58:6-7 – Is not this the Fast that I have chosen?
Jeremiah 17:10 – I the LORD search the heart ...
Matthew 5:7 – Blessed are the Merciful: for they shall obtain Mercy.
Luke 10:30-37 – The Parable of Good Samaritan & Conclusion.
Acts 17:31 – He will judge the World in Righteousness.
Kindly see chapters 503 & 508 (The Harvest Law).

37 Then shall the Righteous answer Him, saying, Lord, when saw we Thee an hungred, and fed Thee? or thirsty, and gave Thee drink? 38 When saw we Thee a stranger, and took Thee in? or naked, and clothed Thee? 39 Or when saw we Thee sick, or in prison, and came unto Thee? 40 And the King shall answer and say unto them, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My Brethren, ye have done it unto Me.

Parallel: *Isaiah 55:8-9 – For my thoughts are not your thoughts ...*
Kindly see chapters: 320 & 697 (GOD's Perfect Justice).

41 Then shall He say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from Me, ye cursed, into everlasting Fire, prepared for the devil and his angels: 42 For I was an hungred, and ye gave Me no meat: I was thirsty, and ye gave Me no drink: 43 I was a stranger, and ye took Me not in: naked, and ye clothed Me not: sick, and in prison, and ye visited Me not.

Parallels: *Jeremiah 31:30 – ... every one shall die for his own iniquity ...*
John 16:11 – ... the prince of this world is judged.
Revelation 14:9-11 – If any man worship the beast and his image ...
You may consider chapters: 8 (Hell) & 573 (Eternity).

44 Then shall they also answer Him, saying, Lord, when saw we Thee an hungred, or athirst, or a stranger, or naked, or sick, or in prison, and did not minister unto Thee? 45 Then shall He answer them, saying, Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye did it not to one of the least of these, ye did it not to Me.

Parallels: *Isaiah 55:8-9 – For my thoughts are not your thoughts ...*
Matthew 7:21-23 – I never knew you.
*Matthew 10:26 – there is nothing covered, that shall not be reveale*d ...
Luke 8:17 – ditto.

46 And these shall go away into Everlasting Punishment: but the Righteous into Life Eternal.

Parallels: *Genesis 1:4 – ... GOD divided the Light from the darkness.*
Ezekiel 18:20 – The soul that sinneth, it shall die.
Luke 16:26 – ... between us and you there is a great gulf fixed ...

See chapters 99 (A cup of water), 135 (Love & Charity),
205 (The Parable of Good Samaritan), and the Index section.

225

Q: The *Parable of the Sower* (also called the *Parable of Soils*) in *Matthew 13:3-8, Mark 4:3-8,* & *Luke 8:5-8* and explained away by Lord Jesus in *Matthew 13:19-23, Mark 4:14-20,* & *Luke 8:11-15* is all about our *Great Commission* (*Matthew 28:19-20*), isn't it?

A: It is *about* the Great Commission, yet not *all about* it. Christians are not only Preachers & Teachers, but, firstly, the Disciples of the Word. The Sower in the Parable in question is the LORD GOD, sowing His Truth into *our* spirit, and, through ourselves, into *other* hearts as well.

Listen to our Lord, reading *Matthew 13:3-9* –

> *3 ... Behold, a Sower went forth to sow; 4 And when He sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: 5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: 6 And when the Sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. 7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: 8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. 9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.*

In those three Gospels, the Verse concluding this Parable is about our spiritual hearing. The latter has nothing to do with a physical one. In this regard, kindly note *Romans 10:17* & *Galatians 3:2,5*.

Mind also *Matthew 13:11:15*, *Mark 4:11-12,* & *Luke 8:10*, where Lord Jesus explained to us the Reason for His Preaching in Parables – the subject we discussed in chapter 72 (Why Parables?). Should only *unbelievers* put their minds to work to understand our LORD GOD?

Like I said above, the Parable of the Sower is not *all about* our Great Commission (the Twelfth Commandment).
We can remember this Parable when studying the Bible, hearing a Sermon, preaching from the Pulpit, or communicating with our Friends at a Small Group or elsewhere.
Watch your Understanding and that of your audience when the Holy Spirit of GOD teaches through you – some Good Seeds are lost, aren't they?

Read another Version:

> *5 A sower went out to sow his seed: and as he sowed, some fell by the way side; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it. 6 And some fell upon a rock; and as soon as it was sprung up, it withered away, because it lacked moisture. 7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprang up with it, and choked it. 8 And other fell on good ground, and sprang up, and bare fruit an hundredfold. And when He had said these things, He cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. (Luke 8:5-8)*

Here, this Parable – a crucial one for every Evangelist – has some new details. The Seed got trodden down by those hurrying along the way right into hell. Some Seed of Truth lacked moisture of Diligence in the hearts. And a hundredfold (i.e., of full GOD-given Ability, counting not some part thereof) Fruit for GOD.

Speaking of all Parables of Jesus, have you noticed that the Parable of the Sower is the most outstanding one, meaning its complete corresponding to the definition of a parable, as a story, which has only meaning & teaching, and nothing to do with actuality & reason? For, Verily, to sow a field like that, one has to be beside him (her) self. At the same time, Verily, the Great Teaching is presented the way most memorable.

See chapters: 43 (Twelfth Commandment), 58 (K & U & W), 72 (Why Parables), 104 (The Promised Teacher), & 237 (Word – Hearing – Faith).

The references: *Isaiah 30:20-21 & John 14:26* – Hearing.
Hosea 4:6 – The dangerous lack of Knowledge.
John 8:32 – Our Discipleship.

Q: Why didn't Jesus save Judas from turning evil?

(Signed: *Christian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Shortened.)

A: Lord Jesus said,

> *Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you Rest. Take My Yoke upon you, and learn of Me; for I am Meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find Rest unto your souls. For My Yoke is easy, and My Burden is light. (Matthew 11:28-30)*

He also gave us the best possible Example one can imagine. Did it save all?

226

Q: What is the difference, if any, between
the *Parable of the Hidden Treasure* (*Matthew 13:44*) and
the *Parable of the Pearl of Great Value* (*Matthew 13:45-46*)?

A: Since the *Parable of the Pearl* was considered in chapter 216, let's read the *Parable of the Hidden Treasure*, and try to see the difference.

... the Kingdom of Heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field;
the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth
and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field. (Matthew 13:44)

Here we can see what is in common in both Parables, namely,

... goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth ...

The above Words undoubtedly stand for the *Wisdom* of *sorting out the priorities* in our Life. The same we can find in the *Parable of the Pearl of Great Value* (*...went and sold all that he had, and bought it.*) and this Parallel:

But seek ye first the Kingdom of GOD, and His Righteousness;
and all these things shall be added unto you. (Matthew 6:33)

Yet, in the *Parable of the Hidden Treasure*, we can see some distinctive features. First, the man, who found the treasure, *hides* it. That may well represent the Wisdom of keeping for oneself the *Secret* matters of personal Blessings or Revelation Knowledge – both unknown to the heathen world. See *Matthew 7:6*.

Second, the man *buys* (all) the field where his treasure is, i.e., go through whatever necessary monetary expenses to reach the Main Goal – *the Kingdom of the LORD GOD*. That hard Test of *Giving* we considered in chapter 56.

Kindly see the Scriptures to mind –

Deuteronomy 29:29 – The Revelation Knowledge.
Isaiah 39:1-7 – The negative example of sharing.
Matthew 11:30 – The Yoke easy & light.
Mark 9:23 – All things are possible to a Believer.
Revelation 2:17 – The Hidden Manna.

227

Q: What does the *Parable of Unjust Steward* (*Luke 16:1-8*) – which describes the dishonest relationship in the world – might teach *Christians*?

A: Well, this is the Parable:

> *1 ... There was a certain rich man, which had a steward; and the same was accused unto him that he had wasted his goods. 2 And he called him, and said unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy stewardship; for thou mayest be no longer steward. 3 Then the steward said within himself, What shall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the stewardship: I cannot dig; to beg I am ashamed. 4 I am resolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the stewardship, they may receive me into their houses. 5 So he called every one of his lord's debtors unto him, and said unto the first, How much owest thou unto my lord? 6 And he said, An hundred measures of oil. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and sit down quickly, and write fifty. 7 Then said he to another, And how much owest thou? And he said, An hundred measures of wheat. And he said unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourscore. 8 And the lord commended the unjust steward, because he had done wisely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiser than the Children of Light. (Luke 16:1-8)*

Christians are not supposed to follow that witty steward in whatever kind of business. On the contrary, led by God Holy Spirit, we should behave & work Rightly before the LORD and, if possible, in the eyes of men.

Verse 9, following the Parable, was considered in chapter 121 (How to make Friends?), where we spoke about Christian Friendship.
The second part of *Verse 8* may well answer the question of the present chapter. How come? Living by the Satan-inspired rules of this world, people get better jobs and make more money, don't they? Following worldly reason rather than the Holy Word of GOD, they receive their "666" marks and feel better off.
Kindly see chapters 41 (Common sense) & 137 (The number 666).
Yet, we get a Warning to stay *fools for Christ's sake*, per *1Corinthians 4:10*.

But why, as Lord Jesus teaches here, the unbelievers are wiser? Well, when money is at stake, our human brains work utmost best, don't they?
So, here is the Lesson: beware of spiritual & mental laziness.
We touched on that subject in chapter 72 (Why Parables?). Kindly take a look.

228

Q: In chapter 102, you advised to "see yourself literally in every negative & erring human." Okay. But how to apply that advice to studying the *Parable of Unmerciful Servant* (a.k.a., the *Parable of Unforgiving Servant*) written in *Matthew 18:23-35*?

A: Well, let's study *Matthew 18:21-35* together.

21 Then came Peter to Him, and said, Lord, how oft shall my brother sin against me, and I forgive him? till seven times? 22 Jesus saith unto him, I say not unto thee, Until seven times: but, Until seventy times seven.

Verses 21-22 are the prelude teaching us the LORD's Way of *Mercy* by *Forgiving*, Lord Jesus being the Example. Now, we may read *Matthew 18:23-35*.

23 Therefore is the Kingdom of Heaven likened unto a certain King, which would take account of his servants. 24 And when he had begun to reckon, one was brought unto him, which owed him ten thousand talents. 25 But forasmuch as he had not to pay, his lord commanded him to be sold, and his wife, and children, and all that he had, and payment to be made. 26 The servant therefore fell down, and worshipped him, saying, Lord, have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. 27 Then the lord of that servant was moved with Compassion, and loosed him, and forgave him the debt. 28 But the same servant went out, and found one of his fellowservants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took him by the throat, saying, Pay me that thou owest. 29 And his fellowservant fell down at his feet, and besought him, saying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all. 30 And he would not: but went and cast him into prison, till he should pay the debt. 31 So when his fellowservants saw what was done, they were very sorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done. 32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, said unto him, O thou wicked servant, I forgave thee all that debt, because thou desiredst me: 33 Shouldest not thou also have had Compassion on thy fellowservant, even as I had pity on thee? 34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he should pay all that was due unto him.
35 So likewise shall My Heavenly Father do also unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their trespasses.

So, seeing *yourself* in that unmerciful servant, remember your thoughts, words, and actions toward somebody who once did *you* the injustice.

Brother *Martin Luther* thus saw those who acted ungodly,

... as we say in German, to forgive, but not to forget ...
(Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount, p.135)

(The Attitude of) Sincere Forgiving does not remember the evil, especially when the same is repented of by the guilty person.
Kindly see chapters 38 (How to forgive?) & 193 (Fight revenge).

The Scriptures to mind: *Matthew 5:44 – ... Love your enemies ...*
6:12 & 14-15 – ... forgive men their trespasses ...
Luke 17:3-4 – ... thou shalt forgive him.
Romans 2:1 – ... thou that judgest doest the same things.
Romans 12:19-21 – ... avenge not yourselves ...
1Corinthians 4:5 – ... judge nothing before the Time ...
Colossians 3:13 – ... even as Christ forgave you ...

Kindly read the book of Brothers Alex & Stephen Kendrick, *The Love Dare*.
You may find helpful these movies, which teach us Forgiveness –

Amazing Love
The Lost And Found Family
The Grace Card
War Room
Silent Night
Clancy
Fireproof
Hacksaw Ridge

Q: Is there a Scripture of the Bible that explicitly endorses *capitalism* over other economic systems?
Q: Which Verses can be seen to support *neoliberal capitalism* as virtuous, natural, or condoned by God?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: Far as I know, there are not any such Scriptures.
On the contrary, it is written,

... If any man worship the beast and his image, and receive his mark in his forehead, or in his hand, the same shall drink of the Wine of the Wrath of GOD, (Revelation 14:9-11)* See also *Revelation 16:1-2*.

* Kindly read about this mark in *Revelation 13:16-17*.
See chapters 137 (The number 666) & 438 (The evil power named mammon).

229

Q: What ought *Christians* to learn from the *Parable of the Wedding Feast*, spoken in *Luke 14:8-11*?

A: Remember this Parable every time you might see the words *Christian* & *Church* phrased up with *market* & *career*.

8 When thou art bidden of any man to a wedding, sit not down in the highest room; lest a more honourable man than thou be bidden of him; 9 And he that bade thee and him come and say to thee, Give this man place; and thou begin with shame to take the lowest room. 10 But when thou art bidden, go and sit down in the lowest room; that when he that bade thee cometh, he may say unto thee, Friend, go up higher: then shalt thou have worship in the presence of them that sit at meat with thee. 11 For whosoever exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted.

(Luke 14:8-11)

This book of mine may serve as the example of *pride* overcame by *Humility*. Why? Because I've lost count of how many times Father GOD turned me back to chapters I had so decisively (and proudly) considered "ready to be published". Tired of endless corrections, I've put that line "Last revised ..." on the cover and decided to publish the book free in PDF format. *1Timothy 6:5-8* helped me. We have already discussed how to fight the evil of pride in chapter 176.

References: *Proverbs 22:4 ……..... By humility and the fear of the LORD ...*
Micah 6:8 .....…….…..... what doth the LORD require of thee ...
Matthew 5:5 .....…….…..... Blessed are the Meek ...
James 4:6,10; & 1Peter 5:5-6 …..... GOD resisteth the proud ...

Q: What does it mean to be *humble*?. GOD gave me talents. I then honed them.
Q: Who do I credit?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: To be *humble* means to be free of *pride*. See chapter 176 (The evil of pride). Father GOD gave you the talent to do Good. From Him also came your strong character. Praise GOD only, because –

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above, and cometh down from the Father of Lights, with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. (James 1:17)

230

Q: Your advice to “see yourself literally in every negative & erring person” (chapter 102) seems inappropriate for the *Parable of Wheat and Weeds*, a.k.a., the *Parable of the Weeds, Matthew 13:24-30,* what do you think?

A: Well, every peace of *advice* stays as such only. Let us read the Parable.

24 ... The Kingdom of Heaven is likened unto a man which sowed good seed in his field: 25 But while men slept, his enemy came and sowed tares among the wheat, and went his way. 26 But when the blade was sprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares also. 27 So the servants of the householder came and said unto him, Sir, didst not thou sow good seed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares? 28 He said unto them, An enemy hath done this. The servants said unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up? 29 But he said, Nay; lest while ye gather up the tares, ye root up also the wheat with them. 30 Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn. (Matthew 13:24-30)

To prove my strategy, I’d make the following denotations.

In *Verse 24*, a *man* stands for our *Heavenly Father*,
good seeds – His Word,
his field – all humankind, the Body of Christ inclusive.

In *Verse 25*, *men* represent GOD’s Angels & Shepherds of His Church,
his enemy – Satan & his servants,
(seeds of) *tares* – all kinds of satanic lies – from open atheism to denominational doctrines.

Verse 26 tells about the respective fruits of *Truth* and *lie* in mens’ hearts & minds.
Verse 27 is about our questions to Father GOD, asked by Angels & Believers.

Verse 28 gives the LORD’s concise Explanation and our radical proposition.
Standing upon the Word of GOD, His Servants are ready to fight.

By *Verses 29 & 30*, only GOD can separate the wheat from tares – those who served Him from those who didn’t – in the Time Appointed. *1Corinthians 4:5.*

Now, let us consider *Philippians 3:18-19.*

... For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are the enemies of the Cross of Christ ... who mind earthly things ...
(Philippians 3:18-19)

Seeing, suspecting, or presuming ourselves to belong among those "*enemies of the Cross of Christ"*, or else "*tares"* by *Matthew 13:26*, it is easier to repent, come to our Heavenly Father often, and pray to be forgiven.
Why forgiven? To be healed. From what? First of all, to get freed from being sick spiritually. The latter means being separated from the LORD GOD and thus unable to hear His Voice. Please read *James 5:16.*
Once forgiven & healed, we are back to the LORD, our Father, in Righteousness, back to so Precious Communion with Him, and our Prayers *availeth much*.

May we seek His Guidance to avoid whatever errors in the future.
In our case, "to err on the safe side" means considering ourselves *sinners*.
Kindly read *Psalms 32:5 & Jeremiah 14:20.*

When in doubt as to whether you have sinned or not, go to *1John 1:8-10.*
Our Sincere Confession and continued seeking the LORD GOD *proves* that we do not belong to Satan and his deadly darkness. Amen.

Q: (1) I'm a Roman Catholic. How should we, as Christians, go about reading books banned from the Bible?
Q: (2) Should we pay them any attention at all? I know there are clear reasons why some books are banned (i.e., written much later or in extreme *contradiction* with the Books accepted as Canonical).
Q: (3) Should these books still be read today or just held ignored?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) As a Roman Catholic, you are familiar with the *Revised Standard Bible* – the Edition of 1952 – the original Catholic Edition of the RSV Translation, prepared by the Catholic Biblical Association of Great Britain. It was "translated from the original tongues being the Version set forth A.D. 1611". That Edition has the Apocryphal Books, which don't contradict the Written Word of GOD. It seems following King James Bible (1611).
(2) Why not pay attention if the books do not lie and can help? See them as any other Christian book and note the epigraph to this Q & A.
(3) As for reading today, the Truth of GOD does not have an expiration date. However, any advice stands for advice only. Godspeed.

231

Q: According to *Acts 5:1-10*, *Ananias & Sapphira* were punished by GOD by *death* for their *deceit*. So, the question is: why they only, what about so many other *hypocrites* in Christian Churches, who *robbed* GOD?

A: One thing up-front before we proceed any further: the LORD, our GOD, is not given to any change.

... I am the LORD, I change not ... (Malachi 3:6)

The First *Christian Church* & her *Rules* were as follows:

42 And they continued stedfastly in the Apostles' Doctrine and Fellowship, and in Breaking of Bread, and in Prayers. 43 And Fear came upon every soul: and many Wonders and Signs were done by the Apostles. 44 And all that believed were together, and had all things Common; 45 And sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need. 46 And they, continuing daily with One accord in the Temple, and Breaking Bread from house to house, did eat their meat with Gladness and Singleness of heart, 47 Praising GOD, and having Favour with all the people. And the LORD added to the Church daily such as should be saved. (Acts 2:42-47)

32 And the multitude of them that believed were of One heart and of One soul: neither said any of them that ought of the things which he possessed was his own; but they had all things Common. 33 And with Great Power gave the Apostles Witness of the Resurrection of the Lord Jesus: and Great Grace was upon them all. 34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were possessors of lands or houses sold them, and brought the prices of the things that were sold, 35 And laid them down at the Apostles' feet: and distribution was made unto every man according as he had need. (Acts 4:32-35)

That Church *Ananias* & *Sapphira* were not Members yet, but intended to join.

1 But a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, sold a possession, 2 And kept back part of the price, his wife also being privy to it, and brought a certain part, and laid it at the Apostles' feet. 3 But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back part of the price of the land? 4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was sold, was it not in thine own power?

Why hast thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou hast not lied unto men, but unto GOD. 5 And Ananias hearing these words fell down, and gave up the ghost: and great Fear came on all them that heard these things. 6 And the young men arose, wound him up, and carried him out, and buried him. 7 And it was about the space of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in. 8 And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea, for so much.
9 Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the LORD? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband are at the door, and shall carry thee out. 10 Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying her forth, buried her by her husband. 11 And great Fear came upon all the Church, and upon as many as heard these things. (Acts 5:1-11)

From the above *Acts 5:3,4,9,* we can see the sin of Ananias & Sapphira was deceitfully approaching the Shepherds of the Church and (!) the Holy Ghost.

Now, back to the question. Can you tell me, where has ever been the like Church, which was the same evil way approached, and evildoers not punished? I've read & heard a lot of very different comments on *Acts 2:42-47 & 4:32-35*, as well as met very few Christians willing to follow the Example of that Church. Have you? I believe, per the above-quoted *Malachi 3:6,* if such Congregations of Saints had ever existed, they should've had the same Firewall against all liars.

[GOD] declared by the visible Punishment of two, how horrible a Judgment remaineth for all hypocrites, which shall mock GOD and His Church.
(John Calvin, Commentary upon the Acts of the Apostles, volume first, p.199)

Q: Why did Jesus say that one cannot be His Disciple unless the person has forsaken all? *Luke 14:33*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: To begin with, Jesus did not say anything impossible. His First Disciples were the living examples of following His Words.
Matthew 19:27, Mark 10:28, Luke 5:28, etc.
Please also note that "forsaken all" means following the direct Command of GOD, put Him above everybody & everything, follow His Call, and believe that He will take care of who & what you have thus left.
Please see chapter 486 on the subject of Faith & Trust.

232

Q: What would you say about *Prayer Backup* or *Intercession* the Believers ought to render one another?

A: We should do so, indeed, yet some things should be made clear.

First, whether intercede for somebody in need or Prayerfully backup Ministers sent out by our Local Church, we must know that our Prayers, as well as the Ministry in question, are in full accord with the *Holy Will of GOD*.
Thus, we should not pray for anybody (other than just *Thy Will be done*) without due information about that person. And the best info is *Confession*.
You may see the relevant chapters in the Index section.
For instance, a stranger asks you to pray for a spouse who has lost a job. How to pray without the knowledge, *who* is the guilty party? What to pray for – Divine Help, Forgiving, Wisdom, Rod of Correction?
Or else, somebody calls you to join a Prayer Backup for Ministers sent out to preach the Gospel in, say, North Korea. Was that Ministry called up by LORD GOD or just the idea of a Pastor?
Again, without any comprehensive information, just a cry to help, we have no option, but the Lord's Words *Thy Will be done*. Or, believing that the *Holy Spirit* of GOD will direct our Prayer the Right way, we pray in tongues.

Second, our Prayer Backup cannot be in any way effective without *Fast*.
That was considered in chapter 73 (True Fast).

And the last. Make sure the person in need does pray & fast him (her) self.
From experience, I beg to note we should request to inform us that the LORD, our GOD, has answered our Prayers and, therefore, we should not pray anymore other than Giving Him our *Sacrifice of Praise*.

Kindly see chapters: 179 (Praying in tongues unknown),
253 (The Prayer o' Faith), & 465 (Prayer Team).

References:

Jeremiah 14:20 & Daniel 9:5-10 – Acknowledge sins.
Matthew 6:9-13 – The Lord's Prayer.
Ephesians 6:18 – The Weapon of Prayer.
James 5:14-16 – Confession & Intercession.

233

Q: Have you ever seen a *tornado*?
Q: Yes? So, how would you explain it?

A: I'd try to do it by the *Word of GOD*.

... the LORD hath His Way
in the whirlwind and in the storm ... (Nahum 1:3)

It was June 2001, the board of Dutch vessel *Banjaard*, North Sea.
We were drifting on Maas approaches, awaiting Pilot.
The weather (and the forecast) was "sunny, light airs".
But for the tornado.
It moved from west to east, gradually covering the sky up to a half thereof, not at all resembling anything I've ever watched of the sort on TV. The latter presented *tornado* stormy weather, all gray and black around. Well, what I saw was different.
It was a massive down-pointed cone of gray and dark-gray smoke, miles in diameter in the sky, and just inches on the water level, making only a couple of feet fountain. The smoke was quickly revolving, a part of it climbing up one slope of the cone and down another.
It was not some unruly chaos, rather very complicated, steady, and precise movement, fearful & beautiful at the same time. In less than a couple of hours, the tornado passed from western to the eastern horizon, going about a hundred yards from our ship. The weather & forecast continued just fine.

Now, how should we react to a *tornado*?
Most people are not afraid to walk "zebra" under a green light. Some people look left-right (right-left in the UK) anyway. Why? Sometimes, a driver is busy talking on the telephone.
Tornado is driven by the LORD Almighty, our Father. Or His Angel, whatever.
We don't have to be afraid of *His* tornado if *our* conscience before GOD is clear.

The references: *2Kings 2:1,11 – ... Elijah went up by a Whirlwind into Heaven.*
Job 37:12-13 – that they may do whatsoever He commandeth ...
Job 38:1 – ... the LORD answered Job out of the Whirlwind ...
Jeremiah 23:19 & 30:23 – shall fall upon the head of the wicked.
Ezekiel 1:4 – ... a Whirlwind came out of the North ...
Hosea 8:7 – they have sown the wind and reap the whirlwind ...
Joel 2:30 – ... Wonders in the Heavens and in the Earth ...

234

Q: Can *GOD* see or read our minds?
Q: Can *Satan*?

A: We have to look up and see the answer in the Scriptures.

*... know thou the GOD of thy father, and serve Him with a Perfect heart and with a Willing mind: for the LORD searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if thou seek Him, He will be found of thee; but if thou forsake Him, He will cast thee off for ever. (1Chronicles 28:9, King James Authorized Translation, Pure Cambridge Edition)**

*... hear Thou from Heaven Thy Dwelling Place, and forgive, and render unto every man according unto all his ways, whose heart Thou knowest; (for Thou only knowest the hearts of the children of men ...) (2Chronicles 6:30, the same source)**

* We can find the same import in the following translations:

John Wycliffe (1382), John Wycliffe & John Purvey (1395), Miles Coverdale (1535), Thomas Matthew (1537), Richard Taverner (1539), The Great Bible (1540), The Bishop's Bible (1568), & Geneva Bible (1599).

Behold also these Verses from *King James Bible (Pure Cambridge Edition)*:

... for the LORD seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)

For the Eyes of the LORD run to and fro throughout the whole Earth, to show Himself Strong in the behalf of them whose heart is Perfect toward Him. (2Chronicles 16:9)

Search me, O GOD, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts: And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the Way Everlasting. (Psalms 139:23-24)

... judge nothing before the Time, until the LORD come, Who both will bring to Light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have Praise of GOD. (1Corinthians 4:5)

The above Scriptures teach us: our heart & mind are open to and best seen by the *LORD GOD,* our Creator, only. See also *Matthew 9:4; 12:25; Luke 5:22*.

Now, let us consider the abilities of *Satan* (and his *demons*), the evil one we already spoke about in chapters 3, 36, 81, &c. Does the father of all lies, the psychologist with thousands of years of experience, have any trouble reading our minds? Cannot also we, to some extent, read other folks' minds?

... for out of abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. (Matthew 12:34)

Well, Satan is *not* omnipresent as our Father GOD is. Most probably, the evil one is busy discharging his *lies* upon the heads of the "first" people of the world, even rulers. And we should know the reason why his *demons* are interested in the "ordinary" hearts & minds. It is to *lie* people on the way to hell & eternal death.

Why do ye not understand My Speech? even because ye cannot hear My Word.
Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do.
He was a murderer from the Beginning, and abode not in the Truth,
because there is no Truth in him. When he speaketh a lie,
he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. (John 8:43-44)

... the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not,
lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, Who is the Image of GOD,
should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:4)

See also *2Corinthians 11:13-14*.

Thus *our* first concern is *our* Christian Congregations, Local Churches, all Body of Christ, and second, the rest (and the most) of humankind walking hell-ward.

... I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent beguiled Eve through his subtilty,
so your minds should be corrupted from the Simplicity that is in Christ.
(2Corinthians 11:3)

As for ourselves, we are supposed to remember those (most relevant to our question) *Spirit Weapons* per *Ephesians 6:17*.
Read & think well about our Power in *Matthew 18:18-20, Luke 10:19,*
John 20:21-23, & 1Corinthians 6:17.

235

Q: It is written:

... if any man be in Christ, he is a New Creature:
old things are passed away; behold, all things are become New.
(2Corinthians 5:17)

So, the question is: why, after coming to Christ, some people *continue* to bear some old physical damages, inherited infirmities, etc.?

A: Indeed, I observed that myself. Some sicknesses are gone without traces – other defects remain. I call it *scars*.
Thus saith the LORD:

... My Thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My Ways, saith the LORD. For as the Heavens are higher than the Earth, so are My Ways higher than your ways, and My Thoughts than your thoughts. (Isaiah 55:8-9)

It is hard to comprehend the very reason why we bear those scars.
Possibly, the scars don't make any substantial obstacle to living a Godly Life, now and in Eternity. However, kindly tale it as just a guess.

And lest I should be exalted above measure through the abundance of the Revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above measure. For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. And He said unto me, My Grace is sufficient for thee: for My Strength is made Perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the Power of Christ may rest upon me. Therefore I take pleasure in infirmities, in reproaches, in necessities, in persecutions, in distresses for Christ's sake: for when I am weak, then am I Strong.*

(2Corinthians 12:7-10)

Relevant chapters: 44 (B & C), 67 (Healing Promises), 253 (The Prayer o' Faith), & 317 (A New Creature).

References: *Haggai 1:5-7 – Thus saith the LORD of Hosts: Consider your ways.*
Matthew 6:32-33 – ... seek ye first the Kingdom of GOD ...
Luke 12:30-31 – ditto
Hebrews 12:1-2 – ... lay aside every weight; and the sin ...

Please read: *Kenneth E. Hagin, Casting Your Cares Upon The LORD*
Healing Belongs To Us
Kenneth Copeland, You Are Healed!
Gloria Copeland, Harvest Of Health
Morris Cerullo, Christ, Your Healer

Please watch: * *Paul, Apostle Of Christ* (*A thorn in the flesh – Godly sorrow*)
Heaven Is For Real
Miracles From Heaven
The Stranger TV Series, Episode 5, Thomas **

** Mark the words, "*... the long list of reasons you will never understand until another time*."

Q: What is the Christian position regarding medically *intersex* people?
Q: Who are they allowed to marry?
Q: Can intersex people be Pastors?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: Well, a Christian is here. I see intersex as a curse.
Our Almighty GOD doesn't create intersexual people. See *Genesis 1:27*.
It is written,

There is no soundness in my flesh because of Thine Anger; neither is there any rest in my bones because of my sin. (Psalms 38:3)

It is also said,

If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the Truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, He is Faithful and Just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make Him a liar, and His Word is not in us. (1John 1:8-10)

Therefore,

We acknowledge, O LORD, our wickedness, and the iniquity of our fathers: for we have sinned against Thee. (Jeremiah 14:20)

In my opinion, the first things are to be done first. Intersexuals are to approach our Father GOD to get their curse crushed. Then secondly, such things as Marriage and personal Ministry might be seen clearer. Read chapter 44 (B & C).

236

Q: Brother, what is the *Preaching in the Spirit* all about?

A: The term *Preaching in the Spirit* has its literal meaning only.

We preach in the *Holy Spirit of GOD* to one another or from the Pulpit when and only when we speak the *Truth of GOD*, do not respect any denominational doctrine, teaching, or policy, contradicting that Truth, as well as wholeheartedly *believe* & *do* what we preach.

> *If you love Me, keep My Commandments. And I will pray the Father, and He shall give you another Comforter, that He may abide with you for ever; even the Spirit of Truth; Whom the world cannot receive, because it seeth Him not, neither knoweth Him: but ye know Him; for He dwelleth with you, and shall be in you. (John 14:15-17)*
>
> *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of GOD, and that the Spirit of GOD dwelleth in you? If any man defile the Temple of GOD, him shall GOD destroy; for the Temple of GOD is Holy, which Temple ye are.*
> *(1Corinthians 3:16-17)*

A good Sermon is aimed at what the particular Congregation needs most, not wants or likes. The chief purpose is to stir up the spiritual hunger for the Word of GOD, not propagate any personal interpretation thereof. That's why the Guidance of the Holy Ghost should be prayed for when every Sermon is prepared.

Quote (or read) several Powerful Scriptures to stand on. Read nothing from a piece of paper. Note *Luke 12:12*. The chief argument should be *it is written*.
Mind your timing. Half an hour is well enough. More than that is tiresome.
Don't even think to show yourself "clever", please, or impress.

When the above points are the consideration, we can experience the phenomenon of speaking, teaching, or preaching in the Spirit of GOD.
Our words (be it our first or the second language) are Right and flow freely.
We feel no shame or embarrassment.

I can remember that strange feeling of hearing myself as if from the outside.
My listeners felt the Presence of the Holy Ghost. For it was Him preaching His Truth through me.

237

Q: We heard *Romans 10:17* explained as the sure sequence of our following the *Great Commission* (*Matthew 28:19-20*) – *the Twelfth Commandment* – as you called it. Do you agree?

A: No, I don't. Neither by taking *Romans 10:17* separately nor by considering it in the context of Scriptures preceding and following.

Let's read the following part of *Romans Chapter 10* and, as I wrote in the Preface to this book, kindly note that the capitalization here is intentional. It does not depend on relevant Bible translations or editions.

> *13 For whosoever shall call upon the Name of the Lord shall be saved.*
> *14 How then shall they call on Him in Whom they have not believed? and how shall they believe in Him of Whom they have not heard? and how shall they hear without a Preacher? 15 And how shall they preach, except they be sent? as it is written, How Beautiful are the feet of them that preach the Gospel of Peace, and bring Glad Tidings of Good things! 16 But they have not all obeyed the Gospel. For Esaias saith, Lord, who hath believed our Report? 17 So then Faith cometh by Hearing, and Hearing by the Word of GOD. 18 But I say, Have they not heard? Yes Verily, their sound went into all the Earth, and their Words unto the ends of the World. 19 But I say, Did not Israel know? First Moses saith, I will provoke you to Jealousy by them that are no People, and by a foolish nation I will anger you. 20 But Esaias is very bold, and saith, I was found of them that sought Me not; I was made manifest unto them that asked not after Me.*

By *Verses 13-15*, the Promised Name *Jesus* should be preached by the named above Great Commission – the Twelfth Commandment. *Natural* hearing is mentioned. *Spiritual* hearing (as in *Jeremiah 33:3*) is always available to those whom LORD GOD, our Father, has chosen & called (*John 6:44,65*).
In chapters 24, 43, 199, and others, we spoke about our *Great Commission*.
They, whom *Verse 15* calls *sent*, are those gifted and commissioned by Father GOD as His full-time Ministers.

By *Verse 16, natural* hearing – one man to another – is proven to be not enough.

Verse 17: We can see the direct sequence: the Word of GOD – *spiritual hearing* – Faith – one of our spiritual power qualities as per *1Corinthians 13:13*.

Verse 18: again, *natural* hearing of the Words of Truth is unable to stimulate *spiritual* hearing, where *unbelief* has already been grown up strong.

Verses 19-20: the Words spoken by the *Holy Ghost* into our *conscience* are heard by our *heart.* But our Free will remains – otherwise, wherefrom are all those *willful sins,* the LORD GOD warned us against in *Hebrews 6:4-6* & *10:26-29*?

Now, let's get back to *Verse 17* –

... Faith cometh by Hearing, and Hearing by the Word of GOD.

I believe the Scripture is all about *spiritual* hearing. Why? Because this is the dominant way, whereby *God Holy Spirit* speaks to our heart (the human spirit).
As I wrote in the previous chapter, the chief purpose is to stir up the spiritual hunger for the Word of GOD, not propagate any personal interpretation thereof.

> *Your level of Faith is directly related to the degree of GOD's Word dwelling in your heart, that is, that Word which is reality to you and in which you are daily walking. (Kenneth E. Hagin, The Believer's Authority, p.63)*

Q: Do you believe Christ was Personally present in Israel's historical narrative?
Q: In what ways?

(Signed: *Biblical Unitarian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020.)

A: I do believe that *God Son*, as a Part of the Holy Trinity, has been present always & everywhere together with GOD our Father and God Holy Spirit.
Please see chapter 459 (The Holy Trinity of GOD).
It is written,

He is before all things, and in Him, all things hold together.
(Colossians 1:17, New International Version)

... This therefore is enough for us, and sufficient to confirm our Faith ; – that Christ is Truly God ; Who existed with the Father from all Eternity, before the World was made ; and that by Him, Who is the Wisdom and Word of the Father, the Father made all things ...

(Martin Luther, The Creation:
A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis,
Originally published at Witenberg in the year of our Lord 1544; and now
first translated into English, by Henry Cole, Edinburgh, 1858)

238

Q: How would you explain the Words, *Thy Kingdom come* (*Matthew 6:10*) in the *Lord's Prayer*?

A: Jesus said,

... seek ye first the Kingdom of GOD, and His Righteousness ...
(Matthew 6:33)

Therefore, firstly, we are supposed to pray for the Good Guidance of the Holy Ghost in that needful seeking. May the Heavenly Kingdom be found by all who believe, as that is the Holy Will of GOD –

... Verily, Verily I say unto thee,
Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of GOD. (John 3:3)

Secondly, we ask for what has been promised to the People of GOD –

Fear not, little Flock; for it is your Father's Good Pleasure
to give you the Kingdom. (Luke 12:32)

Thirdly, our Lord taught:

... the Kingdom of GOD is within you. (Luke 17:21)

Please see chapter 677 (The Kingdom within).
It is neither easy to explain nor comprehend, but my first encounter with the Holy Ghost was indeed *that* way – He had come up from within of myself.
It was an unforgettable experience of His Mighty Presence, Freedom, and Peace.
For,

... where the Spirit of the LORD is, there is Liberty. (2Corinthians 3:17)

Even so, "*Thy Kingdom come*" may well stand for our Petition for the Precious Communion with Father GOD via His Holy Spirit to take place everywhere.

> *The Kingdom of GOD is opposed to all disorder ... and confusion : for Good Order is nowhere found in the World, except when He regulates by His Hand the schemes and dispositions of men. Hence we conclude, that the Commencement of the Reign of GOD in us is the destruction of the old man, and the denial of ourselves, that we may be renewed to another Life.*
>
> *(John Calvin,*
> *Commentary on the Harmony of the Evangelists, volume 1, p.320)*

239

Q: Is there any difference between the expressions,
to seek GOD and *to seek GOD's Face*?

A: Far as I understand, there is some difference between these two.
The first may mean our constant walking in the Holy Will of our Father GOD by thinking, speaking, and acting in full accord therewith.
The second may denote the striving for a Reconciliation with the LORD. We need it when His Face, once upon a time so Lovingly shining, has been turned off our sinful selves.

By *John Brown's Bible Dictionary (1797)*,

> *... to seek* [means] *to endeavour to obtain, whether by searching for ... asking by Prayer ... or by the use of any other means that tends to procure enjoyment of a thing ... To seek GOD, or His Name, or Face, is to ask His Direction, pray for His Favours, and depend on Him as our Helper and Portion, (Psalms 63:1) ...*

The Key Verse in *the Parable of the Prodigal Son – Luke 15:20* – is also the Key Scripture for many aspects of our Christian Life, seeking Father GOD inclusive. That subject we discussed in chapter 151 (How to seek the LORD?).

Regarding *seeking LORD's Face*, it is written:

If My People, which are called by My Name, shall humble themselves,
and pray, and seek My Face, and turn from their wicked ways;
then will I hear from Heaven, and will forgive their sin,
and will heal their land. (2Chronicles 7:14)

I will go and return to My Place, till they acknowledge their offence,
and seek My Face: in their affliction they will seek Me early. (Hosea 5:15)

In the above two Scriptures, we can read about *seeking the LORD's Face* when our Union with Him is broken.
At the same time,

When Thou saidst, Seek ye My Face;
my heart said unto Thee, Thy Face, LORD, will I seek. (Psalms 27:8)

Seek the LORD, and His Strength: seek His Face evermore. (Psalms 105:4)

In the above Psalms, we can't see a difference between *seeking GOD* (constantly) and *seeking His Face* (by a sinner). The reason we can find in *Romans 3:23 –*

... all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of GOD ...

Why differ these two subjects at all? Sometimes, this way, it is easier to memorize and understand things. But it is *personal*, and no contradictions with the Word of GOD are allowed.

Q: Are worldly fears & thoughts the only ones which weigh down the heart?. I found something like this in *Proverbs 12:25*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* September 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

Sorrow in the heart of a man boweth down,
and a Good Word maketh him glad.
(Proverbs 12:25, Robert Young's Literal Translation, 1890)

Heaviness in the heart of man maketh it stoop:
but a Good Word maketh it glad.
(Proverbs 12:25, Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition)

Anxiety in a man's heart weighs it down,
but a good (encouraging) word makes it glad.
(Proverbs 12:25, Amplified Bible, https://www.biblegateway.com)

Worry makes a man's heart heavy, a kindly word makes it glad.
(The Jerusalem Bible, 1968)

Probably, it is not only worldly stuff that might take Peace from us.
Now & again, we err or sin. Then, by the Holy Spirit of GOD, *Godly sorrow* comes, and the Spirit calls us onto Repentance.
We can experience the same sorrow when, due to whatever reason, something goes wrong with other people. And again, the *Holy Ghost* leads our Intercession.

In *Proverbs 12:25,* we can take "a Good Word" for that of our Father GOD, spoken through His Holy Scriptures or a Christian.

240

Q: In chapter 162, we talked about Jesus' Parable written in *Matthew 9:16-17*, *Mark 2:21-22*, and *Luke 5:36-39*. You called it *Patching up*, and the Electronic Version *e-Sword* named it *A Question About Fasting*. Could you please exemplify that?

A: Well, I called it as per a mere scenario and *e-Sword* by Jesus' Argument. As for my encounters, there are a lot of them, negative and positive.

Years ago, I attended one Baptist Congregation. Seeing that an issue of *Giving* had to be amended, I told the Brethren about what I had heard in one Pentecostal Congregation. There, a new Member was to provide his (her) income information for Tithing (offered later in a personal envelope) to be checked out. Well, that policy (criticized in other Churches) was noted by my Baptist Friends. So, when entering the Church on Sunday morning, I found myself passing a pack of (free to pick up) envelopes titled "My Tithe". Not bad, but there was something else on those envelopes, namely, *2Corinthians 9:7*, speaking about Free will of Giving. But Tithing is a Sacred Giving, a matter of must, not a whim of willing. Thus the hole, patched the wrong way, was made even worse.

Another couple of examples was quoting *Matthew 11:28*. I have seen it on the gate of a *cemetery* – the work of Orthodox Brethren. No comments.
The same *Matthew 11:28*, written on the wall of one Adventist Temple, was followed by their *timetable*: Monday on this time, Wednesday on that.
No comments.

Now, one better example.
Once upon a time, not for very long, I served with *Mercy Ships International*, onboard the good old vessel *Anastasis*, for no pay, no sponsorship, bearing all traveling costs, and even paying membership fees. There, I met many Christians who, sponsored or not, having read our Holy Bible or not, took the same way of *no-common-sense*, but felt themselves in the Right place. How come? Because following the first Disciples of Christ, they could Honestly say,

... Behold, we have forsaken all, and followed Thee ... (Matthew 19:27)

Why the last one is the relevant example? Because the lack of *money* is a sure *hole* in our worldly well-being. Taking the Way of *Giving*, against every reason, we "patch up". And that "patch" proves best in the long run, doesn't it?

241

Q: How would you explain the term *Salt* in *Matthew 5:13*?

A: We may consider three parallel Scriptures where this term is used.

> *13 Ye are the Salt of the Earth: but if the Salt have lost his Savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. 14 Ye are the Light of the World. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. 16 Let your Light so shine before men, that they may see your Good Works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven.*
> *(Matthew 5:13-16)*

> *49 For every one shall be salted with Fire, and every Sacrifice shall be salted with Salt. 50 Salt is Good: but if the Salt have lost his Saltness, wherewith will ye season it? Have Salt in yourselves, and have Peace one with another. (Mark 9:49-50)*

> *33 ... whosoever he be of you that forsaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be My Disciple. 34 Salt is good: but if the Salt have lost his Savour, wherewith shall it be seasoned? 35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghill; but men cast it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.*
> *(Luke 14:33-35)*

In *Matthew 5:13-16*, the *Salt* stands for Truth. *Salt* & *Light* denote the *Disciples of Christ* armed with His Truth and enlightening all the World. Kindly note that the Virtue of *Truth* is extensive and embraces such Blessed spiritual qualities as *Love*, *Faith*, *Hope*, *Knowledge*, *Understanding*, and *Wisdom*.

By *Mark 9:49-50*, the *Salt* is the *Fire* of *Giving* – the Test of GOD. He demands all our Sacrifices to Him to be *Truthful*. Our Lord Jesus also commanded *Unity*. For it is impossible to follow His *Truth* and Satan-inspired *denominational doctrine* at the same time. It is the *Eleventh Commandment* (chapter 80).

For the sake of *Salt* (Truth), *Luke 14:33-35* requires us to forsake all values of the World. The *Truth of GOD* is incompatible with whatever teaching, doctrine, or tradition contaminating it. Hear the *Holy Ghost* only. Kindly read *John 16:13*.

Every Scripture of the above necessitates our *Salt* to keep up its *Savour*, which means *Steadfastness*.

> *... you are to be such a man as can be hard against hard, so as not to allow himself to be frightened off or dumbfounded, or be overcome by the ingratitude or malice of the world : but you should always push along and persevere as much as possible ... (p.50)*
> *... With the Word Salt He indicates ... what their (His Followers) Office is to be. For salt is not salt for itself; it cannot salt itself; but this is the use of it, that one salts meat with it, and other things needed in the kitchen, so that they retain their taste, remain fresh, and do not decay ... (p.97)*
> *... because He says bluntly and plainly, they shall be a Salt of the Earth, that is, as to everything that the world is; then it must follow, that everything that is in the world, and is called flesh, or mankind, must be rebuked and thoroughly salted, so that we condemn the sanctity, the wisdom and the divine worship of all the world, self-devised, aside from the Word of GOD, as coming from the devil and belonging to the pit of hell, if it do not hold to Christ alone ... (p.99)*
>
> *(Martin Luther, Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount)*

See also chapters 175 (The Parable of Ten Virgins) & 434 (Salt & Light).

Q: How seriously do you take *Matthew 5:39-42*?

(Signed: *Christian, Calvinist*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2026. Condensed.)

A: Once you called yourself a *Calvinist*, let me recommend you a good work of your Teacher – *Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists, Matthew, Mark, and Luke, by John Calvin, Translated by the Rev. William Pringle, Edinburgh: Printed for The Calvin Translation Society, 1845-1846*.
You can download it for free, in the form of an e-book, from the Christian Classics Ethereal Library – *www.ccel.org* (June 2026).

Brother Calvin wrote,

Do not resist evil. There are two ways of resisting: the one, by warding off injuries through inoffensive conduct; the other, by retaliation. Though Christ does not permit His People to repel violence by violence, yet He does not forbid them to endeavor to avoid an unjust attack. The best interpreter of this passage that we can have is Paul, who enjoins us rather to "overcome evil by Good" (Romans 12:21) than contend with evil-doers ...

242

Q: Is it okay for Christians to leave one Local Church for another?

A: I think it is a very personal matter and quite a crucial decision, whether to stay with or leave on this or that Local Church or a Christian Ministry.

Thinking on whatever step in this regard, whether it is correct or not, we should view the respective motives thereof.

The following arguments in favor of leaving might be correct.
Church Shepherds & Members do not stay firmly on the Written Word of GOD, regardless of what they say on the contrary. Believers think it is impossible, and even wrong, to follow the Word as it commands, here & now, because (they say) it was written there & then. Local rules & traditions are taken into account by them. They justify compromises with unbelieving authorities & people. All our attempts to oppose that practice failed.

Each of the following arguments in favor of leaving is wrong.
I've found another Church (or a place of Service) closer to my home.
I've learned something in my Church. Her Teachers cannot give me more.
The Church I attended is okay, but I want a promotion.

The following reasoning to stay on, probably, is correct.
The Church is small, and what I am (or can be) here is just a Small Group Leader, no more. Nevertheless, I know this Congregation needs me. Here I can see the Fruits of my Work and experience the Peace of GOD.

The following reasons to stay on are wrong.
Maybe this Congregation does not follow the Bible as it should, but knowing the Members for a long time, I got used to them. We are good friends, and I don't want people to call me a *renegade*. It is my first Church. Here, I learned about Jesus and was baptized. I follow my Pastor. The Church is his Responsibility.

Last but not least: leaving a Local Church, don't forsake Christ Jesus.

In a good Christian movie – *Luther (2003)* – mark the words:
Salvation could exist outside the Church ... though not outside Christ.
Amen.

243

Q: There are some arguments about *Luke 23:43*.
What is your interpretation of this Scripture?

A: The original Scriptures had no such a thing as punctuation.
Nowadays, one trifle comma might change all the meaning.
The *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* runs,

> *39 And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on Him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us. 40 But the other answering rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear GOD, seeing thou art in the same condemnation? 41 And we indeed Justly; for we receive the Due reward of our deeds: but this Man hath done nothing amiss. 42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when Thou comest into Thy Kingdom. 43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with Me in Paradise.*
>
> *(Luke 23:39-43)*

By some other editions, *Verse 43* is presented this way:
"And He said to him, Truly I tell you today, You will be with Me in Paradise."
But – Glory to our Father GOD! – most Christians stick to *King James Edition*.
Let me show you why *King James'* wording is correct and the best one.

"To day" (modern *today*) may be taken literally, as our spirit & soul continue (to live and be conscious) after physical (natural) death.
The "*Paradise"* means that part of "the Kingdom of dead", which is "the Abode of Righteous" after their natural death and before the looming Judgment Day.
The Words – *thou ... in Paradise* – signify GOD's Mercy unto Forgiveness of sins as His Answer to a Sincere Repentance. See chapter 155 (Repentance).
Me in Paradise – denotes Jesus' coming down to that same Abode before His Predicted Resurrection & Ascending to the Kingdom of Heaven. *Matthew 12:40.*

Viewing the above interpretation, kindly note that an argument "What, prior the Day of Judgment?" is irrelevant here. See chapter 573 (Eternity) for more.

The references: *Psalm 16:8-11 & Acts 2:24-28* – The Resurrection.
Matthew 12:40 – The heart of the Earth.
Matthew 16:4 – The Sign of the Prophet Jonas.
Ephesians 4:9 – Firstly, He went to the underworld.
1Peter 3:18-20 – Preaching unto spirits in Prison.

244

Q: What do you think is the meaning of *Jesus' Transfiguration,* described in our Bible, for us today?

A: The *Transfiguration* is thus written about in *St. Matthew, Chapter 17.*

1 And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart, 2 And was transfigured before them: and His face did shine as the Sun, and His raiment was white as the Light. 3 And, behold, there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with Him. 4 Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is Good for us to be here: if Thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for Thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias. 5 While he yet spake, behold, a bright Cloud overshadowed them: and behold a Voice out of the Cloud, which said, This is My Beloved Son, in Whom I am well pleased; hear ye Him. 6 And when the Disciples heard it, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid. 7 And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid. 8 And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only. 9 And as they came down from the mountain, Jesus charged them, saying, Tell the Vision to no man, until the Son of Man be risen again from the dead. 10 And His Disciples asked Him, saying, Why then say the Scribes that Elias must first come? 11 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Elias Truly shall first come, and restore all things. 12 But I say unto you, That Elias is come already, and they knew him not, but have done unto him whatsoever they listed. Likewise shall also the Son of Man suffer of them.
13 Then the Disciples understood that He spake unto them of John the Baptist.
(Matthew 17:1-13)

We can read about the same Miracle in *Mark 9:2-13* & *Luke 9:28-36*.
Lord Jesus, in a Prelude to His *Transfiguration*, said:

Verily I say unto you,
There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death,
till they see the Son of Man coming in His Kingdom. (Matthew 16:28)

Kindly see the same in *Mark 9:1 & Luke 9:27.*

So, by *Verses 2 & 3*, the *Transfiguration* is a glimpse of the *Kingdom of Heaven*.

By the account of the Blessed *Book of Martyrs by John Fox, the Edition 1832,* the Disciples whom the Lord Jesus had chosen of Twelve were –

Peter –
... Having been nine months in prison, Peter was brought out from thence for execution, when, after being severely scourged, he was crucified with his head downwards ; which position, however, was at his own request ...
(page 30)

James the Great –
... This Martyr, on being condemned to death, showed such an intrepidity of spirit, and constancy of mind, that even his accuser was struck with admiration, and became a Convert to Christianity. This Transition so enraged the people in power, that they condemned him likewise to death; when James the Apostle and his Penitent accuser were both beheaded on the same day, and with the same sword ... (page 28)

John –
... he was ordered by imperor Domitian to be sent bound to Rome, where he was condemned to be cast into a cauldron of boiling oil. But here a Miracle appeared in his favour; the oil did him no injury, and Domitian, therefore, not being able to put him to death, banished him to Patmos, to work in the mines ... He was the only Apostle who escaped a violent death, and lived the longest of any of them, being nearly 100 years of age at the time of his death. (page 32)

I have no reason to argue with those expositors of old, who were of the opinion that the Words – *Moses and Elias talking with Him* – stand for the *Unity* of all Books of the *Law*, the *Prophets*, and the *New Testament*. For Christ Jesus said,

Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets:
I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. (Matthew 5:17)

Hence, we receive the Instruction of *Integrity* of our Holy Bible. That Subject we discussed in chapters 16-18, dedicated to the Old & New Covenants.

Verse 5 is the explicit Command given by our Heavenly Father as for *Who* we should listen to. This book is aimed that way, chapters 55 & 60 in particular.

Verse 7 well reminds us of the difference between the *Sacred Fear of GOD* and mere *superstition fear* so abound in this world. In chapter 144, we talked about that.

Verse 9 is explained by *Verse 12*.

Lord Jesus taught us:

Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs,
neither cast ye your Pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet,
and turn again and rend you. (Matthew 7:6)

This Scripture – *Matthew 7:6* – should be secured in our mind.
The reason why is given in *John 1:5* –

... the Light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

Q: ... I read a text in *Matthew 16*, where Jesus says that an evil and adulterous generation seeks after Miracles & Signs. Is it evil to want Miracles?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: No, it is not evil. All Believers want Miracles to get their Faith strengthened. But remember, this is the only way: *Faith* comes first, and Miracles follow. Thus the more Faith, the more Miracles. The last strengthen the first to the point of Knowledge. Kindly see chapters 52 & 58. Note the Words of our Lord Jesus to every doubtful person in *John 20:29*. Please see chapter 133. Now, we may consider your Scripture –

1 The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting desired Him that He would shew them a Sign from Heaven. 2 He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the sky is red. 3 And in the morning, It will be foul weather to day: for the sky is red and lowring. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the Signs of the times? 4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a Sign; and there shall no Sign be given unto it, but the Sign of the Prophet Jonas. And He left them, and departed. (Matthew 16:1-4)

In *Verse 1*, we see no Faith at all, neither any desire for Truth, but only envy. That "desire of a Sign" was but seeking publicity for their "victory over a liar".

Verses 2 & 3 condemn the spiritual blindness of those spiritually blind teachers.

And *Verse 4* calls them & their followers *wicked* for being *blind leaders of blind masses* (see *Matthew 15:14*) and *adulterous* for serving the devil in exchange for their temporal, worldly, and evil-gotten prosperity. Please also see chapter 171 (The spiritual starvation) regarding the Words of the Lord to be yet understood.

245

Q: What is your opinion as to how to fight *complacency*?

A: *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary (2001)* defines it as follows.

> *1. a feeling of quiet pleasure or security, often while unaware of some potential danger, defect, or the like; self-satisfaction or smug satisfaction with an existing situation, condition, etc.*
> *2. Archaic. (a) friendly civility; inclination to please; complaisance.*
> *(b) a civil act ...*

Apparently, you understand complacency as *evil*. Therefore, I take the first of the above two definitions and consider complacency *grievous* rather than good.
Thus saith the LORD:

> *15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot: I would thou wert cold or hot. 16 So then because thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will spue thee out of My Mouth. 17 Because thou sayest, I am rich, and increased with goods, and have need of nothing; and knowest not that thou art wretched, and miserable, and poor, and blind, and naked: 18 I counsel thee to buy of Me Gold tried in the Fire, that thou mayest be Rich; and White Raiment, that thou mayest be clothed, and that the shame of thy nakedness do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with Eyesalve, that thou mayest see. 19 As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be Zealous therefore, and repent. 20 Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My Voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me. 21 To him that overcometh will I grant to sit with Me in My Throne, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His Throne. 22 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches. (Revelation 3:15-22)*

The above Scripture is aimed to correct those Congregations, which have attained some standing, especially the financial one (*Verse 17*), and stopped dead there. Those people do not help others, feeling sure that their job has already been done and is worthy of every praise. *Unity*, *Charity*, *Sacrificial Giving*, and *Diligent Study* are seen by them as irrelevant & inapplicable.

> *But I have this [Charge] against you, that you have left your First Love [you have lost the Depth of Love that you first had for Me].*
> *(Revelation 2:4, The Amplified Bible)*

They need a fresh start (*Verse 18*), as Father GOD still loves them (*Verses 19-21*).

Studying the Lord's Warnings given in the Book of Revelation to the Angels (to mean, Shepherds) of the Christian Churches, we can notice that demons best use their deadly arrows of *complacency* along with *compromise* & *common sense.*
And first of all, those evil thoughts are aimed & fired at the minds of those who have taken the most of Responsibility for our Congregations.
Kindly see chapters: 40 (Compromise), 41 (Common sense),
& 626 (Responsibility. Leaders).

Please also consider these Scriptures –

And these Words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart:
and thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children ... (Deuteronomy 6:6-7)

... Set your hearts unto all the Words which I testify among you this day,
which ye shall command your children to observe to do,
all the Words of this Law. (Deuteronomy 32:46)

Diligently teaching our children in the *Word of Truth of GOD* and keeping any complacency off from our homes, we can expect to see the respective harvest of *Godliness* in them.

Hear ye, and give ear; be not proud: for the LORD hath spoken.
(Jeremiah 13:15)

Complacency is a deadly foe of all spiritual growth.
(A.W. Tozer, The Pursuit of GOD, p.6)

Q: What do you think the *fallen angels* have been doing all these years?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: They are still doing evil. (See the *Index* & *Contents* sections for *Spirit War*.)
Some are in hell. (Have a look at chapter 8.)
The Judgment & the death eternal is waiting for both.

And the angels which kept not their first estate,
but left their own Habitation, He hath reserved in everlasting chains
under darkness unto the Judgment of the Great Day. (Jude 1:6)

246

Q: In the Christian movie, which you commended, namely, *The Stranger (TV Series) Episode 4 Salt*, it is said, "*Do you know that scientists can't figure out exactly why people sleep?*" Now, since you are so sure that the Word of GOD can explain away anything, could you please *Biblically* explain away our *sleeping*?

A: What we can do to answer *any* question Biblically is to ask LORD GOD. (Use *your* spiritual hearing. *Jeremiah 33:3*.) Or else, search the Word, take all relevant Scriptures, and ponder. GOD willing, the Answer will come.

Cruden's Concordance (1850, 1869), Walker's Concordance (1894), or a good program *e-Sword* (for Microsoft Windows) may be found helpful to do the job. Sometimes, the relevant Scriptures are many.

There may be instances when *sleep* (*physical* or *spiritual*) got sent, used, and broken by our Father GOD for His Holy Purposes.
Genesis 2:21-22 & 15:12-21; Isaiah 29:10; Jeremiah 51:39-40,57; &c.

And that simple reason – the *physical rest* – is used by the LORD to pass unto us His *Messages* or communicate with us.
Genesis 28:11-16; Job 4:12-17 & 33:14-18; &c.

In many occurrences, the word "sleep" was used to denote a physical *death*.
Deuteronomy 31:16, 2Samuel 7:12, 1Thessalonians 4:14 (in Jesus); &c.

Death is called "sleep" since a sleeper can be *awakened*. See *Mark 5:39.*
You may note the words of *Danelle Ice* we put at the end of chapter 167.
See also *Matthew 9:24-25, Mark 5:39-42, Luke 8:52-55, & John 11:11-14*.

The sleep of the Righteous ones is in *Peace.*
Psalms 4:8, Proverbs 3:24-26, & Ezekiel 34:25.

And so on.
Yet, far as I understand the question, you are more interested in the *reason why* do we *sleep*, need that *physical rest*, and get *physically tired* at all, aren't you?
By the same *e-Sword* program, I searched the Bible and sorted out many different forms of the words "*sleep*" and "*rest*" to find only a few relevant indeed.
Please see the following Scripture.

And unto Adam He said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; in the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. (Genesis 3:17-19)

Even so, because of our human misusing the Gift of Free Will and taking the way of sin & death, we all passed from what was found by the LORD GOD *Very Good* (*Genesis 1:31*) to mere *physical tiredness* (*Genesis 3:19*).
However, our Heavenly Father has something Good for them who *believe*, even to pass on to *Life Eternal*.

Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden,
and I will give you Rest. Take My Yoke upon you, and learn of Me;
for I am Meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find Rest unto your souls.
For My Yoke is easy, and My Burden is light. (Matthew 11:28-30)

Q: How is the actual Resurrection going to happen?
Q: How is Christ going to resurrect people whose bodies were burned or got badly damaged any other way?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Your question is (at least partly) answered in chapter 250 (We shall all be changed). Look it up.
Please also visit our *Index* section for *Resurrection*, *Paradise*, *Hell*, &c.

Kindly note that Resurrection is a *spiritual* phenomenon.

After the physical death, *Paradise* and *hell* are awaiting the spirits of people *Righteous* and *unrighteous*, severally. See *Luke 16:22-23*.
Kindly read chapter 222 (The Parable of Rich Man and Lazarus).

Far as I understand, *Resurrection* presumes to pass all human spirits on, even to *Eternal Life* and e*ternal death*. *Matthew 25:46* & *Revelation 20:13-14*.

The condition of dead physical bodies at the moment of *Resurrection* cannot affect that phenomenon in whatever way. See *1Corinthians 15:35-38,44-53; Philippians 3:20-21; 1Thessalonians 4:15-17; & Revelation 20:13* for more.

247

Q: How to interpret Jesus' expression "*to enter in at the strait Gate*", recorded in *Matthew 7:13* & *Luke 13:24*?

A: Those are *sad* Scriptures indeed, as most of humankind is doomed to the *death eternal* per them.
In the *Gospel of Matthew*, Lord Jesus said so after the *Golden Rule of the New Testament*. It seems more people live ignoring rather than following it.

> *12 ... all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the Law and the Prophets. 13 Enter ye in at the strait Gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: 14 Because strait is the Gate, and narrow is the Way, which leadeth unto Life, and few there be that find it.*
> *(Matthew 7:12-14)*

In his relevant commentaries, Brother Thomas Scott saw those two roads as a Christian Way of hardships & restrictions and another one of pleasures & comfort, walked by *unbelievers* and those of "moderate" religious life.

By *The Numerical Bible* of Brother F.W. Grant,

> *The Words are figurative, of course, and the Lord does not further explain them here in any direct way. He leaves them as He does many other things, to awaken thought * ... The Gate is "strait", because here is indeed an absolute Condition : "no man cometh unto the Father but by Me ..."*
> * Kindly see chapters: 72 (Why Parables?), 171 (The spiritual starvation), & 244 (Signs & Miracles).

In the *Gospel of Saint Luke*, it is said so before the *Warning* –

> *24 Strive to enter in at the strait Gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. 25 When once the Master of the House is risen up, and hath shut to the Door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the Door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and He shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: 26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in Thy Presence, and Thou hast taught in our streets. 27 But He shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from Me, all ye workers of iniquity. (Luke 13:24-27)*

In chapter 40, speaking about *compromise*, we considered *Matthew 7:21-23*.
It is parallel to the above-quoted *Luke 26-27*, yet more tightened up.

What to add to our subject?
Denominationalism splitting the Body of Christ is absurd concerning those "*narrow Way*" & "*strait Gate*". Lo, it is impossible to walk a Right narrow path *separately* and enter a Right small door any *differently* from one another.

Read these Scriptures: *Proverbs 6:19; Isaiah 58:4; Matthew 5:23-24; John 17:21-23; Acts 20:30; Romans 15:5-6 & 16:17; & 1Corinthians 1:10 & 3:3-9.*

Q: I have some questions to which I'd love to get answers & insight.
(1) I can't wrap my head around the *antisemitism* existing in certain branches of Christianity. If Jesus was always meant to be a Sacrifice, why are Jews collectively held responsible for His death?
Q: (2) What are contemporary Jewish-Christian relationships like?
Q: What is the dialogue like between Christian and Jewish Communities today?
Q: Is there even any dialogue?
Thanks!
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1) Kindly note that antisemitism *is not* a Christian Way.
The same can be said about nationalism, racism, fascism, and alike.
Those "certain branches" (or denominations?) require pruning.
The Cross of Christ is *the Truth, the Way, and the Life* for all.
Those responsible for the crucifixion and physical death of Lord Jesus are nearly two-thousand-years-dead, that is, long enough to be forgotten by *us*.
To hold all the Jewish nation responsible for the death of our Living Lord is stupid. It is written:

I am the Resurrection, and the Life: he that believeth in Me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whosoever liveth and believeth in Me shall never die. Believest thou this? (John 11:25-26)

(2) Let me have a better wording: *Judaism-Christian*, okay?
Our relationships are to stand on the Written Word of GOD.
The same is regarding any dialogue between any denominations.
(I believe that *denominationalism* has no right to exist at all.)
Thank you.

248

Q: Could we please continue our discussion on the *military* (as we were after in chapters 9 & 154) and clarify the issue of an *oath*. You know, *military* personnel takes it seriously enough.

A: Regretfully, I know that from personal experience. And, far as I am learned, the LORD GOD is also very strict in the matters of His Law.

And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it. (Isaiah 28:18)

Let me take this simple scenario. Call it *The Balance*.
A Commissioned Officer lives with his family somewhere near his base. The family decided to spend his time off somewhere out in the open. They had made everything ready when a phone call came over, requiring the man to report to the base ASAP. What would the man do? The stupid question, isn't it? Of course, he will forget everything and run off following his orders. Why? The stupid question again, you may say. Because the uncomparable things are on *the scales*, even the military rules and mere family business. The first is a matter of honor, oath, life, etc., whereas the second can easily be held up until some time later.

I don't know about you, but I believe that, when on one scale of the *balance of conscience* is the LORD GOD, His Holy Law, and our Eternal Destiny, it must outweigh the other one no matter what is thereon. And the overweight would be by far incomparable to that in our simple scenario.

For the Indignation of the LORD is upon all nations, and His Fury upon all their armies: He hath utterly destroyed them, He hath delivered them to the slaughter. (Isaiah 34:2)

These movies touch the subject of *the Balance*: *Francis Of Assisi*
Hacksaw Ridge
Silent Night

In this world, we believe, and in part experience, that the Righteous are blessed and the wicked are accursed : but beyond the grave, the reality and extent of the Blessing, and of the curse, will be more perfectly apprehended.
(Thomas Scott, Commentary on Chapter 11 of the Book of Deuteronomy)

249

Q: (1) There is one Account in the Gospels, namely, *Matthew 8:28-34, Mark 5:1-20, & Luke 8:26-39,* which has the *discrepancy,* as for how many *demon-possessed* persons healed Jesus, one or two?
Q: (2) There is also a question, wasn't it *cruel* to animals when our Lord allowed the *demons* to enter and kill the herd of *swine*?
Q: (3) Still another question is: why did people ask Jesus to *leave* them?

A: (1) We have already talked about "*discrepancies*" in chapters 82 & 119 to explain away some issues.

Commenting on the *Gospel of Mark*, Reverend Thomas Scott wrote:

> *St. Matthew gives a brief account of two demoniacs, who were dispossessed on this occasion : but Mark and Luke omit the mention of one of them, (who was not, perhaps, so remarkable either before or after his cure), to record that of the other more fully ...*

This explanation may well be accepted. Brother Thomas Scott also noticed,

> *Though many evil spirits possessed the man, one is first mentioned, who may be considered as the ruler of the company ...*
>
> These words support chapter 87 (Discipline in the Church) – about the *discipline* in our *Spirit War*. Here, for the sake of brevity, we only consider what is written in the *Gospel of Mark* since this discourse is quite complete.

1 And they came over unto the other side of the sea, into the country of the Gadarenes. 2 And when He was come out of the ship, immediately there met Him out of the tombs a man with an unclean spirit, 3 Who had his dwelling among the tombs; and no man could bind him, no, not with chains: 4 Because that he had been often bound with fetters and chains, and the chains had been plucked asunder by him, and the fetters broken in pieces: neither could any man tame him. 5 And always, night and day, he was in the mountains, and in the tombs, crying, and cutting himself with stones. 6 But when he saw Jesus afar off, he ran and worshipped Him, 7 And cried with a loud voice, and said, What have I to do with Thee, Jesus, Thou Son of the Most High GOD? I adjure Thee by GOD, that Thou torment me not. 8 For He said unto him, Come out of the man, thou unclean spirit. 9 And He asked him, What is thy name? And he answered, saying, My name is Legion: for we are many.

10 And he besought Him much that He would not send them away out of the country. 11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of swine feeding. 12 And all the devils besought Him, saying, Send us into the swine, that we may enter into them. 13 And forthwith Jesus gave them leave. And the unclean spirits went out, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the sea, (they were about two thousand); and were choked in the sea. 14 And they that fed the swine fled, and told it in the city, and in the country. And they went out to see what it was that was done. 15 And they come to Jesus, and see him that was possessed with the devil, and had the legion, sitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid. 16 And they that saw it told them how it befell to him that was possessed with the devil, and also concerning the swine. 17 And they began to pray Him to depart out of their coasts. 18 And when He was come into the ship, he that had been possessed with the devil prayed Him that he might be with Him. 19 Howbeit Jesus suffered him not, but saith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how Great things the LORD hath done for thee, and hath had Compassion on thee. 20 And he departed, and began to publish in Decapolis how Great things Jesus had done for him: and all men did marvel. (Mark 5:1-20)

(2) By Adam Clarke,

> *Christ permits the demons to do that in the swine which He did not permit them to do in the possessed, on Purpose to show us what rage they would exercise on us if left to their liberty and malice.*

To that comment, I may only dare add that, for sure, the swine mentioned in our story had been destined *to be killed and eaten up* by the folks. Otherwise, why had they fed those animals and employed the keepers? (Let alone the Truth that at the Beginning of GOD's Creation, it was not so. Kindly note *Genesis 1:29-30*.) So, the *cruelty* was shown indeed, yet not by the Lord, but *people* toward their neighbor. The last suffered, got healed, and his Healing was met with regret.

(3) As for your question – why the folks asked our Lord to leave – the reason, as it seems to me, was a mere *superstitious fear*, not the *Sacred Fear of GOD*. Lord Jesus left the healed man behind as a living proof of the *Love of GOD*.

The Parallels: *John 9:39 ..... to Verses 2,6,7.*
Psalms 92:5-6 ..... to Verse 13.
John 1:5 & 3:19 & 2Corinthians 4:4 ..... to Verse 17.
Isaiah 55:7; Lamentations 3:22; & Romans 8:38-39 – to Verse 19.
Luke 12:8-9 ..... to Verse 20.

250

Q: Brother, please explain *1Corinthians 15:51*.

A: The Scripture says:

> *50 Now this I say, Brethren, that flesh and blood cannot inherit the Kingdom of GOD; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption. 51 Behold, I shew you a Mystery: we shall not all sleep, but we shall all be changed, 52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last Trump: for the Trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. 53 For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on Immortality. (1Corinthians 15:50-53)*

Verse 51 is best interpreted in the context it belongs to.

Verses 50, 53, the above context, and all the First Epistle to Corinthians are first concerned the Brethren, that is, us, *Christians*. The Kingdom of GOD is the dwelling place of His People, the spirits of who will have to put on other bodies, even those designed by our Father GOD to live the Life Eternal.

Verse 51 is the Mystery locked up on *carnal* minds but opened for the hearts & minds of *Believers*.

In his respective commentaries, Brother James Moffatt well said,

> *... Paul really wrote : not all of us (Christians) are to die* (*i.e., some of us will be awake in Life when the End arrives), but all of us (whether dead then or alive) are to be changed.* (p.266)

To the above, I may add, or rather, remind you, that *natural* death can affect only the *physical* part of a human being. A *spirit* & *soul* continue to live.

Verse 52. By the LORD's Command, the dead – viz., the *spirit beings* of all people not physically alive on the Judgment Day, Righteous & unrighteous, notwithstanding of what remains of their physical bodies – shall be mustered up.
From both parts of the Kingdom of the Dead (see chapter 222), all souls are to stand before our Lord Jesus for a Due Judgment.
See *Romans 14:10* & *2Corinthians 5:10*.
Then, *we shall be changed* – the People of GOD will put their New bodies on.

As far as my understanding goes, those *New bodies* are designed only for the *Saved* ones, not for condemned servants of Satan. Please see chapter 8 (Hell).

This question is as old as the World, and we, Christians, are those the *Mystery* is revealed to.

If a man die, shall he live again?
all the days of my appointed time will I wait, till my Change come. (Job 14:14)

Further references.

I have set the LORD always before me: because He is at my right hand,
I shall not be moved. Therefore my heart is glad, and my Glory rejoiceth:
my flesh also shall rest in Hope. For Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell;
neither wilt Thou suffer Thine Holy one to see corruption. Thou wilt shew
me the Path of Life: in Thy Presence is fulness of Joy; at Thy Right Hand
are Pleasures for evermore. (Psalms 16:8-11)

And many of them that sleep in the dust of the Earth shall awake,
some to Everlasting Life, and some to shame and everlasting contempt.
(Daniel 12:2)

Q: I can't grasp the idea of Heaven.
When thinking of dying, there's always this question I ask myself: "Even if I make it and I live forever, then what? I'd have no purpose, nothing to work for, and everything would more or less be the same."
Q: Any thoughts?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: In your question, only the words "even if" are correct since we should fight for Heaven, not look at it pessimistically. The latter may denote only foolish misunderstanding & doubting our Father GOD – the attitude to be avoided. Just for a change, take a look at chapter 8 (Hell).

It is written:

... Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man,
the things which GOD hath prepared for them that love Him.
But GOD hath revealed them unto us by His Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth
all things, Yea, the Deep things of GOD. (1Corinthians 2:9-10)

251

Q: Why does GOD consider *hatred* equal to *murder*,
as *1John 3:15* is generally commented?

A: It is written,

> *11 For this is the Message* that ye heard from the Beginning**, that we should love one another* ... 14 We know that we have passed from death unto Life, because we love the Brethren*. He that loveth not his Brother abideth in death. 15 Whosoever hateth his Brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath Eternal Life abiding in him. 16 Hereby perceive we the Love of GOD, because He laid down His Life for us: and we ought to lay down our lives for the Brethren*. (1John 3:14-16)*

* The *Eleventh Commandment*. It is the subject of chapter 80.
** The *Beginning* of our Christian Road. That we discussed in chapter 319.

1John 3:14-16 is a part of a larger context, all-embracing the Verse in question.
And it composes another argument for consideration – *the Love of GOD*.

Verse 14 clarifies that *Love* is the essential quality to enter and live the *Life Eternal*. Contrariwise, *hatred* keeps us on the way to eternal *death*.
Verse 15 pictures the heart & mind of a *spiritual man* ready to *murder*.
That is how our Lord Jesus will see such a human being at the *Judgment*.

> *... judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, Who both will bring to Light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have Praise of GOD. (1Corinthians 4:5)*

Why so?

> *... for the LORD seeth not as man seeth;*
> *for man looketh on the outward appearance,*
> *but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)*

So, *Verse 16* teaches us *the Love of GOD*. That Love excludes any *hatred* or *enmity* because the latter pushes people to develop a *murder* attitude.

Kindly refer to chapters: 38 (How to forgive), 293 (The evil of anger),
& 605 (Anger & criticism).

252

Q: Returning to the *Lord's Prayer*, do the Words, *deliver us from evil*, mean asking our Heavenly Father to guard us against *Satan's attacks*?

A: Not really. Father GOD does guard and helps us by backing up our Faith and answering our *Prayers o' Faith*.
But the line, *deliver us from evil*, as I understand it, is a part of one Petition, namely –

... forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.
And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil ...*
(Matthew 6:12-13)

* *Lead us away from temptations.* Kindly see relevant chapters 284 & 690.

It is a Petition for our *Purification* in the Hope of GOD's Forgiveness.
Testing us, Father GOD never allows satanic *temptations*, which are more than we can bear, to get in our way. You may read *1Corinthians 10:13 & Hebrews 2:18* and refer to our Index for *Temptation*.
As for *Deliverance* from *evil*, both come from the *inside* of us, not outside (kindly note *Mark 7:14-23* and chapter 65). We ask for Guidance so that we don't answer (by the worldly rule) *evil for evil*. Chapter 38 (How to forgive).

Q: (1) Why did GOD kill Uzzah, as he intended to protect the Ark?
Q: (2) Did Uzzah go to hell, as he was struck down in Wrath? *2Samuel 6:6-7*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

... Uzzah put forth his hand to the Ark of GOD,
and took hold of it; for the oxen shook it. And the Anger of the LORD
was kindled against Uzzah; and GOD smote him there for his error;
and there he died by the Ark of GOD. (2Samuel 6:6-7)

Note, it was not a *sin* but an *error*. The Ark of the Covenant was not to be touched and carried by whosoever but *Kohathites*. See *Numbers 4:1-20*.
We are not supposed to "protect" the Holy things. Only the LORD, Almighty GOD, Who separated them, does it.
As for who goes to hell and who to Paradise, nobody but Father GOD can judge & decide that. Note *1Corinthians 4:5*.
Please also refer to chapters 8 (Hell) & 573 (Eternity).

253

Q: How do you understand the term "*Prayer of Faith*", as we read it only in *James 5:15*?

A: Once the term is unique, we ought to consider it within the context, it belongs to.

> *14 Is any sick among you? Let him call for the Elders of the Church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the Name of the Lord*: 15 And the Prayer of Faith shall save the sick, and the Lord* shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. 16 Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent Prayer of a Righteous man availeth much. (James 5:14-16)*

* The *Lord* here is *Christ Jesus*, not the LORD GOD, our Father. I've looked up many Editions, *King James Version 1611* inclusive, to draw this conclusion. However, in the Light of *Matthew 28:18*, I do not make stress on that, only clarify our way to pray: *in the Name of Jesus.* Please see *John 14:13-14*.

In principle, *every* Prayer to GOD should be a Prayer of Faith.
Matthew 21:22, Mark 11:24, & Luke 7:50.

The meaning of the wording is nothing but the absolute necessity of Faith in *every* Petition to GOD for a physical Healing inclusive. See *Proverbs 3:5 & Hebrews 11:6*. The Words "*save the sick*", stand for that phenomenon.

Let me also clarify the term "*sick*". Here, it comes the point of *wavered* Faith. Otherwise, why that *Backup* of the Church is required? See *Mark 9:24*.

The Promised *Forgiveness of sins*, as per *Verse 15*, should also be mentioned in our Healing Prayers as it was exemplified in *Mark 2:5*.

The need for a *Confession* (tightly connected with a *Healing Prayer*) is stated in *Verse 16*. The Teachers Thomas Scott and Adam Clark rightly saw in that Verse the Confession to be *reciprocal* between Christians, not only a Priest-layman way. The way of Confession is the subject of chapters 19, 42, 46, and others.

Therefore, read attentively *James 5:14-16* and determine all the requisites which prove that your Prayer is that of *Faith*.

Verse 14. Calling the *Elders* for a spiritually Strong Backup is needful. Their Faith in the *Name of Jesus* should be well proved.
You may find the parallel in chapter 87 (Discipline in the Church).
Verse 15. The Lord's Answer is *promised* – do not doubt that.
Verse 16. *Confession* and a mutual *Prayer Backup* are the matters of must and GOD-commanded Conditions regarding the effectiveness of a Prayer.

> *If we would find GOD amid all the Religious externals, we must first determine to find Him, and then proceed in the Way of Simplicity. Now, as always, GOD discovers Himself to "babes" and hides Himself in Thick Darkness from the wise and prudent. We must simplify our Approach to Him. We must strip down to essentials (and they will be found to be Blessedly few). We must put away all efforts to impress, and come with the guileless candor of childhood. If we do this, without doubt GOD will quickly respond. (A.W. Tozer, The Pursuit of GOD, p.6)*

Q: (1) If the Bible is credible and Jesus Christ did resurrect, then why is there no record of the people mentioned in *Matthew 27:52-53,* who came back from the dead the same time Jesus Christ did?

> *And the graves were opened; and many bodies of the Saints which slept arose, and came out of the graves after His Resurrection, and went into the Holy City, and appeared unto many. (Matthew 27:52-53)*

Q: (2) Why didn't these Saints, who walked out of their graves, write their own Testimonials into the Bible itself to prove Jesus was God?
Q: (3) Why is there no record or evidence of these people returning from the dead outside of the Bible?
Q: (4) Why is there no history of what they did after resurrecting at the same time as Jesus if they really came back?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) By the Will of GOD, the Record of *Matthew 27:52-53* was enough.
(2) The same is true regarding the Testimonies of Saints. See *2Peter 1:21*.
Kindly read the beautiful Verse (quoted in chapter 222), even *Luke 16:31*.
(3) As for all writs *outside the Bible,* see chapter 103 (Avoid errors).
The Written Word of GOD does not need that additional evidence.
(4) Far as I understand, the Reason for that Resurrection was to prove the Power of the LORD GOD. And that was accomplished.
Thank you for your question.

254

Q: Why does your God *hate* amputees? There *has never been a case* of a single amputee growing back an arm or a leg, yet God is *supposedly* seemed fit regularly to cure cancer-sufferers and the blind.
(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html,* October 10, 2017. Edited.)

A: As it is well said in a good Christian movie, *A Matter of Faith,*

> *... the most troubling aspect about this issue is that in our society today, evolution is being taught in our schools and universities across this land, as a matter of fact. But no one can scientifically prove evolution, as no one can scientifically prove that GOD created the World, since none of us were present to witness it. Both of these teachings then become a matter of faith.*

The above is taken from a staged "*Creation* vs *evolution*" dispute. That's another subject, but we can find the analogy to our discussion, even in the movie's name.
Considering the wording of the question: *hate*, *there has never been a case*, *supposedly* – that is a matter of *your* "faith" – the *godlessness* (to say nothing about your writing "god" – the subject of elementary education).
Whether or not my answer might convince the unbelievers, I will speak only standing on the Written Word of GOD. It is *a matter of Faith*.
Consequently, whenever and wherever we, Christians, may happen to dispute with unbelievers, it will be difficult for both parties to *prove* their point.
Okay, back to the question and my point.
Take, for instance, *Matthew 15:30-31*. Will the unbelievers *glorify GOD* when He blesses them to *see* something like that? Hardly. Is it possible for the maimed to be whole, even here & now? Sure, for thus saith our Lord in *Matthew 10:8.*

> Me, I believe in GOD's Word wholeheartedly. Even more than that – I *know*. How come? As Saint Thomas (along with other Disciples & Martyrs of Christ), I was blessed to witness the *proof*. I saw the *death* stepped back, and the *Life* restored after a single *Prayer of Faith* (*James 5:14-16).*

Q: How do you know it is true?.
Q: If you weren't raised as a Christian, what convinced you to believe?
Q: Or if you were raised with it, have you critically examined your beliefs?
Q: And, if so, what evidence or arguments did you find that left you confident that your beliefs were true?
Q: A lot of arguments, eventually, seem to come down to either, "you can trust the Bible because it is God's Word" or "you just have to have Faith." (?)

Q: But, to both of those, my question is, *why?*
Q: How do you know that the Bible came from God?
Q: Why is Faith important, and how can it get me to the Truth?
Q: I want to hear your reasoning. Why do you believe?
Q: How are you sure? I hope to be presented with *new ideas* for me to consider. Thanks in advance for sharing!
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020. Condensed.)

A: To be raised as a Christian is good & helpful. But not all are so Blessed. Speaking of myself only, I believed a Proof. See the end of the first discussion (Saint Thomas) in chapter 133.
This or that way, the first step of Faith is important. Then GOD answers. Please read *Luke 15:20*. No other way. The "new ideas"? Kindly see the Index section for many relevant chapters. Thank you for your post.

Q: If GOD does exist, why would He put Himself in the position where some people believe, and some people don't, instead of everyone?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: GOD neither put Him nor us in such stupid mental slavery. He gave people Free will, and many willingly listen to the devil. See *2Corinthians 4:4*.

Q: I am a Hindu and have fundamental questions about Christianity.
(1) Redemption of sinners – is it valid?
Q: (2) Why is everyone a sinner?
Q: (3) Why would Christ be able to save me from eternal damnation?
Q: (4) Can every sin be redeemed?
Q: (5) Should not some sins be unredeemable?
Q: (6) Should not there be Punishment for sins, even believing in God or Jesus?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Edited.)

A: (1) Friend, Redemption *is* Valid for His People. *Psalm 111:9*.
Everybody is welcome to belong with them. *Romans 2:11*.
(2) Thus saith the LORD GOD. *Romans 3:23 & 5:12*.
(3) Please read *Isaiah 43:11* or *1Peter 3:18.* There are more Scriptures.
(4) Yes, it can. It was paid for. *Isaiah 53:5*.
(5) Of course. One should *repent* of sins to be redeemed. *Ezekiel 18:21-22.*
(6) Yes, it should. *Hebrews 6:4-6 & 10:26-27.*
Please note that the above is a matter of Faith.
You are welcome to our Index section to find the relevant chapters.

255

Q: (1) In *Matthew 5:17-18* it states that Jesus wants Christians to follow the Old Testament *word for word*. Why don't they?
Q: (2) And why do they actively disregard the parts of the Old Testament, they don't agree with, or are *socially unacceptable* these days, like *child slavery*?

(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html*, October 10, 2017. Edited.)

A: I answer, standing upon the *Word of GOD* only. Step by step.

Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For Verily I say unto you, Till Heaven and Earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled. (Matthew 5:17-18)

(1) Thus, Lord Jesus spoke about *His* Ministry, not that of His Followers.
In chapters 16, 17, and 18, we (hopefully) made it clear that the New Covenant *did not* revoke the Old Covenant (a.k.a., the Testaments). But the Ultimate Sacrifice of Christ had been a *substitutional* for the Animal Sacrifices forever.

Christians, meaning True Followers of Christ, *do* as Jesus taught. That Guidance the Holy Spirit of the LORD GOD – our Promised Teacher – gives to us.
If somebody does not obey Him – that person *is not* a Christian.

To "disregard the parts of the Old Testament, they do not agree with, or are socially unacceptable these days" is also a personal business of every Believer, whether to follow *the Written Word of GO*D or any denominational & social distortions & open lies. Let me speak about Christians as I define them.

(2) Child slavery is *nowhere* justified in the Old Testament Scriptures.
Reading the Bible, we ought to see one thing clear, namely, whether this or that was commanded by our Father GOD or just was said or done by people, thus following or deviating from His Word.

Q: When someone asks a question on the Internet about the Bible or God, why are there so many completely different answers (interpretations of the Text)?.

(Signed: *Agnostic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: We answer questions per our knowledge & understanding. The Written Word of GOD – our only Source thereof – is the subject for us to study, and the only Right way to answer those questions is retelling what we hear from our Teacher – the Holy Spirit of GOD. Please see chapter 58 (K & U & W).

As for what to accept as Truth and what not, it is up to you.
Kindly have a look at chapters 5, 25, 723, & 726.

Q: When Muslims and Hindus pray, *who* do you think they contact?
Q: Your God? Other God? Satan? No-one?

(Signed: *Agnostic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020. Corrected.)

A: It is written,

Thus saith the LORD the King of Israel,
and his Redeemer the LORD of Hosts; I am the First, and I am the Last;
and beside Me there is no God. (Isaiah 44:6)

See also *Revelation 1:8*. Even so, *all* Prayers are to come to Him only.
However,

Now we know that GOD heareth not sinners: but if any man
be a Worshipper of GOD, and doeth His Will, him He heareth. (John 9:31)

Q: Who created God?
Q: Does God have a God?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: To both questions, the answer is,

I am the First, and I am the Last;
and beside Me there is no God. (Isaiah 44:6)

Q: If revealed that a meteor is heading towards the Earth and will kill every living thing on it, would that make you question your Beliefs in God?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: To start from, revealed by who? Astronomers? Well, I cannot care less.
If, however, you mean the Revelation from GOD – that is not confirmed by the Holy Bible, because more things are to be destroyed at the End of this World, meteors inclusive. Please take a look at the following Scriptures.
Isaiah 51:6, 2Thessalonians 2:3-12, Hebrews 12:26-27, & 2Peter 3:10-12.

256

Q: The '*eye of a needle ...*' If Jesus said it's difficult, even impossible, for a *rich* man to get into the Kingdom of Heaven,
(1) why do so many *rich* people believe in Jesus?
Q: (2) Why is it the goal of nearly every single Christian to become *rich*?
Q: (3) And why do TV Evangelists always want your money?
(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html*, October 10, 2017. Edited.)

A: Since our opponents did not specify the term "*rich*", let me guess, they mean the folks whom *the world* places "above" the so-called *middle class*. However, let that speculation or supposition stay as such only.

In my answer, I dare to define the "rich" from a Biblical standpoint, namely, those who are not *poor in spirit*. Kindly see chapter 115 for more.
What I mean, one may have a lot of money, nevertheless follows the narrow Road leading to the strait Gate to the Kingdom, since that person has no trouble to leave everything and follow our Lord Jesus.
On the other hand, a person might live a financially poor life, up to being a beggar, yet does not believe in LORD GOD, avoid sacrificing Him the Tithes & Offerings, and thus follows the broad way to hell. See chapters 6, 56, & 247.

(1) So, "why do so many rich people believe in Jesus?"
Do they? Even *so many*? I don't think so, seeing so many poor & needy folks around. For Jesus said,

If thou wilt be Perfect, go and sell that thou hast,
and give to the poor, and thou shalt have Treasure in Heaven:
and come and follow Me. (Matthew 19:21)

(2) Go on. "Why is it the goal of nearly *every single Christian* to become rich?"
Says who? Apparently, you imply, "*everybody, calling him (her) self a Christian, has that goal*". Sorry, but you and I mean two very different folks, i.e., the *Christians* and the *pretenders*. Such a conversation is leading us nowhere.

(3) And the last, "why do TV Evangelists always want your money?"
Well, I agree, they do. Because to own a TV channel (as well as any other media stuff) costs money. But those *rich* folks (who might call themselves Christians and on whom that broadcasting might depend) never make a single step if their bloody financial *interest* is not met.

Q: Why, statistically speaking, people of *less IQ and less intelligence* have a much more belief in God in contrast to people of *high IQ and great intelligence* (e.g., according to the 2019 census of religious affiliation at Harvard University)? I don't mean to be derogatory – this is all statistics.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: To begin with, such atheistic conclusions as "*less IQ and less intelligence*" and "*high IQ and great intelligence*" can not impress my Christian self.
I have no reason to doubt the above statistics.
However, my Faith in GOD & His Word remains. The Answer to your question, as for the reason *why*, is here:

... the wisdom of this world is foolishness with GOD ... (1Corinthians 3:19)

In this book, I quoted Brother *A.W. Tozer* and Brother *C.S. Lewis* in chapters 440 & 681 and 419 & 534, respectively. Their words may well add to my reasoning. And you may kindly see the Index section for more references.

Q: Eschatology: is it literally true or mostly metaphor?.
Q: Antichrist, dragons, horns, deadly horsemen, and cataclysms in the Book of Revelation – are they literal or just metaphors that nobody really gets?
Q: If it is opaque metaphors, what is the point of the Book?
Q: Do you have a tangible timeline of predictions for this if you believe in it?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: The subjects of your post and the first question are *metaphorical* predictions of actual events to come. The *antichrist*, however, is factual and stands for Satan or his servant, per the context. See *1John 2:18*.
What you called "metaphors that nobody really gets", I understand as the only way the *unbelievers* react to Knowledge. See *1Corinthians 2:14*.
The point of the Book is Salvation. See *1Corinthians 1:21*.
And *No* is the answer is to your last question. See *Matthew 24:36*.

Q: Is it possible that both The Big Bang and God can exist?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Negative on that.
Please read *Chapter 1* of the *Book of Genesis*, and note *how* step-by-step the Universe was created. Mind well *Genesis 1:4*.
Please also note that the "Big Bang" is an *atheistic* theory. Thank you.

257

Q: (1) Did GOD create cancer and aids?
Q: (2) If so, why?
Q: (3) And why do good Christians also get them?
Q: (4) Or was it a mistake?
Q: (5) And if it was, why not do something about it now?

(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html,* October 10, 2017. Edited.)

A: When I dared to edit the question, I could not help wondering: *why* do they write "god" and "Cancer"? Who is their "educator" they listen to?
(1) The origin of all *physical sicknesses*, *cancer* & *aids* inclusive, is a human, not GOD. Kindly consider the Scriptures:

There is no soundness in my flesh because of Thine Anger;
neither is there any rest in my bones because of my sin ... (Psalms 38:3)

Fools because of their transgression, and because of their iniquities,
are afflicted. (Psalms 107:17)

(2) As for how *GOD's Punishment* works, please see chapter 64.
(3) In chapter 11, we spoke about *sicknesses* in the Church of GOD.
(4) "Was it a mistake?" Yes, it was, on the part of a man.

Be not deceived; GOD is not mocked:
for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. (Galatians 6:7)

(5) Next, "if it was ..." If what, *unbelievers* – the humans made by LORD GOD, and trying His Patience by their scorn – are so "clever" as seeing "mistakes" in His Creation? I beg to note,

Death and Life are in the power of the tongue:
and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof. (Proverbs 18:21)

"Why not do something about it now?" Really, why not?

If My People, which are called by My Name, shall humble themselves,
and pray, and seek My Face, and turn from their wicked ways;
then will I hear from Heaven, and will forgive their sin,
and will heal their land. (2Chronicles 7:14)

Q: Were there, actually, *giants* on Earth, or is it some kind of a metaphor? *Genesis 6:4.*

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: It is written:

There were giants in the Earth in those days; and also after that, when the Sons of GOD came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown. (Genesis 6:4.)

Possibly, those *giants* were ugly dinosaurs.
Animals were created perfect in every way. Note *Genesis 1:25*.
But later on, the Creation was distorted by human sin as per our spiritual Authority. Consider *The Book of Genesis, Chapter 1, Verses 26 & 28.*
The term "giants" can be metaphorically applied to some humans too.
Both kinds of *giants* were destroyed by the Flood.
Yet their second kind, eventually, "reappeared" and continued to do evil.
Thanks for your question.

Q: How do Christians (specifically, Calvinists) reconcile both Free will and the fact that God ordained everything?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: To do that, Christians have not to be Calvinists or non-Calvinists.
We ought to define the Gift of our Free will as GOD-given Liberty to hold fast to His Image & Likeness and follow the Way of *Eternal Life*, or else feel free to go to *hell & death eternal*. Kindly read *Deuteronomy 30:15-20*.
In my opinion, our Free will started harmonically with the Holy Will of our Father GOD in *Genesis 1:26-28*.

As for how "God ordained everything", please see His Final Estimation in *Genesis 1:31*. Thus GOD's Creation was Perfect. And His Perfection did not & does not allow any conflicts or contradictions. Amen.

Q: Can a part of Religion make you good or bad?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: What Religion and what part thereof? Speaking of *Christianity*, a good Beginning is *Giving*. Please see *Matthew 19:21* quoted in chapter 256.
And kindly read chapter 56 (The Test of Giving).

258

Q: The *Bible* read by Christians of today differs by many Chapters and thousands of paragraphs from the *Original*. Which one is the *Word of GOD*, and why does *man* edit it?

(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html*, October 10, 2017.)

A: Is the person asking so familiar with that *Original* and knowledgeable in its *ancient* languages preceding the division into Chapters & Paragraphs? I don't think that such a character would be an *atheist.*

Why are there so many Editions of the Bible? And which of them follows best the Original – the Word of GOD? You may kindly see chapter 118.
To that, I may only add that the Written Word of GOD requires that unique quality, which I call the *spiritual hearing*. Sorry, it is hard to explain to an *atheist.* Yet, that spiritual hearing was as necessary for the very first ancient readers of the Holy Scriptures (the Original) as it is now for us, reading, say, *English Standard Version (2001)*. The better *hearing* we have, the less we depend on Brothers translators, editors, expositors, &c.

> *In every exposition or explanation of the Scriptures, therefore, the subject-matter is first to be considered ; that is, we are first clearly to see the thing or matter spoken of in each case. When this is strictly first done, then next the words are to be brought to a due application to the thing (if the grammatical laws of the language will permit) ; but the things are never to be made to bend to the words ... And although a knowledge of the words is prior in order ; yet the Knowledge of the things is better, and the more important ...* *(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, p.349)*

Q: (1) If God is Omnipotent, Omniscient, and Omnipresent, does He know that things like genocide still happen?
Q: (2) And He still allows it?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: (1) Please see chapter 645 for the *Characteristics of GOD*.
(2) Please see chapter 261 (the question, *Does God intervene ...*)
Read *Psalms 115:16* and ask *yourself* what *you* have done to stop "the things like genocide". You may also visit the Index section.

259

Q: If the Second Commandment is, “Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image”, why do Christians wear crosses, have statues, and make films with Jesus’ graven image on them?

(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html*, October 10, 2017.)

A: This is the Second Commandment:

Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in Heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth: thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy GOD am a Jealous GOD, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate Me; and shewing Mercy unto thousands of them that love Me, and keep My Commandments. (Exodus 20:4-6 & Deuteronomy 5:8-10)

That’s why we, *Christians*, can make whatsoever images we like, any likeness whatever, namely, of anything Father GOD created, and wear crosses. But what we make or wear must not be the subject of *idolatry*.

Moreover, *Christians* must not *kneel down* before whatever monuments, memorials, flags, and alike, which are *the idols of unbelievers*.
The Second Commandment of the LORD was discussed in chapter 94.

Q: Hypothetically, let’s say, you were lied to, and Christianity is not true but purely made up, would you like to be informed of this news, or not?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: Negative on that. Because in such a case, I and all my likes & dislikes would not exist.

Q: What was the Earth like during the fall of Lucifer?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: See chapter 3 (the question, *When did Lucifer’s rebellion take place?*)
There, we indicated the time between *Genesis 1:31* and *Genesis 3:1*.
Therefore, the Earth was, most probably, Perfect.

260

Q: Jesus loves? – If Jesus loves, why did He say, "*I will kill her children. Then all the Churches will know that I am the One Who searches hearts and minds*." in *Revelation 2:23*?
Q: Is Jesus a child killer?

(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html*, October 10, 2017. Edited.)

A: *Revelation 2:20-25* runs:

> *20 ... I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a Prophetess, to teach and to seduce My Servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols.*
> *21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not.*
> *22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. 23 And I will kill her children with death; and all the Churches shall know that I am He which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works. 24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden.*
> *25 But that which ye have already hold fast till I come ...*

To explain *Verse 23*, we have better see it within the above context.
Yes, Lord Jesus loves even as our Heavenly Father does, in His Word and Perfect Justice. How so? The *children* in *Verse 23* stand not only for young *physical* descendants of those ancient sinners but all *fornicators* – the servants of Satan and the followers of his idolatrous lies. See chapters 50 & 403 about *idolatry*.

As for the *killing*, GOD does not do it the way the unbelievers might think & do. Kindly read chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment) to make a simple deduction: *Satan* (by the bloody hands of his spiritually blind servants – the *unbelievers*) did, does, and will *physically* kill their likes. When does that happen? When the LORD, our GOD, Justly removes His Protection from those who turn their back on Him.
Even on Judgment Day, Father GOD is not going to kill but *separate*.

Neither, as it seems to me, the *physical* punishment has anything to do with *the sinners' eternal destiny*. Please, have a look at chapters 8 & 573 for that.
You may kindly visit the Index section too.

Q: According to *1Kings 22:22*, God can send spirits to deceive people into believing falsehoods. How do you know Jesus is not an example of this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written:

... Hear thou therefore the Word of the LORD:
I saw the LORD sitting on His Throne, and all the Host of Heaven standing by Him on His Right Hand and on His Left. And the LORD said, Who shall persuade Ahab, that he may go up and fall at Ramoth-gilead? And one said on this manner, and another said on that manner. And there came forth a spirit, and stood before the LORD, and said, I will persuade him. And the LORD said unto him, Wherewith? And he said, I will go forth, and I will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all his prophets. And He said, Thou shalt persuade him, and prevail also: go forth, and do so. Now therefore, behold, the LORD hath put a lying spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets, and the LORD hath spoken evil concerning thee. (1Kings 22:19-23)

The above Prophesy is given in the form of a Parable.
See chapters 72 (Why Parables?) & 474 (The incomparable Parables).
Read the Parallel Truth in *Romans 1:24-25*.
Regarding GOD's Punishment, you may see chapter 64.
Jesus is God & our Lord. You won't understand it in the way of a "Christian vs atheist" discussion or debate. However, let's note *Ecclesiastes 3:1*.

Q: (1) Is the reason why suffering exists in the World because of one mistake or on the Purpose?
Q: (2) Is not it said that suffering exists because Adam & Eve disobeyed God?
Q: (3) Some Christians admit that we, human beings, rebel against God via our Free will. Is it true?
Q: (4) So, did All-Perfect and All-Powerful God create the imperfect world?
Q: (5) Are we suffering then because God decided so for one mistake?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Corrected.)

A: (1) Neither. Please see chapter 268 (*Adam* & *Eve*. *Free will*.)
(2) Said who? Note *Galatians 6:7*, where Adam & Eve are not mentioned.
(3) That is correct. Please, see the Index section for *Free will*.
(4) That is wrong. Consider our discussions in chapters 268 & 330.
(5) And that is impossible. Kindly mind *2Chronicles 19:7*.

You may refer to chapters 64 (GOD's Punishment) & 706 (Suffering).

261

Q: The *Bible* states that the *Earth* is between *6,000* and *8,000* years old, that it was created in *7 days*, and that *Man* is made of *dirt* and *Woman* a piece of *Man*. The *modern* Church says that this is an *allegory*. Where does it say in the *Bible* that it is an *allegory*?
(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html*, October 10, 2017.)

A: First & foremost, I beg all unbelievers to take a look at the Holy Bible *before* making any announcements as to what it states and what does not.

One can find nowhere in our Bible that "the Earth is between 6,000 and 8,000 years old." The calculations are made standing on the Chronology of the *Old Testament Scriptures*, namely, the beginning of the *Gospel of Saint Matthew* and the end of the Third Chapter of the *Gospel of Saint Luke*.

I have never done that calculation myself but have no reason to doubt those Scholars who did and got the figure of about *6000*. Does it matter? There are more substantial questions there. Say, *Who* created the Life and *why*.

The Heaven & the Earth were created in *six days*, as it is written in the First Chapter of *The Book of Genesis*. The *Man* was made *of the dust of the ground*, according to *Genesis 2:7*, not of "dirt". The last is something else, you know. The *Woman* was formed from a *rib* of the *Man*, according to *Genesis 2:22*.
But here, I would leave the *Mystery of Creation* alone.

Seeke not out the things that are too hard for thee, neither search the things that are aboue thy strength. But what is commaunded thee, thinke thereupon with Reuerence, for it is not needful for thee, to see with thine eyes the things that are in Secret. Be not curious in vnnecessarie matters ...
(The Wisdome of Iesus the Sonne of Sirach, 3:21-23, King James Version, 1611)

Next, regarding your statement that "the modern Church says this is an allegory". What kind of a Church is that? Since our opponents have not provided the exact source, and the Holy Bible does not make any division or distinction between the *old* & *new* Church of GOD, I would leave such a thing as an "allegory" with fiction literature, where it rightfully belongs.
Therefore, the last question should be addressed to those who believe in that "allegory" and say so.

Q: Do extraterrestrials or aliens go against the Bible?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: No, they don't. Nothing, much less nonexistent, can contradict the Bible. Please, see chapters 290 & 713 of this "Q & A".

Q: Does God intervene in the affairs of this world, e.g., politics or social affairs? I mean, in modern history, not Bible times.
(Signed: *Atheist, Ex-Christian.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020.)

A: The LORD GOD is Faithful to His Word. *Malachi 3:6 & Hebrews 10:23*.
He keeps the Earth under the spiritual Authority of people.
Kindly read *Genesis 1:26,28,* and *Psalms 115:16*.
GOD controls all His Creation. See *Psalms 22:28, 66:7, 83:18, 119:91,* etc.

Q: I am an atheist since I don't believe in any God. I agree with some points made in the Bible, like several Parables and the Beatitudes. My parents (both are Christians) say that if I quote or agree with any parts of the Bible, I am a sort of Christian.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: Well, your parents told you "some sort of" truth.
If they are both Christians, not just "a sort thereof", you might do well to ask them who *True Christians* are. May GOD bless your family & home.

Q: (1) Imagine that you and I are devout Christians. One day, I tell you I got called by God, and He told me to sacrifice my son. In addition, I provide three significant Miracles. Would you act on Faith or call the Police?
Q: (2) Now, why should I believe in Jesus if you can't trust your neighbor?
(Signed: *Atheist.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020. Edited.)

A: (1) Once you named your post "Abraham's Sacrifice", kindly read that story (*Genesis 22:1-14*) attentively and note that Brother Abraham *told nobody* about the LORD's Command. Next, a "devout Christian" does not need "three significant Miracles" to prove the Word of GOD.
(2) Let me think for myself what to trust and what not to, okay? As to you, it is also a private business. You may search "*The unbelievers ask*" chapters for the answers to the rest of your post. Please visit the Index section too.

262

Q: Witch trials, Inquisitions, and Crusades – historians estimate that the total number of people executed *in the Name of Jesus* is as high as fifteen million (mostly Jews, "witches," and pagans). How does it feel, knowing that *Jesus* is responsible for three times as many deaths as Hitler?

(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html*, October 10, 2017.)

A: I guess "witch trials" were those acts of the *Holy Inquisition* that should have been directed against *witchcraft* according to the *Law of GOD.** What had happened actually was another story and a matter of personal honesty of the *Inquisitors*.

* There is a very long list of Scriptures commanding the *death penalty* for different offenses against GOD and people, *witchcraft* inclusive, in chapter 95.

I'm surprised that such historical evidence, as the *Book of Martyrs,* was ignored, and *Christians* were not mentioned by the unbelievers among the victims. Probably, considering the level of competence shown in their questions, the unbelievers might add us to "*pagans*". Whatever. The Inquisition acted according to Pop's orders and instituted a *fear of man* rather than the *Holy Fear of GOD*.

As for the *Crusades*, they were and still are very different.
At the end of the *Gospel of Matthew*, we can read on our *Great Commission* to preach the Good News of GOD all over the World. It is the Crusade commanded by our Lord Jesus and conducted to the very End of the World.
In the *Book of Martyrs* and history manuals, we can also read about other *crusades* – definitely commanded by Satan – leading to bloody massacres. Liars (unscrupulous historians inclusive) called all that evil done "in the Name of Jesus", whereas "in the name of Satan" would have been the only correct term.

As for "how does it feel", I can ask the unbelievers the same question back. *How does it feel* to be condemned for the evils you have *never* done, moreover, Honestly taught on the contrary? *How does it feel to lie?* Is your conscience dead? Let alone the same question asked after death or the Day of Judgment.

Those who hold *Holy Jesus* responsible for the massacres of Satan are hereby strongly advised to repent to be forgiven.
Lord Jesus died for you.

GOD will not be mocked in His Ministers. Christ said: "He that despiseth you, despiseth Me" (Luke 10:16). To Samuel GOD said: "They have not rejected thee, but they have rejected Me" (1Samuel 8:7). Be careful, you scoffers. GOD may postpone His Punishment for a time, but He will find you out in time, and punish you for despising His Servants. You cannot laugh at GOD. Maybe the people are little impressed by the threats of GOD, but in the hour of their death they shall know Whom they have mocked. GOD is not ever going to let His Ministers starve. When the rich suffer the pangs of hunger GOD will feed His Own Servants. "In the days of famine they shall be satisfied" (Psalms 37:19) ...

(Martin Luther, Comments on Galatians 6, Verse 7.)

Q: How come *Jesus* is never called *Immanuel* in the New Testament?.
Q: Doesn't that mean the Prophecy failed in that respect?

(Signed: *Atheist, ex-Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020.)

A: *Immanuel* means "GOD with us". That's how it comes.
The Prophecy did not fail. Neither it ever will.

Q: How is it that God is Good despite Him killing more people than Satan?
Satan has killed 10 people, while God in the Bible has killed 2.476.633, not counting the Flood.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Edited.)

A: Where are those stupid figures from? Is it not too precise counting and searching the Bible for unbelievers? One should be quite a diligent servant of *Satan* for such wasting of GOD-given Lifetime for a devilish lie.

How about this: LORD GOD is Good, and despite all false accusations and blasphemies of heretics, He killed *nobody*, including during the Flood?
Could you please try your utmost best to understand that Satan, having no power over humans and only by his bloody lie, fooled *billions* into hell and death eternal? Kindly go as far as chapter 64 to know *how* GOD's Punishment works.
Read chapters 312 & 313 to learn about *our* Authority over the Earth.
Now,

He is before all things, and in Him all things hold together.
(Colossians 1:17, New International Version)

So, for GOD, it is a matter of stopping holding His Creation, and the End comes, which is more fearful than the Flood, which was one great *suicide*, not murder.

263

Q: In *Mark 3:29*, it says, '*but whoever blasphemes against the Holy Spirit never has Forgiveness, but is guilty of an eternal sin*'.
Is it true that *pedophiles* and *child killers* can be forgiven and get in Heaven but *disbelievers* can't?

(*http://godbegone.blogspot.com/2007/06/questions-to-ask-christians.html*, October 10, 2017.)

A: Far as I understood the question, our opponents don't understand, what the *blasphemy against the Holy Spirit* is.

> *Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men, and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme: but he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost hath never Forgiveness, but is in danger of eternal damnation: because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.*
> *(Mark 3:28-30, Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*)

The same *Warning* is written in *Matthew 12:31-32* & *Luke 12:10*.

Jesus, the Messiah, was the Son of Man in those three years of His Ministry.
His Words were given to Him by the *Holy Ghost*. See *John 14:10*.
The Holy Bible was dictated by the *Holy Spirit of GOD*. See *2Peter 1:20-21*.
The *Holy Spirit* is our Teacher. See *1John 2:27*. Kindly note chapter 104.

What might be forgiven is some s ungodly remark explainable by the lack of Understanding. That foolishness, however, should be repented of.
All critics of the Written Word of GOD could be much better off if they leave the Holy Scriptures alone. But *blasphemy* is not naive – it has an evil intention.
Blasphemy against the Holy Spirit is the stable satanic lying attitude manifested in words, publications, or actions directed against the Truth written in the Holy Bible (the Teaching of Lord Jesus inclusive). Blasphemers purposefully lie against that Truth preached by the Servants of GOD, promote atheism and entertain crowds by scorning or mockery LORD GOD. That evil is unforgivable.

Many of us (in our sinful past) this or that way laughed & mocked the Holy Bible, knowing not that the latter was nothing but the Voice of the Holy Ghost in writing. However, every human being is blessed with brains to understand the Word of GOD in every translation, a better or worse one, an old or new.
And – important – we can *hear* His Voice, given due diligence is applied.

Now, “Is it true that pedophiles and child killers can be forgiven and get in Heaven but disbelievers can’t?” Kindly note that all who *repent* are forgiven. See *Ecclesiastes 9:4*. By *2Corinthians 5:17*, a person, who indeed repented and come to our Lord Jesus, is a New Creature, those ugly labels are gone, forget them.
But the question is: will the sinners repent? Kindly read chapters 19 & 155.

Unforgivable is a continuous & willful *blasphemy* against the Holy Ghost. An example of this sin is your site – *http://godbegone.blogspot.com,* which publishes the snake-like questions – the word of Satan, the evil one, the devil. He will never stop *blasphemy* and teach others the same until he and all his “godbegone” followers will get, at last, where they belong.

Q: How come Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob sinned but were praised for their Goodness?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: A sinless human being (except Jesus Christ) has never existed.
Please, read *1Samuel 16:7* & *Psalms 103:10-14*.

Q: (1) If God is ever Forgiving, why is it too late to repent once in hell?.
Q: (2) He throws people down there for not being Christians and claims to be ever-forgiving. But why, if get in hell and repent, He will not forgive you?
Q: It is too late. Does that make sense to you?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) Could you please imagine life on Earth if everybody lives as ungodly as he (she) may please, go to hell, cry out, “I am sorry!” and get to Heaven?
(2) “He throws ... for not being Christians ... ever-forgiving.” – Where did you find all this bull? Please, read chapter 8 dedicated to *hell* and 64 about GOD’s Punishment. It is your words which does not make any good sense.

Q: (1) Is it true that *we* have no records from the time after Jesus’ death suggesting that Christians were even on people’s radar in a significant way?
Q: (2) And that it was not, even several decades later, more than enough time for Jesus’ body to be disposed of or lost track of?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Corrected.)

A: (1) *Christians* have the Record – *Acts 11:26*.
(2) Such research or investigation could be a stupid waste of time.
Kindly read *Matthew 28:5-6, Mark 16:6, Luke 24:5-6, & John 20:17*.

264

Q: Why does Jesus quote a *non-existent* Verse of the Old Testament Scripture in *John 7:38*?
Q: Is it possible that He considered other *non-canonical* writings also to be God's Word?

(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php*, October 19, 2017.)

A: *John 7:37-39, King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*, runs:

> *37 In the last day, that Great Day of the Feast, Jesus stood and cried, saying, If any man thirst, let him come unto Me, and drink. 38 He that believeth on Me, as the Scripture hath said, out of his belly shall flow Rivers of Living Water. 39 (But this spake He of the Spirit, which they that believe on Him should receive: for the Holy Ghost was not yet given; because that Jesus was not yet Glorified.)*

Verse 38, as per *Robert Young's Literal Translation (1898)*, runs:

> *... he who is believing in Me, according as the Writing said,*
> *Rivers out of his belly shall flow of Living Water ...*

Far as I understood the question, the misunderstanding can be found in the unbelievers' wording, even the "*Verse*" & "*Scripture*". The question could have looked more "hard" had they used the word *Scriptures*, thus implying a sort of their extensive research. However, the explanation would be the same.

Now, what Lord Jesus meant was,
"My *True* Follower is so taught, saturated, and armed with the *Truth*, that his (her) *words* will be full of Knowledge & Understanding."
Kindly mind these Scriptures the above conclusion stands on (pick at random):

Proverbs 18:4; Isaiah 12:3, 43:20, 44:3, 49:10, & 58:11;
Jeremiah 2:13; & Ezekiel 36:25.

According to *Robinson's Theological, Biblical and Ecclesiastical Dictionary*,
"'*Canon'* is a Greek word signifying *Rule*. It is used in the Ecclesiastical language, to signify a Rule concerning Faith, Discipline, or manners; and also to distinguish those Books of Scripture, which are '*received as Inspired'* and indisputable, from profane, apocryphal, or disputed books."

Therefore, no disrespect to the above *Canon*, but we are supposed to make one thing clear: the *Word of GOD* is second to none and far above all our *Canons*.

On that ground, to answer the second part of the question – "Is it possible that He considered other non-canonical writings also to be GOD's Word?" – my answer is only *negative*. Why? Because *Jesus* is the *Living Word* Himself.

In the Beginning was the Word, and the Word was with GOD,
and the Word was God ... And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us,
(and we beheld His Glory, the Glory as of the only Begotten of the Father),
full of Grace and Truth. (John 1:1,14)

And we know well enough how Father GOD deals with all lying writings of men.

Ye shall not add unto the Word which I command you, neither shall ye diminish
ought from it, that ye may keep the Commandments of the LORD your GOD
which I command you. (Deuteronomy 4:2)

How darre ye saye then: we are wise, we haue the Lawe of the LORDE
amonge vs? Beholde, the disceatfull penne of the Scrybes, setteth forth lies ...
(Jeremiah 8:8, Miles Coverdale Translation, 1535)

Q: What happened to all Jesus' supporters between Palm Sunday and His trial & death? It seems weird that He was welcomed into Jerusalem one day and suddenly hated by most of the town a few days later. Moreover, they took the trial into their own hands, got Pilate to release a murderer, and sentence Jesus to one of the cruelest executions of the time.

(Signed: Atheist, Ex-Catholic.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, April 2020.)

A: I think "supporters" is not the right word. *Crowd*, *bystanders*, *onlookers*, and suchlike would be better. Otherwise, why "suddenly hated", eh? In chapter 225, we discussed Lord Jesus' Parable of a Sower (*Matthew 13:3-8,19-23)*. Kindly read. So, what "seems weird" is *usual*. What outwardly might look "was welcomed into", in reality, was "awoke the interest of".

And the crowd did not "take the trial into their own hands". They got what was surrendered by the man not qualified for his position. Same as, once upon a time, that crowd gave up their land to pagans.

Spiritually, the story is different. If interested, kindly find and read relevant "Q & A" chapters titled *Spirit War*.

Q: (1) Logically speaking, how could Jesus have died for my sins when I wasn't even born yet, and therefore couldn't have sinned *before* my existence?
Q: (2) Was it because Adam and Eve ate the fruit?
Q: (3) If that's your answer, how is that my fault?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Corrected.)

A: (1) It would be late for Him to die for you *after* your sins. *Ecclesiastes 9:4.*
(2) No. You don't have to "borrow" the sins of others having a lot of yours.
(3) Let my answer be just a personal opinion, okay? If your life is sinless, you are the second to Christ Jesus in the great history of humanity.

Q: (1) How do you explain that every Patriarch had multiple wives or concubines – Abraham, Moses, Jacob, David?
Q: (2) If it was one-man-one-woman, wouldn't there be so for each Patriarch?
Q: (3) But if nearly every Patriarch had multiple brides, would you think God specifically mentioned it, especially being so fond of Moses and David?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1) For starters, Patriarchs were *humans* and, as such, not free from errors. Kindly note that the words "every" in your first question and "nearly every" in the third one were not proved, just exemplified.
(2) Be what? They kept the Law of GOD. (*Genesis 2:24,* much later, got followed by the Seventh Commandment.) And nobody has ever lived without stumbling. So, how "wouldn't there be so for" you & me? Therefore, please do not expect me to support your judgmental attitude.

Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest:
for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself;
for thou that judgest doest the same things. (Romans 2:1)

(3) In His Holy Word, Father GOD, be it explicitly or implicitly, mentioned everything. Yes, He answered all questions. Your word "fond" should be considered in the Light of the Scriptures: *2Chronicles 19:7 & Romans 2:11*. Even so,

Yea, let GOD be True, but every man a liar; as it is written,
That Thou mightest be justified in Thy Sayings, and mightest overcome
when Thou art judged. (Romans 3:4)

265

Q: Why does Matthew quote the *non-existent* Old Testament Prophecy (*Matthew 2:23*)?

(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php,* October, 2017.)

A: *Matthew 2:19-23* runs,

19 But when Herod was dead, behold, an Angel of the LORD appeareth in a dream to Joseph in Egypt,
20 Saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and go into the land of Israel: for they are dead which sought the young child's life. 21 And he arose, and took the young child and his mother, and came into the land of Israel. 22 But when he heard that Archelaus did reign in Judaea in the room of his father Herod, he was afraid to go thither: notwithstanding, being warned of GOD in a dream, he turned aside into the parts of Galilee:
23 And he came and dwelt in a city called Nazareth: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, He shall be called a Nazarene.

And this we can read about the birth of *Samson* –

For, lo, thou shalt conceive, and bear a son; and no razor shall come on his head: for the child shall be a Nazarite unto GOD from the womb: and he shall begin to deliver Israel out of the hand of the Philistines. (Judges 13:5)

That Name – *Holy unto GOD* – is in the older Bible Versions:

... and cam, and dwelte in a citee, that ys clepid Nazareth, that it shulde be fulfillid, that was seid bi Profetis, For He shal be clepid a Nazarey.
(Matthew 2:23, John Wycliffe Translation, 1382)

And went and dwelt in a citie called Nazareth, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophets, which was, That Hee should be called a Nazarite.
(Matthew 2:23, Miles Coverdale Version, 1535)

I believe *Judges 13:5* may well be taken as the very Scripture *Matthew 2:23* refers to, as the *Nazarene – Holy unto GOD* – is most applicable to *Christ Jesus*. Was it *spoken by Prophets*? Yes, it was, as well as all the *Holy Scriptures* were.

See *2Corinthians 6:14-18* and chapters 330 & 523 for the subject of Holiness.

By *Robinson's A Theological, Biblical and Ecclesiastical Dictionary,*

> *... The name of Nazarenes, at first, had nothing odious in it, and it was often given to the first Christians. ... These Nazarenes preserved this first Gospel in its primitive Purity. ... They were very zealous observers of the Law of Moses, but held the traditions of the Pharisees in the greatest contempt. The word Nazarene was given to Jesus Christ and His Disciples ; and it is commonly taken in a sense of derision and contempt in such authors as have written against Christianity.*

Further references: *Numbers 6:1-21* (the Law of *Nazarites*)
& Amos 3:8 (defining a *Prophecy*).

Q: How has God revealed Himself to humanity throughout history?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: Down through history, our Heavenly Father reveals Himself by its course. Since LORD GOD does not contradict His Written Word, in the Holy Bible, we cannot find a single Verse that our human history can "prove" wrong. Take, for example, *Hosea 10:13* or *Galatians 6:7.*

Q: (1) Is it possible to remain in sin and never come to know that it was a sin?
Q: (2) Would God hold you accountable?
Q: (3) Would it be as damaging in your relationship with God as a willful sin?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Edited. Condensed.)

A: (1) Negative on that. Created in the Image & likeness of GOD, every (mentally healthy) human has the *conscience* to convince him (her) of sin.
(2) Therefore, GOD *would* judge a sinner accordingly.
(3) Yes, it would. Christians should note *Hebrews 6:4-6 & 10:26-29.*

Q: What would it take for you to lose your Faith?.
– A simple question, but one that I think is quite important.
(Signed: Atheist, Nihilist.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021.)

A: Nothing would.

... whoever is united with the Lord is One with Him in spirit.
(1Corinthians 6:17, New International Version)

266

Q: (1) Where is the *Justice* in punishing us for *Adam's* sin? The Bible says that children won't be punished for their parents' sins (*Deuteronomy 24:16*).
Q: (2) If GOD created Adam *not knowing either Good or evil* (*Genesis 3:22*), how could such a harsh and enduring Punishment as *death* for Adam and all his descendants possibly be *justified*?
Q: Our *secular courts* are more just than *GOD* when they show mercy to people who cannot distinguish between right and wrong, such as children and the mentally handicapped. (Don't they?)
Q: (3) And why isn't this *doctrine of original sin* found anywhere in the *Bible* except in *Paul's Writings*?
Q: (4) Why didn't *Jesus* ever mention it or teach it?

(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php*, October 19, 2017.)

A: (1) What *Deuteronomy 24:16* stated is the LORD's Command to us, *our courts of law* in particular. It could be great for them to follow His Word. Kindly read chapter 64 and see GOD's Punishment as *our self-punishment*. GOD's Perfect Justice is in His Credentials given in *Exodus 34:6-7*.

(2) What *Adam* (or rather, a *Man* or *human*, as everyone one of us could stumble) had sown was *disobedience*. Read *Genesis 2:16-17* – a *Man* was warned.
Our LORD GOD *did not* create Adam "not knowing either Good or evil".
Adam *knew* (and his every descendant does ever since) quite enough.
What, *Genesis 1:26-27* got omitted? ... *in the Image of GOD created He him* ...
And note: *Genesis 3:22*, which you mentioned, is nothing but *GOD's Sarcasm*.

Regarding "justification", kindly read *Romans 3:4.*

As for "our secular courts are more just than GOD", let us cut generalities, okay? For some reason, it is a matter of the *personal integrity* of Judges. Please read this true story –

Christopher Berry-Dee & Robin Odell, "Dad, Help Me Please"
(The story of Derek Bentley hanged for a murder he did not commit).

(3) We may recall the Fundamental *Harvest Law* of the LORD our GOD established over all His Creation. *Genesis 8:22 & Galatians 6:7.* Chapter 503.

(3-4) "And why isn't this doctrine of original sin found anywhere in the Bible except in Paul's Writings? Why didn't Jesus ever mention it or teach it?"

To answer these questions, I dare to cut a long list of Scriptures where our *original sin* is mentioned or implied, especially in the *Mission of Christ*.
In the Index, see *GOD's Image & Likeness, Harvest, Jesus / Ministry, sin,* etc.

For *our sinfulness,* notwithstanding the *Image & Likeness of GOD* in us (as per *Genesis 1:26-27*), is nothing but *our evil answer* to GOD's Blessing of *Free will*.

> Hardly there is a Book in the Holy Bible where *our evil doings* are not mentioned. That *sinfulness,* most obviously, had its beginning, even in the *disobedience* of Man. It is inherited, okay, but the *Image & Likeness of GOD* is there in ourselves, nevertheless. Kindly see chapters 412 & 510.

Q: How do you process the thousands of non-Christian faiths whose followers feel and communicate with their (unique) non-Christian God just as you do?. I'm not speaking of those people of faith who feel a general supernatural presence working in their life. I'm speaking of non-Christians whose God is working in their lives and is just as they think He is.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* May 2020. Edited.)

A: I can answer or process your question & argument only by the Written Word of GOD. Read *Isaiah 42:8, 43:10, & 44:6; 1Timothy 2:5; & Revelation 1:8.* It is totally up to the above-mentioned "followers of non-Christian faiths" and "people of faith who feel a general supernatural presence working in their life" what to believe. I beg to note *2Corinthians 4:4*.

Q: (1) Am I damned to hell for being a *non-christian*?.
I try to be a good person and think of myself as a decent human being. But I can't find Faith and bring myself to any religion, Christianity inclusive.
Q: (2) Would I be damned to eternal hell because of this?
Q: (3) And if not, what will happen to me when I die?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1) No. The *sinners* are damned so as per the Judgment of the LORD GOD. Kindly note, therefore, your standards may not correspond to His.
You cannot find Faith because you do not see Truth in the Word of GOD. Please try. Keep in mind this site: <*https://www.biblegateway.com*>.
(2) You would be damned for not *following* the Truth.
(3) There are two options only. See chapter 707 (The Life and afterlife).
Thank you.

267

Q: Why does the Gospel of *Matthew* attribute a quote about the *potter's field* to *Jeremiah*, when Jeremiah has no such passage, and the closest one in the Old Testament is *Zechariah* (cf., *Matthew 27:9-10 & Zechariah 11:12*)?
(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php*, October 2017)

A: Let us consider the Scriptures in question –

Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the Prophet, saying, And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of Him that was valued, Whom they of the children of Israel did value; and gave them for the potter's field, as the LORD appointed Me. (Matthew 27:9-10)

And I said unto them, If ye think good, give me my price; and if not, forbear. So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver. And the LORD said unto me, Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prised at of them. And I took the thirty pieces of silver, and cast them to the potter in the House of the LORD. (Zechariah 11:12-13)

Now, we may read the Teachers –

> *It is very likely that the Original reading was* [such, that] *the name of no Prophet mentioned. This is the more likely, as Matthew often omits the name of the Prophet in his quotations. See* [Matthew] *1:22; 2:5,15; 13:35; 21:4 ... It was an ancient custom among the Jews ... to divide the Old Testament into three parts, the first beginning with the Law was called the Law : the second beginning with the Psalms was called the Psalms : the third beginning with the Prophet in question was called Jeremiah : thus then the Writings of Zechariah, and the other Prophets being included in that division that began with Jeremiah, all quotations from it would go under the name of this Prophet. If this be admitted, it solves the difficulty at once ... (Adam Clarke, The New Testament ... Commentary ...)*
>
> *... the name of one Prophet is here substituted for that of another, to teach us not to regard the Prophets as the Authors of their Prophecies, but to trace them to Divine Inspiration.*
> *(Henry Alford, The New Testament for English Readers ... vol.1, p.202)*

The following Scripture well explains *the reason* for our discussion.

Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find;
knock, and it shall be opened unto you. (Matthew 7:7 & Luke 11:9)

The point is, *what* we seek, our daily Bread or an excuse to unbelief.

Q: Will you be happy in Heaven if you ever get there but your loved one(s) not? I would appreciate it if you explain your reasoning.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: Thank you for your good question. I guess "if" is the best word there. My answer is, Yes, I will. And the only *reason why* is, because there & then, I'll be with GOD, Whose I am and Whom I serve and love most. (We and) our loved ones – spouses, parents, brothers, sisters, friends, &c. – are the possible losses of Spirit War. And I am very sorry about that.

Q: If I were to, hypothetically, state that I was God, how could you prove me wrong?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: I could do it only Scripturally. Say, *Isaiah 44:6* or *1Timothy 2:5.* You pick. Or kindly take another approach – *Psalms 82:6* & *John 10:34.*

Q: How do you explain that *Genesis* states that the Sun and Moon were created after the Earth, continents, seas, and plants? *We* know for a fact this is false.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: I can ask you the same kind of question back and point out that you believe in a mere lie. As for the explanation, the Christian one stands on the Faith in LORD GOD, our Creator. The time will come for you to know the Truth.

Q: (1) How will Jesus' Second Coming look like?
Q: (2) What will convince you it was Him?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: The following Scripture may answer both questions (and convince *you* too):

Behold, He cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see Him,
and they also which pierced Him: and all kindreds of the Earth
shall wail because of Him. Even so, Amen. (Revelation 1:7)

268

Q: How could Adam and Eve ever have sinned if God had actually created them *Perfect*, even if they did have Free will?
Q: If God created them *imperfect*, how could a *Perfect* Omnipotent Being create anything *imperfect*?
(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php* October 19, 2017.)

A: We may consider some of the definitions of the word “perfect”.

... conforming absolutely to the description or definition of an ideal type;
excellent or complete beyond practical or theoretical improvement;
exactly fitting the need in a certain situation or for a certain purpose;
entirely without any flaws, defects, or shortcomings;
accurate, exact, or correct in every detail;
pure or unmixed ...
(*Webster’s Unabridged Dictionary of the English Language, 2001*)

It is a comprehensive definition, and it sits well with our question.
To call Adam & Eve *Perfect*, our *unbelieving* (& *ex-Christian*) friends would have explained *why* they have ever come to such a conclusion.

The LORD, our GOD, could & should be called *Perfect*, okay, but regarding His *Creation*, the first *people*, in particular, we have no other estimation other than *GOD’s Image & Likeness* (*Genesis 1:26-27*) and *Very Good* (*Genesis 1:31*).
Both these *high* qualities are yet indefinitely *less* than the Greatness & Perfection of Father GOD, our Creator.

Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the Everlasting GOD,
the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the Earth, fainteth not, neither is weary?
there is no searching of His Understanding. (Isaiah 40:28)

That’s why, speaking of Adam’s & Eve’s as well as *our Free will*, we ought to understand that it is as far from the *Free Will of the LORD* as our *Righteousness* from His. Please see the words of Brother *C. S. Lewis* in chapter 280.

GOD, our Heavenly Father, being Perfect *cannot* be evil, not even close. But we *can* be such and are (yet – by *Genesis 1:26,27* – not *must*). Why? Because the Creator is always Higher than His Creation.

Q: Is there a Scripture that explicitly supports the idea of Free Will?.
While things like God's Will and Prophecy seem to negate Free Will, the idea of agency seems to be implicit in the Bible as the idea of Salvation and Justice seems absurd without it (not choosing to accept Christ is a good example). I'm not able to recall any Verse that explicitly discusses this.
Q: Can you shed some light on this?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: A lot of Scriptures presume our Free will.
Starting from the beginning of the Bible, it is *Genesis 1:26, 2:17, 4:7, &c*.
Yet, none discussed the subject. We are free to discuss it or not, free to debate it or not, accept or reject, etc., according to GOD-given Free will.
GOD's Holy Will can't & doesn't contradict His Word, written or spoken in any way (the Free will subject inclusive).
You may refer to the Index section for the relevant chapters.

Q: Why does God hate pagans?.
Q: If someone leads a good life, why does it matter what Religion they follow?

(Signed: Pagan.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020.)

A: For better communication, we have to start with the definitions.

1. The LORD GOD is the only One we, Christians, believe in and trust.
The Holy Bible is His Written Word to humans to learn & follow.
(Kindly find the right Bible Editions. You may consider chapter 118.)

Our Father GOD hates *sin*, not sinners (those who deliberately ignore Him), and not pagans. GOD is Love (*1John 4:8,16*). He calls us for Repentance and tries to correct us. However, He respects our *Free will*.

2. *Pagans* are people who don't believe in the LORD, our GOD.
The reason for that unbelief is a matter of ignorance or choice.

3. *Good Life* is the one that does not contradict the Written Word of GOD.
Therefore, it is possible to be ignorant yet not sin against the LORD.

4. *Religion* (as opposed to atheism) is believing in any God as Supreme Being, Creator, and King. It does matter what Religion to follow because only the True one shows you the Right Way to follow. *John 14:6*.

269

Q: Why pray? If it changes GOD's Mind, then He is not Sovereign.
If it does not change His Mind, then it is superfluous.
(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php*, October 19, 2017.)

A: Before we proceed any further, one point should be made clear:
our Prayers (are to) follow the Holy Will of LORD GOD. *1John 5:14-15.*

As for *why* He wills so, the inquirers may go as far as unto Him (say, taking the LORD up on Wis Word per *Jeremiah 33:3*) and pass all consultants by.
Our Heavenly Father is not so far away, considering His Omnipresence.

As to myself, I have the Word –

Trust in the LORD with all thine heart;
and lean not unto thine own understanding. (Proverbs 3:5)

You may also see the Index section for Prayer.

Q: (1) Am I *crazy* for really hating how so many Christians say, "Oh, well, God allowed this bad thing to happen to a child to test their Faith."?.
(2) Does a God that has made bad things happen to test people's beliefs sound like the best God?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: (1) I would call it *wrong*, not "crazy". *Hatred* is not better than the supposed lack of Understanding of what is going on around.
You may kindly read chapter 58 (Knowledge, Understanding, Wisdom).
The LORD GOD does not allow bad things to happen – we, humans, do that. Please see the Index for *GOD's Punishmen*t and *Harvest Law*.
(2) Kindly note: there is not "a God" or "the best God". Instead, there is only One GOD, Eternal, Triune, Creator, the Love, the Lord of Heaven & Earth. And before Him, we all are to stand in the Day of Judgment.

I am the LORD: that is My Name: and My Glory will I not give to another, neither My Praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

I am the First, and I am the Last; and beside Me there is no God. (Isaiah 44:6)

270

Q: Why aren't Christians doing *Greater Works* than Jesus did, since He Himself said they would (*John 14:12*)?
Q: Why aren't they raising the dead, turning water into wine, healing the sick, feeding multitudes with a very little amount of food, casting out demons, walking on water?

(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php*, October 2017. Edited.)

A: As ex-Christians, you ought to remember what Christians are – *True Followers of Christ* – not everyone calling or thinking him (her) self so.

By "doing Greater Works", I understand our following the Great Commission as per *Matthew 28:19-20*. Why are those Works *greater* than the Miracles listed in the question? Well, beyond any doubt, so much more is the number of people who have already been saved by Father GOD during our 2,000 years of Spreading Good News of the Gospels throughout the World. Verily, it is by far outnumber those crowds of onlookers, which our Lord Jesus taught, healed, delivered, and, eventually, was sent to crucifixion by.
Note: "our" doing Miracles (the same as was done by the Man Christ Jesus) is done by *the LORD GOD* only, through His Servants. See *John 5:19-21*.
As for *why* not we, Christians, do it – how do unbelievers possibly know that? From what sources – worldly newspapers, the Internet, one another? Even when unbelievers do hear about Miracles, they do not believe it.

Once upon a time, I read about one unforgettable Miraculous Healing in Morris Cerullo World Evangelism newspaper and told that to my mother. She did not believe it and said to me that, had it been so, the case would have been reported by *all media* of the world. What could I say to that? Only that the world had never been *interested* in anything of the sort. (That was the time shortly after the scandal of President Bill Clinton and his filthy secretary had happened.) So, I had to point out that *that* was what the world ever wanted from all its media, and the more dirt – the more credit.

I was so Blessed to witness half of those *Miracles* named above, done by Father GOD thorough ourselves and even more *Works of His*, which are not mentioned.

They say the second to our Holy Bible is the *Book of Martyrs*.
Indeed, there we can read about True *Miracles o' Faith*.

Q: *Mark 16:17-18* says that certain Signs will follow Believers.
So, if a Christian gets bitten by a snake, and doesn't get well, does that mean that he (she) is not a True Believer?
Q: Is the same true if a Christian lays hands on the sick, yet they do not heal?
(Signed: *Agnostic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020.*)*

A: My answers are negative on both questions.

That Scripture – *Mark 16:17-18* – means that the Signs shall follow our Christian Faith. And they do. I witnessed how Father GOD worked some of these and many other Miracles through Christians, including myself.

Your questions are directed against Believers, who do not get the Answers to their Prayers quickly enough. Or the Holy Will of GOD might be contrary to their Petitions. Or both. Kindly note that Healing requires Faith from the Intercessor *and* the sick person. We should not *take up serpents* to make a show but only save a Life. And we do it, mostly, metaphorically. See, for instance, my words "snake-like questions" in chapters 263 & 659.

Q: Why did God reveal Himself to a tiny tribe in a small section of desert in the Middle East but not the entire World?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: GOD reveals Himself to all the World. Please read *Romans 1:18-21*.
As to those you called "a tiny tribe", the Holy Purpose of the LORD was different, even to make them Chosen People. That is clear from the Old Covenant Books, e.g., *Isaiah 43:1*. Israel broke that Covenant.

Q: If God is Almighty, then how come He even needed to battle Satan?
That implies that God struggled, even just a little bit.
Q: In Christianity, God is All-Powerful. If that is the case, He should have been Able to banish Satan in an instance. Yet He didn't. Why?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Please see chapter 3 (Satan) for my answer to a similar question.
LORD GOD *is* Almighty. He doesn't need to battle ("even just a little bit") the evil one, who has *no* power *nor* authority. Kindly refer to chapter 36.
GOD is not *in* Christianity. Christianity is of Christ and the Christ of GOD.
As for banishing Satan, it is done. We are to finish it up in our *minds*.

271

Q: Why doesn't *Prayer* work when the *Bible* promises that it will (*John 14:14*, for example)?

(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php*, October 2017.)

A: It seems that our friends have got some *experience* in *Prayers*. Otherwise, where is the question from? Anyway, the Scripture says,

> *12 Verily, Verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me, the Works that I do shall he do also; and Greater Works than these shall he do; because I go unto My Father. 13 And whatsoever ye shall ask in My Name, that will I do, that the Father may be Glorified in the Son. 14 If ye shall ask any thing in My Name, I will do it. (John 14:12-14)*

Those who call themselves "*ex-Christians*" have to ask that question, speaking about themselves only. Here, I have got only two options. The first is to believe my Father GOD, and the second is to believe *ex-Christians*. I prefer to stand upon my *Christian Testimony* – the most Precious part of *any* life experience.

In the above Scripture, *Verse 12*, mind the Words, *he that believeth on Me*.
Is it about *unbelievers* or *ex-Christians*? – Probably, neither.
In *Verses 13 & 14*, there is the expression, *in My Name*.
Can one ask the LORD something in the Name he (or she) has *no* Faith in and expect the Answer? Or can an unbeliever *forgive* and *help* anybody who even didn't ask him (or her) to, but rather hate, disdain, scorn, etc.?
Of a Truth, it is written,

And the Light shineth in darkness;
and the darkness comprehended it not. (John 1:5)

Q: What do you believe Prayer accomplishes?.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: Teaching us to pray, Lord Jesus said,

Thy Will be done ... (Matthew 6:10)

These Words He repeated in *Matthew 26:42*.
That's what Christians are supposed to pray for.

Now, let me answer all your posted questions one by one.

Q: Plenty of studies have shown that there is no statistically significant effect of Prayer on the recovery rates of patients.
I can provide sources if you like, but I'm sure most of you are aware of this. Christians don't have invisible Prayer Armor on and die just as easily as anyone else. So, what is the function of Prayer in this case, then?

A: Regarding the studies you refer to, I don't believe them. Not because you or your sources intentionally lie. The reason is we can not comprehend GOD. As for our Prayer Armor – those who keep it have it – visible to others or not. The function of Prayer is Submission to GOD, whatever His Answer be.

Q: Is it an attempt to get the sick person, or yourself, into a cognitive state?
Q: Are you trying to soothe your mind?
Q: Or to soothe the mind of the sick by telling them you are praying for them?
Q: Are you begging God to change His Mind and make a sick person healthy?
Q: Are you asking God why He chose to make the person sick?
Q: Are you worried God might think poorly of you if you didn't pray for sick?
Q: Is this an opportunity to demonstrate your Faith to God or yourself?

A: Negative on all that. We surrender our will to the Holy Will of GOD.

Q: Why would you pray for the same thing again & again?
Q: Why to ask other people also to pray?
Q: Is the effect cumulative if Christians pray for the same thing?

A: We cannot affect the Will of GOD. But, per His Eleventh Commandment, we are One, and should, therefore, back up one another in Fast & Prayer.

Q: Do you ever pray instead of doing something else?
Q: Say, rather than visiting the sick, do you pray for them as a substitute?

A: Our Prayer cannot be substituted by Works. And vice versa.
See the Index section for references. Thank you.

Q: What is your personal relationship with God like?
Q: Can you guys please explain it if you can?
Q: Can you just ask God a question, and He will answer or something?
Q: Or do you have to concentrate or what?

(Signed: *Agnostic, Ex-Protestant*..
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, March 2020.)

A: Kindly concentrate on *Jeremiah 33:3*, which alone can answer all that. And *Matthew 18:20* & *John 15:14* well explain our Christian Communion.

Q: If your child tells you he (she) is an atheist or agnostic, would you force him (her) to go to Church?
Q: Even if the said person feels uncomfortable?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: That's hardly possible. But hypothetically, if you please, the statement might mean the influence of the world proved stronger than home education. And that would require my Confession and good Backup from the Church.

Q: Why would God want to rely on humans to deliver His Message to other humans, regardless of our erroneous nature seen in manipulating the words?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Edited.)

A: GOD wouldn't do it. Our Father GOD delivers His Word by the *Holy Ghost* through His Servants. E.g., *1Samuel 10:6-7, John 14:10, & Luke 12:11-12*.

Q: Is casual saying "thank God" considered using His Name in vain?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Edited.)

A: That depends on what one calls "casual" and how GOD or His Holy Name is mentioned. Considering, for example, the *way* you wrote "God" and "His Name" (before my correction), it is in vain and vulgar.
Please note our grammar Rules in the Introduction article.

On the other hand, the sincere Thanksgiving is well-pleasing to the LORD.

... for out of abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh. (Matthew 12:34)

Q: Let's say your friends wanted to get an abortion, but they weren't religious. They do not believe life begins at conception. If you truly believe that abortion is murder, then wouldn't you want to stop a murder?
Q: What would you say?
(Signed: *Not a Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: I would only pray for GOD's Rod of Correction upon those "friends".

272

Q: Why would Loving, Omnipotent, Benevolent GOD cause people to believe falsehoods so that He can condemn them? See *2Thessalonians 2:11-12*.
(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php,* October 2017. Edited.)

A: The short answer to the question can be found in half a Verse up –
because they received not the Love of the Truth, that they might be saved.
We can also consider the full relevant context.

7 For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. 8 And then shall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the Spirit of His Mouth, and shall destroy with the Brightness of His Coming: 9 Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders,
10 And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the Love of the Truth, that they might be saved.
11 And for this cause GOD shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: 12 That they all might be damned who believed not the Truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. (2Thessalonians 2:7-12)

To understand the Written Word of GOD deeper than what is seen on the surface, we, Christians, study the Holy Bible. That Study involves much more than just reading. Speaking with unbelievers, I do my best to answer their questions Scripturally. That means to stand on the right Scripture or Scriptures.
That's why I advise you to consider *Romans 1:18-32*, which is well parallel to *2Thessalonians 2:7-12*. For the sake of brevity, I can not quote it here.
You may read chapter 64 about GOD's Punishment, applicable to your question.

I beg to note your question carries the *blasphemy* against the Holy Ghost. Mind *Matthew 12:31*, if you please.

Q: Why would God punish me for not believing in Him when that is based on the rational assessment that there is a lack of evidence for God?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: So, what to worry about? The unbelief is "based on the rational assessment". The "lack of evidence" seems to continue until the End of the World.
Until then, take care.

273

Q: Which Ten Commandments are *the* Ten Commandments – the ones listed in *Exodus 20* and *Deuteronomy 5*, or those listed in *Exodus 34*? Only the list in *Exodus 34* is explicitly called the Ten Commandments in the Bible.
(*http://articles.exchristian.net/2003/03/10-questions-for-christians.php,* October 2017.)

A: The Ten Commandments are written in *Exodus 20:2-17* and confirmed in *Deuteronomy 5:6-21*. Because *Deuteronomy* means "the Second Law" or "the Repetition of the Law". By the way, *Exodus 34:1,28* affirms the above-named *Exodus 20:2-17* too.

And the LORD said unto Moses, Hew thee two tables of stone like unto the first: and I will write upon these tables the Words that were in the first tables, which thou brakest ... And he was there with the LORD forty days and forty nights; he did neither eat bread, nor drink water. And he wrote upon the tables the Words of the Covenant, the Ten Commandments. (Exodus 34:1,28)

Exodus 34:10-28 teaches us some ways the People of GOD – Christians – are supposed to follow that part of the Law of GOD, which was on the First Table. Thus, we should serve Him by our Sacrificial Giving. The Animal Sacrifices were forever revoked by the Ultimate & Substitutional Sacrifice of Christ Jesus. Nevertheless, the *spiritual* meaning of *Exodus 34*, whether before or after being amended by the *New Testament*, is the same. Even as the LORD, our GOD, stays unchangeable, as *Malachi 3:6* states.
Observing the Feasts of the LORD, serving Him as full-time Ministers, the total prohibition of idolatry – all that is also commanded by *Exodus 34*.

These concluding Words of *Exodus 34* are of the utmost importance:

... And He wrote upon the tables the Words of the Covenant, the Ten Commandments. (Exodus 34:28)

The Ten Commandments are our Covenant with GOD and Eternal Law.

Q: (1) Are there Prophecies in the Bible that came true?
(2) What are some examples of those Prophecies?
(3) Do you think Prophecies prove the validity of the Bible?
Many thanks.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) It is easier to say which of the Prophecies have not (yet) come true.
And, regarding all humanity or any personal Life, they are about the future.
All the Holy Bible, even speaking about past events, teaches us on the matters at hand. See *Ecclesiastes 1:9*.
The Written Word of GOD, the Bible, is Truth, Teaching, and Prophecy.
(2) The examples you can find studying the Scriptures.
For instance, *Genesis 1:26,28* stated our *Spiritual Authority* over the Earth.
Or else, *Genesis 2:24* Divinely established *Family*.
See our Index section for both.
(3) The Prophecies are not the only proof of the validity of the Bible.
Thank you for your question.

Q: How do you reconcile the Bible with the fact of evolution?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: I don't even try to reconcile the Truth of the Holy Bible with the full of holes theory of evolution.

All things were made by Him;
and without Him was not any thing made that was made. In Him was Life;
and the Life was the Light of men. And the Light shineth in darkness;
and the darkness comprehended it not. (John 1:3-5)

Q: How was Mary born without original sin?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: Says who? She was Chosen but not sinless.

... for all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of GOD ...
(Romans 3:21-23)

Q: What's up with God's scorched earth policy in, say, *Isaiah 6:11*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: You better ask, What's up with human scorched earth policy?

The Heaven, even the Heavens, are the LORD's:
but the Earth hath he given to the children of men. (Psalms 115:16)

See chapters: 312 (Our spiritual Authority) & 313 (Irrevocable Authority).

274

Q: Does it make sense to claim, as the Bible does, that wrongdoing can be forgiven by magically transferring the blame from a guilty person to an innocent one, then punishing the innocent person?
(*https://atheistforums.org/thread-106.html*, October 2017.)

A: Step by step.
"Does it make sense to claim, as the Bible does ..." No, it does not.

It is the only possible answer to every question of an atheist to a Christian involving any heathen "sense" in our Bible.
How so? The *atheistic sense* (a.k.a., common sense, reason, rules of this world, the wisdom of the world, &c.,) and the *Christian sense* (a.k.a., Knowledge, Understanding, Wisdom) are very different. That difference stems from *atheistic faith* in science & evolution vs *Christian Faith* in LORD GOD & Creation.

A "wrongdoing". Here we again may differ in definitions. The wrongdoing seen by atheists may vary from one legislation to another and from person to person. Christians understand it as every deed contradicting the Written Word of GOD, period. I can answer according to the last definition only.
So, can those wrongdoings be forgiven? Yes, they can. Jesus Christ died for that. However, forgiven by GOD, the wrongdoers are to be tried by the respective Courts of Justice in some cases. Kindly refer to chapters 46 & 506.

"Magically". I beg to use another term – *by the Holy Will of GOD*.
Presuming that the rest of your question is all about the Cross of Christ, let me note that it was discussed in chapter 4 (The Cross).

Q: Why did GOD promise Supernatural Power to Believers, like drinking poison and all that? We don't see Believers with Superpowers around.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: That Power (*Mark 16:18 & Luke 10:19*) was Promised & *given* us by the Holy Will of LORD GOD and has spiritual & physical implications.
The spiritual part is manifested through the natural one, and the second must follow the first. Any "show" or "exhibition" ought to be avoided by us.
Thus I understand the matter and experience it. Not seeing the proof might be caused by unbelief, prejudice, laziness, etc.
Thank you.

275

Q: Why do *Christians* still believe in the imminent *End of the World* when the *New Testament* states clearly that the *Apocalypse* was supposed to happen 2,000 years ago, during the lifetime of Jesus' contemporaries?
(*https://atheistforums.org/thread-106.html*, October 2017.)

A: It is hard to answer. The questioner(s) should have indicated the Scripture instead of "the New Testament" to look more competent.
So, we have to guess what was on the mind of our friend(s).
If it were *this generation*, spoken by Lord Jesus in –
Matthew 12:41,42; 23:36; & 24:34; Mark 13:30; Luke 11:31,32; & 21:32 –
then, certainly, He predicted the Punishment of *the Jewish nation* coming, not the Apocalypse, or the End of the World, or suchlike.
Brother John Calvin correctly observed –

> *... within fifty years the city was destroyed and the Temple was razed, the whole country was reduced to a hideous desert, and the obstinacy of the world rose up against GOD ...*
>
> *(Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists, Matthew, Mark, and Luke, vol.3, p.151)*

If, however, they meant *the End* written in *Matthew 24:14*, then let them mind the things commanded to come first.

And this Gospel of the Kingdom shall be preached in all the World for a Witness unto all nations; and then shall the End come. (Matthew 24:14)

Further references: *Isaiah 24:21, 26:19-21, 34:2-4, 51:6; & Jeremiah 46:28* –
The End promised.
1Thessalonians 5:2, 2Peter 3:10, & Revelation 6:12-17 –
The Judgment Day.

Q: Does being crucified count as a Sacrifice if you wake up three days later?
Q: Especially when you know that you're not going into any form of non-existence or actual death?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: I think it does. Especially when, regardless of your belief in "waking up", you experience what Lord Jesus did. See chapter 520 (The Ultimate Price).

276

Q: *Why* does the Bible routinely depict God as manifesting Himself in dramatic, unmistakable Ways and performing Miracles even before the eyes of nonbelievers, when no such thing happens in the world today?
(*https://atheistforums.org/thread-106.html,* October 2017. Edited.)

A: Why our Bible says this or that, every human being has a right to ask GOD. Kindly see *Jeremiah 33:3* & *1Timothy 2:5*.

Here, I dare to define a *Miracle* as any event that worldly reason and atheistic science can not explain away. We touched on the subject in chapter 270 when discussed our Christian Works. The claim "no such thing happens in the world today" was considered and declined there too.
But how do the *Holy Scriptures* answer your question?

Then he said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. Abraham saith unto him, They have Moses and the Prophets; let them hear them. And he said, Nay, father Abraham: but if one went unto them from the dead, they will repent. And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the Prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. (Luke 16:27-31)

Speaking of Miracles, we can turn this question around and ask it ourselves, even *why* they don't happen. You can find a good analogy in chapter 1 (Evil).

It is written,

The Heaven, even the Heavens, are the LORD's: but the Earth hath He given to the children of men. (Psalms 115:16)

It is also said,

... as ye would that men should do to you, do ye also to them likewise. (Luke 6:31)

Try your best to follow *Luke 6:31* and watch patiently how one after another, Miracles will start to happen around you.

... for He is Faithful that promised ... (Hebrews 10:23)

Q: If your child tells you that he (she) is gay or lesbian, would you disown him (her) or put in conversion therapy?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Edited.)

A: As your question has no place in my life, I can answer hypothetically only. That statement might mean the devil's influence proves stronger than our Christian Education or the curses inherited have not yet been broken, or both. So, I'd start from Prayer, Confession, and backup of the Church.

Q: Since the laws of science don't seem to stop working, it's difficult for me to believe in miracles & supernatural. Is the supernatural happening in front of me, and I'm just unable to recognize it as such, or am I supposed to force myself to believe in the supernatural without evidence?
(Signed: *Ignostic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: The laws of science are written down by scientists. As science develops, its laws become more truthful and thus more correspond to reality. The latter, meaning all existing things and their relations, was created by the LORD. Therefore, hopefully, the development of science moves scientists to GOD. Supernatural (paranormal) does not exist. Please, see chapter 324.
And, what to believe in is entirely up to you. Thank you for your question.

Q: Why does God send plagues to punish people for the sin of their King?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: If you mean King David, please see chapter 113 (The census).
Generally, GOD said,

They have set up Kings, but not by Me:
they have made Princes, and I knew it not: of their silver and their gold
have they made them idols, that they may be cut off. (Hosea 8:4)

Please see chapter 21 (Voting) for more. Thank you.

Q: Christians, are you ever worried that if you have a kid that does not accept Christianity, then Jesus will torture your kid forever?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Do you mean *Revelation 14:10-11*? We should be afraid of a *metaphor* but a self-torture. Kindly see chapters 8 (Hell) & 78 (The Rod of Correction).

277

Q: Why do Christians believe in a *soul* when neurology has found clear evidence that the sense of identity and personality can be altered by physical changes to the brain?
(*https://atheistforums.org/thread-106.html*, October 2017.)

A: Well, having neither much knowledge in *neurology* nor in any research thereof, I have to accept the above statement, namely, from the word "neurology" to the word "brain". Okay, it is a matter of fact. So what?

No disrespect, but I don't see any logical connection between the first and the second parts of the question ("Why – soul" & "neurology – brain").

The physical changes to the brain can be inflicted by some incident or a brutal force and, consequently, "the sense of identity and personality" may get suspended until *Judgment Day*. It is not a matter of great insight.

But why "to the brain"? A person may suffer such other *physical* pains or injuries resulting in heavy *depression*, the last leading him (her) to whatever *mental* disorders.

And why "*physical* changes"? Seeing the sufferings of others (people, animals, whatever) may also affect the *mental* state of human beings.

Sorry, unbelieving folks, your question is like, "Why do Christians believe in Angels when aircraft pilots have seen nothing of the sort out there?"

Q: (1) Do people who sin in order to survive may go to Heaven?.
Q: (2) If I steal a loaf of bread to feed my family, will I go to Heaven?
(Signed: *Agnostic, Ex-Catholic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021.)

A: (1) Sins differ from one another. What leads people to hell & eternal death is a *sinful attitude*. The latter is intentional sinning and refusal of Repentance.
(2) Stealing is a sin against the Eighth Commandment of the LORD GOD.
Repentance – the attitude holding out against sin – and Confession open the *Way* to Heaven (meaning Eternal Life in the Kingdom of GOD).
No motive to follow Satan instead of Father COD can excuse any sin.
You may find more in the Index.

278

Q: If it was always GOD's Plan to provide Salvation through Jesus, why didn't He send Jesus from the very Beginning, instead of confusing and misleading generations of people by setting up a religion called Judaism, which He knew in advance would prove to be inadequate?
(*https://atheistforums.org/thread-106.html*, October 2017. Edited.)

A: Concerning "always", "Salvation", and "Beginning", it is written:

And GOD saw every thing that He had made,
and, behold, it was Very Good ... (Genesis 1:31)

That was in the *Beginning*, at least as people are concerned. The Beginning was *Perfect* in the Eyes of LORD GOD, our Creator. And, once it was Perfect, the *Salvation* (from what *evil*?) there & then was, obviously, out of the question. For the same reason, "always" is also the wrong word.
Besides,

There is no wisdom nor understanding nor counsel
against the LORD. (Proverbs 21:30)

The "GOD's Plan to provide Salvation through Jesus" comes around much later. Kindly note *John 3:16-17.*

Very few of us were Faithful to our Father GOD. Most humans had taken the way of *sin* and followed the devil. See *Job 24:13.*
That was when our Heavenly Father entered into a Covenant with us, represented at that time by His People Israel. Please read *Exodus 19:5-6.*
That Covenant was repeatedly violated, and the Truth of the LORD was diluted & distorted by what unbelievers call "religion" and "Judaism". See *Jeremiah 8:8.*
Eventually, the New Covenant was promised. See *Jeremiah 31:31-33.*

Eternal GOD, Whom we serve, and Whose we, Christians, are, Almighty Creator of everything is forever above His Creation, Time inclusive. See *John 1:3*.
The Holy LORD, our GOD, could & did foresee our evil ways (see, for example, *Deuteronomy 31:16*) but had *never* planned anything "confusing and misleading generations of people". See *Psalms 33:11*.
And, to your information, He is Holy, as it is stated in *Leviticus 11:45*.
That's why I beg to note the question is *blasphemous* instead of being just conversational. Read *Matthew 12:31*, if you please.

Q: (1) My question is about the destruction of Korah, *Numbers Chapter 16*.
It details how Korah led a heretical uprising against Moses due to the latter being the only one allowed to commune with God. Korah believed that everyone should have that right. (?)

Q: (2) The idea of a personal relationship with God is one of the core tenets of Christianity. The same is the concept of God unchanging and not lying.
Yet, previously He killed hundreds of people for believing they could have a close relationship with Him. And when people complained about that, the LORD sent a plague that killed thousands of them. (?)

Q: (3) How do you consolidate *Numbers Chapter16* with your Belief in GOD?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) You are right – the uprise was *heretical*, as it promoted schism & split in the Congregation of GOD's People. However, what Korah believed is clear from *Verses 9-11*, even in the leadership ignoring the Holy Will of GOD. Moses' Communion with GOD did not cut others off Him. See chapter 32.
(2) The first two phrases are correct, but the rest of the paragraph is not.
I can only guess what is on your mind. Would you please point out the Scriptures that led you to such a conclusion?
However, if those people sought GOD the same way as Korah, even to have a "convenient God", the LORD was Right to punish them.
(3) My Faith in the LORD GOD and His Justice grows stronger.

Q: (1) Why does God force suicidal people to live?

Q: (2) Why does He put us through this pain every day and then punish us even further if we take our lives?

Q: (3) Does He have no Mercy?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: (1) In a way, He does. Why? To fight for Life Eternal. See *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
(2) He is not the source of pain. We, humans, are. See *Galatians 6:7*.
(3) Yes, He has. And He shows it even more, than we deserve. *John 3:16-17*.

Q: (1) What happens if I go to Mass and Eucharist on purpose?

Q: (2) Will I get excommunicated?

(Signed: *Agnostic, Ex-Catholic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021.)

A: (1) What's a purpose? Please read *1Corinthians 11:27-30* and suit yourself.
(2) No, you cannot get *excommunicated* from where you are not a Member.

279

Q: Since the Bible states that God does not desire that anyone perish, as well as that the majority of humankind is going to *hell*, doesn't this show that God's Plan of Salvation is a *failure*, even by His Standard?
Q: If this outcome is a success, what would count as a failure?
(*https://atheistforums.org/thread-106.html*, November 2017. Edited.)

A: It is well written:

... Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures,
nor the Power of GOD. (Matthew 22:29, Mark 12:24)

As the atheists noticed, "the Bible states that GOD does not desire that anyone perish ..." – *Ezekiel 33:11, Matthew 18:14, 2Peter 3:9*, etc., indeed said so. Hopefully, in time, they might understand that those Scriptures are *Conditional*.
It is correct that, as the inquirers said, "the majority of humankind is going to hell". See *Galatians 6:7* and chapter 247 (The Narrow Way to Strait Gate).
So what? Is it the reason for their *blasphemy*? GOD forbid. Note *2Peter 2:12*.
And, speaking of "success" and "failure",

I say unto you, that likewise Joy shall be in Heaven over one sinner
that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine Just persons,
which need no Repentance. (Luke 15:7)

Q: I'm a former Christian, now a non-believer. What changed my mind was science (NASA, the Big Bang, Evolution, etc.) How do religious beliefs see some of the World's greatest disasters and losses of lives, e.g., 9/11?
Q: What are your thoughts on all the topics I've mentioned?
Q: What has the Bible on that?
Q: And do you think with more information being found out about our Universe and biology, you could change your mind about Christianity if science proposes something big?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: Your topics are dealt with in chapters stated in the Index. Kindly look it up for *Big Bang*, *Evolution*, *Science*, etc. As for what caused our disasters & losses, see the reasons in the military science, not Christianity.
What has the Bible on that? Kindly see "Q & A" chapters 312 & 313.
To change my mind? Negative on that. What you call "information" and "something big", I call a *lie*.

Q: Why do some Christians call out other people for “using the LORD’s Name in vain”?. I’ve had at least three situations where I said, “Oh, my God”, or “Jesus”, and someone told me not to “use the LORD’s Name in vain”.
As *a lifelong atheist*, I would like to understand why they do that.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Edited.)

A: I would not call it a violation of the Third Commandment of GOD’s Law.
Kindly read chapter 22 (The Third Commandment) of this book.
As for how (in this Forum) some Believers reacted to your words, they should have better briefly explained their point. Possibly, they didn’t like to hear what they hold Holy from “a lifelong atheist”.

Q: (1) If people are going to do whatever they feel like, what’s the point of praying to God help you overcome a situation?
Q: (2) Doesn’t that mean that He can’t directly influence something to happen in your favor?
Q: (3) I guess the same could be said for asking God to heal you. (?)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: (1) The reason why “people are going to do whatever they feel like” is GOD-given Free will. Kindly see the Index for the relevant chapters.
The point of *my* Prayer is *Thy Will be done*, as per *Mathew 6:10*.
Another point is Communion with GOD and hearing from Him.
Following His Will, we get the Answer to our Prayer. See *1John 5:14*.
(2) Negative on that. GOD is Love. His Counsels come over even before our Prayers, and His every Answer works for our Good. But will *we* obey Him?
(3) Speaking of (physical) healing, the question is: what for? For people to remain unbelievers and “do whatever they feel like”?
Thank you. In our Reference section, you may find more.

Q: (1) Can you reliably identify a *false belief?*.
Q: (2) Do you have a process for determining whether a belief is false?
Q: (3) Can you describe how you would go about doing this and allow me to test beliefs that you think are true or false to see if the process is reliable?
(Signed: *Agnostic Atheist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1) It is every belief that contradicts the Written Word of GOD.
(2) If you mean a *procedure*, it is simple. Kindly read chapters 1 & 5.
(3) I would ask: do *you* believe (or is that belief) in our LORD GOD?

280

Q: (1) Why didn't God create human beings such that they freely desire to do Good, thus removing the need to create hell at all?
Q: (2) If this is impossible, isn't this the state that will exist in Heaven?
(*https://atheistforums.org/thread-106.html*, November 2017. Edited.)

A: Like I tried to explain to our unbelieving inquirers in chapters 269 & 276, you have a right to a *personal* approach to GOD with that sort of question. Kindly use a "search window" to see how often I mentioned *Jeremiah 33:3* in this book. But once you prefer to ask, I can answer *Scripturally* (i.e., led by the Holy Ghost to the appropriate Scripture or Scriptures) and add up thereto my interpretation based on limited (yet better than that of the heathen) Knowledge & Understanding. See *Isaiah 43:10.* Besides, our LORD GOD & His Great Creation is incomprehensible to human beings.

(1) To your question, the answer is *Genesis 1:26-27*. Kindly read.
GOD did "create human beings such that they could freely desire to do Good."

> *GOD created things which had Free will. That means creatures which can go either wrong or Right. Some people think they can imagine a creature which was Free but had no possibility of going wrong; I cannot. If a thing is Free to be Good it is also free to be bad. And Free will is what has made evil possible. Why, then, did GOD give them Free will? Because Free will, though it makes evil possible, is also the only thing that makes possible any Love or Goodness or Joy worth having ...*
>
> *(C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, pp 47-48)*

Regarding *hell*, kindly read chapter 8. Please also note the LORD's Estimation of His Creation:

And GOD saw every thing that He had made,
and, behold, it was Very Good ... (Genesis 1:31)

(2) There is nothing *impossible* to GOD except *contradiction* to His Written Word. It is written:

... Thou hast made the Heaven and the Earth
by Thy Great Power and stretched out Arm,
and there is nothing too hard for Thee ... (Jeremiah 32:17)

Regarding the Kingdom of Heaven, please, have a look at "Q & A" chapter 153.

Q: Does *Romans 2:14-16* not indicate that God made us moral robots?.
By my definition, a "moral robot" is an autonomous construct that has had its morality programmed into it. It merely follows a code not making choices.

(Signed: *Atheist, Ex-Christian.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: *Romans 2:14-16* is about the *Gentiles*, who had or have never heard about the Law of GOD. However, GOD's Image & Likeness were not lost by their conscience. They can follow the LORD without the Word or Gospel heard. However, neither *GOD's Image & Likeness* nor our *Free will* agrees with your definition of and suggestion regarding "moral robots".

Q: (1) What is an Angel?
Q: (2) What is a demon?
Q: (3) Have either demonstrably interacted with you or influenced your life?

(Signed: *Agnostic, Theist.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1) Angels are Ministering Spirits of GOD and Christians' Fellow-Servants. Please read *Hebrews 1:7,14 & Revelation 19:10; 22:9.*
(2) Demons are fallen angels who were lied by Satan into confronting the LORD, their GOD. Please see *Jude 1:6.*
(3) Yes, they both have had that. Both (Angels and demons) interact with *every* human life. But only demons try to influence us, and that is to the worst. Please see our Index section for references.

Q: How do you explain "the memories of past lives" that some children seem to have?

(Signed: *Atheist.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: It is but the evil work of the devil on human minds, the same as a "deja vu" stupid stuff. (See the Index – Mind, Satan, etc. – for relevant chapters.)

... his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practice, and shall destroy the mighty and the Holy People. And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand; and he shall magnify himself in his heart, and by peace shall destroy many ... (Daniel 8:24-25)

281

Q: Is it fair or rational for God to *hide* Himself so that He can *only* be known by Faith, then *insist* that every single human being find Him by *picking* the Right one out of thousands of conflicting and incompatible *religions*?
(*https://atheistforums.org/thread-106.html*, November 2017.)

A: Aye, it is *fair*. For so *John 3:16-17* said.
Aye, it is *rational*. Mind *Isaiah 55:8.*

The “to hide” is the expression wrong & ignorant. Kindly read *Isaiah 55:6-7.*

To say “only” is also wrong. The seeds of Faith should be watered, strengthened, and proven by sincere Repentance. The latter, in turn, should yet be evidenced by Godly actions. Kindly note *Ezekiel 33:11 & Proverbs 28:13.*
See chapter 151 (How to seek the LORD?) for more.

The “insist” is the wrong word too. Note our Free will.
Read *Deuteronomy 30:19 & Joshua 24:14-15.*

The “picking” is the word wrong and, definitely, strange. Read *John 14:6.*

Your wording “conflicting and incompatible” requires some clarification. For it is exactly what *Satan*, standing behind all that superstitious mess, intends to create. And his demons try their bloody best to trap all spiritually blind folks therein.
So, considering their evil “achievements”, all that spiritual dung has its “order”.
Aiming at some worldly-thinking characters, the devil made it look exactly “conflicting and incompatible” so that the thinkers might want to put all that stuff aside, Christianity inclusive. As your question testifies, you did that too.
Read *Daniel 8:24-25 & 1John 5:18.*

And “religions” is the wrong term too. Unbelievers mess up the Christian Faith and all the *superstition*s of the world they belong to.
By the way, all memorials & monuments are an integral part of the idolatry atheists claim to be free of. See *Exodus 23:24 & Jeremiah 10:3-5.*

Now, if the unbelievers may ever find themselves looking for a sort of *compromise* between their bias and Christianity, they are wrong again –

... GOD divided the Light from the darkness. (Genesis 1:4)

Q: Do you agree with birth control?. Please explain.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: I agree, but for the abortion. The Scripture might well explain that.
Please go as far as chapter 339 and read there *Apocrypha, Sirach 16:1-4.*

Q: (1) If God is incomprehensible, then how can we trust the Bible?.
Q: (2) If He is incomprehensible, doesn't that make your Bible invalid?
Q: (3) And, if this is the case, wouldn't this discredit the idea that God made us? For all we know, we could have been made by another entity.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: (1) GOD is incomprehensible to humans since the former is indefinitely higher than the latter. Your question, "how can we trust the Bible?" is erroneous. The Holy Bible is the Written Word of GOD to humans, period. The Bible is given by Him and based on His Love to us. For *GOD is Love*.
(2) Nothing can "make the Bible invalid". Yet, standing on GOD-given Free will, *you* can accept that Word of Truth or not.
(3) And, "if this is the case", *you* can welcome or "discredit" our Holy Bible. So, your last sentence, according to *2Corinthians 4:4*, may well run as, "For *all* unbelievers know, they may thank another entity – the devil."

Q: (1) If God knew beforehand that there is going to be evil and suffering, why did He go along with His Plan to create the World anyway?
(2) Why did God make Lucifer knowing that the last would cause havoc?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: (1) GOD created the Perfect World. Please read *Genesis Chapter 1*.
Evil & suffering resulted from the deeds of *humankind*, who misused their Free will and Authority over this Earth. You may see chapters 312 & 313.
However, the Perfect World – the Kingdom of Heaven – is to come again.
(2) The same is true regarding Lucifer. He was created the Angel but preferred to become the devil. Here, we again encounter corrupted Free will. It is *humanity* who, willingly following Satan, made havoc. See chapter 36.
In chapter 280, kindly read the words of Brother *C. S. Lewis* about Free will.

Q: Is Jesus the literal & biological Son of God?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: Literal & Spiritual. *GOD is a Spirit. (John 4:24)*

282

Q: If *you* had the Power to help all people who are suffering or in need, at no cost or effort to yourself, would *you* do it?
Q: If so, why hasn't God done this already?
(*https://atheistforums.org/thread-106.html*, November 2017. Edited.)

A: Who in the World is that *you*?
For a Christian, this question sounds strange as contradicting the Written Word of GOD.

That Power belongs to and can be blessed or given by the LORD GOD only. Full Spiritual Authority over the Earth is granted to humans by *Genesis 1:26-28*. See chapters 312 (Our spiritual Authority) & 313 (The Irrevocable Authority). All Power in Heaven & Earth is bestowed on our Lord Jesus per *Matthew 28:18*. For a right human mind, to think itself that or more Worthy is ridiculous.

Who in the World but *the devil* might so overload the brains with the spiritual dung to believe & speak that "all people who are suffering or in need" have ever been deprived of the Help of GOD? (To say nothing about *what* & *why* they are suffering and their *actual* need.) Read *2Corinthians 4:3-4*, if you please.

Who in both Realms – physical & spiritual – Father GOD inclusive – can have, get, or give anything "at no cost or effort"? Even this unscrupulous question may surely cost a lot to its author(s) if not repented thereof. Note *Matthew 12:36-37*.

Now, the second part of the question, "if so ..."
If what? If a *Christian* may ever agree with a *blaspheming heathen*, or what? Kindly read *Jeremiah 23:36*. Read our first discussion in chapter 132 (Tongue).

Go on. "... why hasn't God done this already?"
Our GOD, Whom we serve and Whose we are, has already been done a lot more than any human brain, the *unbelieving* first, can grasp. That is in *John 3:16-17*.

As for me, I stay on the following Scripture –

For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the Love of GOD, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Romans 8:38-39)

Q: If God is Omnipresent, He exists everywhere and in everything. I may pick up a rock from the side of a road and pray to it because God exists in the stone. For the same reason, a random tree will do. Would this be reasonable practice in Christianity? That's acceptable in Hinduism.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: *Christian* cannot do that for Fear of the Second Commandment of the Law of GOD. What is acceptable by Hinduism and what not is far beyond my expertise. So, I trust your competence therein.
As for the *reasonable practice in Christianity*, we can pray *everywhere*, standing on *1Timothy 2:8*. But our Prayer is to GOD, not a tree or a stone.

Q: Give me your best arguments for Christianity. Besides the Resurrection argument, are there any other good arguments for the Truth of Christianity?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: Well, best or not, my only argument is Testimony, a.k.a., *experience*.
Please see the end of chapter 133 (Saint Thomas).
Please also read "About the Writer" at the end of these chapters. It comes before the Index section.
Good question. Thank you.

Q: Lost relative. Would you accept a blood-related child or lost relative that's the product of artificial insemination (either male sperm donor or female egg donor) but from same-sex parents?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: The first to note: a "lost" relative is the one in *hell* only. *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
Second, "artificial insemination" and "same-sex parents" both have nothing to do with GOD-given Life.
And, if by "accept", you mean to open *my* heart and the door of *my* home to a suffering human, it does not matter relative or not. A Christian *must* do it. Read *Isaiah 58:7*.

Q: How do you know which Rules in the Bible to follow and which to ignore?
(Signed: Agnostic, Ex-Catholic.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021.)

A: A Christian must do what the Written Word of GOD commands. But the Sacrifices of the Old Testaments are to be seen in the New Testament Light.

283

Q: Do you think that *Evangelization* is to call people to our *Local Churches*?

A: I think the purpose of Evangelization is to call people to *the LORD GOD* as per our Great Commission – the Twelfth Commandment – full stop.

Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost. Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you. And, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the world. Amen. (Matthew 28:19-20)

The fact that people come to Local Churches after our Evangelization, conducted by first, Ministers-Evangelists, and second, every Christian (including via the Internet, TV, etc.) is a sequence thereof.
Please note that we are not supposed to insist on folks coming to *our* Church as the one "better" than others, thus promoting denominationalism.
To fill up their Church with people is an understandable desire of all Pastors and their Congregations. However, far as I comprehend, it is the Work of our Father GOD according to His Seeing our spiritual level.

> *And they continued Stedfastly in the Apostles' Doctrine and Fellowship, and in Breaking of Bread, and in Prayers. And Fear came upon every soul: and many Wonders and Signs were done by the Apostles. And all that believed were together, and had all things Common; and sold their possessions and goods, and parted them to all men, as every man had need. And they, continuing daily with One accord in the Temple, and Breaking Bread from house to house, did eat their meat with Gladness and Singleness of heart, Praising GOD, and having Favour with all the people. And the LORD added to the Church daily such as should be saved. (Acts 2:42-47)*

Mind the last phrase in the above Scripture. It is well applicable to the *Small Groups* within every Local Church. (You may find Small Groups in the Index.)
Speaking of *Acts 2:42-47*, I don't think literal following it may harm. How come? Just because *thus saith the LORD*. Unbelievable as it seems, it is possible. All the same, our *Unity* is possible because such is the Holy Will of GOD.

References: *Ezekiel 37:19* – The Unity promised.
John 13:34-35 – The Unity Commanded.
John 17:21-23 & Acts 4:32-37 – The Unity possible.

284

Q: Brother, speaking of the *Lord's Prayer* on, how would you interpret the line, *Give us this day our daily Bread*?

A: I see several points here.

First. Since a man is principally a spirit, living in a physical body, we pray here for *the Spiritual Bread of Life*, which is Christ Jesus, the Word.

I am that Bread of Life. (John 6:48)

Some Teachers & Expositors insist upon these Words to mean our *natural* food. But what did & does our *Lord Jesus* teach?

... take no thought, saying, What shall we eat? or, What shall we drink?
or, Wherewithal shall we be clothed? For after all these things do the Gentiles
seek: for your Heavenly Father knoweth that ye have need of all these things.
But seek ye first the Kingdom of GOD, and His Righteousness;
and all these things shall be added unto you. (Matthew 6:31-33)

Standing upon the above Scripture only, I believe *our daily Bread* is our *True spiritual food*, which we should seek and pray for, leaving the rest with our GOD. Please, read at random – *Deuteronomy 8:3* (& *Matthew 4:4 & Luke 4:4); Job 23:12; Jeremiah 15:16.*
See relevant "Q & A" chapters 58 (K & U & W), 106 (Feeding our spirit), 107 (Feeding our soul), & 690 (The Lord's Prayer – Summary).
Kindly read the Preface to this "Q & A" book.

Second. It is the *Intercession* and, first of all, for those Believers who never forget about their *natural* meals several times a day but do not satisfy their *spiritual* hunger for the Word. Therefore, I pray thus for the *Edification* of the Body of Christ.

Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of Spiritual Gifts,
seek that ye may excel to the Edifying of the Church. (1Corinthians 14:12)

Third. This line is an integral part of the Lord's Prayer. The Words – *Give us this day our daily Bread* – constitute the Petition to Rightly equip (feed up, saturate, empower) us, Christians, with the Mighty Written Word of GOD to be His Good Instruments to establish His Holy Will in the World we live in. *Ephesians 6:17*.

Q: So, what Holy Bible Translation do you prefer for the Lord's Prayer?

A: I take the *King James Version* and amplify it every day, as the Words may come to my heart. Kindly read the following example.

Our Father – the only True GOD.

Who art in Heaven – or *Thou art in Heaven* – ruling Eternal Spiritual World.

Hallowed be Thy Name – and I whisper His Name יהוה – Most Holy.

Thy Kingdom – here & now, Thy Holy Spirit – *come* to our hearts.

So that *Thy* Holy *Will be done on* our *Earth as it is in* Thy *Heaven*.
This Powerful line is alone the Prayer for whatever needs to be met.

Give us this day our daily Bread – that Precious Manna from Heaven – even the Revelation Knowledge & Understanding of Thy Written Word.

And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. – Forgive our sins, as we forgive those who willingly do us evil. Teach us Forgiving, O Holy Ghost.

And lead us away from temptations – the Way of Righteousness & Peace.

And deliver us from evil. – Purify our hearts, O Holy Spirit of GOD.

For Thine is the Kingdom – where Thy Servants belong,

Thine is the Almighty Power – as Thy Servants know & trust.

And only Thine is the Glory – as Thy Servants give Thee wholeheartedly.

Forever – Thy World, O Father GOD, without end.

Amen. – Speak it with all Faith. The Peace of GOD will come.

Praying thus, I remember evils that came to my knowledge and the imperative needs of many people, Christians or not.
Shamefully, I recollect the evils done by me and pray to Heavenly Father to bless those I wronged by a word or deed. And intercede for Repentance of evildoers.

285

Q: Your site is a *Christian Ministry*.
In chapter 56, you spoke about *Giving* as our stumbling stone.
So, why don't you accept *Donations*?

A: Right. My site *is* a Christian Ministry.
And *Giving*, as far as my knowledge goes, is not our strong point.
As for *Donations*, I cannot preach one thing and do another, criticize somebody, and do the very same thing, as well as ignore my Christian Testimony. So, help me, Father GOD.

On the other hand, the LORD GOD Himself, by my experience, well taught me what it was the condemned *love of money*, that is, the work of mammon.
Therefore, I'm sure every Christian Church (and Ministry) should have Rules aimed at following the Written Word of GOD applied to her particular conditions. Giving should be the *Sacred Prerogative* of her Members, who have passed their respective candidate terms. Why? – To ensure their *Common Spiritual Health*. When accepting an Offering, it is better to know the Giver. Shall we forget the Words of Christ?

... Render to Caesar the things that are Caesar's,
and to GOD the things that are GOD's ... (Mark 12:16-17)

I believe these Words teach us not only about taxes but to respect all the laws of the state we deserved to live under, as well as to *honor* the LORD by our Giving.

In this regard, kindly mind one episode you can see in a good Christian movie, "*Do you believe?*" The ex-criminal brought questionable money to the Church. And that was accepted. I don't know about you, but I cannot support that act. The only appropriate receiver of money, in that case, was the nearest Police Office.

I wasshe my hondes with Innocency O LORDE, and so go I to Thine Aulter.
(Psalms 26:6, Miles Coverdale's Bible, 1535)

You may also see *Exodus 29:37* & *Isaiah 61:8* as for the Purity of Giving.

As for my small Ministry, I prefer to direct every Giver to that Christian Local Church or Ministry, which is nearest to him (her) and best follows our Lord Jesus by his (her) judgment. And, above all other reasons, I don't know a single Pastor who thinks the same way as I do and may redirect you, Giver, any further.

286

Q: Brother, what ought to be the *status* of Small Groups within our Local Churches?

A: Well, let the following be my opinion based on experience.

Small (Home, Cell, Communication, and so on) Groups should be an integral part of *every* Congregation of Saints. It is hard to tell what is more important, our Communion with GOD and one another in those *Small* Groups of Believers or at *large* Local Church Meetings (or Services). At both events, we should pray, study the Written Word of GOD, and communicate. Both can and should be Fruitful. The last largely depends on our *Pastors* & *Group Leaders*.
Every Christian ought to ascertain what of the above two Services or both inseparably furthers his (her) *spiritual growth* more. Yet such an estimation is accurate only when a Church Member does his (her) best for that development.

Speaking of the *status* of Small Group, my suggestion is to entrust *Bible Study* & *Holy Communion* (Eucharist) totally to that good Ministry, provided the Group Leaders are well qualified for the job. Then we can be sure of the status.
However, *group* Bible Studies should stay second & parallel to *personal* studies and never change the last over.
There are (large) Sunday Schools in many Churches. Well, those good Ministries can be compared to Small Groups the same way as in the World we estimate schools with *large* and *small* classes. What education is more effective?

Q: Do you have atheistic or pagan friends?
(Signed: *Christian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: Yes, I do. Sorry, publishing your question, I had to edit your capitalization. Lord Jesus said: *Ye are My Friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. (John 15:14)*

Let us see *Friends in Christ* from mates in the world – colleagues, neighbors, etc. – and may Christians baptized in the Holy Ghost have a good look in human hearts.

... for the LORD seeth not as man seeth;
for man looketh on the outward appearance,
but the LORD lookethon the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)

287

Q: Please, explain Christ's Words,

14 I have given them Thy Word; and the world hath hated them, because they are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. 15 I pray not that Thou shouldest take them out of the world, but that Thou shouldest keep them from the evil. 16 They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. (John 17:14-16)

A: These Words are an integral part of *Prayer* presented in *St. John's Gospel*. In chapter 124 (The Prayer for our Unity), we spoke about that.

Verse 14. The there & then world our Lord Jesus came to minister to was represented by the Israeli people & their Teachers as well as the heathen colonial authorities. Jesus gave the Word of Truth to His Disciples and the world. The last (ever instigated by Satan) hated everyone who wholeheartedly followed the Truth of GOD.
Here & now, we cannot see many changes around. Note *Ecclesiastes 1:9*.
People may call themselves *Christians* yet compromise with the world.
Whether free or fighting for their freedom, they are far from both.

Verse 15. In chapter 252, we studied the Words "*deliver us from evil*" of the Lord's Prayer. The question may arise, how can a Christian remain in the world and be kept from its evil at the same time? The answer is simple: we might face whatever evil daily, yet never belong to it. Thus, these Words of Jesus in *Matthew 6:13* & *John 17:15* are parallel.

Verses 14 & *16*.

*They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world. **

We can see the same *Truth* as in *Verse 15*. Living among unbelievers, sinners, evildoers, compromisers, and alike, *Jesus' Disciples* did not & do not belong to their realm.

*... For we are transferred to a different, Higher sphere, which is a Divine, Eternal Kingdom, where we need none of the things that belong to the world, but every one is in Christ a lord for himself, both over devil and world * ... (Martin Luther, Comments on the Sermon on the Mount, p.192)*

* I do not capitalize the "world", as here, it means the domain of *unbelievers*.

Q: In what ways do you think we can apply the Command of Jesus in *Matthew 23:8-10* today?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

> *... be not ye called Rabbi: for One is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are Brethren. And call no man your Father upon the Earth: for One is your Father, which is in Heaven. Neither be ye called Masters: for One is your Master, even Christ. (Matthew 23:8-10)*

This Scripture is better understood as a part of *Matthew 23:1-12*. Please read it. In chapters 25 (Writer, what if you are wrong?), 140 (Our Father), and 304 (Be not called Rabbi), we discussed three parts thereof and touched on it again in chapters 139 (Our Teachers) & 436 (The Shepherds). The following Words may sum up our reasoning in the named chapters and answer your question.

In all thy ways acknowledge Him, and He shall direct thy paths.
(Proverbs 3:6)

In this regard, see also chapter 200 (The Praise of GOD). Thank you.

Q: In front of God's Eyes, what do two people have to do in order to be married? Not by the law.
Q: For example, can two people go to a special place, commit to each other, and tell each other the vows and promises in front of God but nobody else?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: In this book, you may find parallel chapters 60 (Christian Family) and 717 (Christian Marriage). Please take a look.
And this is the Answer by the Word of GOD –

... she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a Man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his Wife: and they shall be One flesh. (Genesis 2:23-24)

Therefore, that "special place" is to be the *heart* of each of you.
Your "vows and promises" must welcome Father GOD to be First in your Life.
He will take care of your Family.
May GOD bless you.

288

Q: The Bible says: *9 Tribulation and anguish, upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile; 10 But Glory, Honour, and Peace, to every man that worketh Good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile: 11 For there is no respect of persons with GOD. (Romans 2:9-11)*

So, the question is: do the Words *the Jew first* (*Verses 9* & *10*) mean that the *Jewish nationality* is in some way separated from other people by God?

A: No, they don't. In chapter 59, we made it clear. The same clarifies *Verse 11*. We don't want to forget the definition for a *Jew*, made by *Apostle Paul –*

For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that Circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and Circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose Praise is not of men, but of GOD. (Romans 2:28-29)

You may kindly listen to the Teachers of old too.

GOD, from the very Beginning of the World, is One Who judgeth between the flesh and the spirit, and Who respecteth not the dignity of the person or his works. For GOD hath here Respect unto Abel, not moved by any Work which he performed, but simply by his Faith, in which he offered his Sacrifice. But unto Cain GOD had not Respect : not because the Offering of Cain was less splendid or sumptuous than that of Abel, but because he had not Faith, and therefore his primogeniture profited him nothing. And this is a very powerful argument against the Jews, who, as the Evangelist John tells us, gloried in their race and descent : boasting that they were the Children of Abraham (John 8:33). (Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, p.355)

For we know how foolishly the Jews glory in extolling the origin of their own nation : for they scarcely deign to acknowledge that they have sprung from Adam and Noah, with the rest of mankind. And certainly they do excel in the dignity of their ancestors, as Paul testifies (Romans 9:5), but they do not acknowledge this as coming from GOD. Wherefore the Spirit purposely aimed at beating down this arrogance, when He described their race as sprung from a beginning so mean and abject ... John Calvin, Commentaries On The First Book Of Moses Called Genesis, vol.2, p.146)

... after Christ was come and rejected ... they ceased to be the People of GOD ...
(Thomas Scott,
The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes ... Commentary on Zechariah)

As for the meaning of the Scripture in question – *Romans 2:9-11* – I think it will be clearer if, following *Romans 2:28-29*, we would change the Words *Jew* for *Christians* and *Gentile* for *unbelievers*.

References: *Genesis 17:4-5* (*thou shalt be a father of many nations).*
Psalms 4:3 (*the LORD hath set apart him that is Godly).*
1Thessalonians 1:2-5 (*your Election of GOD).*
2Thessalonians 2:13 (*from the Beginning chosen you).*

Q: (1) Is "pure" OCD – Obsessive-compulsive disorder – sinful?.
The Bible teaches that even thinking of sinning is a sin itself. For instance, thinking about sleeping with a person outside Marriage, you lust, which is a sin. If during an argument you think about punching, it is a sin.
However, some people can not *control* their thoughts & actions.
Q: (2) So, is a person with constant intrusive thoughts he (she) never acts on more sinful than someone who is not experiencing intrusive thoughts?
Q: (3) Are these intrusive thoughts in and of themselves sins?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: By *https://www.webmd.com/mental-health/obsessive-compulsive-disorder*,
Obsessive-compulsive disorder (OCD) is a mental illness that causes repeated unwanted thoughts or sensations (obsessions) or the urge to do something over and over again (compulsions). Some people can have both obsessions and compulsions.

(1-3) As you correctly put, "symptoms of Pure Obsessional OCD vary widely from person to person."
So, I would consider those variations only by whether they are *controllable* or not. E.g., in your post, you mentioned this example: "repeatedly worrying that one has or will run over a pedestrian while driving a vehicle."
That calls for some questions, such as, who issued the Driver's License?
Did the person willingly conceal his (her) obsessions? In that case, it *is* a sin, being not in or of devilish intrusive thoughts but the *negligence* to one's health and lack of *responsibility* for the safety of other people.
There are no people "more" or "less" sinful.
Per *Romans 3:23, ... all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of GOD ...*

289

Q: It is written,

And GOD saw every thing that He had made,
and, behold, it was Very Good ... (Genesis 1:31)

It is also said,

All things were made by Him; and without Him
was not any thing made that was made. (John 1:3)

So, the question is: who created all *predators,* including *dinosaurs*?

A: We can find the Answer to this question in the following Scripture.

And GOD said, Let Us make Man in Our Image, after Our Likeness:
and let them have Dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air,
and over the cattle, and over all the Earth, and over every creeping thing
that creepeth upon the Earth. So GOD created Man in His Own Image,
in the Image of GOD created He him; male and female created He them.
And GOD blessed them, and GOD said unto them,
Be Fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth, and subdue it:
and have Dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air,
and over every living thing that moveth upon the Earth. (Genesis 1:26-28)

To be exact, the keyword here, repeated twice, is *Dominion*.
We touched on that subject of our *spiritual* Authority in chapters 36, 312, & 313.

Our *sinfulness* corrupted us and the beautiful World GOD put under our Power.

And unto Adam He said, ... cursed is the ground for thy sake;
in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; thorns also and thistles
shall it bring forth to thee ... In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread,
till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken:
for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. (Genesis 3:17-19)

Thus all *predators,* particularly those *dinosaurs,* which the LORD, Almighty GOD, destroyed, had been nothing but some peaceful creatures created by Him but distorted into ugly ravening monsters by our *misusing* our GOD-given Power. And however, the wildlife thus became and remains naturally dangerous for us – *we* continue to be of spiritual non-revocable Dominion.

290

Q: Brother, how shall *Christians* deal with the *science*, such as astronomy, physical cosmology, etc., teaching that the Universe has neither beginning nor end, and the age of our Earth is far longer than that by the Bible?

A: We touched on that subject in chapter 86 (How to prove what we preach?). Here, I dare tell more of my humble opinion.
For me, our Holy Bible is the *only* Source of True Knowledge.

It is written,

In the Beginning GOD created the Heaven and the Earth. (Genesis 1:1)

These two Worlds – Heaven (GOD's Abode, Spirit Realm, Universe outside our planet) and Earth (our natural abode, the Center of Universe) – were that Wonderful Beginning. They were made of naught (as per *Wycliffe* & *Purvey* Bible Versions) – there had been nothing before the Creation. See *John 1:3.*

It is also said,

And GOD said, Let there be lights in the Firmament of the Heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: and let them be for lights in the Firmament of the Heaven to give light upon the Earth: and it was so. And GOD made two great Lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: He made the Stars also. And GOD set them in the Firmament of the Heaven to give light upon the Earth, and to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and GOD saw that it was Good. (Genesis 1:14-18)

Let us forget *as*tronomy. Our Earth was created by the LORD, our GOD, to be the Center of the Universe. (Some call it a Geocentric system.) Other celestial bodies were made by Him to give us natural light.

Now,

... we shall all stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ ...
(Romans 14:10 & 2Corinthians 5:10)

There & then we all, even everyone personally, will have an opportunity to prove our points.

There is the Wonder of GOD's Creation, but along comes man and begins to study it and log it and weigh it and measure it and create sophisticated instruments to see it so that he can weigh it and measure it better. This is unredeemed man's response to the Wonder of GOD's Creation.

(A.W. Tozer, Experiencing The Presence Of GOD: Teachings From The Book Of Hebrews)

I consider that a man's brain originally is like a little empty attic, and you have to stock it with such furniture as you choose. A fool takes in all the lumber of every sort that he comes across, so that the knowledge which might be useful to him gets crowded out, or at best is jumbled up with a lot of other things, so that he has a difficulty in laying his hands upon it. Now the skilful workman is very careful indeed as to what he takes into his brain-attic. He will have nothing but the tools which may help him in doing his work, but of these he has a large assortment, and all in the most perfect order. It is a mistake to think that that little room has elastic walls and can distend to any extent. Depend upon it there comes a time when for every addition of knowledge you forget something that you knew before. It is of the highest importance, therefore, not to have useless facts elbowing out the useful ones. (Sir Arthur Conan Doyle, The Complete Sherlock Holmes)

Q: (1) Why are there so many different Christian interpretations of the Bible, if what is written in it is supposed to be self-evident and infallible?

Q: (2) The Bible has been constantly re-contextualized throughout history, with different denominations & sects diluting some horrific passages to make them seem more palatable or reinterpreting things where they see fit. (?)

Q: (3) Who has the authority to decide which interpretations are correct and which are wrong?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) It seems the only possible answer is many interpretations were the result of not well (if any at all) hearing the Holy Spirit of GOD. Note also such questionable things as authorship, copyright, market, &c.
(2) Your point is correct. As for the implying changes made to the Holy Scripture, some translators & editors ought to note *Revelation 22:18-19*. Yet, it is impossible to hide the Truth of GOD from a Diligent Disciple.
(3) It is a *personal* choice & Responsibility of every Christian what to accept as a good manual and what to jettison.
Please read the words of Brother *A.W. Tozer,* chosen to be an epigraph to this book. Thank you.

291

Q: *Joshua 1:9* runs,

... Be Strong and of a Good Courage;
be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed:
for the LORD thy GOD is with thee whithersoever thou goest.

Can *every* Christian take up these Words as applicable to his (her) Life?

A: Yes, he (she) can, *if* the Holy Will of GOD for his (her) Life is well known to that Christian and obediently followed.

We *all* should personally and prayerfully seek His Holy Will for our Life.

And ye shall seek Me, and find Me,
if ye shall search for Me with all your heart. (Jeremiah 29:13)

Then, and only then, GOD's Mighty Backup is expected, as per the last line of the above-quoted *Joshua 1:9*. Mind the Words omitted in that quotation,

Have not I commanded thee? ...

Note that GOD's Servant Joshua had had his GOD commanded Ministry when was thus encouraged by LORD (*Numbers 27:18-23* & *Deuteronomy 31:14,23*).
We spoke about the importance of knowing & following the Holy Will of GOD in chapters 24 (The Will of GOD for us), 69 (The Anointing), and 232 (Our Prayer Backup).

> *Whilst we ... selfishly and in unbelief regard our own ease, interest, or credit ; we proportionably disregard the Glory of GOD, and the lives and souls of our neighbours ; as if these were not worth our attention, compared with our own feelings : so contrary are we to the Law of Loving GOD supremely, and our neighbour as ourselves ; and such need have we of the Pardoning Mercy, the Atoning Blood, and the New Creating Spirit of our GOD ! ... Let us then rejoice, and be Thankful for the Mercies of our GOD, and imitate them in our whole conduct : and, while He condescends to expostulate with us on our selfishness, may our hearts be humbled, and softened to Compassion and Good-Will to all men, and prepared for every Service to which we are called.* *(Thomas Scott,*
> *The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes ... Commentary on Jonah)*

292

Q: Brother, what does it mean the *Fellowship with the Holy Spirit*?

A: Briefly, it is our Promised continuous manifold *Communion with Father GOD*: asking Him questions & directions, waiting for and listening to His Answers, meditating on and obediently following His Written Word.

We expressly fellowship with Him in the time of *Prayer*, *Confession*, *Bible Study*, conversation with the fellow-Believers, or whenever else may find ourselves in that needful *Spiritual Communion*. These Scriptures tell us more.

Joshua 1:8 – The Word of GOD should be in our mind and verbal conversation.
Isaiah 26:3 – Let our mind stay on the LORD.
Matthew 7:6 – Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs ...
Mark 3:28-29 – Stay Vigilant and prevent blasphemy.
John 4:24 – ... worship Him in spirit (wholeheartedly) *and in Truth*.
John 8:32 – Follow Jesus Christ for the Truth to be revealed unto Freedom.
1Corinthians 2:12 – Holy Ghost our Promised Teacher has been given us.
1Corinthians 6:19-20 – ... your body is the Temple of the Holy Ghost ...
1Corinthians 14:2,14 – Pray in tongues – trust Him to lead you therein.
2Corinthians 10:5 – Bring your *every thought to the Obedience of Christ*.
Galatians 5:16-18 – Walk in the Spirit – be led of the Spirit – constantly.
Ephesians 4:29-32 – No corrupt communication, no evil thoughts.
Ephesians 5:18 – Be sober ... *be filled with the Spirit*.
Ephesians 6:18 – Intercede in tongues (in the Spirit).
Philippians 4:9 – Obedience to GOD provides Fellowship with the Holy Spirit.
1Thessalonians 5:19 – Do not break up this Communication.
James 2:26 – Strengthen and prove your Faith by Works.
Judah 1:20 – Pray in tongues (in the Spirit).

Of course, there are many more Scriptures teaching us that Precious Communion with our Heavenly Father, rendered by His Holy Spirit.
We should listen to the Holy Ghost studying the Holy Bible, whatever comments thereon, reading Christian publications, and hearing Sermons. Moreover, without that Communication, we are unable to tell the Truth of GOD from a mere lie. Note that in reality, not a single Christian Teacher, Preacher, Pastor, Interpreter, Writer, and so forth can communicate that Truth totally without distortions. Why? Note well *1Corinthians 13:9*. And, if not convinced enough, very attentively consider the arguments of different denominations.

... no man has the right to interpret Scripture, to use his own word, privately. How then must it be interpreted? To answer that question we must ask another. How did the Prophets receive their Message? They received it from the Spirit. It was sometimes even said that the Spirit of GOD used the Prophets as a writer uses a pen or as a musician uses a musical instrument. In any event the Spirit gave the Prophet His Message. The obvious conclusion is that it is only through the Help of that same Spirit that the Prophetic Message can be understood. As Paul had already said, spiritual things are spiritually discerned (1Corinthians 2:14-15). As the Jews viewed the Holy Spirit, He has two Functions – He brings GOD's Truth to men and He enables men to understand that Truth when it is brought. So, then, Scripture is not to be interpreted by private cleverness or private prejudice; it is to be interpreted by the Help of the Holy Spirit by Whom it was first given ... (William Barclay)

Q: (1) Can God provide for us without jobs?.
Q: (2) There is a short book about five kids who walked across a desert in Australia. They haven't anything but clothes on. God provided for all their needs. People thought they would die but were shocked when the kids succeeded in their Walk of Faith. What do you think about it?
Q: (3) Is this an example to be followed?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) Yes, Father GOD can do that. It may depend on the reason why we do not have a job. See *2Thessalonians 3:7-12*.
(2) It would be good to know whether the story is true or fiction and whether it was a Christian Mission or a venture. Sorry, I have not had enough time to check out the link you provided and read the book.
(3) And Yes, if they follow the direct Commandment of the LORD or His Ordained Mission, the example is good to follow. *Luke 10:4*.

Q: Does God like people to die for Him?. There seem to be Verses implying that suffering even to the point of dying is pleasurable to God.
Consider *John 21:18-19, Philippians 1:29, Matthew 16:25, & 1Peter 4:13.*
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: I think your wording is wrong. The LORD GOD does not "like" people to die, either for Him or at all. He *loves* people and Graciously rewards those who *prove* their Faith to the point of dying for Him, yet not recanting.
Please see the Blessed *Book of Martyrs*.

293

Q: Brother, how are we supposed to fight *anger*?

A: Firstly, we may try to define it.

> By *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary of the English Language (2001)*, *anger* is ... *a strong reeling or displeasure and belligerence* (the last, by the same source, means *aggressively hostile nature, condition, or attitude* ...) *aroused by a wrong* ...

The evil of anger is a link in some (whether short or long) devilish chain leading us to sin & death. That death-leading evil chain might consist of these step-links and work as follows.

1. In the first place, the worldly way of *unbelief* has been chosen & followed.
2. The (exaggerated, overstepping its bounds) *common sense* (the wisdom of this world) leads to living by (Satan-inspired) rules of this world.
3. Eventually, the responses to any unpleasant situation are pride, irritation, greed, fear, envy, hatred, sorrow, bitterness, self-pity, depression, and so forth.
4. Solutions are sought through compromise, dishonesty, flattery, lie – if the *satanic peace* is deemed better – or else through unforgiving, disobedience, resentment, rebellion – if it is a matter of *worldly honor*.
5. Sooner or later, criticism, backbiting, quarrel, insult, etc., arise.
6. The sure outcome is *anger*, hostility, split-up.
7. Next come up the mental disorders manifested in violence, cruelty, murder.
8. Thus, the way of sin (anger inclusive) leads only to *hell* & *death eternal*.

It should be clear that *Godly Wisdom* – breaking every satanic evil chain – coming from first, Studying the Written Word of GOD, and second, Obedient Following that Word – is a sure Shield against *all* evil works, the anger inclusive.

Now, let's consider our GOD-given Strategy for fighting *anger*.

Christian Wisdom – *Romans 12:21; Ephesians 4:26,27,31,32; & 1John 3:15.*
Christian Honor – *Proverbs 20:3 & 1John 5:18.*
Christian Unity – *Matthew 5:23-24.*
The Blessing – *Matthew 5:9,22.*
Seeing the LORD GOD is our Judge & Avenger – *Isaiah 63:4 & Romans 12:19.*
Following Jesus' Teaching & Example – *Matthew 5:5, 6:12; Luke 23:34; & Colossians 3:13.*

By Brother Martin Luther's, *Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount*,

> *... if you want to live Rightly and have Rest, then let your neighbor's malice and hostility smother and extinguish itself; otherwise you cannot better please the devil, or more greatly harm yourself, than by getting up an angry racket ... (p.45)*
>
> *... Anger there must and shall be ; but take care that it be properly applied, and remember that thou art commanded not to be angry on thine own account; but for the sake of thine Office and of GOD, and that thou must not confound the two, thy person and Office. For thine own person thou must not cherish anger against any one, however badly thou art injured; but where thine Office requires it, there must thou be angry, even though no harm has been done to thy person ... (p.149)*
>
> *... if thy brother has done something against thee and angered thee, and asks thy Forgiveness, and ceases to do evil; then the anger also must subside ... (p.150)*

Q: (1) Why does the devil bother deceiving people?
Q: (2) Isn't it clear that he loses in the end?
Q: (3) I've heard many people say that the devil wants to take as many people to *hell* with him as possible, but I don't see what that could accomplish. (?)
Q: (4) Would be having more people in hell make the latter more bearable for the evil one?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: (1) The devil deceives because such is his nature.

> *He was a murderer from the Beginning, and abode not in the Truth, because there is no Truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. (John 8:44)*

(2) It is hard to seek even a lying *common sense* (*reason*) in the evil author thereof. Please see chapter 41 (Common sense).
(3) And trying to understand Satan from the angle of *Godly reason* is impossible.
(4) As for the *hell*, you may refer to chapter 8. It is not a place that may allow a single word of whatever communion with whoever.
Thank you for your question.

294

Q: Brother, how should *Christians* hold out against the evil of *drugs*?

A: We touched on the subject in chapters 125 (The Sixth Commandment) & 174 (Preach Sobriety & Healthy Life).
Let us look closer at that *evil*.

> By *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary of the English Language (2001)*,
> it is *the state of being enslaved to a habit or practice or to something that is psychologically or physically habit-forming, as narcotics, to such an extent that its cessation causes severe trauma.*

As in cases of murder, theft, and other crimes, we can drop the evil of addiction into the same basket of *parental* and *society's* responsibility, and, to some extent, it might be correct. For in Godly family and neighborhood, drug matters have nothing to do with our Life.
But why does that evil exist at all? One may try to trace.

A young person, for some reason, *spiritual* inheritance not excluded, happened (to be morally weak enough) to get addicted. The devil will surely see to the last.

A *family* – if that youngster is happy to have it – and *neighbors* might be so busy with other things that Satan-inspired drug business get underestimated or overlooked. Praise GOD – we have Police to make up for that negligence.

So, a person faces a temptation, which is nothing but circumstances created by the devil with the sole purpose to throw him (her) into *sin*.

Demons well back up one another. Note chapters 39 (The War outlined)
& 87 (Discipline in the Church).
Thus, by a thought of *compromise*, the evil spirit(s) will "authorize" curiosity to try "just once".
Employing a mere *lie*, the devil will push the absurd idea of "non-harm" and shows somebody who uses the stuff and is still "okay".
Using the evil of *stubbornness*, the demon(s) will try to throw away all warnings.
Utilizing *unbelief*, demons would guard against the Holy Fear of GOD.
And the enemy uses *irritation* & *anger* to fight off anybody trying to persuade the tempted person against drugs.
And so on, depending on how the situation develops.

The first try – just *one* surrender – is the foothold for the devil. The last would tempt the victim on and on to make him (her) an addict.
For millennia, demons have got enough evil knowledge, experience, patience, training, and discipline to achieve their goal.
Yea, *don't underestimate the enemy!*

If this devilish work is not stopped dead by family, society, and the Church, the demons obtain one more victim & reinforcement for their evil bog – *crime*.
Because through addiction, such evils as poverty, corruption, robbery, cruelty, and murder are stimulated, activated, and intensified.
Crime is a considerable investment in the kingdom of darkness of Satan.

The importance of a *spiritually* healthy society cannot be overestimated. But to create it, we should build another logical chain where such links as Brotherhood, Unity, and Good example must not be missing.

Jesus taught,

Ye are the Salt of the Earth ... Ye are the Light of the world ...
Let your Light so shine before men that they may see your Good Works,
and glorify your Father which is in Heaven. (Matthew 5:13-16)

References.

Matthew 10:8 – Remember your Authority.
Matthew 28:18-20 – Our Great Commission.
Luke 5:17 – The Healing Power of GOD is where the Truth is preached.
Luke 10:19 – Remember your Authority.
1Corinthians 2:4-5 – Preach in the Spirit.
2Corinthians 4:4 – The reason of unbelief.
2Timothy 1:7 – Mind your Baptism in the Holy Spirit.
2Timothy 4:1-4 – Preach the Word of Truth.
James 1:14-15 – The evil chain.

Relevant book: *James Bowen, A Street Cat Named Bob*

Relevant movies: *The Stranger TV Series, Episode 2, The Prodigal Son*
Pay It Forward
The Lost And Found Family
A Street Cat Named Bob

295

Q: How should we fight *laziness*?

A: The most concise answer is,

Submit yourselves therefore to GOD.
Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. (James 4:7)

However, we ought to consider the *laziness* deeper to pull out more of the dark satanic tactics to the Light of GOD's Word.
It might seem the wisdom of this world (reason, common sense) talks "against" laziness. But it is but a delusion. There is no division in the evil powers of Satan.
Common sense (chapter 41) teaches us to be not lazy (to welcome the *fear* of monetary poverty instead). The condemned one calls people to work & study hard to get financially free per the standards of his evil world. Get the power to rule the satanic way, and to become his active servants (destroying one another), not passive ones. Even so, "common sense vs laziness" is the devilish trick – *misdirection* – to draw folks off from the Way of Christ.

On the other hand, any evil spirit working up laziness also sweats to tempt his "object" to *compromise* (chapter 40), trying to teach him (her) the way of excuses. Another misdirection. Why?
First, to indwell our hearts and cultivate spiritual weakness, limit Love, moderate Faith, question Hope, scorn Patience, suppress Courage, and so on.
Second, to weaken our soul, thus achieving the lack of Wisdom & Discipline and promoting the abundance of foolishness & mental disorders.
And only third, the well-known bulldog-grip of poverty, which, by the way, is not all about a zero-income but (most important) the "give-nothing" attitude.
For sure, those thorns & thistles produced by laziness bring about quite a burden upon people neighboring or working alongside the lazy ones.

As vinegar to the teeth, and as smoke to the eyes,
so is the sluggard to them that send him. (Proverbs 10:26)

At the same time, the devil steadily tempts all "hard-workers" the corrupted way of criticism, contempt, disdain, anger, hatred, &c., to treat the "easy-takers".
And that is done for the sake of further division, crime, sin, eternal death.

The only thing necessary for the triumph of evil is for good men to do nothing.
(Edmund Burke)

Q: How shall we deal with such evil as *poverty*?

A: There is only one Weapon – acceptable, Promised, Powerful, and most efficient – the *Written Word of GOD*. Faith is required to use that Weapon.

For why My Thouytis ben not youre thouytis,
and My Weies ben not youre weies, seith the LORD.
(Isaiah 55:8, Wycliffe Version)

If I remember correctly, Brother Kenneth Copeland called poverty an *evil spirit*. Well, I guess we deal with more of a mental & physical *state* made up by the demon(s). Anyway, through poverty, demons lie to hapless people that there is no way out other than a *crime*, whereas Lord Jesus said,

... I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life ... (John 14:6)

Satan (through his lying servants) even teaches that our Father GOD wants some folks to be poor – whereas the LORD is *Love*, not cruelty.

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son,
that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life.
(John 3:16, a.k.a., the Golden Verse of the Bible)

Our *Prosperity* – the spiritual one first – is in line with the *Holy Will of GOD*.

Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in Health,
even as thy soul prospereth. (3John 1:2)

Demons creating poverty threaten the rich folks (a.k.a., "mighty of this world") by the "danger" of getting poor and teach them how to "efficiently" hold fast on their money. Those evil spirits try to lie every man into *money-making* as the main aim and the "normal" course of life. They (employing such satanic weapons as mammon, worldly reason, etc.) cry out into every mind to avoid Giving.
Kindly note chapter 56 (The Test of Giving).

The evil of *poverty* gets the strong backup from this spiritual dung:

= *unbelief* rejecting Godly Way of life;
= *fear* to get penniless;

= *lie* of worldly media calling people to whatever investment save Charity;
= the worldly *reason* (the exaggerated common sense – the wisdom of this world) which is out of place in the spiritual realm;
= *compromise* teaching us, if to give at all, then do it "wisely", that is, little;
= *mammon* establishing "financial independence" directly proportionate to the amount of money collected (whatever way, since "aim justifies means");
= *greed* as a necessary quality of money-making mentality;
= *envy* ruling anybody who believes in "the power of money" and close-watch the competitors who are "better off";
= *bitterness* coming up quickly when all "reasonable" means to get rich expire;
= *anger* toward those of "better luck", growing into enmity, division, violence, cruelty (whether personal or as part of mad "revolutionary" crowds).

The above list of created & maintained *evils* might be extended.

Poverty, in turn, supports negligence, unbelief, doubt, pessimism, worry, anxiety, self-pity, depression, corruption, theft, addiction, and such other dung.

Considering the above devilish reinforcements, we may reach this conclusion: there is not any division in the army of Satan.
Lord Jesus made it clear in *Mathew 12:43-45* when He described how that evil backup works. All demonic forces, supporting one another, try their best to throw people into the power of sin and death.
Please see parallel chapter 87 (Discipline in the Church).

As we have already clarified at the beginning of this chapter, the most needful Weapon against the evil of poverty is our Christian Faith –

For whatsoever is born of GOD overcometh the world:
and this is the Victory that overcometh the world, even our Faith.
(1John 5:4)

By Faith, the Holy Ghost commands us to follow the Way of Faith & Giving.

Act contrary to worldly reason in spiritual matters.
Stand on upon your Holy Ground, which is the Written Word of GOD.

The References: *Deuteronomy 15:4-6* – The national prosperity.
Joshua 1:8 – ... then thou shalt make thy way Prosperous ...
Malachi 3:10-12 – The national prosperity.

297

Q: How should we fight such *evil* as *corruption*?

A: Read *Ephesians 6:10-18* on our Spirit War & *Spirit Weapons*.

> *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary (2001)* defines *corruption* as,
> *... moral perversion; depravity; perversion of integrity; corrupt or dishonest proceedings; bribery; any corrupting influence or agency ...*

Corruption is often associated with *bribery*. Yet, according to the above definition, corruption is by far not limited to bribery. The latter is one of the manifestations of corruption. *Ecclesiastes 7:7; Luke 3:13*.
Corruption is the direct sequence of the satanic policy of *godlessness* conducted by dishonest government officials in all international & home affairs, education, industry, justice, finance, etc. *John 8:43-44* & *2Corinthians 4:3-4*.

In international policy, it is *military* activity. It comes from the belief that the welfare of a country depends on its military might.
Please read *Hosea 10:13*. See chapter 9 (Military).
However, our Father GOD teaches on the contrary. Kindly read *Zechariah 4:6*.
Are we wiser than the LORD? *1Corinthians 3:19*. See chapter 58 (K & U & W).
The corruption in home affairs is demonstrated by "the election right" and the *sin of voting* directly following. *Hosea 8:4 & 13:11*. See chapter 21 (Voting).

Education is corrupted by godlessness. No scientific or technical progress can ever make up for that. But what does GOD Almighty say about education?
Read *Deuteronomy 6:6-7 & 32:46*. See chapter 70 (Christian Education).
The *industry* is corrupted since the best human brains are directed chiefly toward military betterment. Does it agree with the Scriptures? Read *Ecclesiastes 9:18*.

Justice is corrupted because the Holy Bible is not the Fundamental Law of states.
But what is written in the Word of GOD? Read *Deuteronomy 17:18-20*.
The financial policies of countries are based on *godlessness*. *Malachi 3:8-12*.

National *Repentance* is the only Way out of *corruption* on all social levels.
Read *Jeremiah 3:13-15*.
See chapters 55 (Christian Country) & 163 (National Repentance).
May we never forget our Accountability to GOD for ourselves and others.
Kindly read *Matthew 15:14, Luke 12:48, & 2Corinthians 5:10*.

298

Q: Brother, how should we fight such evil as *blasphemy*?

A: By *James Wood's Dictionary of the Holy Bible (1813), the blasphemy* is, *an immediate offense against GOD, either by ascribing to Him any thing unbecoming His Divine Nature, or by derogating from His Attributes, in ascribing that to the creature which is only due to the Creator*.

Our Holy Bible exemplified that evil more than once, including *Matthew 12:24* (explained in *Verses 25-37*) & *Mark 3:22* (explicated in *Verses 23-30*).
So, first & foremost, don't get involved in blasphemy yourself. Mind the people you speak with, listen to the *Holy Spirit of GOD* as for Right following the Twelfth Commandment. Avoid talking on such matters as our Father GOD & His Church with strangers – mind the Approval of the Spirit (*Peace* in your heart).

Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs,
neither cast ye your Pearls before swine, lest they trample them
under their feet, and turn again and rend you. (Matthew 7:6)

Don't exclude your unwilling provoking people to blasphemy, say, by the *wrong personal example*, so that folks might speak ill about the Church of GOD. Include such a possibility in your next Confession.
No person – other than stupid or a mentally disordered one – can afford him (her) self openly say anything against the Holy Spirit of the LORD.
But every word is a seed that produces a harvest. Note *Proverbs 18:21*.

Q: Am I doomed?. The Bible says that *blasphemy against the Holy Spirit* is unforgivable. I remembered something that I said a while back that I feel is insulting towards the Holy Spirit of God. Looking back, I regret saying it. I'm really anxious right now and need the answer.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: You are right. The blasphemy against the Holy Ghost is unforgivable.
But it is written,

... out of abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.
(Matthew 12:34)

As your heart is abundant with *regret*,
repent in words & deeds. *Proverbs 28:13*. You are not doomed.
See your Hope in *Ecclesiastes 9:4* and the Way in *Luke 15:20*. Godspeed.

Q: Why is “O my God” (OMG) considered *blasphemy*?. As a relatively new Christian Convert, attending an Evangelical Church, this confuses me. It seems people often say, OMG, quoting it, e.g., *Psalms 22:2, 25:2, & 59:1*.

Q: I don’t understand why citing *Psalm 22:2* (without listeners knowing the source) the OMG is *blasphemous.* (?)

Q: Am I correct that such an accusation is not about the phrase itself but in saying it without God in mind?

Q: By that conclusion, does a common phrase, “Thank God”, becomes *blasphemous* when it is not praising God?

Q: Where is the *line* drawn between blasphemy and not blasphemy?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: We spoke on this subject in chapters 22 (The Third Commandment), 492 (The evil of blasphemy), and the beginning of this one. Kindly read.
Your question is important. What you write about some “modern-day listeners” I would qualify as their lapse in judgment.
Christians should see a Godly Communion from careless talk.
It is better to avoid verbal accusation, “using the LORD’s Name in vain”. Ignorant folks might not know the Name Most Holy – *neither* they should. And a Preacher should never use it in an unknown audience.
Please read the following Verses.

And they that know Thy Name will put their Trust in Thee:
for Thou, LORD, hast not forsaken them that seek Thee. (Psalms 9:10)

The LORD hear thee in the day of trouble;
the Name of the GOD of Jacob defend thee ... (Psalms 20:1)

I will declare Thy Name unto my Brethren:
in the midst of the Congregation will I praise Thee. (Psalms 22:22)

Q: Is gambling a sin?

(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: Why do some folks gamble? – Certainly, to win money.
To win from who? – From other fools obsessed with the same desire.
And, if losing, who wins? – Gamblers, a casino, the devil.
Add to that it is not a joyful but rather nervous time.
Gambling is not a sin but a sure *way* to become a sinner possessed by mammon and such other evils he (she) is apt to.

299

Q: How should we fight such evil as *cruelty*?

A: Thus saith the LORD,

Be not overcome of evil,
but overcome evil with Good. (Romans 12:21)

And,

Charity never faileth ... (1Corinthians 13:8)

The first Scripture teaches the *Strategy*, whereas the second gives us the *Weapon*. I believe that cruelty is a *mental disorder*. Why? Because the Image & Likeness of GOD – Who is Love – has been lost by a sick person to that evil. The last is supported by devil-instigated anger, hostility, murder, pride, indifference, &c.)
A demon tempting to cruelty cooks up the illusion of power, but, in reality, it is the proof of weakness.

The more cruel you are, the more you will hate;
and the more you hate, the more cruel you will become – and so on
in a vicious circle for ever. (C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.132)

By *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary of the English Language* (2001),
cruel means *willfully or knowingly causing pain or distress to others; enjoying the pain or distress of others ...*

In the above definition, I dare take *others* for not only people but the animals as well. It is observed, so far, that *not every* child cruel to animals, birds, and insects, would have had compulsorily grown up a sadist, but *every* sadist had been a cruel child once upon a time. So,

Train up a child in the Way
he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it. (Proverbs 22:6)

When cruelty is evident, it means that the devil's bulldog-grip has already been hard upon the person. However, we are not supposed to label "cruel" the folks possessed by the demons. It would be correct to speak "cruelty", thus recognizing and condemning the evil works of *evil spirits* in the Light of our Understanding. Do not say "cruel", thus making a "statement of fact" so desirable for Satan.

Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of Meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted. Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the Law of Christ. (Galatians 6:1-2)

Remind whosoever enslaved by the devil that, as far as that man or woman is alive, there is always *the Truth, the Way, and the Life* for him (her) to get back to Father GOD.

He looketh upon men, and if any say, I have sinned,
and perverted that which was Right, and it profiteth me not; He will deliver
his soul from going into the pit, and his life shall see the Light. (Job 33:27-28)

Pray for those authors, actors, publishers, producers, and media workers who created "heroes" living well without our Holy Bible – the Word of Wisdom.
Yet they boldly take up the jobs of judges & executioners. Those characters successfully overcome fear but, sadly enough, at the cost of Love & Understanding. Hard it is for those "super-humans" not to fall prey to cruelty.

It is written:

Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves,
but rather give place unto Wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is Mine;
I will repay, saith the LORD. (Romans 12:19; Deuteronomy 32:35)

The Blessed Record of the Church of GOD – *Book of Martyrs*, by *John Fox* – testifies that cruelty-possessed people, as the mad dogs of Satan, do his ill will through the centuries to establish worldly fear above GOD's Love & Freedom.

Happy are those who don't forget the Promise:

Have not I commanded thee?
Be Strong and of Good Courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed:
for the LORD thy GOD is with thee whithersoever thou goest. (Joshua 1:9)

Further references.

Genesis 1:26-28 ..... The Powerful Image & Likeness of GOD.
Exodus 20:13 & *Deuteronomy 5:17* ..... The Sixth Commandment.
Proverbs 12:10 ..... Righteousness vs cruelty.
Matthew 28:18-20, John 16:33, & 1John 3:8 …….. Jesus is our Mighty Backup.
Luke 6:27-36 ..... *Love your enemies* ...
Luke 10:19 & James 4:7 …… Our Promised Power.
Ephesians 5:1 …… Follow GOD's Example.
Ephesians 6:10-18 ……. Our Spirit Weapons.
James 5:19-20 …… Help a sinner to come back to GOD.
1John 5:4 ……..…….. Our Promised Victory.

300

Q: Could you please explain such evil as *wars*?

A: It is written:

And GOD saw the Light, that it was Good:
and GOD divided the Light from the darkness ...
And the LORD GOD called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? ...
And He said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree,
whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? (Genesis 1:4; 3:9,11)

There is a GOD-Established Separation Line in the Spirit World between the Light of Good and the darkness of evil. There is not any gray or neutral zone there. We are free to choose where to dwell and who to listen to.
Choosing to listen to a lie, we step off from the Wisdom of GOD Who says,

... Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit, saith the LORD of Hosts.
(Zechariah 4:6)

So, right away, we find ourselves in the darkness of the devil. *2Corinthians 4:4.*

The war – imperial, racial, civil, religious, &c. – is of the devil since the mass madness of hatred, massacres, cruelty, robbery, and devastation are abundant there. Satan's lies (the simpletons willingly buy) camouflaged in "patriotism", "heroism", and "freedom", draw people away from their Heavenly Father right into a spiritual bog of unbelief, murder, enmity, pride, fear, contempt, and such – the way of sin unto death. Lo, there are few "heroes" in the above wars – much rather *criminals & victims*.
See "Q & A" chapters 9 (Military) & 26 (Killing Canaanites. Ukrainian Defense).

We spoke about GOD's Punishment and His Harvest Law in chapters 64 & 503, respectively. I have every reason to believe that such evil as war is nothing but our harvest. And since unbelievers & evildoers have always been in the majority, what do we have to expect? Consider *Isaiah 42:24-25 & Galatians 6:7.*
In chapter 21, we discussed the problem of voting. Please read.
Choosing the servants of Satan to rule our countries, we are not free from the full *Responsibility* for the consequences.

Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind.
And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch. (Matthew 15:14)

301

Q: Could you please explain the Word *Amen,*
including that in the *Book of Revelation 3:14*?

A: *Brown's Bible Dictionary (1789)* runs,
Amen – 1. True; Faithful; certain ... Verily ; and especially when doubled, it approaches toward the Solemnity of an Oath (John 3:3). 2. So be it : or so shall it be (Jeremiah 28:6). ... Revelation 1:18. Christ is called the Amen; He is the God of Truth ; is the Substance of Revealed Truth ; the Infallible Prophet, and the Faithful and True Witness (Revelation 3:14). All the Promises are Yea and Amen, in Christ : they are Infallibly established by His Word and Oath ; are irrevocably ratified by His death, and sealed by His Spirit (2Corinthians 1:20).

Robinson's Theological Dictionary (1835) defines *Amen* as,
... True, Faithful, certain. It is employed also in affirmation, and was often thus used by our Saviour; Amen, Amen, Verily, Verily. Lastly, it is understood as expressing a wish, as Amen, so be it, (Numbers 5:22); or Amen, Yes: I believe it ...

It is the last but not the least Word in the *Lord's Prayer* (*Matthew 6:9-13*) and the Statement of Faith. We give Glory to GOD, our Father, directly & Faithfully.

For all the Promises of GOD in Him are Yea,
and in Him Amen, unto the Glory of GOD by us. (2Corinthians 1:20)

Our Lord Jesus called Himself so:

These things saith the Amen, the Faithful and True Witness,
the Beginning of the Creation of GOD. (Revelations 3:14)

Having *Amen* spoken, we get the most of the LORD's Divine Attention.
On our part, we are supposed to stand upon our Prayer(s) offered.
Sometimes, Believers might call you asking to pray for somebody in need or danger. Well, why not? But when, after some days, you call them back asking about the person you prayed for, they may silly answer, "Oh, I don't know."
Lo & behold, the LORD GOD should never be regarded as "one of the means" to get healed or have a job done or needs to be met. It is GOD! All other people and things should be kept in their due secondary places. Amen.

302

Q: It is written,

... a time & times & the dividing of time ... (Daniel 7:25)

What do these Words mean?

A: Kindly read the following part of *Daniel's Prophecy*.

... The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon Earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole Earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three kings. And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the Saints of the Most High, and think to change Times and Laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time. But the Judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the End. (Daniel 7:23-26)

By Brother *John Calvin*,

... Those who consider a "time" to mean a "year", are in my opinion wrong. They cite the forty-two months of the Apocalypse 13:5, which make three years and a half ; but that argument is not conclusive, since in that case a year will not consist of 365 days, but the year itself must be taken figuratively for any indeterminate time. It is better then to keep close to the Prophet's Words. A "time", then, is not put for a certain number of months or days, nor yet for a single year, but for any period whose termination is in the Secret Counsel of GOD. They shall be given, then, for a time, says He, and afterwards adds times ; that is, for a continuance of times ; and again, even to a section or division of a time ; meaning, these calamities should come to an end whenever GOD, in Mercy to His Church, should restrain those tyrants by His Wrath against them ...

(Commentary on the Book of Daniel. By John Calvin ... Vol.2, p.68)

These comments sound most convincing to me. That way, we do not depend on any data provided by any historians, the heathen ones first. On the contrary, we ought to check out historical handbooks by the *Written Word of GOD*.
Kindly see *Sirach 3:21-23*, quoted in chapter 208 (The Parable of Harvest Time).

303

Q: Somebody did research and found that from Noah's disembarkation from off his ark to the commencement of the building of the tower of *Babel*, only *one hundred years* passed. Does it make all the construction impossible for the apparent shortage of hands?

(*https://www.worthychristianforums.com* in December 2017.)

A: No, it does not. But I like the research and the interest shown.

So, what has been found impossible with the tower & city of *Babel*?
Not enough workers, bricks, brains, or what?
Kindly go to *Genesis 11:4* (the only relevant Scripture) and try to find there any blueprint, designed measurements (other than "top may reach unto Heaven"), descriptions, materials, number of volunteers, etc., and tell me what's so baffling.
Probably, the researcher just put "*new wine into old skin-bottles"* and wondered why the folks who had barely invented a brick (*Genesis 11:3*) failed to build up a skyscraper. Technically, they could produce but a small hopeless pyramid.

Tell you what, imagine a couple of hundred guys, which found some open, naturally elevated place, not far from where clay could be dug up and intended to create something *high* from their viewpoint. In reality, the measurement thereof has never been a point – the project failed due to some other cause.
Get back to *Genesis 11:4* and see there the reason why the LORD GOD – the Creator of Universe and our Father, Who made us in the *Image & Likeness of GOD* – was offended.

There was only one impossible thing about the Babel project – the *Right Standing with GOD*. Let Satan guide your mind, and you are also in. Had not we all devised *evil* in our heads trying the Patience of GOD? May LORD be praised for His Decision (*Genesis 11:6-8*) to save all sorry-builders from self-destruction.

> *We say that people are proud of being rich, or clever, or good-looking, but they are not. They are proud of being richer, or cleverer, or better-looking than others. If everyone else became equally rich, or clever, or good-looking there would be nothing to be proud about. It is the comparison that makes you proud: the pleasure of being above the rest. Once the element of competition has gone, pride has gone. That is why I say that pride is essentially competitive in a way the other vices are not.*
>
> *(C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.122)*

304

Q: Jesus said,

... be not ye called Rabbi ... (Matthew 23:8)

What is the meaning of these Words?

A: They are more understandable within the context they belong in.

1 Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to His Disciples, 2 Saying, The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' Seat: 3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. 4 For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay them on men's shoulders; but they themselves will not move them with one of their fingers. 5 But all their works they do for to be seen of men: they make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments, 6 And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the Synagogues, 7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi. 8 But be not ye called Rabbi: for One is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are Brethren. (Matthew 23:1-8)

In this Scripture, our Lord condemned the *Teachers,* who learned & taught only the letter of the Holy Word of GOD. Thus they became hypocrites (*Verse 3*).

In the process of Bible Study, we all eventually become more knowledgeable than others. And it is normal. We might even get certified as *Rabbi* (Teacher) or something. Then, the Scripture in question becomes relevant.

May we not even think, let alone call (name, introduce, &c.,) ourselves Rabbi (Reverend, Right Reverend, Doctor, &c.) Correct others by saying, *It is written*, and read them *Matthew 23:1-8*. Why? Simply because *thus saith the Lord*.
Note it is not only in our commented Scripture but also in Lord's Prayer –

For Thine is the Kingdom, and the Power, and the Glory, for ever.
Amen. (Matthew 6:13)

References: *John 3:27 & James 1:17* – The reason why.
1Corinthians 4:7 – A good question.
2Corinthians 10:5 – Order up your mind.

305

Q: How to better understand *Eternity*?
(*https://www.worthychristianforums.com,* December 2017.)

A: We may have a look at the Scriptures and Theological Dictionaries.

The exact term *Eternity* can be found only once,

> *For thus saith the High and Lofty One that inhabiteth Eternity, Whose Name is Holy; I dwell in the High and Holy Place, with him also that is of a Contrite and Humble spirit, to revive the spirit of the Humble, and to revive the heart of the Contrite ones. (Isaiah 57:15)*

Many more Scriptures (including the above-quoted *Pure Cambridge Edition of King James Version*) operate the terms *Eternal*, *Everlasting,* &c.

The following Scriptures are some of many.

Eternal GOD – *Genesis 21:33; Deuteronomy 33:27;*
Psalms 41:13, 90:2, & 93:2; Isaiah 9:6, 40:28, & 63:16;
Jeremiah 10:10; Habakkuk 1:12;
Romans 16:26; 1Timothy 1:17; & Hebrews 9:14.

Eternal Kingdom of GOD – *Psalms 145:13; Daniel 4:3 & 7:27;*
Luke 16:9; 2Corinthians 5:1; Hebrews 9:15;
& 2Peter 1:11.

Eternal Life – *Daniel 12:2;*
Matthew 19:16,29; & 25:46; Mark 10:17,30;
Luke 10:25 & 18:18,30;
John 3:15,16,36; 4:14,36; 5:24,39; 6:27,40,47; 54,68; 10:28;
12:25,50; & 17:2,3;
Acts 13:46,48; Romans 2:7; 5:21; & 6:22,23; Galatians 6:8;
1Timothy 1:16 & 6:12,19; Tit 1:2; & 3:7;
1John 1:2; 2:25; 3:15; & 5:11,13,20; & Jude 1:21.

Eternal Punishment – *Isaiah 33:14; Daniel 12:2;*
Matthew 18:8 & 25:41,46; Mark 3:29;
2Thessalonians 1:9; & Jude 1:7.

Robinson's Theological Dictionary runs,

> (*Eternity* is) *an attribute of GOD, by which is meant infinite duration or existence, without beginning and without end ... With respect to the manner of this eternal existence, it is manifest that in this, it infinitely transcends the manner of the existence of all created beings, even of such as shall exist for ever. It is impossible for their finite minds to comprehend all that is past, or to understand perfectly all things that are present, much less to know all that is future. They cannot have entirely in their power any thing that is to come. Their thoughts, and knowledge, and power, must necessarily have degrees and periods, and be successive and transient, as the things themselves. On the contrary, the Eternal Supreme Cause must of necessity have such a Perfect, Independent, unchangeable Comprehension of all things, that there can be no one point or instant of His Eternal duration, in which all things that are past, present, and to come, will not be as entirely known and represented to Him in one single thought or view, and that all things present and future be equally entirely in His Power and Direction, as if there were, in reality, no succession but all things were actually present at once ...*
>
> The LORD GOD – the Creator of Time – is *Eternal*. A human being has a starting point at birth to live a Life in GOD's Great Creation and, *de facto*, is Free to choose personal Everlasting destiny – Life or death.

Q: (1) What happens to murdered babies?.
Q: (2) Don't babies die for many reasons even before they get *baptized*?
Q: (3) Are they damned to hell?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Edited.)

A: (1) Murdered, aborted, born dead, etc., babies are not sinners and thus destined to Eternal Life only.
(2) Kindly note: *Baptism* does not save anybody. It is just one step of the Way. You may see the Index section for *Baptism* and *Salvation.*
(3) Negative on that. Kindly see the answer (1).

Q: Do children or babies stay as such forever in Heaven?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Hardly they do so. Heaven is Eternal Life, not Eternal childhood.
Please, see the Index for references.

306

Q: In chapter 28, you said that *animals* could see the Spiritual World. How can that possibly be if we, *humans*, far not always able to?

A: First of all, the *Holy Word of GOD* says so, as, in that chapter, it was made clear. Second, my experience in the summer of 1992 might also support that.

I had me two cats. Let's call 'em M (tom-cat) and B (tom-kitten) – not kin.
Once, as I got home, tired of a tedious job search, my cats came up to meet me. But I thought more about a cold shower and a change of clothing.
Therefore, my wardrobe was opened and closed rapidly, and kitten B playing around was not noticed. He got jammed by the door, and I (too late) was awakened from my tired mood by his cry.
I quickly picked him up and saw him dead, no doubt, for how much force does it take to kill a kitten? That shock refreshed me promptly & totally.
The first thought that crossed my (yet not Christian) mind was, "pray!"
So, as it seemed right, I put the poor thing down on the floor, grabbed cat M (which, by the way, also got himself to B), took him away, and closed up in another room. For, as I thought, he would only prevent my Prayer.
I picked up B again, came to our bedroom, and put him on the bed. I started to pray with tears in my eyes, asking GOD to forgive me and to rise B up. I tried to breathe some air into his tiny mouth as a sort of first aid, and some kind of waves started to pass through him with my every breath.
Probably, that was the Breath of the Spirit rather than just air. For incredible as it might seem, B arose and looked at me.
If you have ever had the Blessed experience of an Answered Prayer, you would surely understand my Joy. I took B in my hands and ran to M to share the Blessed news – nobody else was currently home.
Surprisingly, M paid much attention neither to B nor me but instead trotted to the spot where B was laid dead, smelled there a bit, then trotted to the very place where I'd prayed and snuffed around there. Then, M stood upright (his paws hind on the floor and fore on the bed), right at the spot where B revived and looked upward for several seconds. After that, he behaved as if nothing had happened. What did he see up there? Maybe, that was something closed up on me.

Not so many folks believed that story. Me, I heard much more powerful Christian Testimonies and had no reason to doubt 'em. From experience.
Sadly, far not every mistake of mine was thus beautifully rectified. Father GOD knows the reasons. May He be ever praised. Amen.

307

Q: In *Matthew 22:30*, Jesus said,

... in the Resurrection they neither marry,
nor are given in marriage, but are as the Angels of GOD in Heaven.

Does it mean that in Heaven, people won't have their families anymore?

A: To answer this question, we are going to have to consider the context where these Words belong and the Parallel Scriptures.

23 The same day came to Him the Sadducees, which say that there is no Resurrection, and asked Him, 24 Saying, Master, Moses said, If a man die, having no children, his brother shall marry his wife, and raise up seed unto his brother. 25 Now there were with us seven brethren: and the first, when he had married a wife, deceased, and, having no issue, left his wife unto his brother: 26 Likewise the second also, and the third, unto the seventh.
27 And last of all the woman died also. 28 Therefore in the Resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her. 29 Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the Power of GOD. 30 For in the Resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the Angels of GOD in Heaven. 31 But as touching the Resurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was spoken unto you by GOD, saying, 32 I am the GOD of Abraham, and the GOD of Isaac, and the GOD of Jacob? GOD is not the God of the dead, but of the living. (Matthew 22:23-32)

Researching the above text, take away the beginning (*Verses 23-24*) and the ending (*Verses 31-32*) as the latter explains away the former. Remove V*erses 25-27*, which only present a scenario. What remains is most important, namely:

... in the Resurrection whose Wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her. Jesus answered and said unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the Scriptures, nor the Power of GOD. For in the Resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the Angels of GOD in Heaven.

I believe *True Love* is to stand on: *... they shall be One* flesh. (Genesis 2:24)*

** ... a Hebrew word that although could denote the number one can also denote (as in this case) a unified state between two things or people.*
(The footnote in Hebraic Roots Bible 2012)

... they are no more twain, but One flesh. What therefore GOD hath joined together, let not man put asunder. (Matthew 19:6 & Mark 10:8-9)

By these Scriptures, two becomes *One* without any referring, whether in this *temporal* World or *forever*. In *Matthew 22:24-27*, and my humble opinion, the Godly Union based on *True Love* didn't exist at all in any of the seven marriages.

Most probably, the question asked by *Sadducees* was based upon this Scripture,

> *If brethren dwell together, and one of them die, and have no child, the wife of the dead shall not marry without unto a stranger: her husband's brother shall go in unto her, and take her to him to wife, and perform the duty of an husband's brother unto her. And it shall be, that the firstborn which she beareth shall succeed in the name of his brother which is dead, that his name be not put out of Israel. (Deuteronomy 25:5-6)*

Considering the above Text in the Light of the *New Testament*, we can see quite different meanings for the following terms.

> *Brethren* – Christian Congregation, Local Church, Body of Christ.
> *Stranger* – unbeliever, sinner, apostate, a deserter from the Army of GOD.
> *Duty of a Brother* – Christian care for those left without family & home.
> *Name* – Christian.
> *Israel* – Church of GOD, Body of Christ, True Descendants of Abraham.

None of those seven marriages mentioned above could ever continue in Heaven (given the persons involved would be found *Worthy** to enter there).
Why? For there was no *Love* in any one of those unions.
Why not? For *thus saith the LORD* in *Genesis 2:24 – One*.
All seven men and that woman, as it is seen in *Verses 25-26*, accepted the power & authority of physical death over the Love & Oneness of Husband & Wife.
Nobody forbids *remarrying* when a spouse is lost. But forget about *Love Eternal*.
Not agree? May we get all the Answers in *Heaven*, provided we shall get there.

> ** And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this World marry, and are given in marriage: but they which shall be accounted Worthy to obtain that World, and the Resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the Angels; and are the Children of GOD, being the Children of the Resurrection. (Luke 20:34-36)*

Further references: *John 4:16-18* – The Parallel to our viewpoint.
1Timothy 5:3-12 – The Widows indeed.
1John 3:14 – The Love Eternal.

Q: I was widowed twice by the age of 44. My first husband, whom I was married to for 7 years, was killed in the line of duty. We had one biological daughter and adopted 3 daughters. My second husband, whom I was married to for 12 years, was killed in an accident. We adopted 4 daughters and raised his son. I loved both men very much. If I go to Heaven, which of my husbands do I spend Eternity with?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: As far as my understanding goes, if you and one of or both your Husbands will end up in Heaven, you spend Eternity as good Friends, not as Spouses. GOD bless you.

Q: I'm very depressed because the Bible says there will be no Marriage in Heaven. They say relationships will be different, something much more amazing than now. But this really depresses me because I want to spend a lot of time with my loved ones and have the same Love and relationship I had with them on Earth, and I especially want a Spouse to love and be with. What do you think relationships are like in Heaven?

Q: Will we be closer to our loved ones, or will our minds be mostly filled with Jesus? God bless.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Edited.)

A: It is written,

... since the Beginning of the World men have not heard,
nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, O GOD, beside Thee,
what He hath prepared for him that waiteth for Him. (Isaiah 64:4)

Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man,
the things which GOD hath prepared for them that love Him. (1Corinthians 2:9)

It is also said,

Trust in the LORD with all thine heart;
and lean not unto thine own understanding. (Proverbs 3:5)

So, trust Him.
Thank you for your good question and, GOD bless you.

308

Q: Brother, how to know that I'm saved?
(*https://www.worthychristianforums.com,* January 2018)

A: Good question. The answer is – *in Heaven*. Kindly read *Hosea 6:2-3*.
It is easier to tell – *how not to get saved* – since it is when we *sin willfully*.

For it is impossible for those who were once Enlightened, and have tasted of the Heavenly Gift, and were made Partakers of the Holy Ghost, and have tasted the Good Word of GOD, and the Powers of the World to come, if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto Repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of GOD afresh, and put Him to an open shame. (Hebrews 6:4-6)

For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the Knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth no more Sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful looking for of Judgment and Fiery Indignation which shall devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' Law died without Mercy under two or three witnesses; of how much sorer Punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of GOD, and hath counted the Blood of the Covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of Grace? (Hebrews 10:26-29)

The above two Scriptures are the Warnings, aren't they? However, they are not the most terrible. Read the following.

> *Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven; but he that doeth the Will of My Father which is in Heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy Name? and in Thy Name have cast out devils? and in Thy Name done many Wonderful Works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21-23)*

Tell you what, keep going. Nothing more. Get out of the spirit dirt you may happen to find yourself in and move.

And he arose, and came to his father.
But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. (Luke 15:20)

Find out and do the *Will of GOD* for your Life as best you can. GOD bless you.

309

Q: In chapter 156, *51st Psalm* was discussed as a Prayer of Repentance.
Yet the following Verse seems to be of a separate meaning – doesn't it?

Against Thee, Thee only, have I sinned, and done this evil in Thy Sight:
that Thou mightest be justified when Thou speakest,
and be clear when Thou judgest. (Psalms 51:4)

A: Yes, it does. Please note the Title –

A Psalm of David, when Nathan the Prophet came unto him,
after he had gone in to Bath-sheba.

Thus, the Verse in question is a part of a *Prayer* for to be forgiven.
Like everything in the Bible, these Words stay instructive to all of us.

That particular *sin of adultery* was the failed Test of GOD's Servant David. And that failure, in turn, stimulated other evils committed by him and other people (Bath-sheba & Joab).
At the same time, Believers Strong in the LORD, such as Uriah, stood the Test (as they always do). See the story in *2Samuel 11* and the Teaching of *1John 5:18*.

That's why the people trying to justify themselves by thinking & blaming others to be the reason for their failures are wrong. For, as our Scripture teaches, every sin is a strictly *personal* matter.

Against Thee, Thee only, have I sinned ...

These Words give a hint that many would do the same in like circumstances since many are wicked and few Righteous. But does it serve us as an adequate excuse or absolution?
I remember one of my Confessions when my Witness (the experienced Pastor) could not understand at all where the *sin* was until I quoted the relevant Scripture,

... be content with your wages. (Luke 3:14)

Even so,

Sow to yourselves in Righteousness, reap in Mercy;
break up your fallow ground: for it is Time to seek the LORD,
till He come and rain Righteousness upon you. (Hosea 10:12)

310

Q: Please explain the *Fire Baptism* spoken in *Matthew 3:11-12*.
(*https://www.worthychristianforums.com,* January 2018.)

A: It is written,

... He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with Fire:
Whose Fan is in His hand, and He will throughly purge His Floor,
and gather His Wheat into the Garner; but He will burn up the chaff
with Unquenchable Fire. (Matthew 3:11-12)

Considerations.

> *... Christ alone bestows all the Grace which is: figuratively represented by outward Baptism, because it is He Who "sprinkles the conscience" with His Blood. It is He also Who mortifies the old man, and bestows the Spirit of Regeneration. The word Fire is added as an epithet, and is applied to the Spirit, because He takes away our pollutions, as fire purifies gold ...*
> *(John Calvin, Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists, pp 199-201)*

> *The Descent of the Holy Spirit on the Day of Pentecost, in the form of fiery tongues lighting on the Apostles, with the effects produced, on their minds and by their Ministry, was a remarkable Fulfilment of this Prediction ...*
> *(Thomas Scott, The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes ...)*

> *In the thought of a Baptism with Fire there are three ideas.*
> *1. The idea of Illumination. ... In Fire there is Light and Guidance. Jesus is the Beacon Light to lead men into Truth and to guide them Home to GOD.*
> *2. The idea of Warmth. ... When Jesus comes into a man's life, He kindles his heart with the Warmth of Love towards GOD and towards his fellow men. Christianity is always the Religion of the kindled heart.*
> *3. The idea of Purification ... Purification involves Destruction; for the Purifying Flame burns away the false and leaves the True.*
> *(William Barclay, The Daily Study Bible)*

I believe *Matthew 3:11-12* is the Warning to every Christian, the whole Church of GOD, and humankind.

Please, see the Index section for *Confession* and *Unity of Saints*.

311

Q: Speaking of *Spirit War*, how are we supposed to fight such *evil* as mental or intellectual *emptiness* (folly, foolishness, stubbornness, etc.)?

A: Verily, that kind of *emptiness* should be filled up with the *Word of GOD*.

For much the same way as "common sense vs laziness" (see chapter 295), we encounter a trap of "false beliefs, teachings, directions, and so forth against emptiness". Demons do not fight one another, but, strongly united, they would "help" us, humans, from one spiritual dung into another.
Our Lord Jesus well explained that in *Matthew 12:43-45* & *Luke 11:24-26*.

> *43 When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. 44 Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. 45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation. (Matthew 12:43-45)*

In *Verse 44*, see the favorable condition for the demon to get back: an *emptiness*.

A *lie* is a chief weapon of Satan and his demons to persuade people of whatsoever and push them whithersoever but Truth. And the evil weapon of *criticism* is always ready at hand to back up every satanic work.
An evil spirit would play "advisor" to keep whatever position – emptiness or false science, common sense or laziness, indifference or hostility, cowardice or anger. He will offer "for free" any arguments to support one devilish madness "against" another and always, of course, against the Truth.

Remember the first rule of war – *Don't underestimate your enemy!* – and perceive that our Spirit Warfare is not the exception therefrom.
Consider well our human history to admit that evil spirits are quite psychologists of all times. Our human intellect is not able to surpass or fool around theirs.

From the Beginning of Creation, observing our spiritual abilities & weaknesses, watching & analyzing our intellectual development, the demons had always been one step ahead. They take the right arrows – temptations – to shoot at our minds. Kindly read chapter 184 (Temptations).

Of all evil weapons & spirit dirt at their disposal, the demonic powers of Satan fire *emptiness* at all those who are most liable to take an "easy" way of living.

Christians have this Powerful Word of Truth –

Behold, they shall surely gather together, but not of Me:
whosoever shall gather together against thee shall fall for thy sake ...
No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper ... (Isaiah 54:15,17)

And through Apostle Paul (*Ephesians 6:10-18*), the LORD, our Father, continues to teach us how to arm ourselves with the right Weapons.

We also ought to remember our Great Commission – the Twelfth Commandment. Note that most part of humankind has not been filled with the Word of Truth.

Further references: *Deuteronomy 6:4-5* – Jewish Creed.
Joshua 1:8 – The Right mind.
Isaiah 26:3 – Godly mind is rewarded with Peace.
Hosea 4:6 – The rejected Knowledge.
2Corinthians 4:3-4 – The works of Satan.
2Corinthians 10:5 – Mind your mind.
Philippians 4:8 – ditto.

Q: (1) Have you ever dealt with Spiritual Warfare?
Q: (2) If yes, could you please explain your experience?
Q: (3) On this matter, some passages in the Bible are quite *vague*, don't they?
Q: (4) For example, what does the "flaming arrows of the evil one" mean?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Edited.)

A: In this book, our Spirit War was first discussed in chapter 39. Please read. You may note all *Spirit War* chapters in the Contents & Index sections.
(1) Have I dealt with it? Well, everybody does it daily, you & me inclusive.
(2) My experience (as well as that of whoever) is too long to explain. Only today, I fought with laziness, anger, bitterness, etc., which stuff was not from my Father GOD. From Him were relevant Bible Verses reminded.
(3) The Bible is not "vague" regarding Spiritual Warfare. It is we who aren't prudent enough. Take GOD on His Word in *Jeremiah 33:3*, and study on.
(4) Do you ask about *Ephesians 6:16* (which belongs to *6:10-18*)? And the nearest example is your word "vague", which belongs to *doubt*. See chapter 104 (The Promised Teacher) and *Faith* in the Index. Godspeed.

312

Q: Brother, in chapter 36 (The power of Satan), we touched on the subject of *our spiritual Authority* over all the Earth. Could we please discuss it on?

A: Sure. Our spiritual Authority was sealed by the *Holy Will of GOD*.
It is written so in *Genesis 1:26-31*. Read it attentively.

The LORD, our Heavenly Father, said and sharp enough, *to subdue the Earth* and have *Dominion*. That may seem "strange" to a modern man. How can one possibly have any "dominion" over wild beasts other than using a good rifle? Heck, meet a tiger, or a bear, or (as that is in my neighborhood) get surrounded by half-a-dozen street dogs claiming "their rights" for that particular piece of dirt. (Beware to get *afraid* in such a case!)

Nevertheless, thus saith the LORD – *Dominion*. Do, therefore, ponder the term. Our GOD is Spirit. We are created in His Image & Likeness, and our Dominion over His Creation is a *spiritual* one. See *Psalms 8:4-6 & 115:16* in this light.

By *Genesis 1:29-30*, Father GOD gave all fruits of trees and herbs for food unto people & animals. Our Beginning was not about eating one another. But what is now? We made our food of animals and (therefore) the last also became "perfect hunters" and got used to catching & eating other creatures (humans inclusive). GOD Himself, seeing our hardened hearts, divided for us the wild living things into "clean" and "not clean". Thus, our *Dominion* (not without the evil work of Satan on human brains) had taken that wrong direction. Note well *James 3:7*.

But the Fundamental *Law of Harvest – Galatians 6:7* – remains.
Moreover, the state of ecology around us depends on what we, humans, are.
Kindly consider *Hosea 4:2-3* logically connected with *Proverbs 18:20-21*.
The present state of Nature (within the Timing of GOD's Longsuffering) depends on human beings. Note *Romans 8:19-22 & 1Corinthians 3:21-23.*

There is another aspect of our spiritual Authority – social. A spiritual level of society governs all other aspects of living. The incontrovertible way to a better life *is not* scientific, military, or any other human-made (Satan-instigated) one. It is spiritual, that is, following our Almighty GOD. See *Zechariah 4:6.*

Still another sphere of our spiritual Authority is the War between Good and evil. GOD, our Father, empowers us for the Spirit Warfare. See *Luke 10:19.*

313

Q: In chapter 36 (The power of Satan), standing upon *Genesis 1:28*, you stated that our spiritual Authority over Earth is *irrevokable*. Could you please provide more Scriptural support to that?

A: Well, it is written ln *Isaiah 55:10-11*.

When the LORD, Almighty GOD, has something said, commanded, appointed, etc., it is austere indeed.
We may recall how *Prophet Jonah* was frightened of his Assignment and foolishly tried to run away from GOD. No way. The *Will of GOD* is Holy and cannot be reconsidered, corrected, revoked – you name it.

Compare *Genesis 1:26,28* and *Hebrews 1:13-14*. According to these Scriptures, Humans and Angels are different beings created by GOD. Satan – the one designed to minister – just cannot govern & dominate.
You may see more in our Index for *Angels* and *Satan*.

When some Believers call the evil one “the ruler of this world” because “Adam lost his Authority” or “had surrendered it to Satan”, they pitifully distort the Truth. Lo, what our Father GOD assigned or charged is not that easily transferable. We can give or sell only what He has given us for personal use. Say it is our heart, mind, body, property, or so.

Therefore, that evil “ruler” cannot reign as he would – in that case, our planet and all her living beings, most probably, would have been destroyed so long ago, the pieces flying around the Universe. No, bloody Satan can “boss” only through his spiritually blind servants, namely, fallen angels and those ungodly people who personally & stupidly sold their sorry selves off unto him.

But the LORD is praised – our human race consists not only of those who have blindly chosen to become the slaves of the cursed one. There have always been the Righteous folks too. Their Right words & actions are on the other side of the Balances of GOD.
There is an old say in our lands: *the Earth stands upon such people*.

Reading the following Scriptures, kindly meditate on *o*ur Authority –
Genesis 1:26-28, Psalms 115:16, & Hebrews 2:7-8.

314

Q: Brother, in chapter 56, we spoke about the *stumble-stone of Giving* and mentioned a *Cheerful Giver*. Would you please explain this term?

A: It is written,

Every man according as he purposeth in his heart,
so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity:
for GOD loveth a Cheerful Giver. (2Corinthians 9:7)

Sadly, the term in question has got very different interpretations, as it is preached in the Body of Christ. Thus, many Christians accept the “easy” way we spoke about in chapter 240 (Patching up).
But one may try to tell all givers apart when their money is concerned.

In the world, cheerful givers give and feel the joy of being kind, helpful, noticeable, etc. They keep in mind a *reward* and might give it away to whatever purpose or people, even evil ones. Besides, such a giving is compulsory limited by their worldly c*ommon sense*.
Those Christians, who compromise with the above viewpoints, should be included in that pitiful category too.

The Christian Cheerful Givers give following the Written Word of the LORD.
That way of Giving might well surpass their ability, requires *willpower*, and the lying voice of reason is never listened to. The Joy of Giving may have quite a feeling of Victory over the old self and the devil.
The Reward here is our *Giving Attitude* itself to the Greater Glory of GOD –

Ad Majorem Dei Gloriam – the Latin motto of the Society of Jesus (Jesuits). *<https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Ad_maiorem_Dei_gloriam>* June 2026.

Some Christians have been wrongly taught themselves and instructed others the same falsehood that New Testament revoked the Teaching on Giving written in the “Old Testament” part of the Bible, *Malachi 3:8-12*, in particular. They feel so comfortable under the “New Testament umbrella”.
Yet, the last does not exist, as the following Scriptures teach us accordingly:

Mark 10:21,28; & 12:43-44; Luke 18:28; Acts 2:44-45 & 4:34-37;
& 2Corinthians 8:1-4.

315

Q: In chapter 58, you briefly defined *Understanding* and differentiated it from *Knowledge* & *Wisdom*. Could you please exemplify the actual work of *Understanding* daily in *Christian Living*?

A: First, we have to compare our definition with the following one collected from *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary of the English Language, 2001*.

So, by the above Dictionary, *to understand* means,
... to perceive the meaning of; grasp the idea of; comprehend ... to assign a meaning to; interpret ... to grasp the significance, implications, or importance of ... to construe in a particular way ... to have a systematic interpretation or rationale, as in a field or area of knowledge ...

Well – so far, so good – there are no significant contradictions.
Please take the following eight Scriptures where the *Understanding* is mentioned – all from the *Book of Proverbs.* By way of interpreting, we can find their actual implementation.
(Let me remind you that the capitals in the Scriptures are mine, as, throughout this book, I dare to correct Christian Editors & Publishers of the Holy Bible.)

1. *But whoso committeth adultery with a woman lacketh Understanding: he that doeth it destroyeth his own soul. (Proverbs 6:32)*

On the road of *adultery*, one acts contrary to the *Seventh Commandment* (chapter 126) of the Law of GOD, drifts off the Right Track, and risks his (her) Salvation.

2. *Forsake the foolish, and live; and go in the way of Understanding. (Proverbs 9:6)*

Here, "the foolish" are *spiritually blind unbelievers* void of Understanding.
When all is said as per our *Twelfth Commandment* (see "Q & A"chapter 43) and that to no desirable result, we are better off leaving them to GOD.

3. *He that is slow to wrath is of great Understanding: but he that is hasty of spirit exalteth folly. (Proverbs 14:29)*

We always have a "reason" to get angry, as the devil sees to it. So, dealing with the folks who, as Satan's spirit-blind puppets, wrong us, we should take our stand against their puppet masters – the demons – and resist the evil of anger.

4. *He that refuseth Instruction despiseth his own soul:*
but he that heareth Reproof getteth Understanding. (Proverbs 15:32)

This way, the *Instruction* & *Reproof* to be heard are those of Father GOD taught by His Written Word and Faithful Servants, not of Satan spoken by unbelievers.

5. *How much better is it to get Wisdom than gold! and to get*
Understanding rather to be chosen than silver! (Proverbs 16:16)

Wisdom & *Understanding* are often presented as synonyms in the Holy Bible. Even so, we are supposed to have Father GOD first in our Life (see chapter 15) and get our Understanding from His Word only. That Understanding might often direct us the way looking (from the worldly point of view) not profitable at all.

6. *A man void of Understanding striketh hands,*
and becometh surety in the presence of his friend. (Proverbs 17:18)

Verily, we should not promise anything on behalf of anybody.
In this regard, mind the *Ninth Commandment* discussed in chapter 129.

7. *Wisdom is before him that hath Understanding;*
but the eyes of a fool are in the ends of the Earth. (Proverbs 17:24)

Here, we can see *Wisdom* as not a synonym for *Understanding*. A person of *Understanding* (Godly reasoning) far not always ought to seek his (her) home far away. Why? – *Wisdom* (Godly actions) might be right where a Christian is now.

8. *Even a fool, when he holdeth his peace, is counted wise: and he*
that shutteth his lips is esteemed a man of understanding. (Proverbs 17:28)

Mind your verbal conversation. Say nothing if the *Holy Ghost* is silent.

Of course, the actual work of Christian Understanding is far broader than in the above suggestions. *Understanding* is based on the *Knowledge* received from the Written Word of GOD, as it is studied. *Knowledge & Understanding* grow as our communicating with the *Holy Spirit of GOD* and following Him continue.

Further references: *Daniel 11:33* – The Understanding of Evangelists.
Malachi 3:18 – Seeing the Righteous from the wicked.

316

Q: Brother, you spoke about *Threefold Baptism*, *Baptism in the Holy Spirit*, and *Water Baptism* in chapters 66, 65, & 20. *Baptism in the Name of Jesus* has not been discussed separately. Could we please clarify the subject?

A: Of course. To start from, I'll mention what has already been made clear.

The *Baptism in the Name of Jesus* is all about our coming to the only Lord & Savior, becoming Christians, joining a Local Congregations of Saints or a Christian Ministry, and taking up Duties & Responsibilities. The latter should have with due regard to the Gifts we are blessed with by our Father GOD, the actual needs of the Congregation, and following the Great Commission.
It is the Baptism into One & Indivisible Body of Christ.

Kindly note that Baptism in the Name of Christ neither can nor does guarantee our Salvation. Nor can we call ourselves "saved", as so many Christians do. For it is only the beginning of the Way. The Road ends at the Day of Second Coming of Lord Jesus, or when we die, whatever happens first.
The crucial thing is to keep going and not fall away.

The place & form of this Baptism is not important at all.
We can repeat the Prayer of Repentance after some Evangelist or Pastor.
Or else (as it was in my case), be alone in the room, raise your hands to Almighty GOD, and read that Prayer from some Evangelical leaflet. Or it may be performed whatever other Godly way.

The chief aspect of that Baptism is our coming to the Lord wholeheartedly, voluntarily, and His Welcome.

Baptism in the Name of Jesus is an integral part of *Threefold Baptism*.

Scriptural references.

Matthew 28:19-20 & Mark 16:15-16 – The Twelfth Commandment.
Mark 10:38 – Lord Jesus' Question.
Luke 12:8-9 – The Baptism tested.
Acts 2:38 – The Baptism for the Remission of sins & Gift of the Holy Ghost.
Romans 6:3-4 & Colossians 2:12 – The Baptism into Jesus' death.
Galatians 3:26-27 – The Baptism into the Children of GOD by Faith in Christ.

317

Q: How do you understand a *New Creature* in these Scriptures:

Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a New Creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become New. (2Corinthians 5:17)

For in Christ Jesus neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision, but a New Creature. (Galatians 6:15)

A: In *2Corinthians 5:17*, a *New Creature* may well stand for a *New Beginning*, since "*... old things are passed away ... all things are become New*."

That should include stopping dead all inherited *curses*.

A New Creature is nobody else but a Christian.
Therefore, he (she) ought to become poor in spirit (as the old worldly values are put aside), receive the Gift of the Holy Ghost, be willing to be filled more & more of Him, and get spiritually hungry for the Written Word of GOD.

In *Galatians 6:15*, we can see a New Creature as the one who has received the only Right Circumcision – not outwardly but *inwardly* – which, regretfully, has not been comprehended by many Believers before & after the Christ's Ministry.

In this regard, our *inward* Baptism cannot be overestimated.
We become New Creatures – Christians, the Parts of One & Indivisible Church of GOD – upon receiving Baptism in the Name of Jesus.

The *"old things are passed away"* when we are inwardly cleansed utilizing the Sacrament of Water Baptism.
And *"all things are become New"* when the Baptism in the Holy Spirit of GOD made our hearts perceiving and subordinate to His Still Small Voice.

The Gospel is concerned with a New Life, with a Birth upward onto a New level of being, and until it has effected such a Rebirth it has not done a Saving work within the soul. (A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)

References: *Jeremiah 24:7 & 31:33; Ezekiel 11:19 & 36:26; John 17:21-23; Acts 2:44-47 & 4:32-35; 1Corinthians 2:16; 2Corinthians 10:5; James 1:26; 2:14-26; & 4:11-12; 2Peter 1:5-8; 1John 1:7 & 5:4,18.*

The following Free Verse may help us better understand the *New Creature*.

One night I dreamed I was walking along the beach with the Lord.
Many scenes from my life flashed across the sky.
In each scene I noticed footprints in the sand.
Sometimes there were two sets of footprints,
other times there were one set of footprints.
This bothered me because I noticed that during the low periods of my life,
when I was suffering from anguish, sorrow or defeat,
I could see only one set of footprints.
So I said to the Lord,"You promised me Lord, that if I followed You,
You would walk with me always.
But I have noticed that during the most trying periods of my life
there have only been one set of footprints in the sand.
Why, when I needed You most, You have not been there for me?"
The Lord replied, "The times when you have seen only one set of footprints,
is when I carried you."

(Mary Stevenson, Footprints In The Sand, 1939, https://www.footprints-inthe-sand.com/index.php?page=Poem/Poem.php, January)

Q: Is it possible to invite Jesus into your spirit, thus relinquishing all control of your spirit into the Hands of God, and then arm-wrestle your spirit out of His Hands by a sin?

(Signed: *Christian (non-denominational*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: Yes, it is possible. Notwithstanding the Statement of *John 10:27-29*, our *Free will* remains, thus allowing us to take the way of sin. Then, Judgment per *Ezekiel 18:24; Hebrews 6:4-6 & 10:26-29* steps in.

Q: Is it wrong to be thankful or happy for someone's death if he (she) was a horrible person?

(Signed: *Christian, Catholic*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: Yes, it is wrong. If, by our limited understanding, a person is "horrible", and even if that opinion would be in line with the Judgment of LORD GOD, his (her) death could mean the Door to Eternal Life shut on that person. Hardly our Heavenly Father will be happy at that. And neither should we.

318

Q: How to properly differentiate between these two sorrows –

For Godly sorrow worketh Repentance to Salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death. (2Corinthians 7:10)

A: This Scripture is quite self-explanatory and independent. Yet, to be sure of our interpretation, we can consider it within the context.

I nowe reioyce, not that ye were sorie, but that ye sorowed to Repentance: for ye sorowed Godly, so that in nothing ye were hurt by vs. For Godly sorowe causeth Repentance vnto Saluation, not to be repented of: but the worldly sorowe causeth death. For beholde, this thing that ye haue bene Godly sory, what great Care it hath wrought in you: Yea, what Clearing of yourselues: Yea, what Indignation: Yea, what Feare: Yea, howe Great Desire: Yea, what a Zeale: Yea, what Reuenge: in all things ye haue shewed your selues, that ye are Pure in this matter.

(2Corinthians 7:9-11, Geneva Bible 1599)

As it is, I rejoice, not because you were grieved, but because you were grieved into Repenting; for you felt a Godly grief, so that you suffered no loss through us. For Godly grief produces a Repentance that leads to Salvation and brings no regret, but worldly grief produces death. For see what Earnestness this Godly grief has produced in you, what Eagerness to clear yourselves, what Indignation, what Alarm, what Longing, what Zeal, what Punishment! At every point you have proved yourselves Guiltless in the matter.

(2Corinthians 7:9-11, Revised Standard Version, 1952)

Godly sorrow is our apprehension and deep inward remorse of error(s) or sin(s) we made or committed against the LORD, our Father. His Holy Spirit, through our conscience, calls for necessary corrections to be made by us, starting from a sincere Confession. Why the Holy Spirit? For it is written,

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above, and cometh down from the Father of Lights, with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. (James 1:17)

The *sorrow of the world* is nothing but suffering every personal loss – kin, love, friendship, job, property, etc., etc. – all from a worldly viewpoint. The devil continuously reminds us of the “disadvantages” in the world we will bear. He comes with his time-tested *lies*: despair, self-pity, depression, revenge, and so on.

Depending on the person they have a business with, the demons chose their evil tactic, whether to lead the suffering one to self-destruction or worldly methods of reparations, compensations, etc. Both ways are designed for, directed to, and, eventually, end up with *eternal death*.

References.

Psalm 42:7-8 – in your sorrows mind your GOD.
Psalm 43:5 – in your sorrows hope in your GOD.
Psalm 73:23-28 – in your sorrows trust your GOD.
Psalm 90:10 – the worldly sorrows.
Proverbs 10:22 – a worldly sorrow is not from GOD.
Proverbs 14:12-13 – the worldly ways are sorrowful in the long run.
Proverbs 17:21 – the sorrow of parents.
Ecclesiastes 1:18 – the wisdom of the world brings about only sorrow.
Ecclesiastes 7:2-4 & 11:9-10 – a sorrow is better than a merrymaking.
Isaiah 53:4 – mind the Cross of Christ.
Jeremiah 9:20 – teach Godly sorrow.
Joel 2:12-13 – Godly sorrow.
1Thessalonians 4:13 – ... concerning them which are asleep ...
Revelation 21:4 – ... GOD shall wipe away all tears from their eyes ...

Q: (1) If you're a Christian and continuously sin, do you go to hell?.
Q: (2) Why, for a Christian, is it hard to live a Godly Life? Mostly, I fail.
Q: (3) If I were to die as a Christian, knowing that I've sinned, do I go to hell?
Q: (4) Would I have to repent after every sin I commit?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1 & 3) The answer to your questions and a post's title is,
No, given you would repent. *Proverbs 28:13* & *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
Note, *continuously sinning* means something is missing from *Godly Life*.
See our next chapter, 319 (The Beginning).
(2) Yes, *to live a Godly Life* is hard in an unbelieving society.
Read the words of Master Luther at the end of the first part of chapter 319.
You *fall from the Lord* when compromising with the devil & unbelievers.
Matthew 6:24. Kindly see chapter 40 (Compromise).
(4) Repent every time the Holy Ghost via your conscience rebukes you due to a sin committed. Mind *Psalms 41:4* & *Matthew 6:12*.
Thanks for your honest sharing, and GOD bless you.

319

Q: How can Christian Beginners work out their Salvation as that is written in *Philippians 2:12*?

A: As we made it clear in chapter 77 (The Way of Salvation), nobody is saved by a *Prayer of Repentance*. It is just a first step on the *Right Track* to follow. The following suggestions may help.

1. Christian Study. *John 6:33,35,48,51*.
The best way to study the Bible is from *Genesis* to *Revelation*, over & over.
For it cannot be mastered like a textbook. The Holy Bible is not a collection of some wise folks' ideas. It is our Father GOD speaking to you through His Written Word. The Holy Scriptures were written down by GOD's Prophets & Apostles of Christ but dictated or otherwise inspired by the Holy Spirit. *2Peter 1:20-21*.
No matter how many times the Scriptures are scrutinized. At every new reading, the LORD reveals us more & more by *Portions* of Knowledge.
The Holy Bible is our Precious Treasure, the Mighty Weapon, and the only Spirit Food. It is real *Communion with GOD*, the Way, the Truth, and the Life.
Christian handbooks may help to understand & implement the Holy Scriptures better, purify your mind from worldly reason, and direct you GOD-ward. Pray for the Right books to come your way. But even without manuals, Teachers, and Schools, our Holy Bible is well enough, given you diligently *study* & *obey* it.

2. Meditate & talk on the Word continuously. *Deuteronomy 6:7 & Psalms 35:28*.
Renew your mind & speech by this New subject. The Holy Ghost will remind you of the Scriptures to follow. *John 14:26*. The Bible has no contradictions.

3. Obey the Word uncompromisingly. *Deuteronomy 30:11-14 & Jeremiah 7:23*.
No matter what the World or Church might say, the Bible is your Highest & Final Authority in all issues. *Matthew 11:12 & Luke 10:19*. GOD is First in your Life. Obedience to Him is the Way to Revelation Knowledge & True Understanding.

4. Find *your* Local Church. *Acts 2:42-47; 4:32-37; & Luke 11:9*.
It is a Christian Congregation or Ministry, which stands firmly upon the Word of GOD, serves Him by Good Works, does not compromise with the World, and seeks Unity with other Congregations. See yourself as a Member of One Church of GOD and act accordingly. Find your best Friends in the Body of Christ. The Word of GOD will give you the Understanding of people & values. Far not every Believer is one to share all your questions, problems, and plans with. But seek, and ye shall find. Help to build up the Union, not a sect. Worship GOD together.

Communicate. Mind the New Commandment of Christ. *John 13:34* & *1John 4:7*.

5. Train up your *Giving* Attitude. *Malachi 3:10*. Tithe to your Church, work for Charity, help the needy. Giving is your Holy Obligation & Prerogative, Test & Proof of Faith, and Mighty spiritual Weapon. Sacrifice in Faith & Praise.

6. Take time for Confession & Prayer. Do mind *Matthew 6:9-13* & *James 5:16*. Open your heart to the LORD. Intercede for Saints, unbelievers, your homeland, authorities, those in need. Remember to be Thankful when GOD answers you.

7. Neither forget nor underestimate your enemy. *Isaiah 54:15 & James 4:7*.
It is Satan. His chief arm against you is a lie. He attacks us by the evil words & actions of his spiritually blind puppets. These are fiery darts of the devil: the thoughts of compromise, reason, mammon, fear, pride, lust, laziness, and so on. Stay on the Word. Your Weapon against the devil is spiritual: *It is written* ...

8. Stay Holy. *1Peter 1:16*. Try your best to live as a Christian should.
Even leaving everything for Charity's sake, you lose nothing. Don't work where carnal methods of getting rich are rules. *Labor not to be rich. (Proverbs 23:4)*
Keep off those who serve the devil. Avoid ungodly thoughts & conversations, publications & broadcasts. Remember, your words produce a harvest of Good or evil. Christian, as none else, should always be able to say *No* to the World.
You have been given the Power to act upon the Word and overcome the devil.

9. Seek, find, & follow GOD's Will for your Life. *Romans 12:2 & 1Peter 2:15*.
Where to live & work? Who to marry? How to serve Father GOD? And so on.
His Will never contradicts His Written Word. Commune with the Holy Ghost.

10. Walk in Divine Health & Prosperity. *Proverbs 4:20-22 & 3John 1:2*.
Know, it is the Holy Will of GOD for you. Resist all lies of the devil. Don't accept any thoughts about sickness, pain, poverty, want, hardships, losses, and such. Satan whispers to you, "There is no way." But, *I am the Way*, says Jesus. Thus saith the LORD: *Fear nothing, for I am with thee ... (Isaiah 41:10)*

May GOD bless you!

> *... if you wish to be a Christian, and confess or preach your Lord, you must be always expecting to be snapped at and cast out, as one that has challenged the world and all the devils ...*
>
> *(Martin Luther, Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount, p.299)*

Q: (1) Virginity is highly prized in the Bible. It was the Requirement that a woman must be a virgin at the time of her Marriage. If she was proved not a virgin but deceived her husband, she might be stoned to death for her deception. However, the state of being a virgin only seems to have value to the one lawfully permitted to *defile* the virgin. What does this say about the nature of sexual relationship between men and women?

Q: (2) Can virginity ever be considered a Virtue if one remains Chaste until dies and never gives his (her) virginity away?

Q: (3) What value did virginity have if you die with it intact? Thanks.

(Signed: *Christian, ex-atheist.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) It is written,

... she shall be called Woman, because she was taken out of Man. Therefore shall a Man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his Wife: and they shall be One flesh. (Genesis 2:23-24)

This Faithfulness to LORD GOD and your Spouse the Holy Bible blesses. See the answer to your question in the Light of this Scripture.
(2) Virginity is a Virtue. Read the meditation in chapter 462 (Monasticism). Yet, the Holy Will of our Father GOD should be sought for and followed.
(3) We can estimate virginity as the way of Obedience to GOD.
Thank you.

Q: (1) I know that everyone sins. But even as a Christian, I still have sins that I struggle with, especially cursing. It is something I'm guilty of. (?)

Q: (2) How many times should I repent?

Q: (3) Every day?

Q: (4) Every time after I sin?

Q: (5) Only after I accepted Jesus into my heart?
I've always been confused about that. I have repented in the past.

(Signed: *Christian (non-denominational)*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: Repentance is your willful turn from sin back to GOD. The Confession should follow. Do it every time you stumble & sin. Yet, that does not mean that repeating a particular sin is normal. Your Christian Counselor, Pastor, or Friend ought to back you up. Take up a Ministry Work, if you have not it yet. Kindly see the Index for references. GOD bless you.

320

Q: You know, there are people, Godly and ungodly, healthy and sick, rich and poor, and so forth, sharing Good and evil very *unequally*. At the same time, you speak about GOD's Perfect Justice & His Supreme Control over all His Creation. How to understand such a *discord*?

A: The "discord" is only outward (*Proverbs 21:30* & *Isaiah 55:8*). The *Written Word of GOD* has this Answer to the above as well as any other question –

Call unto Me, and I will answer thee, and shew thee Great and Mighty things, which thou knowest not. (Jeremiah 33:3)

People are Godly and ungodly since we all are blessed with *Free will*, being made in the Image & Likeness of GOD (*Genesis 1:26-27*). Thus we all are created *free* to think, speak, and do whatever we please (*Joshua 24:15*).

However, Father GOD, our Creator, is forever & ever higher than His Creation (see *Ecclesiastes 3:14 & Isaiah 45:23*). Therefore, we, His Appointed Managers (see *Genesis 1:26,28*; *Psalms 8:6 & 115:16*), are under His Supreme Control (see *Isaiah 44:6* & *1Timothy* 2:5) and are going to have to give Him an Account (see *Matthew 12:36, 18:23; Romans 14:10,12; & 2Corinthians 5:10*).

Folks are healthy and sick because there is GOD's Fundamental Law of *Harvest* (a.k.a., the Law of *Sowing & Reaping*), and all His Creation stands firm upon it (see *Genesis 8:22* & *Galatians 6:7*). For the same reason, we are rich and poor (financially, physically, mentally, spiritually) when compared to one another.

The Perfect Justice of the LORD, our GOD, is manifested in His equal distribution of Blessings & Gifts (see *2Chronicles 19:7* & *Isaiah 25:1*) as well as the corresponding Responsibility (see *Luke 12:47-48* & *John 9:41*).
We can read more about GOD's Perfect Justice in *Chapters 48-51 of Jeremiah.*
His Mighty Rod of Correction is in Due Punishment of idolatrous nations.
See *Jeremiah 48:7,13,35; 50:2,38; & 51:17,18,44,47,52*.
The LORD left idolaters to the destructive merciless wars, their due wages.
See *Jeremiah 48:4,18; 49:2,17,18; 49:27; & 50:9,14,22,42*.
The former allies became enemies and enemies allies. *Jeremiah 49:14,31,36*.
The military might is questioned. *Jeremiah 48:14; 49:26; 50:30,36,37; & 51:53*.
Yet, GOD gives the Second Chance to people. *Jeremiah 48:47 & 49:6,39.*
A King called by the LORD "My Servant" (*Jeremiah 25:9*) is His disposable means of Punishment. *Jeremiah 32:28 & 44:30; Ezekiel 26:7; 29:19; & 30:10*.

Later on, a King gets his Punishment the same way. *Jeremiah 50:17-18,25*.
For most of those disposable Instruments of the LORD did not and still do not want to understand His Purpose & Way of Correction and, therefore, do not give Him Glory, either learn anything from what is going on, being full of stupid pride. See *Jeremiah 48:29,42; 49:16; & 50:7,11,31*.
The LORD, our GOD, remembers His Remnant and called them back to Him.
He forgives the Repented ones. See *Jeremiah 50:4-6,19,20 & 51:5,45,50*.

We must not question the LORD GOD other than approaching Him, as Disciples do their only Teacher (*Proverbs 3:5*). Every question coming from outside the Church of GOD should be dealt Wisely with. Avoid blasphemy (*Matthew 7:6*).

> *... the Providence of GOD over us, and for us, is greater than all our own care and concern for ourselves can possibly be.* *(Martin Luther, A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of Genesis, p.70)*

Q: Which stance is more sound? 1. God is Omnipotent, meaning He can do anything & everything, unrestrained and with immense Power.
2. God is Omnipotent in the sense that He is Powerful to the maximum extent *possible*, for He is bound by His Nature.
Q: Seeing number one is bound to lead to *endless debate* on how does number two poses a better solution?
Q: What does it mean to be limited to His Nature?
Q: If He is limited, does that mean He can't do everything?
Q: If so, why does the Bible teach that way?
Q: Sorry if this is a confusing correction: if He is only Powerful enough to the highest possible degree, and not All-Powerful, why teach it that way?

(Signed: Christian, Protestant. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Edited.)

A: It is written, *If we believe not, yet He abideth Faithful: He cannot deny Himself. (2Timothy 2:13)*

In the Bible, you can find many Scriptures teaching us that GOD *cannot* lie, be unjust, design evil, and so forth. All these Statements do not "limit" Him – they present GOD All-Powerful. By *Genesis 1:4*, the LORD GOD divided the Light from the darkness and Good from evil. That Scripture alone makes Him Holy & Omnipotent. Hey, if you *cannot* do evil, does it make you *weak* or *limited*?
Any "endless debate" (as you put it) wastes our time and leads off from GOD.
What the Written Word of the LORD teaches us is the GOD-ward Way.

321

Q: What does the Holy Bible teach us about *our environment*?

A: We touched on the subject in chapter 134, dedicated to *Nature*.

Our GOD-given *Dominion* should be carried out Godly way, considering our GOD's Image & Likeness.

So GOD created Man in His Own Image, in the Image of GOD created He him;
male and female created He them. And GOD blessed them, and GOD said
unto them, Be Fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth, and subdue it:
and have Dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air,
and over every living thing that moveth upon the Earth. (Genesis 1:27-28)

Behold, *Judgment* of LORD GOD is waiting for all *destroyers* of His Creation.

And the nations were angry, and Thy Wrath is come,
and the Time of the dead, that they should be judged,
and that Thou shouldest give Reward unto Thy Servants the Prophets,
and to the Saints, and them that fear Thy Name, small and great;
and shouldest destroy them which destroy the Earth. (Revelation 11:18)

The following small example of Godly education might be found relevant.

It was in Rotterdam, the summer of 1998, the market day. Quite a crowded area, a lot of litter around.
(Dear Dutch folks, please, don't be offended. The same picture can be seen in mine and many other countries too. Hats off to Germany, Japan, and Singapore).
So, passing by, I noticed a little boy also dropped his empty plastic cup. But his father demanded of him to pick it up and carry it to the nearby wastebasket.
I saw tears in the boy's eyes who'd misunderstood that, especially seeing all the mess about him. Indeed, could his cup make any difference? What was all that shame for? Yet, the father squatted in front of his little son and patiently explained to him something in Dutch.
Was that father right? In my humble opinion, Yes. Glory to GOD!

In this regard, it doesn't matter where you live and what nation you belong to.
But your Name *Christian* does.

322

Q: Brother, in chapter 192, we touched on the subject of *Grace*.
Can we talk more about it?

A: Sure. But first, we may want to define *Grace*.

By *Robinson's Theological Dictionary (1835)*,
Grace (is) *... the Aid and Assistance which we received from GOD.*
By *Buck's Theological Dictionary (1850)*,
Grace ... as it relates to GOD, is His Free Favour and Love.

As per the following Scriptures, *Grace* is the *undeserved* Mercy of LORD GOD, giving us *Hope* of Eternal Life and the *Power* for Good Works unto His Glory.

Psalms 84:11 …..... Grace is given to Righteous.
Proverbs 3:34 …..... Grace is given to Lowly.
Zechariah 12:10 …..... Grace is given to wake up conscience.
John 1:16-17 ..... Grace came by Jesus Christ.
Acts 4:32-33 …..... By Grace, we get Approval & Encouragement.
Acts 14:3 …..... The Word of Grace works Signs & Wonders.
Acts 20:32 …..... The Word of Grace is able to build us up.
Romans 3:23-26 …..... Grace works Justification by Redemption in Christ.
Romans 4:15-16 ……. Grace is in order where the Faith is.
Romans 5:1-2 …..... Our Faith gives us access to Grace.
Romans 5:21 …..... Grace reigns through Righteousness unto Eternal Life.
Romans 12:6-8 …..... Grace is manifested in spiritual Gifts.
1Corinthians 15:10 .... Grace is manifested in Good Works.
2Corinthians 4:15 ….. By Thanksgiving, Grace redounds to the Glory of GOD.
2Corinthians 9:8 ……. Grace is able to empower us unto Good Works.
Ephesians 1:7-9 …..... Grace made possible the Forgiveness of sins.
Ephesians 2:8-9 …..... Grace is given free through our Faith only.
Ephesians 4:7 …..... Grace is given unto every one of us in a Right Measure.
2Thessalonians 2:16-17 – Grace gives us Hope.
2Timothy 1:9 …..... Grace is given as per GOD's Purpose in Christ.
Tit 2:11-12 …..... The Teaching of the Grace of GOD.
Tit 3:7 ……..... Justified by Grace, we get the Hope of Eternal Life.
Hebrews 12:28-29 ….. Having Grace, we may serve GOD acceptably.
Hebrews 13:9 ……..... Our heart should be established with Grace.
Jude 1:4 ……..... Beware of false teachings about the Grace of GOD.

323

Q: In the *122nd Psalm*, we can read:

Pray for the Peace of Jerusalem: they shall prosper that love thee.

The question is: why is *Jerusalem* thus above all other cities?

A: Reading the Psalm and hearing the Holy Spirit of GOD,
we may try to find the best interpretation.

A Song of Degrees of David.
1 I was glad when they said unto Me, Let us go into the House of the LORD. 2 Our feet shall stand within thy Gates, O Jerusalem. 3 Jerusalem is builded as a City that is compact together: 4 Whither the Tribes go up, the Tribes of the LORD, unto the Testimony of Israel, to give Thanks unto the Name of the LORD. 5 For there are set Thrones of Judgment, the Thrones of the House of David. 6 Pray for the Peace of Jerusalem: they shall prosper that love thee. 7 Peace be within thy Walls, and Prosperity within thy Palaces. 8 For my Brethren and Companions' sakes, I will now say, Peace be within thee. 9 Because of the House of the LORD our GOD I will seek thy Good.
(Psalm 122, King James Version, Pure Cambridge Edition)

A Song of Degrees of David.
In *Smith's Bible Dictionary*, we can find: *Songs of Degrees, or, more accurately, Songs of Ascents, are fifteen in number, and constitute Psalms 120-134 ... these Psalms are called Songs of Liftings-up, of Goings-up, of Adoring, and of Trusting Him Who dwells on High, and is Most High ...*

1 I was glad when they said unto Me, Let us go into the House of the LORD.
This Joy is expected of GOD and every True Believer when hearing such words. Years ago, on my walk to our Small Groups, I prayed that the Holy Ghost would come with me to help me listen and speak *as the Learned* (*Isaiah 50:4*).

2 Our feet shall stand within thy Gates, O Jerusalem.
Here, Jerusalem might represent *every* Christian Church & Ministry standing firm upon the Written Word of GOD and united within One Body of Christ.

3 Jerusalem is builded as a City that is compact together:
Historically, Jerusalem was the capital of the Kingdom of Israel, the *division* into two separate states came around later. That *must not* be in our Christian Church.

4 Whither the Tribes go up, the Tribes of the LORD, unto the Testimony of Israel, to give Thanks unto the Name of the LORD.

Now, the Tribes of the LORD are *Christians* of all the nations. And the Testimony of Israel is our GOD-ordained *Unity*. We cannot give Thanks unto the Name of the LORD, as blinded denominations. (See *Unity of Saints* in the Index.)

5 For there are set Thrones of Judgment, the Thrones of the House of David.

We can read about the Thrones of Judgment in *Matthew 19:28*, *Luke 22:30*, and *Revelation 20:4*. The Godly Judgment – the Thrones of the House of David – cannot belong among the Believers split up into sects.

6 Pray for the Peace of Jerusalem: they shall prosper that love thee.

We should pray for the Peace – our Commanded Unity – of Jerusalem, which may well stand for all *Shepherds* of the Church of GOD. For, as Jerusalem once upon a time was the capital of Israel, so our Bishops, Pastors, and Teachers were, are, and will ever be the heart of the Body of Christ.

7 Peace be within thy Walls, and Prosperity within thy Palaces. 8 For my Brethren and Companions' sakes, I will now say, Peace be within thee.

Behold the Peace our Lord Jesus spoke about:

Peace I leave with you,
My Peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you.
Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid. (John 14:27)

Our Prosperity also differs from that of the world –

And GOD is Able to make all Grace abound toward you;
that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound
to every Good Work ... (2Corinthians 9:8)

9 Because of the House of the LORD our GOD I will seek thy Good.

In this Verse, the House of the LORD, our GOD, might stand for the Eternal Kingdom of Heaven. Therefore, may the LORD, our Father & His Holy Church be our First Priority.

There is One Body, and One Spirit,
even as ye are called in One Hope of your Calling; One Lord, One Faith,
One Baptism, One GOD and Father of all, Who is above all, and through all,
and in you all. (Ephesians 4:4-6)

324

Q: What can be Scripturally said about “paranormal” stuff?

A: To answer this question, we have to define “paranormal” as something not normal, and see “normal” as it is explained *separately* – by the Word of GOD and the atheistic science.

By *Webster’s Unabridged Dictionary of the English Language (2001)*, *paranormal* (is) *... of or pertaining to the claimed occurrence of an event or perception without scientific explanation, as psychokinesis, extrasensory perception, or other purportedly supernatural phenomena.*

By the Holy Bible,

All things were made by Him;
and without Him was not any thing made that was made. (John 1:3)

Standing on this Scripture only, I state that by & for *Christians*, a “paranormal” label should be rejected. Why? Because everything in both Realms (natural & spiritual) exists as a part of Creation and operates therein under Supreme Control of the LORD GOD, our Creator. Consequently, all happening things are *normal*. Leave “paranormal” to *subnormal* (spiritually blind) brains.

Several things, however, should be made clear about normal and “paranormal”.

By the above Webster’s definition, “scientific explanation” determines “normal” stuff. But does it cover all normal things? I guess a lot of things for scientists are only a matter of their faith in their science. Their answers to folks’ questions arise more & more other questions, up to the dead end.

Say, why an atom is created this & that way? (Let alone the question Who made it so.) Or else, could you please take hydrogen & oxygen and make up the water? And a lot of it? (Let alone a proposition to create those components.)
These simple questions can make every thinking unbeliever see everything around him (her) as “paranormal”.

Regarding the “paranormal” abilities of quite a few people, we ought to remember the Good Principle of Equality in the Perfect Justice of GOD (see chapter 320). Some “extraordinary” powerful abilities can be given by our Heavenly Father to “ordinary” people to serve Him.

Regretfully, not everyone uses his (her) Gift for that Good Purpose.
We can watch Healing Services of Evangelists. Note that all the Praise for the Miracles that happened is offered only unto the LORD, our Heavenly Father.
On the other hand, some TV shows present other people so gifted, which can heal the sick (see chapter 81 – *The devilish healing*), help to find traces of lost kin, assist police investigations, etc. But the praise for such help is pocketed by those "extrasensory" characters. They never praise GOD, do they?
On the contrary, some "dark powers" get noted as those of "great help". That way, the servants of the devil help a few, at the same time deceiving many.

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the Apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an Angel of Light. Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the Ministers of Righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works. (2Corinthians 13-15)

By this simple way – Who receives the Glory? – we can differentiate the Miracles of the LORD and the "paranormal" phenomena of the devil.

For there shall arise false christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very Elect. Behold, I have told you before. (Matthew 24:24-25)

Q: How would you explain the Roman Catholic & East Orthodox view of the incorruptibility of Saints?
I am a Protestant student of a Catholic school and was taught about certain Saints' bodies not decomposing naturally because of Divine Intervention. We were shown pictures of such bodies, as *Saint Madeleine-Sophie Barat*.
I'm aware that most Protestants don't believe in this concept.
Q: So, why the bodies don't decompose? Thanks!

(Signed: *Christian, Protestant.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021.)

A: It is written:

... Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell; neither wilt Thou suffer Thine Holy one to see corruption. (Psalms 16:10)

In my opinion, those phenomena are given us for Signs, not Worship.
Please, see *Revelation 19:10 & 22:8-9*.
Thank you.

325

Q: Please interpret this Scripture –

... I through the Law am dead to the Law, that I might live unto GOD. I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me: and the Life which I now live in the flesh I live by the Faith of the Son of GOD, Who loved me, and gave Himself for me. I do not frustrate the Grace of GOD: for if Righteousness come by the Law, then Christ is dead in vain. (Galatians 2:19-21)

A: Kindly consider with me *Galatians 2:19-21* step by step.

... I through the Law am dead to the Law, that I might live unto GOD ...

Within the meaning of the Holy Law of GOD, we should be dead to (free from) the grave Responsibility for disobeying the Law. See chapter 196 (*Romans 7*).

I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I, but Christ liveth in me ...

When we welcome Jesus, the Christ, in our hearts, we are forgiven, redeemed, and empowered by the Holy Ghost to live a Life Free from sin. Read *Acts 2:38.*

... and the Life which I now live in the flesh I live by the Faith of the Son of GOD, Who loved me, and gave Himself for me ...

Faith is a keyword here. We believe in Salvation through the Cross of Christ.
It is written in the Bible and taught by generations of Christians.
It is the real spiritual Treasure we have been blessed with.

... I do not frustrate the Grace of GOD ...

We must not act, as all the unbelieving world does around us, even ignoring, doubting, questioning, scorning, and compromising the Holy Word of Truth.

... for if Righteousness come by the Law, then Christ is dead in vain.

I'm firm in my opinion on the Holiness of the Law of GOD. See *Romans 7:12.*
However, our Righteousness got grossly deteriorated that without our Lord Jesus, it is impossible to have it restored, whatever hard we may try to obey the Holy Law. So, trust the Lord – *the Way, the Truth, and the Life.*

326

Q: In *Genesis 11:7-9*, we can read about *confounding* one common language and *scattering* the folks all over the World.
History teaches otherwise: a tribe travels to a distant land, and another language grows up. (For example, centuries ago, English & French were shaped from German.) How would you reconcile that?

A: We have already discussed the chances of *the city of Babel* in chapter 303. Now, we can talk about what followed that up.

To begin with, and without confusing our *Knowledge* & *Understanding*, we can accept that there is nothing impossible to Almighty GOD, our Creator. He is ever Able to create new tongues right on the spot and as many as found appropriate. Our Heavenly Father could also delegate the design of languages to people as He did in Adam's case per *Genesis 2:19-20*. Therefore, in line with the *Written Word of GOD*, the following story could have taken place.

What moved those ancient folks to build Babel was *pride*.

And they said, Go to, let us build us a city and a tower,
whose top may reach unto Heaven; and let us make us a name,
lest we be scattered abroad upon the face of the whole Earth. (Genesis 11:4)

Pride does human beings nothing good, leading them astray from their Father GOD to *self-destruction*.

Pride goeth before destruction,
and an haughty spirit before a fall. (Proverbs 16:18)

In chapter 64, we talked about how GOD's Punishment works.
And in *Romans 1:24-25*, we can see the example thereof.
The same thing could happen for Babel-builders.

Go to, let Us go down, and there confound their language,
that they may not understand one another's speech. (Genesis 11:7)

The way to deal with those proud ones could be so Wise: once *pride* rules you, okay, get it more, up to a total discord among you.
Imagine a crowd that consisted only of "big bosses" & "great brains". Such things as actual skill, experience, and age counted no more. Would it be an able team? No way.

You can even stage that story yourself. Gather together, say, ten fellows for some teamwork, and strictly instruct each one of them:

"*Now, you are in charge here.*
Your every order is to be carried out right away & precisely.
Everybody is to keep his mouth shut and do what you command.
Kick well those who dare to talk back. Good luck."

That could be quite a show.

When a friendship is over, people use to say: "*We do not understand one another anymore*." Speaking the same tongue, they lose their mutual agreement regarding how to do this or that. Once the discord is evident, all peaceful relationships & cooperation discontinue. Folks don't want even to see one another any longer.

Father GOD did not need to Personally scatter those folks around the World, as *Genesis 11:8-9* might be understood. The angry builders just left on one another.

Does it make any sense in the case of *Babel*? Kindly decide for yourself.

Q: What does it mean that "pride goes before a fall" (*Proverbs 16:18*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, February 2021.)

A: Earlier in this chapter, *Proverbs 16:18* explained the failure of a silly ancient project. We also connected the evil of *pride* with *GOD's Punishment* discussed in chapter 64. Here, we can find the same principle. A demon sends to our mind stupid thoughts of dignity & self-esteem. If we accept that, the Holy Ghost, respecting our Free will, has to step off, and the evil one takes over the con. And where can he lead us but to sin & death?

Q: What is the Biblical definition of *pride*?. I've seen "pride for the Lord" considered a good thing, while "stubborn pride" is punished.
Q: Are there Verses that better define good and bad pride?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: To what is said earlier in this chapter, I dare add that our Bible, giving no specific definition to that evil, nonetheless, teaches us how to derive it from the Scriptures. That I tried to do above and, answering your question, recommend you to see "being proud of the Lord" in *Galatians 6:14*, "stubborn pride" in *Proverbs 16:18*, and Due Punishment for pride in *Proverbs 16:5* – all by *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*. Please see "Q & A" chapter 176 (The evil of pride). Thank you.

327

Q: Please explain the expression "the Measure of Faith" in *Romans 12:3*?

A: We may consider it within the context as the last link of a spiritual chain.

> *1 I beseech you therefore, Brethren, by the Mercies of GOD, that ye present your bodies a living Sacrifice, Holy, Acceptable unto GOD, which is your Reasonable Service. 2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that Good, and Acceptable, and Perfect, Will of GOD. 3 For I say, through the Grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think of himself more highly than he ought to think; but to think Soberly, according as GOD hath dealt to every man the Measure of Faith. (Romans 12:1-3)*

Verse 1.
In my humble opinion, the best parallel (and the interpretation) is,

... Faith without Works is dead ... (James 2:20,26)

That *Reasonable Service* Christian folks might happen to understand very differently, depending on how successfully the *Reason of GOD* has cleansed our hearts & minds from all *reason of the heathen world*.

Verse 2.
Following the way of the Bible Parallels on, we can find this:

They are not of the world, even as I am not of the world.
(John 17:14,16)

Let's follow the conclusion we've come to upon reading *Verse 1*. Christians are supposed to purge their mind from so many worldly values. At the same time, we should enrich it with *Knowledge* & *Understanding*, which the Holy Spirit offers.

Verse 3.

> *For I say, through the Grace that was given to me, to every one who is among you, not to think above what it behoveth to think; but to think so as to think Wisely, as to each GOD did deal a Measure of Faith ...*
> *(Romans 12:3, Robert Young's Literal Translation, 1898)*

That *Grace* given to Apostle Paul was the Blessed ability to hear & pass on the Teaching of the Holy Spirit. Once you & I have been in whatsoever way blessed, we ought not to mar that Precious Gift of our Heavenly Father with *pride*.
We should keep our minds closed up on any devilish thought of the sort. (Let alone a proud conversation.) The Wise thinking compulsorily includes Praising GOD. That kind of reasoning also helps us to assess our *Measure of Faith.* How? By willingness to offer to the LORD the Service spoken about in *Verse 1*.
Kindly note that Precious Gift is not something fixed forever. No. It is the Value that the LORD, our Father, blesses us with or takes away from us. What for? Looking in our hearts, He reckons how we *use* what we got. See *Matthew 13:12*.

I've seen the Believers who served GOD gladly offering their time & labor.
Yet, *Giving* (the subject of chapter 56) remained a stumbling block to them. That's why kindly note *that* issue when estimating your Measure of Faith.

> *He regards Faith alone : that is, a Trust in His Mercy through Christ. It is by this Faith and this Trust that the persons begin to please GOD : then, after this, their Works also please Him ... It is in this Trust in the Mercy of GOD that the True Church walks, with a Humble Confession of her sins and unworthiness, while she believes that GOD will pardon her through Christ. And now the Works which follow upon this Trust in GOD's Mercy are, as it were, Evidences and Testimonies of the man's Faith ; and they please GOD, not on account of themselves, but on account of the Faith of the person who offers them ...*
>
> *(The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis. By Martin Luther. 1858, p.343.)*

> *... we show the Works, so that one may tell the tree by the fruits, and that it may be manifest that it is a Good and not an evil tree. For where there is True Faith, there assuredly Good Works will follow.*
>
> *(Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount by Martin Luther, translated by Charles A. Hay, Lutheran Publication Society, 1892, p.260)*

References: *John 14:12 – ... He that believeth on Me ...*
1Corinthians 2:3-5 – ... not with enticing words ...
James 2:14-26 – ... Faith without Works is dead ...
1Peter 1:17 – ... according to every man's work ...
1Peter 2:15 – ... so is the Will of GOD ...
1Peter 4:11 – ... that GOD ... may be glorified ...
Revelation 2:5 – ... do the First Works ...

328

Q: A Young Earth? *Genesis 1:16.*
The Stars gave light to the Earth immediately. But the closest star, Alpha Centauri, is 4.3 light-years away. So the very first starlight would have taken 4.3 years to reach our planet. The light we see from the Andromeda Galaxy takes 2.2 million years to come over the Earth, which also debunks the argument that our planet is only 6,000-10,000 years old.
(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com.* March 2018. Edited.)

A: The Written Word of GOD about the Creation of the Universe is *Genesis 1:14-18.* According to the Holy Bible, the age of Earth is about 6,000 years. It is written,

In the Beginning
GOD created the Heaven and the Earth. (Genesis 1:1)

This Scripture presents us with the Order of Creation, namely, the Heaven before the Earth. The latter was placed in the created Universe. The natural light had been already there to serve the Purpose of GOD.

Go on. “The Stars gave light to the Earth immediately ...”
Well, not exactly that way, but only after it was commanded by our Father GOD, the Creator, to be so, as per *Genesis 1:3*.
When *Chapter 1* of the *Book of Genesis* is questioned, it is well worth to mind the Words: *GOD saw that it was Good.* Why? Because it means that His Creation is best possible, what is written is *True,* and the LORD had confirmed that.

I beg to note the LORD also laughs at what astronomers teach. For how to compare these two abilities: GOD created the Universe and us therein, and we made up the science about it. Hardly commensurable, isn’t it?
Me, I like in astronomy one notable conclusion: what we can see in the night sky is not compulsory the real picture, since the light coming over here might happen to belong with the Star already extinct (self-destructed?), whereas some new Star (self-created?) is yet invisible, as the light has not yet come over. On that ground, a friend of mine (an atheist) calls astronomy “the science about nothing”.

Q: Do *Christians* believe that *Jews* and *Muslims* are going to hell?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Negative on that.

Yet, I cannot answer for all folks who call themselves *Christians*. Far not all of them think about *hell* the same way. See "Q & A" chapter 8. In my opinion, hell & death eternal wait for only those who are enemies of GOD. These are those who willingly disobey the Law of GOD, regardless of their name or label.

Q: (1) What is justice?
Q: (2) What is it for?.
Q: (3) Is it to punish the guilty or protect the innocent?
Q: (4) Or is it for revenge?
Q: (5) Is it a mixture of all of these things or, maybe, something else entirely?
(Signed: *Agnostic*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: Justice is following the Law. In the case of a Christian country (chapter 55), it is following the Law of GOD. It is the answer to your first question. Kindly see the reason (and the answers to the rest of the questions) in the following Scripture. Mind well the last sentence.

And thou shalt stone him with stones, that he die; because he hath sought to thrust thee away from the LORD thy GOD, which brought thee out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. And all Israel shall hear, and fear, and shall do no more any such wickedness as this is among you.
(Deuteronomy 13:10-11) See also *Deuteronomy 21:20-21*.

Q: What do you think the positives are from an atheist worldview?
(Signed: *Agnostic Atheist*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: Please see the Answer of GOD in *Psalms 14:1 & 53:1*.

Q: How can I learn from Christians and the Bible if Christians *argue* about the Bible themselves?. There are so many denominations, so many Bible Versions, that learning the correct details seems impossible. ... Not to mention other religions with completely different beliefs.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: To start from, what do you want to learn? You have already made the list of difficulties (which I had to cut). Okay, what next? If you want to be a Christian, open the Bible on *Jeremiah 33:3* and ask GOD your questions. And until you *know* the answers, kindly join some Christian Ministry.

329

Q: What was the Order of God's Creation?

1. *Genesis 1:11-12* and *1:26-27*: trees came before Adam.
   Genesis 2:4-9: trees came after Adam.
2. *Genesis 1:20-21* and *26-27*: birds were created before Adam.
   Genesis 2:7 and *2:19*: birds were created after Adam.
3. *Genesis 1:24-27*: animals were created before Adam.
   Genesis 2:7 and *2:19*: animals were created after Adam.
4. *Genesis 1:26-27*: Adam and Eve were created at the same time.
   Genesis 2:7 and *2:21-22*: Adam was created first, Eve later.

(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018. Edited.)

A: Step by step. We shall discuss only the Scriptures misunderstood, okay?

1. Kindly read *Genesis 2:4-9* attentively.
According to *Verse 5* –

And every plant of the field
before it was in the earth, and every herb of the field before it grew:
for the LORD GOD had not caused it to rain upon the earth,
and there was not a man to till the ground.

– every *thinking* reader (let alone a Spirit-filled Christian) can come to the only possible conclusion: *trees* came first. All *plants* were created earlier, and *water,* as their necessary agent, later.
Genesis 1:13 draws up a clear line between the steps of GOD's Creation.

2. *Genesis 2:7* & *2:19*:

7 And the LORD GOD formed Man
of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the Breath of Life;
and Man became a living soul ... 19 And out of the ground the LORD GOD
formed every beast of the field, and every fowl of the air; and brought them
unto Adam to see what he would call them: and whatsoever Adam called
every living creature, that was the name thereof.

These Verses just repeated what had been stated in *Genesis 1:20-21 & 26-27*. Written in another sequence does not change anything (same as *Heaven* & *Earth* in *Genesis 1:1* & *2:4*). The dust of the ground was there as the same material for the Creation of *Man* and *birds* & *animals*.
Mind *Genesis 1:23* as a *border* between the Creation of *birds* and *Man*.

3. The same conclusion we can come to when comparing *Genesis 1:24-27* and *Genesis 2:7,19*: *animals* were created before *Adam*, no otherwise.
The *line* between the Creation of *animals* and *Man* is seen in *Genesis 1:25* –

... and GOD saw that it was Good.

– which means only *Perfect* & *completed*.

4. Regarding the Creation of *Adam* & *Eve*.
In *Genesis 1:26-27*, that fact was stated as the Top of all Creation. In *Genesis 2:7* & *2:21-22*, the Order was clarified: *Adam* was created first and *Eve* second.
If the Order of Creation is not clear, the following Scripture well explains that –

And the Light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.
(John 1:5)

Q: Why did God choose to create Lucifer, knowing he would rebel?
(Signed: *Agnostic Atheist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: LORD GOD created Holy Angels, some of which had taken the way of evil.
Read about Lucifer in *Ezekiel 28:1-19*.
Father GOD created people in His Image & Likeness – *Genesis 1:26-27* – and some chosen to be sinners.
GOD created the Perfect World, which we, people, make imperfect.
See *Genesis 1:28,31*.

Q: (1) Why do people pray for others? For example, Prayer Circles.
Q: (2) Shouldn't one person's Prayer be enough for God to listen?
Q: (3) Why do other people pray for them as well?
Q: (4) And why do people ask others to pray for them?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: (1) *Ephesians 6:18* & *James 5:16* requires us, Christians, to intercede one for another.
(2-3) As Members of *One Body of Christ*, we cannot be impassive to the needs of others. That's why many Believers may thus intercede for one.
(4) For the same reason, one of us may ask others to pray for him (her).
We call it Prayer Backup.
Please see the Index for *Prayer*. Thank you.

330

Q: In *Genesis 1:31,* God was pleased with His Creation.
In *Genesis 6:5-6,* God was not pleased with His Creation.
That raises the question, how can an Omnipotent, Omniscient God create something He's not pleased with?
(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com,* March 2018.)

A: It is written,

And GOD saw every thing that He had made,
and, behold, it was Very Good.
And the evening and the morning were the sixth day. (Genesis 1:31)

And GOD saw that the wickedness of Man was great in the Earth,
and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually.
And it repented the LORD that He had made Man on the Earth,
and it grieved Him at His Heart. (Genesis 6:5-6)

Please note the last line in *Genesis 1:31,* as it made a clear *borderline* for all GOD's Creation.
Mind also *Genesis 1:26-28,* describing an integral part of the Creation – *Man & Woman* – and the Word *Dominion* repeated twice there.
"Q & A" chapters 1, 3, 26, 36, 280, 289, 312, 313, and 321 deal with our *GOD-given irrevocable spiritual Dominion* (Authority) over the *Earth*.

Here, I repeat this point as my opinion only.
In no way I'm GOD's Advocate or Intermediate.

To better understand *Genesis 6:5-6,* kindly be reminded of GOD's Image & Likeness quoted above. Try to see *Genesis 6:5-6* in daily situations when *your* children don't meet *your* standards or expectations.
So what? Shall you take a baseball bat and start crashing everything around?
Or, maybe, think it all through before finding yourselves busy with the rude corrective measures? The last, by the way, was the subject of chapter 78 (The Rod of Correction). Kindly read our conversation in chapter 746 (GOD & Man).
Add to this the simple fact that, notwithstanding the Image & Likeness, LORD GOD, our Creator, is immensely Higher than we, His Creation. To comprehend Him is not so easy as to read some modern Bible Edition and ask questions.
Kindly note *Isaiah 55:8.*

Q: What are the properties of *Holiness*?
Q: When you or the Bible define something as *Holy*, what makes it special?
Q: The Holy Land, or People, or Water, how do they differ from the usual ones?

(Signed: *Atheist*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Robinson's Theological Dictionary (1835) defines Holiness as,
... Freedom from sin, or the conformity of the Heart to GOD.

Webster's Dictionary (2001) defines *Holy* as,
1. *specially recognized as or declared Sacred by Religious use or Authority; Consecrated ... 2. dedicated or devoted to the Service of GOD, the Church, or Religion ... 3. Saintly; Godly; Pious; Devout ...*

Thus, your examples might be interpreted as follows.
The Holy Land is the land of Godly people, a Christian country.
The Holy People are those who serve the LORD GOD.
Both the above names must be proved.
The Holy Water – in my opinion – is any water for Sanctification. E.g., at the Water Baptism. Yet, different Churches might define & use it differently.

Q: What does Jesus dying for humanity's sins mean?
People still sin today and always will.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: It means our *Repentance* is welcome by Father GOD. See *Luke 15:20*.

Q: If atheists happen to have perfect morals, would they get into Heaven even though it is by coincidence rather than the following Faith?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: I take this question as *hypothetical*, since what you qualify as "perfect morals" might not correspond to the *Righteousness* per the Word of GOD.
So, on the one hand, your "moral perfectness" does not exist without what you call "following Faith". We *can* be Righteous, Holy, and Perfect, Yea, but only *in* Christ Jesus. Kindly see the Index for *Jesus – in Him*.
On the other hand, a person *may* indeed love his (her) family, neighbors, animals, nature, is ready to give Life to save those in danger, and have other precious qualities. But, according to *James 1:17*, all those Gifts are *from* our LORD GOD only, Who will surely give the one missing – to love Him.

331

Q: *And on the Seventh day GOD ended His Work which He had made;*
and He rested on the Seventh day from all His Work which He had made.
(Genesis 2:3)

An Omnipotent Being required ... rest?
(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018.)

A: <The thinking atheist> misunderstood again. Kindly try to think harder.
In *Genesis 2:2-3, rested* means *stopped* or *suspended* or *discontinued* any further Work. Nothing else. Note *Robert Young's Literal Translation*:

And the Heavens and the Earth are completed, and all their Host ;
and GOD completeth by the Seventh day His Work which He hath made,
and ceaseth by the seventh day from all His Work which He hath made.
(Genesis 2:1-2)

The Seventh day – *Sabbath* – was Divinely chosen by the LORD GOD to be a Sign, Symbol, and Image of our *Unity* with Him. *Ezekiel 20:11-12.*

Q: What are the boundaries of Satan's ability to intervene in our reality?.
Q: Can Satan influence our reality but only in a limited way?
Q: Why did God set these particular limits?
Q: Why not a little more, and why not a little less?
Q; And what are those limits in reality?
Q: Can Satan only influence thoughts, or can he influence matter as well?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: You can read about those "boundaries" or "limits" in *1John 5:18.*
Yet the Word is more about our GOD-given Authority & Abilities than Satan's evil skills. See chapter 36 and the Index section for *Satan.*

Q: Why do children die of cancer?
Q: Why would a Loving God allow this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* May 2020. Edited.)

A: See chapters 503 & 508 and the Index for *Harvest Law*.
You may also read *Exodus 23:25 & Proverbs 4:20-22.*
in the Index, you may find such subjects as GOD's Love & Perfect Justice, Health & Healing, and more.

Q: What would be the difference between *God* creating the Universe and a *natural* process building it?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Edited.)

A: The difference is the same as between the *Universe* and *nothingness*. Kindly read *Chapter 1 of the Book of Genesis* and *John 1:1-5* attentively.

Q: I watch porn. Am I going to go to hell for this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: What you do certainly has a cause and an outcome.
It would be correct to say that you are *on the way* to hell. Your chance not to get there is limited to *Ecclesiastes 9:4.* Your Right Direction in *Luke 15:20*. Make the right choice.

Q: How do you justify hell?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: Who am I to justify or criticize the Word of GOD? Please, read chapter 64.

Q: What draws secular people into learning about Jesus Christ today?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: There are a lot of reasons. Say,
1. Curiosity, “scientific investigation”, seeking “discrepancies”, etc.
2. Examples of Christian Living, Conversation, Works, and so forth.
3. The LORD GOD Himself speaking through the voice of conscience.
You pick. Thank you.

Q: (1) Can you understand why, due to some circumstances, people lose Faith?
Q: (2) What circumstances would you find the most relevant?
(Signed: *Atheist, ex-Catholic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, March 2021.)

A: (1) Please read *1Peter 1:7* and the context thereof. Losing Faith can be explained by the weakness of a human spirit. We can see the analogy in the natural: a physical object is broken by a power exceeding the strength of that object. Thus our spiritual strength – Faith – should be worked out.
(2) The circumstances leading to losing Faith are those losses in the natural when our listening to the Holy Spirit of GOD is most required.

332

Q: *And the LORD GOD commanded the Man, saying, Of every tree of the Garden thou mayest freely eat: but of the tree of the Knowledge of Good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. (Genesis 2:16-17)*

God placed temptation in the direct path of His two naïve Children and allowed them to be tempted by the serpent (*Genesis 3:1-7*), resulting in a single mistake that would contaminate hundreds of billions with a sinful nature worthy of eternal torture?

(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018. Edited.)

A: I don't see any reasonable connection between the Scripture quoted and the conclusion made by <the thinking atheist>.
Probably, you think too much in the wrong direction.
Behold, it was a Command, Guidance, and Warning. Not a hidden evil snare. The LORD GOD may and does test us, not tempt. The last is the way of Satan. See chapter 184 (Temptations).
Neither can I agree that Adam & Eve were "naïve". The Image & Likeness of GOD, by *Genesis 1:26-27*, disproves that characteristic.
What you call "mistake", Christians call *sin*. There is quite a difference betwixt the two. Your words "contaminate" & "sinful nature" are correct. However, the "eternal torture" has never been that inevitable. Search the Scriptures and see how many times such a valuable thing as *Repentance* is written and called for.
Our (after the Cross of Christ) generation might reasonably be asked, what Lord Jesus did on that cross? What did He die for?

Q: Questions that made me rethink Believing..

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020. Edited.)

A: Kindly note that I had to correct your writing per the rules of our "Q & A" book. Calling the LORD, our GOD, "a god" is not allowed here.
Now, let me try to answer your questions.

Q: (1) Why do we pray for something to happen if God already has the whole Universe predetermined?

A: Our Prayer is following the Will of GOD and a part of Communion with Him. Kindly see chapters 269, 271, 414, 730, & 754, as well as the Index for *Communion with GOD, GOD's Will*, and *Prayer*.

Q: (2) Why do you have to suffer for Eternity for not believing in Him, when the only evidence He left behind is the Book?

A: Probably, the question is the result of the wrong information. Eternal suffering is for a *sinful life*, which results from *unbelief*, not the latter itself. You may see chapters 8, 64, 320, 503, 508, 514, & 697.

Q: (3) What happens to people that have never heard of the concept of Religion or mentally disabled people that can not comprehend it?

A: Those first are tried as per the Image & Likeness of GOD kept or not by them. The second group cannot sin intentionally and, therefore, is justified. We discussed that in chapters 150, 280, 288, & 731. Please, take a look.

Q: (4) Why is it a sin to do something so petty like cussing?
Q: (5) Why would GOD that made the Universe care about a word?
Q: (6) Or drink?

A: Cussing itself is not a sin leading to death eternal. However, every dirty word is accountable for, as a footstep for the devil. The same is true for the excess in drinking. See chapters 132 & 589, respectively.

Q: (7) If you believe in Heaven, what is the point of living?
Q: (8) Why are we on the Earth?
Q: (9) Why should we fight to stay alive when Heaven is the best place to be?

A: (7) The Kingdom of Heaven is where the saved live eternally with our Heavenly Father. You may see chapters 153, 677, & 707.
(8) Well, we should be somewhere. GOD gave us the best. *Genesis 1:31*.
(9) Good question. The reason is the Holy Will of the LORD stated in many Scriptures from *Genesis 1:26-28* to *Revelation 22:12-14*.

Q: How has Religion affected your political view?

(Signed: *Atheist*, *Antitheis*t. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2021. Edited.)

A: My Christian Faith changed my cosmopolitanism, contradicting my citizenship of the anti-Christian USSR and then non-Christian Ukraine. I pray & fight for my country. See relevant “Q & A” chapters 26 & 55.

333

Q: *Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the LORD GOD had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath GOD said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the Garden? (Genesis 3:1)*

A *talking snake*. Enough said.

(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018.)

A: Far as I understood the question, “a talking snake” is something incredible. Therefore, the shortest answer to you is: it is a matter of *Faith*, as all the *Holy Bible*. No *common sense*.

However, in the way of Preaching the Truth, we consider the Text profoundly. Why is it written: *the serpent was more subtil* – that is – *crafty*, *deceptive*, &c.? Especially, reading on GOD’s High Estimation of His Creation (*Genesis 1:31*)? Most probably, to camouflage himself for fear of being recognized by humans, *Satan* entered that creature. Adam & Eve could have had some knowledge of the evil one. Kindly see *Isaiah 14:12-15, Ezekiel 28:1-10, & Daniel 8:24-25*.

Taking into account the Words of Jesus, written in *Matthew 24:24* & *Mark 13:22* as well as *Revelation 19:20*, we have every reason to believe that the devil is ever able to perform whatever lying miracles for a single purpose: to make folks atheists, superstitious fools, criminals, etc., whatever but the People of GOD. On the great picture of the Spirit War, some *speaking snake* is just a trifle.

The second sentence of our Scripture is much more important since it depicts the greatest ever lie of Satan, even questioning the Holy Word of GOD.
Behold, that lie is being continued, seen, and heard around the World we live in. With all due respect to humans, they blindly follow that lie in many ways, the atheistic forums inclusive.
Enough said.

Q: I am an agnostic. Why doesn’t God show Himself to non-believers like me? (By “show Himself”, I mean a Dream or a Vision.)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: Father GOD did & does so. Kindly read *Romans 1:18-25*.
As for *dreams* or *Visions*, please, see the *Index* section for the relevant chapters. Thank you.

334

Q: *And Noah was six hundred years old when the flood of waters was upon the Earth. And Noah went in, and his sons, and his wife, and his sons' wives with him, into the ark, because of the waters of the Flood. (Genesis 7:6-7)*

Eight Bronze-Age humans over 500-years-old built a watercraft the size of a football stadium with only felled trees and pitch?
(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018. Condensed.)

A: I beg to note that my answer to this, as well as every other question of <the thinking atheist>, is based only upon the *Written Word of GOD*, regardless of your reasoning. So, step by step.

Eight persons. It is correct, as per *Genesis 5:32, 6:10, & 7:7.*
Now,

After Noah was 500 years old, he became the father of Shem, Ham, and Japheth. (Genesis 5:32, Amplified Bible)

Thus only *one* of the *eight* above-mentioned persons was above 500 years old.

Sorry, I am neither much informed about nor interested in a "Bronze-Age".
What has it to do with the question?
Possibly, you mean the availability of good *tools* to build the ark.
In accordance with *Encyclopaedia Britannica* (*https://www.britannica.com* & *https://archive.org/details/americana* – June 2026), the dates of that strange period vary from one region to another. The *Holy Bible* is not considered at all.
For the same reason, neither can I take much to heart that "scientific" data.

Regarding "a watercraft the size of a football stadium", *Genesis 6:15* states:
150 x 25 x 15 m – more or less. Stadiums are different. See yourself to it.

"... with only felled trees and pitch ..."
This part of the question is, probably, again aimed at *technology*.
So, what you mean is "the mission impossible", right?
Yet, the answer is simple: when our Father GOD, Whom we serve and Whose we are, commands us to do something, the last thing to worry about is "how".
For a battle or task or whatsoever else at hand is not ours but His.

You may find *GOD's Omnipotence & Power* in the Index section.

Q: If anger is a sin and God is Perfect, why do both Jesus and Father God display Wrath and Vengeance?

(Signed: *Agnostic Atheist*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: The best way to answer your question is to explain the difference between the *Wrath* of GOD and the *anger* of a man.
The Holy Wrath of GOD stands against the *sin* indwelling a human's heart. In His Wrath, the LORD punishes people by taking His Protection from off them (see chapter 64 – GOD's Punishment). When, at the time of His Messianic Mission, the Man Christ Jesus was *wrath* (e.g., breaking up the money-changing & selling animals in the Temple), He did not punish anybody, just tried to wake up the sinners' *conscience*.
Satanic *anger* in a human's heart is directed against a neighbor, thus violating the Second Great Commandment of Christ.
Please see the Index section for *Anger*.

Q: This morning, I was reading in *Matthew 6:19-21* about not storing up treasures on Earth, where things corrupt and are stolen. It is said that it is better to store up Treasures in Heaven. I want to know your opinion, how do you store Treasures in Heaven while on Earth?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Edited.)

A: These Treasures are spiritual: *Knowledge*, *Understanding*, and *Wisdom*.
The latter one calls for *Love*, *Faith*, *Hope*. And *Truth* unites them all.
In the Index section, please find all the relevant chapters of this book.

Q: Is it better to be an *atheist* or to believe in *religion outside* of Christianity?
Q: Are persons *more sinful* if they believe there is no God, or if they believe in God, but not the Christian One, like if they're Hindu *or something*.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Edited.)

A: It is written,

And GOD saw the Light, that it was Good:
and GOD divided the Light from the darkness. (Genesis 1:4)

Jesus saith ... I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

You are free to choose your eternal destiny – *Jesus* or "*something*".

335

Q: *Genesis 6:19*. <*Answers in Genesis*> posits that Noah gathered 'kinds' of animals and not all 'species', an estimated 16,000 pairs, which raises a few animal-related questions.

(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018.)

A: Whatever things you might mean by "kinds", "species", and "an estimated 16,000 pairs", *The Book of Genesis* answers,

19 And of every living thing of all flesh, two of every sort shalt thou bring into the ark, to keep them alive with thee; they shall be male and female.
20 Of fowls after their kind, and of cattle after their kind, of every creeping thing of the Earth after his kind, two of every sort shall come unto thee, to keep them alive. 21 And take thou unto thee of all food that is eaten, and thou shalt gather it to thee; and it shall be for food for thee, and for them.
22 Thus did Noah; according to all that GOD commanded him, so did he.

(Genesis 6:19-22)

The above Scripture embraces all terrene creatures which had a *Breath of Life* in them, including those subsequently exterminated by people, and excluding *dinosaurs* as ungodly distortions in the wild.
Now, let me go to your "few animal-related questions" one by one.

Q: (1) How, exactly, did eight extreme senior citizens load, manage and care for 32,000 animals?

A: In chapter 334, I tried to explain my view on the "syndrome *how*".
So, kindly read the ending paragraph thereof.
Regarding those "extremely senior citizens", kindly note *Genesis 6:3* as the direct sequence of our *sinfulness* starting (again) to take effect after Noah. You and I may also note *Genesis 9:28-29 & 11:10-11*. And try to imagine *their* state of physical health in comparison to that of *ours*.

Q: (2) What about specialized diets (bamboo for the giant panda, meat for the carnivores, fresh vegetation for the herbivores)?

A: Regarding the "specialized diets, please", see *Genesis 1:29-30 & 6:12*.
I believe *Noah* could follow *Genesis 1:30*, and the LORD took care of the rest. Later on, *Genesis 1:28-30* had to be corrected by *Genesis 9:1-7*.

Q: (3) Who cleaned each stall and shoveled the tons of daily excrement through the huge ark's single window?

A: Read *Genesis 1:1*, and try your utmost best to estimate the Power of Father GOD, the Creator, to make something *Good* & *needful* out of nothing. Isn't the *reverse* process quite feasible for Him regarding something *not needful* in such a confined space as the ark? Just a guess. I was not there.

Q: (4) How did they separate the *predator* and *prey* animals?
Q: Did the *lion* lay with the *lamb*?

A: First, please see our answer to your question 2.
Second, in such exceptional circumstances, *predator* & *prey* can not exist.
Third, please read *Isaiah 11:6* & *65:25*.

Q: (5) How do you explain the acquisition and loading of animals not indigenous to the Middle East (many separated by oceans), like the polar bear, the sloth, the crocodile, the fruit bat, the anaconda, etc.?
Q: How did penguins and other cold-climate creatures survive in the heat?

A: Our LORD GOD made it possible, as per *Genesis 6:20 & 7:9*. Other than by *His Written Word*, neither I nor anybody else can correctly explain that.

Q: (6) Wouldn't freshwater rains from the sky have made the saltwater deadly to ocean marine life?
Q: And wouldn't saltwater have proven equally toxic to all freshwater fish?
Q: If water boiled up from beneath the Earth's crust, wouldn't water temperature changes in the delicate ecosystem also had a deadly effect?

A: These questions, as well as others, may look hard to *me*, but not to *GOD*. For the Creator is so far greater than His Creation. Therefore, all subsequent "delicate ecosystems" is His Business. For you and me, He dictated *Matthew 19:26; Mark 10:27; Luke 1:37 & 18:27* – all to be well noted.

Q: (7) Dinosaurs on the ark?

A: The question is answered above. See the beginning of this chapter right after *Genesis 6:19-22* quotation. See chapter 289 (The origin of predators).

The above answers might appear not much convincing, given our antagonistic *Christian* versus *atheistic* viewpoints. Well, have a look at *Ecclesiastes 3:1-8*.

I guess, therefore, in every issue, there should be found some *Arbiter* recognized by both parties. Since you cannot approve the Holy Person of *LORD GOD*, in Whom you don't believe, what about *Time*? The *Day* is to come when every one of us will get the most attentive *Hearing* and the best possible *Answer* to every question. Until then, take care.

Q: How did the kangaroos, sloths, and other animals get back to Australia after the Flood?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: To begin with, "get back to Australia" is the wrong expression.
The Flood could completely change the face of our Earth.
As it seems to me, the animals saved in the ark and designated for the new land (now called Australia) were carried there by the Power of GOD.

How could that happen? It is hard to say for sure. We cannot comprehend our Father GOD and His Ways any more than, "GOD said, Let there be Light: and there was Light." All stays a matter o' Faith.
Speaking of animals, what GOD called "Good" in *Genesis 1:25*, and what we can observe in those His creatures now are entirely different matters.
Please see the Index section for *Animals* and our *Spiritual Authority*.

Q: How did Noah survive being in the ark?
Q: Why did the animals not attack him, let alone each other?
Some people argue that before sin, animals did not prey on each other and humans. But Noah's ark took place after sin entered the World. Just a curious question. Thanks.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: The answer is most simple: Noah followed the Holy Will of GOD.
When we do the same, He is with us as per *Isaiah 41:10*.
Thank you.

Q: Do you believe that the Bible is stories to live by or 100% facts of historical events?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: The Written Word of GOD is the *Law* to live by and the *Records* to check out all "scientifical" and "historical" writs.

336

Q: *Genesis 7:19-20.*
That would require steady, planet-wide rainfall at the rate of 6 inches per minute, 360 inches an hour, for 40 days and 40 nights, covering Mount Everest under 22 feet of water.
Q: How exactly did Noah measure this for the record?
Q: Where has all of the water gone since?
Q: And why is there no *legitimate* geological evidence of a global flood?
(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018.)

A: It is written,

And the waters prevailed exceedingly upon the Earth;
and all the high hills, that were under the whole Heaven, were covered.
Fifteen cubits upward did the waters prevail; and the mountains were covered.
(Genesis 7:19-20, King James Version, Pure Cambridge Edition)

Sorry for my not agreeing with the Bible Edition you have chosen.
The exact amount of floodwater was GOD's Business. Does it matter? The waters could indeed cover up the globe until the last resembled a water-ball. Or else, they could follow uneven shapes of mountains & valleys and thus stand around no higher above any land than those written number of cubits. There are no limits to the Almighty Power of the LORD.
The details of the Great Flood are not as important as the fact & the Lesson thereof. It is one of the endless manifestations of GOD's Power & Perfect Justice.

Most probably, Brother Noah measured nothing of the sort. The *Book of Genesis* is called the *First Book of Moses*, who had not witnessed the Flood.
Kindly be reminded that it was the *Holy Spirit of GOD,* Who dictated the Scriptures to His Servants, the Prophets.
Where has all of the water gone since? – Right where they had come from.
Our Father GOD has all the Universe at His disposal if you please.

Why is there no "legitimate" geological evidence of a global Flood? Well, what is legitimate for unbelievers, far not always, might be so for Christians (and vice versa). Some Believers may think that such "evidence" or "proof" may come up later. I think they are wrong. We have already had all the Truth & evidence we need. See *John 17:17.* Thus, for me, only the *Written Word of GOD* is ever Able to prove or disprove anything, all scientific findings inclusive. No otherwise.

Q: How to be happy not having sex? I'm an atheist. I do not want to get married or have kids. Never dated. Everyone keeps talking about sex, so it feels like I'm missing out. Prostitution is illegal, so I don't want that.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: To be happy without sex (or money), try to find such an occupation, which provides much more happiness. For every honest human, it is a Work of Charity, for,

... It is more blessed to give than to receive. (Acts 20:35)

Q: If some prayed, confessed their sins, asked for Salvation, did what Good acts they could, etc., etc., but, hypothetically, were stone-cold atheists, who had no Faith in Jesus, would they still be Heaven-Worthy?
Let's say this hypothetical person is as reasonably morally-compassed as you'd expect from a decent human being.

(Signed: *Agnostic Atheist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, August 2020. Corrected.)

A: Would one pray & confess his (her) sins to Whom he (she) does not believe in? Such Prayer(s) & Confession(s) would be a lie.
How to ask for Salvation seeing it but an empty word?
Lord Jesus made Himself clear in *John 11:25-26 & 14:6*.
Sorry, your question is not hypothetical but *sophistical*.

Q: Is telling children they will be tortured eternally in hell unless they accept a *faith-based uncertainty* as truth – psychologically abusive and emotionally manipulative?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: By the words "faith-based uncertainty", you mean our Christian Education, right? In such a case, your preceding wording shows your misconception, and your closing label looks quite pitiful. Because the worst bringing our kids up is rearing them as *atheists*. See chapter 50 (Modern idol-worship).

Q: How do you reconcile yourself with knowing that a *good* person will burn for eternity?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: I do it okay. If "a *good* person will burn for eternity", I am sure he (she) is not Good in the Eyes of the LORD, our GOD.

337

Q: *Genesis 8:8.*
Why did Noah require a dove to find land, if he and God were on speaking terms in *Genesis 6*?
(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018.)

A: Yes, it is written,

And he sent forth a raven, which went forth to and fro, until the waters were dried up from off the Earth. Also he sent forth a dove from him, to see if the waters were abated from off the face of the ground ... (Genesis 8:7-8)

To be with GOD "on speaking terms" (as you call it) does not compulsory mean to communicate with Him only by some "audible talking non-stop". The ways of our Communion with Him are very different.
Kindly see chapter 32 (Communion with GOD) and the references below.
In *Genesis 6:20* & *8:7-8*, GOD could teach Noah to communicate with *birds*.

References: *Proverbs 1:23* – Promised Communion & Guidance.
Isaiah 30:20-21; Jeremiah 33:3; John 14:26 & 18:37 – ditto.

Q: (1) Is it okay to punish sinners? It is not hard to find instances in the Bible of God punishing (or talking about punishing) sinners.
Q: (2) What is the goodness of punishing sinners?
Q: (3) The easy example is Hitler. Is it "good" for God to punish Hitler?
Q: (4) If so, why is it Good?
Q: (5) And how do Christians generally feel about Punishment?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Edited.)

A: (1) I define a *sinner* as a person who knowingly sins, i.e., disobeys GOD.
The *Punishment of GOD* was discussed in chapter 64. Kindly read.
Capital punishment commanded by the LORD is the subject of chapter 95.
You may see the Index section for *GOD's Judgment & Justice* and *Free will*.
(2-4) The "goodness of punishing sinners", as you worded it, stands on their *Free will*. The sinners punish themselves by rejecting Father GOD, thus cutting off His Protection. The same is true for Hitler or any other bloody servant of Satan – Lenin, Stalin, Putin, &c. Kindly see "Q & A" chapters 8 (Hell) & 573 (Eternity).
(5) As for how Christians feel about all the above, the better we understand the Written Word of GOD on the subject, the more Peace of mind we have.

338

Q: *Genesis 8:15-16.*
When the ark landed, what did the carnivores eat? All other animal life was drowned. And vegetation would have also been wiped out by the Flood.
Q: So, what did the herbivores eat to survive?
(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018.)

A: It is written:

15 And GOD spake unto Noah, saying,
16 Go forth of the ark, thou, and thy wife, and thy sons, and thy sons' wives with thee. 17 Bring forth with thee every living thing that is with thee, of all flesh, both of fowl, and of cattle, and of every creeping thing that creepeth upon the Earth; that they may breed abundantly in the Earth, and be fruitful, and multiply upon the Earth.
(Genesis 8:15-17, King James Version, Pure Cambridge Edition)

When the LORD, our GOD, tells us something, our job is to obey Him as best we can with as few questions & doubts as possible. He takes care of the rest.
In that particular case, Noah's business was to open the side-port mentioned in *Genesis 6:16*, as well as every compartment on every deck, and that was it.
The carnivores & herbivores were to be commanded to disembark and go their way. Or so it seems to me.
Were carnivores made herbivores or fishers for the time being or not, I can comprehend no more than how Father GOD created everything out of nothing.
Or how the LORD did sustain Moses for forty days without any physical food as per *Exodus 34:28* & *Deuteronomy 9:9*. But I believe His Word wholeheartedly.
So, I believe that All-Powerful GOD, our Creator, could keep His creatures alive once He had chosen to save them from the Flood. It is also possible, what had been left (by the Holy Will of the LORD) on the lands of Earth after the Flood, was not a total mess good for nothing.

Kindly note: our every discussion is reasonable only upon your presumption as well as my Faith that *Genesis 1:1* is True.

Q: If a Christian prays for a non-Christian, does that Prayer work?
(Signed: Agnostic Atheist.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, March 2021. Condensed.)

A: Yes, it does, given the Prayer follows the Will of GOD. See *1John 5:14-15.*

339

Q: *Genesis 9:1*.
Eight people of middle-eastern descent practiced *incest* to produce over five thousand of today's ethnic groups in only a few hundred generations?
(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018.)

A: It is written:

And GOD blessed Noah and his sons, and said unto them,
Be Fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth. (Genesis 9:1)

I beg to note, the *incest* became the *sin* when and only when the LORD GOD said so. See *Leviticus 18:6-18* as GOD's direct Command against that *sin*.
Well before that time, things were different.
Mind the keyword *blessed* in *Genesis 9:1*.
For the *Blessing of GOD* has nothing to do with our wishing "good luck" to one another. Nay. When the LORD, our Heavenly Father, blesses, He Divinely directs, protects, and provides. His Blessing does have such Power & Meaning.
The same can be said about the Word "*Be Fruitful*". It did not (and still does not) mean to multiply crowds of unprofitable children around.

Desire not a multitude of vnprofitable children,
neither delight in vngodly sonnes. Though they multiply, reioyce not in them,
except the Feare of the LORD be with them. Trust not thou in their life,
neither respect their multitude : for one that is Iust, is better than a thousand,
and better it is to die without children, than to haue them that are vngodly.
For by one that hath Vnderstanding, shall the city be replenished,
but the kindred of the wicked, shall speedily become desolate.
(Apocrypha, Sirach 16:1-4, King James Version, 1611)

Even so, how "*to produce over 5.000 of today's ethnic groups in only a few hundred generations*" is the question to mathematicians & sociologists. I am much more interested in (*One & Indivisible Body of Christ*, which determines) the *quality* of our human race rather than the *number* of the last.

Q: Who was Cain's wife?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: Apparently, she was one of his sisters. Or niece. And, as we stated above, the *incest* became the *sin* when and only when our LORD GOD said so.

Q: (1) Does Prayer work?
Q: (2) If so, what proof do we have?
Q: (3) Do our Prayers mean anything at all?
Q: (4) Do they change anything here on Earth in this life?
Q: (5) If so, what proof do we have of this?

(Signed: *Agnostic, Ex-Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: In your questions, the words “we” & “our” are wrong. Because what *is* a Proof to a Christian hardly is such for an unbeliever.
Please see chapter 271 for so much resembling question. And the signature.

Yet, to answer the questions, I can say only, (1) Yes, it does. Prayer works. (2) My experience is the best Proof for me. (3-4) Our Christian Prayer does make necessary changes, when and only when we pray in line with the Holy Will of GOD. (5) The Proof is the Written Word of GOD, namely, *1John 5:14-15*.

The only way *you* can prove Prayer is by making a step of Faith.

Q: (1) Who do *you* think is the worst, most evil person to go to Heaven?.
(2) And who is the best person that God would send to hell?

(Signed: Atheist.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, August 2020.)

A: (1) It is a person who lived as an evildoer but had repented shortly before his (her) death (or the End of the World). *Ezekiel 18:21-23 & Luke 23:39-43*.
(2) Similarly, it is the Righteous person who sinned not long before death (or the End of the World) and had not repented of his (her) sin. *Ezekiel 18:24*.
Yet, the above is my reasoning. Father GOD has His. Note *Isaiah 55:8-9*.

Q: Does the Bible specify that “Thou shalt not kill” means “Thou shalt not kill people”, or should all Christians be vegetarians?

(Signed: *Atheist, ex-Catholic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020.)

A: Regretfully, it only means “Thou shalt not kill people.”
Why? Because later, the Holy Scriptures more than once taught about “clean” and “unclean” animals. The reason for that implementation of the Commandment was (and still is) *our* sinfulness.
As for vegetarians, please, see chapter 74. Thank you.

340

Q: (1) *Genesis 9:20.*
Did the only guy worth saving spend his latter days *drunk* and *naked*?

Q: (2) Note: Much of the Biblical Flood story was actually *plagiarized* from "The Epic of Gilgamesh", the mythical Sumerian account of Ut-Napishtim written on stone tablets around *2000 BC*. In "The Epic of Gilgamesh", one righteous man was spared from a worldwide flood by building a large boat with a single door and one window. The ark contained a few other human beings plus plant and animal specimens. Rains covered the mountains with water. Birds were sent to find land. The boat landed on a mountain in the middle east. Ut-Napshtim sacrificed an animal as an offering, and the Babylonian gods expressed regret for flooding the Earth. Sound familiar?
(*http://www.thethinkingatheist.com*, March 2018. Edited.)

A: (1) It is written, *And Noah began to be an husbandman, and he planted a vineyard. And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. (Genesis 9:20-21)*

Of all questions asked on that site – "*the thinking atheist"* – the present one, very probably, belongs to the most stupid. Why? Because the Scripture quoted and the conclusion made are so discrepant. Therefore, my answer may resemble a sort of patient explanation offered by a parent to his (her) preschool kid.

"The only guy worth saving ..."
The Man of GOD thus chosen was and still is worthy of respect, full stop.

"... spent his latter days drunk and naked ..."
That we surely do not know. By a *single* incident, when Noah was "drunk and uncovered" within what is called "his tent", i.e., Noah's *personal* apartment, nobody ought to make any conclusion, much less the offensive one.
Note *Matthew 7:1,3 & Romans 2:1*.

(2) As for your note, I have no idea what kind of ancient *lie* you mean, whatever "historical" label it may bear. *Satan* is also old enough to cook up that dung.
To use such words as "Biblical Flood story was actually plagiarized from", in my humble opinion, is a *blasphemy*, with all the consequences you pull in. The devil pulls you – his spiritually blind goofy puppet – to his right destination, even death eternal. The only thing I can tell you about that evil lie of yours – *repent!*

Q: The Bible promotes *misogyny*.. Can you defend *1Timothy 2:11-15* easily?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: The Bible has never done such idiotism. Please read *Genesis 2:24*.
And, to your information, the Written Word of GOD does not need any defense. Please refer to *Jeremiah 23:29 & Ephesians 6:17*.
Don't exaggerate. *1Timothy 2:11-15*, especially *Verses 11-12*, commands Discipline & Subordination in the Church, not *misogyny*.

Q: Why would God make kids and teens able to become pregnant and have a sexual drive?
Q: I mean, if God designed humans, why would He make people as young as eleven, which are not mentally, psychologically, and, sometimes, even physically ready to deliver and care for a baby do such stuff?
Teenage pregnancy is a serious concern.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: You could also ask why teens have eyes & ears to watch & listen to evil.
As young as eleven, they also can be taught how to kill and do it.
Father GOD created humans after His Image & Likeness, full stop. And that Image & Likeness is best seen in little children. The latter learn from and obey *us*, grown-ups. Blaming GOD for the evil of parents, teachers, and society is also a serious concern.

Q: When you die, do you forget your family or what?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: If sinners in hell remember that, why should not do Righteous in Paradise?

Then he said, I pray thee therefore, Father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house. For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment. (Luke 16:27-28)

Q: What are your thoughts on human cloning?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2021. Condensed.)

A: Negative.

I know that, whatsoever GOD doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it: and GOD doeth it, that men should fear before Him. (Ecclesiastes 3:14)

341

Q: *Genesis 1:1. In the Beginning God created the Heaven and the Earth.*

One might ask what existed, and where God dwelt before He created Heaven and Earth. Some Biblicists contend that Biblical chronology fixes the date of Creation at 4004 B.C., thereby making the Earth about six thousand years old. Present-day creationists stubbornly adhere to a young Earth timetable in spite of *overwhelming* evidence that the Earth is billions of years old.

(From "Bible *absurdities*," by D. Morgan. Edited. *https://infidels.org/library/modern/donald_morgan/absurd.html*. March 2018.)

A: Mr. Morgan, what GOD can do, is far beyond your ability to comprehend. What He should & would do, you must not judge, even the "overwhelming" idiotic way as your "*morgan/absurd.html"*.

Every craftsman, logically, exists before any of his handicrafts. And that is well applicable to our LORD GOD. Take the pain to include Time in His Creation. This way, your impassable puzzle might look clearer for you.
One might also ask, what "existed" before your "scientific" idea of "big boom", all the Universe coming into being thereafter, let alone the simple question of who or what might cause it and what for.

So, where is the "absurdity" – in the Holy Bible or the concoctions of your likes? Your picture of the LORD is primitive. He is indeed *Incomprehensible*, and every possible *Knowledge of Him* stays limited. GOD judges the *blasphemy* of some of His creatures, who make their sorry selves liable to respective Punishment.

Can the "overwhelming evidence" producers try to understand that all things were created to look the way they did?
What Biblical Scholars calculated was based on the Chronology given in the Written Word of GOD and, therefore, stays True. Even as our Heavenly Father is.

Q: Why was God not able to defeat iron chariots in *Judges 1:19*?

(Signed: Agnostic, ex-Protestant. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: No such words as "GOD was not able" period.
The Amplified Bible better sort out Who could and who could not.

The LORD was with Judah, and [the tribe of] Judah took possession of the hill country, but they could not dispossess and drive out those inhabiting the valley because they had iron chariots. (Judges 1:19, The Amplified Bible)

The only explanation for that failure is *disobedience to GOD* on the part of Israel. Our LORD GOD said,

> *... ye shall dispossess the inhabitants of the land, and dwell therein: for I have given you the land to possess it ... But if ye will not drive out the inhabitants of the land from before you; then it shall come to pass, that those which ye let remain of them shall be pricks in your eyes, and thorns in your sides, and shall vex you in the land wherein ye dwell. Moreover it shall come to pass, that I shall do unto you, as I thought to do unto them. (Numbers 33:53,55,56)*

You can read *Chapter 1* of the *Book of Judges* and see what Israel did instead. Kindly pay attention to *Verses 21 & 27 – 33*.
Please regard our discussion on the same subject in chapter 349.
As for the "iron chariots" reasoning, the Scripture said:

> *This is thy lot, the portion of thy measures from Me, saith the LORD; because thou hast forgotten Me, and trusted in falsehood. (Jeremiah 13:25)*

Q: (1) Do you think Satan has a chance to repent?
Q: (2) Or is he just doomed for hell for the "need" of an enemy?.
Q: (3) Would God forgive Satan if the last truly wanted Forgiveness?
Q: (4) Or was Satan just predestined to go to hell?
Q: (5) If Angels had Free will, would more of them have fallen?
Q: (6) Is there any writing about what happened when Lucifer fell from God?

(Signed: A*gnostic, ex-Christian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: (1) Everybody has that chance. Please read *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
(2) It is nonsense. That "need" may dwell only in disordered brains.
(3) Why not? Yet, you may note that Satan & Truth don't mix. *John 8:44*.
(4) It is his choice by the corruption of his Free will. *Revelation 12:12*.
(5) Their fall *proves* their (misused) Free will.
In chapter 280, please read the words of Brother C.S. Lewis.
(6) It is *Genesis Chapter 3*. Kindly note human spiritual Authority over the Earth (*Genesis 1:26-28*). That Authority was misdirected by Satan.

342

Q: God does not put mistakes in the Bible. However, different contexts create *contradictory* Verses in the Bible. These *contradictions* make it *impossible* to obey every Instruction in the Bible. It is necessary to rightly *divide* the Lord's Instructions for us today from the Instructions in time past or for those in the ages to come. It is usual to *separate* the Old from the New Testaments. However, both of the Testaments are the subject of Prophecy to Israel. The Mystery Information given to Paul demands another *division* to separate from that which was prophesied. We can reconcile the *contradictions* ... by identifying who is speaking, to whom, and under what dispensational context.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)*

A: Well, the questions *Grace Ambassadors* got to my attention.
May the LORD, our GOD, answer you, whether through my humble self or some better Minister of His, as *Jeremiah 33:3* well explained that for us all.

What causes my concern is your wording, which I put in italics.
I know: "contradictory Verses in the Bible" is a lie. And must not be published.
Have you ever heard that all Written Word of GOD is a Perfect Harmony? The latter questions the "divisions", which you dare to teach. See *Deuteronomy 4:2.*
Interpreting the Holy Scriptures, we should listen to the Holy Ghost. He clarifies whatever "hard" passages, eliminating any *evil* thought of "contradiction".
Preaching our Christian Unity, the last thing I want for myself is to be understood as a conflict-seeker, especially by Christians.
Chapters 342–401 are the answers to the questions of *Grace Ambassadors*.

Notes.

1. Be careful in your interpretations. *Jeremiah 13:15.*
2. Especially when the thought of "outdated Scripture" comes up. *Luke 20:38.*
3. Listen to our Promised Teacher. *John 14:26.* You may consider chapter 104.
4. Don't make quick conclusions. *1Corinthians 13:9 & 2Peter 3:14-16.*

* Regretfully, that site and those "contradictions" remain (June 2026).
More than once, I tried to get in touch with *Grace Ambassadors.* – But failed.

That which is crooked cannot be made straight:
and that which is wanting cannot be numbered. (Ecclesiastes 1:15)

343

Q: Is the Gospel the Cross or the Kingdom?
– Mark 1:14-15 & *1Corinthians 15:1-4*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, June 2026.)

A: Let me first try to define our key terms.

Gospel – the *Good News* about *Repentance* unto *Salvation* – the subject of our *Great Commission (the Twelfth Commandment).*

Cross – the *Christian Way of Life*, when it comes to sorting out the *priorities* and have the *Word of GOD* our Supreme & Final Authority, no matter what.

Kingdom – the *Kingdom of Heaven.* It welcomes the *Followers of Lord Jesus*.

Is the *Gospel* the *Cross* or the *Kingdom*? – Is the *military* the *arms* or the *uniforms*?
Why this comparison? Because in both questions, the main point is missing.

Mark 1:14-15 & 1Corinthians 15:1-4 are not discordant. It is written –

Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee, preaching the Gospel of the Kingdom of GOD, And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the Kingdom of GOD is at hand: repent ye, and believe the Gospel. (Mark 1:14-15)

Moreover, Brethren, I declare unto you the Gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; by which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures ... (1Corinthians 15:1-4)

Mark 1:14-15 confirms and exemplifies our three definitions (see above).
1Corinthians 15:1-4 teaches us the same. How come? Think carefully about the meaning of "if" there. We are warned against *Faith not proved by Works*.
Here, what is added to the Teaching is the *Cross of Christ.* It is the Ultimate Price paid for our *Salvation* and confirmed by the Victory of His Resurrection.
And that is the *Gospel* we preach. And the *Cross* we bear following the Narrow Way to the Strait Gate leading to the Eternal *Kingdom* of GOD.

344

Q: Was the Cross Glorious or shameful? – *Acts 3:13-15* & *Galatians 6:14*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: It has always been Glory to *Christians* and shame to *heathen*.

The GOD of Abraham, and of Isaac, and of Jacob, the GOD of our fathers, hath glorified His Son Jesus; Whom ye delivered up, and denied Him in the presence of Pilate, when he was determined to let Him go. But ye denied the Holy One and the Just, and desired a murderer to be granted unto you; and killed the Prince of Life, Whom GOD hath raised from the dead; whereof we are Witnesses. (Acts 3:13-15)

But GOD forbid that I should glory, save in the Cross of our Lord Jesus Christ, by Whom the world is crucified unto me, and I unto the world.
(Galatians 6:14)

As we've found in the previous and many other chapters of this book, the best way to solve problems is to start with definitions.
The "cross", when it comes to the means of punishing criminals, is a "shame".
It was mentioned in *Matthew 27:38,44; Hebrews 6:6; 12:2;* &c.
Kindly note: to determine who is a *criminal* and who is not, we are to leave with the relevant authorities who, sometimes, are *criminals* themselves.

The Cross of Christ – illustrating the Love of GOD, stated in *John 3:16-17* and every other Scripture depicting the Ultimate Sacrifice of Jesus – is the Glory.
The same is True about the Cross of Christians. For the Name of Jesus, we have to endure many offenses & persecutions from the heathen authorities.

There are no "contradictions" in the Holy Bible. That simple Truth embraces all the Scriptures dedicated to the *Cross* we know & bear as well. And no discrepant are the Scriptures mentioned in any of your questions.
You may see our Index section to find the relevant chapters for more.

The correct *definitions* may also sort everything out.

... For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are enemies of the Cross of Christ ... who mind earthly things ...
(Philippians 3:18-19)

345

Q: Was the Gospel made known or kept secret? – *Romans 16:25* & *Acts 3:21*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: The answer may a bit resemble the one in the previous chapter:
Known to *Believers* but Secret to *heathen*.
And, checking out my answers after four years, I dare to extend that statement:

The Gospel is also opened to a willing mind and closed up on a "contradiction seeker". See chapter 29 (Mind your approach).

It is written:

And He shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:
Whom the Heaven must receive until the times of Restitution of all things,
which GOD hath spoken by the mouth of all His Holy Prophets
since the World began. (Acts 3:20-21)

Now to Him that is of Power to stablish you according to my Gospel,
and the Preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the Revelation of the Mystery,
which was kept Secret since the World began, but now is made Manifest,
and by the Scriptures of the Prophets, according to the Commandment of
the Everlasting GOD, made known to all nations for the Obedience of Faith:
to GOD only Wise, be Glory through Jesus Christ for ever. Amen.
(Romans 16:25-27)

Considering the above Scriptures, we can clarify that, from the Beginning, the LORD, our Creator, foresaw all the ways our human mind would take for better or worse. Our Father GOD comprehended & answered the need of Savior to come when His Chosen People Jews would fall away, very few remaining Faithful to Him in Israel, much less outside thereof.
That Messianic Ministry was *foretold* through His Servants the Prophets and thus made it *known*. But who in the heathen world could ever take the pain to understand & believe that Prophecy, e.g., *Isaiah Chapter 53*? The first Verse thereof (which, by the way, depicted *our time* too) made it clear.

So, even made *known*, the Truth remained *Secret*. Here is the Wisdom of the LORD, our GOD. You may find some analogy in *Matthew 7:6*.
And, for a willing mind, there is no "contradiction" here.

346

Q: Did the Twelve understand the Gospel or not? – *Luke 9:2* & *Luke 18:34*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Yes, they did, and much better than many Christians nowadays.
Kindly note *Mark 10:28 & Luke 5:11*.

It is written:

Then He called His Twelve Disciples together,
and gave them Power and Authority over all devils, and to cure diseases.
And He sent them to preach the Kingdom of GOD, and to heal the sick.
(Luke 9:1-2)

Then He took unto Him the Twelve, and said unto them, Behold,
we go up to Jerusalem, and all things that are written by the Prophets
concerning the Son of Man shall be accomplished. For He shall be delivered
unto the Gentiles, and shall be mocked, and spitefully entreated, and spitted on:
and they shall scourge Him, and put Him to death: and the third day He shall
rise again. And they understood none of these things: and this Saying was hid
from them, neither knew they the things which were spoken. (Luke 18:31-34)

The Twelve did understand the Gospel – that part of Jesus' Teaching we, Christians, preach to the World according to our Twelfth Commandment – to the extent necessary there & then, as well as we should here & now.

For we know in part, and we prophesy in part. (1Corinthians 13:9)

By *Luke 9:1-2*, the First Disciples of Christ were made ready for the *Evangelization*, which was *Preaching* (first) and *Proving* (second).

Luke 18:34 & *1Corinthians 13:9* clearly show our limitations.
Yet it depends.

... Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured
to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given. (Mark 4:24)

Therefore, there are no "contradictions" in *Luke 9:2* & *Luke 18:34*.
The contradiction is between *calling* oneself a "Christian" and *being* the same.

347

Q: Do we preach the *Gospel* of the *Kingdom* or of *Grace*?
– Luke 9:2 & *Acts 20:24*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Can't we do both? Or cannot the Gospel include these two?
It is written,

And He sent them to preach the Kingdom of GOD, and to heal the sick.
(Luke 9:2)

But none of these things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myself, so that I might finish my Course with Joy, and the Ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the Gospel of the Grace of GOD.
(Acts 20:24)

Please, broaden your understanding of the second part of *Acts 20:24* –

... the Ministry, which I have received of the Lord Jesus, to testify the Gospel of [Repentance unto Salvation in the Eternal *Kingdom* of Heaven, which is the Manifestation of] *the Grace* [which is the unmerited Favor] *of GOD*.

Now, we can see the second part of *Acts 20:24* as the extended Version of the first part of *Luke 9:2* (*to preach the Kingdom of GOD*).
For the *Love* of our Father GOD is manifested in His *Compassion* – Love in action – toward us: His Son Jesus suffered the cross and paid the Ultimate Price for all sinners to be forgiven.
This *Good News* – the Gospel – is preached to all the World. And how to call it but *Grace* – the undeserved Mercy – of the LORD?
What has a sinner to do to get saved? Only thankfully welcome that Compassion, Sacrifice, and Truth into his (her) heart by a simple act of *Faith*?

So, *Luke 9:2* & *Acts 20:24* don't negate one another.

... we have received, not the spirit of the world, but the Spirit which is of GOD; that we might know the things that are freely given to us of GOD. Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual.
(2Corinthians 2:12-13)

348

Q: Is *Justification* with or without *Works*? – *Romans 4:5 & James 2:24*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Justification is from our Father GOD, Who sees our hearts.
Please read *2Chronicles 16:9*. As for these Scriptures, it is written:

1 What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh [i.e., pertaining to whatsoever but *spiritual* things], *hath found? 2 For if Abraham were justified by* [Good] *Works* [however, without *Faith*], *he hath whereof to glory; but not before GOD. 3 For what saith the Scripture? Abraham believed* [trusted wholeheartedly, did not doubt] *GOD, and it* [his *Faith*] *was counted unto him for Righteousness. 4 Now to him that worketh* [does *Good Works*] *is the Reward not reckoned of* [GOD's] *Grace, but of Debt* [the *Debt of conscience*].
5 But to him that worketh not [does not yet do the *Works of Faith*], *but believeth on Him that justifieth the ungodly, his Faith* [yet to be *proven*], *is counted for Righteousness.* [Note *Luke 15:20*.] *6 Even as David also describeth the Blessedness of the man, unto whom GOD imputeth Righteousness* [as a Right Beginning] *without Works* [yet to come], *7 Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered.* [See *Psalms 32:1; 85:2*.]
8 Blessed is the man to whom the LORD will not impute sin. [See *Psalms 32:2*.]
(*Romans 4:1-8*, the comments in square brackets are mine.)

> The above Scripture draws a line between *Works* (of *Charity*, *Ministry*, *Debt* of our conscience, &c.) done in *Obedience* to GOD, and *Faith* (presented in, and inspiring those *Works*). *Faith* (one of the power qualities of our spirit) is first, no doubt about that, yet it ought to be proven and manifested in those *Works* (which, in turn, stand far above all other routine activities of men) counted second to that *Faith*. The need for such *Works* is stated below.

14 What doth it profit, my Brethren, though a man say he hath Faith, and have not [proved it by] *Works? can Faith* [alone] *save him? 15 If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, 16 And one of you say unto them, Depart in Peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? 17 Even so Faith, if it hath not* [proven by] *Works, is dead, being alone. 18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast Faith* [only], *and I have* [*Faith* proven by] *Works: shew me thy Faith without thy Works, and I will shew thee my Faith by my Works. 19 Thou believest that there is One GOD; thou doest well: the devils also believe,* [moreover, they *know*] *and tremble* [*knowing* they are doomed].

20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that Faith without [the sufficient *proof* through] *Works is dead? 21 Was not Abraham our father justified by Works* [which provided the *evidence* of his *Faith*], *when he had offered Isaac his son upon the Altar? 22 Seest thou how Faith wrought with his Works* [which demonstrated his *Faith*], *and by Works was* [Abraham's] *Faith made Perfect* [in the Eyes of the LORD]*? 23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed GOD* [Who saw Abraham's *Faith* even before any of his *Works*, tested Abraham, and was pleased when his *Faith* was manifested in Good Works], *and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness: and he was called the Friend of GOD. 24 Ye see then how that by Works* [proving *Faith*] *a man is justified, and not by Faith only. 25 Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by Works* [of her *Faith*], *when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? 26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so Faith without Works* [to bear witness to that *Faith*] *is dead also.*

(*James 2:14-26,* the comments in square brackets are mine.)

Therefore, *James 2:14-26* well backs up *Romans 4:1-7*.
These two are well parallel and do not "contradict" one another.
Further references: *John 10:37-38 & 1Corinthians 2:4-5*.

Q: Are we saved by Faith or by Works?

(Signed: *Christian, Protestant.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Edited, condensed.)

A: We are saved by our *Faith* proved by our *Works.*
The latter are the Works of GOD done through ourselves.

Q: Sabbath day – *Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy." — Exodus 20:8*
"One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day alike. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind." — Romans 14:5
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021.)

A: If you are looking for "contradictions", you will find them, that is for sure.
Please see chapter 29 (Mind your approach).
Romans 14:5 & *Exodus 20:8-11 (& Deuteronomy 5:12-15)* do not "contradict" one another. Please read *Romans 14:6*, which, most definitely, presumes serving the LORD GOD in different ways. Sabbath should & can be honored on any day of the week, subject to our occupations.
Please see chapter 91 (The Fourth Commandment).

349

Q: Was Christ's blood shed for many or for all?
– Matthew 20:28 & *1Timothy 2:6*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: The Lord died for all, was welcomed by many, and was rejected by most.

... the Son of Man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister,
and to give His Life a Ransom for many. (Matthew 20:28)

For there is One GOD, and One Mediator between GOD and men,
the Man Christ Jesus; Who gave Himself a Ransom for all,
to be testified in Due Time. (1Timothy 2:5-6)

Kindly mind the following analogy.
We, Christians, create our Christian websites for *all*.
However, far not *all* Internet users drop by.
When those sites get noticed, *many* Christians visit us.
Some stay on, and we gladly share our Revelation Knowledge with them.
(Our Holy Bible presents the same analogy in *John 1:11-13*.)

So, there is no oppositeness between *Matthew 20:28* & *1Timothy 2:6*.

Q: The Power of God.
"... with God all things are possible." — Matthew 19:26
"... The LORD was with Judah; and he drave out the inhabitants of the mountain; but could not drive out the inhabitants of the valley, because they had chariots of iron." — Judges 1:19
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021.)

A: *Judges 1:19*, whether considered separately or within a much larger context, does not diminish the Power of the LORD GOD.
Considering the style of your preamble, I beg to note that "he" in that Scripture stands for the Tribe of Judah, not for our Father GOD.
The Scripture and the context means: "GOD was with His People but their Faith in the LORD was less than the fear of some stupid chariots."
Therefore *Matthew 19:26* & *Judges 1:19* are not "contradictory".
You may see our discussion on the same subject in chapter 341.

350

Q: Do Animal Sacrifices atone for sins? – *Leviticus 16:27* & *Hebrews 10:4*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Yes, they do. But "atone for sins" neither means "eradicate sinful attitude" nor "renew a heart".
It is written:

> *And the bullock for the Sin Offering, and the goat for the Sin Offering, whose blood was brought in to make Atonement in the Holy Place, shall one carry forth without the Camp; and they shall burn in the fire their skins, and their flesh, and their dung. (Leviticus 16:27)*
>
> *1 For the Law having a shadow of Good things to come, and not the very Image of the things, can never with those Sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto Perfect. 2 For then would they not have ceased to be offered? because that the Worshippers once purged should have had no more conscience of sins. 3 But in those Sacrifices there is a remembrance again made of sins every year. 4 For it is not possible that the blood of bulls and of goats should take away sins.*
> *(Hebrews 10:1-4)*

So, the *Animal Sacrifices*, prescribed by the Holy Law of GOD, *did* atone for our sins. All the sins done by us up to the moment of Sacrifice were made up for. To doubt that means to disbelieve the LORD. But for how long does the Atonement stand valid? – Only until our next sin.
Those Sacrifices could not do away with our future sins, as *Hebrews 10:1-4* makes it clear. Obviously, *Verse 1* presumed the Substitutional Sacrifice of Christ Jesus. And *Verse 4*, by "sins", means the *sinful attitude* of a corrupted human heart (spirit).
The Atonement was limited. Why? Because it is a matter of our *conscience*, whether the last purged our hearts from sinfulness or not. People sinned and (under the Holy Law of GOD) paid their due penalties by the lives of innocent animals, again & again.
See chapter 120 (Animal Sacrifices).

To sum up this discussion, there is not any disagreement between these two Scriptures, even *Leviticus 16:27* & *Hebrews 10:4*.
You may visit our Index section for more references.

351

Q: Is God imputing sins against us? – *Acts 5:1-10* & *Romans 4:8*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: GOD condemned a *sinful attitude* of the heart. *Hebrews 6:4-6* & *10:26-29.*
GOD doesn't judge us for sin(s) repented of and confessed. *Proverbs 28:13.*
For *Acts 5:1-10,* please see chapter 231 (The lesson of Ananias & Sapphira).

According to *Acts 5:3-4,* Brother Ananias let *Satan* in his heart and dared *lie* to the *Holy Spirit of GOD*. For *deceiving* an Apostle – the Representative of the Lord Jesus – is the same as *lying* to the LORD. The *Christian* became the *servant of the devil*. Moreover, as per *Acts 5:9,* that *sin* was contrived by two persons.
On that ground, what can we expect of GOD? Bless the *liars*?
It is written:

He that worketh deceit shall not dwell within My House:
he that telleth lies shall not tarry in My Sight. (Psalms 101:7)

On the other hand,

Blessed is the man
to whom the LORD will not impute sin. (Romans 4:8)

Please see the Index section for *Repentance* and *Confession*.

If you think *Acts 5:1-10* & *Romans 4:8* are "contradictory", you are wrong.
Acts 5:1-10 is an example of those who failed the Test.
Romans 4:8 is dedicated to those who won a skirmish with the devil.
We are not supposed to think ourselves "saved" right after becoming Christians and do whatsoever we please thereafter.

Q: (1) Why did God accept Satan's test of Job when Satan *eggs* Him *on,* but when Jesus encounters Satan in the desert, He doesn't accept any testing?
Q: (2) How do you reconcile these seemingly incompatible responses to Satan?
Q: (3) Doesn't Satan put God to the test by doing so to His Creation?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* January 2021. Edited.)

A: (1) The LORD, our GOD, neither contradict Himself nor "accept" anything from Satan, nor compromise with the evil one. Please note *Genesis 1:4*. Satan has never been able to "eggs on" or incite or urge Holy GOD to any evil. Furthermore, *Test* comes from our Heavenly Father, but *temptation* from Satan only. Please see the Index for *GOD's Test, Satan, Temptation(s)*.

By testing & training us, the LORD *allows* some temptations to come over. Contrary to *His Holy Will*, the devil cannot tempt us. *1Corinthians 10:13.* Such were the temptations for our Lord Jesus. Read *Matthew 4:1* attentively.
(2) Therefore, I do not see any "contradiction" between the story of Job and the Training of Jesus. Our Father GOD ruled both events.
Hopefully, you understand that a "conversation" between the LORD GOD and Satan, as in *Job 1:6-12*, is metaphorical and to be understood *spiritually*.
(3) Thinking that anybody can "put God to the test" is erroneous. The Words of Jesus in *Matthew 4:7 – Thou shalt not tempt the LORD thy GOD* – should be understood as a Good Warning.
Thank you.

Q: What is your interpretation of *Ecclesiastes 9:4,5,10* stating there is no *afterlife?*. That is a considerable contradiction with the New Testament.
(Signed: *Atheist, ex-Mormon. https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: Our Holy Bible does not have "contradictions".

3 ... the heart of the sons of men is full of evil, and madness is in their heart while they live, and after that they go to the dead. 4 For to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope: for a living dog is better than a dead lion. 5 For the living know that they shall die: but the dead know not any thing, neither have they any more a reward; for the memory of them is forgotten. ... 10 Whatsoever thy hand findeth to do, do it with thy might; for there is no work, nor device, nor knowledge, nor wisdom, in the grave, whither thou goest. (Ecclesiastes 9:3,4,5,10)

Far as I understand, the words – *evil, madness, the dead, the grave* – deal with *hell* & *eternal death*. But the keyword – *Hope* – points to *Salvation*.
Verse 3 sorrowfully describes most of humankind.
Verse 4 is often mentioned in this book to support more than one conclusion.
Verse 5 stands on *Genesis 1:27*, per which Father GOD gave us a *conscience*. Here, the Words "*the dead know not any thing*" may be taken for "in hell, *the dead know not any thing* Good to know". And what is left? The "*weeping and gnashing of teeth"* for the expired Hope, the scorned Truth, the ignored Way, and the Eternal Life lost forever.
Verse 10 directs the living to "*work out your own Salvation with Fear and trembling"* as per *Philippians 2:12*.
Thank you.

352

Q: Do we need Works for Righteousness? – *James 2:24* & *Titus 3:5*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: If we need work for a living, what about the Works of GOD for Salvation?
It is written,

17 Even so Faith, if it hath not Works, is dead, being alone. 18 Yea, a man may say, Thou hast Faith, and I have Works: shew me thy Faith without thy Works, and I will shew thee my Faith by my Works. 19 Thou believest that there is One GOD; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. 20 But wilt thou know, O vain man, that Faith without Works is dead? 21 Was not Abraham our father justified by Works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the Altar?
22 Seest thou how Faith wrought with his Works, and by Works was Faith made Perfect? 23 And the Scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed GOD, and it was imputed unto him for Righteousness: and he was called the Friend of GOD. 24 Ye see then how that by Works a man is justified, and not by Faith only. 25 Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by Works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? 26 For as the body without the spirit is dead, so Faith without Works is dead also. (James 2:17-26)

> *5 Not by Works of Righteousness which we have done, but according to His Mercy He saved us, by the Washing of Regeneration, and Renewing of the Holy Ghost; 6 Which He shed on us abundantly through Jesus Christ our Saviour; 7 That being justified by His Grace, we should be made Heirs according to the Hope of Eternal Life. (Titus 3:5-7)*

So, by the first Scripture, *by Works, a man is justified*, yet in accord with the second, it is *not by Works.* A bit puzzling, isn't it? But that is only at first, too quick reading. To see the connection (instead of "contradiction") here, we ought to put the spiritual things in their proper order: *Grace*, *Repentance*, *Faith*, *Works*.

1. *Grace*.
From the Beginning of Time to save us from eternal death, our Father GOD had a Plan of Redemption & Salvation (see *2Timothy 1:9*). According to that Plan, people are saved by His Act of Grace. Here & now, it's the Cross of Christ only.
The Grace of GOD is the first & foremost Condition for our Salvation.
However, the Love of GOD is not blind, and the following Conditions are to be complied with by us. It is *our* part of the Eternal Covenant with the LORD GOD.

2. *Repentance*.
A sinner should honestly repent before the LORD our GOD, confess his (her) sins, and wholeheartedly follow the Way of Righteousness. Read *Luke 15:20*.
Repentance is the first step on our GOD-ward Road.

3. *Faith*.
In our Repentance, we ought to believe in GOD's Salvation and welcome Jesus the Son of GOD – the Way, the Truth, and the Life – in our hearts. That's when Faith begins. Faith is one of our spiritual power qualities.
It requires to be rightly fed, trained, and proven.

4. *Works*.
Our Faith should be proven in the Eyes of the LORD GOD (*1Peter 1:17*) only by the Works of Righteousness. We may compare that to friendship – our friends are such in our eyes not only by their words but deeds too. See chapter 348.
Important: the Works of GOD (Works of Righteousness, Charity, Ministry, etc.) are those done not by ourselves but Father GOD (or Holy Ghost or Lord Jesus) through us as His Instruments. Note well *James 1:17*.

> The above description of Grace, Repentance, Faith, and Works is very brief, a lot might be added, but hopefully, that is quite enough to sort them out.
> So, the answer to our question is: we do need Works of Righteousness to *prove* our Righteousness & Faith, and thus be worthy of the Grace of GOD.
> Even so, *James 2:24* & *Titus 3:5* do not contradict one another.

Q: The Permanence of Earth.
"... the Earth abideth for ever." — Ecclesiastes 1:4
"... the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the Earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up." — 2Peter 3:10
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021.)

A: It is written:

One generation passeth away, and another generation cometh:
but the Earth abideth for ever. (Ecclesiastes 1:4)

Please understand this Scripture as "Compared to human lifetime, the Earth lasts endlessly. (Yet it abideth for the Due Course of Time until the End arrives.)"
As for "the Permanence of Earth", please see *Isaiah 65:17, 66:22, 2Peter 3:13*, & *Revelation 21:1*. – The New Earth is to be created for the People of GOD.

353

Q: Is Salvation "*not of Works"* or "*by our behavior*"?
– Ephesians 2:8-9 & *Luke 10:25-29.*
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: The *Works of GOD* (done by GOD through us) and (our) *Godly behavior* both testify of (our) Faith needful for (our) Salvation.

It is written:

8 For by Grace are ye saved through Faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the Gift of GOD: 9 Not of Works, lest any man should boast (as if he had done those Works all by himself). *10 For we are His Workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto Good Works* (to do those Works as Good Instruments of GOD), *which GOD hath before ordained that we should walk* (do our best to follow His Guidance) *in them.*

(Ephesians 2:8-10. And my humble comments.*)*

25 And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted Him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit Eternal Life? 26 He said unto him, What is written in the Law? how readest thou? 27 And he answering said, Thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and with all thy mind; and thy neighbour as thyself.
28 And He said unto him, Thou hast answered right: this do, and thou shalt live. (Luke 10:25-28)

Regarding *Ephesians 2:8-10*, please see chapter 352 (Works of Righteousness), in which we sorted out the *Grace of GOD*, our *Faith*, and *Good Works* done by Almighty GOD through us, His Servants.
Luke 10:27 (repeating *Deuteronomy 6:4-5*) does not negate *Ephesians 2:8-10*, since our *Love* toward Father GOD is impossible without our *Faith* in Him, and these two – *Love* & *Faith* – are proven by Good Works as per *Ephesians 2:10*.

Kindly note that, in your question, the word "*behavior*" is wrong. It has too many implications. What about "*Faithfulness*"?

That's why *Ephesians 2:8-9* & *Luke 10:25-29* cannot contradict one another.
By *Ephesians 2:8*, our Salvation is *the Gift of GOD*. However, without our *Righteous Works*, we may lose both, the *Right-standing with GOD* & *Salvation*.

354

Q: Was Abraham justified by Works or not by Works?
– James 2:21-23 & *Romans 4:2-3*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Kindly take a look at your Questionnaire to see not much difference between questions 6 ("Q & A" chapter 348) & 12 (the present one).
The alleged "contradiction" between *James 2:21-23* & *Romans 4:2-3* has been proven *false* in chapter 348.
The only difference between your questions 6 & 12 (chapters 348 & 354) is the subjects of *Justification* in the first and *Abraham* in the second.
Once the Man of GOD Abraham is thus mentioned, the only argument to be added, as it seems to me, is: the LORD's Justice is Perfect.
2Chronicles 19:7, *Romans 2:11*, *Ephesians 6:9*, *1Peter 1:17*, etc., etc.
Kindly visit our Index section too.

Q: It is a central dogma of all Fundamental Christians that the Bible is without error. They teach this conclusion by reasoning that God cannot be the author of false meaning and He cannot lie. Is this true? *If written by a Perfect Being, then the Bible must not contradict itself, as a Collection of Books written by different men at different times over many centuries would be expected to contradict each other*. With this in mind, let us have a look at the Bible on several subjects.
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: Messrs. *American Atheists*,
A Fundamental Christian is here. I do think that *the Bible* is without error. *Different Translations & Editions* present *the Written Word of GOD* in different ways, two being not the same. Kindly see chapter 118.
If you please, our reasoning is no less "reasonable" than yours, given our different spiritual positions.
In your Preamble, the phrase I put in italics has this answer: *2Peter 1:20-21*.
You may kindly continue to "have a look at the Bible on several subjects".
I will try my best to answer your reasoning with mine.
(You may kindly find "American Atheists" in the Index.)
Please also note that I am not supposed to convert you into Christianity. According to *Acts 2:47*, it is not my job. The LORD GOD will see to it.
Thank you.

355

Q: How are sins forgiven? – *John 20:23* & *Colossians 1:14*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: *Colossians 1:14* is clear. Please mind the important Word "In".
It is written [the notes in square brackets are mine]:

> *21 Then said Jesus to them* [and us, His Disciples] *again, Peace be unto you: as My Father hath sent Me, even so send I you. 22 And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost: 23 Whose soever sins ye* [relaying the Words of the Holy Ghost] *remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye* [relaying the Words of the Holy Ghost] *retain, they are retained. (John 20:21-23)*
>
> *In Whom* [our Lord Jesus] *we have Redemption through His Blood, even the Forgiveness of sins ... (Colossians 1:14)*

As *you* do not see the connection between the above Scriptures, the only way *you* see correct is to question them. So, as in chapter 352 (Works of Righteousness), please order these spiritual acts: *Repentance*, *Confession*, and *Forgiving*.
We (whether *Christians* or *unbelievers*) are not free from *sins* (*1John 1:8,10).*
When the Image & Likeness of GOD in us is not badly damaged by *sins* (which are not repented of), the *Holy Spirit of GOD*, through our *conscience*, rebukes us of any wrong. That is when *Repentance* comes in (*2Corinthians 7:10*).

Our Repentance should be proven by (manifested in) *Righteousness* (in thoughts, intentions, words, and deeds). See *Matthew 3:8*; *Acts 26:20*.

The next right step is *Confession* (*Psalms 32:5* & *1John 1:9*).
Like Repentance, Confession is proven by *Righteousness* (*Proverbs 28:13*).

The *Forgiving from the LORD* (whether declared by His Spirit-filled Servants, or manifested in Healing, or otherwise) follows (*John 20:22-23 & James 5:15-16*).

Our Blessed Lord paid the Ultimate Price for that *Forgiveness*.
Just avoid *intentional* sins and any *compromise* with the devil.
Remember *Hebrews 6:4-6* & *10:26-29.*

Thus *John 20:23* & *Colossians 1:14* also do not contradict one another.

356

Q: Is Forgiveness Conditional or not? – *Matthew 6:14-15* & *Ephesians 4:32*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Everything is conditional.
It is written: *... if ye forgive men their trespasses,*
your Heavenly Father will also forgive you:
But if ye forgive not men their trespasses,
neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. (Matthew 6:14-15)

And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another,
even as GOD for Christ's sake hath forgiven you. (Ephesians 4:32)

The Promised Forgiveness *is* Conditional. The Love of GOD, our Heavenly Father, even Love manifested in *John 3:16*, is not so blind to forget and contradict His Credentials stated in *Exodus 34:6-7*.
Otherwise, how to divide the *Light* from *darkness* and *Good* from *evil*?

Now, ask yourself, are those *Conditions* so impossible to comply with?
Behold, *Matthew 6:14-15* & *Ephesians 4:32* are not discrepant.

Q: Seeing God.
"*... I have seen God face to face, and my life is preserved." – Genesis 32:30.*
"No man hath seen God at any time ..." – John 1:18.
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*,
February 2021.)

A: The whole story of the first Scripture is *Genesis 32:24-30*.
In that Scripture, we read about the wrestling of the Holy *Angel of GOD* and His Servant Jacob, named thereafter *Israel*. Our LORD GOD Himself was not there. Accordingly, what Jacob emotionally *exaggerated* and what actually *happened* are two different things.
But *John 1:18* is the Teaching, which is certainly another story.
Therefore, *Genesis 32:30 & John 1:18* are not "contradictory".

Kindly note: in the Holy Bible, there are stories told by very different characters, the perverse ones inclusive. (Hey, I do not mean the above example, okay?) Some Scriptures we must follow literally – others ought to be understood as metaphoric. At Bible Study, one can meet even GOD's Sarcasm (see the Index). That's why we cannot use every Verse of every Edition as "It is written".

357

Q: Does Grace abound, or is there an unforgivable sin?
– Mark 3:29 & *Romans 5:20*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: The *Grace of GOD* does abound, being made known to all the World, and forgiving *every* sin, provided due *Repentance* is evident.
On the other hand, how forgive those who resolutely rejected it?
We may consider here the Scriptures in question.

1. *Mark 3:28-30* runs:

Verily I say unto you, All sins shall be forgiven unto the sons of men,
and blasphemies wherewith soever they shall blaspheme:
But he that shall blaspheme against the Holy Ghost
hath never Forgiveness, but is in danger of Eternal Damnation:
because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.

Even the blasphemy against the *Holy Spirit of GOD* can be forgiven, given that evil is repented of. But what can never be forgiven is the constant, stubborn, and mindful sins, including calling GOD and His Written Word *evil, lie, absurd,* &c.

2. *Romans 5:20-21* runs:

Moreover the Law entered, that the offence might abound.
But where sin abounded, Grace did much more abound:
That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might Grace reign
through Righteousness unto Eternal Life by Jesus Christ our Lord.

The *Law of GOD* brought to Light every sin to be recognized as such and Justly condemned. The Written Word of the LORD warned us on the danger of sin.
But the Power of GOD's Love, manifested in His Grace, is mightier than the evil power of Satan's lie, which leads folks to sinfulness unto the death eternal.
The ability of sin is limited to reign only over those who obdurately stand on their choice to serve Satan. But those, who honestly turned unto Righteousness, are justified unto the Life Eternal by their proven unwavering Faith in Christ Jesus. Even so, may our Heavenly Father be praised.

The conclusion: *Mark 3:29* & *Romans 5:20* do not conflict with one another.

358

Q: Is the Gospel *believe* or *Repentance and Baptism*? – *Acts 2:38* & *16:31*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Let me understand your parlance as,
"Is the Gospel *a matter of Faith* or *Repentance & Baptism*?"
It is written:

Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you
in the Name of Jesus Christ for the Remission of sins,
and ye shall receive the Gift of the Holy Ghost. (Acts 2:38-39)

And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ,
and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. (Acts 16:31)

The short answer to your question is: the *Gospel* is a matter of *Faith* evidenced in True *Repentance* and followed by the Sacrament of *Baptism*.
Acts 2:38 & *Acts 16:31* can not & do not "contradict" one another.

Here, we leave out these other important aspects pertaining to Good News: *Grace*, *Forgiving*, *Atonement*, *Reconciliation*, *Salvation*, *Charitable Works*, and the Mystery of *Giving*.
If interested, please see the Index section for references.

Q: Personal Injury.
"... thou shalt give life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, burning for burning, wound for wound, stripe for stripe." — Exodus 21:23-25
"... ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on the right cheek, turn to him the other also." — Matthew 5:39
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021.)

A: Please see *Exodus 21:24-25* within the context of relevant *Chapters 21-23* and, in *Exodus 21:22*, note the Words, "*as the Judges determine*".
Therefore in *Matthew 5:38-39,* Lord Jesus taught the folks not to take upon themselves the jobs of Judges & Executors, but rather keep Peace.
As Americans, you probably, dislike such "judges" as Klan, don't you?
So, no "contradictions". You may also see chapter 146 covering this topic.

359

Q: Are we at Peace with God? – *Matthew 3:7* & *Romans 5:1*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Your question is strange. The answer depends on who are those "we".
It is written:

... when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his Baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the Wrath to come? Bring forth therefore Fruits meet for Repentance ... And now also the Axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth Good Fruit is hewn down, and cast into the Fire. (Matthew 3:7-10)

Therefore being justified by Faith, we have Peace with GOD through our Lord Jesus Christ ... (Romans 5:1)

For starters, *Matthew 3:7,8,10* demands (and, first of all, of false teachers) to prove the Repentance by *Good Fruits* of Charitable Works. The Scripture also warns on the Wrath of GOD to come upon those who take His Word lightly.
Romans 5:1 is a Statement of fact: a *proven Faith* serves our Justification and the *Peace* with the LORD, our Father.
The above Scriptures are not discrepant. Neither there are such in the Bible.

Q: Circumcision.
"This is My Covenant, which ye shall keep, between Me and you and thy seed after thee; Every man child among you shall be circumcised."
— Genesis 17:10
"... if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing." — Galatians 5:2
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021.)

A: These Scriptures can not "contradict" one another,
as they deal with different things. Kindly see "Q & A" chapters 149 & 371.
Genesis 17:10 established the Covenant, which goes much further than this short Scripture. The Ordained Circumcision is that of our heart (spirit), the physical Token of which is a circumcised foreskin.
Galatians 5:2 teaches against blind following the letter of the Holy Law and leaving out the only Way to fulfill it, which became *in* Christ Jesus. He – our Lord – renewed the (broken by us) Old Covenant by giving us the New one, and *in* Him only we can follow the Law of GOD and get saved.

360

Q: Are we sent to baptize? – *1Corinthians 1:17* & *Mark 16:16*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: If you mean our Great Commission, we are sent to preach the Gospel.
It is written:

And He said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the Gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. (Mark 16:15-16) See *Matthew 28:19-20* too.

I thank GOD that I baptized none of you, but Crispus and Gaius; lest any should say that I had baptized in mine own name. And I baptized also the household of Stephanas: besides, I know not whether I baptized any other. For Christ sent me not to baptize, but to preach the Gospel: not with wisdom of words, lest the Cross of Christ should be made of none effect.
(1Corinthians 1:14-17)

So, the Teaching of *Matthew 28:19-20* & *Mark 16:15-16* is all about our *Great Commission* (the *Twelfth Commandment*). Kindly read chapter 43.

1Corinthians 1:14-17 points out the difficulties encountered in our following the Commandment of Christ. Note *2Corinthians 4:4*.
The problems are in the characters of those we preach the Gospel to.
It is written about in the *Parable of Sower* (dealt with in chapter 225). Per that Parable, the meaning & reason of Gospel & Baptism might be stolen from the foolish minds by the demons.

And when He sowed,
some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up ...
(Matthew 13:4) See also *Luke 8:5*.

That's why Apostle Paul, having baptized few, was sure in those Believers only. See good analogy at the end of chapter 156 (The Prayer of Repentance).
Therefore, in *Verse 17*, Brother Paul taught on the priorities: *Gospel* first.
As for the (Water) *Baptism* – "Q & A" chapter 20 – it should be wholeheartedly welcomed, as we can read in *Acts 8:26-39*, in which case GOD Himself is sure.

So, *1Corinthians 1:17* & *Mark 16:16* do not contradict one another.
Please visit the Index section for more references.

361

Q: (1) Does the Gospel include Water Baptism?
1Corinthians 15:1-4 & *Mark 1:4*.
Q: (2) One Baptism or more? *Ephesians 4:5* & *Matthew 3:11*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Your questions show the lack the Understanding the Holy Bible offers.

John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the Baptism of Repentance for the Remission of sins. (Mark 1:4)

... I declare unto you the Gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; by which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain. For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the Scriptures; and that He was buried, and that He rose again the third day according to the Scriptures ... (1Corinthians 15:1-4)

(1) We defined the *Gospel* & the *Baptism* in chapters 343 & 66, respectively.
Here, I dare add that *Baptism* is the Sacrament following the *Gospel* received.
Mind *Mark 16:15-16*. You may refer to the previous chapter 360.
The above Scriptures can not contradict one another. Why? Because they speak about different things. Brother John the Baptist preached the Baptism of Repentance. (That, by the way, Jewish Rabbis also did. Note *Matthew 23:15*.)
Brother Paul preached the *Gospel* – the New Way of Reconciliation & Salvation.
And he made clear what the Gospel is. *Galatians 1:8-9 & 1Thessalonians 1:5*.
(2) Your second question.

I indeed baptize you with water unto Repentance: but He that cometh after me is Mightier than I, Whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with Fire ... (Matthew 3:11)

One Lord, One Faith, One Baptism ... (Ephesians 4:5)

Here you err again, as the above Scriptures teach on different subjects.
Matthew 3:11 proclaims New Baptism actuated in the Holy Ghost.
Kindly see the same in *Acts 8:14-17, 10:44, & 19:4-6*.
Ephesians 4:5 preach our *Unity* in Christ. *Jeremiah 32:39-40 & John 13:34-35*.
Thus, the alleged “contradictions” got cleared off.

362

Q: Go to *all* or just to *Israel*? – *Matthew 10:5-6* & *Titus 2:11*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: In these Scriptures, the apparent "inconsistency" or "discrepancy" will quickly disappear once you put *Matthew 28:18-20* in between.

These Twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: But go rather to the lost Sheep of the House of Israel. (Matthew 10:5-6)

For the Grace of GOD that bringeth Salvation hath appeared to all men ... (Titus 2:11)

Matthew 10:5-6 belongs to Jesus' Mission to Israel (as per *Matthew 15:24* & *John 1:11*). That ended by His Words: *It is finished ...* (*John 19:30*)
Titus 2:11 backs our *Great Commission* (*Matthew 28:18-20* & *Mark 16:15*).
The *Teaching of Jesus,* written in the Gospels, is Eternal and given to *all* people (*Matthew 24:35, Mark 13:31, & Luke 21:33*).

Q: Incest.
"Cursed be he that lieth with his sister, the daughter of his father, or the daughter of this mother ..." — Deuteronomy 27:22.
"And if a man shall take his sister, his father's daughter, or his mother's daughter ... it is a wicked thing ..." — Leviticus 20:17.
[But what was God's reaction to Abraham, who married his sister — his father's daughter?] See *Genesis 20:11-12.*
"And God said unto Abraham, As for Sara thy Wife ... I bless her, and give thee a son also of her ..." — Genesis 17:15-16
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021.)

A: The subject of *incest* was discussed in chapters 339 & 748. Take a look.
Here, I can only repeat that incest became *sin* when the LORD GOD said so. You may read *Leviticus 18:6-18*.
Kindly note: when the LORD said to Adam & Eve, "*Be Fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth*", that had nothing to do with "the sin of incest" too. The Holy Will of GOD and His Love are inseparable. He knows what is best for His Children.

363

Q: Should they carry money or not? – *Luke 10:4-5* & *Luke 22:35-36*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Verily, when reading these Scriptures, the last thing which should cross our mind is *money*. It is written:

Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way. And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house. (Luke 10:4-5)

And He said unto them, When I sent you without purse, and scrip, and shoes, lacked ye any thing? And they said, Nothing. Then said He unto them, But now, he that hath a Purse, let him take it, and likewise his Scrip: and he that hath no Sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. (Luke 22:35-36)

In *Luke 10:1-20*, our Lord Jesus sent His Disciples to preach the *Truth of GOD* (not yet the Atonement & Reconciliation by His Cross). Jesus mentioned that the *natural* needs were not to be worried about, as Father GOD Himself would take care thereof.

Luke 22:14-38 (along with *Matthew 26:20-35* & *Mark 14:17-31*) records the Communion during the Last Supper of Jesus. His Disciples were better prepared for their Great Commission. However, Baptism in the Holy Spirit was pending.

What was said in *Luke 22:35-36* had nothing to do with any *earthy* staff at all. Whatever things the different translations might ever present you with – purse, money, food, sword, etc. – do well to take it only *spiritually*.
Kindly note my proposed capitalization for *Luke 22:35-36* above.

The following references may help you to clear away your “contradictions”.

Purse & money – *Revelation 3:18* – Spiritual Gold tried by Fire, the Raiment.
Scrip (by Amplified Version, a provision bag) – *John 6:51,58* – Living Bread.
Spiritual Weapons & Armor – *Psalms 18:35 & 91:4* – The Shield & Buckler.
Proverbs 30:5 – The Shield of GOD.
Isaiah 59:17 – The Breastplate, Garments, Cloak.
Ephesians 6:14-17 – Garment, Breastplate, Boots, Shield, Helmet, Sword.
1Thessalonians 5:8 – The Breastplate & Helmet.

364

Q: Should the Disciples go to all nations or only “circumcision”?
– *Matthew 28:19* & *Galatians 2:9*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Your question resembles the one asked in chapter 362. Read attentively –

And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All Power is given unto Me in Heaven and in Earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the World. Amen. (Matthew 28:18-20)

... when they saw that the Gospel of the uncircumcision was committed unto me, as the Gospel of the circumcision was unto Peter ... And when James, Cephas, and John, who seemed to be Pillars, perceived the Grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of Fellowship; that we should go unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcision. (Galatians 2:7,9)

Now, *Matthew 28:18-20* – the well-known “Great Commission” (in this book, referred to as the Twelfth Commandment) – is the best answer to your question. *Galatians 2:9* should never be understood as a “contradiction” thereto since it is all about following the Twelfth Commandment of Christ. *Jews* (named as “the circumcision”) were separated. Why separated? Only because *Gentiles* (heathen, idolaters, unbelievers) and *Jews* (who thought themselves “learned”, “chosen”, “special”, and so forth) required a different approach to preach to. As you know, sometimes, it is easier to build a new house than repair an old one.

So, please, forget about your “contradictions” once again.

Scriptural references:

Acts 11:2-18 & 15:1-29 – The New Covenant & new view of fleshly circumcision.
Romans 2:25-29 ---------- True Circumcision & True Jew.
Romans 4:1-12 ---------- Brother Abraham’s Righteousness & circumcision.
1Corinthians 7:18-19 ---------- A mere fleshly circumcision & uncircumcision.
Galatians 5:2,6; 6:15 ---------- A circumcision does not matter for Christians.
Philippians 3:2,3 & Colossians 2:11 ----- The Circumcision of Christ.
Tit 1:10-11 ---------- Beware of false teachings.

365

Q: (1) Was Paul sent to baptize? – *Matthew 28:19* & *1Corinthians 1:17*.
Q: (2) Are they baptized by Jesus or into Jesus? – *John 4:1* & *Romans 6:3*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: The first question was answered in chapter 360. Kindly read.
As for the second one, it is written:

When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more Disciples than John, (though Jesus Himself baptized not, but His Disciples) He left Judaea, and departed again into Galilee. (John 4:1-3)

Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? (Romans 6:3)

Again, you found a "discrepancy" by picking up two Scriptures, *seemingly* on the subject, yet speaking about *different* things.
By *John 4:1-3*, Lord Jesus left one land for another. Why? His Baptism and that of Brother John had been the same. And that was *Water Baptism*. See chapter 20.
To baptize *into Jesus* (literally, "*into Jesus' death*"), His Disciples could not because their Teacher was yet very much alive. "Contradiction"?

Q: Trusting GOD.
"A good man obtaineth Favour of the LORD ..." — Proverbs 12:2.
Now consider the case of Job. After commissioning Satan to ruin Job financially and to slaughter his shepherds and children to win a petty bet with Satan, God asked Satan:
"Hast thou considered My Servant Job, that there is none like him in the Earth, a Perfect and an Upright man, one that feareth GOD, and escheweth evil? And still he holdeth fast his Integrity, although thou movedst Me against him, to destroy him without cause." — Job 2:3.
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: Those "conversations" between the LORD GOD and Satan could happen in the Spirit Realm only, and as such, ought to be understood not literally but *spiritually*. Yet, your interpretation is stupid, and the wording is too foolish to warrant a serious answer. In the Holy Scriptures, you see "contradictions" – I don't. Hereby be warned: stop your *blasphemy*.

366

Q: Are *we* to witness Christ's Earthly Ministry?
– 2Corinthians 5:16 & Acts 1:22.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: It is written,

20 For it is written in the Book of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and his Bishoprick let another take. 21 Wherefore of these men which have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us, 22 beginning from the Baptism of John, unto that same day that He was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a Witness with us of His Resurrection. 23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias. (Acts 1:20-23)*

* By The Amplified Bible, "... *Let another take his Position or Overseership*."

14 For the Love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if One died for all, then were all dead: 15 and that He died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto Him which died for them, and rose again. 16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: Yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we Him no more. 17 Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a New Creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become New. (2Corinthians 5:14-17)

To start from, your question is *illogical*. For we are unable to, and neither should (eye)witness what we did not (naturally) *see*. That could do only His first *Disciples* as well as those ancient crowds of *onlookers*. The witnessing could be *very* different, as it depended on the heart of each witness.
Let me repeat: there are no "contradictions" in the Written Word of GOD.

2Corinthians 5:14-17 made it clear *what* we should witness, even the *spiritual* things. And that we do by following our Great Commission, taught by the Holy Ghost, and getting Blessed with personal Testimonies.

As for *Acts 1:15-26*, kindly see chapter 169 (The Twelfth Apostle).
This Scripture is instructive only as the one giving us the *negative* example of managing Church matters.

367

Q: (1) Should Peter *have taken* a sword? – *Luke 22:36* & *Matthew 26:52*.
Q: (2) Should we meditate about what to speak?
– *1Timothy 4:15* & *Luke 21:14*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: 1. Kindly go as far as chapter 363 (your question 22). Here, we clear up the same sorry mess (you did) of *physical* & *spiritual* things.

And, behold, one of them which were with Jesus stretched out his hand, and drew his sword, and struck a servant of the High Priest's, and smote off his ear. Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. (Matthew 26:51-52)
(Read the same in *Mark 14:47*, *Luke 22:49-51*, and *John 18:10-11*.)

Then said He unto them, But now, he that hath a Purse, let him take it, and likewise his Scrip: and he that hath no Sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. (Luke 22:36)

Matthew 26:51-52 directs every (natural) *sword* right where it belongs – the doomed world of murderers. *Exodus 20:13* & *Deuteronomy 5:17*.
Luke 22:36 demands of us by all means to get the *Sword* of the Spirit – the Written Word of GOD – and keep it sharp so that demons will think twice before approaching us. See *Ephesians 6:11-17 & 1John 5:18*.
There are no "contradictions" here, just the lack of Understanding on your part.

2. It is written:

Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer: For I will give you a Mouth and Wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist. (Luke 21:14-15)

Luke 21:14-15 teaches us to put aside all our worldly wisdom & reasoning and depend on the Written Word of GOD only.
See the same in *Matthew 10:19-20* & *Mark 13:11*. Note well *Proverbs 3:5*.

Neglect not the Gift that is in thee, which was given thee by Prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the Presbytery. Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them; that thy Profiting may appear to all. Take heed unto thyself, and unto the Doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee. (1Timothy 4:14-16)

1Timothy 4:14-16 is another story.
When it comes to the *Written Word of GOD* & a *Prophecy* – the second never contradicting the first – our maximum attention & meditation are required.
For thus we come into *Communion with the LORD, our Father*.

There are no "contradictions" in these Scriptures. The more time you sacrifice to Bible Study, the fewer "contradictions" you may see therein.
As simple as that.

Q: Human Sacrifice.

"... Thou shalt not let any of thy seed pass through the fire to Molech, neither shalt thou profane the Name of thy God ..." – Leviticus 18:21

In the *Book of Judges*, there is the story of Jephthah, who led the Israelis against the Ammonites. Being fearful of defeat, this good religious man sought after a guaranteed victory by getting God firmly on his side. So he prayed to God.

"... If Thou shalt without fail deliver the children of Ammon into mine hands, Then it shall be, that whatsoever cometh forth of the doors of my house to meet me, when I return in peace from the children of Ammon, shall surely be the LORD's, and I will offer it up for a Burnt Offering"
— Judges 11:30-31

The terms were *acceptable* to God – remember, He is supposed to be Omniscient and know the future – so He gave victory to Jephthah, and the first whatsoever that greeted him upon his glorious return was his daughter, as God surely knew would happen if God is God. True to his vow, the general made a human sacrifice of his only child to God! – *Judges 11:29-34.*
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: *Judges Chapter 11* is a sad story of a quick promise made to GOD by His Servant Jephthah. *Verse 29* made it clear that to be "fearful of defeat" (as you put it) was more than wrong.
In chapter 356, our discussion with *American Atheists*, hopefully, made clear why it is wrong to use *every* Verse of the Bible as a Teaching.
Leviticus 18:21 is one of many Scriptures prohibiting human sacrifices.
And the story of Jephthah doesn't "contradict" it – if you please.

368

Q: (1) Does the Holy Spirit give Utterance, or do we?
– *Acts 6:9-10* & *Colossians 4:6*.
Q: (2) Are the gainsayers able to resist? – *Luke 21:15* & *Titus 1:9*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Many of your questions lay bare one common problem – *misunderstanding.* And thus, you underestimate the Power of the Holy Ghost.

1. It is written:

And Stephen, full of Faith and Power, did great Wonders and Miracles among the people. Then there arose certain of the Synagogue, which is called the Synagogue of the Libertines, and Cyrenians, and Alexandrians, and of them of Cilicia and of Asia, disputing with Stephen. And they were not able to resist the Wisdom and the Spirit by which he spake. (Acts 6:8-10)

Let your speech be alway with Grace, seasoned with Salt, that ye may know how ye ought to answer every man. (Colossians 4:6)

Obviously, in the first Scripture, you read about the Mighty Works of the *Holy Ghost* done through Saint Stephen. Then, our "own" Virtues are called for in the second one. Thus, the illusion of "contradiction" is ready at hand. Mess, isn't it? Listen carefully: these Scriptures are parallel, without any "contradictions". *Faith* & *Miracle-working Power* in *Acts 6:8*, as well as *Grace* & *Salt* (the subjects of chapters 322, 241, & 434) in *Colossians 4:6*, have one origin: the Holy Spirit of LORD GOD. In this regard, kindly note *John 8:32* & *1John 2:27*.

2. It is written,

Settle it therefore in your hearts, not to meditate before what ye shall answer: for i will give you a Mouth and Wisdom, which all your adversaries shall not be able to gainsay nor resist. (Luke 21:14-15)

For a Bishop must be Blameless, as the Steward of GOD; not selfwilled, not soon angry, not given to wine, no striker, not given to filthy lucre; but a Lover of hospitality, a Lover of Good men, sober, Just, Holy, temperate; holding fast the Faithful Word as he hath been taught, that he may be able by Sound Doctrine both to exhort and to convince the gainsayers. (Titus 1:7-9)

So, are the gainsayers able to resist? That depends. On what? Better, on who or Whom. Fools may reason their likes, yet not convincing the LORD, our Father. The above two Scriptures are strictly parallel regarding the Wisdom of GOD. It is Promised, commanded to be followed, and ever Able to convince even atheists.

Yet, the Holy Will of the LORD should be minded before expecting any desirable (and observable) results of our preaching to them. *Matthew 7:6*. So, no “contradictions”.

Q: The End of the World.

Verily I say unto you, There be some standing here, which shall not taste of death, till they see the Son of Man coming in His Kingdom. (Matthew 16:28)

Verily I say unto you, This generation shall not pass away, till all be fulfilled. Heaven and Earth shall pass away: but My Words shall not pass away. (Luke 21:32-33)

And that, knowing the Time, that now it is High Time to awake out of sleep: for now is our Salvation nearer than when we believed. The night is far spent, the Day is at hand: let us therefore cast off the works of darkness, and let us put on the Armour of Light. (Romans 13:11-12)

Be ye also Patient; establish your hearts: for the Coming of the Lord draweth nigh. (James 5:8)

Little children, it is the Last Time: and as ye have heard that antichrist shall come, even now are there many antichrists; whereby we know that it is the Last Time. (1John 2:18)

But the End of all things is at hand: be ye therefore Sober, and watch unto Prayer. (1Peter 4:7)

These Words were written between 1800 and 1900 years ago and were meant to warn and prepare the First Christians for the *immediate* end of the world. ... The world did not end 1800 or 1900 years ago. All that generation passed away without any of the things foretold coming to pass. No amount of prayer brought it about, nor ever so much patience and belief and sober living ... The world went on, as usual, indifferent ... The world, by surviving, makes the above passages *contradictions*.

(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, March 2021. Edited. Blasphemy got removed.)

A: *Matthew 16:28* points to Transfiguration of Lord Jesus (*Matthew 17:1-9*), not the End of the World.

Probably, in *Luke 21:32-33*, your impassable puzzle is in "*This generation*". Go to https://www.biblegateway.com/, and there find the Amplified Bible. It best explains *Verse 32* to starters (willing to hear, of course).

In *Romans 13:11-12*, you apparently stumbled on "*now it is High Time*".
These Words are correct, bearing in mind *Psalms 90:10*.

What's wrong with *James 5:8*? Is it "*the Coming of the Lord draweth nigh*"?
How old are you? Have you never thought that your much younger years were so recently? As my mother once told me, "Life had passed like one day." I believe the same thought might visit all. Therefore, *the Coming of the Lord* is equally soon & unexpected to every soul ever lived.

Thus *1John 2:18 & 1Peter 4:7* are backed by *Romans 13:11-12 & James 5:8.*
The above Scriptures were not "meant to warn and prepare the First Christians for the immediate" (as you put it) but to teach all of us, especially unbelievers.

I do not know about atheists, but Christians have never lived worrying about "any of the things foretold coming to pass". Neither we care about such a bull as your "interpretation" of our Holy Scriptures. *1John 2:18* and *Book of Martyrs* confirm that conclusion. So, don't lie.

"No amount of prayer brought it about; nor ever so much patience and belief and sober living ..." That's correct. No Prayer is ever supposed to do it. Patience & Faith were and still are required of Christians to endure satanic persecutions.

"The world went on, as usual, indifferent ..." Also correct, attaboy.
The heavy heathen brains have always been so indifferent until their death.
In that, I see complete accordance with *Wisdom 9:14-15* and *2Corinthians 4:3-4*.

"The world, by surviving, makes the above passages contradictions." Wrong.
Why? Because your "surviving" means "living without Christ & Salvation".

So, I cannot see a single bit of "contradiction" in the Scriptures you picked.
And here, I did not publish your blasphemous "Conclusion".
Please read *John 8:43-44* quoted in chapter 234 – it is good for you.

369

Q: (1) Is Paul or Peter the "Masterbuilder" upon Christ?
– *Matthew 16:18-19* & *1Corinthians 3:10*.
Q: (2) Is Paul the "least" or the "chiefest" of the Apostles?
– *2Corinthians 11:5* & *1Corinthians 15:9*.
Q: (3) Was Paul the "first" or the "last?" – *1Corinthians 15:8* & *1Timothy 1:16*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: I think these your questions are about the secondary things. *Mark 10:44*.
1. It is written,

... thou art Peter, and upon this Rock I will build My Church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on Earth shall be loosed in Heaven. (Matthew 16:18-19)

For we are Labourers together with GOD: ye are GOD's Husbandry, ye are GOD's Building. According to the Grace of GOD which is given unto me, as a wise Masterbuilder, I have laid the Foundation, and another buildeth thereon. But let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon. For other Foundation can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ.
(1Corinthians 3:9-11)

I beg to note that all the above terms – *Rock*, *Keys*, *Labourers*, *Husbandry*, *Building*, *Masterbuilder*, *Foundation* – are spiritual & metaphors.
Thus, the *Rock* in the first Scripture is parallel to the *Foundation* in the second one, the last line in *Matthew 16:19* resembles *Matthew 18:18*, our being *Labourers together with GOD* is not so easy to comprehend, etc.
Thus, Peter & Paul were both the first *Masterbuilders* but, by far, not the last.
Hey, no contradictions, okay? Mind *Mark 10:42-45 & 1Corinthians 1:12-13.*

2. It is written,

For I am the least of the Apostles, that am not meet to be called an Apostle, because I persecuted the Church of GOD. (1Corinthians 15:9)

For I suppose I was not a whit behind the very chiefest Apostles.
(2Corinthians 11:5)

The above Scriptures present Brother Paul's self-estimation. Does a rank of *Apostle* need any "chief" or "least" tag? No "contradictions". Note *John 8:31-32.*

3. It is written,

And last of all He [Jesus] *was seen of me also, as of one born out of due time. (1Corinthians 15:8)*

This is a Faithful Saying, and Worthy of all acceptation, that Christ Jesus came into the World to save sinners; of whom I am chief. Howbeit for this cause I obtained Mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all Longsuffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on Him to Life Everlasting. (1Timothy 1:15-16)

My conclusion is the same as to your every question – no "contradictions".
By *1Corinthians 15:8*, Saint Paul was the *last* in the list of First Apostles of Christ. Yet, he was not the *least* in Christian Apostolic Ministry.
By *1Timothy 1:15-16*, Apostle Paul was unique, as, in his worldly past, he indeed sinned greatly against our LORD GOD and His Church.
Paul's example is a weighty argument for every Evangelist preaching Good News to sinners. *John 3:16-17.*

Q: The Holy Lifestyle.
"Go thy way, eat thy bread with joy, and drink thy wine with a merry heart ..." — Ecclesiastes 9:7
"... they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not ..." — 1Corinthians 7:30
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: Regarding "contradictions", read the words of Confucius in chapter 401.
The following translations may answer your question.

Go your Way, eat your Bread with Joy and drink your Wine with a Cheerful heart [if you are Righteous, Wise, and in the Hands of GOD]; for GOD has already approved and accepted your Works.
(Ecclesiastes 9:7, The Amplified Bible)

The important thing to remember is that our remaining time is very short, and so are our opportunities for doing the Lord's Work. For that reason those who have wives should stay as free as possible for the Lord; happiness or sadness or wealth should not keep anyone from doing GOD's Work.
(1Corinthians 7:29-30, The Living Bible)

370

Q: How do we *know* what to say and believe?
– Mark 13:11 & *2Timothy 3:15-17*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: It is written:

> *... when they shall lead you, and deliver you up, take no thought beforehand what ye shall speak, neither do ye premeditate: but whatsoever shall be given you in that hour, that speak ye: for it is not ye that speak, but the Holy Ghost. (Mark 13:11)*

> *... continue thou in the things which thou hast learned and hast been assured of, knowing of Whom thou hast learned them; and that from a child thou hast known the Holy Scriptures, which are Able to make thee Wise unto Salvation through Faith which is in Christ Jesus. All Scripture is given by Inspiration of GOD, and is Profitable for Doctrine, for Reproof, for Correction, for Instruction in Righteousness: that the Man of GOD may be Perfect, throughly furnished unto all Good Works. (2Timothy 3:14-17)*

Once the above Scriptures are presented under the title “Contradictions”, let me guess where you have managed to see any. Probably, it is the Revelation of the *Holy Spirit* per *Mark 13:11* and personal Knowledge of the Holy Scriptures by *2Timothy 3:14-17*. Thus, per your unlearned “judgment”, one “excluded” the need of the other. However, these Scriptures teach us the same *Truth of GOD*.
He, spoken about in *Mark 13:11*, the Holy Spirit of GOD cannot communicate (reveal, remind, teach, etc.) anything contradicting the Written Word of GOD. And that Word (taught be the same Spirit) we should learn with all diligence.
Yea, the Holy Scriptures, stressed on by *2Timothy 3:14-17*, are impossible to be learned & understood without the Holy Ghost – our Promised Teacher.

That’s why *Mark 13:11* & *2Timothy 3:15-17* are firmly connected, making any “discrepancy” impossible. And not only these two Scriptures.

Now, how do we *know* what to say and believe? By the same Holy Ghost, as *Mark 13:11* teaches. According to *2Timothy 3:16*, we can recognize Him by the Written Word of GOD, which is the language of His Spirit.
So, pray in the Spirit per *Romans 8:26-27*.
And clear up your mind by *2Corinthians 10:3-5*.

371

Q: (1) Are we under the Law or not under the Law?
– *Matthew 5:19* & *Romans 6:14*.
Q: (2) Is Sabbath observance required? – *Exodus 20:8-10* & *Colossians 2:16*.
Q: (3) Is Circumcision necessary? – *Genesis 17:10-14* & *Galatians 5:2-6*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Are you under the Criminal Code of your country or not, and why?
1. It is written,

Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For Verily I say unto you, Till Heaven and Earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least Commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of Heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called Great in the Kingdom of Heaven. (Matthew 5:17-19)

For sin shall not have dominion over you: for ye are not under the Law, but under Grace. (Romans 6:14)

These Scriptures are not contradictory since they do not teach differently. *Matthew 5:17-19* is clear about our Obedience to the Holy Law of GOD. The way to follow is simple: do your best. Keep in mind *Luke 15:20*. See chapter 220. To understand *Romans 6:14*, we have to clarify what "to be under the Law" and "to be under Grace" mean. Kindly go as far as chapters 192 & 322.

2. It is written,

Remember the Sabbath Day, to keep it Holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD thy GOD: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates ... (Exodus 20:8-10) See the same in *Deuteronomy 5:12*.

Let no man therefore judge you in meat, or in drink, or in respect of an Holyday, or of the New Moon, or of the Sabbath Days: which are a shadow of things to come; but the Body is of Christ. (Colossians 2:16-17)

Regarding the *Fourth Commandment*, please see chapter 91.

As for *Colossians 2:16-17*, note the Parallels – *Matthew 12:1-8*, *Mark 2:23-28*, & *Luke 6:1-5*. For indeed, we are to keep the Sabbath. However, it is us to decide when and how to do it. There are not any "contradictions" here.

3. It is written,

This is My Covenant, which ye shall keep, between Me and you and thy seed after thee: Every man child among you shall be circumcised. And ye shall circumcise the flesh of your foreskin; and it shall be a Token of the Covenant betwixt Me and you. And he that is eight days old shall be circumcised among you, every man child in your generations, he that is born in the house, or bought with money of any stranger, which is not of thy seed. He that is born in thy house, and he that is bought with thy money, must needs be circumcised: and My Covenant shall be in your flesh for an Everlasting Covenant. And the uncircumcised man child whose flesh of his foreskin is not circumcised, that soul shall be cut off from his people; he hath broken My Covenant. (Genesis 17:10-14)

Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing. For I testify again to every man that is circumcised*, that he is a debtor to do the whole Law. Christ is become of no effect unto you, whosoever of you are justified** by the Law; ye are fallen from Grace ***. For we through the Spirit wait for the Hope of Righteousness by Faith. For in Jesus Christ neither circumcision availeth any thing, nor uncircumcision; but Faith which worketh by Love. (Galatians 5:2-6)*

* If you believe that circumcision on the flesh is sufficient.
** If you believe that following the letter of the Law is Righteousness.
*** Even the Power to follow the Law of GOD Rightly.

Well, no "contradictions" again.
In the first Scripture, note the Word *Token*.
The Old Covenant was broken by Israel, regardless of keeping the Token.
Read *Deuteronomy 10:16* about True Circumcision. And read chapter 149.
To better understand *Galatians 5:2-6*, take "*circumcised"* not only as having the *Token* on the flesh but rather, a circumcised heart. Otherwise, we wrongly try to get saved by a misunderstood letter without Christ. See *John 14:6*.
Mind the wording – *he is a debtor to do the whole Law*. The latter means not only the Ten Commandments but all Animal Sacrifices (substituted by the Cross of Christ). The Cross devalued the false faith in mere *physical* circumcision.

372

Q: (1) Is the Law for Righteous men? – *Matthew 5:17-18* & *1Timothy 1:7-8*.
Q: (2) Are we dead to the Law, or should we follow it?
– *Matthew 23:1-3* & *Romans 7:3*.
Q: (3) Does Righteousness come by the Law?
– *Deuteronomy 6:25* & *Romans 10:3-6*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Note, what you titled "Contradictions about the Law" doubts GOD's Law.
1. It is written:

Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets:
I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For Verily I say unto you,
Till Heaven and Earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise
pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled. (Matthew 5:17-18)

But we know that the Law is Good, if a man use it Lawfully;
knowing this, that the Law is not made for a Righteous man,
but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners,
for unholy and profane ... (1Timothy 1:8-9)

According to *Matthew 5:17-18*, the Holy Law of the LORD GOD is confirmed. In construing *1Timothy 1:8-9*, please think for yourself whether a Criminal Code of your country terrifies you, say, chapters dealing with murder, rape, drug-traffic, robbery, or corruption. Yes or No? To your information, it does some people, but not all. The death penalty & prisons *are not* for honest citizens. Therefore, no "contradictions".

2. See the answers to your first questions in the previous and present chapters. It is written:

... The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' Seat.
All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do;
but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. (Matthew 23:2-3)

Know ye not, Brethren, (for I speak to them that know the Law), how that the Law hath Dominion over a Man as long as he liveth? For the Woman which hath an Husband is bound by the Law to her Husband so long as he liveth; but if the Husband be dead, she is loosed from the Law of her Husband.

> *So then if, while her Husband liveth, she be married to another Man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her Husband be dead, she is free from that Law; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another Man. Wherefore, my Brethren, ye also are become dead to the Law by the Body of Christ; that ye should be married to another, even to Him Who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth Fruit unto GOD.*
>
> *(Romans 7:1-4)*

Matthew 23:2-3 made it clear once again: we *should* follow the Law of GOD. *Romans 7:1-4* confirms the above and adds: *in* Christ Jesus, and only *in* Him, we are *dead* to any spiritual & moral corruption liable to respective Punishment prescribed by that Law. Thus, again, there is no "contradictions" in the Word.

3. It is written:

And the LORD commanded us to do all these Statutes, to fear the LORD our GOD, for our Good always, that He might preserve us alive, as it is at this day. And it shall be our Righteousness, if we observe to do all these Commandments before the LORD our GOD, as He hath commanded us. (Deuteronomy 6:24-25)

> *For they* [most of GOD's People Israel] *being ignorant of GOD's Righteousness, and going about to establish their own righteousness* [dare to criticize the Law of GOD per Satan-inspired worldly reasoning & compromise], *have not submitted themselves* [fully & wholeheartedly] *unto the Righteousness of GOD. For Christ is the End of the Law* [Rightful Punishment of the evildoers] *for Righteousness to every one that believeth. For* [the LORD GOD through] *Moses describeth the Righteousness which is of the Law, That the man which doeth those things shall live by them.*
>
> *(Romans 10:3-5)* [The comments in brackets are mine.]

Reading *Deuteronomy 6:24-25*, kindly note: Father GOD has not ever demanded of any human being a single thing impossible to follow. In *Romans 10:3-5*, mind the Words, "*to establish their own righteousness*". Do you see in it any *new* thing under the Sun? Don't you recognize our modern Churches? Notwithstanding *Deuteronomy 6:25* & *Romans 10:3-6* (divided by Brothers Editors into the *Old* & *New* Testaments), these Scriptures are parallel. The Cross of Christ is not an "umbrella" for a *compromiser* calling him (her) self a Christian.
So, answering your question, *Yes*, Righteousness was, is, and will always be the *Obedience* to the Law of GOD, which now has been renewed by Jesus, our Lord, and His New Covenant. The conclusion is no "contradictions".

373

Q: (1) Is the Law a sign of strength or weakness?
– *Joshua 1:7* & *Galatians 4:9*.
Q: (2) Should we tithe? – *Matthew 23:23* & *2Corinthians 9:7*.
Q: (3) Is Giving (Tithing) a punishable Requirement?
– *Malachi 3:8* & *2Corinthians 9:7*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: So, you not only doubt the Holy Law of GOD but frown at Giving too.
1. It is written:

Only be thou Strong and very Courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the Law, which Moses My Servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper whithersoever thou goest. (Joshua 1:7)

... when ye knew not GOD, ye did service unto them which by nature are no Gods. But now, after that ye have known GOD, or rather are known of GOD, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you Labour in vain. (Galatians 4:8-11)

So, "Is the Law a sign of strength or weakness?" Neither. The Law is Holy, and who are we (you) to add any *tags* to it? *Joshua 1:7* commands us to be *spiritually* Strong to follow the Law. Every *spiritual* weakness – idolatry – is condemned by *Galatians 4:8-11*. I do not see any "contradictions" here.

2. It is written:

Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye pay Tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted the weightier matters of the Law, Judgment, Mercy, and Faith: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. (Matthew 23:23)

Every man according as he purposeth in his heart, so let him give; not grudgingly, or of necessity: for GOD loveth a Cheerful Giver. (2Corinthians 9:7)

Matthew 23:23 reprobated *hypocrites*. The last tithed but ignored "*the weightier matters of the Law"*. However, even their Tithing was to go on.

2Corinthians 9:7 encourages us to give to GOD. But if the purpose of the heart is infected by *worldly reason*, what kind of *cheer* is that? So, no "contradictions".

3. It is written,

Will a man rob GOD?
Yet ye have robbed Me. But ye say, Wherein have we robbed Thee? In Tithes and Offerings. Ye are cursed with a curse: for ye have robbed Me, even this whole nation. Bring ye all the Tithes into the Storehouse, that there may be Meat in Mine House, and prove Me now herewith, saith the LORD of Hosts, if I will not open you the Windows of Heaven, and pour you out a Blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it. (Malachi 3:8-10)

In the previous question, we viewed *2Corinthians 9:7,* which you doubt again. What is written in *Malachi 3:8-10* is very serious. Let *the purpose of your heart* be in line with that, and your "contradictions" disappear. There are none between *Malachi 3:8* & *2Corinthians 9:7.*
Behold some of the Scriptures confirming *Giving* under the New Covenant –

No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one,
and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.
Ye cannot serve GOD and mammon. (Matthew 6:24)

... If thou wilt be Perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor,
and thou shalt have Treasure in Heaven: and come and follow Me.
(Matthew 19:21)

... Lo, we have left all, and have followed Thee. And Jesus answered and said,
Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters,
or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the Gospel's,
But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren,
and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions;
and in the World to come Eternal Life. (Mark 10:28-30)

... woe unto you that are rich! for ye have received your consolation. (Luke 6:24)

... when thou makest a feast, call the poor, the maimed, the lame, the blind:
and thou shalt be Blessed; for they cannot recompense thee:
for thou shalt be recompensed at the Resurrection of the Just.
(Luke 14:13-14)

374

Q: Should Sabbath laws be enforced?
– Numbers 15:32-36 & *Galatians 4:10-11*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: If the Word of GOD lives in the heart, should it be "enforced"?
1. It is written,

And while the Children of Israel were in the wilderness, they found a man that gathered sticks upon the Sabbath Day. And they that found him gathering sticks brought him unto Moses and Aaron, and unto all the Congregation. And they put him in ward, because it was not declared what should be done to him. And the LORD said unto Moses, The man shall be surely put to death: all the Congregation shall stone him with stones without the Camp. And all the Congregation brought him without the Camp, and stoned him with stones, and he died; as the LORD commanded Moses. (Numbers 15:32-36)

Considering *Numbers 15:32-36*, kindly pay attention to the following.
First, GOD's People Israel were One Body and, as such, expected to be spiritually Clean. All the Acts of GOD's pertinent Justice are parallel to that.
Second. Nothing had been done to the guilty man without the direct Command from the LORD, Who looked into every heart prior to any Verdict.
As in the case of Ananias & Sapphira (*Acts 5:1-10*), the Verdict was unique, yet possible to be repeated, should the like circumstances & conditions recur.

2. It is written,

Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years.
I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you Labour in vain.
(Galatians 4:10-11)

Every Reproof recorded in the Bible, spoken directly by the Father GOD or through His Servants, might mean that those addressed did not follow the Word.
In his respective Comments on *Galatians 4:10*, Brother *John Calvin* wrote:

The civil observation of days contributes not only to agriculture and to matters of politics, and ordinary life, but is even extended to the Government of the Church. Of what nature, then, was the observation which Paul reproves?
It was that which would bind the conscience, by religious considerations, as if it were necessary to the Worship of GOD, and which, as he expresses it in the Epistle to the Romans, would make a distinction between one day and another. (Romans 14:5).

When certain days are represented as Holy in themselves, when one day is distinguished from another on religious grounds, when Holy days are reckoned a part of Divine Worship, then days are improperly observed. The Jewish Sabbath, New Moons, and other Festivals, were earnestly pressed by the false apostles, because they had been appointed by the Law.
When we, in the present age, intake a distinction of days, we do not represent them as necessary, and thus lay a snare for the conscience; we do not reckon one day to be more Holy than another; we do not make days to be the same thing with Religion and the Worship of GOD; but merely attend to the preservation of Order and Harmony. The observance of days among us is a Free Service, and void of all superstition. (John Calvin, Harmony of the Law)

So, should Sabbath Laws be enforced? No. The above comments made it clear. And kindly see no "contradiction" in *Numbers 15:32-36* & *Galatians 4:10-11*.

The Lord of the Sabbath.

And, behold, there was a man which had his hand withered. And they asked Him, saying, Is it Lawful to heal on the Sabbath days? that they might accuse Him. And He said unto them, What man shall there be among you, that shall have one sheep, and if it fall into a pit on the Sabbath day, will he not lay hold on it, and lift it out? How much then is a man better than a sheep? Wherefore it is Lawful to do Well on the Sabbath days. Then saith He to the man, Stretch forth thine hand. And he stretched it forth; and it was restored whole, like as the other. (Matthew 12:10-13.)

And He said unto them, That the Son of Man is Lord also of the Sabbath. And it came to pass also on another Sabbath, that He entered into the Synagogue and taught: and there was a man whose right hand was withered. And the Scribes and Pharisees watched Him, whether He would heal on the Sabbath day; that they might find an accusation against Him. But He knew their thoughts, and said to the man which had the withered hand, Rise up, and stand forth in the midst. And he arose and stood forth. Then said Jesus unto them, I will ask you one thing; Is it Lawful on the Sabbath days to do Good, or to do evil? to save Life, or to destroy it? And looking round about upon them all, He said unto the man, Stretch forth thy hand. And he did so: and his hand was restored whole as the other. (Luke 6:5-10)

375

Q: (1) Liberty or bondage of the Law? – *Matthew 23:1-2* & *Galatians 5:1*.
Q: (2) Do we need a Temple? – *Acts 2:46* & *1Corinthians 3:16*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You put these questions under the title "Contradictions about the Law".
And you questioned our Christian Freedom.

1. It is written:

> *Then spake Jesus to the multitude, and to His Disciples, Saying, The Scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' Seat. All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, that observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not. (Matthew 23:1-3)*
>
> *Stand fast therefore in the Liberty wherewith Christ hath made us Free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage. Behold, I Paul say unto you, that if ye be circumcised, Christ shall profit you nothing.*
> *(Galatians 5:1-2)*

Matthew 23:1-3 made it clear: as Church Members, we are supposed to be subordinate to our Pastors demanding of us to follow the *Law of GOD*. At the same time, we should not follow their example *if* they violate that Holy Law.
Mind *Matthew 15:14* and leave such Pastors alone. Following *Matthew 23:1-3* & *Matthew 15:14*, we may purify our Churches from off *evil* shepherds.

Galatians 5:1-2 teaches that the *Law of GOD* should not be *bondage* to us, as it has never been supposed to. Following the *Teaching of Christ*, we establish and follow that Law (*Romans 3:31*). Here is our *Liberty*, no bondage.
Even so, no "contradictions".

2. It is written:

> *And they, continuing daily with One accord in the Temple,*
> *and breaking bread from house to house, did eat their meat*
> *with gladness and Singleness of heart ... (Acts 2:46)*
>
> *Know ye not that ye are the Temple of GOD,*
> *and that the Spirit of GOD dwelleth in you? (1Corinthians 3:16)*

What I can see again are two different things mixed up together.
In *Acts 2:46*, we read about the Temple as a *House* of Prayer & Worship, whereas in *1Corinthians 3:16*, it is our physical body where our spirit & soul live. That body in the Property of our Father GOD, as *1Corinthians 3:23; 6:20; 7:23*, and other Scriptures teach.
A "contradiction" is impossible between entirely different matters.

As for the question – *Do we need a Temple?* – well, It is not so bad, yet, not compulsory. I attended the Services in the Temples and some rented apartments – no other difference but some *physical* comfort.

The First Christian Church in Jerusalem, as you can read about in the Book of Acts, hadn't their own Temple and used the one built by Herod. At the same time, they had their Home (Small) Groups Meetings. That was the Church of GOD.

References.

The Law of GOD explained by Lord Jesus –

... Thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the First and Great Commandment.
And the Second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.
On these Two Commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.
(Matthew 22:37-40)

Following the Law of GOD through Christ –

The Law and the Prophets were until John:
since that time the Kingdom of GOD is preached, and every man presseth into it.
And it is easier for Heaven and Earth to pass, than one tittle of the Law to fail.
(Luke 16:16-17)

There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the Law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus hath made me Free from the Law of sin and death.
For what the Law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, GOD sending His Own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the Righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.
(Romans 8:1-4)

376

Q: (1) Are the laws of abomination still effectual?
– Matthew 24:15 & *Galatians 4:9-11*.
Q: (2) Are we secure in Christ or our continued behavior?
– 2Timothy 2:13 & *Hebrews 10:26-27*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You added these questions to your mess of *"Contradictions about the Law"*.
1. It is written:

When ye therefore shall see
the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the Prophet,
stand in the Holy place (whoso readeth, let him understand), then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains; let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house; neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days! But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the Sabbath day: for then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the Beginning of the World to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the Elect's sake those days shall be shortened. (Matthew 24:15-22)

But now, after that ye have known GOD, or rather are known of GOD, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you Labour in vain. (Galatians 4:9-11)

Matthew 24:15-22 warned the Disciples on the coming destruction of Jerusalem Temple & City as well as the cruel persecutions in Judea.
See also *Matthew 24:2*; *Mark 13:2*; *Luke 19:41-44 & 21:6* to that effect.
However, those persecutions were just the beginning of evils. For such is all our Christian history. You may find that in the Blessed *Book of Martyrs*.

Are "*the laws of abomination"* still effective? Yes, they are, meaning *abominable ungodly policies* in most countries of the World and open persecutions of Christians in some of them.

As for *Galatians 4:9-11*, I dare say it has nothing to do with *Matthew 24:15-22* and, therefore, these Scriptures cannot contradict one another.
And, regarding a *Sabbath day*, that was discussed in chapter 374.

2. It is written:

> *If we suffer, we shall also reign with Him: if we deny Him, He also will deny us: if we believe not, yet He abideth Faithful: He cannot deny Himself.*
> *(2Timothy 2:12-13)*

> *For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the Knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth no more Sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful looking for of Judgment and Fiery Indignation, which shall devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' Law died without Mercy under two or three witnesses: of how much sorer Punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of GOD, and hath counted the Blood of the Covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of Grace? (Hebrews 10:26-29)*

2Timothy 2:13 & *Hebrews 10:26-27* are not discrepant, as they speak about two things, Faithfulness of GOD and our compromise with the devil, respectively. (See more about compromise in *1Corinthians 10:21* & *Hebrews 6:4-6*.)

So, "Are we secure in Christ or our continued behavior?" The answer is, Yes, we are Secure *in* Him if our behavior proves that we are *in* Him indeed.

> Please note that (before coming to conclusions) every Scripture ought to be considered within the context where it belongs. You may also find it helpful to use *different* translations of the Holy Bible, so abundant in English.

Q: Punishing crime.
"The son shall not bear the iniquity of the father ..." — Ezekiel 18:20
"I the LORD thy GOD am a Jealous GOD, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation ..."
— Exodus 20:5
https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/, February 2021.*)*

A: *Ezekiel 18:20* (in the context of respective *Verses 20-24*) & *Exodus 20:5* (in the context of respective *Verses 2-17*) do not "contradict" one another.
The first stated Justice of GOD punishing sinners. The second (within the Ten Commandments) mentioned the Harvest Law, the *inherited* Blessings and curses being the sequence thereof.
See chapter 44 (B & C).

377

Q: (1) Is there a distinction between Jew and Gentile?
– Matthew 15:26 & *Galatians 3:28*.
Q: (2) Jews [are] saved 'in due time' or 'out of due time'?
–1Peter 5:6 & *1Corinthians 15:8*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You put these questions under the title "Jew-Gentile contradictions".

1. It is written:

... I am not sent but unto the lost Sheep of the House of Israel ...
It is not meet to take the children's bread, and to cast it to dogs.
(Matthew 15:24,26)

... ye are all the Children of GOD by Faith in Christ Jesus ...
For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.
There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all One in Christ Jesus. And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's Seed, and Heirs according to the Promise.
(Galatians 3:26-29)

So what? There is not any "discrepancy" here.

In *Matthew 15*, we read about the Mission of Christ to *Israel*.
When He said on the cross, *It is finished*, so it was. His Disciples (as per the Twelfth Commandment, written in *Matthew 28:19-20*) commenced spreading the Gospel to *all the World*. That Mission you & I should continue.

What is written in the *Epistle to Galatians* and other Epistles of Brother Paul was addressed to the first Christian Churches. However, the Message of Lord Jesus sent by His Servant remains relevant today – doesn't it?

As for the "distinction between a Jew and Gentile", Yes, it was, according to *Matthew 15:24,26*. It is not so anymore, following *Galatians 3:26-29*, as far as *Christians* are concerned.

Please note these Scriptures: *Isaiah 65:15 & Acts 11:26.*
You may see our discussion in chapter 288 (Christians first).

2. It is written:

... He was seen of Cephas, then of the Twelve.
After that, He was seen of above five hundred Brethren at once;
of whom the greater part remain unto this present, but some are fallen asleep.
After that, He was seen of James; then of all the Apostles.
And last of all He was seen of me also, as of one born out of Due time.
For I am the least of the Apostles, that am not meet to be called an Apostle,
because I persecuted the Church of GOD. (1Corinthians 15:5-9)

Humble yourselves therefore under the Mighty Hand of GOD,
that He may exalt you in Due time: casting all your care upon Him;
for He careth for you. (1Peter 5:6-7)

Therefore humble yourselves [demote, lower yourselves in your own estimation]
under the Mighty Hand of GOD, that in due time He may exalt you,
Casting the whole of your care [all your anxieties, all your worries,
all your concerns, once and for all] on Him, for He cares for you affectionately
and cares about you watchfully. (1Peter 5:6-7, The Amplified Bible)

What you call a “contradiction”, you better name a “hard passage”.
For, in your (every) question, the Scriptures do not “disagree” with one another.
In *1Peter 5:6*, the Apostle spoke about the Power of GOD appointing a *Due time* for everything, according to *His Holy Will*.
See also *Ecclesiastes 3:1-8*.
In *1Corinthians 15:8*, Apostle Paul spoke about himself only, “*... as of one born out of Due time*.” That was his humble opinion of being so *unworthy* of the Ministry our Lord Jesus had entrusted him with.

Brother Paul could also mean his being “late” to see the Truth of the LORD even before (known as Saul) he did evil to the Church of GOD.
Yet, his example was not unique. Christianity is called “the Religion of sinners”.

For all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of GOD ...
(Romans 3:23)

But as many as received Him, to them gave He Power
to become the Sons of GOD, even to them that believe on His Name:
which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh,
nor of the will of man, but of GOD. (John 1:12-13)

378

Q: (1) [Is] Salvation of the Jews or the Gentiles? – *John 4:22* & *Romans 11:11*.
Q: (2) [Is] Gentile Blessing through Israel's rise or fall?
– *Acts 3:25* & *Romans 11:11*.
Q: (3) Will the Gentiles receive Salvation? – *Acts 28:28* & *Romans 1:28*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You titled these questions "Jew-Gentile contradictions".

1 & 2. It is written,

Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for Salvation is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is, when the True Worshippers shall worship the Father in Spirit and in Truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship Him. (John 4:22-23)

Ye are the children of the Prophets, and of the Covenant which GOD made with our fathers, saying unto Abraham, And in thy Seed shall all the kindreds of the Earth be blessed. Unto you first GOD, having raised up His Son Jesus, sent Him to bless you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities. (Acts 3:25-26)

... Israel hath not obtained that which he seeketh for; but the Election hath obtained it, and the rest were blinded ... unto this day. ... I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? GOD forbid: but rather through their fall, Salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to Jealousy.
(Romans 11:7,8,11)

In *John 4:22-23*, we read Christ Jesus' conversation with *Samarians* – the people who earlier distorted the Word of LORD GOD, yet sincerely sought Him.
In my humble opinion, the Words "*Salvation is of the Jews"* could mean directing them (and many Believers today) to the Right Written Word (once given to *Jews*), to mean, Teaching & Worship.

Acts 3:25-26 reminds Jews of their Godly fathers and the Ministry of our Lord Jesus to Israel. Sadly, very few of that nation responded to His Call.

Romans 11:1-11 directs our attention to the spiritual fall of *GOD's People Israel* so that all people of the World may learn and not "step on the same rake twice".
At the same time, Jews ought to wake up and join the Christian Church.

So, is *Salvation* of the Jews or the Gentiles? – Neither. It is of *Christ Jesus*.
For thus saith the Lord:

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

Is Gentile Blessing through Israel's *rise* or *fall*? – Neither, but through personal *Repentance* of everyone unto Forgiving of sins. Kindly read chapter 155.

There cannot be "contradictions" in the Scriptures taken from *John 4, Acts 3,* and *Romans 11,* as they belong to *One* True Teaching.

3. It is written,

Be it known therefore unto you, that the Salvation of GOD
is sent unto the Gentiles, and that they will hear it. (Acts 28:28)

And even as they did not like to retain GOD in their knowledge,
GOD gave them over to a reprobate mind,
to do those things which are not convenient ... (Romans 1:28)

So, "Will the Gentiles receive Salvation?" – According to *Acts 28:28*, they will.
By today's statistics, one-seventh part of humankind called themselves Christians. That means the number of True Followers of Christ is even less.
Those perverts, which *Romans 1:18-32* condemns, apparently belong to the other (greater) part of humans.
For there is a difference between the Gospel *sent* and the Gospel *received*.
That's why there are no "contradictions" again.
Please read these Scriptures about Salvation.

And now also the Axe is laid unto the root of the trees:
therefore every tree which bringeth not forth Good Fruit is hewn down,
and cast into the Fire. (Matthew 3:10)

Verily, Verily, I say unto you, Except a corn of wheat fall into the ground and die,
it abideth alone: but if it die, it bringeth forth much fruit.
He that loveth his life shall lose it; and he that hateth his life in this world
shall keep it unto Life Eternal. If any man serve Me, let him follow Me;
and where I am, there shall also My Servant be:
if any man serve Me, him will My Father honour. (John 12:24-26)

379

Q: (1) Did the Lord tell the Apostles to go to Jerusalem first?
– Luke 24:47 & *Galatians 1:17*.
Q: (2) Christ is at the Right Hand for whom?
– Acts 5:31-32 & *Ephesians 1:19-23*.
Q: (3) Who is the audience for the Gospel? *– Matthew 10:5-7* & *2Timothy 1:11*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: These are the *secondary* questions of "Jew-Gentile contradictions".
1. It is written:

Then opened He their Understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures, and said unto them, Thus it is written, and thus it behoved Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead the third day: and that Repentance and Remission of sins should be preached in His Name among all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. (Luke 24:45-47)

Neither went I up to Jerusalem to them which were Apostles before me; but I went into Arabia, and returned again unto Damascus. (Galatians 1:17)

So, "Did the Lord tell the Apostles to go to *Jerusalem* first?" Yes, He did, if you mean the *Proof* of all Christ Jesus' previous Words to Jews and *Preaching the Gospel*. Otherwise, *Luke 24:49* is more pertinent to your question.

As for *Galatians 1:17*, note that our Brother Paul received his Apostleship away from Judaea, and he acted according to Lord Jesus' Orders. That was recorded in *Acts 9:6*. Kindly remember: all events were under our Heavenly Father's Control. I see no "contradictions" here and hope you will reach this conclusion too.

2. It is written:

Him hath GOD exalted with His Right Hand to be a Prince and a Saviour, for to give Repentance to Israel, and Forgiveness of sins. (Acts 5:31-32)

It was needful to preach *Repentance* to those Lord Jesus and later His Apostles did – even the lying Jewish Council and the crowds directly guilty of murdering Christ. See the True Spiritual Israel as the Church of GOD, the Body of Christ, Christians. In no way *Jews* had been "distinguished" from other people anymore.

To this effect, this Scripture (which you misunderstood) refers also –

And what is the exceeding Greatness of His Power to usward who believe, according to the working of His Mighty Power, which He wrought in Christ, when He raised Him from the dead, and set Him at His Own Right Hand in the Heavenly places, far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this World, but also in that which is to come: and hath put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be the Head over all things to the Church, which is His Body, the fulness of Him that filleth all in all. (Ephesians 1:19-23)

Therefore, *Acts 5:31-32 & Ephesians 1:19-23* do not "conflict" with one another. Our Lord Jesus is at the Right Hand of His Father GOD for all.

3. It is written:

> *These Twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles, and into any city of the Samaritans enter ye not: But go rather to the lost Sheep of the House of Israel. And as ye go, preach, saying, The Kingdom of Heaven is at hand. (Matthew 10:5-7)*
>
> *Whereunto I am appointed a Preacher, and an Apostle, and a Teacher of the Gentiles. (2Timothy 1:11)*

"Who is the audience for the Gospel?" – Per *Matthew 28:19-20,* all the World is.

> The answer to this question is the same as I gave in chapter 362.
> Kindly note that the Mission of Christ to Israel and the subsequent Great Commission of His Disciples are different things.
> In no way are *Matthew 10:5-7* & *2Timothy 1:11* "discrepant".

Q: Temptation.
"Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempteth He any man." — James 1:13.
"And it came to pass after these things, that God did tempt Abraham ..." — Genesis 22:1.
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, March 2021. Edited.)

A: The question is understandable. But the answer is simple: the mistranslation. Please, see chapters 118 (Different translations) and 184 (Temptations).

380

Q: (1) Are we *saved* into one nation (Israel) or One Body?
– Isaiah 60:3 & *Ephesians 2:16*.
Q: (2) Are we a part of the seedline or adopted?
– Genesis 9:9 & *Galatians 4:5*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You publish it as "Jew-Gentile contradictions".
1. It is written:

And the Redeemer shall come to Zion, and unto them that turn from transgression in Jacob, saith the LORD ... And the Gentiles shall come to Thy Light, and Kings to the Brightness of Thy Rising. (Isaiah 59:29; 60:3)

... now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were far off are made nigh by the Blood of Christ. For He is our Peace, Who hath made both One, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us ... And that He might reconcile both unto GOD in One Body by the Cross, having slain the enmity thereby ... (Ephesians 2:13,14,16)

Spiritual Israel, One Body of Christ, and the Church of LORD GOD are the same. Per these (not "discrepant") Scriptures, may the answer be *One Body*.
In my humble opinion, the much more important question is *how* to be saved.

On this topic, kindly read chapters:
77 (The Way of Salvation),
247 (Narrow Way to Strait Gate),
& 308 (Salvation).

2. It is written:

And I, behold, I establish My Covenant with you, and with your seed after you; and with every living creature that is with you, of the fowl, of the cattle, and of every beast of the Earth with you; from all that go out of the ark, to every beast of the Earth. And I will establish My Covenant with you; neither shall all flesh be cut off any more by the waters of a Flood; neither shall there any more be a Flood to destroy the Earth. (Genesis 9:9-11)

I beg to note that the above Covenant is not the one you want to question.
Maybe, you got lost in your "contradictions". Take another one, okay?

And I will establish My Covenant between Me and thee and thy Seed after thee in their generations for an Everlasting Covenant, to be a GOD unto thee, and to thy Seed after thee. (Genesis 17:7)

To redeem them that were under the Law, that we might receive the Adoption of Sons. And because ye are Sons, GOD hath sent forth the Spirit of His Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. (Galatians 4:5-6)

"Are we a part of the seed line or adopted?"
We are both. And as much as it is impossible in a Natural World, it is quite right in the Spiritual Realm. How come? It is written:

... if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's Seed,
and Heirs according to the Promise. (Galatians 3:29)

As for *Spiritual Adoption*, I believe those who shouted, "*crucify him!*" needed it first & most, regardless of their nationality.
However, are we any better?

For all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of GOD ... (Romans 3:23)

I do not see any "contradictions" again. These Scriptures – *Genesis 17:7* (if you please) & *Galatians 4:5-6* are in perfect harmony with one another.

References.

The Children of Abraham –

Know ye therefore that they which are of Faith,
the same are the Children of Abraham. (Galatians 3:7)

The Seed, Adopted, and cast out –

And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west,
and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob,
in the Kingdom of Heaven. But the children of the Kingdom shall be cast out
into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth.
(Matthew 8:11-12)

381

Q: (1) [Was it] Jesus' Ministry to Circumcision or Paul's Ministry to Gentiles? – *Romans 15:8* & *15:16*.
Q: (2) Did Paul have mutual Faith with uncircumcised Romans or with Jesus' Ministry to the Circumcision? – *Romans 1:12* & *Romans 15:8*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You publish the above under the title "Jew-Gentile contradictions".

1. It is written:

Now I say that Jesus Christ was a Minister of the Circumcision for the Truth of GOD, to confirm the Promises made unto the fathers: and that the Gentiles might glorify GOD for His Mercy; as it is written, For this cause I will confess to Thee among the Gentiles, and sing unto Thy Name. (Romans 15:8-9)

"Circumcision" here means *GOD's People Israel*, doesn't it? Yet, not only. Kindly read chapter 149 for the *spiritual meaning* of Circumcision.

> *... I should be the Minister of Jesus Christ to the Gentiles, ministering the Gospel of GOD, that the Offering up of the Gentiles might be Acceptable, being sanctified by the Holy Ghost. (Romans 15:16)*

To your first question (edited), my try to answer is: *both Ministries* were needful. Kindly see chapter 362 again. And try to see no "contradiction" here.

... after Christ was come and rejected ... they ceased to be the People of GOD ...
(Thomas Scott, Commentary on the Holy Bible, vol.4, Zechariah)

2. It is written:

To all that be in Rome, Beloved of GOD, called to be Saints:
Grace to you and peace from GOD our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.
... that I may be comforted together with you by the mutual Faith
both of you and me. (Romans 1:7,12)

Your question shows your incompetence, as you again messed up *two* meanings of *circumcision*, as well as *two* separate Ministries I've mentioned above. Anyway, Apostle Paul, undoubtedly, had his strong Faith in Christ Jesus from the beginning of his Ministry to the end.

That Faith could well have been mutual, as he had written so to Romans, yet of different strength.

The Church in Rome, seemingly, was not peopled by *physically* circumcised folks, but their *spiritual* Circumcision was a good ground for our Christian *Faith*.

"Jesus' Ministry to the Circumcision", as in above-quoted *Romans 15:9*, had strengthened everyone by Faith in GOD's Mercy, our Brother Paul's inclusive.

Thus *Romans 1:12* & *Romans 15:8* (as well as the rest of the Holy Scriptures) do not contradict one another.

As for his Ministry to Gentiles, Apostle Paul wrote:

For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine Office: if by any means I may provoke to emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them. For if the casting away of them be the reconciling of the World, what shall the receiving of them be, but Life from the dead? For if the firstfruit be Holy, the lump is also Holy: and if the root be Holy, so are the branches. And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert graffed in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree; boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee. Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be graffed in. Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by Faith. Be not highminded, but fear: For if GOD spared not the natural branches, take heed lest He also spare not thee. Behold therefore the Goodness and Severity of GOD: on them which fell, Severity; but toward thee, Goodness, if thou continue in His Goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. (Romans 11:13-22)

And to *Romans* he wrote these Words of Encouragement:

Who shall separate us from the Love of Christ? Shall tribulation, or distress, or persecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword? As it is written, For Thy Sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through Him that loved us. For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the Love of GOD, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Romans 8:35-39)

382

Q: (1) Were the Mysteries revealed before the death of Christ?
– Matthew 13:11 & *1Corinthians 2:7-8*.
Q: (2) What was prepared before or since the World began?
– Matthew 25:34 & *Ephesians 1:3-4*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You publish these questions as "Prophecy-Mystery contradictions".

1. It is written:

> *And the Disciples came, and said unto Him, Why speakest Thou unto them in Parables? He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the Mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven, but to them it is not given. (Matthew 13:10-11)*

> *Howbeit we speak Wisdom among them that are Perfect: yet not the wisdom of this world, nor of the Princes of this world, that come to nought: but we speak the Wisdom of GOD in a Mystery, even the Hidden Wisdom, which GOD ordained before the World unto our Glory: which none of the Princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of Glory. (1Corinthians 2:6-8)*

To your question, "Were the Mysteries revealed before the death of Christ?" the answer is *Yes.* Otherwise, why have always been *Prophets* & *Prophecies* there? But to whom the Wisdom is revealed? In chapter 32, see 2*nd Esdras 5:32*. Besides,

... we know in part, and we prophesy in part. (1Corinthians 13:9)

The following Scriptures teach us more about the *Revelation Knowledge*.

... Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given. (Mark 4:24)

But unto every one of us is given Grace
according to the Measure of the Gift of Christ. (Ephesians 4:7)

Even so, *Matthew 13:11* & *1Corinthians 2:7-8* are not "discrepant".

2. It is written:

Then shall the King say unto them on His Right Hand,
Come, ye Blessed of My Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you
from the Foundation of the World ... (Matthew 25:34)

Blessed be the GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,
Who hath blessed us with all spiritual Blessings in Heavenly Places in Christ:
According as He hath chosen us in Him before the Foundation of the World,
that we should be Holy and without blame before Him in Love ...
(Ephesians 1:3-4)

... Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man,
the things which GOD hath prepared for them that love Him. (1Corinthians 2:9)

So, "What was prepared before or since the World began?"
This question resembles the subject of chapter 153 (The Kingdom of Heaven).
The answer is the same – only GOD knows. Please, see *Deuteronomy 29:29*.
And nothing (this my answer inclusive) does not justify your "seeing" whatever "contradictions" in the above as well as any other Scriptures.

The Secret things belong unto the LORD our GOD:
but those things which are revealed belong unto us and to our children for ever,
that we may do all the Words of this Law. (Deuteronomy 29:29)

Call unto Me, and I will answer thee, and shew thee Great and Mighty things,
which thou knowest not. (Jeremiah 33:3)

Q: Most Christians relegate the *Book of Genesis* as allegories or metaphors. That leaves a huge gaping question: if the Creation and fall of Man are allegories or metaphors, where did sin come from then?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Edited.)

A: In your question, let me take "most Christians" as those Believers known to *you*, okay? For I have not met so many "allegories or metaphors" lovers.
Now, *sin* always comes from disobedience to LORD GOD. That started from *Genesis Chapter 3*. Kindly note that *did come* does not mean *was secured* because, from the Beginning, the LORD said:

If thou doest well,
shalt thou not be accepted? And if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door.
And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him. (Genesis 4:7)

383

Q: (1) Was the Work of Jesus prophesied or kept hidden?
– Luke 24:44 & *Ephesians 3:9*.
Q: (2) Was the Message for today known by the Prophets?
– Acts 3:24 & *Colossians 1:26*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You add these questions to your "Prophecy-Mystery contradictions".

1. It is written:

And He said unto them, These are the Words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalms, concerning Me. Then opened He their Understanding, that they might understand the Scriptures ... (Luke 24:44-45)

Unto me, who am less than the least of all Saints, is this Grace given, that I should preach among the Gentiles the unsearchable Riches of Christ; and to make all men see what is the Fellowship of the Mystery, which from the Beginning of the World hath been hid in GOD, Who created all things by Jesus Christ: to the intent that now unto the principalities and powers in Heavenly places might be known by the Church the Manifold Wisdom of GOD, according to the Eternal Purpose which He purposed in Christ Jesus our Lord: in Whom we have Boldness and Access with Confidence by the Faith of Him. (Ephesians 3:8-12)

So, "Was the Work of Jesus prophesied or kept hidden?" – The answer is *both*.
It was prophesied, for every question ever born in a human mind is answered by our Holy Bible, given we take the pain to study it. And that Answer always depends on what is looked for, the Guidance or "contradictions". Please read chapter 29 (Mind your approach).
The Truth is *hidden* from Satan & his servants as per the LORD's Timing. And that is *Conditional*. The moment of *Repentance* is crucial. Knowledge & Understanding of Principal things of GOD are opened by Him step by step from that instant forward.
No Repentance – no Revelation. *Luke 15:20* is applicable here too.
Glory to GOD! In Wisdom, He rules the *Dispensation* of Revelation Knowledge according to His Holy Will and Eternal Purpose.
The conclusion: no "contradictions" again. And neither could have been any.

2. It is written:

And it shall come to pass, that every soul, which will not hear that Prophet, shall be destroyed from among the People. Yea, and all the Prophets from Samuel and those that follow after, as many as have spoken, have likewise foretold of these days. (Acts 3:23-24)

... I am made a Minister, according to the Dispensation of GOD which is given to me for you, to fulfil the Word of GOD; even the Mystery which hath been hid from ages and from generations, but now is made manifest to His Saints: to whom GOD would make known what is the Riches of the Glory of this Mystery among the Gentiles; which is Christ in you, the Hope of Glory: Whom we preach, warning every man, and teaching every man in all Wisdom; that we may present every man Perfect in Christ Jesus ... (Colossians 1:25-28)

And so, "Was the Message for today known by the Prophets?"
The answer is much like the previous one. The (Words of) Message is *known* (yet, not compulsory *understood*) first, to the Holy Prophets of GOD, then, to His other Servants, but *hidden* from unbelievers.
All *Revelation Knowledge* and *Timing* are under the LORD's Divine Control.
You might also kindly see the *Prophets* in the first Scripture, not in the second.

Still see "contradictions"? Study the Holy Scriptures harder, it helps.

For My People is foolish, they have not known Me; they are sottish children, and they have none Understanding: they are wise to do evil, but to do Good they have no Knowledge. (Jeremiah 4:22)

... Blessed be the Name of GOD for ever and ever: for Wisdom and Might are His: and He changeth the times and the seasons: He removeth Kings, and setteth up Kings: He giveth Wisdom unto the Wise, and Knowledge to them that know Understanding: He revealeth the Deep and Secret things: He knoweth what is in the darkness, and the Light dwelleth with Him. (Daniel 2:20-22)

My People are destroyed for lack of Knowledge: because thou hast rejected Knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no Priest to Me: seeing thou hast forgotten the Law of thy GOD, I will also forget thy children. (Hosea 4:6)

384

Q: (1) Can we understand the things God has prepared?
– Isaiah 64:4 & *1Corinthians 2:10*.
Q: (2) Was the Book of Acts the end or the beginning?
– Acts 2:17 & *1Timothy 1:16*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: We follow on your published list of "Prophecy-Mystery contradictions".

1. It is written:

For since the Beginning of the World men have not heard, nor perceived by the ear, neither hath the eye seen, O GOD, beside Thee, what He hath prepared for him that waiteth for Him. Thou meetest him that rejoiceth and worketh Righteousness, those that remember Thee in Thy Ways: behold, Thou art Wroth; for we have sinned: in those is continuance, and we shall be saved. (Isaiah 64:4-5)

... it is written, Eye hath not seen, nor ear heard, neither have entered into the heart of man, the things which GOD hath prepared for them that love Him. But GOD hath revealed them unto us by His Spirit: for the Spirit searcheth all things, Yea, the Deep things of GOD. (1Corinthians 2:9-10)

The Scriptures you question – *Isaiah 64:4 & 1Corinthians 2:10* – differ only by the Revelations of the Holy Ghost, written in the second one. That single difference does not make them "discrepant", as the following Verse clarifies –

But unto every one of us is given Grace according to the Measure of the Gift of Christ. (Ephesians 4:7)

That *Measure* does not promise our complete Understanding of Revelations.

Besides, your question – "Can we understand the things GOD has prepared?" – presumes that you won't object that those "*things which GOD hath prepared for them that love Him*" are nothing else but Eternal Life in the Kingdom of Heaven and every Blessing thereof.
Kindly read chapters 153 (The Kingdom of Heaven) & 382 (The Mysteries Revealed). There, we discussed the subjects of your first question. Hopefully, it may help you to clear your "contradiction" out.

2. It is written:

... and it shall come to pass in the last days, saith GOD, I will pour out of My Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see Visions, and your old men shall dream Dreams. And on My Servants and on My Handmaidens I will pour out in those days of My Spirit; and they shall prophesy: and I will shew Wonders in Heaven above, and Signs in the Earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke. The Sun shall be turned into darkness, and the Moon into blood, before that Great and notable Day of the LORD come. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the Name of the Lord shall be saved.
(Acts 2:17-21)

And it shall come to pass in the last days, GOD declares, that I will pour out of My Spirit upon all mankind, and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy [telling forth the Divine Counsels] and your young men shall see Visions [Divinely granted appearances], and your old men shall dream [Divinely suggested] dreams. (Acts 2:17, The Amplified Bible, 1954)

Howbeit for this cause I obtained Mercy, that in me first Jesus Christ might shew forth all Longsuffering, for a pattern to them which should hereafter believe on Him to Life Everlasting.
(1Timothy 1:16)

Yet for this reason I found Mercy, so that in me as the foremost [of sinners], Jesus Christ might demonstrate His Perfect Patience as an example or pattern for those who would believe (were destined to believe) in Him for Eternal Life.
(1Timothy 1:16, The Amplified Bible, 1954)

What do you mean by – "Was the Book of Acts the end or the beginning?" – is not clear. If the meaning is "the End of this World" or "the Beginning of New Covenant Era", then it is more the Beginning since the events described therein followed the Cross of Christ.
In chapter 369, we spoke about our Brother Paul's humble self-estimation. In his past, he was (and who wasn't?) a sinner, forgiven by the Grace of GOD. That is recorded in the *Book of Acts*. The *1Timothy 1:16* repeated that.
As for the *End*, kindly note: only the LORD, our GOD, knows that time.
And only our Heavenly Father appoints the time when the Signs described in *Acts 2:17-21* and other Scriptures should be fulfilled.
Therefore, *Acts 2:17* & *1Timothy 1:16* are in no way the "conflicting" Scriptures.

385

Q: (1) Who is responsible for our soul? – *Hebrews 13:7* & *Romans 14:12*.
Q: (2) Do we get the Holy Spirit upon Belief or Baptism?
– *Acts 2:38* & *Ephesians 1:13*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You publish these questions as "Contradictions about our Service to GOD".

1. It is written:

Remember them which have the Rule over you,
who have spoken unto you the Word of GOD: whose Faith follow,
considering the end of their Conversation. (Hebrews 13:7)

Be mindful of those leading you, who did speak to you the Word of GOD,
whose Faith — considering the issue of the behaviour — be imitating ...
(Hebrews 13:7, Robert Young's Literal Translation)

... we shall all stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ. For it is written,
As I live, saith the LORD, every knee shall bow to Me,
and every tongue shall confess to GOD. So then every one of us
shall give Account of himself to GOD. (Romans 14:10-12)

And thou, why dost thou judge thy brother? or again, thou, why dost thou set
at nought thy brother? For we shall all stand at the Tribunal of the Christ;
for it hath been written, I live! saith the LORD – to Me bow shall every knee,
and every tongue shall confess to GOD; so, then, each of us concerning himself
shall give Reckoning to GOD ... (Romans 14:10-12, Robert Young's Translation)

"Who is responsible for our soul?" — *Romans 14:10-12* made it so clear: *we*.

As for *Hebrews 13:7* and other Scriptures about all Pastors, Teachers, Leaders, etc., we are supposed to help them and obey their orders, which must not contradict the *Written Word of GOD*.
Our Shepherds have more Responsibility than we do for the Congregations under their Charge.

... unto whomsoever much is given, of him shall be much required:
and to whom men have committed much, of him they will ask the more.
(Luke 12:48)

But *our* Responsibility for *our* eternal destiny stays the same.
No disrespect, but always mind *Matthew 15:14*.
So, there is no "contradiction" here, just your lack of Understanding.

2. It is written:

> *... Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the Name of Jesus Christ for the Remission of sins, and ye shall receive the Gift of the Holy Ghost. For the Promise is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, even as many as the LORD our GOD shall call. (Acts 2:38-39)*
>
> *... we should be to the Praise of His Glory, who first trusted in Christ. In Whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the Word of Truth, the Gospel of your Salvation: in Whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that Holy Spirit of Promise, Which is the earnest of our Inheritance until the Redemption of the purchased Possession, unto the Praise of His Glory.*
> *(Ephesians 1:12-14)*

"Do we get the Holy Spirit upon Belief or Baptism?" – If you please, upon *Faith*.

Whither shall I go from Thy Spirit? or whither shall I flee from Thy Presence?
If I ascend up into Heaven, Thou art there:
if I make my bed in hell, behold, Thou art there. (Psalms 139:7-8)

Ye are of GOD, little Children, and have overcome them:
because Greater is He that is in you, than he that is in the world. (1John 4:4)

That *Faith* in the Truth of the Gospel has always been crucial for the Preaching and receiving of the Written Word of GOD.
And *Acts 2:14-41* & *Ephesians 1:12-14* describe that without any "dissensions".

Faith comes first –

... Faith cometh by Hearing,
and Hearing by the Word of GOD. (Romans 10:17)

Baptism follows –

He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved;
but he that believeth not shall be damned. (Mark 16:16)

You may visit the Index section for the relevant "Q & A" chapters.

386

Q: (1) Will we endure through the Wrath or be delivered?
– *Matthew 24:13* & *1Thessalonians 1:10*.
Q: (2) Plowshares or Swords? – *Joel 3:10* & *Micah 4:3*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: These questions open the list of your "Future events contradictions".
1. It is written:

And because iniquity shall abound, the Love of many shall wax cold.
But he that shall endure unto the End, the same shall be saved.
(Matthew 24:12-13)

Because lawlessness is increased, the Love of most people will grow cold.
But the one who endures and bears up [under suffering] to the End will be saved.
(Matthew 24:12-13, The Amplified Bible)

... ye turned to GOD from idols to serve the Living and True GOD;
and to wait for His Son from Heaven, Whom He raised from the dead,
even Jesus, which delivered us from the Wrath to come.
(1Thessalonians 1:9-10)

... you turned to GOD from idols to serve the Living and True GOD, and to [look forward and confidently] wait for [the coming of] His Son from Heaven, Whom He raised from the dead—Jesus, Who [personally] rescues us from the coming Wrath [and draws us to Himself, granting us all the Privileges and Rewards of a New Life with Him]. (1Thessalonians 1:9-10, The Amplified Bible)

"Will we endure through the Wrath or be delivered?" – This question we ought to ask *ourselves* rather than search for a sort of "lullaby" in the Scriptures.
Matthew 24:12-13 makes it well clear who shall be saved.
1Thessalonians 1:9-10 states the same thing, seeing the example of Christians (such as were in Thessalonian Church) – to whom the Promise belongs – from the beginning Words (*1Thessalonians 1:1*) to the ending (*1Thessalonians 5:28*).

In the above Scriptures, put the "hard" Words together, say, "*endure unto the End* to be *delivered from the Wrath to come*". See *the Wrath* coming on sinners, which Punishment we are delivered from only by staying *in* Christ Jesus.
Please, understand this simple Truth and see no "contradiction" here.

2. It is written:

Beat your plowshares into Swords, and your pruninghooks into Spears:
let the weak say, I am Strong. (Joel 3:10)

... He shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off;
and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears
into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation,
neither shall they learn war any more. (Micah 4:3)

Your question "Plowshares or Swords?" has the only possible answer – the *spiritual Swords* according to *Joel 3:10* to make possible the *physical plowshares* as per *Micah 4:3* to follow.
And that without any "contradiction".

Prophet *Joel* calls us to the Spirit War, *Swords* & *Spears* representing our *spiritual Weapons*. We are supposed to leave off our complacent *worldly* peace (which, in the above Texts, is presented by natural *plowshares* & *pruninghooks*).

Prophet *Micah* predicted the Judgment Day of the LORD, our Father, after which the Promised Peace of GOD would surely stop dead all bloody wars forever.

Is it so hard for you to understand? Kindly read the following Scripture.

For when for the time ye ought to be Teachers, ye have need that one teach you
again which be the First Principles of the Oracles of GOD; and are become such
as have need of Milk, and not of Strong Meat. For every one that useth Milk
is unskilful in the Word of Righteousness: for he is a babe. But Strong Meat
belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have
their senses exercised to discern both Good and evil. (Hebrew 5:12-14)

Try (again) to answer the question for starters: what kind of a *Sword* Jesus teaches us about in *Luke 22:36* –

... But now, he that hath a Purse, let him take it, and likewise his Scrip:
and he that hath no Sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.
(Luke 22:36)

See the answer in our talk published in chapter 367 of this book.
Kindly consider chapter 39, dealing with the Spirit War matters.

387

Q: Do we need to confess sins to get Forgiveness?
– 1John 1:9 & *Colossians 2:13*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You filed this question in “Contradictions about our Service to God”.

It is written:

> *And you, being dead in your sins ... hath He quickened together with Him, having forgiven you all trespasses ... (Colossians 2:13)*
>
> *If we confess our sins, He is Faithful and Just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. (1John 1:9)*

I’ve put the above Scriptures in the order they go in our Bible and for your better comprehension. This way, *Colossians 2:13* may better help you understand that the Forgiveness of sins was promised to us by the Cross of Christ. However, to obtain what has been promised, we ought to take some steps on our part. These steps are all about *Repentance*, which includes *Proof* and *Confession*.

We do need to *confess our sins* to get *Forgiveness*.
Thus *1John 1:9* is well in line with *Colossians 2:13* without “contradictions”.

The references.

Repentance & Confession:

He that covereth his sins shall not prosper:
but whoso confesseth and forsaketh them shall have mercy. (Proverbs 28:13)

Proof of Repentance:

Bring forth therefore Fruits meet for Repentance ...
(Matthew 3:8)

Godly Sorrow:

... Godly Sorrow worketh Repentance to Salvation
not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death.
(2Corinthians 7:10)

388

Q: (1) Do [Shall] we eat animals? – *Genesis 1:29* & *Genesis 9:3*.
Q: (2) Which animals do [shall] we eat? – *Deuteronomy 14:3* & *1Timothy 4:4*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: These questions are from your "Contradictions about our Service to God".
1. It is written:

GOD said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the Earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the Earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the Earth, wherein there is Life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. And GOD saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was Very Good. (Genesis 1:29-31)

Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you;
even as the green herb have I given you all things. But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat. (Genesis 9:3-4)

So, "to eat or not to eat", right? Well, the question is interesting.
However, something is missing, even what is written in *Genesis 1:26-28*, namely, *Dominion*. Kindly read "Q & A" chapters 36, 289, 312, and 313 to see the point.
You might also note what is happened between *Genesis 1:31* & *Genesis 9:3* – the massive *disobedience* of humankind to the LORD, our Father. That had changed everything on the face of Earth to worse, our menu inclusive.

Last but not least: neither *Genesis 9:3-4* nor any other Scripture says that we *must* eat flesh. You can hear that "must" only from nutritionists, dietitians, etc.
Chapter 74, which I dedicated to *vegetarians*, may also be found relevant.
Consequently, *Genesis 1:29* & *Genesis 9:3* do not "contradict" one another.
Take more time to study the Word of GOD and see it yourself.

... Behold, I have given you every plant yielding seed that is
on the surface of the entire Earth, and every tree which has fruit yielding seed;
it shall be food for you ... (Genesis 1:29, The Amplified Bible)

Every moving thing that lives shall be food for you;
I give you everything, as I gave you the green plants and vegetables.
(Genesis 9:3, The Amplified Bible)

2. It is written:

Thou shalt not eat any abominable thing. (Deuteronomy 14:3)

You shall not eat anything that is detestable [to the LORD and forbidden by Him]. (Deuteronomy 14:3, The Amplified Bible)

... every Creature of GOD is Good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with Thanksgiving: for it is Sanctified by the Word of GOD and Prayer. (1Timothy 4:4-5)

For everything GOD has created is Good, and nothing is to be rejected if it is received with Gratitude; for it is Sanctified [set apart, dedicated to GOD] by means of the Word of GOD and Prayer. (1Timothy 4:4-5, The Amplified Bible)

Now, "which animals are we supposed to eat?"
Okay, let us judge our physical nutrition by the above Scriptures.

As a part of the Holy Law of GOD – *Deuteronomy 14:3-21* – which regulates our nutrition, sorts out what is "clean" and what is not. Following that Statute, we can eat the prescribed things and be all right, can't we? And why? Just because *thus saith the LORD*. Yet, *1Timothy 4:4-5* makes a substantial amendment thereto by reminding us on a *Thanksgiving*. No "contradiction".

If, however, we put *1Timothy 4:4-5* first, then *Deuteronomy 14:3* is that Good amendment, since the food, not *Sanctified* by the Written Word of GOD – which, in turn, should be applied in *Faith* – might be even dangerous to our health. Kindly see chapter 48 (Thanks for the meals). No "contradiction" again.

Considering both the above Scriptures, one may get puzzled about *what flesh* to eat and what not to. My opinion is, in every particular case (circumstances & conditions), *ask the Holy Ghost*, hear the Answer by your *conscience*, do nothing against it.
And, as I wrote to you in the previous question, no Scripture says that we *must* eat flesh. Be selective in your diet.
Make it a Rule to thank Father GOD for *every* food & drink on your table.
This way, *you* will avoid contradicting GOD –

Who satisfieth thy mouth with Good things; so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle's. (Psalms 103:5)

389

Q: (1) Are we to keep Unity or honor separation?
– *Ephesians 4:3* & *Romans 16:17*.
Q: (2) Be like the ant or the raven? – *Proverbs 6:6-8* & *Luke 12:22-24*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You titled these questions, "Contradictions about our Service to GOD".

1. It is written:

Now I beseech you, Brethren,
mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the Doctrine
which ye have learned; and avoid them. (Romans 16:17)

... walk Worthy of the Vocation wherewith ye are called,
With all Lowliness and Meekness, with Longsuffering, forbearing one another
in Love; endeavouring to keep the Unity of the Spirit in the Bond of Peace.
There is One Body, and One Spirit, even as ye are called in One Hope
of your Calling; One Lord, One Faith, One Baptism, One GOD
and Father of all, Who is above all, and through all, and in you all.
(Ephesians 4:1-6)

To your question, "Are we to keep Unity or honor separation?" –
Ephesians 4:1-6 is the only answer. Kindly note: *divisions* & *denominations* are contrary to the *Eleventh Commandment* of Christ and substantial handicaps to follow His *Twelfth Commandment*. See "Q & A" chapters 80 & 43, respectively. Kindly read chapter 124 (Jesus' Prayer for our Unity).

Therefore if thou bring thy Gift to the Altar, and there rememberest
that thy Brother hath ought against thee; leave there thy Gift before the Altar,
and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy Brother,
and then come and offer thy Gift. (Matthew 5:23-24)

As for *Romans 16:17*, I daresay it is not about a "separation" but Purification from off every *partition*, as the Right way to follow *Ephesians 4:1-6*.

That's why *Ephesians 4:3* & *Romans 16:17* do not belong in your very long and spurious list of "contradictions" too.

2. It is written:

Go to the ant, thou sluggard; consider her ways, and be wise:
which having no guide, overseer, or ruler, provideth her meat in the summer,
and gathereth her food in the harvest. (Proverbs 6:6-8)

... Take no thought for your Life, what ye shall eat; neither for the body,
what ye shall put on. The Life is more than meat, and the body is more
than raiment. Consider the ravens: for they neither sow nor reap;
which neither have storehouse nor barn; and GOD feedeth them:
how much more are ye better than the fowls? (Luke 12:22-24)

To the childish question, "be like the ant or the raven?" the answer is, follow *both*, given you understand, and well enough, the above two Scriptures.

Proverbs 6:6-8 teaches us against every *laziness*, which is one of many evil weapons of Satan. Prudent folks follow this Scripture in three ways: spiritual, intellectual, and physical. Thus they effectively work for themselves, their families, Ministries, Churches, and countries.
Please, see chapter 295 (The evil of laziness).

... Make it your Ambition to lead a quiet Life, to mind your own business
and to work with your hands ... So that your daily Life may win the respect
of outsiders and so that you will not be dependent on anybody.
(1Thessalonians 4:11-12, New International Version)

By *Luke 12:22-24*, which follows and does not contradict the above *Proverb*, we are supposed to put GOD First in our Life, mustering up all our Faith in Him.

So, *Proverbs 6:6-8* & *Luke 12:22-24* are not at "variance" with one another.

He hath made every thing Beautiful in his time: also He hath set the World
in their heart, so that no man can find out the Work that GOD maketh from
the Beginning to the End. I know that there is no Good in them, but for a man
to rejoice, and to do Good in his Life. And also that every man should eat and
drink, and enjoy the Good of all his labour, it is the Gift of GOD. I know that,
whatsoever GOD doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it, nor any
thing taken from it: and GOD doeth it, that men should fear before Him.
(Ecclesiastes 3:11-14)

390

Q: (1) Should we work for food or not? – *Matthew 6:25-26* & *1Timothy 5:18*.
Q: (2) Should we sell all or provide for our family?
– *1Timothy 3:5-6* & *Mark 10:17-22*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Your published "Contradictions about our Service to GOD" continue.

1. It is written:

> *No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve GOD and mammon. Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your Life, what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink; nor yet for your body, what ye shall put on. Is not the Life more than meat, and the body than raiment? Behold the fowls of the air: for they sow not, neither do they reap, nor gather into barns; yet your Heavenly Father feedeth them. Are ye not much better than they? (Matthew 6:24-26)*
>
> *Let the Elders that rule well be counted worthy of double honour, especially they who labour in the Word and Doctrine. For the Scripture saith, Thou shalt not muzzle the ox that treadeth out the corn [Deuteronomy 25:4]. And, The Labourer is Worthy of his Reward [Luke 10:7]. (1Timothy 5:17-18)*

"Should we work for food or not?" – Yes, we should.
1Thessalonians 4:11-12 & *2Thessalonians 3:8-10* made it very clear.

Speaking of *Elders*, as *1Timothy 5:17-18* does, especially those in charge of large Congregations of Saints, we ought to follow the example of the first Christian Church in Jerusalem. See *Acts 6:1-4*.

The actual Work of Elders and the Fruits of their Labour ought to be seen to all Local Church as well as to those without.

Matthew 6:25-26 (like *Luke 12:22-24*, which we considered in chapter 389) teaches us, Christians, to have our Heavenly Father First in our Life.
Matthew 6:25-26 does not "negate" *1Timothy 5:18*. Both Scriptures edify the Church of GOD on two different subjects.

2. It is written:

> *A Bishop then must be blameless ... One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in Subjection with all Gravity; (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the Church of GOD?) Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil* [as the devil and his servant share the same condemnation]*. *Moreover he must have a Good report of them which are without; lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil. (1Timothy 3:2-7)* * [my note]
>
> *... Jesus beholding him loved him, and said unto him, One thing thou lackest: go thy way, sell whatsoever thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have Treasure in Heaven: and come, take up the Cross, and follow Me. And he was sad at that Saying, and went away grieved: for he had great possessions. And Jesus looked round about, and saith unto His Disciples, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the Kingdom of GOD! And the Disciples were astonished at His Words. But Jesus answereth again, and saith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that trust in riches to enter into the Kingdom of GOD! (Mark 10:21-24)*

So, "Should we sell all or provide for our family?" – Both, if you please.
We can *sell* (or otherwise *redirect* GOD-ward) all worldly riches, *invest* everything into Good Christian Ministry, and this way *best* provide for our family. The LORD Himself will see to it. Or else, we can live the life of "rich & mighty of this world" and lead our family right into hell.
The first way is too hard for most of humankind, whereas the second is not acceptable in Christendom.

There is no "contradiction" again.

Tell you what: take the way of *Giving*. Forget all *worldly* reasons on the contrary (as our *Bible* does). Prove your Heavenly father in full accordance with what is said in *Malachi 3:10*. Note, I tell you from my experience.

This is a Faithful Saying, and these things I will that thou affirm constantly,
that they which have believed in GOD might be careful to maintain Good Works.
These things are Good and Profitable unto men. (Titus 3:8)

For as the body without the spirit is dead,
so Faith without Works is dead also. (James 2:26)

391

Q: (1) Should we judge? – *Matthew 7:1-2* & *1Corinthians 2:15*.
(2) Should Ministers work for food?
– *Luke 10:4-5* & *2Thessalonians 3:8-11*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: In these Scriptures, you found "Contradictions about our Service to God".

1. It is written:

Judge not, that ye be not judged. For with what judgment ye judge,
ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured
to you again. And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye,
but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?
Or how wilt thou say to thy brother, Let me pull out the mote out of thine eye;
and, behold, a beam is in thine own eye? (Matthew 7:1-4)

... the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of GOD:
for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they
are spiritually discerned. But he that is Spiritual judgeth all things,
yet he himself is judged of no man. (1Corinthians 2:15)

Matthew 7:1-2 & 1Corinthians 2:15 are not "discrepant" as teaching us on the different subjects. *Matthew 7:1-4* portrays the evil of criticism, doesn't it, whereas *1Corinthians 2:15* points at Knowledge & Understanding, which only the Holy Spirit of GOD can give.

In this regard, I daresay the following.
Your questions are too simple to be asked by GOD's People well taught by Him, but rather testify on the lack of Diligent study & learning.
The same can be said about "contradictions" you claim to "see" in the Holy Bible. The above-quoted Words of *Matthew 7:2* might clear up the reason and show you the Way out of the problem.
Be so kind, therefore, to reconsider your doctrine.

... Take heed what ye hear: with what measure ye mete,
it shall be measured to you: and unto you that hear shall more be given.
For he that hath, to him shall be given: and he that hath not,
from him shall be taken even that which he hath. (Mark 4:24-25)

I cannot agree with your post – "What makes us unique among Christians" – which you put on <*http://graceambassadors.com/doctrine*>.
For we – Christians – cannot be any spiritually stronger while being "unique", but instead, when and only when *united*.

Kindly note *1Corinthians 12:12-27; Ephesians 4:1-16; Colossians 2:2-3*.
Recognize yourselves in those "yet carnal" in the following Scripture –

> *For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men? For while one saith, I am of Paul; and another, I am of Apollos; are ye not carnal? 1Corinthians 3:3-4)*

2. It is written:

> *Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way. And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house. And if the Son of Peace be there, your Peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again. And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the Labourer is Worthy of his hire. Go not from house to house. (Luke 10:4-7)*
>
> *Neither did we eat any man's bread for nought; but wrought with labour and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you: Not because we have not Power, but to make ourselves an Ensample unto you to follow us. For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat. For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies. (2Thessalonians 3:8-11)*

Now, "Should Ministers work for food?" – *Luke 10:4-5* & *2Thessalonians 3:8-11* might answer this question from two standpoints without any "contradictions".

Luke 10:7 is clear: *the Labourer is Worthy of his hire.* The Peace of GOD, which is manifested in (spiritual) Bread of Revelation Knowledge the Ministers bring in many homes, is well Worth of some (physical) food & shelter they receive there.

In *2Thessalonians 3:8-11*, mark the keyword *Ensample*. Apparently, the Local Christian Church in *Thessalonica* was founded after the way described in the *Book of Acts 2:44-45* & *4:32-35*. Then, some parasites (busybodies) crept in.

392

Q: (1) Is having a child a good or bad thing?
– *Matthew 24:19* & *1Timothy 5:14*.
Q: (2) Does the Holy Spirit stay or leave when we do wrong?
– *Psalm 51:11* & *Ephesians 4:30*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You published the above as "Contradictions about our Service to God". Our serving Him demands spiritual strength and willpower. Hardly your alleged "contradictions" will help it.

1. It is written:

And woe unto them that are with child,
and to them that give suck in those days! (Matthew 24:19)

I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children,
guide the house, give none occasion to the adversary to speak reproachfully.
(1Timothy 5:14)

You ask, "Is having a child a good or bad thing?" The answer is – *Good thing*. *Matthew 24:19* & *1Timothy 5:14* neither "contradict" that nor one another.

In *Matthew 24:15-22*, our Lord Jesus prophesied on the coming persecutions in Judaea and all the World, which evil was heaviest to endure by *mothers*.

1Timothy 5:3-16 teaches Christian Congregations to distinguish Widows (or the *Widows indeed* – the older women *proved* faithful to their past away husbands) from young women who have been separated from their husbands by the physical death of the latter and not yet proven themselves as the *Widows indeed*.

2. It is written:

Create in me a Clean heart, O GOD; and renew a Right spirit within me.
Cast me not away from Thy Presence; and take not Thy Holy Spirit from me.
(Psalm 51:10-11)

... grieve not the Holy Spirit of GOD, whereby ye are sealed
unto the Day of Redemption. (Ephesians 4:30)

To your question, “Does the Holy Spirit stay or leave when we do wrong?”
– The only answer is: the *Spirit* stays.
And we *do wrong* much more often than we are aware.

The Spirit of the LORD will come Powerfully upon you ...
and you will be changed into a different person. Once these signs are fulfilled,
do whatever your hand finds to do, for GOD is with you.
(1Samuel 10:6-7, New International Version)

However, the Holy Ghost is taken from us if we *sin willfully.* For thus, we let the *evil* spirit or spirits enter our hearts. Good and evil cannot coexist in one heart.

For GOD hath not given us the spirit of fear;
but of Power and of Love and of a Sound mind. (2Timothy 1:7)

The Holy Spirit may also be called away for a while by the Will of Father GOD.
The examples we read in the Gospels. The Holy Ghost left the Disciples – so, most of them forsook Christ Jesus and fled for their lives.
Even our Lord was forsaken by the Spirit to face the cruel death alone.
See more in chapters 88 (Saint Peter) & 520 (The Ultimate Price).

That’s why we have *Psalm 51:10-11* and other Scriptures for a *Prayer*.
And that’s why we got the Sacrament of *Confession*.

As for *Ephesians 4:30*, Aye, we have been sealed by the *Holy Spirit of GOD*.
At the same time, our Free will (to break any seals and do whatever we please) remains. Otherwise, why the Scripture warns us against *grieving* Him?

Psalms 51:10-11 & *Ephesians 4:30* are not in any “oppositeness”. They teach us the same thing, even to value the Blessed Gift of the Holy Spirit of GOD.

... Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.
For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh:
and these are contrary the one to the other:
so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.
But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the Law.
(Galatians 5:16-18)

Hereby know we that we dwell in Him, and He in us,
because He hath given us of His Spirit. (1John 4:13)

393

Q: Do we need a Teacher? *1John 2:27* & *2Timothy 2:2* & *Ephesians 4:11*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Yes, *you* do, due to your seeing "Contradictions about our Service to GOD".

It is written:

And He gave some, Apostles; and some, Prophets; and some, Evangelists;
and some, Pastors and Teachers; for the Perfecting of the Saints,
for the Work of the Ministry, for the Edifying of the Body of Christ:
till we all come in the Unity of the Faith, and of the Knowledge
of the Son of GOD, unto a Perfect man, unto the Measure of the Stature
of the Fulness of Christ ... (Ephesians 4:11-13)

... the things that thou hast heard of me among many witnesses,
the same commit thou to Faithful men, who shall be Able to teach others also.
(2Timothy 2:2)

... the Anointing which ye have received of Him abideth in you,
and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same Anointing
teacheth you of all things, and is Truth, and is no lie, and even as it
hath taught you, ye shall abide in Him. (1John 2:27)

Kindly note that we *have* had a Teacher, even the Holy Spirit of GOD.
Please see "Q & A" chapter 104 (The Promised Teacher).
He is sent by Father GOD to teach all Christians, our human Teachers inclusive.

Since the Body of Christ is torn apart by different criticizing one another denominations and the doctrines – all opposing *Ephesians 4:11-13* – the need of such a Teacher cannot be overestimated, as *1John 2:27* clarified.

Therefore, *Ephesians 4:11-13* & *2Timothy 2:2* teach us "how it must be", whereas *Matthew 15:14* & *1John 2:27* open all eyes to a personal Responsibility of every Believer for his (her) Salvation.

I do not see a single "discrepancy" in the above Scriptures.
All "contradictions" are in some unlearned minds, not in the Written Word of GOD. Note well *2Peter 3:15-16*.

394

Q: (1) Peace on Earth or not? – *Luke 2:14* & *Luke 12:51*.
Q: (2) Do the Jews have a special standing before God?
– *Deuteronomy 7:6* & *Colossians 3:11*.
Q: (3) Do we inherit the Earth or Heaven?
– *Matthew 5:5* & *Colossians 1:3-5*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You published these questions as "Future events contradictions".

1. It is written:

Glory to GOD in the Highest, and on Earth Peace, Good Will toward men.
(Luke 2:14)

Suppose ye that I am come to give peace on Earth? I tell you, Nay;
but rather Division: for from henceforth there shall be five in one house divided,
three against two, and two against three. The father shall be divided against
the son, and the son against the father; the mother against the daughter, and
the daughter against the mother; the mother in law against her daughter in law,
and the daughter in law against her mother in law. (Luke 12:51-53)

"Peace on Earth or not?" – Yes, the Peace of GOD per *Luke 2:14 & John 14:27.* And No, no peace (compromise) between Truth and lie, Faith and unbelief, Good and evil, as per *Genesis 1:4, Luke 12:51-53, & 2Corinthians 6:14-16.*

I beg to note that you see a "contradiction" in the Holy Word of GOD, which brings to His Light those incomparable things.

Kindly read "Q & A" chapters 40 (Compromise) & 53 (The Peace of GOD).

2. It is written:

For thou art an Holy People unto the LORD thy GOD:
the LORD thy GOD hath chosen thee to be a Special People unto Himself,
above all people that are upon the face of the Earth. (Deuteronomy 7:6)

... there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian,
Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all. (Colossians 3:11)

Note the Correction stated by our LORD GOD through Brother Isaiah:

... Behold, My Servants shall eat, but ye shall be hungry: behold, My Servants shall drink, but ye shall be thirsty: behold, My Servants shall rejoice, but ye shall be ashamed. Behold, My Servants shall sing for joy of heart, but ye shall cry for sorrow of heart, and shall howl for vexation of spirit. And ye shall leave your name for a curse unto My Chosen: for the LORD GOD shall slay thee, and call His Servants by another Name ... (Isaiah 65:13-15)

It lined up the Scriptures, which you've taken as "contradicting" one another.

"Do the Jews have a special Standing before GOD?" – Aye, they do, per the definition written in *Romans 2:28-29*. And Nay, they do not, speaking of what is written in folks' passports, which is neither my expertise nor concern.
Kindly read chapter 59 (The Chosen People of GOD).

3. It is written:

Blessed are the Meek: for they shall inherit the Earth. (Matthew 5:5)

... the Hope which is laid up for you in Heaven, whereof ye heard before in the Word of the Truth of the Gospel ... (Colossians 1:5)

So, "Do we inherit the Earth or Heaven?" – Could you please accept the Truth that both – *the Earth present* and *the New Heaven & Earth* – are the Spiritual Inheritance of Saints? Please read the following Scriptures.

... Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the Gospel's, but he shall receive an Hundredfold now in this time, Houses, and Brethren, and Sisters, and Mothers, and Children, and Lands, with persecutions; and in the World to come Eternal Life. (Mark 10:29-30)

... Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the Kingdom of GOD's sake, who shall not receive Manifold more in this present time, and in the World to come Life Everlasting. (Luke 18:29-30)

But keep in mind *Philippians 2:12*.
Again, there are not any "contradictions", just a mess made by the inquirers.

395

Q: (1) Is the Coming of the Lord a time of terror or Comfort?
– Joel 2:1-11 & *1Thessalonians 4:16*.
Q: (2) [Are we] Looking for Earthly Dominion or Heavenly?
– Philippians 3:20 & *Matthew 6:10*.
Q: (3) [Are there] Physical Blessings or Spiritual Blessings in Heaven?
– Luke 12:32 & *Ephesians 1:3*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Aren't your "Future events contradictions" second to your present ones?
(Please, note that I answered your questions 86 & 87 in chapter 386).

1. It is written:

And the LORD shall utter His Voice before His Army: for His Camp is Very Great: for He is Strong that executeth His Word: for the Day of the LORD is Great and Very Terrible; and who can abide it? Therefore also now, saith the LORD, turn ye even to Me with all your heart, and with Fasting, and with Weeping, and with Mourning: and rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the LORD your GOD: for He is Gracious and Merciful, slow to Anger, and of Great Kindness, and repenteth Him of the evil. (Joel 2:11-13)

For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a Shout, with the Voice of the Archangel, and with the Trump of GOD: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. (1Thessalonians 4:16)

"Is the Coming of the Lord a time of terror or Comfort?" – Does it matter?
In my opinion, what does, is whether you & I will be *saved*, nothing else.
Yet, to answer the question, have a closer look at the above Scriptures.
Joel 2:11-13 warned the evildoers. To *them*, the Day of the Lord is *terror*.
1Thessalonians 4:16 promised *Comfort* to *Saints*. As simple as that.
So, there are no "contradictions" here.

2. It is written:

... our Conversation is in Heaven;
from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ ...
(Philippians 3:20, Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition)

For our Citizenship is in the Heavens, whence also Saviour we await – the Lord Jesus Christ ... (Philippians 3:20, Young's Literal Translation)

... Thy Will be done in Earth, as it is in Heaven. (Matthew 6:10)

"Looking for Earthly Dominion or Heavenly?" Sorry, but the question is vague.
If you mean people, we are neither supposed to look for what *is* ours. The *Earthly Dominion* (see chapters 1, 36, 312, 313) – nor to what *cannot* be ours – the *Heavenly Dominion*, which belongs to the LORD GOD only.
As for "contradiction" between *Philippians 3:20* & *Matthew 6:10*, these Scriptures are on matters different and cannot "contradict" one another.
In *Matthew 6:10*, we pray for GOD's Guidance so needful for us to rule the Earth the Right way. *Philippians 3:20* reminds us of where we belong.

3. It is written:

Fear not, little flock; for it is your Father's Good Pleasure to give you the Kingdom. (Luke 12:32)

Blessed be the GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, Who hath blessed us with all spiritual Blessings in Heavenly places in Christ ... (Ephesians 1:3)

So, "Physical Blessings or Spiritual Blessings in Heaven?" For such wording, you should have mentioned *Luke 12:22-34*. Anyway, the answer is *both* (much the same as I answered your third question in the previous chapter 394). These Scriptures state the Promises of the LORD, our Father. His Promises might be *Conditional*, but never "discrepant".
Even so, there are no "contradictions" again.

Q: Family Relationships
"Honor thy father and thy mother ..."– Exodus 20:12.
"If any man come to Me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, Yea, and his own Life also, he cannot be My Disciple. " — Luke 14:26.
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, March 2021. Edited.)

A: Far as I understood, the puzzling word is "hate". It ought to be understood as "make second to Me". You may see The Amplified Bible translation.
So, no "contradictions", if you please.

396

Q: (1) Future or present Atonement? – *Acts 3:19* & *Romans 5:11*.
Q: (2) Future or present Grace? – *1Peter 1:13* & *Romans 5:2*.
Q: (3) Will we reign in Heaven or on Earth? – *Luke 22:30* & *Ephesians 2:6*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You added these questions to your "Future events contradictions".

1. It is written:

> *Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your sins may be blotted out, when the Times of Refreshing shall come from the Presence of the LORD; and He shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you: Whom the Heaven must receive until the Times of Restitution of all things, which GOD hath spoken by the mouth of all His Holy Prophets since the World began. (Acts 3:19-21)*
>
> *... when we were enemies, we were reconciled to GOD by the death of His Son, much more, being reconciled, we shall be saved by His Life. And not only so, but we also joy in GOD through our Lord Jesus Christ, by Whom we have now received the Atonement. (Romans 5:10-11)*

"Future or present Atonement?" – *Both*, constantly kept in mind as an attitude. Take *Romans 5:10-11* as the Atonement received (as per the Conditional Promise thereof) and to be stuck to. For, like every other Spiritual Treasure, it can be lost. Take *Acts 3:19-20* as the same Atonement, but Confirmed for those who have not compromised with the devil at the Time of Jesus' Second Coming & the Rapture.

So, in the Scriptures you have presented, I do not see any "contradictions".

2. It is written:

> *... being justified by Faith, we have Peace with GOD through our Lord Jesus Christ: by Whom also we have Access by Faith into this Grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in Hope of the Glory of GOD. (Romans 5:1-2)*

... gird up the loins of your mind, be Sober, and hope to the end for the Grace that is to be brought unto you at the Revelation of Jesus Christ ... (1Peter 1:13)

"Future or present Grace?" Obviously, you have taken *Romans 5:1-2* for the "present Grace" and *1Peter 1:13* for the "future Grace." However, there is *One* Grace of GOD. Like we have cleared up in the previous question, which is parallel to the present one, the Treasure should be held fast to, lest it gets lost.

Your "contradiction" is dismissed again. So, "*... gird up the loins of your mind ...*" And kindly refer to chapter 322 regarding the subject of Grace.

Let us therefore come boldly unto the Throne of Grace,
that we may obtain Mercy, and find Grace to help in time of need.
(Hebrews 4:16)

3. It is written:

And I appoint unto you a Kingdom, as My Father hath appointed unto Me;
that ye may eat and drink at My Table in My Kingdom,
and sit on Thrones judging the Twelve Tribes of Israel. (Luke 22:29-30)

... when we were dead in sins, hath quickened us together with Christ,
(by Grace ye are saved); and hath raised us up together, and made us sit
together in Heavenly Places in Christ Jesus: that in the ages to come
He might shew the exceeding Riches of His Grace in His Kindness
toward us through Christ Jesus. (Ephesians 2:5-7)

"Will we reign in Heaven or on Earth?" – Both Scriptures clearly state the *Kingdom of Heaven* (for the saved ones in the future) where *Jesus Christ* reigns through ourselves as One Spirit with Him. *1Corinthians 6:17.*

There is not any "contradiction" between the Scriptures in your question.
For the present time, mind the Words of Jesus in *Matthew 5:5.*

Q: Resurrection of the dead.
"... he that goeth down to the grave shall come up no more." — Job 7:9.
"... the hour is coming, in which all that are in the graves shall hear His Voice, and shall come forth ..." — John 5:28-29.
(*https://www.atheists.org/activism/resources/biblical-contradictions/*, March 2021. Edited.)

A: *Job 7:9* is a Statement of fact: dead persons cannot get back to *this* Life. *John 5:28-29* predicts the Judgment of dead – Righteous and sinners – for *Eternal* Life and eternal death, respectively. No "contradiction".

397

Q: (1) How often do we need to pray before it is answered?
– *Isaiah 65:24* & *Ephesians 6:18*.
Q: (2) Do we get anything we ask in Prayer?
– *Matthew 21:22* & *2Corinthians 12:8-9*.
Q: (3) Should we know how to pray or not? – *Luke 11:1* & *Romans 8:26*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Your questions – "Prayer contradictions" – resemble those of *unbelievers*.

1. It is written:

And it shall come to pass, that before they call,
I will answer; and while they are yet speaking, I will hear. (Isaiah 65:24)

Praying always with all Prayer and Supplication in the Spirit, and watching thereunto with all Perseverance and Supplication for all Saints ...
(Ephesians 6:18)

"How often do we need to pray before it is answered?" – Are you in a hurry? Don't be. For the LORD – our Father – is always much faster. Read *Matthew 6:8*. As for the Scriptures in question – *Isaiah 65:24* & *Ephesians 6:18* – please read *Isaiah 65:17-25* to understand that it is all about the *New Heaven & New Earth* and, therefore, totally out of place here. Welcome back to the present World. Read attentively *Ephesians 6:18*. Pray in the Spirit, i.e., the *Holy Ghost* Himself gives all of us the Right words (bypassing our comprehending thereof). And He gives us the Peace of *knowing* that our Prayers & Intercessions got the Hearing. *Isaiah 65:24* & *Ephesians 6:18* cannot "contradict" one another.

2. It is written:

... all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in Prayer,
believing, ye shall receive. (Matthew 21:22)

And lest I should be exalted above Measure through the Abundance of the Revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flesh, the messenger of Satan to buffet me, lest I should be exalted above Measure. For this thing I besought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me. And He said unto me, My Grace is sufficient for thee: for My Strength is made Perfect in weakness. Most gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the Power of Christ may rest upon me. (2Corinthians 12:7-9)

"Do we get anything we ask in Prayer?" – Yes, we do. But don't pray without believing (*Mark 11:24 & Hebrews 11:6*). However, there is something to note. In *Matthew 21:22*, mark the Word *ye*. Lord Jesus addressed *His Disciples*. (Hey, not only those Twelve, okay?) That's why the Spirit leads us to the Right Parallel, even *1John 5:14*. Please think, therefore, what you mean by "anything". *2Corinthians 12:7-9* may serve as another Parallel to the above. Why? – The Holy Will of GOD was present and in Control at the time of Saint Paul's Prayer. Sometimes, the Answer is *No*. Therefore, no "contradiction" in these Scriptures.

3. It is written:

And it came to pass, that, as He was praying in a certain place, when He ceased, one of His Disciples said unto Him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his Disciples. (Luke 11:1)

Likewise the Spirit also helpeth our infirmities: for we know not what we should pray for as we ought: but the Spirit Himself maketh Intercession for us with Groanings which cannot be uttered. (Romans 8:26)

"Should we know how to pray or not?" Yes, we should.
The above Scriptures give us two Good ways to.
Luke 11:1 is followed by *Luke 11:2-4*, a shorter Version of *Matthew 6:9-13*, known as the *Lord's Prayer*. See chapter 57 (The Lord's Prayer – Guidance) *Romans 8:26*, on the other hand, teaches us on the Powerful *Prayer in tongues unknown*, mentioned above, when we discussed *Ephesians 6:18*. Therefore, in no way, *Luke 11:1* & *Romans 8:26* are "contradictory".

Q: What makes you believe that the Bible is undisputedly the Word of God?. Many *contradictions*, outlandish stories, and moral atrocities of the Old Testament have me questioning my faith.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2021.)

A: The only answer to your question is my *Christian* Testimony & Experience. You may read this "Q & A" book to understand my reasons. If you please. Regarding "contradictions", please see the chapters thus named.
For "outlandish stories", see the chapters "The unbelievers ask". As it seems to me, their atheistic stories & reasons are much more "outlandish". What you called "moral atrocities of the Old Testament", you may find in the chapters "Bible Study", starting from 26 (Killing Canaanites).
And how can you "question" something you have no idea about?

398

Q: (1) Do we get *what* we ask or *more* than we ask?
– Matthew 21:22 & *Ephesians 3:20*.
Q: (2) Do Apostles have the power to heal? *– Mark 16:18* & *1Timothy 5:23*.
Q: (3) Can we expect healing from God?
– Isaiah 53:5 & *2Corinthians 12:7-10*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: How can you *pray* (if you do), so burdened with "Prayer contradictions"?

1. It is written:

And Jesus answered them, Truly I say to you, if you have Faith (a firm relying Trust) and do not doubt, you will not only do what has been done to the fig tree, but even if you say to this mountain, Be taken up and cast into the sea, it will be done. And whatever you ask for in Prayer, having Faith and [really] believing, you will receive. (Matthew 21:21-22, The Amplified Bible)

Now unto Him that is Able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, according to the Power that worketh in us, unto Him be Glory in the Church by Christ Jesus throughout all ages, World without end. Amen. (Ephesians 3:20-21)

"Do we get what we ask or more than we ask?" – Great. In the previous chapter, I tried to answer you "*how to get the Answer from GOD at all"*. So, this question is a bit surprising. The answer to you is: *it depends*. On what? Kindly go as far as our previous chapter 397, where *Matthew 21:22* was talked about.
As for *Ephesians 3:20-21*, mark the Word *Amen*. Do not ever doubt it.
Kindly note that "*Him that is Able"* does not mean "*Him that must"*.
To receive "*exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think*" depends on how much "*that we ask or think"* is in line with the Will of the LORD, our GOD.
Please also note that there is quite a difference between what people *want* and what they *need*. That, more often than not, is unknown to so many of us. In this light, the Prayers in tongues unknown are of great help.
You may read chapter 179 (Praying in tongues unknown).
Again, your seeking for a "contradiction" failed.

2. It is written:

... In My Name ... they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. (Mark 16:17-18)

Drink no longer water, but use a little wine
for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities. (1Timothy 5:23)

"Do Apostles have the Power to heal?" My answer is negative.
Nobody but the *LORD GOD* has ever had that Power. Our Heavenly Father may bless us to be *His Healing Instruments* for as long as we follow His Holy Will.
Note that every needful *physical* Healing is only second to a *spiritual* one.
As for Brother Timothy, the reason for his physical infirmities is unknown.
What Brother Paul suggested to him was okay since it is written in the Scriptures.
Take into account the possible presence of Brother Luke, the physician.
That fact is beautifully shown in the "*Paul, Apostle Of Christ*" film.
One more "contradiction" got down (at least on these pages, if not on your site).

3. It is written:

... He was wounded for our transgressions,
He was bruised for our iniquities: the Chastisement of our Peace
was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed. (Isaiah 53:5)

And to keep me from being puffed up and too much elated by the exceeding Greatness (preeminence) of these Revelations, there was given me a thorn (a splinter) in the flesh, a messenger of Satan, to rack and buffet and harass me, to keep me from being excessively exalted [Job 2:6]. Three times I called upon the Lord and besought [Him] about this and begged that it might depart from me; But He said to me, My Grace (My Favor and Loving-Kindness and Mercy) is enough for you [sufficient against any danger and enables you to bear the trouble manfully]; for My Strength and Power are made Perfect (fulfilled and completed) and show themselves most effective in [your] weakness. Therefore, I will all the more gladly glory in my weaknesses and infirmities, that the Strength and Power of Christ (the Messiah) may rest (Yes, may pitch a tent over and dwell) upon me! So for the sake of Christ, I am well pleased and take pleasure in infirmities, insults, hardships, persecutions, perplexities and distresses; for when I am weak [in human strength], then am I [Truly] Strong (Able, Powerful in Divine Strength). (2Corinthians 12:7-10, The Amplified Bible)

To your question – "Can we expect a Healing from GOD?" – I have no other answer than *Yes*, as the above *Isaiah 53:5* made it most clear-cut.
2Corinthians 12:7-10 is irrelevant here, for it has more to do with the *Holy Will of GOD* and the *spiritual Power* of His Servant Paul.
Thus one more of your "contradictions" is proved false.

399

Q: (1) Was Creation Good or bad? – *Genesis 1:31* & *Genesis 6:6*.
Q: (2) Were the Jerusalem Saints poor or not? – *Acts 4:34* & *Romans 15:26*.
Q: (3) Do we need to teach "Know the LORD?"
– *Jeremiah 31:34* & *1Timothy 4:10-11*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You titled these questions, "General contradictions".

1. It is written:

And GOD saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was Very Good.
And the evening and the morning were the sixth day. (Genesis 1:31)

And it repented the LORD that He had made Man on the Earth,
and it grieved Him at His Heart. (Genesis 6:6)

Regarding your (edited) question, "Was Creation Good or bad?" see chapter 330 on the same query (asked by *unbelievers*, who are "contradictions" themselves).
Genesis 5:24, 6:8, and other Scriptures, which single out the Righteous men, might answer the question of why "*... it repented the LORD that He had made Man on the Earth ...*" Behold, from the Beginning of Time up to now, the *servants of the devil* by far outnumbered the Godly folks.
Don't forget, *GOD is Love*. That's why *Genesis 6:6* should be understood only in the Light of *1John 4:16*. Our Father GOD cannot *hate* the evil humankind. He could be *sorrowful* for the Doom of *eternal death* awaiting His lost Children.
I cannot see any "contradiction" between *Genesis 1:31* & *Genesis 6:6*. These Scriptures describe different periods. The Creation of our beautiful World is described in *Genesis Chapter 1*, period. After that, our sorry authority started.
The LORD's *Creation* was and still is Great & Good. However, it is gradually deteriorated by us, people. Therefore, we all are supposed to continue this conversation on the Day of Judgment. See *Romans 14:10* & *2Corinthians 5:10*.

2. It is written:

Neither was there any among them that lacked ... (Acts 4:34)

For it hath pleased them of Macedonia and Achaia to make a certain
Contribution for the poor Saints which are at Jerusalem. (Romans 15:26)

So, "Were the Jerusalem Saints poor or not?"

Far as I understood the question (edited here as your many other inquiries), it is all about *financial* or *material* poverty. The answer is *Yes*, per *Romans 15:26*.
Acts 4:34 clearly states the same. Why? Look at that from two viewpoints – Christian and *worldly*. The lack & poverty, as well as abundance & prosperity, differ. We, Believers, are supposed to give to Charity. And be happy with little.

Matthew 14:20 & 15:37 made it clear: "*... they did all eat, and were filled ...*" What were those thousands of folks happy with? – Just *bread & fish*. So, as the distribution was made in Jerusalem Church, others followed their Good example. There is no "discrepancy" in *Acts 4:34* & *Romans 15:26*.

3. It is written:

> *Behold, the days come, saith the LORD, that I will make a New Covenant with the House of Israel, and with the House of Judah ... And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the LORD: for they shall all know Me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the LORD: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more. (Jeremiah 31:34)*

... we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the Living GOD, Who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe. These things command and teach. (1Timothy 4:10-11)

"Do we need to teach 'Know the LORD?'" Yes, we do, meaning to teach those who want to learn, and provided the Teachers know what they teach.
Reading *Jeremiah 31:34* & *1Timothy 4:10-11*, I cannot see any "oppositeness". But you persistently do.
Reading these lines later, in 2026, I again checked your site – and it is still on the Internet, and all your "contradictions" are there too.
Of a Truth, it is written: *... seek, and ye shall find ... (Matthew 7:7 & Luke 11:9)*
Kindly read "Q & A" chapters: 29 dealing with different *approaches* to Bible Study, and 52, regarding the Knowledge of GOD.

Jeremiah 31:34 wisely notes – *... they shall teach no more ...* – prophesying on the days to come and stating the reason why – *... they shall all know Me ...*
The Church will know her LORD GOD, even as she should.
1Timothy 4:10-11 taught the *Twelfth Commandment* on. See chapter 43.

Brother *Timothy* died for that. (See *John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Chapter 2, The Second Persecution, Under Domitian, A.D. 81*.)

400

Q: (1) Is it greater Love to die for your Friends or enemies?
– *John 15:13-14* & *Romans 5:10*.
Q: (2) Are we washed by Water or the Spirit?
– *Acts 22:16* & *1Corinthians 6:11*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: Published as "General contradictions" (and still alive in June 2026).
1. So, it is written:

This is My Commandment, that ye love one another, as I have loved you.
Greater Love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his Life
for his Friends. Ye are My Friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.
(John 15:12-14)

For if, when we were enemies, we were reconciled to GOD
by the death of His Son, much more, being reconciled,
we shall be saved by His Life. (Romans 5:10)

To your question – "Is it greater Love to die for your Friends or enemies?" –
I answer: for *Friends*, in full accord with *John 15:13*.

As for *Romans 5:10*, our Lord, Christ Jesus, died for all people. *John 3:16-17*.

In *Matthew 26:50*, our Blessed Lord called "Friend" even the *traitor*.
That was in line with what Jesus taught earlier –

> *Ye have heard that it hath been said, Thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do Good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; that ye may be the Children of your Father which is in Heaven: for He maketh His Sun to rise on the evil and on the Good, and sendeth rain on the Just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? Do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute your Brethren only, what do ye more than others? Do not even the publicans so? Be ye therefore Perfect, even as your Father which is in Heaven is Perfect. (Matthew 5:43-48*)

Yet, the Priority of *John 15:13* remains, and the absence of a "contradiction" between *John 15:13-14* & *Romans 5:10* is confirmed.

2. It is written:

> *And now why tarriest thou? Arise, and be baptized, and wash away thy sins, calling on the Name of the Lord. (Acts 22:16)*
>
> *... Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the Kingdom of GOD. And such were some of you: but ye are Washed, but ye are Sanctified, but ye are Justified in the Name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our GOD. (1Corinthians 6:9-11)*

"Are we washed by Water or the Spirit?" – The "we" in your question sounds fair enough for every one of us to answer for him (her) self.
Within the meaning of this discussion, you & I can change "we" for "Christians" and "Water" for "Water baptism" to get this answer – *Both*.
Why so? You may have a look at chapters 20 (Water Baptism), 65 (Baptism in the Holy Spirit), 66 (Threefold Baptism), and 316 (Baptism in the Name of Jesus) – all dedicated to the subject of *Baptism.* Those discussions, hopefully, explain that away to you.
Again, the Scriptures you questioned are not "contradictionary".

This is our Threefold Baptism:

4 ... John had his raiment of camel's hair, and a leathern girdle about his loins; and his meat was locusts and wild honey.
5 Then went out to him Jerusalem, and all Judæa, and all the region round about Jordan, 6 and were baptized of him in Jordan, confessing their sins. 7 But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his Baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the Wrath to come? 8 Bring forth therefore Fruits meet for Repentance: 9 And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that GOD is Able of these stones to raise up Children unto Abraham. 10 And now also the Axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth Good Fruit is hewn down, and cast into the Fire. 11 I indeed baptize you with water unto Repentance: but He that cometh after me is Mightier than I, Whose shoes I am not Worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with Fire: 12 Whose Fan is in His hand, and He will throughly purge His Floor, and gather His Wheat into the Garner; but He will burn up the chaff with unquenchable Fire. (Matthew Chapter 3)

401

Q: (1) Are Angels teaching us, or are we teaching them?
– Zechariah 1:9 & *Ephesians 3:10*.
Q: (2) Was Jesus the Stumbling Stone or Cornerstone?
– Romans 9:18-33 & *Ephesians 2:20*.
(*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*, March 2018.)

A: You published these last questions as “General contradictions”.

(1) It is written:

Then said I, O my lord, what are these? And the Angel that talked with me said unto me, I will shew thee what these be. (Zechariah 1:9)

... now unto the principalities and powers in Heavenly places might be known by the Church the manifold Wisdom of GOD ... (Ephesians 3:10)

So, “Are Angels teaching us, or are we teaching them?” –
I believe there hardly has ever been a *human* (apart from Christ) qualified enough to teach the *Holy Angels of the LORD*.
Certainly, *Ephesians 3:9-10* has been misunderstood. Hi again.

The Words “known by the Church” might have two (correct) meanings.
First: by the Testimony of spiritual development of the Saints of GOD.
Second: by the fact of Revelations given to the Saints, hidden from them before.
In both cases, it is not *our* achievement but the Blessed Gifts of our Father GOD, and when Christians teach Truth, it is the *Holy Ghost*, Who teaches through them.

The Church, composed both of Jews and Gentiles, is a Mirror, in which Angels behold the Astonishing Wisdom of GOD displayed in a manner unknown to them before. They see a Work which is New to them, and the Reason of which was hid in GOD. In this manner, and not by learning anything from the lips of men, do they make Progress.
(John Calvin, Commentary on Galatians and Ephesians, p.214)

So, please, forget this “contradiction”.
(Sadly, it is not so fast. The bulldog-grip of falsehood is strong.
The site <*http://graceambassadors.com/midacts/bible-contradictions*>
remained there on June 2026.)

2. It is written:

> *... the Gentiles, which followed not after Righteousness, have attained to Righteousness, even the Righteousness which is of Faith. But Israel, which followed after the Law of Righteousness, hath not attained to the Law of Righteousness. Wherefore? Because they sought it not by Faith, but as it were by the Works of the Law. For they stumbled at that Stumblingstone; as it is written, Behold, I lay in Sion a Stumblingstone and Rock of offence: and whosoever believeth on Him shall not be ashamed. (Romans 9:30-33)*
>
> *Now therefore ye are no more strangers and foreigners, but Fellowcitizens with the Saints, and of the Household of GOD; and are built upon the Foundation of the Apostles and Prophets, Jesus Christ Himself being the Chief Corner Stone ... (Ephesians 2:19-20)*

"Was Jesus the Stumbling Stone or Cornerstone?" – Can't He be *both*? Even the *Stumbling Stone* for spiritually blind ones and the *Chief Corner Stone* for all Blessed by Faith?
Is it a "contradiction?" – Not for me.

In fact, it is useless to look for "errors" in the Written Word of GOD.

> *The hardest thing of all is to find a black cat in a dark room,*
> *especially if there is no cat. (Confucius)*

To end up my conversation with *Grace Ambassadors*, I'd like to remind some of those *Bible Study* principles recommended in chapters 29 (Mind your approach), 101 (Timing), 102 (The Strategy), 103 (Avoid errors), 104 (The Promised Teacher), 118 (Different translations), and 119 (About "contradictions").

Please, see your Bible Study a Sacrifice of your time and the work of the mind. Remember: our LORD GOD will pay you back well.
Don't underestimate your enemy – the devil – standing in the way of Study. The crap of "contradictions" is one of his lies.
Note well the Strategy outlined in chapter 102. It helps a lot.
Stop reading & listening to the lying interpretations about the relevance of some Scriptures "there & then". Our Holy Bible is all about "here & now".
Don't forget to "switch off" your *common sense* before studying the Scriptures.
The most important is mastering your *spiritual hearing*, even that of the Holy Ghost – our Promised Teacher. He does not point out "contradictions".

402

Q: What could 153 fishes in the net mean? – *John 21:11*.

A: It is written:

And Solomon numbered all the strangers that were in the Land of Israel, after the numbering wherewith David his father had numbered them; and they were found an hundred and fifty thousand and three thousand and six hundred. And he set threescore and ten thousand of them to be bearers of burdens, and fourscore thousand to be hewers in the mountain, and three thousand and six hundred overseers to set the people a work. (2Chronicles 2:17-18)

The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the Sun. (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

Behold, the former things are come to pass, and new things do I declare: before they spring forth I tell you of them. (Isaiah 42:9)

And He saith unto them, Follow Me, and I will make you Fishers of men. (Matthew 4:19)

My Sheep hear My Voice, and I know them, and they follow Me: and I give unto them Eternal Life; and they shall never perish, neither shall any man pluck them out of My Hand. My Father, which gave them Me, is Greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of My Father's Hand. (John 10:27-29)

Simon Peter went up, and drew the net to land full of great fishes, an hundred and fifty and three: and for all there were so many, yet was not the net broken. (John 21:11)

For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that Circumcision, which is outward in the flesh. But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and Circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose Praise is not of men, but of GOD. (Romans 2:28-29)

The above Scriptures may help to answer the question.

By *2Chronicles 2:17*, there were numbered *one hundred fifty-three* thousand six hundred strangers in the Land of Israel. Those folks were made the hard workers for the building of the Temple of Most High GOD.

By *Ecclesiastes 1:9* & *Isaiah 42:9*, the former things might well *foreshadow* the things to come to pass.

Matthew 4:19 is the Promise of the Lord to His Disciples.

John 10:27-29 is the Teaching on the Power of GOD keeping His Church.

John 21:11 is the Sign confirming the Prophecy hidden in *2Chronicles 2:17-18*, the Promise of *Matthew 4:19*, and the Teaching of *John 10:27-29*.

Romans 2:28-29 made clear what *2Chronicles 2:17-18* might speak about, even the Kingdom of GOD and His New Chosen People.

Notwithstanding that the number 153 appeared only in *2Chronicles 2:17-18* and *John 21:11*, we can meet it in the Glorious History of our Christian Church.

By *Brother Fox's "Book of Martyrs", Gutenberg Project, 2007,*

> *... In the castle of Lisgool upwards of one hundred and fifty men, women, and children, were all burnt together ... (p.745)*
> *The like horrid barbarities ... were practised on the wretched Protestants ... and, when an estimate was afterward made of the number who were sacrificed to gratify the diabolical souls of the papists, it amounted to one hundred and fifty thousand ... (p.756)*

Q: How then can we explain these two events, even *Luke 5:4-6* & *John 21:11*? In the first case, the net broke, whereas, in the second, it did not.

A: Why that can happen in the natural, you may kindly ask fishermen.
As for spiritual reasons, *Luke 5:4-6* describes the event which belongs to the beginning of Jesus' Disciples Ministry. Note also *John 16:12*.

What had happened, one can explain by the Harvest Law (chapters 503 & 508). When we sow *Faith* – as Brother Peter did – we reap the Harvest of *Blessings*.
As for the case of *John 21:11*, the strength of a net may symbolize the Power of GOD's Faithfulness:

> *My Father, which gave them Me, is Greater than all;*
> *and no man is able to pluck them out of My Father's Hand. (John 10:29)*

403

Q: How to define *idolatry*?

A: By *Robinson's Theological Dictionary*, idolatry is,
... superstitious worship paid to idols and false gods. This word is taken in general for all impious, superstitious, and sacrilegious worship.

It is written,

Mortify therefore your members which are upon the Earth; fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, and covetousness, which is idolatry ... (Colossians 3:5)

Therefore, the *idolater* is every *superstitious* person believing falsehood or being an *atheist*, i.e., not believing in spiritual things at all. Idolaters do not care about the Truth of the Written Word of GOD, but instead value the stuff of this world – politics, imperialism, nationalism, racism, atheistic science, military, commerce, and whatsoever else elevated in his (her) mind above our the LORD. Those false values are taught by *Satan* only and, practically, manifest the blind *evil works*.

... ye shall overthrow their altars, and break their pillars, and burn their groves with fire; and ye shall hew down the graven images of their gods, and destroy the names of them out of that place. (Deuteronomy 12:3)

Q: (1) Will there be reproduction in the afterlife?.
Q: (2) In both Heaven and hell, will there be reproduction?
Q: (3) I can't imagine Heaven without sexual intercourse ... (?)
(Signed: Christian, Catholic.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1) Negative on that.
It is written:

... in the Resurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the Angels of GOD in Heaven. (Matthew 22:30)

Please see chapter 307 (Heavenly Love).
(2) Take a look at chapters 153 (The Kingdom of Heaven) and 8 (Hell).
(3) But our Father GOD can. Kindly note *Isaiah 64:4* & *1Corinthians 2:9*.
So, your time for sexual intercourse is now. Full ahead.
Just keep in mind the Seventh Commandment. Take care.

404

Q: How do you understand *Proverbs 14:30*?

A: It is written,

A sound heart is the life of the flesh: but envy the rottenness of the bones.
(Proverbs 14:30)

In a triune man, a *sound heart* means a healthy spirit, the latter being achievable only when the *Holy Spirit of GOD* is in complete control thereof.
Please see chapter 108 (The trinity of a human).

Consequently, in the above Scripture, *the life of the flesh* is nothing but a good (sound) physical state of our body.

Envy is a demonic evil coming with jealousy, self-pity, anger, etc. And when working together, those evils weaken our spirit, distract a mind, and corrupt a soul. Our physical body might become more vulnerable to different infections, sicknesses, and so on. How far all that goes depends on many other factors, such as personal physical & spiritual abilities.

Therefore, *the rottenness of the bones* can be taken literally, as it is written, or even worse. That may take time, but demons carrying their evil dung are patient.
Have a look at chapter 39 (The War outlined).

A (defined above) *sound heart* is, most definitely, stronger than any demonic weapon, *envy* inclusive. The choice is ours.

The Scriptures to mind.

For ye are yet carnal: for whereas there is among you envying, and strife, and divisions, are ye not carnal, and walk as men? (1Corinthians 3:3)

... Charity envieth not ... (1Corinthians 13:4)

But the Fruit of the Spirit is Love, Joy, Peace, Longsuffering, Gentleness, Goodness, Faith, Meekness, Temperance ... (Galatians 5:22-23)

And let the Peace of GOD rule in your hearts ... (Colossians 3:15)

405

Q: What would you advise to a sinner guilty of something terrible and being under the pressure of the conscience?

A: It is written,

... to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope ...
(Ecclesiastes 9:4)

May this Scripture give *Comfort* to a sinner, not indulge in any further *sin*.

I believe these three steps should be taken one after another.

First, start from the Top and ask Father GOD to forgive you.
Kindly consider *Psalms 32:5, Proverbs 28:13, Isaiah 43:25, & 1John 1:9.*

Second, go to the Christian Church nearest to you, find her Pastor, Priest, or Minister, and *confess* your sin(s) briefly, any names, places, and dates being not necessary.
Note *James 5:16,* which is pertinent, even taken out of its context.

Third, go straight to the nearest Police station, submit all the details of your crime(s) to the Officer in charge and follow his (her) orders.
See *Proverbs 24:21, Titus 3:1, & 1Peter 2:13-15.*

Q: (1) I've read some conflicting interpretations on where Jesus would stand regarding protesters.. What is yours?
Q: (2) Would He support people protesting against fascism or racism?
Thank you.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: (1) Kindly read chapter 21. It is dedicated to voting. New rulers get elected, and other conflicts & protesters come up. Both – rulers & protesters – may stand against our Lord Jesus. See also the relevant chapters 439 & 502. Please, also read chapter 55 about Christian Country. It is my opinion regarding the solution to many problems, the protests inclusive.
(2) Take a look at chapter 64, dealing with GOD's Punishment.
People's *godlessness* might lead to such a ruling policy as fascism & racism.
Kindly note *Jeremiah 3:13-15.*
Thank you for your question.

406

Q: What would be your advice to a married Christian who has met his ex-girlfriend. Once upon a time, they loved one another, then parted. She may still love him, moreover, she has their biological child.

A: As I suggested in the previous chapter, the man ought to start from the Top, that is, ask Father GOD to forgive him.

I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid.
I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD;
and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah.
(Psalms 32:5)

Then the steps following would be a lot easier than it might seem.

The second person to approach is his Wife. If that has not yet been done, she should be told everything about his past life – no more secrets.
Remember the Holy Will of the LORD –

... and the two will become One body. (Genesis 2:24, Expanded Bible)

The final step is the conversation with his old friend (to call her this right way). She should also be informed about the man, his coming to Christ in particular, and asked for forgiveness.

... if any man be in Christ, he is a New Creature:
old things are passed away; behold, all things are become New.
(2Corinthians 5:17)

If the child has not yet grown up and the lady needs financial support, to offer the last is in order. She and the child ought to be mentioned in his Prayers.
The former friends ought to part again, but not as enemies.

The case may turn out complicated, say, bad habits, and an evil company involved. Then, the Help and Prayer Backup are to be sought from the Local Christian Church.

For where two or three are gathered together in My Name,
there am I in the midst of them. (Matthew 18:20)

407

Q: It is written,

I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot:
I would thou wert cold or hot. (Revelation 3:15)

Does it mean GOD wants us to be *cold or hot* to "simplify" His Judgment?

A: No, it doesn't. In no way our LORD GOD needs such a "simplification" –

... Who both will bring to Light the hidden things of darkness,
and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts:
and then shall every man have Praise of GOD. (1Corinthians 4:5)

One might ask, why then the Scripture runs, *"I would thou wert cold or hot"*? Well, once for the *LORD* it does not make a difference, then it is *us* (Believers and unbelievers) whom our Father GOD advised to make choices. What for? To avoid a mere *lie* camouflaged under *common sense*, *compromise*, *wise approach* – you name it.

> *... Forasmuch as this people draw near Me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour Me, but have removed their heart far from Me, and their Fear toward Me is taught by the precept of men: therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a Marvellous Work among this people, even a Marvellous Work and a Wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid. (Isaiah 29:13-14)*

Amen.

Even so, expel the evil spirits working up lies and affecting your thoughts, words, and actions. That done, your standpoint toward the LORD will be plain to you. The Message of *Revelation 3:14-22* would also be more understandable.

This Book of the Law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way Prosperous, and then thou shalt have Good Success. Have not I commanded thee? Be Strong and of a Good Courage; be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed: for the LORD thy GOD is with thee whithersoever thou goest. (Joshua 1:8)

408

Q: In *Revelation 7:1-8*, we can read about 144,000 of GOD's People sealed. What does it mean?

A: I agree with those Teachers who commented that the number 144,000 is not to be taken literally. Neither has that number anything to do with the Jewish nation or Jewish Christians. Since the numbers & multiples of ten & twelve often signified *completion*, 144,000 may also symbolize *accomplishment*. *Revelation 7:1-8* is all about our Church of GOD, One and Indivisible Body of Christ, as *Revelation 7:9-17* confirms that.

... 4 And I heard the number of them which were sealed: and there were sealed an hundred and forty and four thousand of all the Tribes of the Children of Israel ... 9 After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, stood before the Throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands; 10 and cried with a loud voice, saying, Salvation to our GOD which sitteth upon the Throne, and unto the Lamb. 11 And all the Angels stood round about the Throne, and about the Elders and the Four Beasts, and fell before the Throne on their faces, and worshipped GOD, 12 saying, Amen: Blessing, and Glory, and Wisdom, and Thanksgiving, and Honour, and Power, and Might, be unto our GOD for ever and ever. Amen ... 14 ... These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the Blood of the Lamb. 15 Therefore are they before the Throne of GOD, and serve Him day and night in His Temple: and He that sitteth on the Throne shall dwell among them. 16 They shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more; neither shall the Sun light on them, nor any heat. 17 For the Lamb which is in the midst of the Throne shall feed them, and shall lead them unto Living Fountains of Waters: and GOD shall wipe away all tears from their eyes. ... (Revelation Chapter 7)

Q: I am confused by the Timeline of the Bible.. I read about the War in Heaven in the *Book of Revelation*. What I want to know is when that War is to take place, during the time of the *Book of Genesis* or the *Book of Revelation*? I have always been baffled about the time of that War.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Edited.)

A: That War is written about in *Revelation 12:7-12*. It is a spiritual battle. It takes place in the end times, which times are now. Kindly consider *Matthew 24:14*. See also chapter 759 and the Index section. Thank you.

409

Q: In chapter 42, you made quite a stress upon the right Witness at the *Sacrament of Confession*. What if there is no such a character around?

A: Aye, I did that, trying to describe a *Christian* qualified for the Job. You & I should also try to be or become such. Yet, if there is not a Christian nearby (as you may put it), here I am to help.

(The following suggestions, to some extent, might repeat my postings on <*christianforums.com*> & <*worthychristianforums.com*> years ago.)

You may see the *Scripture references* in this chapter – especially if it is your first Confession. Think well over these Scriptures and find out your transgressions against GOD & His Church. Kindly visit the Index section of this "Q & A" book.

If you have a Prayer Request, the Confession is also needful.
How come? Please read the following Scripture and see how our Sincere *Confession* strengthens up our *Righteousness*.

> *Is any sick among you? Let him call for the Elders of the Church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil in the Name of the Lord: and the Prayer of Faith shall save the sick, and the Lord shall raise him up; and if he have committed sins, they shall be forgiven him. Confess your faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent Prayer of a Righteous man availeth much. (James 5:15-16)*

Behold, every *physical* sickness has a *spiritual* reason. Try to find it out.
Don't forget: GOD first, doctors (with all due respect) & medicines (if any) later.

Kindly note: you do not want to tell your *Confessor* any names, places, or dates connected with your sins. Let us not mix up the Sacrament of *Confession* and a Police investigation, okay? The LORD GOD knows all those details, even better than you do. What He & His Servant want of you is your mindful & sincere Repentance. State against what Commandment, one by one, a sin was committed.

The Confessor is supposed to identify *the demonic infections* and help you cast them out of *GOD's Property* (which is you) in the *Promised Name of Lord Jesus*.

And these Signs shall follow them that believe;
In My Name shall they cast out devils ... (Mark 13:6)

Feel free to drop me a line via <*igorevgen@yahoo.com*>.

Sign your *first name*.
The letter will be destroyed right after reading. Your name will be written down and kept for a while to pray over. To save *anything* personal is my last concern.

Last but not least. There are many subjects in this "Q & A" book, written out of *my experience*. *Confession* is one of them. I have no reason to think that what had worked for others before my very eyes cannot work for you.

You have nothing to lose but your sins. May our GOD bless you.

The Ten Commandments.

First – *I am the LORD thy GOD, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before Me.*

Second – *Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of anything that is in Heaven above, or that is in the Earth beneath, or that is in the water under the Earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the LORD thy GOD am a Jealous GOD, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate Me; and shewing Mercy unto thousands of them that love Me, and keep My Commandments.*

Third – *Thou shalt not take the Name of the LORD thy GOD in vain; for the LORD will not hold him guiltless that taketh His Name in vain.*

Fourth – *Remember the Sabbath Day, to keep it Holy. Six days shalt thou labour, and do all thy work: but the Seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD thy GOD: in it thou shalt not do any work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant, nor thy maidservant, nor thy cattle, nor thy stranger that is within thy gates: for in six days the LORD made Heaven and Earth, the sea, and all that in them is, and rested the Seventh day: wherefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath day, and hallowed it.*

Fifth – *Honour thy father and thy mother: that thy days may be long upon the Land which the LORD thy GOD giveth thee.*

Sixth – *Thou shalt not kill.*

Seventh – *Thou shalt not commit adultery.*

Eighth – *Thou shalt not steal.*

Ninth – *Thou shalt not bear false witness against thy neighbour.*

Tenth – *Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's house, thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's wife, nor his manservant, nor his maidservant, nor his ox, nor his ass, nor any thing that is thy neighbour's.*

(Exodus 20:2-17. Repeated in *Deuteronomy 5:6-21.)*

The Eleventh Commandment –

A New Commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another;
as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know
that ye are My Disciples, if ye have Love one to another. (John 13:34-35)

The Twelfth Commandment –

Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father,
and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe all things
whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway,
even unto the End of the World. Amen. (Matthew 28:19-20)

GOD's People Creed –

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our GOD is One LORD:
and thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart,
and with all thy soul, and with all thy might.
And these Words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart:
and thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them
when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way,
and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up.
And thou shalt bind them for a Sign upon thine hand,
and they shall be as Frontlets between thine eyes.
And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates.
(Deuteronomy 6:4-9)

410

Q: In chapter 21, you spoke about the *Christian* approach to *voting*.
In chapter 55, it is stated that a *Christian country* was not fiction.
Okay. What exactly should Believers do for the countries they live in?

A: In chapters 24 (The Will of GOD for us), 43 (The Twelfth Commandment), and 283 (Growing of Local Churches), we also spoke about our following the *Twelfth Commandment* (our Great Commission) to build up the Church of GOD upon the Foundation laid down by our Lord Jesus.

That *Great Commission* is supposed to be accomplished in many ways, our example of Christian Living inclusive.

When we, Christians, behave badly,
or fail to behave well, we are making Christianity unbelievable
to the outside world. (C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.208)

Please note that following the *Twelfth Commandment* is most effective only by keeping the *Eleventh Commandment* as well. Please see the relevant chapter 80.

In chapter 39 and others, which are titled “Spirit War”, we discussed the matters of our Warfare – the most important business, not to be underestimated.

The people of the land have used oppression, and exercised robbery,
and have vexed the poor and needy: Yea, they have oppressed the stranger
wrongfully. And I sought for a man among them, that should make up the Hedge,
and stand in the gap before Me for the land, that I should not destroy it:
but I found none. Therefore have I poured out Mine Indignation upon them;*
I have consumed them with the Fire of My Wrath: their own way have I*
recompensed upon their heads, saith the LORD GOD. (Ezekiel 22:29-31)
* See chapter 64 (GOD’s Punishment).

At the end of chapter 511, *Genesis 18:22-32* is reminded. Verily, it is a weighty argument as to who depends on whom in our countries.

And he said, Behold now, I have taken upon me to speak unto the LORD:
Peradventure there shall be twenty [Righteous] *found there. And He said, I will*
not destroy it for twenty’s sake. And he said, Oh let not the LORD be angry, and
I will speak yet but this once: Peradventure ten [Righteous] *shall be found there.*
And He said, I will not destroy it for ten’s sake. (Genesis 18:31-32)

411

Q: How to understand the Words – *every man a liar* – in *Romans 3:4*?

A: It is written,

> *... what if some did not believe? Shall their unbelief make the Faith of GOD without effect? GOD forbid: Yea, let GOD be True, but every man a liar; as it is written, That Thou mightest be Justified in Thy Sayings, and mightest overcome when Thou art judged. (Romans 3:3-4)*

Notwithstanding that the Scripture is taken from a more complicated context, it is sufficient for our consideration.
In his *Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans*, Brother *John Calvin* wrote,

> *He calls GOD True, not only because He is prepared Faithfully to abide by His Promises, but He accomplishes in Deeds whatever He declares in Words; for He says, "As My Power, so shall My Work be". Man, on the contrary, is a liar, not only because he often breaks his promise, but also by nature he desires falsehood, and avoids Truth. The first position is the primary axiom of the whole Christian philosophy. The latter is taken from Psalm 116:11, where David confesses there is nothing certain, either from man or in man ... for so perverse is man in rejecting or despising the Word of GOD, that he would often doubt its Certainty, if he did not remember that the Truth of GOD depends not on the truth of man ... (pp 152-153)*
>
> To this useful comment, I may add only the obvious: regardless of our knowledge & understanding, we cannot be *True* without or separated from the *Truth of GOD*. The more our words & deeds contradict His Holy Scriptures, the stupider *liars* we are. Note *Matthew 4:4* & *John 6:35,51,63*.

Q: Bible says that one of King David's warriors slew 800 men at one time. How is that possible? I was reading about David's mighty men and their feats and the warrior who killed 800 men with his spear at one time.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: Kindly see chapters 41 & 102 in connection with the Bible Study strategy. Your *common sense* should be in the "off" position when you study the Word. My answer to your question is: the Holy Ghost was with that warrior. Please, read *Zechariah 4:6* and watch a truthful movie, *Hacksaw Ridge*.

412

Q: Brother, should we reject everything the *unbelievers* value, or are there some things *Christians* ought to accept?

A: It is written,

... GOD created Man in His Own Image, in the Image of GOD created He him; male and female created He them. (Genesis 1:27)

That fundamental spiritual Image of GOD in *every* human being is indestructible. Please mind *Ecclesiastes 3:14*.
The devil can (tempt us to) *corrupt* our spirit, yet cannot *recreate* you & me into demons (note *John 10:10*). We can see many loving parents so corrupted as to serve *mammon*. They try their best to make money to buy happiness for their children. The corruption of a spirit, however, might be considerable. That takes place when people resolutely & wholeheartedly choose to serve Satan and destroy the World created by the LORD, our Father.
But there are Godly examples too. Everyone may recollect such Goodness on the part of people who have never believed in the LORD GOD and His Christ, yet are loving & courageous when it comes to saving a life or helping folks in need. Those examples are well worth our accepting, learning from, and following.
I believe that *that* Goodness in people was the reason why,

... GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life. (John 3:16)

Q: Did God give the Law (Commandments) for Justification?. From my understanding, the Law was never given to justify a person. It was only given to show God's Standard of Righteousness. And with that, the Law was given for Sanctification. In other words, Justification & Salvation is obtained from the Law-Giver, not the Law itself.

(Signed: *Christian, non-denominational*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2021.)

A: The Holy Law justifies every person (whether knowing or not the LORD) who lives in line with GOD's Standards of Righteousness. The LORD, our Law-Giver, grants Justification & Salvation to him (her). Kindly read *Genesis 1:27* & *Deuteronomy 30:11-14*. As for "Law-Giver, not the Law itself", these two are indivisible. Mind *John 1:14*.

413

Q: Brother, we continuously experience a lack of time at our Small Group meetings since the last is once a week *18.00 – 20.00 LT* only.
How can we manage to spend it most effectively?

A: Well, *Small Groups* is also the subject of chapters 47, 286, 445, & 595.
Here, we may talk about the *timing*.

First up. All ought to come *prepared* for the subject of discussion planned or the Holy Bible Chapter to be studied.
Come spiritually hungry (as to dine with a friend). Note *2Corinthians 10:5*.

Second up. Don't be late. Yes, you can & should be on time. Remember when you *had* managed that (flights, important meetings, interviews, etc.) regardless of anything. See chapters 68 & 87 for more. Mind your Sacrifice of time.

Do not sacrifice to the LORD your GOD an ox or a sheep
that has any defect or flaw in it, for that would be detestable to Him.
(Deuteronomy 17:1, New International Version)

Third up. No *irrelevant* talks. Mind *1Corinhians 14:26*. Some Small Groups traditionally start with a question, "How did you folks spend the week passed?"
Okay, (at the time of writing this chapter) last week, I continued to study the *Book of Proverbs* and worked on my "Q & A" book. That's all. The rest of my activity is nobody's concern.
Often, when a new person shows up, a Home Group Leader asks him (her) to make an introduction of him (her). Well, (again, at this time), I have been a Christian since 1994. The rest of my life (marriages, divorces, employment, problems, address, &c., &c.) might be discussed at any other time if you please.

Fourth up. Prayers. May it be short (*Matthew 6:7-8*) and thoughtful, at the beginning and the end of your Communion. A Prayer is needful, no doubt about that, but the *spiritual* level of all the participants is very different. And *the strength of every chain is determined by the strength of its weakest link*.
We ought to differentiate between a *Small Group* and a *Prayer Team*.
Kindly see the relevant chapters 73 (True Fast) & 232 (Our Prayer Backup).

You may find well instructive books on the sites of many Christian Ministries.
See our Index section too.

414

Q: Brother, what can you say on the subject of the Right approach to a Prayer? The circumstances might be most inconvenient.

A: Right. We can face such a situation as personal bad mistakes, time pressing, unbelievers crowded around, and so forth.
That's why our *Right Standing with GOD* should be built up *well before* we can find ourselves in whatever adverse conditions. Please note *Mark 9:29*.

For the Eyes of the LORD are over the Righteous, and His Ears are open unto their Prayers: but the Face of the LORD is against them that do evil.
(1Peter 3:12)

The subject of *Righteousness* was discussed in chapters 15, 144, & 161.
There are many walks of life where young people are trained (we called it *drills*) in the circumstances normal & peaceful to get ready to encounter heavier things. We, Christians, are supposed to do the same in quiet hours of Communion with our Heavenly Father through *Bible Study* and *Prayers*.
The LORD and we test ourselves in *Giving to GOD* (chapter 56) and *Works of a Ministry* (chapter 461). It is our spiritual Boot Camp before real Battlefields. There, in the Boot Camp, our Right approach to *Communion with GOD* through Prayer is formed. And, please proclaim & keep *Fast* on every ungodly stuff.

The following Scriptures will better answer your question:
Jeremiah 29:13, John 15:7, 1John 3:21-22, & 1John 5:14-15.

Q: What is the point of Prayer Requests when God *knows* what is best for us?. E.g., to pray for a loved one to be healed or safe in a particular situation.
Q: Wouldn't God act regardless of whether or not someone prayed about it since He alone *knows* what is best for us?

(Signed: *Christian Protestant*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, August 2020.*)*

A: Our LORD GOD does know what is best. He also wants *us* to know His Holy Will for our Life. The best way to accumulate Godly Knowledge is from Communion with GOD, in particular, via His Written Word and Prayer. That way, we can develop our Understanding as for the reasons for physical infirmities and know how to deal Wisely with this or that situation.
Kindly see chapters 24, 32, 58, 67, and the Index section.

Q: It seems like everyone has a relationship with God except for me. I hear a lot about talking to God, but I feel like I can't form a relationship with Him. I want to be close to Him. But when I pray, I feel like I'm talking to a wall. I don't know what to do. I'm scared & frustrated. I don't want to live my whole life lying to myself, thinking I'm Faithful – and, when the time comes, go to hell. What can I do to get closer to God and grow Faith?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

Is not this the Fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? When thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy Light break forth as the morning, and thine Health shall spring forth speedily: and thy Righteousness shall go before thee; the Glory of the LORD shall be thy Rereward. Then shalt thou call, and the LORD shall answer; thou shalt cry, and He shall say, Here I am ... (Isaiah 58:6-9)

Q: Could you please explain to me what is a Sacrifice?
Q: Some say we need to sacrifice to please God. What do they mean, though?
Q: I've done wrong things in the past, and I wanna repent. What I'm doing now is starting to be good to all the people, changing myself for the better, being a good daughter to my parents, being positive, not thinking evil about anyone or anything, spreading Good. Am I right?
Q: But, maybe, that isn't enough. Should I suffer to repent?
Q: Like, stop playing games and doing things that I enjoy. Is that what it is?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Edited.)

A: A Sacrifice is *Giving**. *Repentance** you've written about is also *Sacrifice**. You should be ready to suffer on your Christian Way. However, don't look for suffering. The latter will find you (the evil one will see to it). But GOD is Faithful. He would never allow any *suffering** or *temptation**, which is above our power to endure, to mess with us. Read *1Corinthians 10:13*.
As for the things you've got used to enjoying, they might change as you will discover what the True *Joy** is.

* You may find these subjects in our Index section.
Thank you for the question.

415

Q: It is written,

If ye shall ask any thing in My Name, I will do it.
(John 14:14)

What does that "*any thing*" mean?

A: Good question. That *any thing* means Mighty Backup of our Father GOD to find the Right solution – and that per His Holy Will – to whatever problem we may encounter in Christian Works done by Him through us.

To better understand the Value & Power of the Promised Name *Jesus*, one ought to diligently study all four Gospels.

The following Scriptures teach us about the *Name of Jesus* –

Isaiah 9:6 – Divinely Promised.
Matthew 10:22 – Our Cross.
Matthew 12:32 – The Power of His Forgiving.
Matthew 18:19-20 – The Power of our Prayers.
Matthew 28:19 – The part of our Threefold Baptism.
Mark 16:17-18 – The Power of every Christian Ministry.
Luke 10:17 – The Disciples' Testimony.
Luke 24:47 – Our Great Commission.
John 1:12 – The Power of our Faith.
John 14:12-14 – The Power of our Prayer.
Acts 2:38 – The Power of our Baptism.
Acts 3:6-7,16 – The Healing Power.
Acts 4:12 – The Saving Power.
Acts 10:43 – The Remitting Power.
Ephesians 5:20 – Thanksgiving to our Heavenly Father.
Philippians 2:9-11 – It stands above every name.
Colossians 3:17 – Every Christian conversation & action.
James 5:14-15 – Our Healing Ministry.
1John 3:23 – The Eleventh Commandment.

... the person who is united to the Lord becomes One Spirit with Him.
(1Corinthians 6:17, The Amplified Bible)

You may also see the Index for "Jesus"& "Prayer".

416

Q: How would you interpret *Proverbs 25:21-22*?

A: It is written:

If thine enemy be hungry, give him bread to eat; and if he be thirsty,
give him water to drink: for thou shalt heap coals of Fire upon his head,
and the LORD shall reward thee. (Proverbs 25:21-22)

Taking "*enemy*" for a human wishing or speaking or doing us *evil* and "*give*" for our move to answer that *evil* by doing him (her) *well*, even as Lord Jesus taught, we do our part following the Teaching of GOD and leave the rest unto Him.

> *... Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; that ye may be the Children of your Father which is in Heaven: for He maketh His Sun to rise on the evil and on the Good, and sendeth rain on the Just and on the unjust. Be ye therefore Perfect, even as your Father which is in Heaven is Perfect. (Matthew 5:44,45,48)*
>
> See also *Luke 6:27-38*.

On the contrary, whenever we choose to fight back, we struggle with the devil's *puppet* and leave out *the real enemy* – the *puppet-master*. See *1John 5:18*.

There might also be another interpretation of *Proverbs 25:21-22*.
Take *bread* & *water* for *spiritual* Bread & Water, which the devil always tries to steal (see chapter 225 dedicated to the Parable of Sower), and *hungry* & *thirsty* for the *spiritual* starving state of that *spiritually* blind puppet. Thus following the *Twelfth Commandment* (chapter 43), we advance regardless of whatever tactic of the evil one, who tries to make our neighbors our "enemies".
In both cases, the *coals of Fire upon his head* stay for a self-torment made by that puppet's *conscience* awaken through us by the LORD, our Father.
See *Romans 12:19-21*.

Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come,
Who both will bring to Light the hidden things of darkness,
and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts:
and then shall every man have Praise of GOD. (1Corinthians 4:5)

417

Q: It is written,

As a bird that wandereth from her nest,
so is a man that wandereth from his place. (Proverbs 27:8)

Does it mean we are not supposed to leave our homelands?

A: In my humble opinion, it is not the point.
Please read the resembling discussions in chapters
242 (Switching Congregations) & 484 (Staying where we are).

Watching the world around us, we might agree with *Proverbs 27:8* in its *natural* meaning. There might be many things keeping us attached to our home – family, friends, employment, property, etc. In my experience, the adventures of migrant life and "new beginnings" thereof are far not always pleasant.

However, there is another aspect that overbalances our *common sense*. It is the Holy Will of GOD. The last completely changes the meaning of "*his place"* and "*wandereth from his place"* in the above Scripture.

We do well when asking our Heavenly Father about His Will for our Life.
His Answer might give rise to such a foolish guess of ours – *I could have been much better off if I'd never asked Him at all.* However, in the long run, our LORD GOD is always Right.
Our Home, Church, or Ministry might be right where you & I are or far away.

> *And he went and joined himself to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against Heaven, and before thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had Compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. (Luke 15:15-20)*

Pray your Father GOD that He would let you know His Holy Will for your Life.
See *Jeremiah 29:13* & *33:3*.

418

Q: How would you explain *Proverbs 25:2-3*?

It is the Glory of GOD to conceal a thing:
but the Honour of Kings is to search out a matter.
The Heaven for height, and the Earth for depth,
and the heart of Kings is unsearchable. (Proverbs 25:2-3)

A: The Scripture says about the things pertaining to men of high authority.

It is the Glory of GOD to conceal a thing ...

Why so? And what exactly does the LORD GOD conceal?
He is Holy, and such is His Written Word – all Knowledge & Understanding.
Holy means separated, set apart for a Sacred Purpose. Our Heavenly Father does not separate Himself from *all* humankind, but from the servants of Satan, and that is because *they* had alienated themselves from Him.
That's why, in Wisdom, our Holy Bible is closed up on those characters who serve the devil and turn their backs unto the LORD.

... but the Honour of Kings is to search out a matter.

We can see that *Glory* & *Honour* (Honor) are closely related. But in comparison to Father GOD, all Kings, Queens, Presidents, and other Rulers are supposed to learn the things given them by Him – *Psalms 72:1-2* – unto common well-being, rather than plan & do top-secret evils. May they note *Psalms 33:16-17*.

The Heaven for height, and the Earth for depth ...

The Creation of GOD (*Genesis 1:1*) – the Heaven & the Earth – is Great indeed but *searchable*, at least, theoretically.

... and the heart of Kings is unsearchable.

Are men of high authority so much different from other folks? Nay. All men are made the same by the LORD, our GOD. *Genesis 1:26-28*.

Every government comes up either as a *Blessing* (*Psalms 33:12*) or a *curse* (*1Samuel 8:10-18, Nehemiah 9:33-37, & Hosea 13:11*), whatever the respective nation deserved. See also *Daniel 4:17*.

By the Holy Will of our Father GOD, is vested in men of authority – His Instruments. See *Proverbs 21:1*.

> Therefore, only from the standpoint of pertinent Plans & Purposes of *Unsearchable* GOD for them, the hearts of Rulers are *unsearchable* too. Please, read *Deuteronomy 29:29*.

Q: (1) How to understand *Exodus 21:20-21*?
Q: (2) Is God better in the New Testament than in the Old one?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2021. Edited. Condensed.)

A: (1) It is written:

> *20 ... if a man smite his servant, or his maid, with a rod, and he die under his hand; he shall be surely punished. 21 Notwithstanding, if he continue a day or two, he shall not be punished: for he is his money.*
> *(Exodus 21:20-21, Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition)*

> *20 Anyone who beats their male or female slave with a rod must be punished if the slave dies as a direct result, 21 but they are not to be punished if the slave recovers after a day or two, since the slave is their property. (Exodus 21:20-21, New International Version)*

I found the commentary of Brother *Adam Clarke* most appropriate –

> *If the slave who had been beaten by his master died under his hand, the master was punished by death (Genesis 9:5-6). But if he survived the beating a day or two, the master was not punished, because it might be presumed that the man died through some other cause. And all penal Laws should be construed as favourably as possible to the accused.*
> *(The Holy Bible ... with a Commentary and Critical Notes ... 1843)*

Earlier, in chapter 211, we discussed *Exodus 21:20-21*. Please see.
Questions about *slavery* are also answered in chapters 539, 700, 748 (Q 7), 761.
As for the reason of that evil, we ought to see it in ourselves only, not in the Holy Will of the LORD, our GOD.

(2) Negative on that.
It is written: *... I am the LORD, I change not ... (Malachi 3:6)*

419

Q: Please explain the meaning of the following Scripture.

Two things have I required of Thee; deny me them not before I die:
remove far from me vanity and lies: give me neither poverty nor riches;
feed me with food convenient for me: lest I be full, and deny Thee,
and say, who is the LORD? or lest I be poor, and steal,
and take the Name of my GOD in vain. (Proverbs 30:7-9)

A: This Scripture, along with many others, may be taken as a good example of *Communion with the LORD, our Father* through Prayer.
We can find its parallels to the Lord's Prayer (*Matthew 6:9-13*).

Two things have I required of Thee; deny me them not before I die ...

This line well stands for *Humility*. We might need much more than that to pray for. However, remember *Matthew 6:7-8*.

Remove far from me vanity and lies: give me neither poverty nor riches ...

All vanities & lies are interconnected. Following satanic lies, we get into the worldly traps of either poverty (moral, intellectual, financial) or riches (in those spheres). Pray for the Holy Will of GOD as per *Matthew 6:10*.

... feed me with Food convenient for me ...

These Words are most important here. See *Matthew 6:11* as the best Parallel – in both Scriptures, the *Spirit Bread* is the point. I reject all teachings on the contrary.

Lest I be full, and deny Thee, and say, Who is the LORD?

That is the position of the so-called "mighty of this world", who believe only in the power of the military, money, human brains, &c. Trust *Matthew 6:13* instead.

... or lest I be poor, and steal, and take the Name of my GOD in vain.

However, opposite outwardly, this position is of the same *godlessness* inside. The stupid cry of brains fooled around by the devil (and robbed by his servants in the natural) is, "how God allows all that?" Consider *Matthew 6:9,12,13*.

Anyone who is honestly trying to be a Christian will soon find his intelligence being sharpened: one of the reasons why it needs no special education to be a Christian is that Christianity is an Education itself.
(C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.78)

References.

Deuteronomy 8:3 & Matthew 4:4 ---- Spiritual Bread.
Isaiah 30:20-21 & John 6:48,63 ----- The Bread Promised.
Jeremiah 33:3 ---------- The Promised Food for a soul.
John 4:34 ---------- The Food of Charity.
Romans 10:17 ---------- Word – Hearing – Faith.

Q: In *Genesis 22*, the LORD sent an Angel to prevent Abraham from sacrificing his child to God. In *Judges 11*, He didn't intervene when it came to sacrificing Jephthah's child.
Why didn't God save Jephthah's daughter like Isaac? Thanks.
(Signed: Christian.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: To begin with,
There is no wisdom nor understanding nor counsel against the LORD. (Proverbs 21:30)

Far as I understand, there were two different Reasons in *Genesis 22* & *Judges 11*.
In *Genesis 21:12*, GOD promised: "*in Isaac shall thy seed be called*".
Therefore, what happened in *Genesis 22* followed that Promise.
In *Judges 11:31*, Jephthah made a foolish vow to the LORD. The stupidity was punished and the Lesson given.
Death and Life are in the power of the tongue: and they that love it shall eat the fruit thereof. (Proverbs 18:21)

Please also note that the word "save" in your question has two meanings: to rescue from *physical death* and deliver from *death eternal*. Thank you.

Q: Would the discovery of extraterrestrial life or intelligence undermine God?
(Signed: Christian.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: No. And no such a discovery. *Genesis Chapter 1*. See chapter 649 (Q 36).

420

Q: How do you understand the following Scripture?

... He hath set the World in their heart, so that no man can find out the Work that GOD maketh from the Beginning to the End. (Ecclesiastes 3:11)

A: We ought to consider this Scripture within the relevant text.

He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also He hath set the World in their heart, so that no man can find out the Work that GOD maketh from the Beginning to the End. I know that there is no Good in them, but for a man to rejoice, and to do Good in his Life. And also that every man should eat and drink, and enjoy the Good of all his labour, it is the Gift of GOD. I know that, whatsoever GOD doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it: and GOD doeth it, that men should fear before Him. (Ecclesiastes 3:11-14)*

* Young's Literal Translation: ... *in its season* ...
The Amplified Bible: ... *in its time* ...

As the LORD GOD is Able, so He did create everything Perfect. *Genesis 1:31*. His Great Creation includes Time. And Divine Timing – the only Right Time for everything – is a Part of GOD's Perfection. Whatever *imperfection*, if any, is the direct result of the activity or passivity of humankind, not our Father GOD. Parallels: *Genesis 1:26-28 & Psalms 115:16*. Chapters 36, 312, & 313.

The Amplified Bible:

... He also has planted Eternity in men's hearts and minds [a Divinely implanted sense of a Purpose working through the ages which nothing under the Sun but GOD alone can satisfy], yet so that men cannot find out what GOD has done from the Beginning to the End. (Ecclesiastes 3:11)

That *World* created by our Heavenly Father in our hearts is to comprehend *Good* and *evil* within the limits of a lifespan and personal GOD-given abilities. Parallels: *Proverbs 25:2*; *Micah 6:8*; *Luke 17:21*.

I know that there is no Good in them, but for a man to rejoice, and to do Good in his Life.*

* The Amplified Bible: ... *there is nothing better for them than* ...

Living without GOD, the unbelieving folks (if they care about our Holy Bible at all) understand the above *Ecclesiastes 3:11-14* their worldly selfish way.
Psalms 37:27, Proverbs 2:6, & James 1:5, and "Q & A" chapters 40, 41, & 58.

> *And also that every man should eat and drink, and enjoy the Good of all his labour, it is the Gift of GOD.*

Yet, without GOD & His Right *spiritual* meat, it is hard to do and enjoy any Good. Read *Deuteronomy 8:3, Matthew 4:4, James 1:17,* "Q & A" chapter 419.

> *I know that, whatsoever GOD doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it: and GOD doeth it, that men should fear before Him.*
>
> This Rule applies to all (physical & spiritual Realms of) Creation of the LORD, regardless of our Obedience or disobedience to Him, and determines human well-being & his (her) Account on Judgment Day.
> By this Scripture, such terms as *Fear of GOD* or *GOD-fearing* can be well explained. We can take "*fear before*" for "*love*".
> Parallel: *Psalms 96:10-13*.
> Kindly see the relevant chapters: 134 (Nature) & 144 (Fear of GOD).

Q: What does it mean to live by Faith (*Galatians 2:20*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: It is written:

I am crucified with Christ: nevertheless I live; yet not I,
but Christ liveth in me: and the Life which I now live in the flesh
I live by the Faith of the Son of GOD ,*
Who loved me, and gave Himself for me. (Galatians 2:20)

* By New International Version, "*in the Son of GOD*".

Even so, *live by the Faith in the Son of GOD.*
It means to believe in the Love of our Heavenly Father and the Cross of Christ. Our Father GOD forgave us, and His Son Jesus paid for all our sins & errors. All our consequent troubles, weaknesses, infirmities, sicknesses, etc., were taken on the Cross so long ago. Accept that and welcome our God Holy Spirit in your heart. And live the New Life. Thank you.

421

Q: Back to chapter 9, how would you explain
Psalms 18:34 & *144:1* versus *Zechariah 4:6* & *Ephesians 6:10-17*?

A: I'd like to explain the first Scriptures in the Light of the second.
It is written,

The LORD is my Rock, and my Fortress, and my Deliverer; my GOD, my Strength, in Whom I will trust; my Buckler, and the Horn of my Salvation, and my High Tower. I will call upon the LORD, Who is Worthy to be praised: so shall I be saved from mine enemies. (Psalms 18:2-3)

Then the Psalmist wrote,

He teacheth my hands to war,
so that a bow of steel is broken by mine arms. (Psalms 18:34)

Blessed be the LORD my Strength, which teacheth my hands to war, and my fingers to fight: My Goodness, and my Fortress; my High Tower, and my Deliverer; my Shield, and He in Whom I trust; Who subdueth my people under me. (Psalms 144:1-2)

Brother David was a mighty warrior. He believed his Father GOD would deliver him, this or that way, be it by the courage and power of his faithful friends or without any *military* at all.
As a *Prophet*, King David was not necessarily supposed to comprehend fully the *Prophecies of the LORD* spoken through him.
That's why *Psalms 18:34* & *144:1** are parallel to *Ephesians 6:10-17* (*the whole Armour of GOD*) and in no way contradict *Zechariah 4:6* –

... Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit, saith The LORD of Hosts. (Zechariah 4:6)

* Kindly find "Praying Hands" by Albrecht Durer on
https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Praying_Hands_(Dürer) – June 2026.
In my opinion, it is the best way of interpreting *Psalms 18:34*.

The LORD hear thee in the day of trouble; the Name of the GOD of Jacob defend thee ... Some trust in chariots, and some in horses: but we will remember the Name of the LORD our GOD. They are brought down and fallen: but we are risen, and stand upright. (Psalms 20:1,7,8)

422

Q: *Orthodox* and *Catholic* Churches call other Christians "sectarians". What do we have to answer them?

A: You may quote *Matthew 12:36* or *Romans 2:1*.
Or be *silent* as per *Psalms 39:1-2* & *Matthew 27:14*.
Or else, follow the *Holy Spirit of GOD* as per *Luke 12:12*.

When *questioned* by Orthodox, Catholic, or other denominationists and finding yourself in a *polite* discussion with them, you ought to point out the following.

1. The wrong of "God's Mother".

Matthew 2:11 – Those good men worshiped the *Son of GOD* only.

Matthew 12:48-50, Mark 3:33-35, Luke 8:21, & John 19:26-27 – Jesus' Words.

Luke 1:28,42 – Blessed art thou among women ...

Luke 10:22 – ... no man knoweth Who the Son is, but the Father ...

John 1:2 – The same was in the Beginning with GOD.

John 3:6 – That which is born of the flesh is flesh ...

John 3:31 – He that cometh from Above is above all ...

1John 5:20-21 – Knowledge of GOD is through the *Son of GOD*. No idolatry!

Nowhere in the Holy Scriptures is written to worship the "Mother of God". Neither is said there to worship Saints or Angels or build them Temples.

2. The false worship.

Leviticus 10:1-3; Numbers 3:4 & 26:61 – The strange fire.

Isaiah 61:8 – A lie & robbery by offering money under a pressure.

Ezekiel 33:31-32 – A faithless attending Church Services.

3. The evil of idolatry: Orthodoxy *icons* & Catholic *statues*.

Exodus 20:4-6 & Deuteronomy 5:8-10 – The Second Commandment of Law.

Leviticus 19:4; 26:1; Deuteronomy 4:12,15,16; 16:22; & Isaiah 42:8; John 4:22-24 & Acts 17:29 – GOD's Teaching & Command.

John 14:16 & 1Timothy 2:5 – Don't hold *idols* as "intermediates" in Worship.

Romans 1:22-23,25 & 2Corinthians 6:16 – The Apostolic Teaching.

Hebrews 12:1 – Insulting the memory of Saints by undue worshiping them.

Exodus 23:24, 2Kings 18:4, Ezekiel 20:7, 2Kings 18:4, & Hosea 13:2 – Destroy.

Micah 5:13 – All images will be destroyed by the LORD GOD.

1Thessalonians 5:21 – Prove all things.

Orthodox and *Catholic* Believers pray "God's Mother" to get *physically* healed. It's possible. We discussed the matter in chapter 81.

They take a pilgrimage to Lourdes (France) for healing. But note *Isaiah 55:6*.
(*https://www.spiritualtravels.info* – June 2026. Is it not too far?)

They carry "Holy Fire" from Jerusalem to their Temples and homes.
(*https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Holy_Fire* – June 2026.)
What for? To place it before *idols*?

Don't we have a better Fire? See *Matthew 3:11*.
Read chapter 310 (Fire Baptism).

Kindly note the abilities of *Satan* written in *Matthew 24:24; Mark 13:22; Revelation 13:14, 16:14, & 19:20*.

Don't underestimate your *enemy*. See *2Corinthians 4:4*.
Consider "Q & A" chapter 36 (The power of Satan).

Last but not least: those Believers are wrong, okay, but who is not?

423

Q: What is your opinion as for the ministries of *Watchtower Witnesses* (known as, *J... Witnesses*) and *Mormons* (a.k.a., *Latter Days Saints*)?

A: My opinion is negative on both. Kindly read chapter 84 (My Church).

Watchtower Witnesses – the name they officially call themselves contradicts the Third Commandment of the Holy Law, so, let us omit it here – are called by many Christians a *non-Christian organization*. By misspelling, those "witnesses" take the Name of GOD in vain. They also deny the *Holy Ghost* as the Third Person of One Triune GOD. Instead, the "witnesses" use the term "*Power of God*". But note *Matthew 28:19* speaking right against that false doctrine.
They accept only *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures* (NWT), which includes the comments I cannot go for and which, as it seems to me, distort the Truth of the LORD and deprive Believers of personal Communion with Him.

Mormons – "The Church of Jesus Christ of Latter Days Saints" – actually distribute around *another gospel* (named, "The Book of Mormon"). Note: that heretic action is strictly prohibited by *2Corinthians 11:3-4 & Galatians 1:8-9*.
Their founder (one Joseph Smith) saw but a deceitful vision staged by Satan. That event corresponded to *2Corinthians 11:14* (the context of *Verses 13-15*).

Communicating occasionally with *Watchtower Witnesses* and *Mormons*, I cannot help thinking that they wish well to their audience. Therefore, as I spoke at the end of our previous chapter, let us not underestimate the enemy, which is Satan. His obvious strategy in those lying "ministries" is not a bold dismissal but a camouflaged distortion of Truth. As for a total denial, the condemned one has achieved it in *scientific atheism* versus *religious fanatics* – another puppet-show.

Woe unto you, ... hypocrites!
for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made,
ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves. (Matthew 23:15)

If any man preach any other gospel unto you than that ye have received,
let him be accursed. (Galatians 1:9)

If there come any unto you, and bring not this Doctrine,
receive him not into your house, neither bid him 'God speed': for he
that biddeth him 'God speed' is partaker of his evil deeds. (2John 1:10-11)

424

Q: How would you interpret the following Scripture?

Keep thy foot when thou goest to the House of GOD,
and be more ready to hear, than to give the sacrifice of fools:
for they consider not that they do evil. (Ecclesiastes 5:1)

A: The most instructive Scriptures are not that popular, are they?

Keep thy foot when thou goest to the House of GOD ...

When planning to attend a Local Church Service, Small Group, or whatever other Christian Meeting or Assembly, we ought to get prepared for that event.
We should know the subject(s) of Sermon(s) or discussion(s), take enough time to meditate on that or those, study the relevant Scriptures and personal notes.
Leave behind your mobiles but not Tithing and/or Offering. *2Chronicles 7:12*.
Leave home for *the House of GOD* in ample time. Better be there one hour in advance than one minute late (*Psalms 69:9*).
Mind your dress-code natural & spiritual (*Ezekiel 44:18-19*).
Avoid coming in a hurry.
Do not attend at all when "very busy" or "no time" to well gear up yourself.

... be more ready to hear, than to give the sacrifice of fools ...

It is about the *spiritual hearing* as per *Isaiah 30:21*. To hear that way, get yourself ready, as it is pointed out above.
For "*the sacrifice of fools"* means to do everything on the contrary.
Note the definition for a "*fool"* per *Psalms 14:1*.
Second, it is much better to *hear* a good admonishing Sermon than to give some "lullaby" preaching at the expense of common Time-Sacrifice.
Kindly read chapter 68 (The Sacrifice of time).

... for they consider not that they do evil.

What *evil*? Firstly, it is self-inflicted. That includes families, where bad examples are set for kids. Sowing & reaping, you know. *Isaiah 56:7*.
Secondly, it is about the Congregations, which make *fools* (per *Ecclesiastes 5:1*) "Members". How come? As we made it clear at the end of chapter 413, "*the strength of every chain is determined by the strength of its weakest link"*.

425

Q: Do you think that by sorting out priorities, we should put the Church or Ministry *above* our families & homes?

A: No, I don't think so. These Values are different, the *Family* being first. Leaving GOD and His Church "for the Family", we stop being Christians. Leaving our Families "for the Church", we become religious fanatics. See chapter 15 (GOD First). Let us study *Ephesians 5:22-33*.

> *22 Wives, submit yourselves unto your own Husbands, as unto the Lord. 23 For the Husband is the Head of the Wife, even as Christ is the Head of the Church: and He is the Saviour of the Body. 24 Therefore as the Church is Subject unto Christ, so let the Wives be to their own Husbands in every thing.*

Here "*submit unto*" does not mean "*forget for*". The LORD, our Father, does not bless only Husbands by Revelation Knowledge and single them out at the expense of their Wives. See chapter 147 (Intuition). And "*as unto*" means GOD & (in Him) Family are our Highest Values.

> *25 Husbands, love your Wives, even as Christ also loved the Church, and gave Himself for it; 26 That He might sanctify and cleanse it with the Washing of Water by the Word, 27 That He might present it to Himself a Glorious Church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be Holy and without blemish.*

For a Husband to love his Wife as *Jesus, the Christ* loves His Church means to take the best care of her *spiritual* & *natural* Health. See *1Peter 3:7.* And again, as in *Verse 22*, mind "*even as*".

> *28 So ought Men to love their Wives as their own bodies. He that loveth his Wife loveth himself. 29 For no man ever yet hated his own flesh; but nourisheth and cherisheth it, even as the Lord the Church: 30 For we are Members of His Body, of His Flesh, and of His Bones. 31 For this cause shall a Man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his Wife, and they two shall be One flesh.**

* Read the same in *Genesis 2:24*. See the parallel in *1Corinthians 6:17*.

Therefore a Man will leave his father and mother and remain with his Wife, and the two will become One. (Ephesians 5:31, Complete Jewish Bible)

32 This Mystery [of two becoming One] is Great; but I am speaking with reference to [the relationship of] Christ and the Church. 33 However, each Man among you [without exception] is to love his Wife as his very own self [with behavior worthy of respect and esteem, always seeking the best for her with an attitude of Lovingkindness], and the Wife [must see to it] that she respects and delights in her Husband [that she notices him and prefers him and treats him with loving concern, treasuring him, honoring him, and holding him Dear]. (Ephesians 5:32-33, The Amplified Bible.)

32 This is a Great Mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the Church.
33 Nevertheless let every one of you in particular so love his Wife even as himself; and the Wife see that she reverence her Husband. (Ephesians 5:32-33, Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition)

Christ Jesus loved the *Church*, which had not yet existed. By His Ultimate Offering, He *proved* that Love. Jesus paid the Price for redeeming us from sin. He reconciled us with GOD unto the Life Eternal, consecrated us as His Chosen People, and purified us by the Word of Truth like the washing of water.

Every Local Church stands firm if powered by all her Members.
(Again, *the strength of a chain is determined by the strength of its weakest link*.)
That needful spiritual investment of every Member largely depends on the spiritual Health of his (her) family.
That's why Apostle Paul had made such stress upon a *Christian Family*.

The Salvation of spouses steadfastly stands on their mutual Love & the Discipline contingent on total subjection to the *Holy Ghost*. Only then Christians may call this earthly abode *"our Home"*. And in their Salvation, they are inseparable. Please, note *Acts 16:31*.
Our families should be based upon *Godly Love**, which *never fails*, and not upon *the love of this world**, which demands worldly riches heaped up under the influence of mammon & common sense.
* These two – *Godly* and *worldly* – cannot coexist under one roof.

... the LORD hath been Witness between thee and the Wife of thy youth, against whom thou hast dealt treacherously: yet is she thy Companion, and the Wife of thy Covenant. And did not He make One? Yet had He the residue of the spirit. And wherefore One? That He might seek a Godly seed. Therefore take heed to your spirit, and let none deal treacherously against the Wife of his youth. (Malachi 2:14-15)

426

Q: Could you please explain *Ecclesiastes 7:1-4*?

A: Let us study the Scripture together and listen to the *Holy Spirit of GOD*.

> *1. A Good name is better than precious ointment; and the day of death than the day of one's birth.*

The two parts of this Verse may be seen from two viewpoints each.
The first part. From a *worldly* viewpoint, a *good name* means reputation. The last depends on the office held and determines the cost of a funeral. From a *Godly* viewpoint, *Good name* is *Christian* and that in the Eyes of *GOD*, not men.
The second part. From a worldly standpoint, the Scripture is reasonless. For a Christian, *the day of birth* means more in a New Birth in Christ than in a natural, though it is too early to be sure of *Salvation* coming. The *day of death*, on the other hand, is okay (*Thy Will be done*) if the *Kingdom of Heaven* is right ahead.

> *2 It is better to go to the house of mourning, than to go to the house of feasting ...*

There is at least one good reason to do that: speak the *Word of Truth*.
In our lands, we have a *stupid* custom at a memorial dinner. People drink a toast "Kingdom of Heaven" without a bit of Knowledge of the True meaning thereof.
We ought to give a try to make due *corrections* to such "well-wishes" and remind the Words of Christ in *Matthew 12:36-37*. Preach that and fear not.
As for the *Kingdom of Heaven*, following the Great Commission, Christians are supposed to preach the Way of Repentance to those *alive*. Note *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
For so many foolishly think that an honorable Priest-attended funeral is a sure way to Heaven. (Kindly see chapter 12.) Yet, *the house of mourning* might stand for any loss, not only that of life. In this regard, the relevant *Word of GOD* (say, *Matthew 6:19-21*) spoken by well-learned Christian cannot be overestimated.

> *... for that is the End of all men; and the living will lay it to his heart.*

The Knowledge is revealed here: as we all are created in the Image & Likeness of GOD, there are no such folks as *absolute* unbelievers. You can find massive Satan-inspired atheistic lies on the Internet and other media, but even those fools who make dirty money on promoting those lies lay some Truth to their hearts.
What exactly do they consider? The Eternity and personal destiny therein. Why? Just because thus saith the LORD. Note *Jeremiah 23:29*.

3 Sorrow is better than laughter: for by the sadness of the countenance the heart is made better.

Verse 3 does not deprive us of True Joy. However, the latter cannot dwell in our soul when *Godly sorrow* steps in. But how can that sorrow help us?
Joy (Godly and worldly) is quite a peaceful, relaxed state of mind, yet for very different respective reasons.
Sorrow (again, Godly and worldly) presumes the hard work of the mind, the corresponding directions thereof being also different. Note *Jeremiah 22:10*.
Only the Holy Ghost can lead our mind to Righteousness, whether in Godly Joy or Sorrow, as our heart is opened unto Him.

4 The heart of the Wise is in the house of mourning; but the heart of fools is in the house of mirth.

Every *fool* can support mourning or festivity, especially if drinks are served.
But,

... Godly Sorrow worketh Repentance to Salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death. (2Corinthians 7:10)

Therefore, it is *the house of mourning* where the Servant of our Father GOD – bringing the Words of Truth & Consolation – ought to be most welcome.
We should remind mourning folks of the following Words of the Lord.

Following Him was a large crowd of the people, including women who were mourning and wailing for Him. But Jesus, turning toward them, said, "Daughters of Jerusalem, do not weep for Me, but weep for yourselves and for your children. For behold, the days are coming when they will say, 'Blessed are the barren, and the wombs that have not given birth, and the breasts that have never nursed.' Then they will begin to say to the mountains, 'Fall on us!' and to the hills, 'Cover us!' For if they do these things when the tree is green, what will happen when it is dry?" [A Proverb meaning, *if the innocent has to suffer what will happen to the guilty*.] *(Luke 23:27-31, The Amplified Bible)*

Even so,

Enter ye in at the Strait Gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: because Strait is the Gate, and Narrow is the Way, which leadeth unto Life, and few there be that find it. (Matthew 7:13-14)

427

Q: What does outward change mean in *Ecclesiastes 8:1*?

A: We have to consider this Scripture along with some Parallels.

And he was there with the LORD forty days and forty nights; he did neither eat bread, nor drink water. And he wrote upon the Tables the Words of the Covenant, the Ten Commandments. And it came to pass, when Moses came down from mount Sinai with the Two Tables of Testimony in Moses' hand, when he came down from the mount, that Moses wist not that the skin of his face shone while He talked with him. And when Aaron and all the children of Israel saw Moses, behold, the skin of his face shone; and they were afraid to come nigh him. (Exodus 34:28-30)

Who is as the Wise man? And who knoweth the Interpretation of a thing?
A man's Wisdom maketh his face to shine,
and the boldness of his face shall be changed. (Ecclesiastes 8:1)

And, behold, there was a great earthquake: for the Angel of the LORD descended from Heaven, and came and rolled back the stone from the door, and sat upon it. His countenance was like lightning, and his raiment white as snow ... (Matthew 28:2-3)

... He [Jesus] *took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray. And as He prayed, the fashion of His countenance was altered, and His raiment was white and glistering. (Luke 9:28-29)*

And all that sat in the Council, looking stedfastly on him [Stephen], *saw his face as it had been the face of an Angel. (Acts 6:15)*

Scripturally or spiritually, the above Verses might be explained by *Genesis 1:4*. That way, we can single out (that Light on the faces of) *Christians* in a crowd. *Naturally* or practically, our faces, the eyes, in particular, reflect the character.

In *Ecclesiastes 8:1*, the level of *Love*, *Faith*, *Hope*, *Knowledge*, *Understanding*, and *Wisdom* of a Believer is manifested by *Peace*, which makes that change. Notwithstanding any outward manifestations which can be observed by humans, the source thereof, even our *heart attitude*, is very well seen by *evil spirits*, so that *1Jonh 5:18* might be fulfilled. That, as it seems to me, is most important.

428

Q: *Ecclesiastes 10:2* runs,

A wise man's heart is at his right hand;
but a fool's heart at his left.

What is our Teaching here?

A: Kindly read the following comment of Brother Adam Clarke.

> *As the right hand is ordinarily the best exercised, strongest, and most ready, and the left the contrary, they show, 1. The command which the Wise man has over his own mind, feelings, passions, &c., and the prudence with which he acts. And, 2. The want of prudence and management in the fool, who has no restraint on his passions, and no rule or guard upon his tongue. The right hand and the left are used in Scripture to express Good and evil. The Wise man is always employed in doing Good, the fool, in nonsense or evil.*
> *(Adam Clarke, The Holy Bible with a Commentary ... vol.3, p.831.)*

As psychologists say, our memory center is in the left brain, and the imagination one in the right. Consequently, people unconsciously glance to *their left* when remembering things and to *their right* when they lie. That's what the worldly-wise folks might use when they talk on business and watch one another.

What can a *Christian* say to that – speak *Truth* or keep *quiet* – what? Read the following Scriptures. They don't contradict our Good Rule, even listening to and following the Holy Ghost. When He is silent, so be you to avoid blasphemy.

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our GOD is One LORD: and thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. And these Words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: and thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt bind them for a Sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as Frontlets between thine eyes. And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates. (Deuteronomy 6:4-9)

This Book of the Law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way Prosperous, and then thou shalt have Good Success. (Joshua 1:8)

429

Q: What does *Ecclesiastes 11:3* teach on?

A: Let's read the Scripture and good commentary of Brother Adam Clarke.

If the clouds be full of rain, they empty themselves upon the earth:
and if the tree fall toward the south, or toward the north,
in the place where the tree falleth, there it shall be. (Ecclesiastes 11:3)

... Act as the clouds ; when they are full they pour out their water indifferently on the field and on the desert. By giving Charity indiscriminately, it may be that thou wilt often give it to the unworthy ; but thou shouldst ever consider that he is an object of thy Charity, who appears to be in real want : and better relieve or give to a hundred worthless persons, than pass by one who is in real distress ... Death is at no great distance ; thou hast but a short time to do Good. Acquire a Heavenly Disposition while here ; for there will be no change after this Life. If thou die in the Love of GOD, and in the love of man, in that state wilt thou be found in the Day of Judgment. If a tree about to fall lean to the north, to the north it will fall ; if to the south, it will fall to that quater. In whatsoever disposition or state of soul thou diest, in that thou wilt be found in the Eternal World. Death refines nothing, purifieth nothing, kills no sin, helps to no Glory. Let thy continual bent and inclination be to GOD, to Holiness, to Charity, to Mercy, and to Heaven : then, fall when thou mayest, thou will fall well.

(Adam Clarke, The Holy Bible with a Commentary ... vol.3, p.834)

These comments are well acceptable & welcome since the meaning of the above *Verse 3* is sequential to that of the preceding *Verses*:

Cast thy Bread upon the waters: for thou shalt find it after many days.
Give a portion to seven, and also to eight; for thou knowest not what evil
shall be upon the Earth. (Ecclesiastes 11:1-2)

These Verses – *Ecclesiastes 11:1-3* – are parallel to the *Golden Rule of the New Testament* –

... as ye would that men should do to you,
do ye also to them likewise. (Luke 6:31)

430

Q: Reading the Book of *Ecclesiastes*, we encounter many passages that seemingly *contradict* one another. How to understand that?

A: Meditating on *Ecclesiastes*, kindly note: the Book is the Meditation itself.

Since long ago, reading and trying to reason it out, I could not help thinking that these Writings reflected two contradictory viewpoints: *Eternal Law of GOD* and *common sense of men*. Take, for instance, *Ecclesiastes 1:18*,

... in much wisdom is much grief:
and he that increaseth knowledge increaseth sorrow.

From a mere worldly pessimistic viewpoint, the more mundane information (knowledge) one acquires, the less he (she) believes its worthiness. The practical use (wisdom) of that info (in the long run) brings only disappointment one comes up with. And, believe it those folks or not, the reason is simple: Satan is a liar.
So, what is the assumption worldly folks may come to? The Scripture is correct.
But what is the worldly opinion on True Knowledge & Wisdom? "No, thanks."
Why? "It's unreasonable." Unbelievers would stay on their pessimistic reasoning.
From a Believer's standpoint, the Scripture is also correct. However, it does not disappoint Christians. Why? Many Scriptures may answer, e.g., *Matthew 5:3-12*.

> *The more we know of ourselves the less satisfied shall we be with our own hearts; and the more we know of mankind the less willing shall we be to trust them, and the less shall we admire them.*
>
> *(Adam Clarke, The Holy Bible ...*
> *with a Commentary and Critical Notes ... vol.3, p.809)*

The same idea can be found, say, in *Ecclesiastes 12:12*.

Please also note that the Holy Prophets of the LORD (even those who wrote down the Holy Scriptures dictated to them by the Holy Ghost) were not supposed to understand everything they heard. We can comprehend more, provided we would listen. In this regard, you may read the informative books of Brother Grant R. Jeffrey – "The Signature Of GOD" and "The Handwriting Of GOD".

King Solomon was blessed with *intellectual abilities* surpassing those of any human ever lived. However, that Gift of GOD ought not to be confused with *Knowledge & Understanding & Wisdom*, the subjects discussed in chapter 58.

Freedom to use & direct that Gift – by the Holy Will & Wisdom of GOD – had been given to Brother Solomon as well as unto all people.

> *I communed with mine own heart, saying, Lo, I am come to great estate, and have gotten more wisdom than all they that have been before me in Jerusalem: yea, my heart had great experience of wisdom and knowledge. And I gave my heart to know wisdom, and to know madness and folly: I perceived that this also is vexation of spirit. (Ecclesiastes 1:16-17)*

We considered Brother Solomon's wisdom in chapter 137 (The number 666).

May we never forget that the level of *Knowledge* & *Understanding* – the very best of every human intellect – has nothing to do with any personal achievement. It is the *Gift* the LORD our Father has blessed us with.

> That Blessing is totally at our disposal. And yes, it is left with our *Free will* (our another Blessing) what to do with that Gift. We are free to develop it on by Good Guidance of the Holy Ghost and in Wisdom serve our Heavenly Father & His People, or pollute it with the reason of this evil world.

Q: *2Kings 6:1-7*. What is the meaning of this story? One possible Parallel is with Moses in *Exodus 15:25*, where he threw the log into the bitter water, and it becomes sweet. But I don't know what to make of that if anything.
Q: I also don't understand the meaning of the ax *borrowed*, which seems to be the word used in most translations.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: For the sake of brevity, let me take the core of the story.

> *... when they came to Jordan, they cut down wood. But as one was felling a beam, the axe head fell into the water: and he cried, and said, Alas, Master! for it was borrowed. And the Man of GOD said, Where fell it? And he shewed him the place. And he cut down a stick, and cast it in thither; and the iron did swim. Therefore said he, Take it up to thee. And he put out his hand, and took it. (2Kings 6:4-7)*

In my opinion, *borrowed* is the keyword here. The laborer had Honesty & Responsibility in his heart. And the LORD valued that.
Exodus 15:25 is one of many Parallels regarding the Miracle-working Power of GOD. As for Honesty, kindly see *Psalms 37:21* & *Romans 13:8*.

431

Q: How are we supposed to implement *Matthew 26:6-13*?

A: *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* runs:

> *6 Now when Jesus was in Bethany, in the house of Simon the leper, 7 There came unto Him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on His head, as He sat at meat. 8 But when His Disciples saw it, they had indignation, saying, To what purpose is this waste? 9 For this ointment might have been sold for much, and given to the poor. 10 When Jesus understood it, He said unto them, Why trouble ye the woman? For she hath wrought a Good Work upon Me. 11 For ye have the poor always with you; but Me ye have not always. 12 For in that she hath poured this ointment on My body, she did it for My burial. 13 Verily I say unto you, Wheresoever this Gospel shall be preached in the whole World, there shall also this, that this woman hath done, be told for a Memorial of her.*

The Scripture has these Parallels: *Mark 14:3-9* & *John 12:1-8*. Taken as three narrations of one event, they form a Perfect Harmony and Good Teaching.

Verse 6. We are not supposed to fear whatever dangerous disease, even *leprosy*, when being led by Father GOD into His Good Works.

Verses 7 & *12*. Her name was Mary (*John 12:3*). In Jesus' three-year Ministry, the event was unique. What should be learned & followed is walking in *Faith* and keeping *the reason of the world* at arm's length.
You may see chapters 41 (Common sense) & 99 (A cup of water).

For Thou desirest not Sacrifice; else would I give it:
Thou delightest not in Burnt Offering. The Sacrifices of GOD
are a Broken spirit: a Broken and a Contrite heart, O GOD,
Thou wilt not despise. (Psalms 51:16-17)

Verses 8-9. The *indignation* came from Satan via Judas Iscariot (*John 12:4-6*) and infected other Disciples (*Mark 14:4*).
The Lesson is: evil arguments & divisions will be (*Acts 20:30*), do not marvel.
As our Lord Jesus stopped it (*Verses 10-13*), let us also do it by His Word (as per *Verse 13*). Shut up the lying voice of *common sense* when it comes to Sacrifices.
Remember *Ephesians 6:17*.

Verse 10. It is the *Holy Ghost*, our Promised Teacher & Guide (*John 14:16,26*), we should always listen to. Thus we can tell the Truth of the LORD from the lie of Satan. Thus we see Good Works & Right Sacrifices from a mere dissipation of power, time, money. We ought to pray for more Knowledge & Understanding.

Verse 11. We'll always have around those asking for financial help or support or donations. Yet, that help should always correspond to the Scripture –

Verily I say unto you, Inasmuch as ye have done it unto one of the least of these My Brethren, ye have done it unto Me. (Matthew 25:40)

Mind the Words *My Brethren* there. Amen. Kindly differentiate between poor and lazy, needy and thief, Giving and scattering, Sacrificing and dumping.

Place your bread [and your wine] on the grave of the Righteous, but give none to sinners. (Apocrypha, Tobit 4:17, Revised Standard Version, 1952)

Give to the Godly man, but do not help the sinner. Do Good to the Humble, but do not give to the ungodly ... Give to the Good man, but do not help the sinner. (Apocrypha, Sirach 12:4,5,7, Revised Standard Version, 1952)

Verse 12. What is written about Jesus' burial? Compare the following Scriptures:

... He made His grave with the wicked, and with the rich in His death ... (Isaiah 53:9)

There came unto Him a woman having an alabaster box of very precious ointment, and poured it on His head ... (Matthew 26:7)

Isaiah 53:9 was confirmed by *Matthew 26:7* & *27:57-60*.
Note also that Sacrificial Giving is the best Proof of Love. See chapter 56.

... prove the Sincerity of your Love. (2Corinthians 8:8)

Verse 13. The Words of our Lord Jesus have been fulfilled once again in this discussion. Every Memorial to every Good Work done by the LORD through His Servants is to the Glory of our GOD.

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above, and cometh down from the Father of Lights, with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. (James 1:17)

432

Q: It is written,

Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils:
Freely ye have received, Freely give. (Matthew 10:8)

The question is: how are we supposed to do it?

A: To begin with, it is a matter of *Faith* of Ministers and their audience in the Healing Power of GOD (see *Matthew 9:28-30*).

And, behold, they brought to Him a man sick of the palsy, lying on a bed: and Jesus seeing their Faith said unto the sick of the palsy; Son, be of Good Cheer; thy sins be forgiven thee. (Matthew 9:2)

How can we possibly "see" Faith? – Surely, it is the same way we can "watch" a wind by the signs of its presence – movements of leaves, branches, clouds, &c. Even so, Faith is seen by the manifestations thereof. Having seen the Faith, Lord Jesus declared the sins forgiven.
That should be kept in mind upon the Sacrament of Baptism in the Holy Spirit of GOD. For then, we take up the Power & Responsibility to hear Him.

... Peace be unto you: as My Father hath sent Me, even so send I you.
And when He had said this, He breathed on them, and saith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghost: whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained. (John 20:21-23)

Thus physical Healing is the Manifestation of Forgiving sins. For sin & sickness are spiritually interconnected, even as Forgiving & Healing.
Every Miracle of Healing is the Demonstration of the Love of our Father GOD. Therefore, our giving the LORD all the Glory for a Miracle is in order thereafter.

In our Bible, we can read many passages when a sick man was taken away from the crowd, or else mourners & scoffers were sent off (to clear up the spiritual air). E.g., *Mark 5:37-42, 7:32-35, & 8:22-25; Acts 9:39-40 & 14:8-10*.

Please also note that Healing Ministry is well backed up by Preaching the Truth –

And it came to pass on a certain day, as He was teaching ...
the Power of the LORD was present to heal them. (Luke 5:17)

Now, let us consider *Matthew 10:8* further on and beyond physical Healing. The last, however needful, does not mean Healing spiritual, and, therefore, total.
In this regard, read the first commentary line – *Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils ...* – and try to see a spiritual meaning only.
What for? To see its chief point, which is Salvation. That might broaden the implementation, even following our Great Commission – the Twelfth Commandment.

Read the second line – *... Freely ye have received, Freely give*.
– and see another Good point, even our Christian Honesty.

Have a look at such modern terminology as *"Christian" career, market, rating, competition,* and such.
Don't sell for money the Gifts of the Holy Ghost.

Remember our True Fast – *Isaiah 58:6-14.*

Q: Please explain the Healing through a brazen serpent per *Numbers 21*.

A: It is written:

... the people came to Moses, and said, We have sinned, for we have spoken against the LORD, and against thee; pray unto the LORD, that He take away the serpents from us. And Moses prayed for the people. And the LORD said unto Moses, Make thee a fiery serpent, and set it upon a pole: and it shall come to pass, that every one that is bitten, when he looketh upon it, shall live. And Moses made a serpent of brass, and put it upon a pole, and it came to pass, that if a serpent had bitten any man, when he beheld the serpent of brass, he lived. (Numbers 21:7-9)

That serpent of brass was not a treatment at all. The Healing has always been in the Answer of the LORD to our Act o' Faith, the last being against *the wisdom of the world* (a.k.a., c*ommon sense* or *reason*). The Sign was and still is: return to GOD. As for what (correctly) happened to that serpent of brass,

He [Hezekiah] *removed the high places, and brake the images, and cut down the groves, and brake in pieces the brasen serpent that Moses had made: for unto those days the children of Israel did burn incense to it: and he called it Nehushtan* [brazen]. *(2Kings 18:4)*

433

Q: What is your opinion of *Solomon's Song* (*Song of Songs*, *Canticles*, etc.)?

A: I agree with those Teachers who wrote that this Book was much more than just a poetry thing, but as Spiritual & Prophetic as all the Holy Scriptures. It is written,

And he spake three thousand proverbs:
and his songs were a thousand and five. (1Kings 4:32)

However, only this Song was called *Song of Songs* and became Canonical.
To comprehend *Solomon's Song*, read it as Communion of Father GOD with His Church. It is also the conversation about Love every Christian family should be built upon.

The books of Brother *Grant R. Jeffrey – "The Signature of GOD"* and "*The Handwriting of GOD"* – dealing with total integrity of our Bible, ought to be consulted too.

Q: (1) Are *all* human beings created in God's Image?. *Genesis 1* says about *two* humans, the very first ones, not *all* seven billion people. The context claims that Adam & Eve were created in His Image, not *all* of us.
Q: (2) Plus, how can it be possible for us to be created in His image? God is Perfect & Holy. We are not. It makes *sense* for Adam & Eve because they were Perfect human beings, born without sin. But every human who came after those two people was born with a sinful nature.
Q: (3) There is no sin in God. So how is it we are still created in His Image?

(Signed: *Christian, Protestant*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1) Please read *Genesis 1:26-28* in connection with *Ecclesiastes 3:14*.
A human created in the Image & Likeness of GOD was a constituent part of His Great Creation. Note *Psalms 115:16*.
(2) Kindly note: the Creation is far above our ability to comprehend it.
If you look for a human "sense" in the Bible, please don't.
The Children of our LORD GOD, we can be Perfect & Holy too, however, only *in* Christ Jesus. Note *1Corinthians 1:29-31*.
(3) Please, read *1John 4:13*. Created in the Image & Likeness of our Heavenly Father, we can open our hearts to His Holy Spirit and be spiritually clean.
You may visit the Index section for more references. Thank you.

434

Q: In chapters 175 (The Parable of Ten Virgins) & 241 (The Salt), we spoke about *Salt*. Could we talk more about *Salt* & *Light*, please?

A: Well, it is written,

13 Ye are the Salt of the Earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men. 14 Ye are the Light of the World. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. 15 Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. 16 Let your Light so shine before men, that they may see your Good Works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven. (Matthew 5:13-16)

Verse 13.
There are many interpretations of this Verse. The "preservative from corruption" – the point of Brother Thomas Scott – is good and, by the way, does not contradict much to my humble opinion. I guess *Salt* might well stand for Love. Because, as a True Virtue, our Love most needs to be proven by Charitable Works. Deprived of the last, Love becomes but an empty word.

Verses 14-15.
We have been blessed with the Light of the Knowledge of Truth of GOD (i.e., His Spiritual Laws, the Power of Love, Holy Will) and Understanding (how that Truth is manifested). And that is not is secret but should pass the Light on.
People around us are mostly not that blind to be unable to perceive "who is who". The Wisdom of Believers is well in the open and determined by their words & actions. The correlation of the first & the second ought to be clear too.
The personal example is crucial in Preaching the Truth. Therefore, let us take care of our hearing to the Guidance of the Holy Ghost in our Communion with Him by Bible Study and Prayer to accumulate more of the Light of the LORD.
Beware of satanic denominational interference to that hearing.

Verse 16.
Only when people, listening to the Truth, glorify our LORD GOD – and do that by their words & deeds – we can be sure of the Success of our Preaching.
On the contrary, any thanksgiving to *our* "smart" selves may mean only their misunderstanding and our failure.

435

Q: Let's continue our previous conversation (chapter 434) and consider *Luke 8:16-18* & *11:33-36*.

A: In the chapter you mentioned, we talked about *Matthew 5:13-16*. *Luke 8:16-18* & *11:33-36* teach us on the Light of GOD on. We may firstly think over *Luke 8:16-18*.

> *Verse16. No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a vessel, or putteth it under a bed; but setteth it on a candlestick, that they which enter in may see the light.*

That's our *Great Commission – the Twelfth Commandment* – isn't it?

The Parallels: *Matthew 5:15, 28:19-20; Mark 4:21; & Luke 11:33.*
See "Q & A" chapters 43 (The Twelfth Commandment) & 434 (Salt & Light).

> *Verse 17. For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither any thing hid, that shall not be known and come abroad.*

The following Parallels remind us about the Perfect Justice of Omniscient GOD. However, our "secret" thoughts might (to some extent) be observed by some other folks, given they take the pain to watch our behavior closely.

The Parallels: *Ecclesiasticus 12:14, Matthew 10:26, Mark 4:22, Luke 12:2, & 1Corinthians 4:5.*
See chapters 234 (Who can read our mind?) & 320 (The Perfect Justice).

> *Verse 18. Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have.*

This Verse teaches us to study the Word of Truth diligently.
In your mind, secure what has been learned, and practice that in your Christian Living. Such evils as compromise, complacency, and pride will surely creep in and should be exterminated.

The Parallels: *Matthew 13:12, 25:29; Mark 4:25; & Luke 19:26.*
See chapters 39 (The War outlined), 58 (K & U & W), & 115 (Poor in spirit).

Now, *Luke 11:33-36.*

> *Verse 33. No man, when he hath lighted a candle, putteth it in a secret place, neither under a bushel, but on a candlestick, that they which come in may see the light.*

The Verse reminds us about our Great Commission – the Twelfth Commandment.

The Parallels: *Matthew 5:15, 28:19-20; Mark 4:21; & Luke 8:16.*
See chapters 43 (The Twelfth Commandment) & 434 (Salt & Light).

> *Verses 34-36. The Light of the body is the eye: therefore when thine eye is single, thy whole body also is full of Light; but when thine eye is evil, thy body also is full of darkness. Take heed therefore that the Light which is in thee be not darkness. If thy whole body therefore be full of Light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of Light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light.*

Here, the Light of the Truth of GOD is presented as a Source of our total spirit-soul-body Health. In that Light, we can & should see & understand what is going on around us.

Our natural eyes have nothing to do with bodily health. Everything we can naturally see is immediately passed on to our brain, where the mental power of a soul collects all information and sorts it out.
But our spirit, if it is in due charge over the soul and under the Command of the Holy Ghost, uses GOD-given Understanding and moves soul & body to take this or that decision regarding the information received.

If, however, we accept the devil into our heart, the picture becomes different – the corrupted “evil eye” starts working as the link of the endless evil chain.

The Parallels: *Matthew 6:22-23 & Acts 26:18.*
Chapters 36 (The power of Satan), 58 (K & U & W), & 106 (Feeding our spirit).

Go ye therefore, and teach all nations,
baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:
Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:
and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the World. Amen.
(Matthew 28:19-20)

436

Q: Can we talk about *Shepherds* of the Church of GOD?

A: Okay, but the definition goes first.

So, let a *Shepherd* be every Christian Leader called up by the LORD, anointed by a Local Clergy, and willingly taken up a Ministry run by a Team subordinated to that Leader.

Now, let's see what the Written Word of GOD teaches on the subject.

1. Every Leader is a Servant for all – *Matthew 20:25-28 & Mark 10:42-45*.

2. The Equality ought to mark the Disciples of Christ – *Matthew 23:8*.

3. The Sheep should be his priority – *Exodus 32:31-32 & John 10:11*.

4. The Responsibility must be understood – *Jeremiah 23:1; Ezekiel 34:2-10; Matthew 15:14; Luke 6:39, 12:48; 1Timothy 3:1-13; Tit 1:5-9; James 3:1; & 1Peter 5:2-3.*

5. Our *Unity* is GOD's Purpose for every Ministry – *Ephesians 4:11-13.*

6. Mind the Discipline – *1Thessalonians 5:12-13 & Hebrews 13:7,17*.

7. It takes time to choose the right Leaders – *1Timothy 5:22*.

8. Be a good Teacher – *Exodus 18:20, Malachi 2:7, & Matthew 23:2-3*.

9. Get learned to teach others – *1Timothy 4:15-16.*

10. The Teacher Promised – *Jeremiah 33:3, John 14:26, & 1John 2:27.*

The greater thou art, the more humble thy selfe, and thou shalt find Fauour before the LORD. Many are in high place, and of renowne: but Mysteries are reueiled vnto the Meeke.
(Apocrypha, The Wisdome of Iesus the sonne of Sirach, or Ecclesiasticus, 3:18-19, King James Version, 1611)

A Shepherd ought to be examined not by the degree of his Education, or even the Gifts of the Spirit bestowed upon him, but rather by the outcome: the level of Love, Faith, Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom of Sheep under his Care. Even as a shepherd leads sheep to a pen or shelter and himself enter therein last, let us pray for our Shepherds to be found Worthy of entering the Shelter Eternal.

In chapter 4, please read the relevant words of Brother *C.S. Lewis.*
Please, see chapter 111 (Moses' error).

Q: Knowing the Bible has been translated into different languages hundreds of times throughout history, how does this affect your view of Organized Religion (like the Church & Pope), which use Scripture as validation for their Authority?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: Let us go step-by-step.

Your words "translated into different languages hundreds of times" certainly mean the original Truth can be well diluted by human reason, yes? In such a case, please note that you have a business with the Word of GOD. So, His Holy Spirit leads every honest Truth-seeking mind through the Scriptures thus translated.

Therefore my "view of Organized Religion" (as you put it) stands on the same Holy Scriptures, which other Believers may happen to understand so differently due to their belonging to different denominations.
Kindly see "Q & A" chapters: 5 (Religions & denominations) & 84 (My Church).
By the "Church", I understand the Body of Christ, One & Indivisible.
That Church of GOD cannot be split but presented by her Local Congregations.

You can read the Teaching of Apostle Paul on different Christian Offices. The Apostle is the highest of them and appointed by the LORD only. Kindly see *Ephesians 4:11-13*. Nowhere in the Bible, one can find the rank of "Pope" as the Head of the Church elected by Cardinals. The "Christian tradition" that Office stands on and the Word of our GOD are things different.
Please see also chapter 637 (The Shepherds).

... whosoever will be Great among you, let him be your Minister;
and whosoever will be Chief among you, let him be your Servant:
even as the Son of Man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister,
and to give His Life a Ransom for many. (Matthew 20: 26-28)

437

Q: In what way does the Parable of Vineyard – *Isaiah 5:1-7* – stay instructive to us?

A: It is written,

Now will I sing to My Wellbeloved a Song of My Beloved touching His Vineyard. My Wellbeloved hath a Vineyard in a very Fruitful Hill: and He fenced it, and gathered out the stones thereof, and planted it with the Choicest Vine, and built a Tower in the midst of it, and also made a Winepress therein: and He looked that it should bring forth Grapes, and it brought forth wild grapes. And now, O inhabitants of Jerusalem, and men of Judah, judge, I pray you, betwixt Me and My Vineyard. What could have been done more to My Vineyard, that I have not done in it? Wherefore, when I looked that it should bring forth Grapes, brought it forth wild grapes? And now go to; I will tell you what I will do to My Vineyard: I will take away the Hedge thereof, and it shall be eaten up; and break down the Wall thereof, and it shall be trodden down: and I will lay it waste: it shall not be pruned, nor digged; but there shall come up briers and thorns: I will also command the Clouds that they rain no Rain upon it. For the Vineyard of the LORD of Hosts is the House of Israel, and the men of Judah His Pleasant Plant: and He looked for Judgment, but behold oppression; for Righteousness, but behold a cry. (Isaiah 5:1-7)

It is a story of ancient Israel – Chosen People, Jews, direct physical descendants of Patriarch Abraham – dictated by the Holy Spirit of GOD and written down by His Prophet Isaiah for all people to learn.
Since the Written Word of the LORD has never been just a history book but ever alive, it remains instructive for as long as this World and the Church of GOD – the Body of Christ – will continue.

Israel, *Judah*, and *Jerusalem* – the LORD's Chosen People and their Leaders – were addressed in this Parable. However, their history, attitudes, and behavior resemble many nations. Therefore, the above Parable is a Good Lesson to all the World, the Christian Church, and the Shepherds thereof.
My Wellbeloved, *My Beloved* – is the God Son, Head of the Church, Lord Jesus.

The Words – *His Vineyard*, *My Vineyard*, *the Vineyard of the LORD of Hosts* – might represent all Called & Chosen of our Father GOD to be True Believers.
The Choicest Vine and *His Pleasant Plant* denote Judah – the best of Israel, even as the Church of GOD is the best part of humankind.

He fenced it ... gathered out the stones thereof ... built a Tower ... made a Winepress ... Rain ... – are all the measures taken by Heavenly Father to protect and purify His People from whatever evil. He taught them to produce every Fruit of Righteousness & Judgment and fed His Chosen by the Right spiritual food.

GOD's Question – *What could have been done more to My Vineyard ...?* – means that virtually everything needful had been done by Him for us up to get learned, bring the Fruits of Godliness, and hold out against whatever evil.
The Words of the LORD – *I will also command the Clouds that they rain no Rain upon it* – mean our well-deserved terrible Penalty of closing up so Blessed Flow of Revelation Knowledge, not only natural rain on dry ground.

I suppose, in this Parable, every one of us may recognize not only the world of unbelievers and the Church of GOD but him (her) self as well. Because regardless of whatever Blessings and curses inherited, there are a lot of personal sins & failures we can find ourselves guilty of.

> Nevertheless, may our Heavenly Father be praised – there is His Word of encouragement to us. Kindly read about Hope in *Ecclesiastes 9:4*, the Way to follow in *Luke 15:20*, and the Guidance in *John 14:6*.

Q: Doesn't the Sixth Commandment contradict *Chapter 25* of *Numbers*?

A: Negative on that. Neither anyone Verse of the Bible "contradict" another.
The Sixth Commandment – *Thou shalt not kill* – is covered by chapter 125.
Chapter 25 of *Numbers* is about the Judgment of our Father GOD.

Those Jews who "*commit whoredom with the daughters of Moab*" and "*did eat, and bowed down to their gods*" violated the First & the Second Commandments of the Holy Law of LORD GOD.
Our Bible does not tell us *what* they eat, maybe even their children.
See chapter 26 (Killing Canaanites) for the Scriptures about that evil.

There is *murder* and the *death penalty* for that sin – the things so different.

... their merciless slaughter of children, and their sacrificial feasting
on human flesh and blood. These initiates from the midst of a heathen cult,
these parents who murder helpless lives, You wanted to destroy ...
(Wisdom of Solomon, 12:5-6, Revised Standard Version, 1952)

438

Q: What ought we know about *mammon* written about in *Matthew 6:24*?

A: The Bible also mentioned it in *Luke 16:9,11,13* – and no more.
But it is well enough to consider that evil, which is *the love of money*.

Is it some powerful evil spirit(s) blamed in the above Scriptures? No. Because in such a case, there should be tons of the sort to cover up constantly growing humankind, since only our LORD GOD is Omnipresent.

Those fallen angels (a.k.a. demons, devils, evil angels, evil spirits, and such), however many, are of some fixed number. For only GOD is Creator. And He completed Creation per *Genesis 1:31*. The LORD did not make enemies – the Creation was Perfect. Had more of His Holy Angels deserted GOD? I doubt that.

See *John 10:10* regarding Satan's manifold yet limited abilities.

Once upon a time, demons were Angels, then followed Lucifer. Some Teachers believe(d), it had been the time of *Genesis 1:1-4*. What about *Genesis 1:31?*
See also *Daniel 8:10, Luke 10:18,* & *Revelation 12:4* as for Satan & demons.

Mammon and other spiritual dung, such as fear, pride, depression, enmity, &c., &c., can well be called malicious tools, wrathful weapons, vicious thoughts, pernicious infection, and so forth, but not a person or unit of persons.

Now, it is written,

No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one,
and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.
Ye cannot serve GOD and mammon. (Matthew 6:24)

Genesis 1:4 tightens it up. *Genesis 3:9* questions us and demands the answer.

To know what to answer, let's define serving Father GOD, as *Deuteronomy 6:4-9* cleared it up, and serving mammon, as *Proverbs 23:4* warned against.

We won't be much mistaken seeing mammon (which is close to avarice & greed) in one dung pile of such evils as worldly reason, compromise, unbelief, fear, corruption, envy, pride, and such.

Please note the Scriptures following.

Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not Bread? and your labour for that which satisfieth not? Hearken diligently unto Me, and eat ye that which is Good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness. (Isaiah 55:2)

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon Earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves Treasures in Heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: for where your Treasure is, there will your heart be also. (Matthew 6:19-21)

... we brought nothing into this World, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the Faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. (1Timothy 6:7-10)

Q: (1) Is it a sin to accumulate wealth?.
Q: (2) I am not talking about being comfortable or even being conventionally wealthy, but is it a sin to have the money you could use to help people?
Q: (3) But Jesus tells that it is easier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of GOD. (?)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020. Edited.)

A: (1) Your first question (the post's title) ought to be clarified by *the purpose*.

(2) Your second question needs the same clarification: "use" or "could use"?

(3) By two accounts, Lord Jesus told that to His Disciples after the rich man had gotten sad and out. You may refer to *Matthew 19:21-24, Mark 10:21-23 & Luke 18:22-25* as one Testimony.

Now, if by accumulating wealth, we mean money & valuables exceeding our modest needs, it is not a sin, but a sure way leading to it and from off Love.
But such things as "modest needs" and "GOD First" every Christian ought to determine for him (her) self.
You may refer to chapter 15 (GOD First) and the Index section for more.
Thank you.

439

Q: Brother, how to pray for *heathen* Authorities as per *1Timothy 2:1-2*?

I exhort therefore, that, first of all, Supplications, Prayers, Intercessions,
and giving of Thanks, be made for all men; for Kings,
and for all that are in Authority; that we may lead a quiet and Peaceable Life
in all Godliness and Honesty. (1Timothy 2:1-2)

A: Pray the LORD, our Father, to bless 'em with *Repentance* and wake up their *conscience* so that the sinners might leave the office they are not worthy of. By doing that, we mind the Holy Will of GOD spoken by Brother Ezekiel –

As I live, saith the LORD GOD, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked;
but that the wicked turn from his way and live: turn ye,
turn ye from your evil ways; for why will ye die ... (Ezekiel 33:11)

Let us also consider some relevant Scriptures.

Exodus 22:28 – Thou shalt not revile the Judges ...
1Samuel 8:11-18 – The conflict foretold by our LORD GOD.
2Samuel 23:3 – ... He that ruleth ... must be Just, ruling in the Fear of GOD.
2Chronicles 19:6 – ... judge not for man, but for the LORD ...
Nehemiah 9:36-37 – ... whom Thou hast set over us because of our sins ...
Proverbs 16:10 – A Divine Sentence is in the lips of the King ...
Proverbs 21:1 – The King's heart is in the Hand of the LORD ...
Proverbs 24:21 – ... fear thou the LORD and the King ... (Note: GOD first).
Apocrypha, Sirach 10:8 – Because of unrighteous dealings ...
Wisdom 1:1-6 – Love Righteousness, ye that be Judges ...
Matthew 15:14 – ... if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.
Romans 13:1-7 & 1Peter 2:13-17 – The Obedience to Authorities we deserved.

Those who possess Authority should use it in protecting their subjects : they are advanced in Providence for this Purpose ; and this lies at the Foundation of their right to allegiance, submission, and tribute from them. – We should be Thankful for the Blessings of Civil Government, and not envy those who bear the Burden of Governing; and who, if they abuse their Trust, will have a still heavier burden of punishment laid upon them in another World ... (Thomas Scott, Comments to Ezekiel Chapter 31)

440

Q: What is known about the *Tree of knowledge of good and evil*?

A: We know what is conveyed at the beginning of the Book of Genesis only. Then it takes all the Written Word of GOD to understand the matter.

And out of the ground made the LORD GOD to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the Tree of Life also in the midst of the Garden, and the Tree of knowledge of good and evil. (Genesis 2:9)

And the LORD GOD commanded the Man, saying, Of every tree of the Garden thou mayest freely eat: but of the Tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. (Genesis 2:16-17)

Then, *Chapter 3* of the *Book of Genesis* described our fall and ended this way –

And the LORD GOD said, Behold, the Man is become as one of Us, to know Good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the Tree of Life, and eat, and live for ever. Therefore the LORD GOD sent him forth from the Garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So He drove out the Man; and He placed at the east of the Garden of Eden Cherubims, and a Flaming Sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the Tree of Life. (Genesis 3:22-24)

That's the end of the story.
By the by, let me remind you that *Genesis 3:22* is GOD's Sarcasm.

Well, the story left out some questions, which we try to get the Answers to.

The first. What did the *name* of the Tree mean? The LORD's Test & Warning. Why so? Because only GOD gives Knowledge & Understanding, not any tree. See chapter 58 (K & U & W) for more on the subject.

Consequently, the second question: how were the *fruits* of the *Tree of knowledge of good and evil* supposed to work?
By *Genesis 2:16-17*, to live eternally, we were (and still are) going to have to be Obedient to our Heavenly Father. Therefore, the only Reason why the Tree of knowledge of good and evil was created at all was *Prohibition*. The fruits thereof were prohibited in favor of our Strict Obedience to Father GOD.

Mind Satan's interest in our feeding on that tree. He was (and is) disobedient to the LORD, and purposed to spread that *disobedience* throughout all of Creation. The detested one has always done that by propagating *worldly reason*, a.k.a. *common sense*, which is nothing but corrupted understanding of Good & evil.
Please see the relevant chapter 41 (Common sense).
Taking the way of disobedience, we move away from the LORD GOD, and Communion with His Holy Spirit discontinues. When He leaves us, immediately, the evil spirit steps forward. No, it wasn't a work of a tree, but the terrible change in the Spirit Realm. That "step-back-step-forward" principle, or else "the shift of the Light-darkness frontier", we discussed in chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).

Little children are called *naive*. Well, instead of learning from them, their parents teach them "wisdom". And their young eyes get opened to see "good" and "evil" from Satan's ugly perspective.
So, the satanic reason became the "processor" of the human mind. *Genesis 3:7*.

Now, we can better see the third and most important point – *why* were those fruits forbidden – only for our Good.
As you know, human brainpower can be helpful or dangerous, as it can protect & save or ignore & destroy the World created, our sorry selves inclusive, depending on *where* that power is directed.

Shall we be disobedient to our Father GOD and live forever? No way.
May the Wisdom of the LORD be praised!

The *Tree of knowledge of good and evil* could best serve people when left alone. It was not the indispensable one in the Great Garden of GOD. *Genesis 1:29-31*.
As for the Tree itself, it was as wooden as any other. No hidden mystery or powers were therein. Its fruits were attractive & tasty (*Genesis 3:6*) but in no way exceeded the value & beauty of other plants of the Garden, especially of the Tree of Life, which were created to be the most useful *(Genesis 1:12,31; 2:9)*.

They say: *when GOD closes one door, He opens another.*
Well, there is a sure Way back to the LORD. Remember *Luke 15:20*.

> *... men do not become Christians by associating with Church people, nor by Religious contact, nor by Religious education; they become Christians only by Invasion of their nature by the Spirit of GOD in the New Birth.*
>
> *(A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)*

441

Q: Doesn't *Isaiah 45:7* contradict the Love and Perfect Justice of God?

A: No, it does not. It is written,

> *I am the LORD, and there is none else, there is no God beside Me: I girded thee, though thou hast not known Me: that they may know from the rising of the Sun, and from the west, that there is none beside Me. I am the LORD, and there is none else. I form the Light, and create darkness: I make Peace, and create evil: I the LORD do all these things. (Isaiah 45:5-7)*

Let us start from the Beginning.

And GOD saw the Light, that it was Good:
and GOD divided the Light from the darkness. (Genesis 1:4)

It is not only about the "darkness" as a mere natural absence of light, but the Divine Separation between GOD and Satan, Good and evil, Truth and lie, Righteousness and sin, the Wisdom of Faith and the folly of atheism. And that was without any compromise in between. Perfect Lucifer had taken the way of evil and was banished from off the Kingdom of the LORD. That preceded the fall (a.k.a. *the Fall*) of Man. GOD has *never* been the Author of any disharmony.

For GOD is not the Author of confusion, but of Peace ... (1Corinthians 14:33)

The LORD, our Father, made it clear: everything had been created Perfect.

And GOD saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was Very Good. (Genesis 1:31)

Regarding the Hebrew keyword translated as "create" in *Isaiah 45:7*, Brother *E.W. Bullinger* wrote,

> *..."create"... with "evil", requires the rendering "bring about"... A word of wide meaning; its sense has to be determined by its context ... GOD brings calamity about as the inevitable consequence of sin ... (The Companion Bible)*

So, within the context of *Isaiah 45:5-7*, I understand *Verse 7* as GOD's Statement of Perfect Justice and creating darkness & evil by *separating* from His Light those His creatures who choose to corrupt themselves.

I remember these words from one Sermon of Brother Morris Cerullo –

GOD cannot, GOD will not, GOD does not invade your will.
And neither can the devil.

The top of Creation – humankind – was forever blessed with *Free will*.
But the latter cannot stand in the way of the Holy Will of our LORD GOD.

> *... There is no being in the Universe independent of Him ; all are His Creatures and Instruments, either acting at His Command or by His Permission. He is positively the Author of all that is True, Holy, Good, or Happy in the Universe : and evil, error, and misery came into the World by His Permission, through the wilful apostasy of His creatures ; but are so restrained and overruled by Him, as to concur in fulfilling His Wise and Righteous Purposes ; and cannot possibly exceed the Bounds which He assigns them, or defeat any of His Plans, or create Him any disquietude or disappointment. (Thomas Scott, The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes)*

Therefore, we, Christians, may Honestly state:

> *Now unto Him that is Able to keep you from falling, and to present you*
> *Faultless before the Presence of His Glory with exceeding Joy,*
> *To the only Wise GOD our Saviour, be Glory and Majesty,*
> *Dominion and Power, both now and ever. Amen. (Jude 1:24-25)*

Q: Why is God Jealous?

... I, the LORD your God, am a Jealous God ... (Exodus 20:5)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: You quoted from the Second Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
By the *Amplified Bible*, "*Jealous*" is explained as "demanding what is Rightfully and Uniquely Mine". Thus the LORD sees *idolatry* as *treason*.
By analogy, you may be confused about the expression "smelled a Sweet Savour", as in *Genesis 8:21*, speaking about the Burned Offering made by Noah. The (offensive) natural odor of burnt animals had nothing to do with what the LORD accepted as a Sacrificial Giving.
Edited in a human language, our Bible cannot convey the Word of GOD like other books do. Chapters 102 (The Strategy) & 104 (The Promised Teacher).

442

Q: What can you say about the following statement,

Faith is not belief in spite of the evidence – it is Life in scorn of consequence.

A: I agree with that argument. *Faith* is our standing upon the *Word of GOD*, no matter what. In all likelihood, the author of the above thought so too.

Faith is not a belief in spite of the [natural] *evidence* – simply because such a (*True and Worthy of all acceptation*) evidence does not exist in the physical.

As for – *it is the Life in scorn of consequence* – that ought to be clarified.
For a *Christian* to be disrespected, scorned, held in contempt, etc., by his (her) Brothers & Sisters in Christ is impossible, whereas to be treated that way by atheists is commonplace. Any errors & failures of a Christian may call only for adverse criticism of an unbelieving crowd. In the Body of Christ, we have the Sacrament of Confession and Communion of Saints to clear every failure of ours, whereas what the heathen world can offer is a bog of hypocritical derision only.

Sometimes, however, it is a matter of our disappointment when we try to help or rescue somebody in need and fail. Or so it might seem to us.
As it were, a Believer is not ready, worthy, or chosen to present him (her) self a Good Instrument for the Holy Ghost to do the job.
So what? Think the matter over and find the sure fault on your part. Oftentimes, it might be just the lack of Christian Experience. Okay, study the Word and train yourself on & on. The case is closed.

Please note the following Scriptures.

Verily, Verily, I say unto you, he that believeth on Me,
the Works that I do shall he do also; and Greater Works than these shall he do;
because I go unto My Father. And whatsoever ye shall ask in My Name,
that will I do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. (John 14:12-13)

And this is the Confidence that we have in Him,
that, if we ask any thing according to His Will, He heareth us:
and if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask,
we know that we have the Petitions that we desired of Him. (1John 5:14-15)

443

Q: In the *Book of Isaiah, chapters 13-15,* we read about the burdens of *Babylon* & *Moab*. Do we need here & now these and suchlike Prophecies against thousands of years dead countries & people?

A: Yes, we do. Those old Prophecies were relevant throughout the history of humankind and stay so much on.

The thing that hath been,
it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done:
and there is no new thing under the Sun. (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

They are strongly recommended to be noted by all military folks, who might think themselves defenders, peacemakers, or sitting well in whatever other lies of the devil. For it is written:

Ye have plowed wickedness,
ye have reaped iniquity; ye have eaten the fruit of lies: because thou
didst trust in thy way, in the multitude of thy mighty men. (Hosea 10:13)

... Not by might, nor by power, but by My Spirit, saith the LORD of Hosts.
(Zechariah 4:6)

As Brother *Grant R. Jeffrey** rightly stated, we could not foretell anything using the Bible. But after the historical event had taken place, the relevant Prophecy can be found in the Scriptures.
* Please see his books in the Reference section.

I don't know about you, but studying the Holy Bible, I find myself more & more convinced that Satan is a liar and militarism is his hell-ward way, regardless of how some country is used by GOD as His disposable Instrument of Correction. Please see the relevant chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).

Who among you will give ear to this?
Who will hearken and hear for the time to come? Who gave Jacob for a spoil,
and Israel to the robbers? Did not the LORD, He against Whom we have sinned?
For they would not walk in His Ways, neither were they Obedient unto His Law.
Therefore He hath poured upon him the Fury of His Anger,
and the strength of battle: and it hath set him on fire round about,
yet he knew not; it burned him, yet he laid it not to heart. (Isaiah 42:22-25)

444

Q: Brother, *Ephesians 6:10-18* teaches us about our *spiritual Weapons*.
Why are they specified that way?

A: All our spiritual Arms hang on the Written Word of GOD.
Note *2Corinthians 10:4*. Do you mind considering them one by one?

Truth. See *Psalms 91:4*.
The Written Word of our Father GOD is that *Truth*. *John 17:17 & Romans 3:4*.
And accept no compromises to that. *Genesis 1:4, Exodus 23:2, & Acts 5:29*.
It protects us from all satanic lies, starting from worldly reasons. *Proverbs 3:5*.

Righteousness (the Right Standing with GOD). See *Isaiah 59:17*.
It protects us from sin & death eternal. *Psalm 15; Proverbs 10:2 & 11:4*.
We are Righteous by our Obedience to the LORD, our GOD. *Deuteronomy 6:25*.

Preaching of the Gospel of Peace. See *Luke 22:36*.
That we do by following the Twelfth Commandment. *Matthew 28:18-20*.
The Implementation of the Holy Scriptures is crucial. *Joshua 1:8; Isaiah 50:4; Jeremiah 13:15; Matthew 5:13-16, 7:6, 10:8; Acts 14:3; & 2Timothy 4:2*.

Faith. See *1Thessalonians 5:8*.
It can be defined as our firm believing that the Written Word of GOD is True.
Our True Knowledge firmly stands on that *Faith*. *John 8:31-32 & 17:14-16*.
Faith should be backed up by Patience. *Hebrews 10:36 & James 1:2-4*.

The Hope of Salvation. See *Psalms 18:35*.
It is Rightly compared with a helmet protecting a warrior's head – the mind.
The Christian mind should be shielded from all pessimistic thoughts. How? –
By believing & following our Bible. *Psalm 37:39-40 & 2Thessalonians 2:16-17*.

The Word of GOD. See *Proverbs 30:5 & Jeremiah 48:10*.
As the Spirit Sword, it is used by oral or mental statement *It is written ...*
Thus the Knowledge & Understanding of the Holy Scriptures is most needed.
That was well proven by *Matthew 4:4,7,10 & 21:13; Luke 4:4,8,12 & 19:46*.

Prayer. See *Zechariah 9:13-15 & 10:4*.
That Blessed Weapon hangs on the Written Word of GOD (*Hebrews 10:23*),
Righteousness (*Psalms 34:15, James 5:16, & 1Peter 3:12*), Faith (*Mark 11:24*).

445

Q: There are Believers of the opinion that *Bible Study* is, firstly, a matter of special education in Christian Institutions and our Sunday Schools. Secondly, it is a personal business of Christians.
Regarding *Small Groups*, some Church members think we should spend our time together as good friends, talking about whatever we like.
What can you say to that?

A: It is written,

... when ye come together, every one of you hath a Psalm, hath a Doctrine, hath a Tongue, hath a Revelation, hath an Interpretation. Let all things be done unto Edifying. (1Corinthians 14:26)

It is also said,

Ye are My Friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. (John 15:14)

Therefore, kindly determine *who* you are going to listen to. Mind *Matthew 15:14*. Speaking of Small Groups, Bible Study, and from my experience, I daresay a Small Group can be of great help to personal Bible Study, teaching Believers the right ways thereof. Let me try to illustrate that with some examples.

Group Leader – Okay, for today, we planned to continue from *Matthew 9:9*. Tina, go ahead.
(Tina reads *Verse 9*).
Group Leader – Good. Please, comment.
Tina (looking in the Bible) – Well, here Jesus passing by, saw Matthew, sitting at the receipt of custom: and He saith unto him, Follow Me. And he arose and followed Him.
Group Leader – Tina, we are not in a school, are we? There, little children read and, having their books closed, retell. Here, we are supposed to read, think over, discuss. So, what you have just read is all about sorting out priorities. The LORD GOD first. No common sense. The second thing in *Matthew 9:9* is the clear Call of GOD, as it is written in ... let me see ... *John 6:44* – *No man can come to Me, except the Father which hath sent Me draw him ...*

Another example.

Group Leader – Kim, your turn.
Kim (after reading *Matthew 18:7*) – I guess the Scripture warns people of the heathen world not to serve Satan by offenses.
Group Leader – That's Correct. Have anybody some other comments? No? Okay then. Let me add this: we have to count *ourselves* among those warned. Why? Because willingly or not, now & again, whether teamed up or just chatting with unbelieving folks, we may forget *who* we are. Please, listen to the following Scriptures.

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers:
for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness?
and what communion hath light with darkness? (2Corinthians 6:14)

See then that ye walk Circumspectly, not as fools, but as Wise,
redeeming the time, because the days are evil. (Ephesians 5:15-16)

T*ake heed, Brethren, lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief,*
in departing from the Living GOD. But exhort one another daily,
while it is called 'to day' ; lest any of you be hardened
through the deceitfulness of sin. (Hebrews 3:12-13)

Q: Could you please, gimme the Verses on listening to other opinions?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: Here you are,

... My Beloved Brethren, let every man be swift to hear,
slow to speak, slow to wrath ... (James 1:19)

Kindly note: after knowing some opinions, you may want to stop a conversation.

Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs,
neither cast ye your Pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet,
and turn again and rend you. (Matthew 7:6)

But always listen to the Holy Ghost.

Take heed therefore how ye hear:
for whosoever hath, to him shall be given; and whosoever hath not,
from him shall be taken even that which he seemeth to have. (Luke 8:18)

446

Q: What can you say about the practice of some parents to bring their little children to our Church Services? They stand upon *Matthew 19:14*.

A: The fact of the question means that some other Believers were not much happy with that custom. Well, me too. Let us go to the Word.

> *Then were there brought unto Him little children, that He should put His hands on them, and pray: and the Disciples rebuked them. But Jesus said, Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto Me: for of such is the Kingdom of Heaven. And He laid His hands on them, and departed thence. (Matthew 19:13-15, Mark 10:13-16, & Luke 18:15-16)*

Look at the above Scripture. Take "*to come unto Me"* for the keywords.
Little children brought by their (wishing well) parents to a Local Church or Small Group don't understand where they are and why, do they?
I would tell you, therefore, how that question was solved in some Churches.

The first example. Baptist Church, the Temple. There, I didn't see many children at all. When some infant started to cry, a Servant approached and politely asked the family to leave. Yet, I remember one child (about five-year-old) there – the Pastor's son – who was first on his knees whenever a Congregational Prayer was called for from the Pulpit. That was the best relevance of *Matthew 19:14*.

The second example. Adventist Church, the Temple, fair design thereof. There, the large Service room was separated with a wall & a huge glassed window from a smaller apartment for parents with children. A lot of toys were provided for the last. The parents could watch the Service and hear Sermons employing a speaker unit. Both compartments had their separate doors to the lobby to make no inconvenience by those families that were late to the Service or leaving.

The third example. Pentecostal Church, the Temple. The first row of seats (a low bench) right before the Pulpit had a sticker that said, *the place for children*. It worked okay. Note *Zephaniah 1:7*.

The last example. Charismatic Church, a rented place. Parents with children were present only at the beginning and the end of a Service. For the rest of the time, the company was led away to some other place rented for a Children's Service.

From the above, you may kindly pick something good for you.

So, can our little children cause problems? Yes, they can, if, for whatever reason, their education is lame, or the Service is not organized well, or both.
However, that problem is nothing at all compared to our *denominationalism*.

These Scriptures are about Education: *Deuteronomy 11:18-21;*
Proverbs 13:24, 19:18, 29:15, 29:17; & 2Corinthians 12:14.

Q: *Can I leave my child's father?.* We met before I found God, started reading my Bible and following Him. I fell pregnant the first month of our dating. We have a one-year-old. My husband is quite a nasty person to me, and I hardly cope being with him my whole life. But I am unsure if it is allowed to leave him. So, I have asked some Christians and was told that,
(1) In God's Eyes, I have already married because we have a child;
(2) God is in the Family building business, not destroying;
(3) If I walk away, it is on me. But, if I stay and he leaves, it is on him.
They even gave me Bible Verses supporting that.

Q: So, if I divorce my husband, find another man, marry, and have kids with him, is it wrong before God? Any advice is appreciated.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: I'm not sure that, having divorced your husband, you would find a better one. In the first month of your dating, you failed to see the man "nasty" and got pregnant with him.

Hopefully, the fact that you have found GOD changed you for the better.

My opinion is, stay with your spouse. Make it clear to him that you are a Christian. Get ready to defend your Faith.
Pray to GOD to back you up. Pray more about your husband. Do not try to "provoke" him to file for a divorce.
Regardless of what you heard from others, in the case of divorce, both spouses lose.

... whosoever shall put away his Wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery. (Matthew 5:32)

So, keep the Family. It is your Christian Ministry.
Thank you for your letter. May our Father GOD bless you.

447

Q: How can one see *Righteousness* from *self-righteousness*?

A: It well starts with a try to find the definitions for these terms.

According to *Buck's Theological Dictionary (1826) –*

The Righteousness of GOD is the Absolute and Essential Perfections of His Nature ; sometimes it is put for His Justice.
The Righteousness of Christ denotes not only His absolute Perfections, but is taken for His Perfect Obedience to the Law, and suffering the Penalty thereof in our stead.
The Righteousness of the Law is that Obedience which the Law requires.
The Righteousness of Faith is the Righteousness of Christ as received by Faith.

The Saints have a Threefold Righteousness.
1. *The Righteousness of their persons, as in Christ, His Merit being imputed to them, and they accepted on the Account thereof – Isaiah 45:24, 2Corinthians 5:21, & Ephesians 5:27.*
2. *The Righteousness of their Principles being derived from, and formed according to the Rule of Right – Psalm 119:11.*
3. *The Righteousness of their Lives, produced by the Sanctifying Influence of the Holy Spirit, without which no man shall see the Lord – 1Corinthians 6:11 & Hebrews 13:13-14.*

According to *Webster's Seventh New Collegiate Dictionary* (*1963) –*
... self-righteous – convinced of one's own righteousness, especially in contrast with the actions and beliefs of others ...

Or else, by *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary of the English Language (2001) –*
... confident of one's own righteousness, esp. when smugly moralistic and intolerant of the opinions and behavior of others ...

The above definitions are quite acceptable ones, moreover, helpful. For example, when a Christian may find him (her) self in a conversation with unbelievers, who time & again are quick to label all Believers as "self-righteous".
In such a case, I dare recommend first to know our atheistic conversers understand what they are talking about. In particular, when discussing something derived from "Righteous". They have nothing to do with the latter.

As for our seeing *Righteousness* from *self-righteousness*, I guess those of Right Standing with our Heavenly Father – Christians – knowledgeable with the Word of GOD, would never think or call themselves Righteous other than *in* Christ Jesus – the Lord our Righteousness. *Jeremiah 23:6; 33:16.*

For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged.
(1Corinthians 11:31)

In my opinion, *self-righteousness* goes hand-in-hand with *denominationalism* and every *split* in the Church of GOD.

Think on the subject of Righteousness when reading the following Scriptures.

... it shall be our Righteousness, if we observe to do all these Commandments before the LORD our GOD, as He hath commanded us. (Deuteronomy 6:25)

The LORD rewarded me according to my Righteousness;
according to the Cleanness of my hands hath He recompensed me.
For I have kept the Ways of the LORD, and have not wickedly departed
from my GOD. For all His Judgments were before me, and I did not put away
His Statutes from me. I was also Upright before Him, and I kept myself
from mine iniquity. Therefore hath the LORD recompensed me according to
my Righteousness, according to the Cleanness of my hands in His Eyesight.
(Psalms 18:20-24)

Hearken unto Me, ye that know Righteousness, the People
in whose heart is My Law; fear ye not the reproach of men, neither be ye
afraid of their revilings. For the moth shall eat them up like a garment,
and the worm shall eat them like wool: but My Righteousness shall be for ever,
and My Salvation from generation to generation. (Isaiah 51:7-8)

And they shall be Mine, saith the LORD of Hosts, in that Day when I make up
My Jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him.
Then shall ye return, and discern between the Righteous and the wicked,
between him that serveth GOD and him that serveth Him not. (Malachi 3:17-18)

I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ: for it is the Power of GOD
unto Salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek.
For therein is the Righteousness of GOD revealed from Faith to Faith:
as it is written, The Just shall live by Faith. (Romans 1:16-17)

448

Q: There is one short *Parable Of The Two Sons*.
Could you please tell us which of those two you would liken yourself to?

A: I guess the first one because *Verse 29* resembles so many years of my Life.
It is written,

28 But what think ye?
A certain man had two sons; and he came to the first, and said, Son, go work to day in my vineyard. 29 He answered and said, I will not: but afterward he repented, and went. 30 And he came to the second, and said likewise. And he answered and said, I go, Sir: and went not. 31 Whether of them twain did the will of his father? They say unto him, The first. Jesus saith unto them, Verily I say unto you, That the publicans and the harlots go into the Kingdom of GOD before you. 32 For John came unto you in the Way of Righteousness, and ye believed him not: but the publicans and the harlots believed him: and ye, when ye had seen it, repented not afterward, that ye might believe him. (Matthew 21:28-32)

The Parable is about our relationship with Father GOD.
Since we can remember, the LORD called us to Him through our conscience. Read, for instance, *Matthew 11:28-30 & John 1:5*.
Some folks answered, *no*. Later, some of them either repent and go the Way of the Prodigal son (*Luke 15:20*) or stay unbelievers on.
The same story can be seen in those who lie their *yes*. Verily, far not all Seeds of the Word of Truth fall on good ground.
So, honestly, I liken myself to the first son, though the definite *negative* answer had never been spoken. When some troubles came up, I prayed to my Father GOD to help me. When all was okay, I did not seek Him at all.
Sadly, living among communists & atheists, I could not see many Godly examples or hear good Testimonies until the age of forty-something. I touched on that matter in “Q & A“ chapter 133, the question dedicated to Apostle Thomas.

And they come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee as My People, and they hear thy Words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they shew much Love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness. And, lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument: for they hear thy Words, but they do them not. (Ezekiel 33:31-32)

449

Q: Speaking about the old Prophecies on, where can we read about the *Soviet Union*?

A: We can read about those *seventy years curse* in the Holy Scriptures.

> *And they burnt the House of GOD ... And them that had escaped from the sword carried he away to Babylon; where they were servants to him and his sons until the reign of the kingdom of Persia: to fulfil the Word of the LORD by the mouth of Jeremiah, until the land had enjoyed her Sabbaths: for as long as she lay desolate she kept Sabbath, to fulfil threescore and ten years.*
> *(2Chronicles 36:20-21)*

The satanic revolution of 1917 destroyed many Orthodox Temples around the former Russian Empire. The folks, who survived the subsequent bloody civil war, were enslaved by the servants of Satan. That was the demerit of corrupted Christianity. See *Hosea 5:10*. How could the empire stand long enough when the following Scriptures had been violated by its rulers – *Proverbs 22:28 & 23:10*. And, behold, not only those.

> *And this whole land shall be a desolation, and an astonishment;*
> *and these nations shall serve the king of Babylon seventy years.*
> *(Jeremiah 25:11)*

I guess it is clear that *the King of Babylon* here is the regional *demon of Satan*.

> *And it shall come to pass in that day, that Tyre shall be forgotten seventy years, according to the days of one King*: after the end of seventy years shall Tyre sing as an harlot**. Take an harp, go about the city, thou harlot that hast been forgotten**; make sweet melody, sing many songs, that thou mayest be remembered**. And it shall come to pass after the end of seventy years, that the LORD will visit Tyre, and she shall turn to her hire, and shall commit fornication with all the Kingdoms of the World upon the face of the Earth**. (Isaiah 23:15-17)*

* The spiritually blind puppets of the evil one murdered the Russian Emperor & his family. Millions of lives were destroyed.
That was the *seventy years* of Due Punishment. Then, the evil Soviet state collapsed. Read, for example, *Jeremiah 48:42*.

... He would accomplish seventy years in the desolations of Jerusalem.
(Daniel 9:2)

Read more about *seventy years curse* in *Zechariah 1:12 & 7:5*. Note the destiny of all servants of the devil in *Ezekiel 32:29-30*. See chapter 8 (Hell).

** However, the Written Word of GOD was not taken to heart by most of them. Why? Probably, it was the inherited plague of atheism.
Consequently, the slavery of communism was changed over by the freedom of corruption, robbery, and the stupidity of show business.

But the LORD, our GOD, remains Faithful. He still calls His wayward children.

For thus saith the LORD,
That after seventy years be accomplished at Babylon I will visit you,
and perform My Good Word toward you, in causing you to return to this place.
For I know the Thoughts that I think toward you, saith the LORD,
Thoughts of Peace, and not of evil, to give you an expected end.
Then shall ye call upon Me, and ye shall go and pray unto Me,
and I will hearken unto you. And ye shall seek Me, and find Me,
when ye shall search for Me with all your heart. (Jeremiah 29:10-13)*

Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden, and I will give you Rest.
Take My Yoke upon you, and learn of Me; for I am Meek and Lowly in heart:
and ye shall find Rest unto your souls.
For My Yoke is easy, and My Burden is light. (Matthew 11:28-30)

* After the Soviet power broke down, the Revival of Christianity was obvious in our lands – Russia and Ukraine – as far as I could see it.

The Prophecies we have discussed stay relevant throughout the centuries.
The history may recur, contingent on the Patience of our LORD GOD.

If My People, which are called by My Name, shall humble themselves,
and pray, and seek My Face, and turn from their wicked ways;
then will I hear from Heaven, and will forgive their sin,
and will heal their land. (2Chronicles 7:14)

Be not deceived; GOD is not mocked:
for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. (Galatians 6:7)

450

Q: How to relate *Matthew 11:12-13* & *Luke 16:16-17*?

A: It is written,

> *12 And from the days of John the Baptist until now the Kingdom of Heaven suffereth Violence, and the Violent take it by Force. 13 For all the Prophets and the Law prophesied until John. 14 And if ye will receive it, this is Elias*, which was for to come. 15 He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.*
>
> *(Matthew 11:12-15)*

> *16 The Law and the Prophets were until John: since that time the Kingdom of GOD is preached, and every man presseth into it. 17 And it is easier for Heaven and Earth to pass, than one tittle of the Law to fail.*
>
> *(Luke 16:16-17)*

* See the Prophecy in *Malachi 4:5-6* and its fulfillment in *Matthew 17:10-13*.

From *Matthew 11:12-15*, we learn that the Ministry of John the Baptist was an inherent Part of Christ Jesus' Mission, per the Holy Will of our LORD GOD. *Matthew 11:12* (quoted more than once in this book) teaches us the Spiritual Violence – Faith, Patience, Steadfastness, Courage, Diligence – without which our Salvation is but a fairy tale. That Verse explains *Luke 16:16*.

In *Luke 16:16*, mark the Words "*preached*" & "*presseth*" and think about who & how. The *Book of Martyrs* well answers that.

These things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended. They shall put you out of the Synagogues: Yea, the time cometh, that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth GOD Service. And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor Me. (John 16:1-3)

... blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in Me. (Luke 7:23)

Both – *Matthew 11:13* & *Luke 16:16* – are well cleared up by *Luke 16:17*.
And the Holy Law of GOD is to stand on. Note *Matthew 5:17-18*.
Even so,

Strive to enter in at the Strait Gate: for many,
I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and shall not be able. (Luke 13:24)

451

Q: Let's get back to chapter 450.
In his commentaries on *Matthew 11:12* & *Luke 16:16*,
William Barclay (he is often referred to in this book) wrote,

Certainly Luke and Matthew understood it in different ways ...

Now, if Brother Barclay is right, who should we listen to?

A: Well, as we put it in chapter 139 (Our Teachers), listen to the *Holy Ghost*.

And, before we proceed any further, kindly note nobody but *you* are responsible for your Eternal destiny. Standing one day alone before the Judgment Seat of Christ, you will hardly manage to blame any Teacher, Pastor, Writer, etc.

Speaking of *Matthew* & *Luke*, I don't think they understood Jesus *differently*.
On the other hand, Matthew, Luke, Barclay, you, I, and the rest of humankind have never been supposed to comprehend the LORD GOD *profoundly*.
One Baptist Pastor (as I looked amazingly at his extensive Christian library) rightly said: *It is all but attempts to comprehend the Word of GOD*.

Speaking of Brother Barclay, in my humble opinion, the Teacher was much mistaken (who of us wasn't?), e.g., in his comments to *Matthew 10:23* & *11:11*.

The above in no way might ever mean that personal Bible Study is wasting of time. Nay. On the contrary, go on. Mind well *Jeremiah 33:3 & John 16:13*.
May the following Scriptures also encourage you.

... though the LORD give you the bread of adversity, and the water of affliction,
yet shall not thy Teachers be removed into a corner any more, but thine eyes
shall see thy Teachers. And thine ears shall hear a Word behind thee, saying,
This is the Way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand,
and when ye turn to the left. (Isaiah 30:20-21)

... the Anointing which ye have received of Him abideth in you, and ye need not
that any man teach you: but as the same Anointing teacheth you of all things,
and is Truth, and is no lie, and even as it hath taught you,
ye shall abide in Him. (1John 2:27)

452

Q: I'm Christian and have a loving family. We live in peace.
I understand the Seventh Commandment but cannot help my old love for one person. What am I to do?

A: May not me, but the Holy Spirit of our LORD GOD give the Right Answer as we continue this conversation. Let me ponder over the question.

I'm Christian ...
Are you? Try to be. Consider well *Proverbs 3:5* to be on the Right Track.

Loving Family ...
It is not yet so but entirely depends on *you*. Repent honestly before the LORD your GOD and watch what will happen next. *He is Faithful that promised.*

We live in peace ...
In what kind thereof, the *Peace* of GOD or the *peace* of the world? *John 14:27*.

I understand the Seventh Commandment ...
Do you? Why not then wholeheartedly trust Him Who, in Perfect Love & Wisdom, gave that Commandment long before you, your loving spouse, your worldly loved one, and every other human came into being? See chapter 126.

I ... cannot help ...
Yes, you can. Or else, do you seriously think *Luke 10:19* is a lie?

... my ... love ...
Please, try to tell apart *True Love* in the Eyes of GOD from the *love of the world* being but *lust*. If, in the world, you've found something (needful?) which has been absent in your intimate relationship with your spouse, whose fault is that? Most importantly, if that ungodly affair continues, where do you suppose to find your sorry self in *Eternity*? Kindly sort out the priorities.

What am I to do?
Probably, you already know the answer. Find your Good Hope in *Luke 15:20*. Remember *1Corinthians 6:15-17 & 7:2-5*. May GOD bless you.

The above discussion (based on actual conversations) in no way can put me or whosoever else in the position of a Judge. *John 8:7 & Galatians 6:1*.

Q: (1) Are all the Laws on Marriage unanimously equal among the genders?
Q: (2) Doesn't it say that a woman is bound to her Husband for Life, even if he divorces her because of *adultery*?
Q: (3) Does the same Rule apply to men as well?
Q: (4) If they both commit *adultery* before divorce, should they stay together?

(Signed: *Christian, Protestant*)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: (1) Yes, they are. *Romans 2:11*.
(2) Yes, she is bound to her Husband, notwithstanding. *Genesis 2:24*.
(3) Yes, it does. *Genesis 2:24*. "Q & A" chapter 655 (*Leviticus* & *John*).
(4) The LORD hates divorce. *Malachi 2:16*.

Q: Why does he who finds a Wife obtain Favor from the LORD (*Proverbs 18:22*)?

(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, February 2021.)

A: It is written:

Whoso findeth a Wife findeth a Good thing,
and obtaineth Favour of the LORD. (Proverbs 18:22)

Genesis 2:24 made a Foundation for a Godly Family.
Proverbs 5:15-19 tells us about the Loving Wife.
Proverbs 19:14 states that a Prudent Wife is from the LORD.
Proverbs 31:10-31 describes a Prudent Wife.
Matthew 19:6 & Mark 10:8-9 commands a Godly Family to be Strong.

Please, see chapter 60 (Christian Family) and the Index section for more. And kindly read the words of Brother Cerullo at the end of chapter 147.

Q: What is the meaning of Life?

(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, February 2021.)

A: LORD GOD gave us Life to live eternally. Therefore, from a Christian viewpoint, the meaning of Life is Godly Living. See also chapter 707.

And He humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger, and fed thee with Manna, which thou knewest not, neither did thy fathers know; that He might make thee know that Man doth not live by bread only, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the Mouth of the LORD doth man live. (Deuteronomy 8:3)

453

Q: I want to open a business, meaning a shop to sell something.
How to make sure I would stay a Christian?

A: Well, there is nothing wrong with a shop. Somebody should do that job.
The thing is (as you correctly put it) *to stay a Christian*.
That's why the following suggestions ought to be among those to consider.

First of all, make sure it is the Will of GOD for your Life. *Proverbs 3:6.*
The examples of those who "make good money" in their shops should be the very last thing regarded.

What & how are you going to sell? Merchandise, prices, and taxes are to be approved by the LORD firstly and your authorities secondly. *Proverbs 24:21*.
The subject of your trade ought to be needful to your neighborhood.
Don't charge 0.99, 4.95, 9.99, and such as the devil teaches, "it looks cheaper".
No worldly "monkey-business". *Leviticus 19:35-36 & Deuteronomy 25:13-15*.
See those Scriptures quoted below. Lo, what all four demand of us is Honesty.

You are supposed to honor GOD by Tithings & Offerings as per *Malachi 3:10*.
Get ready to withstand such evils as worldly reason & compromise.
Think about a Christian Charitable program in your business.

Some unpredictable hardships may arise, leaving you with two options: stay a Christian and leave the business or continue therein compromising with the devil.
Be ready to choose the first, no matter what. The LORD will take care of the rest.

A false balance is abomination to the LORD:
but a Just weight is His Delight. (Proverbs 11:1)

A Just weight and balance are the LORD's:
all the weights of the bag are His Work. (Proverbs 16:11)

Divers weights, and divers measures,
both of them are alike abomination to the LORD. (Proverbs 20:10)

Divers weights are an abomination unto the LORD;
and a false balance is not Good. (Proverbs 20:23)

454

Q: In this book, you refer to many *Christian* movies.
Do you agree with every Producer thereof?

A: No, I don't. However, I do commend those movies for their strong points and far greater usefulness compared to many of the worldly cinema stuff.

Why might I disagree with a Producer? Only because now & again, the last deviates from the Written Word of GOD.

And thou shalt not go aside from any of the Words
which I command thee this day, to the right hand, or to the left,
to go after other gods to serve them. (Deuteronomy 28:14)

I cannot disfavor "Matthew" *(Visual Bible, 1993)* seeing the Verse number in the corner of a screen continuously. Sadly, this is not the case in every Biblical film.

I have read some negative comments on "Fireproof" and, you know what? The commentator had hardly read (never mind *studied*) the Bible. Why? Because our Father GOD gives us Understanding that a *Husband*, not a *Wife*, is in charge of every Family (let alone a *Christian* one) and therefore is first guilty of any disharmony, quarrel, split, and every other evil in his home.

Tell me, please, how in the world, without *Bible Study*, can one understand such work as "Amazing Love"?
Or else, how can a worldly mind believe the story of a family reunited told in <"The Stranger TV Series", Episode 6, "Mary Magdalene">?

It became clear to me why the Holy Scriptures are sometimes departed from when I heard what one Christian Producer said: "I don't think we have to thump the Bible every day." No comments.

This Book of the Law shall not depart out of thy mouth; but thou shalt
meditate therein day and night, that thou mayest observe to do according to
all that is written therein: for then thou shalt make thy way Prosperous,
and then thou shalt have Good Success. (Joshua 1:8)

I watched all the movies named "Jane Eyre" right after reading the first edition of *Charlotte Bronte (1890)* and concluded that the TV Serial of 1983 was the best following the book.

I love the sense of Peace which stays with me after watching the film “Me & You, Us, Forever” Sadly, that movie also got stupid criticism on the Internet.

“Pamela’s Prayer” well supports “Q & A” chapter 27 (The Widowhood).
“Heaven Is For Real” and “Miracles From Heaven” are parallel to chapter 153.
In chapter 300, the true stories “Hacksaw Ridge” and “Silent Night” well fit in.

“The Apostle” and “The Island” require quite a consideration before reaching any conclusion. These works are not for an unbelieving mind.

Let no man deceive himself.
If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be Wise. For the wisdom of this world is foolishness with GOD.
For it is written, He taketh the wise in their own craftiness.
And again, The LORD knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are vain.
(1Corinthians 3:18-20)

“Final Exit” and “In The Blink Of An Eye” are meditation-inspiring. But I would leave out their respective plots, as Satan or demon is not omnipresent, cannot protest or intrude on Judgment, and the way of *giving a chance* seems to be more realistic in the first movie than in the second.

Chapter 285 touched on the only flaw of so compelling “Do You Believe?”

Now, “Genesis: Paradise Lost”.
As I wrote to the Producers, the movie gives Christians many weighty arguments against the evil of atheism. However, there are some points there I disagree with.

First. I question the picture of a Man embracing a dinosaur. Brother Adam could see or hear about dinosaurs and other predators much later, but not in/at the Beginning. The latter was called by GOD *Very Good*. I tried to explain this point – the curse originated by sin – in chapters 289, 312, & 313.
So, I don’t support the statement, “In *Genesis*, in *Chapter 1*, we are told that on Day 6, GOD created the beasts of the Earth and everything that creeps upon the Earth. This would, of course, include dinosaurs.” (The timing is 53:55.) Negative on that. GOD did not create dinosaurs. The curse messed up His Creation.
Wrong is the statement, “When Adam and Eve sinned against God, God cursed the ground, He cursed the animals, and He sentenced Man to die.” (The timing is 1:32:53.) Here we deal with our Free will, disobedience to GOD, and spiritual Authority over Earth. The curse originated from Man, not LORD GOD.

Second. That good movie also said (at the timing of 41:41): “The Bible has always been – and shall ever be – validated by real science.”
I cannot agree with that statement also. At the end of chapter 103, we concluded: “*The Holy Bible doesn’t need any scientific proof from the world, as it has all the Confirmation of GOD and the Power to judge the world*.”
Even if by the “real science”, our Brothers Producers mean the way of Christian Understanding Creation, in my opinion, the correct wording ought to be, *The Bible has always been – and shall ever be – Validation of real science*.

Third. The timing 1:34:52-58 – “... every deed done in darkness will be brought to the Light. And if that happens on Judgment Day and you are found guilty, the Bible says that you are heading for hell.” Well, just a bit of correction: *hell* goes first, the *Judgment* and the *second death* of evil-doers later.
Kindly read *2Peter 2:4 & Revelation 20:14*.
Take a look at “Q & A” chapters 8 (Hell) & 573 (Eternity).

Notwithstanding the above issues, “Genesis: Paradise Lost” is a good job done, worth watching more than once.

I wish all Christian Producers to have a Charitable program for our *free* watching of their good movies online and *free* downloading.
Same for providing good subtitles to help worsened hearing of some folks.
Chapters 41 (Common sense) & 56 (The Test of Giving) may support my point.

Bring ye all the Tithes into the Storehouse,
that there may be Meat in Mine House, and prove Me now herewith,
saith the LORD of Hosts, if I will not open you the Windows of Heaven,
and pour you out a Blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.
(Malachi 3:10)

No man can serve two masters:
for either he will hate the one, and love the other;
or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other.
Ye cannot serve GOD and mammon. (Matthew 6:24)

Some films are labeled “Christian” for the reasons unknown. Hardly a pictured brief episode of a Church Service can make them such.

May the LORD our GOD bless all Christian Casts & Crews.

455

Q: What does *Isaiah 28:14-18* teach us about?

A: By the *Cornerstone in Zion,* it is the *Prophecy*, *Blessing*, and *Warning*.

> *14 Wherefore hear the Word of the LORD, ye scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem. 15 Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing Scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves:*
> *16 Therefore thus saith the LORD GOD, Behold, I lay in Zion for a Foundation a Stone, a Tried Stone, a Precious Corner Stone, a Sure Foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste. 17 Judgment also will I lay to the Line, and Righteousness to the Plummet: and the Hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the Waters shall overflow the hiding place.*
> *18 And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing Scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it. (Isaiah 28:14-18)*

Verse 14. To whom may it concern? All folks of civil, military, religious, etc. *authority,* whoever might find themselves so bold as to *scorn* the Word of GOD.

Verse 15. It's puzzling who in the right mind could have ever said so, isn't it? Yet, let's not forget, *Who* it is we talk (or, as they say, have a business) with. Folks may create whatever laws, regulations, agreements, etc., and live happily thereby. But LORD GOD, Omniscient & Omnipotent, names their writings as they are.

Verse 16. The New Covenant was made, and Christ Jesus, the Son of GOD, came to us with His Blessed Messianic Ministry. And what is that *haste* about? To judge by the satanic rules & reason of this world as those "wise" & "strong" thereof have always taught.

Verse 17. Judgment Day has been promised. The Perfect Justice of GOD will destroy all common sense, atheistic scientific evidence, worldly logic – you name it. Kindly refer to chapter 573 (Eternity).

Verse 18. Once *it is written* (foreseen, prophesied) in the Holy Scriptures, then few of all *unbelieving world* will repent. Sorry about that.

456

Q: Brother, let's study the *Book of Isaiah, Chapter 29*.

A: We may do that by the *King James Pure Cambridge Edition*. And have some other translations ready at hand, as was proposed in chapter 118.

> *1 Woe to Ariel, to Ariel, the City where David dwelt! Add ye year to year; let them kill Sacrifices. 2 Yet I will distress Ariel, and there shall be heaviness and sorrow: and it shall be unto Me as Ariel. 3 And I will camp against thee round about, and will lay siege against thee with a mount, and I will raise forts against thee. 4 And thou shalt be brought down, and shalt speak out of the ground, and thy speech shall be low out of the dust, and thy voice shall be, as of one that hath a familiar spirit, out of the ground, and thy speech shall whisper out of the dust. 5 Moreover the multitude of thy strangers shall be like small dust, and the multitude of the terrible ones shall be as chaff that passeth away: Yea, it shall be at an instant suddenly.*
> *6 Thou shalt be visited of the LORD of Hosts with Thunder, and with Earthquake, and Great Noise, with Storm and Tempest, and the Flame of Devouring Fire.*

Ariel (by *Smith's Bible Dictionary*) means *Lion of GOD, Hearth of GOD, Altar of GOD, Fire of GOD*, etc. It stands for the destiny of *Jerusalem*.
So, why *woe*? Mind the *Responsibility* per *Luke 12:48*.

Verse 4 prophesies not only against Jerusalem but all *pride* of this heathen world.
Verse 5 warns *strangers* (unbelievers) & *terrible ones* ("mighty" of the world).

> *7 And the multitude of all the nations that fight against Ariel, even all that fight against her and her Munition, and that distress her, shall be as a dream of a night vision. 8 It shall even be as when an hungry man dreameth, and, behold, he eateth; but he awaketh, and his soul is empty: or as when a thirsty man dreameth, and, behold, he drinketh; but he awaketh, and, behold, he is faint, and his soul hath appetite: so shall the multitude of all the nations be, that fight against Mount Zion.*

The struggle around *Jerusalem*, which we can read about in the Holy Scriptures and observe throughout history, is *against her and her Munition*, meaning fighting *Believers* armed with the *Spiritual Weapons* as per *Ephesians 6:11-18*.
And not only against *those in Jerusalem*, as the *Book of Martyrs* made very clear.

9 Stay yourselves, and wonder; cry ye out, and cry: they are drunken, but not with wine; they stagger, but not with strong drink. 10 For the LORD hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes: the Prophets and your Rulers, the seers hath He covered. 11 And the Vision of all is become unto you as the Words of a Book that is sealed, which men deliver to one that is learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I cannot; for it is sealed: 12 And the Book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I am not learned.

In chapter 29 (called "Mind your approach"), we tried to find the reason why the *Word of Wisdom* got sealed up, who can be *learned* therein, and who can't. In chapter 64, we discussed the subject of *GOD's Punishment*. Kindly check it out.

13 Wherefore the LORD said, Forasmuch as this people draw near Me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour Me, but have removed their heart far from Me, and their Fear toward Me is taught by the precept of men:
14 Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a Marvellous Work among this people, even a Marvellous Work and a Wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid.
15 Woe unto them that seek deep to hide their counsel from the LORD, and their works are in the dark, and they say, Who seeth us? And, Who knoweth us? 16 Surely your turning of things upside down shall be esteemed as the potter's clay: for shall the work say of him that made it, He made me not? Or shall the thing framed say of him that framed it, He had no understanding? 17 Is it not yet a very little while, and Lebanon shall be turned into a fruitful field, and the fruitful field shall be esteemed as a forest?

Yea, camouflaged unbelievers, *it is written* for you: *Woe*. (See *Matthew 15:7-9*.)
Verse 17 well reminds us all what a quick thing *Time* is.

18 And in that Day shall the deaf hear the Words of the Book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity, and out of darkness. 19 The Meek also shall increase their Joy in the LORD, and the poor among men shall rejoice in the Holy One of Israel. 20 For the terrible one is brought to nought, and the scorner is consumed, and all that watch for iniquity are cut off: 21 That make a man an offender for a word, and lay a snare for him that reproveth in the gate, and turn aside the Just for a thing of nought.

Verse 18 promised all humans at all times a *Chance* to get learned.

Verse 19 is a *Blessing* for those who made up their mind the Right Way.

Verses 20-21 condemned:
1. The heathen authority – the terrible one – judging with unjust judgment:
That make a man an offender for a word, and lay a snare for him that reproveth in the gate, and turn aside the Just for a thing of nought.
2. Every heathen media worker & every lover of that evil:
... and the scorner is consumed, and all that watch for iniquity are cut off ...

22 Therefore thus saith the LORD, Who redeemed Abraham, concerning the House of Jacob, Jacob shall not now be ashamed, neither shall his face now wax pale. 23 But when he seeth his Children, the Work of Mine Hands, in the midst of him, they shall sanctify My Name, and sanctify the Holy One of Jacob, and shall fear the GOD of Israel. 24 They also that erred in spirit shall come to Understanding, and they that murmured shall learn Doctrine.

Verses 22-23 promised the *Salvation* of the *Righteous*.
Verse 24 might also be taken as a *Chance* to get back on the Right Track.

Q: In what way can *Numbers Chapter 35* be implemented by us today?

A: In that Chapter, there are several points to be seen in the Light of the New Testament. Please open your Bible on *Numbers Chapter 35*.

Verses 1-8.
The cities & lands to be given to *Levites* may stand for the property of the full-time Servants of Local Churches to be offered by and respected in a *Christian Country*. The latter is covered by "Q & A" chapter 55 (Christian Country).

Verses 9-34.
The cities of refuge may denote Justice in a *Christian Country*.
When a person unwillingly causes an injury or death to another person, he (she) must report that to the Law Enforcement Officials for a proper investigation.
This way, the person is protected by the Law of his (her) country against any false accusation, let alone unlawful punishment.
When murder is intentional, a legal investigation is in order, and a lawful capital punishment (see chapter 95) should follow. At least two witnesses are required for such an investigation.
Abolishment of the death penalty, which some governments accepted for their states, made the last ungodly & non-Christian.

457

Q: Brother, we've found *Chapter 30* of the *Book of Isaiah* unclear as for comprehending and implementing right from the opening Verses. Could you please clear it up?

A: Let's get through this Chapter together.

1 Woe to the rebellious children, saith the LORD, that take counsel, but not of Me; and that cover with a covering, but not of My Spirit, that they may add sin to sin: 2 That walk to go down into Egypt, and have not asked at My Mouth; to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! 3 Therefore shall the strength of Pharaoh be your shame, and the trust in the shadow of Egypt your confusion.

The above Words become more comprehensible once we have found their *correct spiritual meaning* – the strategy proposed in chapter 102 (The Strategy).
Thus, *the rebellious children* (*Verse 1*) are you & me, our political & religious leaders, as well as whosoever led by *the reason & rules of this world*.
You may liken it to the old saying – *Grandma taught it, and we bought it*.

Verse 2. Take *Egypt* not literally but for every militarily or economically or politically "mighty" country and *Pharaoh* for the leader thereof.
Worldly reason (see chapter 41) may draw our attention to some "superpowers" of this atheistic world. However, *1Corinthians 3:19* teaches us otherwise.
So, we have a choice of *what* to believe and follow.

Mind well *Verse 3*. It is written,

... Not by might, nor by power,
but by My Spirit, saith The LORD of Hosts. (Zechariah 4:6)

4 For his princes were at Zoan, and his ambassadors came to Hanes.
5 They were all ashamed of a people that could not profit them, nor be an help nor profit, but a shame, and also a reproach. 6 The burden of the beasts of the south: into the land of trouble and anguish, from whence come the young and old lion, the viper and fiery flying serpent, they will carry their riches upon the shoulders of young asses, and their treasures upon the bunches of camels, to a people that shall not profit them. 7 For the Egyptians shall help in vain, and to no purpose: therefore have I cried concerning this, Their strength is to sit still.

Verses 4-7 exemplify the old *worldly wisdom* about flies busy on dung or a rake not to be stepped upon twice – you pick. Note *Ecclesiastes 1:9*.
As for every (dead) historical & geographical name, you may go as far as to Bible Dictionaries and such good comments as those of Brothers *Calvin*, *Scott*, *Clarke*, and others mentioned in the Reference section of our book.

> *8 Now go, write it before them in a table, and note it in a book, that it may be for the time to come for ever and ever: 9 That this is a rebellious people, lying children, children that will not hear the Law of the LORD: 10 Which say to the Seers, See not; and to the Prophets, Prophesy not unto us Right things, speak unto us smooth things, prophesy deceits: 11 Get you out of the way, turn aside out of the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to cease from before us.*

The above *Verses 8-11* present us with the same reason our Lord Jesus taught:

> *Enter ye in at the strait Gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way,*
> *that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat:*
> *Because strait is the Gate, and narrow is the Way, which leadeth unto Life,*
> *and few there be that find it. (Matthew 7:13-14)*

> *12 Wherefore thus saith the Holy One of Israel, Because ye despise this Word, and trust in oppression and perverseness, and stay thereon:*
> *13 Therefore this iniquity shall be to you as a breach ready to fall, swelling out in a high wall, whose breaking cometh suddenly at an instant. 14 And He shall break it as the breaking of the potters' vessel that is broken in pieces; He shall not spare: so that there shall not be found in the bursting of it a sherd to take fire from the hearth, or to take water withal out of the pit. 15 For thus saith the LORD GOD, the Holy One of Israel: In Returning and Rest shall ye be saved; in Quietness and in Confidence shall be your Strength: and ye would not. 16 But ye said, No; for we will flee upon horses; therefore shall ye flee: and, We will ride upon the swift; therefore shall they that pursue you be swift. 17 One thousand shall flee at the rebuke of one; at the rebuke of five shall ye flee: till ye be left as a beacon upon the top of a mountain, and as an ensign on an hill.*

Verses 8-17. Good *e-Sword* program rightly names that passage "A Rebellious People". You can read the above text as addressing our ancestors and us.

> *Be not deceived; GOD is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth,*
> *that shall he also reap. (Galatians 6:7)*

18 And therefore will the LORD wait, that He may be Gracious unto you, and therefore will He be Exalted, that He may have Mercy upon you: for the LORD is a GOD of Judgment: Blessed are all they that wait for Him.
19 For the People shall dwell in Zion at Jerusalem: thou shalt weep no more: He will be very Gracious unto thee at the voice of thy cry; when He shall hear it, He will answer thee.

Verses 18-33. By the *e-Sword* program, “The LORD Will Be Gracious”. Right. GOD will as He has always been. Yet, *Conditionally*, subject to our *Obedience*. Mind the Words, *for the LORD is a GOD of Judgment* in *Verse 18*.

20 And though the LORD give you the bread of adversity, and the water of affliction, yet shall not thy Teachers be removed into a corner any more, but thine eyes shall see thy Teachers: 21 And thine ears shall hear a Word behind thee, saying, This is the Way, walk ye in it, when ye turn to the right hand, and when ye turn to the left.

Verses 20-21 promise us the Guidance of the Holy Ghost.

22 Ye shall defile also the covering of thy graven images of silver, and the ornament of thy molten images of gold: thou shalt cast them away as a menstruous cloth; thou shalt say unto it, Get thee hence.

Verse 22 guarantees the necessary change of mind, given we obey GOD.

23 Then shall He give the rain of thy seed, that thou shalt sow the ground withal; and bread of the increase of the Earth, and it shall be fat and plenteous: in that day shall thy cattle feed in large pastures. 24 The oxen likewise and the young asses that ear the ground shall eat clean provender, which hath been winnowed with the shovel and with the fan. 25 And there shall be upon every high mountain, and upon every high hill, rivers and streams of waters in the Day of the Great Slaughter, when the towers fall.

Verses 23-25 promise the change of Nature *spiritually* subjected unto us.
Kindly note relevant chapters 36, 312, and 313 of this book.

26 Moreover the light of the Moon shall be as the light of the Sun, and the light of the Sun shall be sevenfold, as the light of seven days, in the Day that the LORD bindeth up the breach of His People, and healeth the stroke of their wound.

Verse 26. By John Calvin,

> *... the LORD will go beyond the course of nature in this Kindness and Liberality.*

The Right words.

> *27 Behold, the Name of the LORD cometh from far, burning with His Anger, and the burden thereof is heavy: His Lips are full of Indignation, and His Tongue as a devouring Fire: 28 And His Breath, as an overflowing Stream, shall reach to the midst of the neck, to sift the nations with the sieve of vanity: and there shall be a bridle in the jaws of the people, causing them to err. 29 Ye shall have a Song, as in the night when a Holy Solemnity is kept; and Gladness of heart, as when one goeth with a pipe to come into the Mountain of the LORD, to the Mighty One of Israel. 30 And the LORD shall cause His Glorious Voice to be heard, and shall shew the Lighting down of His Arm, with the Indignation of His Anger, and with the Flame of a devouring Fire, with scattering, and tempest, and hailstones. 31 For through the Voice of the LORD shall the Assyrian be beaten down, which smote with a Rod. 32 And in every place where the grounded staff shall pass, which the LORD shall lay upon him, it shall be with tabrets and harps: and in battles of shaking will He fight with it.*

Verses 27-32 remind all humans of the Power of GOD.
However, kindly note chapter 64 regarding the LORD's Punishment.

> *33 For Tophet is ordained of old; Yea, for the King it is prepared; he hath made it deep and large: the pile thereof is fire and much wood; the breath of the LORD, like a stream of brimstone, doth kindle it.*

Verse 33 condemns *Tophet*.
According to Easton's Bible Dictionary,

> *Topheth, from Hebrew "toph", i.e., "a drum", because the cries of children here sacrificed by the priests of Moloch were drowned by the noise of such an instrument; or from "taph" or "toph", meaning "to burn", and hence a place of burning, the name of a particular part in the valley of Hinnom.*

The *spiritual* sacrificing of children is still going on.
Kindly refer to chapters 26 (Killing Canaanites) & 50 (Modern idolatry) for more.

458

Q: What *Virtues* are we supposed to develop in ourselves, and how?

A: We (alone, without GOD) can develop nothing of the sort.
To prove this point, let me first pick up the definitions for *Virtues*.

> By *Webster's Unabridged Dictionary of the English Language, 2001,*
> [Virtue is] ... *moral excellence; Goodness; Righteousness ... conformity of one's life and conduct to moral and ethical principles; Uprightness; rectitude ... chastity; virginity ... a particular moral excellence ... a good or admirable quality or property ... effective force; power or potency ... manly excellence; valor ...*
>
> By *The Harper Collins Bible Dictionary, Revised Edition, 1996,*
> [Virtue is] ... *the English translation of a Greek term pointing, in the Greek philosophical tradition, to excellence of moral character. Old Testament and New Testament Writers speak more often of Righteousness than of Virtue because the former points less to human achievement and merits than to GOD's Acts ...*

So, Webster's Dictionary provides a correct and comprehensive definition for *Virtue(s)*, whereas Harper Collins Edition narrows it down to *Righteousness*.
The last was considered in chapter 447 (Righteousness vs self-righteousness).
Defining *our* Righteousness as *our* Right Standing with GOD, we cannot see that Virtue other than *our* being Members of the Body of Christ. Yea, only *in* Him.
(Here, you may kindly find the answer to your question regarding *what* & *how*).

Somebody from the outside of the Church of GOD might (naturally) hear or read the above conclusion and scorn it as something "depriving a Christian of his (her) *individuality*". If you worry about that foolish say, don't. Mind *John 1:5*.
For in *1Corinthians 1:18-31*, the LORD through His Servant Paul cleared it up:

... Hath not GOD made foolish the wisdom of this world?
(1Corinthians 1:20)

At the same time,

... no flesh should glory in His Presence.
But of Him are ye in Christ Jesus, Who of GOD is made unto us Wisdom, and Righteousness, and Sanctification, and Redemption: that, according as it is written, He that glorieth, let him glory in the LORD. (1Corinthians 1:29-31)

As regards our allegedly lost individuality, we were different (*Isaiah 53:6*) and differently were enriched *in* the Lord (*1Corinthians 12:7-11*), recreated *in* Christ Jesus (*2Corinthians 5:17*).
In chapters 220, 372, & 447, we clarified that Virtues are available *in* Christ Jesus only. Please, read *Romans 8:1-2 & Galatians 3:26-29.*
In chapter 368 (The Utterance of the Holy Spirit), the Holy Ghost was found the *Master* of and a Believer His *Instrument* for the Works of GOD.

Q: How does one measure Christian Maturity?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Please, refer to chapter 58 (Knowledge & Understanding & Wisdom).
To that, I may add that Christian (spiritual) Maturity cannot be some fixed point. It is the *Narrow Way to Strait Gate* discussed in chapter 247.

Q: (1) How does Praying for something to happen work?
Q: (2) When you are praying for specific events to happen (for example, for the reestablishment of a sick family member), what are you (and God) doing?
Q: (3) Do you hope to convince God to intervene?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: (1) Well, it doesn't. What does, is GOD's Answer to our Prayer.
Please see *GOD's Answer* in the Index.
(2) The following Scriptures (there are more) will answer you better.

Deuteronomy 10:21 & Psalms 22:3 ---------- The importance of *Praise*.
1Kings 17:21-22 & 1Thessalonians 5:17 ---- The *Perseverance* in Prayer.
Psalms 32:5 & Proverbs 28:13 ---------- The Condition of *Confession*.
Proverbs 3:5 & Philippians 4:6-7 ---------- Trust the LORD your GOD.
Isaiah 58:6-14 ---------- True Fast.
Matthew 18:19-20 & John 14:13-14 ---------- The Promised Name *Jesus*.
Mark 11:24 & Hebrews 11:6 ---------- The Power of *Faith*.
Luke 11:13 ---------- The Gift of the *Holy Spirit*.
Romans 8:26-27 ---------- Praying in an *unknown tongue*.
Ephesians 6:18 ---------- Intercessory Prayer.
Hebrews 10:36 ---------- The Backup of *Patience*.

(3) We cannot convince GOD. The Best Hope in a Prayer is,
Thy Will be done. You may kindly note *1J 5:14.*

459

Q: Brother, how to comprehend *1John 5:6-8*?

A: Per *1Corinthians 13:9*, we can comprehend the Truth only in part. *1John 5:6-8* teaches us about the *Holy Trinity of GOD*.

> *6 This is He that came by Water and Blood, even Jesus Christ; not by Water only, but by Water and Blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth Witness, because the Spirit is Truth. 7 For there are Three that bear Record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these Three are One. 8 And there are Three that bear Witness in Earth, the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood: and these Three agree in One. (1John 5:6-8)*

Verse 6.
The *Water* was Jesus' Water Baptism, which was to wash off everything tying & mixing Him up with the ordinary earthly life – home, kin, trade, etc. – thus manifesting the Beginning of His Messianic Ministry.

The *Blood* was His Ultimate Sacrifice, the Cross of Christ, the Highest Price paid for our *Reconciliation* with GOD and *Salvation* – the Crucial part of Lord Jesus' Mission. To that, the *Holy Ghost* testified. *John 14:17,26; 16:13; & 1John 2:27.*

Verse 7.
The *Holy Trinity of GOD* is incomprehensible since our human individualism can hardly conceive & achieve what is natural for the LORD. His Power of *Love* makes impossible any disagreements within the *Holy Trinity – Father GOD, God Son Jesus*, and *God Holy Spirit*. See *1John 4:8,16*.

GOD is *Triune*. *Matthew 28:19*. There is *Holy Hierarchy* there. *Matthew 28:18, John 15:26*, etc. Yet again, it stays beyond our understanding. See *Isaiah 55:8*.

Verse 8.
Here we come to what I call *Threefold Baptism*. Some Teachers disagree(d) with this conclusion. Perhaps, they observed the apparent discord of subsequent behavior (*inward* attitude) of many Believers who "passed" the Baptism.

Back to my point, *the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood* might stand respectively for Baptism in the Holy Ghost, Water Baptism, and Baptism in the Name of Jesus. It bears Right Witness before the LORD, our GOD.

Note, many Holy Scriptures have more than one meaning, not contradicting one another in the Truth of GOD, especially considering the cruciality of those passages and their applicability to nowadays circumstances & conditions.

Further references:

Matthew 3:5-6 ---------- Our Water Baptism as it should be.
Matthew 3:16-17 & Luke 3:21-22 ---------- The Baptism of Jesus.
Matthew 28:19-20 ------- The Twelfth Commandment & *Threefold* Baptism.
John 1:29-34 --------- The Witnessing of the Holy Ghost by John the Baptist.
John 12:27-33 ---------- The Witnessing of the Holy Ghost by Jesus.

Q: If God the Father *is* a Spirit, then what exactly is the Holy Spirit?.
I used to think of the Holy Spirit as the Spirit of God the Father.
Q: But if the Father *is* a Spirit, then how can He *have* a Spirit?
Q: Is the Holy Spirit a Spirit *within* a Spirit?
Then I thought, well, maybe, the Holy Spirit is the Spirit of Jesus.
Q: But even that didn't make sense because how can Jesus and His Spirit be two separate Persons?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020. Condensed.)

A: I don't think that any human can answer your questions profoundly.
For nobody can comprehend GOD.
GOD is One in the Father LORD, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost. Each Person of that Holy Trinity is a Spirit. These Three are One Spirit, united so that any disharmony between Them is impossible.

Q: In *1Corinthians 15:45*, Paul claims that Christ "became a Spirit" after the Resurrection. What is meant by this?
Q: Is the *Spirit Christ* became distinct from *Christ's spirit*?
Q: Is *Christ's spirit* distinct from the Third Person of the Trinity?

(Signed: *Biblical Unitarian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, April 2020.)

A: It is written:

... The first man Adam was made a living soul;
the last Adam was made a quickening Spirit. (1Corinthians 15:45)

As I advised more than once in this book, to better understand the Word of GOD *in* the Bible, we are going to have to read several translations thereof (to say nothing about the right way: study & follow). See chapters 58 & 118.

After the Resurrection, Christ Jesus didn't become any "New Spirit" (distinct from) what He had been. His old (temporal) physical body died, and a new one became a dwelling place for His spirit & soul. That was & is the Resurrection. See *1Corinthians 15:51*.
Christ's spirit (whether before or after His Resurrection) has always been distinct from the Third Person of the Trinity, the Holy Ghost. Yet all Three – Father, Son, and Holy Spirit – are One GOD. Note *Matthew 28:19*.
Jesus the Christ became the One Who (the Way, the Truth, and the Life) freely gives Life Eternal to all doomed to eternal death. See *John 14:6*.

Q: Are the *Spirit, Blood,* and *Water* from *1John 5:6-11* analogous to the Persons of the Trinity?
Q: If so, how?

(Signed: Christian)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: You may see the beginning of this chapter.
In *1John 5:6-11, Verse 7* declares the Holy Trinity of GOD.
By *Verse 8,* the Threefold Baptism confirms that on Earth.
Thanks for your question.
Please find the relevant "Q & A" chapters in the Index.

Q: Is it fair to say that the Holy Spirit is the Power of GOD?
I found this on *gotquestions.org*:
"Question: What is the Power of the Holy Spirit?
Answer: The Power of the Holy Spirit is the Power of GOD. The Spirit, the Third Person of the Trinity, has appeared throughout Scripture as a Being through and by Whom Great Works of Power are made manifest. His Power was first seen in the Act of Creation, for it was by His Power the World came into being."
Q: Is this accurate or false teaching?

(Signed: Christian.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: In my opinion, it is better not to ponder on the things closed up to our minds. Kindly see *Deuteronomy 29:29, Isaiah 55:8-9* & *Sirach 3:21-23*.
The fair say is: *the Holy Spirit is God, Part of One Triune GOD*. No more.
And note: in your question, you partly cut the answer of *gotquestions.org*.
That answer, in turn, could well stop after the word *GOD*.

460

Q: In chapter 37, you disputed such a term as *Guardian Angel(s).*
How then would you explain the Words "their Angels" in this Scripture –

Take heed that ye despise not one of these little ones;
for I say unto you, That in Heaven their Angels do always behold
the Face of My Father which is in Heaven. (Matthew 18:10)

A: I would begin with some helpful definition(s).

A Theological Dictionary, by Charles Buck (1826), runs,

> *Angel ... a spiritual intelligent substance, the first in rank and dignity among created beings. The word Angel ... is Greek, and signifies a Messenger. The Hebrew word ... signifies the same. Angels, therefore in the proper signification of the word, do not import the nature of any being, but only the Office* to which they are appointed, especially by way of Message or Intercourse between GOD and His Creatures.***

* That *Office* requires a very high level of *Discipline*.
It is written:

... GOD spared not the Angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell,
and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto Judgment ...
(2Peter 2:4)

And the Angels which kept not their First Estate, but left their own Habitation,
He hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness
unto the Judgment of the Great Day. (Jude 1:6)

** The Angels of GOD may help us, parents, "*by way of Message or Intercourse between GOD and His Creatures*" to educate our children, yet not overruling our decisions in that regard. Mind well *Mark 5:42-43*, discussed in chapter 171.

As to *Matthew 18:10*, I take *their Angels* for *Watchers* as it is in the film "Jimmy" (see the particulars in *Reference / Christian & Charitable Movies*).
Considering many denotations as the term *Angel(s)* was used in Holy Scriptures, *John Robinson*, in his *Theological, Biblical and Ecclesiastical Dictionary, 1835*, also proposed the following definition –

Angel ... is properly a name of Office, not referring to the nature of the person employed, but to his Agency as a Messenger; and it may be said without risk, that if the word Messenger, Envoy, or Delegate, be mentally substituted by the reader for Angel, where it occurs, the Passage will lose nothing by the change ...

What also ought to be added to chapter 37 (Guardian Angels) is a further interpretation of *Psalm 103:20* –

Bless the LORD, ye His Angels, that excel in Strength,
that do His Commandments, hearkening unto the Voice of His Word.

The above Scripture is wrongly construed by some Teachers, who thought it possible to say, "it is written ..." and "command" the *Holy Angels of GOD* to do this or that. Behold, "of GOD" means "under the LORD GOD only". We should *pray* to our Father GOD, not "give orders" to His Angels.

I beg to note that *Satan* also quoted the Written Word of GOD in *Matthew 4:1-11*. Yea, he did, but the Spirit of the Word, even the Spirit of Truth, was not with him.

Many Scriptures are quoted by followers of different *denominations* or even bold *unbelievers* trying to back up their errors.
In this "Q & A" book – take a look at its Contents where many chapters marked "The unbelievers ask" and "Contradictions" – such instances are shown.

And how can you & I be sure of the best understanding of *the Voice of His Word*, per the above *Psalm 103:20*? Let's better be mindful of *1Corinthians 13:9* –

... we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

Please regard these Scriptures about the Holy Angels –

... Whosoever shall confess Me before men, him shall the Son of Man
also confess before the Angels of GOD. But he that denieth Me before men
shall be denied before the Angels of GOD. (Luke 12:8-9)

... they which shall be accounted Worthy to obtain that World,
and the Resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage.
Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the Angels; and are
the Children of GOD, being the Children of the Resurrection. (Luke 20:36)

461

Q: Brother, how to discover *my* Ministry?

A: Such a desire is quite normal for a *Christian*. What's more, as far as I can see it, the *Membership* in a Local Church ought to imply a Service.

The following Ministries – whether acceptable in your Church or not, paid or not, required any special education & training or not, full-time or part-time, or subject to whatever other conditions – you may consider taking up. *James 2:26.*

Adoption – is to adopt homeless or orphan children. Cooperate with the respective Government officials, *Children's Services, Professionals*.

Animal Protection – is to help respective Government and Charitable Organizations for protecting animals.

Bible Study – is to help but not supersede a personal studying of the Holy Bible. That Ministry may be delegated to *Small Groups* or be called a "*Bible School*", "*Sunday School*", etc., – all for the same purpose.

Charity Shop – is to run a second-hand free shop. Cooperate with *Shelter Service*.

Children's Service – is to provide Bible Studies for children in the Temple or home. Cooperate with *Home Service*.

Church Coordination – is to communicate with other Congregations, organize the Work of guest Preachers and representation elsewhere. Cooperate with *Pastor, Preachers*, and *Unity Service*.

Cleaning – is to keep the Temple or a place serving as such clean.

Counseling – is to witness Confessions. Consultancy. Most learned Elders are welcome. Cooperate with *Healing Service* and *Prayer Team*.

Deliverance Service – is to cast out evil spirits. Cooperate with *Prayer Team*. Cooperate with respective medical institutions.

Drugs Rehabilitation – is to help those who got freed from drugs, alcohol, smoking, and other evil addictions. Cooperate with respective medical institutions.

Ecological Service – is to help respective Government and Charitable Organizations for protecting our ecology.

Elders – is to run the respective Board or Church Council.
Lead every Church Service.

Employment – is to keep in touch with and help Christian employers, Christian job-seekers and Non-profit Organizations.
Cooperate with *Information Service*.

Evangelical Coordination – is to communicate with all educational institutions and propose free Christian Sermons.
Cooperate with *Evangelical Service*.

Evangelical Service – is to preach the Gospel and distribute Christian literature.
Cooperate with *Evangelical Coordination* and *Library*.

Financial backup – is not limited by Tithing. Members blessed with the income exceeding their reasonable needs are kindly invited.

Fitter – is to do repairs around the Temple.

Handy Help – is to help elderly and disabled people around their homes.
The free Charity objective ought to be legally certified.
Cooperate with *Home Service*.

Healing Service – is to pray for sick people in hospitals, homes, and the Church.
Help Confession as a compulsory Condition for Healing.
Cooperate with the *Counseling*, *Prayer Team*, and the respective officials.

Home Hosting – is to welcome a Small Group to your home.

Home Service – is to visit homes (in the time agreed) where Believers due to whatever reasons are unable to attend Church Services.
Cooperate with *Children Service* and *Handy Help*.

Hospitality Service – is to accommodate guest Preachers in your home.
Cooperate with *Church Coordination.*

Information Service – is to publish World Christian News in your Congregation. Cooperate with *Employment* and *Unity* Services.

Library – is to accept, keep, lend, and distribute Christian literature. Cooperate with *Evangelical Service*.

Missionary – is to minister full-time abroad. Cooperates with *Church Coordination.*

Musicians – are to accompany Church Choir.

Pastor (Minister, Priest) – A Shepherd. Oversees and counsels all Services.

Phone & Internet Counsel – is to stand by round-a-clock.

Prayer Team – is to pray for the needs of their Local Church. Cooperate with *Counseling*, *Deliverance Service*, and *Healing Service*.

Preachers – is to preach in their and other Churches. They are the most learned Believers. Cooperate with *Pastor* and *Church Coordination*.

Prison Service – is to preach the Gospel in prisons, Charitable Support. Cooperate with the respective Government Service. Ex-prisoners are most welcome. Cooperate with the *Library*.

Prison Rehabilitation – is to help those who have just ended up serving. Psychologists and ex-prisoners are most welcome. Cooperate with *Employment Service*.

Professionals – are Believers of all walks of life serve other Believers for free. *Proverbs 23:4.* Kindly read *John Grisham, The Street Lawyer.*

Rescue Service – is for Members fit & trained for the Service. Cooperate with respective Officials, *Street Patrol*, and *Prayer Team*.

Security Team – is to provide Safety and Due Order in the Church.

Shelter Service – is to run a Shelter for the homeless. Cooperate with *Charity Service* and respective Officials.

Singers – are to sing in Church Choir.

Small-Group – is to help Church Members in Bible Study and spiritual matters.

Street Patrol – is to help the respective Government Forces to provide due order and safety in the district, especially during night hours. Cooperate with respective Officials and the *Rescue Service*.

Technical Service – is to keep up Church computers and other devices.

Translators – assist foreign Ministers, translate Books, and accompany the Church Servants abroad. Cooperate with *Church Coordination.*

Treasurer – is to organize, record, and safeguard Church funds. A Member of Church Council.

Transportation – is to operate and maintain Church vehicles. To serve with a personal vehicle.

Unity Service – is to regularly serve as Preachers in other Christian Churches and Organizations to maintain GOD-Ordained Unity. Cooperate with *Information Service* and *Church Coordination*.

Ushers – is to serve the elderly and handicapped to, in, and from the Church.

Some of the above Services suggest a Local Church Membership, some don't. All of them are contingent upon circumstances & conditions. See *Hebrews 6:10.* And, of course, there are many more Christian Ministries. Consider the Gifts of GOD in you to find your Service. See *Matthew 5:16.* May GOD help you.

Q: How to stay focused on God every day?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: Good question. For not to stay thus focused presumes concentration on the *present* from the worldly viewpoint and letting the devil overload your head with "unsolvable" problems. Worse, the cursed one will often remind you of your shameful *past* – the sure way to get depressed.
But *Hebrews 12:1-2* is our Good Guidance. Please also read the first part of this chapter. It will remind you of *James 2:26 (Faith without Works).*
Please also see chapter 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit). Thank you.

462

Q: Brother, what does our Bible say about *Monasticism*?

A: According to Brother Charles Buck's, *A Theological Dictionary (1826)*, *"Monk" anciently denoted, "a person who retired from the world to give himself wholly to GOD, and to live in solitude and abstinence." The word is derived from the Latin [monachus], and that from the Greek [monaxos], "solitary" ... The original of Monks seems to have been this: the persecutions which attended the first ages of the Gospel forced some Christians to retire from the world, and live in deserts and places most private and unfrequented, in Hopes of finding that Peace and Comfort among beasts, which were denied them among men; and this being the case of some very extraordinary persons, their example gave such reputation to retirement, that the practice was continued when the reason of its commencement ceased ...*

Now, it is written,

His Disciples say unto Him,
If the case of the Man be so with his Wife, it is not good to marry. But He said unto them, All men cannot receive this saying, save they to whom it is given. For there are some eunuchs, which were so born from their mother's womb: and there are some eunuchs, which were made eunuchs of men: and there be eunuchs, which have made themselves eunuchs** for the Kingdom of Heaven's sake. He that is able to receive it, let him receive it.*
(Matthew 19:10-12)

*... he that standeth Stedfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath Power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keep his Virgin, doeth well. So then he that giveth her in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth her not in Marriage doeth better. The Wife is bound by the Law as long as her Husband liveth; but if her Husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the LORD. But she is Happier if she so abide *** ... (1Corinthians 7:37-40)*

* See *Deuteronomy 23:1* and "Q & A" chapter 787 (*Deuteronomy Chapter 23*).
** In *Matthew 19:11*, the words – *have made themselves eunuchs* – do not presume any *physical* intrusion. It is a matter of *celibacy*. For the Kingdom of Heaven is all about *spiritual* Purity, not a *physical* inability to sin.
*** Please, see chapter 27 (The Widowhood).

But what was in the Beginning?

LORD GOD said,

It is not Good that the Man should be alone. I will make him a Helpmate. ... This is why a Man leaves his father and mother and joins himself to his Wife, and they become One body. (Genesis 2:18,24, The Jerusalem Bible)

Brother *Martin Luther* in his work, "*The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis" (1858),* wrote –

> *... every state of an idle or indolent life, is condemnable ; such, for instance, as the life of monks and nuns ... (p.141)*
>
> *... if Noah had no children all those 500 years, he either endured that length of time the severe trial of unfruitfulness; or, if he abstained from marriage all those years, he stands an Example of most marvellous Chastity. And the latter I believe to be most probably the Truth of the case. But I neither speak of, nor intend here, the filthy chastity of the papists ... (p.469)*

To sum up the above Scriptures and the Teachings of Brothers Charles Buck and Martin Luther, I daresay there is nothing wrong with *Monasticism*, provided,
– First, that way is taken following the direct Command of our Father GOD,
– Second, our decision is backed by the respective Gifts of the Spirit and,
– Third, we do not run from the World of humankind created by the LORD, our GOD, looking for any personal peace & quiet, but willing to serve humanity by Fast Life, Intercession, and Preaching the Truth.

The Scriptures to mind:

... It is Good for a man not to touch a woman. (1Corinthians 7:1)

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath Righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath Light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the Temple of GOD with idols? For ye are the Temple of the Living GOD; as GOD hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their GOD, and they shall be My People. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the LORD, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My Sons and Daughters, saith the LORD Almighty. (2Corinthians 6:14-18)

463

Q: Brother, what can we learn from the *Book of Isaiah, Chapter 39*?

A: We learn the *spiritual Vigilance*. Let's study the Scripture.

> *1 At that time Merodachbaladan, the son of Baladan, king of Babylon, sent letters and a present to Hezekiah: for he had heard that he had been sick, and was recovered.*

That Miraculous Healing and Victory over the devil is described in *Isaiah 38*. Yet, in *Chapter 39*, we can see the enemy's countermove – *temptation*. What temptation? The s*piritual relaxation* – the best time for the evil one to strike. Look back at your Christian experience and find the examples. Note *Mark 13:37*.

> *2 And Hezekiah was glad of them, and shewed them the house of his precious things, the silver, and the gold, and the spices, and the precious ointment, and all the house of his armour, and all that was found in his treasures: there was nothing in his house, nor in all his dominion, that Hezekiah shewed them not.*

In our Joy, we are not supposed to forget spiritual *Vigilance*. The worldly peace with the neighboring heathen does not presume our spiritual Unity with them. Our conversation with unbelieving guests should not be on their atheistic level. Why not draw their (friendly) attention to the Greatest Treasure – the LORD, our Father – and testify on His Power and Glory? Keep in mind *Matthew 7:6*.

> *3 Then came Isaiah the Prophet unto King Hezekiah, and said unto him, What said these men? And from whence came they unto thee? And Hezekiah said, They are come from a far country unto me, even from Babylon. 4 Then said he, What have they seen in thine house? And Hezekiah answered, All that is in mine house have they seen: there is nothing among my treasures that I have not shewed them.*

That testimony on the financial prosperity was okay. On the other hand, the King also bore witness to his political and spiritual weakness, didn't he?

> *5 Then said Isaiah to Hezekiah, Hear the Word of the LORD of Hosts:*
> *6 Behold, the days come, that all that is in thine house, and that which thy fathers have laid up in store until this day, shall be carried to Babylon: nothing shall be left, saith the LORD.*

This way, the *Harvest Law* works: sowing the *worldly glory*, we (and those after us) have to reap only *satanic slavery*.

> *7 And of thy sons that shall issue from thee, which thou shalt beget, shall they take away; and they shall be eunuchs in the palace of the King of Babylon.*

What's more, by sowing *errors* in our lifetime, we make our children reap the *bad harvest* thereof. Do we want it?

> *8 Then said Hezekiah to Isaiah, Good is the Word of the LORD which thou hast spoken. He said moreover, For there shall be peace and truth in my days.*

Did Brother *Hezekiah* understand much from that conversation with the Prophet of GOD? Hardly. For only *worldly peace* (the absence of war) and *worldly truth* (the heathen reason) had to be expected. And that was what the King appreciated.

> But are you & I able to hear and take to heart all the *Truth* revealed unto us every time we communicate with our Heavenly Father through His Word?

Q: *Numbers 6:1-4* warns us about the evil of *alcoholism*, doesn't it?

A: Yes, it does, but also counsels us against every *compromise* with the devil. It is written:

> *1 And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, 2 Speak unto the Children of Israel, and say unto them, When either man or woman shall separate themselves to vow a Vow of a Nazarite, to separate themselves unto the LORD: 3 He shall separate himself from wine and strong drink, and shall drink no vinegar of wine, or vinegar of strong drink, neither shall he drink any liquor of grapes, nor eat moist grapes, or dried. 4 All the days of his Separation shall he eat nothing that is made of the vine tree, from the kernels even to the husk. (Numbers 6:1-4)*

When we come to Christ, welcome the Holy Ghost in our hearts, and promise Him to be Obedient to His Will, He expects us to get separated from everything which may impede our spiritual hearing.

Relevant chapters: 40 (Compromise), 521 (To be Sober & Vigilant), & 589 (The evil of alcoholism).

464

Q: In what way the *40th Chapter of Isaiah* remains instructive to us?

A: In the way of *Ecclesiastes 1:9*. Verily, *there is no new thing under the Sun*. We can read the *40th chapter* and contemplate some points thereof.

> *1 Comfort ye, comfort ye My People, saith your GOD. 2 Speak ye Comfortably to Jerusalem, and cry unto her, that her Warfare is accomplished, that her iniquity is pardoned: for she hath received of the LORD's Hand double for all her sins.*

Our Warfare is won. See *John 12:31*. Any military activity of ours does nothing special on the Scale of GOD. Our iniquity is pardoned. Mind the Cross of Christ.

> *3 The Voice of Him that crieth in the wilderness, Prepare ye the Way of the LORD, make straight in the desert a Highway for our GOD. 4 Every valley shall be exalted, and every mountain and hill shall be made low: and the crooked shall be made straight, and the rough places plain: 5 And the Glory of the LORD shall be revealed, and all flesh shall see it together: for the Mouth of the LORD hath spoken it.*

Now, the *wilderness* and the *desert* have the same spiritual meaning: the *fruitlessness* & *godlessness* of humankind. Every human spirit burdened by depression, defeat, and alike, get lifted; hearts filled with pride, be humbled; those corrupted by any dishonesty, repent; all angry & irritated souls, calm down. Then and only then, we shall see *the Glory of the LORD* right in ourselves.

> *6 The Voice said, Cry. And he said, What shall I cry? All flesh is grass, and all the Goodliness thereof is as the flower of the field: 7 The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: because the Spirit of the LORD bloweth upon it: surely the people is grass. 8 The grass withereth, the flower fadeth: but the Word of our GOD shall stand for ever.*

Our *bodies* are transitory as all *flora* & *fauna*. But the *Word of GOD* is Eternal.

> *9 O Zion, that bringest Good Tidings, get thee up into the High Mountain; O Jerusalem, that bringest Good Tidings, lift up thy voice with Strength; lift it up, be not afraid; say unto the cities of Judah, Behold your GOD!*
> *10 Behold, the LORD GOD will come with Strong Hand, and His Arm shall rule for Him: behold, His Reward is with Him, and His Work before Him.*

11 He shall feed His Flock like a shepherd: He shall gather the Lambs with His Arm, and carry them in His Bosom, and shall Gently lead those that are with young.

These Words are the Encouragement of LORD GOD addressed to His Church. May we spirit up one another. See *1Thessalonians 5:24 & Hebrews 10:23*.

12 Who hath measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and meted out Heaven with the span, and comprehended the dust of the Earth in a measure, and weighed the mountains in scales, and the hills in a balance? 13 Who hath directed the Spirit of the LORD, or being His Counseller hath taught Him? 14 With whom took He Counsel, and who instructed Him, and taught Him in the Path of Judgment, and taught Him Knowledge, and shewed to Him the Way of Understanding?

These Verses are among many in the Bible to remind us of the Greatness of the LORD, our Father. Why remind? – To keep our *reason* under. See *Isaiah 55:8*.

15 Behold, the nations are as a drop of a bucket, and are counted as the small dust of the balance: behold, He taketh up the isles as a very little thing. 16 And Lebanon is not sufficient to burn, nor the beasts thereof sufficient for a Burnt Offering. 17 All nations before Him are as nothing; and they are counted to Him less than nothing, and vanity.

However, the nothingness of the *Creation* in comparison with the *Creator* does not exclude the *Love* of the latter for the former. Mind *1John 4:8,16*.

18 To whom then will ye liken GOD? or what likeness will ye compare unto Him? 19 The workman melteth a graven image, and the goldsmith spreadeth it over with gold, and casteth silver chains. 20 He that is so impoverished that he hath no oblation chooseth a tree that will not rot; he seeketh unto him a cunning workman to prepare a graven image, that shall not be moved.

Hereby, we are reminded of the *Second Commandment* of the Law of GOD.

21 Have ye not known? have ye not heard? hath it not been told you from the Beginning? have ye not understood from the Foundations of the Earth?

The Question is to all people, the boldest atheists inclusive. We all are created in the Image & Likeness of the LORD (*Genesis 1:27*). All humans know that He is.

Those who reject that get reminded when facing death.

> *22 It is He that sitteth upon the circle of the Earth, and the inhabitants thereof are as grasshoppers; that stretcheth out the Heavens as a curtain, and spreadeth them out as a tent to dwell in: 23 That bringeth the Princes to nothing; He maketh the Judges of the Earth as vanity. 24 Yea, they shall not be planted; Yea, they shall not be sown: Yea, their stock shall not take root in the earth: and He shall also blow upon them, and they shall wither, and the whirlwind shall take them away as stubble.*

Those who think themselves "mighty of this world" are asked, *are you indeed?*

> *25 To whom then will ye liken Me, or shall I be equal? saith the Holy One. 26 Lift up your eyes on high, and behold Who hath created these things, that bringeth out their Host by number: He calleth them all by names by the Greatness of His Might, for that He is Strong in Power; not one faileth.*

Of a Truth, as unsearchable is the Wisdom of our Heavenly Father, so stays on the folly of unbelievers, the blind servants of Satan.

> *27 Why sayest thou, O Jacob, and speakest, O Israel, My way is hid from the LORD, and my judgment is passed over from my GOD? 28 Hast thou not known? hast thou not heard, that the Everlasting GOD, the LORD, the Creator of the ends of the Earth, fainteth not, neither is weary? there is no searching of His Understanding. 29 He giveth Power to the faint; and to them that have no Might He increaseth Strength. 30 Even the youths shall faint and be weary, and the young men shall utterly fall: 31 But they that wait upon the LORD shall renew their Strength; they shall mount up with Wings as eagles; they shall run, and not be weary; and they shall walk, and not faint.*
>
> Again, the Church is given the Word of Power & Encouragement.
> The LORD, our GOD we serve, is Faithful. Mind *Romans 15:4*.

Q: Are modern copies of the Bible still the Word of God?

(Signed: *Deist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, March 2021.)

A: Yes, they are. Kindly consider chapter 514 (The Holy Bible) and the Index section for *Bible*. Thank you.

465

Q: In chapter 461, you mentioned such a Service as a *Prayer Team*. Could you please tell me more about it?

A: That Unit is needed for our every Christian Local Church.

Why so? Look around when (from a Pulpit) your Church is called for a Common Prayer. Somebody prays, somebody stays. Now, guess the result. Even so, the more serious is Prayer, the more it is a business of a *Prayer Team*.

We spoke briefly about a *Prayer Team* in chapter 73 (True Fast) and made it clear that such should consist of Christians who keep *Fast* as per *Isaiah 58:6-14.*
And every Church Member may seek a Prayer Backup in time of need.
The best order, as it seems to me, is as follows:

1. GOD First. Personal Prayers & Fast.
2. *Confession* witnessed by *Counselor* to find the *spiritual reason* for a problem.
3. Backup of a Prayer Team. Personal Thanksgiving to GOD.
4. The appropriate help from professionals outside the Church.

One Team Member ought to keep a *Prayer Log* for *Thanksgiving* purposes.
The form of such a log is simple enough: the first name of an applicant, a brief subject, the date of a Prayer, and the date of the LORD's Answer.
To promptly report the Answer of GOD and give Him Thanks by the Team is crucial for our Relationship with the Heavenly Father.

Q: How do we avoid growing weary with Prayer when our life is miserable, and we cannot see God doing anything?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: Every one of us may get in very different circumstances & conditions, not always pleasant.
In Prayer, keep in mind *1John 5:14 (ask any thing according to His Will)*.
When circumstances get hard, don't forget about the Promised Backup from your Local Church, Ministry, or Christian Friend. *Matthew 18:20*.
Life is not "miserable" because it is *GOD* Who gave it. *2Chronicles 15:2*.
And, if "we cannot see GOD doing anything", it does not mean our seeing is correct. In chapter 129 (The Ninth Commandment), please read good relevant words from a Christian movie, "I am Gabriel". GOD bless you.

466

Q: Reading *Isaiah 42:19-20,* we've got puzzled by the Words,
Who is blind, but My Servant? or deaf, as My Messenger that I sent?
Please, explain.

A: The relevant context is *Isaiah 42:18-25*.

> *18 Hear, ye deaf; and look, ye blind, that ye may see. 19 Who is blind, but My Servant? or deaf, as My Messenger that I sent? who is blind as he that is Perfect, and blind as the LORD's Servant? 20 Seeing many things, but thou observest not; opening the ears, but he heareth not.*

These Words are addressed to all humanity. However, in the time of Prophet Isaiah, the first addressee were *Jews* – the LORD's People Israel. But those ancient folks are long gone, whereas we, His People *Christians,* live here & now. And so stays the evils of our spiritual blindness & deafness, grown up on the "rich" ground of worldly reason. Instead of closing our hearts & minds to what is unprofitable, we are still blind & deaf to the Wisdom of GOD.

> *21 The LORD is well pleased for His Righteousness' sake; He will magnify the Law, and make it Honourable.*

Our Loving Father cannot contradict Himself – His Holy Will, the Word of Truth, and Eternal Law. Doesn't He mean Good for His People as well?

> *22 But this is a people robbed and spoiled; they are all of them snared in holes, and they are hid in prison houses: they are for a prey, and none delivereth; for a spoil, and none saith, Restore.*

Sadly, very few of those calling themselves Christians are free from the pits of *mammon*, traps of *fear*, infections of *corruption*, and sufferings of *sickness*.

> *23 Who among you will give ear to this? Who will hearken and hear for the time to come?*

Here, we come to the Wisdom of our Heavenly Father, even two mighty Sources thereof. The first is the Bible Study. The second is the Implementation of the Truth revealed.
Please, refer to chapter 58 (K & U & W) for more.

24 Who gave Jacob for a spoil, and Israel to the robbers? Did not the LORD, He against Whom we have sinned? For they would not walk in His Ways, neither were they Obedient unto His Law. 25 Therefore He hath poured upon him the Fury of His Anger, and the strength of battle: and it hath set him on Fire round about, yet he knew not; and it burned him, yet he laid it not to heart.

In chapter 64, we talked about GOD's Punishment.
The subject of chapter 90 was Faithfulness to GOD.
Chapter 300 covers the curse of wars.

May the Lord Jesus show us the Right Way to follow Him. Amen.

Q: I'm confused about *Matthew 7:21-23*.

21 Not every one that saith unto Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven; but he that doeth the Will of My Father which is in Heaven. 22 Many will say to Me in that Day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Thy Name? and in Thy Name have cast out devils? and in Thy Name done many Wonderful Works? 23 And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from Me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:21-23)

(1) Accepting Jesus is the key and (I know this is debated) that *Works* don't equal *Salvation*. How would you describe the difference between just saying "Lord, Lord" versus actually accepting?
(2) And if Works doesn't equal Salvation, what does it mean by saying, "the one who does the Will of My Father in Heaven"? Thank you!

(Signed: *Christian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: Please read chapter 40 (Compromise), where *Matthew 7:21-23* was studied.
(1) See also the *Index* section for *Jesus* – "*accepting*". It is not hard to understand the difference between the words (wise vs meaningless) and the attitude of heart (honest & believing vs compromising & lying), which our tongue reveals. See chapter 132 (Tongue). Note *Matthew 12:34 (out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh)*.
What you call "actually accepting" is *welcoming & following*.
(2) *Verse 22*. Those Works of ours, actually, are done by *GOD* through us.
So, if *He* accepts you, see yourself as His Instrument, no more than that.
Note well *1Samuel 16:7 (the LORD looketh on the heart)*. Thank you.

467

Q: Why *women* – Gloria Copeland, Joice Meyer, and so many others – preach in our Churches?
Q: Is it not against the Word of GOD?

A: Probably, you mean the following Scriptures –

Let your women keep Silence in the Churches:
for it is not permitted unto them to speak; but they are commanded to be
under Obedience, as also saith the Law. And if they will learn any thing,
let them ask their husbands at home: for it is a shame for women
to speak in the Church. (1Corinthians 14:34-35)

Let the woman learn in Silence with all Subjection.
But I suffer not a woman to teach, nor to usurp authority over the man,
but to be in Silence. (1Timithy 2:12)

Mind the keywords *Silence* (meaning *Listening to the Holy Ghost*) and *speak* & *teach* (i.e., every talk other than *Prophecy* or *Sermon*).
That Discipline, by the way, is required of *Brethren* also.

Let's not forget that the LORD, our Father, has called Godly women to serve Him in this or that Office.
Kindly note *Judges 4:4; 2Kings 22:14-20; 2Chronicles 34:22-28;*
The Book of Ruth; The Book of Esther; & The Book of Judith.

And there was one Anna, a Prophetess ... And she was a widow of about
fourscore and four years, which departed not from the Temple, but served GOD
with Fastings and Prayers night and day. And she coming in that instant gave
Thanks likewise unto the LORD, and spake of Him to all them that looked for
Redemption in Jerusalem. (Luke 2:36-38)

The above reasoning, however, is not to stay in the way of *Brethren* to work as *Spiritual Leaders* of their Christian Congregations & Families.

Neither do I support the policy of some Christian Shepherds to promote & anoint *Sisters* to be Pastors, Teachers, Preachers, as well as to every other Leadership in the Church of GOD, *if* such a Calling is not the direct Command of the LORD.
Thank you.

468

Q: Brother, how to understand and follow the succession of Beatitudes given in *2Peter 1:5-7*?

A: These Beatitudes are mentioned in our book more than once. Yet the *order* (not compulsorily corresponding to their relative importance) they follow one another is interesting.

Coming after the Condition – "*according as His Divine Power hath given unto us* ..." – thus making our Obedience possible, it is written,

... giving all Diligence, add to your Faith Virtue; and to Virtue Knowledge;
and to Knowledge Temperance; and to Temperance Patience;
and to Patience Godliness; and to Godliness Brotherly Kindness;
and to Brotherly Kindness Charity. (2Peter 1:5-7)

Let's study the Scripture step-by-step.

First, "*... giving all Diligence, add to your Faith Virtue ...*"

Faith is a belief, persuasion, & conviction that the Written Word of GOD is True, regardless of any reasoning or substantiation on the contrary, our physical senses inclusive. Faith is the Power of our spirit. It has no limits when we believe up to the level of acting upon the Word – the only Way our Faith is proven & of Virtue.

As per *Zondervan Bible Dictionary*, *Virtue* (is) *Strength, Ability often involving moral worth; any excellence of a person or thing; Power, influence.*

Therefore,

Faith without Works is dead. (*James 2:17,20,26*)

... being justified by Faith, we have Peace with GOD through our Lord
Jesus Christ: by Whom also we have access by Faith into this Grace
wherein we stand, and rejoice in Hope of the Glory of GOD. (Romans 5:1-2)

Remember the Words of Lord Jesus –

... If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My Disciples indeed;
and ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free. (John 8:31-32)

Thus, by actually *following the Word*, that is, by living according to the Holy Will of GOD, we approach so important (second) Source of Knowledge (the first one being *Bible Study*).
So, our first step is connected to the second – "*... and to Virtue Knowledge ...*"

Thus saith the LORD,

My People are destroyed for lack of Knowledge:
because thou hast rejected Knowledge, I will also reject thee ... (Hosea 4:6)

True Knowledge is treasured by Him –

For I desire Mercy, and not Sacrifice;
and the Knowledge of GOD more than Burnt-Offerings. (Hosea 6:6)

Third, "*... and to Knowledge Temperance ...*"

For that's what our *Knowledge of GOD* presumes, and *Spirit Warfare* demands,

We know that whosoever is born of GOD sinneth not; but he that is begotten of GOD keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. (1John 5:18)

Fourth, "*... and to Temperance Patience ...*"

... when ye do Well, and suffer for it,
ye take it Patiently, this is Acceptable with GOD. (1Peter 2:20)

According to Brother Kenneth Copeland, our *Faith* has a Power-twin – *Patience*. The last (as well as *Giving*) is a stumbling stone. Because it is not a matter of whether our Faith is weak and needs Strength but a lack of Patience and giving way to *doubt* and other lies of the devil right into our mind, followed by our wrong conclusions made upon physical feelings, common sense, etc.

Fifth, "*... and to Patience Godliness ...*"

By *Zondervan Bible Dictionary*, *Godliness* [is] *the Piety toward GOD and Rectitude of conduct which springs from a Right relationship with Him. It's not a right action which is done from a sense of duty, but is that spontaneous Virtue that comes from the indwelling Christ, and which reflects Him.*

So, the "spiritual reflex" of *Godliness* is a Good backup unto *Patience*.

... Godliness is Profitable unto all things, having Promise of the Life that now is, and of that which is to come. (1Timothy 4:8)

Sixth, "*... and to Godliness Brotherly Kindness ...*"

It is written:

... thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself:
I am the LORD. (Leviticus 19:18)

The *Eleventh Commandment* to the Church of GOD is also about *Love* –

A New Commandment I give unto you, that ye love one another;
as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know
that ye are My Disciples, if ye have Love one to another. (John 13:34-35)

Seventh, "*... and to Brotherly Kindness Charity.*"

Charity, apart from being Love in action (see chapter 135 – Love & Charity), is the Love spread beyond the Church into the outside world. There the Good News is preached according to our Great Commission (*Matthew 28:18-20*).
This Mission is indeed impossible without *Perfect Love*:

... Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do Good to them that hate you,
and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you;
that ye may be the Children of your Father which is in Heaven ...
Be ye therefore Perfect, even as your Father which is in Heaven is Perfect.
(Matthew 5:44-45,48)

Love is a matter of Life and death –

We know that we have passed
from death unto Life, because we love the Brethren.
He that loveth not his Brother abideth in death. (1John 3:14)

Love unites us with GOD –

... GOD is Love;
and he that dwelleth in Love dwelleth in GOD, and GOD in him. (1John 4:16)

Note the conclusive Words –

For if these things be in you, and abound,
they make you that ye shall neither be barren nor unfruitful in the Knowledge
of our Lord Jesus Christ. But he that lacketh these things is blind, and cannot see
afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old sins. (2Peter 1:8-9)

469

Q: What could be our words of consolation to those who suffered some terrible loss or injury?

A: As regards *our* words, there are not any in such cases. That's why, kindly avoid the words "I understand", "I know", and alike.

Like in the case of *depression* (chapter 92), we can do well just *staying with* our suffering friend, and the less time he (she) is *alone*, the better. I say it from my sad experience.
The only True Words of Consolation are in our Holy Bible. Because whoever and whatever might be lost, we always have our *Loving Father GOD* with us.

Now our Lord Jesus Christ Himself, and GOD, even our Father,
which hath loved us, and hath given us Everlasting Consolation
and Good Hope through Grace, comfort your hearts, and stablish you
in every Good Word and Work. (2Thessalonians 2:16-17)

But simply sending (or quoting to) the suffering ones to the Written Word of GOD is not enough. We are *One* as the Body of Christ, Local Church, Small Group, or any other Christian Team.
Note *John 13:34-35, Ephesians 4:4-6, 1Peter 4:8, & 1John 4:7-8*.
Therefore, our *Prayer Backup* – until we shall get our Brother or Sister back to the Team – cannot be overestimated.

Be of Good Courage, and He shall strengthen your heart,
all ye that hope in the LORD. (Psalms 31:24)

Q: To cremate or not? The Bible neither favors nor forbids the process of cremation. Nevertheless, many Christians believe that their bodies would be ineligible for Resurrection if they get cremated. Moreover, as God is known to be All-Powerful, it should not be impossible for Him to resurrect someone even after the cremation. Thank you.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021.)

A: It does not matter. Neither cremation itself nor superstitions of those you called "many Christians". Cremation cannot destroy a human *spirit & soul*.
Cemeteries, on the other hand, do not add much beauty to our lands.
Almighty GOD will meet us all on Judgment, cremated or not. Thank you.

470

Q: Brother, speaking of *Evangelizing*, how to be able to answer every question of *unbelievers*?

A: We spoke about Evangelization in chapters 24, 43, 199, & 283, as well as answered such questions in many chapters named "The unbelievers ask" and "Contradictions".

Notwithstanding such a simple answer to your question as "study the Bible", we may consider the relevant *Parallel Truth* –

... This kind can come forth by nothing,
but by Prayer and Fasting. (Mark 9:29)

Yes, sure, that Scripture is about *casting out the demons*. But don't we have a business with the evil spirits armed with their time-tested weapons of *unbelief*, *doubt*, *reason*, &c.? Isn't our Promised Sword of the Spirit mightier?

"This kind" quoted above is manifold. So what?
Pray for more of the Power of Anointing of the Holy Ghost.
Note well *Matthew 7:11 & Luke 11:13*.

If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children,
how much more shall your Heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit
to them that ask Him? (Luke 11:13)

Kindly note the Words of the *Lord's Prayer* (chapter 284):

Give us this day our daily Bread. (Matthew 6:11)

So, pray for that Bread and *take* it. Be well-fed by the Word of GOD.

Read *Isaiah 58:6-14* about True Fast.
Remember this Promise:

Then shalt thou call, and the LORD shall answer;
thou shalt cry, and He shall say, Here I am. (Isaiah 58:9)

GOD bless you.

471

Q: Why did GOD call His People “Jacob and Israel” in *Isaiah 44:21*?

A: Yea, it is written,

Remember these, O Jacob and Israel; for thou art My Servant: I have formed thee; thou art My Servant: O Israel, thou shalt not be forgotten of Me. I have blotted out, as a thick cloud, thy transgressions, and, as a cloud, thy sins: return unto Me; for I have redeemed thee. (Isaiah 44:21-22)

To comprehend the reason why two names – *Jacob* & *Israel* – old & new – were used, we ought to remember the relevant story of *Jacob* – the Patriarch *Israel*. Read the *Book of Genesis chapters 25-35* with special attention to *28:12-15* and there to the Promise of our LORD GOD:

... behold, I am with thee, and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest, and will bring thee again into this land; for I will not leave thee, until I have done that which I have spoken to thee of. (Genesis 28:15)

Did it make any substantial changes in Jacob’s Life? Yes, it did, between him and the LORD, his GOD. Yet, not much happened on the part of Jacob, who couldn’t keep due Peace in his family, was afraid of his brother Esau, &c., &c.

By *Genesis 32:28* & *35:10*, Jacob got his name *Israel*.
Israel became the Name of GOD’s People as per *Genesis 35:11*. But the old name – the past – is so many times reminded in the Holy Scriptures afterward, as well as both names: e.g., *Psalms 78:21; Isaiah 48:12; Jeremiah 46:27*.

Then we got our New name – *Christians*. See *Isaiah 65:15* & *Acts 11:26*.

... he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that Circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and Circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose Praise is not of men, but of GOD. (Romans 2:28-29)

Now, what about us, Christians? *Lord Jesus* is our Great Grace & Blessing.
In our Christian Experience, we all have seen the Work of GOD in our lives.
So, what about keeping *our part* of the Covenant? Shall we stay in the past?
The following part of this chapter may help answer these questions.

Q: What is the meaning of Jacob wrestling with God?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, February 2021.)

A: It is written:

> *24 ... and there wrestled a Man with him until the breaking of the day.*
> *25 And when he saw that he prevailed not against him, he touched the hollow of his thigh; and the hollow of Jacob's thigh was out of joint, as he wrestled with him. 26 And he said, Let me go, for the day breaketh. And he said, I will not let thee go, except thou bless me. 27 And he said unto him, What is thy name? And he said, Jacob. 28 And he said, Thy name shall be called no more Jacob, but Israel: for as a Prince hast thou Power with GOD and with men, and hast prevailed. 29 And Jacob asked him, and said, Tell me, I pray thee, thy name. And he said, Wherefore is it that thou dost ask after my name? And he blessed him there. 30 And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel: for I have seen GOD face to face, and my life is preserved. (Genesis 32:24-30)*

I understand *Verse 28* this way: ... *for as a Prince* (Patriarch, the Servant of GOD) *hast thou Power with GOD* (His Blessed Backup to do Good) *and with men* (GOD-given Authority over them), *and hast prevailed* (proved your willpower in the Eyes of GOD and ability to withstand evil on the part of men).

Well, back to the question – "the meaning of Jacob wrestling with God".
More often than not we foolishly struggle with the LORD, notwithstanding His incomprehensible Love to us, indefinite Wisdom incomparable with ours, and so Gracious Will to help, protect, and save. We forget His Precious Word:

Trust the LORD with all thine heart;
and lean not unto thine own understanding. (Proverbs 3:5)

> *... the sense seems to be faithfully rendered by Jerome: ... if Jacob acted thus heroically with GOD, much more should he prove superior to men; for certainly it was the Purpose of GOD to send forth His Servant to various combats, inspired with the Confidence resulting from so Great a Victory, lest he should afterwards become vacillating. For He does not merely impose a name, as risen are accustomed to do, but with the name He gives the thing itself which the name implies, that the event may correspond with it.*
> *(John Calvin, Commentary on Genesis.)*

472

Q: In chapter 64, we discussed how GOD's Punishment worked.
Could you please exemplify that in the *Book of Isaiah, Chapter 47*?

A: Standing upon *Ecclesiastes 1:9* and other Scriptures,
I dare to suggest the following comments.

> *1 Come down, and sit in the dust, O virgin daughter of Babylon, sit on the ground: there is no throne, O daughter of the Chaldeans: for thou shalt no more be called tender and delicate. 2 Take the millstones, and grind meal: uncover thy locks, make bare the leg, uncover the thigh, pass over the rivers. 3 Thy nakedness shall be uncovered, Yea, thy shame shall be seen: I will take Vengeance, and I will not meet thee as a man. 4 As for our Redeemer, the LORD of Hosts is His Name, the Holy One of Israel. 5 Sit thou silent, and get thee into darkness, O daughter of the Chaldeans: for thou shalt no more be called, The Lady Of Kingdoms.*

The more we study the Word of GOD, the clearer we can see the *dark heathen life* through the Light of Scriptures. The "beauty" of their *lying world* vanishes.

> *6 I was Wroth with My People, I have polluted Mine Inheritance, and given them into thine hand: thou didst shew them no Mercy; upon the ancient hast thou very heavily laid thy yoke.*

GOD's Due Punishment upon His People Christians is "welcomed" by *the devil* and *his spirit-blind human puppets*, as they scoffer indeed the Word of Truth and our Faith. And so Christians are persecuted.

> *7 And thou saidst, I shall be a lady for ever: so that thou didst not lay these things to thy heart, neither didst remember the latter end of it. 8 Therefore hear now this, thou that art given to pleasures, that dwellest carelessly, that sayest in thine heart, I am, and none else beside me; I shall not sit as a widow, neither shall I know the loss of children: 9 But these two things shall come to thee in a moment in one day, the loss of children, and widowhood: they shall come upon thee in their perfection for the multitude of thy sorceries, and for the great abundance of thine enchantments.*

The unbelievers will continue up to the World's End – few of them repent. Most folks prefer to believe satanic lies. Remember *2Corinthians 4:4*.

10 For thou hast trusted in thy wickedness: thou hast said, None seeth me. Thy wisdom and thy knowledge, it hath perverted thee; and thou hast said in thine heart, I am, and none else beside me.

The wicked ways of this evil world seem to be successful, confidential, prudent, and competent. How to qualify all that any other way than *mass madness*?

11 Therefore shall evil come upon thee; thou shalt not know from whence it riseth: and mischief shall fall upon thee; thou shalt not be able to put it off: and desolation shall come upon thee suddenly, which thou shalt not know.
12 Stand now with thine enchantments, and with the multitude of thy sorceries, wherein thou hast laboured from thy youth; if so be thou shalt be able to profit, if so be thou mayest prevail. 13 Thou art wearied in the multitude of thy counsels. Let now the astrologers, the stargazers, the monthly prognosticators, stand up, and save thee from these things that shall come upon thee. 14 Behold, they shall be as stubble; the Fire shall burn them; they shall not deliver themselves from the Power of the Flame: there shall not be a coal to warm at, nor fire to sit before it. 15 Thus shall they be unto thee with whom thou hast laboured, even thy merchants, from thy youth: they shall wander every one to his quarter; none shall save thee.

Kindly see chapter 33 covering the Acts of GOD.
In the above Scripture, take enchantments, counsels, and sorceries for scientific atheism; astrologers as they are; stargazers for astronomers; monthly prognosticators for meteorologists; thy merchants for all money-makers living by the rule – "the end justifies means".

Our GOD doesn't operate by their common sense. See *Nehemiah 9:33-37.*

Q: Why would God harden the heart of the Pharaoh in the *Book of Exodus* to punish a large group of innocent people for keeping His People as slaves?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2021.)

A: You may refer to chapter 64 regarding the Work of GOD's Punishment.
By GOD-given Free will, a sinner is first who steps off from LORD GOD.
In *Exodus 1:8-11*, that sinful step was described. That "God hardened the heart of the Pharaoh", was GOD's Answer(s) to the King's evil way(s).
Kindly note: "a largely group of innocent people" was, in fact, not such guiltless. And read mindfully *Nehemiah 9:33-37*, mentioned above.
The sinful King would never have come to power to rule innocent people.
So, please, don't doubt the Rightful Judgment of the LORD GOD.

473

Q: Could you please explain the Words of Apostle Peter about Apostle Paul in *2Peter 3:16*?

A: Let's see that Scripture within the context where it belongs.

> *14 Wherefore, Beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be Diligent that ye may be found of Him in Peace, without spot, and blameless. 15 And account that the Longsuffering of our Lord is Salvation; even as our Beloved Brother Paul also according to the Wisdom given unto him hath written unto you; 16 As also in all his Epistles, speaking in them of these things; in which are some things hard to be understood, which they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, unto their own destruction. 17 Ye therefore, Beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own Stedfastness. 18 But grow in Grace, and in the Knowledge of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ. To Him be Glory both now and for ever. Amen. (2Peter 3:14-18)*

Now, there are two points in *Verse 16*.

First, "*... some things hard to be understood ...*"
In no way it presumes any "unclear" thing in Brother Paul's Teaching. For *hard* doesn't mean *impossible*. The heavier Teaching, the better Study it requires.

Second, "*... they that are unlearned and unstable wrest, as they do also the other Scriptures, unto their own destruction.*"
Reject diligent Study and "*unlearned*" is your result. Without True Knowledge received and Courage developed, one is but "*unstable*". Spiritually unstable Shepherd or Teacher leads others only to a perversion of the Truth of GOD. So, what can those "*unlearned and unstable*" expect but "*their own destruction*"?

Examples of how they that are unlearned & unstable *wrest* the Holy Scriptures – by incorrect translation, false interpretation, trying to present them as a backup to wrong teaching, etc. – we can see first of all in denominationalism.*
For to *wrest* doesn't compulsory mean to distort completely, to be *unlearned* in no way denotes a total absence of education, and *unstable* is not the unwillingness to serve GOD. No. In all the above cases, the (achieved) aim of Satan is but a gentle push making us step just a bit from the Right Track – the Eleventh Commandment – to deviate more and more later on.

Let me also draw your attention to *Verse 17* –

... seeing ye know these things before ...

These Words mean that Apostle Paul did not add anything "new" to the Written Word of GOD, the Gospels in particular.
I don't know about you, but whenever something in Paul's Teaching appears to me as "*hard to be understood*", I go straight to the Parallels in the Gospels. The last contains the same Teaching given by the same Holy Spirit of GOD –

Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me?
The Words that I speak unto you I speak not of Myself:
but the Father that dwelleth in Me, He doeth the Works. (John 14:10)

* Note the Scriptures about our Christian Unity –

Jeremiah 32:38-40; John 13:34-35; 17:21-23; Ephesians 4:1-6.

Kindly see the subject of *Unity of Saints* in the Index.

Q: Can you explain *the Third Heaven* in *2Corinthians 12:2*?

A: It is written:

I knew a man in Christ above fourteen years ago,*
(whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body,
*I cannot tell: GOD knoweth;) such an one caught up to the Third Heaven**.

* I agree with the interpretation given by Brother Calvin regarding *a man in Christ* being nobody but Brother Paul himself.

** The Third Heaven is explained differently by interpreters.
Why not take the Third Heaven as the Throne of GOD, the Second one as the Battleground of His Holy Angels against the demons of Satan, and the First as Paradise – all three named in the Scriptures*** and belonging to the Spirit World?

*** *Daniel 10:13; 12:1; Matthew 23:22; Luke 23:43; 2Corinthians 12:4; Colossians 3:1; Hebrews 4:16; 12:2; Revelation 2:7; 7:15; 12:7; 14:5; 22:1,3.*

474

Q: Once, I was asked by a friend of mine (unbeliever) something like, what's the difference between *tales* and *parables*?
Q: So, my answer was, it's the *lie* and *truth*, respectively. Was I right?

A: That depends on what each of you meant in that conversation.

Tales & parables don't pretend to tell the *truth* or disclose *facts*. Yet those pieces of fiction often present us with *teachings* or *precepts*, more or less profitable.

Who is Wise, and he shall understand these things?
Prudent, and he shall know them? For the Ways of the LORD are Right,
and the Just shall walk in them: but the transgressors shall fall therein.
(Hosea 14:9)

The *Parables of Christ* is another story. Outwardly, they may look *unreal* (e.g., *The Parable Of A Sower*), but the *Teaching* given is Worthy, speaking briefly.

... Every one that is of the Truth heareth My Voice. (John 18:37)

Moreover, His Parables give *Instruction*, as in *The Parable Of Good Samaritan*.

... Go, and do thou likewise. (Luke 10:37)

When somebody gives us an advice and the last doesn't work or even does harm, the only thing we can expect to hear from our advisor is, "sorry".
When *the LORD, our GOD*, teaches or commands, and *we* don't pay attention, that "sorry" is spoken by us later on.

Heaven and Earth shall pass away,
but My Words shall not pass away. (Matthew 24:35)

Please mind the Challenge – "*prove Me now herewith*" – as in *Malachi 3:10*.
Therefore,

Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden,
and I will give you Rest. Take My Yoke upon you, and learn of Me;
for I am Meek and Lowly in heart: and ye shall find Rest unto your souls.
For My Yoke is easy, and My Burden is light. (Matthew 11:28-30)

475

Q: What comments on *Isaiah 53* would you prefer?

A: I *commend* those of Brother John Calvin, *prefer* my own (the condensed version is given hereunder), and strongly *advise* our readers to have theirs. This advice does not promote any further split in the Church of GOD. Nay. Diligent study of the Word of GOD presumes Guidance of His Holy Spirit, which would never lead to division, but the Unity of Knowledge of Truth.

Brother *John Calvin* suggested the beginning of reading from *Isaiah 52:13*.
That way, the Highest Authority of Lord Jesus over & to *all* rulers of this World is reminded, whether or not the Scripture would be taken by them to hearts.

Now, let's meditate together on *Isaiah 53*.

1 Who hath believed our Report? and to whom is the Arm of the LORD revealed? 2 For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: He hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see Him, there is no beauty that we should desire Him. 3 He is despised and rejected of men; a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from Him; He was despised, and we esteemed Him not.

The Powerful *Verse 1* might well speak about all the *Holy Scriptures*.
Verse 2 is the only outward description of our Blessed Lord we have had so far: nothing "special" from a spirit-blind viewpoint of the *heathen – a dry ground*.
In *Verse 3* (and all of *Isaiah 53* accordingly), I take "*of men*" as "*by me*", "*we*" & "*our*" as "*I*" & "*my*", etc., following the strategy suggested in chapter 102.

4 Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of GOD, and afflicted. 5 But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our Peace was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed.

Verse 4 depicts the twisted atheistic "understanding" of the Word of GOD.
Please have a look at many "Q & A" chapters titled "*The unbelievers ask*".
Verse 5 explains our *Peace* & *True Healing* as the Promised ones.
The Ultimate Price was paid for our Redemption, Reconciliation, and Salvation.

I am the Light of the World: he that followeth Me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the Light of Life. (John 8:12)

6 All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on Him the iniquity of us all.

Verse 6 is a picture of *all* our sinful selves, without exceptions.
Here, we can also see the best Manifestation of GOD's Love & Perfect Justice.

7 He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He opened not His mouth: He is brought as a lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He openeth not His mouth. 8 He was taken from prison and from Judgment: and who shall declare His Generation? for He was cut off out of the land of the living: for the transgression of My People was He stricken.
9 And He made His grave with the wicked, and with the Rich in His death; because He had done no violence, neither was any deceit in His mouth.

Verses 7 & *9* came true many times, according to the *Book of Martyrs.*
In *Verse 8*, we can read about the Church of GOD as *One* Body in, of, and with Christ Jesus, being delivered from the spiritual prison of Satan and Due Judgment thereon. The Holy Purpose of our Heavenly Father is stated here by the Words "*His Generation"* and "*My People*".
In *Verse 9*, "*with the wicked, and with the Rich"* may have three meanings.
First, of two criminals, one remained as such, but another repented and received his Riches in Paradise & Heavenly Kingdom (*Luke 23:39-43*).
Second, all humans Jesus died for and represented by those two malefactors.
Third, the decent funeral provided by His Follower Joseph (*Luke 23:50-56*).

10 Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise Him; He hath put Him to grief: when Thou shalt make His Soul an Offering for sin, He shall see His Seed, He shall prolong His Days, and the Pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in His Hand. 11 He shall see of the travail of His Soul, and shall be satisfied: by His Knowledge shall My Righteous Servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities.

Verses 10 & 11 are also about the Holy Will of our Father GOD – "*His Seed"* is the Church of GOD and "*His Days"* – the Eternity.
It is written, "*... shall ... justify many ...*" Why not *all*? – See *2Corinthians 4:4.*

12 Therefore will I divide Him a portion with the great, and He shall divide the spoil with the strong; because He hath poured out His Soul unto death: and He was numbered with the transgressors; and He bare the sin of many, and made Intercession for the transgressors.

Take "*the great*" & "*the strong*" for *Satan*, and see the *Eternal Judgment* & the pertinent division of humanity – those who followed *LORD GOD* & *His Christ* to His Kingdom and those who had chosen *the devil*, *hell*, and *eternal death*.

My Sheep hear My Voice, and I know them, and they follow Me:
and I give unto them Eternal Life; and they shall never perish, neither
shall any man pluck them out of My Hand. My Father, which gave them Me,
is Greater than all; and no man is able to pluck them out of My Father's Hand.
(John 10:27-29)

Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My Voice,
and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him,
and he with Me. (Revelation 3:20)

Q: (1) If you believe in Heaven or hell *immediately* after death, please try to explain *Genesis 3:19* to have it make sense –

In the sweat of thy face
shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it
wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

(2) It states *you* will return back to the ground, not just your *body*.
(3) If you think that it is referring to just the *body*, then you would have to prove that our *spirit* (Breath of Life) has consciousness outside of the body.
(4) You have to prove that Adam *existed* (or was animated) before GOD put the Breath of Life (or Adam's spirit) into the body.

(Signed: *Christian, non-denominational*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) I believe that after our death we continue in *Paradise* or *hell*.
See chapters: 8 (Hell), 153 (The Kingdom of Heaven), & 573 (Eternity).
(2) *You* are spirit, soul, and body united. And each part may be called *you*.
Please, compare it with GOD seen in each Person of the Holy Trinity.
Chapters 108 (The trinity of a human) & 459 (Holy Trinity of GOD).
(3) Kindly see the proof, say, in *1Corinthians 15:51-53*. Chapter 250.
(4) Please, read the following Scripture as the proof & the answer.

And the LORD GOD formed Man of the dust of the ground,
and breathed into his nostrils the Breath of Life; and Man became a living soul.
(Genesis 2:7)

476

Q: The meaning of *Isaiah 55:1-2* as for "buying without money" is unclear to me. Please explain.

A: It is written,

Ho, every one that thirsteth, come ye to the Waters, and he that hath no money; come ye, buy, and eat; Yea, come, buy Wine and Milk without money and without price. Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not Bread? and your labour for that which satisfieth not? hearken diligently unto Me, and eat ye that which is Good, and let your soul delight itself in Fatness. (Isaiah 55:1-2)

By this Scripture, we ought to learn to see things *spiritual* from *natural*.
This strategy is requisite in our Bible Study. Please see chapter 102.

1. "*every one that thirsteth*" –
are those who *spiritually* suffer without or hunger for the *Truth of GOD*.
Mark 5:42-43. See "Q & A" chapter 171.

2. "*the Waters*" –
has *spiritual* meaning only: the *Word of GOD*. "Q & A" chapters 106 & 107.

3. "*and he that hath no money*" –
says: poverty does not affect learning the Truth of GOD. Chapters 177 & 296.

4. "*come ye, buy, and eat*" –
means to sacrifice time, effort, and money to obtain Knowledge. Chapter 58.

5. "*Yea, come, buy Wine and Milk without money and without price*" –
denotes spiritual nutrition, which might be costly to us, yet not in terms of worldly pricing. It's our Sacrificial Giving.
Mark 12:41-44 & *Luke 21:1-4*. Kindly note chapter 56 (The Test of Giving).

6. "*Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not Bread?*" –
Don't spend money for any purpose which might stand in the way of Christian Education & Edification. *Bread* here is the *Word of GOD*. See chapter 284.

7. "*and your labour for that which satisfieth not?*" –
The same is true for our labor: never direct it *ungodly* way. Chapters 24 & 461.

8. *"hearken diligently unto Me"*
stands for spiritual hearing developed by diligent Bible Study. Chapter 237.

9. *"and eat ye that which is Good"*
It is our Godly *spiritual* nutrition mentioned above: *Bread*, *Water*, *Milk*, & *Wine*. Define it as *Basic* or *Advanced* or whatever way of Study. Chapters 58 & 106.

10. *"and let your soul delight itself in Fatness."*
Work out and keep up your Good *spiritual* Health. See chapters 58 & 107.

... know that man doth not live by bread only, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the LORD doth man live.
(*Deuteronomy 8:3 & Matthew 4:4*)

You may also consider *John 6:51-58 & 6:63.*

Q: What is the nowadays implementation of *Deuteronomy Chapter 12, Verses 7, 12, 18*, speaking on our eating before the LORD, our GOD?

A: It is written:

And thither ye shall bring your Burnt Offerings, and your Sacrifices, and your Tithes, and Heave Offerings of your hand, and your Vows, and your Freewill Offerings, and the Firstlings of your herds and of your flocks: and there ye shall eat before the LORD your GOD, and ye shall rejoice in all that ye put your hand unto, ye and your households, wherein the LORD thy GOD hath blessed thee. (Deuteronomy 12:6-7)

The Ceremony of eating *natural* food in the Sight of the LORD, even a part of what Israelis had offered Him, was a Symbol of being *spiritually* fed by GOD.

Here & now, it means that part of our Giving to LORD GOD, which should be spent for personal needs, yet Godly way – our Christian Education & Ministries. Please, see our previous discussion on *Isaiah 55:1-2.*

Joy in the LORD given right into our spirit is a Blessed Response of Father GOD to our Sacrifices.

Verses 12 & 18 also point out the necessity of our due example to our children and the support to be rendered to full-time Ministers of GOD, respectively.

477

Q: In chapter 73, we talked about *Fast* as per *Isaiah 58:6-14*.
Could we please study this Scripture Verse by Verse?

A: Let's do it. The following is *Isaiah 58:6-14* and my brief comments.

> *6 Is not this the Fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke?*

Where it is in our power – which, by the way, is more than we usually guess – we are supposed to stop and rectify all unrighteousness in salaries, prices, charges, rights, etc. *Love your neighbor as yourself.*

> *7 Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh?*

We, as well as our Christian Churches & Ministries, should be open to *Charity*. The latter includes sharing our *Spirit Bread* – the Written Word of GOD. Our families and kin should also be (naturally & spiritually) supported by us.

> *8 Then shall thy Light break forth as the morning, and thine Health shall spring forth speedily: and thy Righteousness shall go before thee; the Glory of the LORD shall be thy Rereward.*

Then *Matthew 5:14,16* is fulfilled in us; our *Health* (spirit, soul, and body) is sure; our *Righteousness* is such that the devil cannot stand in the way; the LORD – GOD Almighty, is always our Backup.

> *9 Then shalt thou call, and the LORD shall answer; thou shalt cry, and He shall say, Here I Am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity;*

Then our *Prayers* & *Intercessions* are answered. But let's first take away every *yoke of the world*, which is a *sin*, as well as *criticism* and *ungodly* conversations.

> *10 And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry, and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy Light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noonday:*

Let every *suffering* we see or hear about be ours. Help and pray for needy ones. For the actual *Christian Works* and *Sacrificial Giving* of those not much learned – *thy darkness* – is high above "the light" of knowledgeable, certified, qualified, etc., who lack the *Proof* of their Righteousness.*

> *11 And the LORD shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a Watered Garden, and like a Spring of Water, whose Waters fail not.*

Father GOD promised us His Precious Guidance for our (physical & spiritual) *Health, Knowledge* & *Understanding & Wisdom*. See chapter 58 (K & U & W).

> *12 And they that shall be of thee shall build the old waste places: thou shalt raise up the Foundations of many generations; and thou shalt be called, The Repairer of the breach, The Restorer of Paths to dwell in.*

Our co-Workers, followers, and descendants will also be Good Instruments of the Holy Ghost to do the Works of GOD. For the *breach* mentioned still exists.

> *13 If thou turn away thy foot from the Sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on My Holy Day; and call the Sabbath a Delight, the Holy of the LORD, Honourable; and shalt honour Him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words:*

The *Fourth Commandment* is hereby reminded. For "... *doing thy pleasure ... doing thine own ways ... finding thine own pleasure ... speaking thine own words ...*" is nothing but following the ways of *Satan*. What ways exactly? – It is whatsoever you wouldn't share with your Lord Jesus.

> *14 Then shalt thou delight thyself in the LORD; and I will cause thee to ride upon the High places of the Earth, and feed thee with the Heritage of Jacob thy father: for the Mouth of the LORD hath spoken it.*

Our Heavenly Father promised us Joy in Him, Good Communion of His Saints, and the Harvest of Blessings – more than we can ask or think. *Jeremiah 13:15*.

* To *love thy neighbour as thyself* is written in:
Leviticus 19:18;
Matthew 5:43, 19:19, 22:39; Mark 12:31; Luke 10:27;
Romans 13:9; Galatians 5:14; & James 2:8.

478

Q: What to do when God doesn't answer my Prayers?

A: Once you don't specify the subject(s) prayed for, I can answer only in generalities. You may also see chapter 525 (To get the Answer).

To start from,

... your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask Him.
(Matthew 6:8)

Therefore, *GOD's Silence*, as it may seem to be so, doesn't mean indifference on His part. Don't forget to praise Him. He knows *what* to do and *when*.

Mark the words, "... I have a special knack for knowing exactly what people *want*. Of course, what they *need* is an entirely different matter ... you *want* many things ... all of which you don't necessarily *need* ..." ("*The Encounter*" movie.)

Once upon a time, I felt sick and visited our local doctor. I asked her for *paracetamol*, as it had helped me before. The doc answered *okay* and prescribed that stuff. She also advised me *never* come to any physician with my opinion what to do.
I believe my conversation with that doctor, to some extent, might resemble our Communion with GOD. We all "know what" to ask for, whereas the best thing is to pray *"Thy Will be done"*, following the Lord's Prayer.

Be careful for nothing; but in every thing by Prayer and Supplication
with Thanksgiving let your Requests be made known unto GOD.
And the Peace of GOD, which passeth all understanding,
shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus. (Philippians 4:6-7)

Q: I've been experiencing some pretty unexplainable things these last few days, and every time there's just this extreme sense of relief & safety. In your experience, what does God's Presence feel like?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020.)

A: In my experience, it is Peace, just like in the above Scripture.
GOD bless you.

479

Q: In chapter 461, you spoke about many Christian Ministries.
How do you think one can be a worthy *Christian Counselor*?

A: Actually, we touched on that subject in chapter 42. Kindly read.

Far as I can understand *Christian Counseling*, the foremost expertise thereof is *spiritual* washing feet discussed in chapter 34.

Speaking of Counseling as Church Ministry, I dare to underline the following.

Firstly, one has to be sure it is the Will of GOD for his (her) Life.
That might be seen by his (her) pertinent Gifts, the latter observable in the level of *Love*, *Knowledge*, and *Understanding*.

Secondly, both the Counselor and the person being counseled should remember that it is our Heavenly Father Who advises. Therefore, every right Counseling should not contradict His Written Word.
Therefore, constant *Bible Study* is a matter of *must* for all Christian Counselors and those who act as such now & again: Pastors, Teachers, Preachers, &c.

Kindly note the following Scriptures.

The Spirit of the LORD will come upon you in Power ...
and you will be changed into a different person. Once these Signs are fulfilled,
do whatever your hand finds to do, for GOD is with you.
(1Samuel 10:6-7, New International Version)

... Receive ye the Holy Ghost: Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained. (John 20:22-23)

Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which
the Holy Ghost hath made you Overseers, to feed the Church of GOD,
which He hath purchased with His Own Blood. (Acts 20:28)

But the Anointing which ye have received of Him abideth in you,
and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same Anointing
teacheth you of all things, and is Truth, and is no lie,
and even as it hath taught you, ye shall abide in Him. (1John 2:27)

480

Q: Brother, let's read *Isaiah 60:11* and clarify the meaning.

A: *Chapter 60* of the *Book of Prophet Isaiah* is about the future Glory of the Church of GOD. Kindly see here the spiritual meaning(s) applicable to us.

> *10 And the sons of strangers shall build up thy Walls, and their Kings shall minister unto thee: for in My Wrath I smote thee, but in My Favour have I had Mercy on thee. 11 Therefore thy Gates shall be open continually; they shall not be shut day nor night; that men may bring unto thee the forces of the Gentiles, and that their Kings may be brought. 12 For the nation and kingdom that will not serve thee shall perish; Yea, those nations shall be utterly wasted.*

In *Verse 11*, we can read not only about the Gates of Jerusalem but also learn on the Gates of every Temple where the Name of our LORD GOD dwells, including the doors of every *Christian* heart. Note well *1Corinthians 3:16-17* & *6:19*.

The relevant example is found in *John 3:2*. Brother Nicodemus visited *Jesus* at night. Undoubtedly, the Man Christ Jesus was physically tired. However, He welcomed His late visitor, yet continued to speak *in Parables* – which took more time – that night talk continued up to *John 3:21* – and didn't compulsory (and immediately) bring about much Understanding.

What's the catch? That was disclosed in chapter 72 (Why Parables?).
And what's our Teaching in *Isaiah 60:11* & *John 3:2*? – Open your heart.

And He gave some, Apostles; and some, Prophets; and some, Evangelists; and some, Pastors and Teachers; for the Perfecting of the Saints, for the Work of the Ministry, for the Edifying of the Body of Christ. Till we all come in the Unity of the Faith, and of the Knowledge of the Son of GOD, unto a Perfect man, unto the Measure of the Stature of the Fulness of Christ. That we henceforth be no more children, tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the sleight of men, and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive. But speaking the Truth in Love, may grow up into Him in all things, which is the Head, even Christ: from Whom the whole Body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint supplieth, according to the effectual working in the measure of every part, maketh increase of the Body unto the Edifying of itself in Love. (Ephesians 4:11-16)

481

Q: *Isaiah 61:1-3* is commented in two ways: (1) spoken about Jesus (*Luke 4:18-21*); (2) written to every Disciple of Christ (*1Corinthians 3:16*). Which of these two do you support?

A: There is also (Judaic) opinion – "the Scripture presumes the old Prophets" – mentioned in the relevant Commentary of Brother John Calvin. As for me, I think *Isaiah 61:1-3* challenges every Christian – just like *Matthew 3:10* – as we all are supposed to attain that level.

The Spirit of the LORD GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach Good Tidings unto the meek; He hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim Liberty to the captives, and the Opening of the prison to them that are bound; to proclaim the Acceptable Year of the LORD, and the Day of Vengeance of our GOD; to comfort all that mourn; to appoint unto them that mourn in Zion, to give unto them Beauty for ashes, the Oil of Joy for mourning, the Garment of Praise for the spirit of heaviness; that they might be called Trees of Righteousness, the Planting of the LORD, that He might be glorified. (Isaiah 61:1-3)

The Words of Lord Jesus –

... This day is this Scripture fulfilled in your ears. (Luke 4:21)

– can be quite rightfully spoken by you & me when preaching the Gospel. Just let's make sure it's the *Holy Ghost* preaching through us as He did through Jesus.

Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost: teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the World. Amen. (Matthew 28:19-20)

Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give. (Matthew 10:8)

... be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that Good, and Acceptable, and Perfect, Will of GOD. (Romans 12:2)

482

Q: In the *62nd Chapter of the Book of Isaiah*, peace was promised to Jerusalem, which hasn't been as yet. How do you understand that?

A: That *Promised Peace* was discussed in "Q & A" chapter 53. Take a look.

Please also be reminded that *all* Promises of GOD to His People are Conditional. *54th & 62nd Chapters of Isaiah* and many other Scriptures presume our Obedience to the LORD, our GOD. So, be antithetical to His enemies who serve the devil. Note well *Deuteronomy 7:9-10*.
Let us read the *Book of Isaiah, Chapter 62*.

> *1 For Zion's sake will I not hold My Peace, and for Jerusalem's sake I will not rest, until the Righteousness thereof go forth as Brightness, and the Salvation thereof as a Lamp that burneth. 2 And the Gentiles shall see thy Righteousness, and all Kings thy Glory: and thou shalt be called by a New Name, which the Mouth of the LORD shall name.*

Kindly note our New Name – *Christians* – and the Promise of Righteousness & Salvation. Parallels: *Isaiah 65:15* & *Acts 11:26*.

> *3 Thou shalt also be a Crown of Glory in the Hand of the LORD, and a Royal Diadem in the Hand of thy GOD. 4 Thou shalt no more be termed "forsaken"; neither shall thy Land any more be termed "desolate": but thou shalt be called Hephzibah* [My Delight In Her]*, and thy land Beulah* [The Land Shall Be Married]*: for the LORD delighteth in thee, and thy Land shall be Married.*

** By Brother William Smith, A Dictionary of the Bible (1863 & 1893).*

Mind here the Words, "*in the Hand of thy GOD"*. We are supposed to be *His* People only, United with *Him*, in *Him*, and under *His* Guidance & Protection.

> *5 For as a young man marrieth a virgin* [here, the Amplified Bible added: *O Jerusalem*]*, so shall thy Sons marry thee: and as the bridegroom rejoiceth over the bride, so shall thy GOD rejoice over thee. 6 I have set Watchmen upon thy Walls, O Jerusalem, which shall never hold their peace day nor night: ye that make mention of the LORD, keep not silence, 7 And give Him no rest, till He establish, and till He make Jerusalem a Praise in the Earth.*

We should in no way be united with unbelievers. See *2Corinthians 6:14*.
Our Heavenly Father protects us so far as we remain within the *Walls* of His Law.
His People always ought to communicate with Him through Prayer.
Parallel to "*give Him no rest*" are the Parables considered in chapters 217 & 218.

> *8 The LORD hath sworn by His Right Hand, and by the Arm of His Strength, Surely I will no more give thy Corn to be meat for thine enemies; and the sons of the stranger shall not drink thy Wine, for the which thou hast laboured: 9 But they that have gathered it shall eat it, and praise the LORD; and they that have brought it together shall drink it in the Courts of My Holiness.*

Here, take *Corn* & *Wine* for the *Fruits of Righteousness*, which are understood by, valued, and belong to us – the Body of Christ – only.
Parallels: *2Corinthians 9:6-11; Philippians 1:9-11; Hebrews 12:11; James 3:18*.

> *10 Go through, go through the Gates; prepare ye the Way of the People; cast up, cast up the Highway; gather out the stones; lift up a Standard for the People. 11 Behold, the LORD hath proclaimed unto the End of the World, Say ye to the Daughter of Zion, Behold, thy Salvation cometh; behold, His Reward is with Him, and His Work before Him. 12 And they shall call them, The Holy People, The Redeemed of the LORD: and thou shalt be called, Sought Out, A City Not Forsaken.*
>
> We have our *Eleventh* & *Twelfth* Commandments – chapters 80 & 43.
> That is the *Narrow Way* to the *Strait Gate* – the subject of chapter 247.
> The *Standard for the People* is only one: the Word of GOD. Chapter 287.
> The Blessings by *Verses 11* & *12* are subject to our following that *Standard*.

Q: *Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in Health, even as thy soul prospereth. (3John 1:2)*

What does this Verse mean?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: When the Holy Spirit of GOD is welcome and rules our heart (spirit), the latter is Healthy. When our heart is Firm, the subordinate to it soul is such too. And only when ruled by a Healthy soul, our body has physical health or, when damaged, is being healed.
In the above *3John 1:2*, Prosperity has spiritual meaning.
Please, see the Index for relevant chapters. Thank you.

483

Q: How would you interpret *Proverbs 24:11-12*?

A: I relate that Scripture to our *Twelfth Commandment*.
Let's consider it starting from *Verse 10*.

> *10 If thou faint in the day of hardship, thy Strength is small. 11 If thou forbear to deliver them that are drawn unto death, and those that are ready to be slain; 12 If thou sayest, Behold, we knew it not; doth not He that pondereth the heart consider it? and He that keepeth thy soul, doth not He know it? and shall not He render to every man according to his works?*
> *(Proverbs 24:10-12)*

That "day of adversity" is not specified as or limited to personal misfortune, disaster in our lands, or persecutions to a Local Church. Evil may happen somewhere on the other side of our planet, and in no way can Christians ignore it. How can we help? First, pray for the Holy Will of GOD to be done there. Next, we may be called for financial support or other help.

Verse 11 teaches us to pray, follow the Still Small Voice of the Holy Ghost, and speak the Word of Truth to an unbeliever (or to a Christian compromising with the devil), whom the LORD, our GOD, may send our way.
Furthermore, we should help people & animals (why not?) in whatever calamity.

Verse 12 reminds us of *personal* Accountability to our Heavenly Father as for the actual following the previous two Verses.

> *... ye shall receive Power, after that the Holy Ghost is come upon you:*
> *and ye shall be Witnesses unto Me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judæa,*
> *and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the Earth. (Acts 1:8)*

Q: Does having to deal with heretic people deter your Faith?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Edited.)

A: Negative on that. For a Christian, "to deal with heretic people" doesn't mean cooperating, hanging around, teaming up, etc. Our relationship with such characters should be strictly business-like if stuck together in the same trade. Or else, we preach them the Gospel by personal examples of Godly Living. Thank you.

484

Q: In chapter 125, you advised us to confess our violating the *Sixth Commandment* on the ground of being citizens of a *military* country. Okay, what next, to leave my country?

A: No. You have the same rights on your land (and all the Earth) as those who militarize it.

> *Thus saith the LORD of Hosts, the GOD of Israel, unto all that are carried away captives, whom I have caused to be carried away from Jerusalem unto Babylon; build ye houses, and dwell in them; and plant gardens, and eat the fruit of them. Take ye Wives, and beget sons and daughters; and take Wives for your sons, and give your daughters to Husbands, that they may bear sons and daughters; that ye may be increased there, and not diminished. And seek the Peace of the city whither I have caused you to be carried away captives, and pray unto the LORD for it: for in the Peace thereof shall ye have Peace. (Jeremiah 29:4-7)*

However, you should leave the anti-Christian state & nation when your Father GOD has explicitly commanded you so. We touched on that in chapter 232.
For the same reason, you might have to come to a heathen land as a Missionary.

Have not I commanded thee? Be Strong and of a Good Courage;
be not afraid, neither be thou dismayed:
for the LORD thy GOD is with thee whithersoever thou goest.
(Joshua 1:9)

In chapter 143, we spoke about how to dwell among *unbelievers*.
In chapter 21, we discussed the crucial subject of *voting*. Please read.
In chapter 410, the question was, *What should we do for our countries?*

The following Scriptures are relevant to your question.

Leviticus 19:33-34 & Deuteronomy 10:19 – Love a migrant as yourself.
Psalms 27:1,14; 31:24; 56:3-4; 97:10; & 118:6; & Proverbs 29:25 – Fear not.
Psalms 39:12 & 119:19 – We are strangers in this world.
Proverbs 17:24 – Put Understanding before migrating.
Isaiah 41:10, 43:1-25, 51:12-13, & 54:15-17 – Fear not.
Philippians 4:13 – I can do all things through Christ ...

485

Q: When we spoke about the *Lord's Prayer*, you called it the *Intercession*. Okay. Do you also have some other Scripture for a *personal* Prayer?

A: Yes, I do. It is the end of the *Conversation with GOD* in *139th Psalm*.

Search me, O GOD, and know my heart: try me, and know my thoughts:
And see if there be any wicked way in me, and lead me in the Way Everlasting.
(Psalms 139:23-24)

Thinking on the above Scripture, it is our *Faith* in action – *Trust*. Chapter 486.
(Just the same as our *Love* in action is *Charity* – the subject of chapter 135.)
For when we indeed *believe* – GOD or man – we *trust*.
Knowing the Omniscience of our Heavenly Father, all the same, we expressly call on Him to enter our hearts & minds and help us keep a due order there.
Note how the line "... *try me, and know my thoughts* ..." might be answered –

... GOD left him, to try him, that He might know all that was in his heart.
(2Chronicles 32:31)

Does the LORD answer? Yes, He does. Then, *Psalm 103:1-5* comes to mind.
And the Holy Spirit whispers: in *Psalm 103*, try *Verse 5* this way:

Who satisfieth thy mouth with Good Words;
so that thy youth is renewed like the eagle's.

Amen.

Thou wilt keep him in Perfect Peace, whose mind is stayed on Thee:
because he trusteth in Thee. Trust ye in the LORD for ever:
for in the LORD is Everlasting Strength ... (Isaiah 26:3-4)

Casting down imaginations, and every high thing that exalteth itself
against the Knowledge of GOD, and bringing into captivity every thought
to the Obedience of Christ ... (2Corinthians 10:5)

... Brethren, whatsoever things are True, whatsoever things are Honest,
whatsoever things are Just, whatsoever things are Pure, whatsoever things
are Lovely, whatsoever things are of Good Report; if there be any Virtue,
and if there be any Praise, think on these things. (Philippians 4:8)

486

Q: The parallel subject of our previous talk (chapter 485) – *Faith* & *Trust* – is impelling. Can we continue this conversation?

A: We certainly can. To our definitions given in chapters 468 & 485, let me add the following annotations taken from *Bible Dictionaries*.

Faith – properly signifies, a persuasion and assent to truth upon the authority of another, and is opposed to doubting, Matthew 14:31 ...
Trust – (1) To be persuaded ; to hope well, Hebrews 13:18; Luke 24:21.
(2) To depend on without fear, Isaiah 26:3.
To trust in the LORD, is firmly to expect, that He will do for us, in Time and Eternity, whatever corresponds to His Word, His Perfections, and Relations, and so in quietness wait for the event, Psalms 62:8 ... (John Brown)

Faith is that assent which we give to a proposition advanced by another, the truth of which we do not immediately perceive from our own reason and experience ; or it is a judgment or assent of the mind, the motive whereof is not any intrinsic evidence, but the authority or testimony of some other who reveals or relates it ... Trust in GOD, signifies that Confidence in, or Dependence we place on Him ... (Charles Buck)

Faith – a dependence on the truth of another, or an assent to the veracity of the speaker. Hence Divine Faith is a Firm Assent of the mind to what is revealed in the Holy Scriptures on the Authority of GOD ... (John Robinson)

Faith, in Scripture, is presented to us under two leading views : the first is that of Assent or Persuasion ; the second, that of Confidence or Reliance. The former may be separate from the latter, but the latter cannot exist without the former. Faith, in the sense of an intellectual assent to Truth, is, by St. James, allowed to devils [James 2:19]. A dead, inoperative faith is also supposed, or declared, to be possessed by wicked men [Matthew 7:23], professing Christianity ... (Richard Watson)

OK, well noted. Yet, not much is said about the *Trust*.
The following Scriptures might well make up for the subject.

GOD's Reward for our trusting Him:
Ruth 2:12; Psalms 2:12; 5:11; 31:19; 34:22; 37:3,5; 40:4; & 125:1; Proverbs 28:25 & Isaiah 57:13.

Our Faith in action:

2Samuel 22:3 & Job 13:15;
Psalms 7:1; 11:1; 16:1; 18:2; 25:2,20; 31:1,6; 36:7; 52:8; 55:23; 56:3,4,11; 61:4; 62:8; 64:10; 71:1,5; 73:28; 91:2; 118:8,9; 119:42; 141:8; 143:8; & 144:2; Proverbs 3:5; Isaiah 12:2, 26:4, & 50:10;
2Corinthians 1:9-10, 3:4; 1Timothy 4:10; & Hebrews 2:13.

GOD's Protection in Answer to our Trust:

2Samuel 22:31; 1Chronicles 5:20;
Psalms 9:10, 17:7, 18:30, 37:40, 91:4, 115:9-11;
Proverbs 29:25, 30:5; Jeremiah 39:18, 49:11; & Nahum 1:7.

> *"Trust" and "obey" are the two Wings of the Christian. We trust and we obey. We obey because we trust. We trust in order that we might obey. If we try to obey without Faith, we get nowhere. If we try to have Faith without Obedience, it ends in nothing.*
>
> *(A.W. Tozer, Experiencing The Presence Of God: Teachings From The Book Of Hebrews)*

Q: What is the best Faith, with or without evidence?.
Q: What would you consider the preferred way of believing in GOD, after experiencing some form of evidence, be it a direct Encounter, or something else like a historical/scientific finding?
Q: Or would you believe without evidence, emphasizing the Strength of Belief alone, even without present evidence?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: Your first two questions were answered by *John 20:29 –*

... because thou hast seen Me, thou hast believed:
Blessed are they that have not seen, and yet have believed.

Read also chapter 133 dedicated to *Brother Thomas*.
In that chapter, I also wrote about my coming to Christ, even the way of *Apostle Thomas*, whether it was best or not.
Let me also warn you about what you called "historical/scientific finding".
We discussed the matter in the first part of chapter 103 (The Strategy).
Please, note the last two paragraphs thereof.
Thank you.

487

Q: I'm on drugs: doctor's orders. But in chapter 62 (Doctors & medicines), you call it *the lack of Faith*. Who should I listen to and what to do?

A: Whatever you might happen to hear or read, always listen to the *Holy Ghost*.

For GOD hath not given us the spirit of fear;
but of Power, and of Love, and of a Sound mind. (2Timothy 1:7)

If, before seeking help from a doctor, you prayed the LORD GOD for and sought *His Holy Will* to be done in your Life and didn't get any Advise from Him (His Written Word inclusive) and that on the contrary, it is okay to be on drugs by doctor's orders.
If, however, you found yourself under a doctor's care, the LORD being forgotten, ask His Forgiveness, and pray for His Holy Will to be done in your Life.
Don't ever forget Thanksgiving. See *Psalms 22:3 & Ephesians 3:20-21*.
For neither your doctor nor you, nor a drug manufacturer has a profound knowledge of what this or that particular chemical compound might do to each human body, yours inclusive.

As we put it in chapter 48, our sincere Thanksgiving works out Purification. I don't think our Prayers can make any drug work any better. But the Prayer backed by Faith does block up all satanic harm. See *Philippians 4:6-7*.

Q: (1) Many Christians seem to believe that God will protect them personally from *covid*, if they pray enough so that they don't need to wear a mask. Do you share this belief?
Q: (2) If you do, does it mean that the millions of people who died or got very sick were punished by God Who chose not to protect them because they were not worshiping Him enough or were not Christians?
Q: (3) If you don't, what would you say to a Christian who thinks that way?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: (1) No. A mask is the same as Safety Rules in many jobs. *Proverbs 24:21*. GOD does look after us. But, if we don't care for ourselves, would He?
(2) No, it does not. Please see chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment) and the Index section for *GOD's Judgment & Justice*.
(3) Again, see the answer in *Proverbs 24:21*. We are not supposed to mix up our Faith and civic discipline.
Thank you.

488

Q: A friend of mine recently told me she had found the *ideal* Church. Everything is according to the Bible there. Can you believe it?

A: No, I can't. But the good thing is that the Sister sought & found a good place for Worship & Edifying & Communion. Praise GOD!
No disrespect, but to state "everything is according to the Bible", one should *know* the Holy Scriptures by years of study & following them. However, such an experience might lead us to a sad conclusion: the above statement is wrong. You can find the reason why in, say, *Romans 3:23.*

Q: So, is it useless to try to better our Congregations or Ministries?

A: No, it's not. See *Isaiah 58:6-14, Jeremiah 29:13, Matthew 7:7, & Luke 11:9*.

Q: Does it mean our *ideal* of a Church cannot exist at all?

A: No, it doesn't. For it does exist there, in Heaven.

Q: I know, as Christians, we are supposed to read the Bible, trust Jesus, and stay away from sin. But what about people that are mentally challenged?
In their lifetime, some people have never got the opportunity to get into the Holy Scriptures and understand Jesus & the Word of God.
I have a dyslexic compression issue that makes reading hard for me. I have difficulty following long stories. So, I feel guilty because, sometimes, I miss words and have trouble understanding the Teaching. I've been called lazy for not comprehending when, in fact, I tried. I don't make excuses.
I value the Holy Bible. Yet, it's not easy for me.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020. Condensed.)

A: Your Understanding is correct. Let's try to sum it up.
Two things are needful. The first is the Bible Study. If it is necessary, your Pastor, Group Leader or Christian Friend should brief you on the correct meaning of every Lesson the Holy Bible teaches us.
The second is following the Scriptures. It could be much easier for you as a Member of a Christian Ministry. Kindly have a look at chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry) yourself or have somebody read it and help you to find a Charitable job, preferably in a good Team.
GOD bless you.

489

Q: How to understand the Words "*dust shall be the serpent's meat*" in *Isaiah 65:25*?

A: We can do it considering the Verdict of the LORD, our Father, in *Genesis 3:14 & Isaiah 65:25*. It is written,

And the LORD GOD said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life ... (Genesis 3:14)

The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: and dust shall be the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all My Holy Mountain, saith the LORD. (Isaiah 65:25)

The first Scripture addressed *Satan* and the *serpent* – the creature which submitted itself to him as his evil instrument. In both Scriptures, these Words are the Verdict to *Satan* –

"*dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life*" – by *Genesis 3:14*.
"*dust shall be the serpent's meat*" – by *Isaiah 65:25*.

Why such Wording? Look at *Psalms 72:9*, *Isaiah 49:23*, *Micah 7:17*, etc. *Licking dust* meant *defeat, shame, intimidation* – those ugly perversions our Father GOD had never created. So, the evil one harvests *his* due. Amen.

Thine, O LORD, is the Greatness, and the Power, and the Glory, and the Victory, and the Majesty: for all that is in the Heaven and in the Earth is Thine; Thine is the Kingdom, O LORD, and Thou art exalted as Head above all. Both Riches and Honour come of Thee, and Thou reignest over all; and in Thine Hand is Power and Might; and in Thine Hand it is to make Great, and to give Strength unto all. Now therefore, our GOD, we thank Thee, and praise Thy Glorious Name. (1Chronicles 29:11-13)

... Thine is the Kingdom, and the Power, and the Glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:13)

Thank you for your question.

490

Q: Brother, the meaning of *Isaiah 66:24* is obscure, moreover, held up to *scorn* by some characters. Let's clear up the Scripture.

A: It is written:

And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcases of the men that have transgressed against Me: for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched; and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh. (Isaiah 66:24)

Since the preceding *Verses 22-23* are about Christians enjoying the New Heavens and the New Earth, the above Scripture also speaks on that future.

And they shall go forth, and look upon the carcases of the men that have transgressed against Me ...

These Words might have the only meaning: Christians will have sure Knowledge of all evil-doers' doom, not having some doubtful heathen "pleasure" in that.

... for their worm shall not die, neither shall their fire be quenched ...

That stands for hell. Kindly see "Q & A" chapter 8.

... and they shall be an abhorring unto all flesh.

The meaning is clear: the evil part of gone humanity will be held in disdain only.

As for the *scorners* you mentioned, mind *Job 33:14* and declare them a Scripture God Holy Spirit will put in your mind (right for them) once or twice.

Why do ye not understand My Speech? even because ye cannot hear My Word. Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do. He was a murderer from the beginning, and abode not in the Truth, because there is no Truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the Truth, ye believe Me not. (John 8:43-45)

... it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. (1Corinthians 1:19)

491

Q: How would you explain that in the *unbelieving* world,
there are so many folks of good education & intellect? Many are devoted parents, doctors, teachers, rescue workers, police officers, etc.

A: I believe, considering every *non-Christian* person individually, we could be able to find out when *the devil* broke in into this or that educated mind and managed to indwell his (her) heart.

But speaking generally, it's all about the *satanic mess*.
What's that? We all, and right from birth, are blessed with healthy & creative brainpower. The last is influenced by inherited Blessings & curses (chapter 44) and developed by the education given by (first) parents and (second) society.

Therefore, the importance of a spiritually strong *Christian* family cannot be overestimated.

Train up a child in the way he should go:
and when he is old, he will not depart from it. (Proverbs 22:6)

When young folks watch & analyze what's going on around them – their families, schools, social life, Churches, media, and so on – they inevitably get to make their own choices. The educated & devoted are well shown in *Luke 16:8*.
(In chapter 121 – *How to make Friends?* – we considered this Scripture.)

Regarding those intellectuals, we can exclude such chances as getting lost to drugs, crime, idleness, and other dung. Their children might bypass all that too.

Nevertheless, the devil has enough evil options for this or that human. Just like a good fisherman has a correct bite for every fish, the evil spirits know well what temptation will work best for every character. Besides, the demon doesn't need to screw up much of mentality – one step from off the Right track is okay with him.

Whatever one is gifted with can be used, trained on, and promoted in this dark world – even medicine and rescue business – only stay an *unbeliever*.
That works just fine for Satan as a weighty argument against the Body of Christ. It is well backed up by publishing the blown up negative examples & scandals in the Churches.

492

Q: How would you define the sin of *blasphemy*?

A: I'd take the following correct definition.
Buck's Theological Dictionary (1826), runs,

> [Blasphemy –] ... *injury offered to GOD, by denying that which is Due and belonging to Him, or attributing to Him what is not agreeable to His Nature ... Three things are essential to this crime: (1) GOD must be the object. (2) The words spoken or written ... must be injurious in their nature. (3) He who commits the crime must do it knowingly ...*

Some other respectable sources state that *blasphemy*, being the abuse, might not be compulsorily directed against *GOD*. Well, what about an *indirect* offense, even cursing His Creation?

... whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the Judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the Council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.
(Matthew 5:22)

The Bible plainly shows that the evil of blasphemy is manifested not only by some stupid *words* but also by intentional *acts* against the Holy Will of our LORD GOD.

... Thus saith the LORD GOD; Yet in this your fathers have blasphemed Me, in that they have committed a trespass against Me. (Ezekiel 20:27)

In chapter 298, we discussed how to fight blasphemy.
Once it is of the devil, let's hereby be reminded of our Spirit Weapons, the *Sword It is written* (*Ephesians 6:17*), in particular.

Note the *blasphemy* of the questions in the chapters titled "*The unbelievers ask*".

References: *Leviticus 24:16* – Death penalty for blasphemy.
Ezekiel 20:27 & 36:20 – GOD condemns blasphemers.
Daniel 7:25 – Future blasphemies was predicted.
Revelation 13:5-6 & 16:9,11,21 – ditto.

493

Q: It is noticed that children are often cruel to those of their kind, which are of poor physical strength or intellect, just like some animals & birds do. How would you explain that?

A: That observation lacks *Understanding*.

Firstly, children are often cruel because they aren't taught to the contrary by their parents. They, more often than not, need Knowledge & Understanding, which could have opened their adult minds to spiritual matters, how the devil horns in, in particular. *John 10:10*.
Secondly, bearing in mind *Genesis 1:26,28* – that is, human spiritual Authority (the subject of chapters 312 & 313) – the correct way to say is, "animals & birds ... like some people", not vice versa.
Speaking of teaching our children – biological, adopted, strange – let's keep in mind that our adult example of opposing any cruelty is best educative.

Train up a child in the Way he should go: and when he is old, he will not depart from it ... Foolishness is bound in the heart of a child; but the Rod of Correction shall drive it far from him. (Proverbs 22:6,15)

Do not desire a multitude of useless children, nor rejoice in ungodly sons.
If they multiply, do not rejoice in them, unless the Fear of the LORD is in them.
Do not trust in their survival, and do not rely on their multitude; for one is better than a thousand, and to die childless is better than to have ungodly children.
For through one man of Understanding a city will be filled with people,
but through a tribe of lawless men it will be made desolate.
(Sirach 16:1-4, Revised Standard Version, Second Catholic Edition, 2002)

Q: Would donating some egg cells to couples who can't have their own children be wrong or sinful?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: Per my understanding, no, it wouldn't. That way, folks don't intrude into the Works of GOD – only try to help their physical weaknesses.
However, I think it would be better to *confess* their sins and those of their ancestors to crash the relevant curse. Otherwise, whatever outcome they achieve, the curse remains.
Please, see chapter 44 (Blessings and curses).

494

Q: Can we use the Word of GOD against the evil of spam & spammers?

A: Absolutely. Pray for the Right Word to be given to you by the Holy Spirit.

When I got tired of spam in my inboxes and spam folders, I sought the advice of professionals and was told that blocking spammers was useless as they continuously changed their email addresses. So, I just ignored those thieves and emptied my spam-folders. A couple of seconds a day is not a big deal, is it?
Then, the Spirit clarified *who* it is I have business with.
I know how dictionaries define spam & spammers. However, within the meaning of this chapter, it is a bunch of *demons* ruling their spiritually blind human *puppets*, the first making mess in the heads of the second.

The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy ...
(John 10:10)

But if our Gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost:
In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not,
lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, Who is the Image of GOD,
should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:3-4)

So, how to deal effectively with this or that spamming *demon*?
To do that, we ought to remember the Weapon & Example of employing it by our Blessed Lord – *It is written* – in *Matthew 4:1-11*, *Verse 10* in particular.

Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for it is written,
Thou shalt worship the LORD thy GOD, and Him only shalt thou serve.
(Matthew 4:10)

See the same in *Luke 4:8*. And one strike, probably, is not enough.
So, have these Words ready at hand for both the puppeteer & his puppet –

... Get thee behind me, Satan:
thou art an offence unto Me ... (Matthew 16:23 & Mark 8:33)

There is also the second step – a *Prayer.*
Let the *spammers* know that you pray for *GOD's Rod of Correction* on them in the Name of Jesus. For we aren't supposed to be lazy, are we?

Q: Brother, I followed what you had advised here regarding our dealing with the *spammers*, and got even more problems from the bastards.
Are you sure that e-mailing them the Word of GOD is better than just pressing the buttons “spam” & “delete”?

A: Yes, I am sure. Shall we ignore our *Great Commission*?
It is written,

... All Power is given unto me in Heaven and in Earth.
Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father,
and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:
teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:
and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the World.
Amen. (Matthew 28:18-20)

Within the same Commission, it is also said,

And these Signs shall follow them that believe;
In My Name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;
they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing,
it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.

Even so, cast out devils.

It is not said to preach the Truth of GOD “selectively” or by the efforts of some trained Evangelists only. We spoke about that in chapters 24 & 43.
As for the satanic counter-strikes, your observation is correct – it follows.
I experienced the same evil myself.
For how to advise anything which I don’t do myself? I have a reason to believe that my mailboxes were hacked right after my Preaching to the spammers.
But eventually, spammers did shut up. Possibly, something got wrong with them (per *Zechariah 2:8*), and they removed my address from their idiotic registry.
Last but not least: nobody promised us the easy way. Note well *Isaiah 54:15*.

Further references.

Exodus 20:15 & Deuteronomy 5:19 ---------- To spammers.
Matthew 28:18 & John 16:11 ---------- To Satan & his demons.
Luke 10:19 & James 4:7 ---------- Our Power.
Ephesians 6:10-18 & 1John 5:18 ---------- To Christians.

495

Q: In chapter 461, you proposed a good Ministry of *Adoption*.
So, who is best qualified for that job?

A: That depends. You may kindly consider the following conditions.

The first is the *Holy Will of GOD* for those who adopt and the ones being adopted. See *Matthew 18:5; Mark 9:37; Luke 9:48*.

The second condition is our being gifted & willing to serve this way and the LORD's Approval. See *Exodus 31:3; 35:10; Isaiah 6:8*.

The third presumes all exceptional circumstances we may encounter. Then, the only qualification we can offer GOD is our being *Christians*. He will call up the right person(s). See *Joshua 1:9, Hebrews 10:14, & 1Peter 2:9*.

In chapter 164, we spoke of *biological*, *soul*, and *spiritual* parents.
In chapter 45, the negative example of *godparents* was discussed.
Chapters 70 & 85 are dedicated to the questions of *education*.

The *Ministry of Adoption* is to provide *soul & spirit* care.
The best possible way for that is *full-time Team Work* in a Christian Youth Home (Shelter, Center, or so).

Kindly consider the following Words *thrice* said by the Lord.

... whoso shall receive one such little child in My Name receiveth Me.
(Matthew 18:5)

Whosoever shall receive one of such children in My Name, receiveth Me:
and whosoever shall receive Me, receiveth not Me, but Him that sent Me.
(Mark 9:37)

Whosoever shall receive this child in My Name receiveth Me:
and whosoever shall receive Me receiveth Him that sent Me:
for he that is least among you all, the same shall be Great.
(Luke 9:48)

So, *go, and do thou likewise*.

496

Q: I've been a Christian for about ten years. Following *Matthew 28:18-20,* more than once, I tried to preach Good News to unbelieving folks but failed. What would you recommend?

A: Foremost, I commend your following the Great Commission of Christ. Second, there were those *unbelievers* you preached to who failed, not you. Kindly note these Words:

And the Lord added to the Church daily such as should be saved. (Acts 2:46-47)

The Gospels teach us how to be Good Instruments of the Holy Spirit of GOD, and the Twelfth Commandment – *Matthew 28:18-20* – says to go, teach, baptize those who will listen, full stop. It doesn't say, "save". Think about it, would you? Our business is to study & follow GOD's Word daily to be those Instruments in His Mighty Hands as we listen to the Voice of His Holy Spirit.
We aren't supposed to think that it's our eloquence that can & does save.
Behold, the devil & his servants are much more eloquent. See *Luke 16:8*.
Sometimes, you would get tired of debating with unbelievers. In such a case, don't forget *Jeremiah 33:3* and propose to your listeners to try it.

And pray for those you preach to. Remember the Lord's Prayer.
GOD bless you.

Q: What is the best way to share the Gospel with unbelieving friends?

(Signed: *Christian, Calvinist.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020.)

A: Your question so much resembles the previous one in this chapter.
The difference is (all) "folks" in the first and "friends" in the second one.
So, in a way, your conversation might go easier.
However, from experience, "friends" become "enemies" if we get excited by the Truth we preach, push too hard, and don't listen to the Voice of the Holy Ghost. The latter may remind us of *Matthew 7:6 & 2Corinthians 4:3-4*.
Kindly note: "the best way to share the Gospel" is our following the Holy Spirit. Please also understand the difference between who we call "friends" in the world and those whom *Jesus* calls His Friends in *John 15:14*.
See chapters 43 (The Twelfth Commandment) & 685 (Great Commission).
Pray our Father GOD to send your way those who would listen to the Word of Truth spoken by you. Godspeed.

497

Q: I heard there are *demons* of anger, lie, lust, madness, and so on.
But in chapter 172, you wrote: "Fear is a needful *weapon* for demons since fearful men are men defeated." Doesn't it contradict *2Timothy 1:7*?

A: No, it doesn't. Years ago, I also thought of evil spirits that way.

Yet, the necessary corrections come over as our Blessed Lord gives us more Knowledge & Understanding. That, I think, is normal & desirable.
For it wasn't only I who had guessed *demons* to be of *fear*, *doubt*, *unbelief*, &c., thus discerning not *soldiers* from their *weapons*. Kindly note chapter 438.

Now, let's regard the Scripture you mentioned –

... GOD hath not given us the spirit of fear;
but of Power, and of Love, and of a Sound mind. (2Timothy 1:7)

In the first line, "*the spirit of fear*" is not the one given to us at birth or the Holy Spirit we have got blessed with at Baptism but means "*the heart fearful*".

The second line is the explicated Statement of Blessing us by the Holy Ghost – the *Power* by far exceeding that of the devil, the *Love*, which never fails, and the *Soundness* of mind, which eliminates any possibility of such a mess as fear.

Kindly consider *Ephesians 6:16-17*. The time-tested *Helmet of Salvation* is exactly that *Sound mind*, saturated with the Word of GOD.

The LORD is my Light and my Salvation; whom shall I fear?
The LORD is the Strength of my Life; of whom shall I be afraid? (Psalms 27:1)

Be of Good Courage, and He shall strengthen your heart,
all ye that hope in the LORD. (Psalms 31:24)

Fear thou not; for I am with thee: be not dismayed; for I am thy GOD:
I will strengthen thee; Yea, I will help thee; Yea, I will uphold thee
with the Right Hand of My Righteousness. (Isaiah 41:10)

I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.
(Philippians 4:13)

498

Q: By *Luke 9:57-62*, the cost of Christian Discipleship seems unbearable, doesn't it?

A: I cannot agree. Kindly note *Matthew 11:30* & *Book of Martyrs*.
Let's study *Luke 9:57-62*. It teaches us to sort out our priorities.

> *57 And it came to pass, that, as they went in the way, a certain man said unto Him, Lord, I will follow Thee whithersoever Thou goest. 58 And Jesus said unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air have nests; but the Son of Man hath not where to lay His head.*

The Petition is good. However, the Lord's Answer warns: all *physical* hardships of the Way ought to be taken into account, especially by those who are used to living in respect & quiet but not getting disdain & severity. *Matthew 8:19*.

> *59 And He said unto another, Follow Me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. 60 Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the Kingdom of GOD.*

Since it was the *Lord's Call*, the man had been found fit for the Job. Yet, the voice of *worldly reason* had to be shut up first. It was always presumed that when calling up, the LORD Himself takes care of the rest. In that particular case, there were those – *dead* for the Works of GOD – to see for the decent funerals.

> *61 And another also said, Lord, I will follow Thee; but let me first go bid them farewell, which are at home at my house. 62 And Jesus said unto him, No man, having put his hand to the Plough, and looking back, is fit for the Kingdom of GOD.*

Here, Jesus teaches *Steadfastness* in standing against the *evil* of *compromise*. *Matthew 6:24*. You may kindly note "Q & A" chapter 40 (Compromise) and the following references.

> *Matthew 8:19-22* – The Parallel Scripture.
> *Matthew 16:24 & 24:9* – The cost of following Christ.
> *Matthew 19:27-30 & Luke 10:3* – The Way of Discipleship.
> *Luke 14:26-27* – The Cross explained.
> *Romans 12:2* – The renewing of the mind.

499

Q: Recently, I happened to overhear a conversation in which one man had told another something like, “That was indeed a Christian home.” So, how would you define & exemplify the last?

A: Since the subject of the *Christian Family* has already been dealt with in chapter 60, here we’ll speak only about the dwelling place.

Our homes should contain the things needful for Godly Education: *Holy Bible*, Christian library, the personal computer(s) filled up with Godly stuff in the form of PDF & e-books. You know, such things as *computers* & the *Internet* become more & more necessary for every education, Christian inclusive. See *Isaiah 55:2*.

On the other hand, all publications & images which are ungodly, atheistic, or idolatrous – regardless of their monetary value – should be removed once and forever. See *Deuteronomy 7:5,25*.

Watch out for parasites ... you must destroy any addiction that has your heart. If you don’t, it will destroy you. (Bros. Kendrick, The Love Dare, Day 23)

A Christian home (much like every Christian Temple) is a *House of Prayer*.
Mind well the Parallels: *Matthew 21:12-13, Mark 11:15-17, & Luke 19:45-46*.
It’s felt and should be so when you enter it. What is told in the “*War Room*” movie about a Prayer Room is true.

... when thou prayest, enter into thy closet,
and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in Secret;
and thy Father which seeth in Secret shall reward thee openly. (Matthew 6:6)

I can quickly find a place where a person habitually prayed in his (her) home. Some smokers told me that they did not feel the *need* to smoke in my apartments. Note *James 4:7*.
Please, have a look at chapter 209 (The Parable of the House on the Rock).

Outwardly our dwellings might appear just like any other. Yet, that depends on the neighborhood. Because such things as scrap & litter should not have a place where Christians live. You may take a look at chapter 321 (Our environment).

References: *Deuteronomy 6:6-9 & 11:18-21* – The House of *Truth & Teaching*.
1Corinthians 14:35 – The House of *Christian Communion*.

500

Q: There are many conflicting opinions as to the person of *Melchizedek*, who one can read about in *Genesis 14* & *Hebrews 7*.
What's yours?

A: Melchizedek was t*he Man of GOD* and *Spiritual Leader* of His Servants.

The Holy Scriptures – *Isaiah 61:1-3, Matthew 17:9-13, Romans 12:4-5, &c.* – make clear that it doesn't matter who did or does the Will of GOD.
In chapter 133 (Saint Thomas), I quoted the right words of Brother *Benny Hinn* spoken to that effect. The same thought one can find in chapter 267 (the question regarding *Matthew 27:9-10*), in the comments of Brother *Adam Clarke*.

The man *Melchizedek, the Priest of the Most High GOD*, could be the descendant of Shem (*Genesis 9:26*), Japheth (*Genesis 9:27*), or Ham (*Genesis 9:25 & 10:6*).
In the last case, the curse on Ham (*Genesis 9:25*) did not matter much if the Holy Will of GOD stepped in. The example of Saint Paul well supports that. You may see *Acts 7:58, 8:1-3, & 9:1-22*.
Or else, considering *Hebrews 7:8*, *Melchizedek* was the Lord Jesus Himself.

The Words of Saint *Paul* (or, per other opinions, of Saint *Luke*) in *Hebrews 7:3* point out the unknown genealogy of *Melchizedek* and his Standing with the LORD equals all His other Servants. See *John 1:12*.
The exact location of *Salem* is unknown. Nevertheless, an *evil* neighborhood, such as *Sodom*, is very likely. Therefore, the Servant of GOD *Melchizedek* is an example of Faithfulness to GOD.
The appearance of *the Righteous Melchizedek, King of Salem*, and *the evil King of Sodom* in *Genesis 14:17-24* might stand for only two options this Life presents us with – the same as written in *Genesis 1:4*.

The *Easton's Bible Dictionary* runs,

> *... The Apostle there points out the Superiority of his Priesthood to that of Aaron in these several respects, (1) Even Abraham paid him Tithes; (2) he blessed Abraham; (3) he is the type of a Priest who lives for ever; (4) Levi, yet unborn, paid him Tithes in the person of Abraham; (5) the Permanence of his Priesthood in Christ implied the abrogation of the Levitical system; (6) he was made Priest not without an Oath; and (7) his Priesthood can neither be transmitted nor interrupted by death ...*

501

Q: I live in an apartment building. My neighbors *are not Christians* and, apparently, have a *poor education*. They smoke around here, the habit hard for me to endure. I spoke that over to them and the landlady to no avail. What would you recommend a *Christian* to do in such a case?

A: Well, “are not Christians” and “poor education” seems much alike. Kindly try the following.

First. Try to look at the situation from smokers’ poor spiritual level & attitude. They *cannot* be harmless to others, even if some of them happen sincerely wish so. Why? Simply because the power of Satan, who they probably belong to, is much stronger than their supposed intentions. *That* is far worse than their offensive smoke & breath because their children may grow up even more evil. Don’t believe whosoever telling that it is impossible to discontinue smoking, or else it helps to control overweight, or other lies. I left on that evil habit long ago, even *before* I came to Christ. How easier it could have been *with* Him!

Second. If the country you live in has any restrictive rules against smokers, your civic duty is to report the matter to the local Police Office at least once.

Third. As a Christian, pray for your neighbors to get back to the right mind and stop that madness. Pray for the *LORD’s Rod of Correction*. Don’t undervalue a Prayer. Please mind the Lord’s Prayer & the Prayer in tongues. Ask your Friends in Christ to drop by and pray in your home.
See chapter 232 regarding Prayer Backup. My Prayers are with you too.

... Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do Good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you. That ye may be the Children of your Father which is in Heaven. For He maketh His Sun to rise on the evil and on the Good, and sendeth rain on the Just and on the unjust. (Matthew 5:44-45)

... Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. (Leviticus 19:18, Matthew 22:39, Mark 12:31, Luke 10:27, Romans 13:9, Galatians 5:14, & James 2:8)

Beloved, I wish above all things that thou mayest prosper and be in Health, even as thy soul prospereth. (3John 1:2)

502

Q: *I'm a man of authority and a Christian*. My colleagues & I promised solemnly to serve our country as per the Constitution thereof.
What you said about Christian country in chapter 55 is fiction.
Do you indeed believe it?

A: Yes, I most sincerely do. The Holy Martyrs of GOD did so too.
I put the keywords of your question in italic to draw your kind attention to a better position: *I'm a Christian and a man of authority.*
Please, see *Proverbs 24:21* in this regard.

What is written down in this book is just how most of my Friends in Christ & I understand the Written Word of GOD. In the references below, I've put the Scriptures for all men of authority and you to consider. Your decision might be crucial to your country. Note well *Deuteronomy 17:18-20*.
You may kindly look at chapters 15, 90, 248, & 586.

The Scriptures to mind.

... He that ruleth over men must be Just, ruling in the Fear of GOD.
(2Samuel 23:3)

And whosoever will not do the Law of thy GOD, and the law of the King, let judgment be executed speedily upon him, whether it be unto death, or to banishment, or to confiscation of goods, or to imprisonment. (Ezra 7:26)

Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness which they have prescribed; to turn aside the needy from Judgment, and to take away the Right from the poor of My People, that widows may be their prey, and that they may rob the fatherless! (Isaiah 10:1-2)

Thus saith the LORD GOD; Behold, I am against the Shepherds; and I will require My Flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the Flock; neither shall the Shepherds feed themselves any more; for I will deliver My Flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them.
(Ezekiel 34:10)

Honour all men. Love the Brotherhood. Fear GOD. Honour the King.
(1Peter 2:17)

503

Q: In this book, *GOD's Law of the Harvest* is mentioned more than once. Could we please talk more about the subject?

A: Sure. This Law, directly or indirectly, is mentioned throughout the Bible, every Christian book, and, whether noticed or not, rules all human lives. Our GOD declared His Harvest Law in *Genesis 8:22* & *Galatians 6:7*.

The *Harvest Law* is ever-present in *GOD's Perfect Justice* (chapter 320). Throughout history, this Fundamental Law stays above every human legislation. The last, by the bye, this or that way, also states: *to each his due*.
The *Harvest Law* is exemplified in many Scriptures, including the following.

Genesis 3:16-19 – Our first *fall* brought about the harvest of hardships.
Leviticus 26:3-12 – Sowing Obedience to GOD we reap Peace with Him.
Deuteronomy Chapter 28 – Obedience and disobedience to GOD are contrasted.
2Chronicles 7:14 & Luke 15:20 – Repentance brings about Forgiving & Peace.
Ezra 9:12 – Our Holiness brings us Power & Prosperity.
Nehemiah 9:37 – ... the Kings whom Thou hast set over us because of our sins ...
Isaiah 32:17 – ... the Work of Righteousness shall be Peace ...
Isaiah 58:6-14 – Keeping True Fast, we get Blessed in every way.
Jeremiah 3:13-15 – By National Repentance, we might obtain Good Shepherds.
Lamentations 35:7 – The evil harvest of iniquities is inherited.
Lamentations 3:39-41 – Wherefore doth a living man complain ...
Hosea 4:2-3 – Sowing sins we can reap only cursed nature.
Hosea 10:13 – ... the fruit of lies ... thou didst trust in thy way ...
Malachi 3:10-11 – By Giving to GOD, we harvest True Prosperity.
Matthew 3:10 – ... every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit ...
Matthew 7:12 & *Luke 6:31* – The Golden Rule of the New Testament.
Matthew 7:15-23 – The evil fruits of falsehood & compromise with the devil.
Mark 10:28-30 – ... Lo, we have left all, and have followed Thee ...
John 8:31-32 – Following the Word, we get True Knowledge & Freedom.
Romans 2:6-11 – The Perfect Justice of the LORD our GOD.
2Corinthians 7:10 – Mind the crops of Godly and worldly sorrows.
James 5:14-16 – Confession & Prayer o' Faith produce Healing & Salvation.
1John 1:9 – Confession brings about Forgiving & Purification.
1John 2:17 – ... he that doeth the Will of GOD abideth for ever.
1John 5:4 – ... this is the Victory that overcometh the world, even our Faith.
Revelation 21:6-8 – The Harvest Law manifests in our Eternal Destiny.

504

Q: *Matthew 19:21* runs:

... If thou wilt be Perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have Treasure in Heaven: and come and follow Me.

The question is: what shall we do about it?

A: As far as I understood the question, the trouble is about *Giving*, isn't it? That "stone of stumbling" was discussed in chapter 56. Kindly read.

So, to start from, in all our Bible, the Words of Lord Jesus in particular, there is nothing so fearful, intimidating, or backbreaking as to be impossible* to follow. *Matthew 11:28-30.* (* Mind, however, *Matthew 5:29-30*, chapter 128.)

Matthew 19:21 – an essential part of the Lesson given in *Matthew 19:16-24, Mark 10:17-25, & Luke 18:18-25* – has two parallel interpretations.

The first import concerned the person (and his likes) Jesus directly addressed. Jesus loved him (*Mark 10:21*), knowing sure enough that the man had not become wealthy by whatever dishonorable means. Yet, *the reason of this world* has never been the Right road to Heaven (*Mark 10:24; Philippians 3:18-19*).
The second import is for all humans, teaching us to sort out our values properly. *Matthew 6:19-21 & Luke 12:33-34.*

Give, and it shall be given unto you;
good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and running over,
shall men give into your bosom. For with the same measure that ye mete withal
it shall be measured to you again. (Luke 6:38)

Nonetheless, we are not supposed to work hard and give away to those who just live as parasites in society (*2Thessalonians 3:8-10*). Fit to work, they get their social allowances and free stuff, yet beg around and spend every coin on alcohol & drugs. I met them in Kyiv, Rotterdam, and London.

Giue vnto the Good,
and helpe not the sinner. (Sirach 12:7, King James Version, 1611)

Further references: *Deuteronomy 15:7-8* – Help your poor Brethren.
Psalms 51:16-17 & 2Corinthians 8:1-4 – True Sacrifice.
1John 5:3 – His Commandments are not grievous.

505

Q: I came to Christ quite late, when my unbelieving *children* had already had their own families. So, what can I possibly do for them now, seeing my *grandchildren* are not interested in our Faith matters too?

A: What I suggest is you ought to *pray* for those families. See *Mark 11:24*.
Confess your past unbelief and the wisked harvest thereof. *1John 1:8-10*.
Get good *Prayer Backup* from your Local Church. *James 5:16*.
Take a look at chapter 232 (Our Prayer Backup).

Mind the Fifth Commandment – *Exodus 20:12* & *Deuteronomy 5:16* – nothing is written therein about *grandparents*. Therefore, whatever complications in your relationship with the grandchildren should be rectified by (you through) their *parents* – your children. See *Proverbs 13:1, 27:5 & Ecclesiastes 7:5*. In this book, you may also refer to chapter 606 (Grandparents).

Let me remind you about the *Holy Will of our LORD GOD*. See *Proverbs 21:30*.
He has a Plan for every human being. You and your kids are not forgotten by Him. See *Psalms 22:10 & 33:11*.
Even so, it is your business to *confess* & *pray*, and may your Friends in Christ Jesus do the same. For how long? Far as my understanding goes, until the end of your life, the Victory of Prayer, or Jesus' Coming – whatever happens first. The rest is up to our GOD. Kindly read *Proverbs 3:5, Isaiah 55:8, & Acts 2:47*.
Don't forget the *Lord's Prayer*. See the relevant chapters in the Index.

Continue to preach the Word to kids & their parents. See chapter 43.
What, they find it boring? – Sorry for the inconvenience.
Preach, listen to the Voice of the *Holy Spirit*, and speak up only the Scriptures *He* reminds you. *John 16:13 & 2Timothy 4:2*.

... the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost,
Whom the Father will send in My Name, He shall teach you all things,
and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.
(John 14:26)

... the Anointing which ye have received of Him abideth in you,
and ye need not that any man teach you: but as the same Anointing teacheth you
of all things, and is Truth, and is no lie, and even as He hath taught you,
ye shall abide in Him. (1John 2:27)

506

Q: I want to become a Christian.
But for many years, I've been in a *sinful* business.
To leave on that *evil* is hard, but to continue is unbearable.
I can't tell you more. What would you suggest?

A: It is written,

... As I live, saith the LORD GOD, I have no pleasure in the death of the wicked;
but that the wicked turn from his way and live ... (Ezekiel 33:11)

All sins of the world *cannot* stand in your way back to GOD. Note *John 3:16-17*.

I strongly recommend you *Confession*. Read *Psalm 32:5*.
"Q & A" chapters 19, 42, 46, 405, & 409 will tell you more. If for whatever reason, you cannot trust anybody to be your Witness before the Holy LORD, our GOD, skip that Sacrament for a while and ask GOD's Forgiveness praying alone. See *Psalm 51*. After that, be not afraid of anybody & anything. See *Psalm 27:1*.

Important: if the *sins* committed are the *crimes* persecuted in the country you belong to or reside in, do not delay reporting to Police. See *Proverbs 24:21*.
Again: fear not. See *Matthew 10:28*.

Stand on these Scriptures.

For Thou, LORD, art Good, and ready to forgive;
and plenteous in Mercy unto all them that call upon Thee. (Psalm 86:5)

Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts:
and let him return unto the LORD, and He will have Mercy upon him;
and to our GOD, for He will abundantly pardon. (Isaiah 55:7)

For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor Life, nor Angels,
nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,
nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature,
shall be able to separate us from the Love of GOD,
which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Romans 8:38-39)

Godspeed.

507

Q: Chapter 163 of this book runs,

He uses the most ungodly nations as His (disposable) Rod of Correction to attack & chastise people He wants to save.

Does it mean that GOD predestined some of us for Salvation & Life and others for damnation & death?

A: No, it doesn't.

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life. For GOD sent not His Son into the World to condemn the World; but that the World through Him might be saved. (John 3:16-17)

John 3:16 is well called *the Golden Verse of the Bible*. Here we can find the Precious Promise of Love, Faith, and Hope. Every predestination, preordination, preselection, and alike, are resolutely dismissed by this Scripture.
Kindly read *2Chronicles 19:7, Romans 2:11, Ephesians 6:9, & 1Peter 1:17*.

The above quotation from our "Q & A" book does not contradict *John 3:16-17*. Satan, his demons, and human servants have *willingly* made up their minds and reached decisions. The LORD GOD uses them all as His disposable *Instruments of Correction & Punishment*. But not with pleasure or satisfaction. *Ezekiel 33:11*. You may read chapters 3 (Satan) & 64 (GOD's Punishment).
GOD is Love. *1John 4:8,16*. Therefore, the loss of His *every* Creature is painful to Him. As far as my understanding of our Heavenly Father goes, it is so much more desirable for Him to be *with* you & me in His Kingdom than *without* us.

He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the Heaven is high above the Earth, so Great is His Mercy toward them that fear Him. As far as the East is from the West, so far hath He removed our transgressions from us. Like as a father pitieth his children, so the LORD pitieth them that fear Him. For He knoweth our frame; He remembereth that we are dust. ... the Mercy of the LORD is from Everlasting to Everlasting upon them that fear Him, and His Righteousness unto children's children; to such as keep His Covenant, and to those that remember His Commandments to do them. (Psalms 103:10-18)

508

Q: Brother, in chapter 64, you wrote:

As it seems to me, GOD's Punishment
is not about doing evil. It is the termination of doing Good.

However, in the Bible, and more than once, it is written, *I will,* and the detailed description of Due Punishment follows it up. Please explain that.

A: I don't see much opposition between the Verdicts of the LORD written in the Holy Scriptures and the conclusions I reached in the named chapter.

What I mean by *GOD's Punishment* is a clear manifestation of the *Harvest Law* (chapter 503) in the case of our *disobedience* to Father GOD. The way it gets explained reflects how I understand the matter, bearing in mind that LORD GOD is *Love*. We discussed that in previous chapter 507 (Predestination).

Whether we understand GOD's Punishment *literally* (as, seemingly, you do) or *metaphorically* (that I would prefer to, like in our talking about *hell* in chapter 8) doesn't matter. The more important thing is our *Faith in action* (see *Luke 18:8* covered by chapter 217) – the sure way to avoid Punishment.

Q: Child abuse occurs. Perpetrators run free. Where is justice, and why does it have to happen that victims are left to pick up pieces? God says He loves children yet doesn't protect them. Much less get justice for them. Victims don't have a choice but to participate in this sin.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: Please see the Index section for *GOD's Judgment & Justice*. You will find the relevant chapters dealing with the subject.
Not knowing what happened, I can only say that we reap what is sown by *ourselves*. And no evil happens to *our* children without *our* guilt.

It is written:

... Thou art Just in all that is brought upon us;
for Thou hast done Right, but we have done wickedly ... (Nehemiah 9:33)

He loveth Righteousness and Judgment:
the Earth is full of the Goodness of the LORD. (Psalms 33:5)

509

Q: In chapter 213, we talked about the *Parable of Lost Sheep*.
Could you please exemplify that subject?

A: Well, I believe every *Christian* can offer that example. So, I have it too.

Years ago, I joined one Local (Charismatic) Church and a Small (a.k.a., Home) Group thereof. After a couple of meetings, I asked our Group Leader whether all Members did attend and was told that there had been one elder family – Brother Ivan & Sister Lydia – who discontinued participating due to Ivan's sickness.
Well, I proposed to shift our sessions to their home and have a better opportunity to pray for our Brother Ivan there. The Leader objected since the *bad smell* was in their apartment – the sickness affected such things as urination & defecation. Yet, he agreed to introduce me to Brother Ivan & Sister Lydia.

From that time onward, it became my Ministry. There I preached, prayed, and helped around the home. I couldn't persuade my Christian Friends to gather together more than a couple of times at the elders' home.
I got my share of rebukes from my family for being away from our home for too long. So, (to make up for the last), I discontinued participating in all other Church Meetings & Works in favor of that humble Ministry.
That caused some disapproval in our Congregation. (After some time, the critics themselves left the Church for good. *Romans 2:1* well explains that.)
The kin of Ivan & Lydia, who rarely showed up there, got suspicious of whether I intended to grab the estate of those elders after their death. Why? Apparently, *1Peter 5:2-3* was unknown to them.

Then one day, Brother Ivan passed away, and I had to ask that some Sister would take care of the Widow. Yet, Sister Lydia didn't outlive Brother Ivan, her good Husband, for more than several months, and the Ministry was over.
Did it help much? GOD, Whose we are and Whom we serve, knows better.
It is written,

How think ye? If a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray,
doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains,
and seeketh that which is gone astray? And if so be that he find it,
Verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine
which went not astray. Even so it is not the Will of your Father which is
in Heaven, that one of these little ones should perish. (Matthew 18:12-14)

510

Q: In chapter 412, we spoke about GOD's Image & Likeness (in humankind) but we didn't *define* it. Let's continue the discussion.

A: Okay. To begin with, we are going to have to Scripturally define *GOD*.

GOD is a Spirit ... (John 4:24)

The above Scripture can help us better understand the Creation of Man:

And GOD said, Let Us make Man in Our Image, after Our Likeness:
and let them have Dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air,
and over the cattle, and over all the Earth, and over every creeping thing
that creepeth upon the Earth. So GOD created Man in His Own Image,
in the Image of GOD created He him; male and female created He them.
(Genesis 1:26-27)

Searching Dictionaries, I couldn't find any significant difference between "image" and "likeness" other than the first had more meanings than the second.
Biblical & Theological Dictionaries didn't help much as well. One prestigious edition even runs,

The exact meaning of the phrase in Genesis 1:26-27 is problematic ...

Whatever.
Genesis 1:26-27 – thus translated and presented by many Bible Versions – made me suggest that *Image* (used in both Verses) is the chief term, whereas *Likeness* (in the first Verse only) backs & clears it up. Many Scriptures do the same.

Yet, I don't exclude some better researches of ours and, most important, further *Revelation Knowledge* we might receive from our Father GOD later on.
So far, I've taken the Image & Likeness of GOD as *One* Spiritual Value.

Kindly bear in mind that,

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above,
and cometh down from the Father of Lights ... (James 1:17)

Therefore, GOD's Image & Likeness ought to be explained & comprehended as the greatest possession of our *spirit*, which unites us with the LORD, our GOD.

That Gift welcomes the Holy Spirit and, basked by Him, develops such spiritual Powers as Love, Faith, Hope, Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom. It is our Spiritual Inheritance.
But, like it is said in chapters 36 (The power of Satan), 412 (The Image & Likeness), and others, our spirit can be *corrupted* by the devil invading the mind (*2Corinthians 4:4*). The Precious Inheritance might be *wasted* (*Luke 15:12-14*).

And to hold that Inheritance, our continuous following of *Lord Jesus* and the indwelling of the *Holy Ghost* cannot be overestimated. See *John 14:23*.

Q: Is it possible that the term "created in the Image of God" could be referring to the human *soul* and not his (her) physical form?
Q: How to make sense of the *soul & spirit* (if those are the same thing) in a philosophical sense and not a technical or scientific one?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: Considering the conclusions we came to in the first part of this chapter, the Image & Likeness of GOD refers to our spirit & soul.
The spirit & soul are *not* the same.
Please read chapter 108, dealing with the trinity of man. Thank you.

Q: How did God create our temporal existence at a point in His Eternal and Timeless Existence?
(Signed: *Christian, ex-atheist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, August 2020.)

A: Firstly, our existence *is not* temporal. Kindly consider Heaven and hell.
Secondly, *how* did He create is beyond our understanding.
You can take it as, "GOD spoke that into being."

Q: What is your opinion on using technology like microchips, nanotechnology, and implants on our bodies? The question is inspired by the recent release of "Cyberpunk" which can customize your character with various stuff.
(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020.)

A: As I answered in chapter 716,

I know that, whatsoever GOD doeth,
it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it:
and GOD doeth it, that men should fear Him. (Ecclesiastes 3:14)

511

Q: In chapter 160, you mentioned the *registration* of a Church.
So, should our Local Church be registered with the local civil authorities?

A: That depends.

If you live in a *Christian country* – as it was defined in chapter 55 – the only answer is Yes. *John 17:21-23*.

If a country is not Christian and, moreover, *persecutes* Christians, the indubitable answer is No. *Matthew 7:6*.

If the country claims "freedom of conscience", the question of registration should be left with the Church, regardless of what local authorities might demand. In this case, *Proverbs 24:21 & 2Corinthians 6:14-18* ought to be implemented in favor of Holiness. No registrations of Light with the darkness.
No compromises. Mind *Genesis 1:4*.

Unfriendly actions the heathen authority might take against the Church of GOD are *commonplace* and to be responded to per *Psalms 27:1 & Isaiah 54:15-17*.

Don't forget that the property of the Church is in the Hands of GOD.

If any man defile the Temple of GOD, him shall GOD destroy;
for the Temple of GOD is Holy, which Temple ye are. (1Corinthians 3:17)

Q: Sometimes, we hear this argument from officials: Christians should be thankful to the state since the former are fed on the latter.
What would you answer?

A: Kindly read *Genesis 18:22-32* to know better *who* depends on *whom*.

The following Scripture references teach us to fear nobody & nothing.

Deuteronomy 31:6; Joshua 1:9; Psalms 56:4; 118:6;
Isaiah 41:10; 51:7,12-13; Jeremiah 1:19; 20:11;
Matthew 5:10-12; 10:28; 28:20; Luke 12:4-5,11-12; 21:12-19;
Romans 8:31; Philippians 1:27-28; & 2Timothy 1:7.

512

Q: How do you understand *1Peter 3:18-20*?

A: It is written:

18 ... Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the Just for the unjust,
that He might bring us to GOD, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened
by the Spirit: 19 By which also He went and preached unto the spirits in prison;
20 Which sometime were disobedient, when once the Longsuffering of GOD
waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few,
that is, eight souls were saved by water.
(1Peter 3:18-20, Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition)

18 because also Christ once for sin did suffer – Righteous for unrighteous –
that He might lead us to GOD, having been put to death indeed, in the flesh,
and having been made alive in the Spirit, 19 in which also to the spirits in prison
having gone He did preach, 20 who sometime disbelieved, when once
the Long-suffering of GOD did wait, in days of Noah – an ark being preparing –
in which few, that is, eight souls, were saved through water ...
(1Peter 3:18-20, Young's Literal Translation)

Notwithstanding that Jesus' Messianic Ministry was limited to the time and place, His Word of Truth calls every human ever lived through the voice of his (her) conscience. *John 14:23.*

The "spirits in prison", as it is in *1Peter 3:19,* may stand for *all* people confined in the darkness of satanic heathen world and thus deprived of the Light of GOD. Christ Jesus is the Word of Love to humankind. See *Isaiah 42:16 & 61:1*.
Led by the Holy Ghost, Lord Jesus also preached to those Righteous ones who were awaiting Judgment Day in the place called *Paradise* (*Luke 23:43*) or *Abraham's Bosom* (*Luke 16:22*) reserved for them after their physical death.
His coming to Paradise is implied in *Matthew 12:40; Ephesians 4:9;* etc.
Why could those Righteous People of GOD (e.g., *Revelation 6:9-11*) in *Paradise* also stand for the "spirits in prison"? Possibly, because that place has definite limits and so is not yet the final Destination of Saints – the Kingdom of Heaven.

> *... the Providence of GOD over us, and for us, is Greater than all our own care and concern for ourselves can possibly be.*
>
> *(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis. p.70)*

By many Teachers, the Words of *1Peter 3:19-20 – "preached unto the spirits in prison; which sometime were disobedient"* – stand for "preaching unto those who had already been condemned".
But what would be the reason? That is against *1Peter 4:6* & *2Peter 2:4*, and so many other Scriptures, which teach us the Justice of our Father GOD.
And why not, per Brother Young's Literal Translation, consider the souls "*who sometime disbelieved ... were saved through Water"* as most of Brother Noah's Family & Spiritual Descendants and, therefore, those abiding Paradise?

Now, what about us, "*which sometime were disobedient"*?
Are we any better? Sure, we are. But only *in* Christ Jesus.
Kindly visit the Index section for references.

Q: Who is "Us" in *Genesis 1:26*?.
Thanks in advance!

(Signed: Christian.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Far as I understand, *Us* in *Genesis 1:26* means the Triune GOD:
LORD GOD – our Heavenly Father, God Son – our Lord Jesus, and Cod Holy Spirit – our Promised Teacher & Guide.
(Please also note *Us* in *Genesis 3:22 – the Sarcasm of GOD.*)
Please refer to chapter 459 and the Index section. Thank you too.

Q: Did God create Good and evil, or did Good and evil always exist before the Creation of Man?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: Please read "Q & A" chapters 441 (I make Peace and create evil) & 585 (GOD and Time). And kindly consider *Isaiah 45:7 & John 1:3-5.*

In the Beginning, the Creation of our LORD GOD was *Perfect*.
We, humans, made in the Image & Likeness of GOD, were *Good*. However, we misused our Free will and became the doers of *evil*.
This way only, I can understand the statement that GOD "create" evil – by creating Lucifer, who betrayed Him and fooled & misled a Man.
Kindly note that, in your question, "always exist" is the wrong wording.
Because all Works of GOD as Creator lasted six days.
Thank you.

513

Q: It is written,

For the poor shall never cease out of the land:
therefore I command thee, saying, Thou shalt open thine hand wide
unto thy brother, to thy poor, and to thy needy, in thy land.
(Deuteronomy 15:11)

So, what *Christians* ought to do about *poverty* besides *Prayers*?

A: Probably, you think *Prayers* are second to *Giving*, don't you?
Yet, these two are too different to get compared, both being very effective.
As for the correct *Prayer Backup*, kindly see chapter 232.

But let's consider the Scripture.

"*... the poor shall never cease out of the land ...*"
It's repeated in *Mark 14:7*.
Why so? It is the work of the Fundamental *Harvest Law* all GOD's Creation stands upon. Have a look at chapter 503 (The Harvest Law).
Firstly, *poverty* might follow the relevant *spiritual* inheritance received from parents. See *Chapter 9 of John* and "Q & A" chapter 123 (Who did sin?).
Secondly, it is a personal approach to Life our Father GOD has blessed us with.
The *evil* of *poverty* was discussed in chapter 296. You may look it up.

"*... therefore I command thee, saying ...*"
The best parallel is *Jeremiah 13:15*, with no arguments.

"*Thou shalt open thine hand wide unto thy brother ...*"
Here, "*thy brother*" might stand for *kin* or a *fellow Christian*.
In both cases, the need for our best help is obvious – no arguments again.
Giving was the subject of chapter 56 (The Test of Giving).

"*... to thy poor, and to thy needy, in thy land.*"
Note that the Word "*thy*" is repeated here. We are, therefore, personally responsible for the well-being of *our* neighbors on *our* land. May the doors of our Churches & homes be opened to them. It is the Holy Will of GOD.

Mind, however, the conclusion that chapter 504 (Giving & Receiving) ends by.

Parallels: *Leviticus 19:9-10* ..... Mind the poor and strangers.
Deuteronomy 15:7-11 ..... ditto.
Nehemiah 8:10 ..... ditto.
Psalms 35:10 & 69:33 ..... Follow GOD's Example.
Isaiah 41:17-20 ..... ditto.

Q: Should Churches have tax exemption?
Q: If so, why? If not, why not?

(Signed: *Christian, Anglican*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020.)

A: The question resembles the one asked in *Matthew 22:17* and discussed in chapter 97. Kindly take a look. Jesus' Words remain standing.

Here, I define a "Church" as "A Local Congregation or Ministry of Christians, which is seen by the relevant country as a 'profit-' or 'non-profit' organization." This supposition gives me a logical ground to see the first as obliged and the second as not to pay taxes levied upon income by the country. If any organization has its common property, such as office(s), building(s), land, etc., chargeable per *the law of the state*, the latter should be obeyed. Read *Romans 13:1-7*.

See also chapter 55. From your question, it is not clear whether you mean a *Christian* country or not. That would determine the tax policy.
You may consider *1Esdras 8:22* regarding the exemption for Priests.

Q: Is it okay to argue for your standpoint if it is based on your opinion?.
Q: Is it okay if I, for example, argue that men should not wear earrings, even though the Bible does not say anything about it?

(Signed: Christian.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, September 2020.)

A: Kindly note: there are no subjects totally omitted in the Holy Bible.
It is written,

Wherefore do ye spend money for that which is not Bread?
And your labour for that which satisfieth not? Hearken diligently unto Me,
and eat ye that which is Good, and let your soul delight itself in fatness.
(Isaiah 55:2)

So, please, look at those earrings from the point of spending your time & money on them. And decide for yourself the necessity. Thank you.

514

Q: Brother, recently I spoke with some folks who call themselves Christians and attended Church Services. However, they are "overfed" with the lie telling that our Bible was written by *men* and corrected from time to time as found "appropriate". How to convince people not to believe all that?

A: Since it's a matter of *Faith*, it is hard for any of the two parties to convince or persuade another. We talked about that matter in chapters 254 & 333 (both dealing with unbelievers questions) and others. Also, I recommend a good Christian movie, "*A Matter Of Faith*".

However, the *Dead Sea Scrolls* discovered in 1946-1956 in the Dead Sea area and compared to modern Bible editions, which descended from other ancient sources, resolutely rejected any "discrepancies".

Kindly ask your friends to visit this site (last checked out on June 2026) – <*https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Dead_Sea_Scrolls*>. Beware of fakes!

You may also read and recommend to others the beautiful books by Brother *Grant R. Jeffrey, "The Signature of GOD" & "The Handwriting of GOD"*.
To "correct" the *encoded* Writings is impossible without destroying the codes.

Will all that be convincing? I am not sure, because it is also a matter of (crushed & humiliated) *pride* when somebody has found him (her) self wrong.

Christians should be warned against believing, harboring, and spreading around "scientific" lies. You may refer to chapters 103, 177, & 667.
And mind well *Proverbs 18:21 & Matthew 12:36-37.*

Q: Why did God create such a vast Universe? The Bible does not explain billions of planets, galaxies, and solar systems but Life only on Earth.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Your words, "billions of planets, galaxies, and solar systems", are not from the Bible. Kindly see our discussion in chapter 103 (Avoid errors).
Please, read *Genesis 1:14-18*, as for GOD's Creation of the Universe.
Our Earth is the Center thereof. Not many Scriptures are given to us for the time being. The reason is with the LORD, our GOD. In Due Time, we shall know all that. Please, consider *Deuteronomy 29:29.*

515

Q: Standing on *Romans 11:11-32*, one Teacher wrote that we should have been grateful to *Jews* since the *Knowledge of GOD* and *Salvation* had come to the World through them, even by their fall. Do you agree?

A: No, I don't. Mind *James 1:17* and be grateful to the LORD, our GOD only. Our Salvation did come *with* or *through* their fall, but not *thanks to* that. No *thanks* to the crazy crowd, which cried hysterically, "*Crucify him!*" The fact that some heathen nations (not to be mentioned & praised) did, do, and will serve the *disposable* Rod of GOD's Correction (to be accepted) may present some similitude. See chapters: 163 (National Repentance), 443 (The Prophecies of Isaiah), and 507 (With or without the lost one?).

But let's consider the Scripture.

> *11 I say then, Have they stumbled that they should fall? GOD forbid: but rather through their fall Salvation is come unto the Gentiles, for to provoke them to Jealousy.*

Here, *Jealousy* is *Zeal*, not *envy*. And mind: *through*, not *thanks to*.
See *Verse 14* below.

> *12 Now if the fall of them be the Riches of the World, and the diminishing of them the Riches of the Gentiles; how much more their Fulness?*

Here, *Fulness* is being a *Jew* per *Romans 2:28-29*. You may see chapter 288 (Christians first). That spiritual Fullness is mentioned in *Verse 25* below.

> *13 For I speak to you Gentiles, inasmuch as I am the Apostle of the Gentiles, I magnify mine Office: 14 If by any means I may provoke to Emulation them which are my flesh, and might save some of them.*

Here, *Emulation* stands for a *Zeal* (as in *Verse 11*). Note Wording: *some*, not *all*.

> *15 For if the casting away of them be the Reconciling of the World, what shall the Receiving of them be, but Life from the dead?*

Mind the Beginning of *Reconciling*: *Matthew 27:51, Mark 15:38, & Luke 23:45*.
See *Verse 24* below. Mind the way to *Receiving*: *Luke 15:20,32*.
Kindly have a look at chapter 220 (The Parable of Prodigal Son).

16 For if the Firstfruit be Holy, the Lump is also Holy: and if the Root be Holy, so are the Branches.

In this Verse, kindly note the work of the *Harvest Law* (chapter 503) in the lives of generations of the people, Christians, in particular. *Proverbs 22:6*.

17 And if some of the branches be broken off, and thou, being a wild olive tree, wert graffed in among them, and with them partakest of the root and fatness of the olive tree; 18 Boast not against the branches. But if thou boast, thou bearest not the root, but the root thee. 19 Thou wilt say then, The branches were broken off, that I might be graffed in. 20 Well; because of unbelief they were broken off, and thou standest by Faith. Be not highminded, but fear: 21 For if GOD spared not the natural branches, take heed lest He also spare not thee.

The *branches broken off* are those of *us* (*Galatians 3:7*) that fell off back to *sins*. LORD warns us against *pride* & *complacency*. Chapters 176 & 245.

22 Behold therefore the Goodness and Severity of GOD: on them which fell, Severity; but toward thee, Goodness, if thou continue in His Goodness: otherwise thou also shalt be cut off. 23 And they also, if they abide not still in unbelief, shall be graffed in: for GOD is Able to graff them in again.

Mind *Matthew 8:11-12* to better understand the *Goodness and Severity of GOD*. Mind Conditional "*if*" in the Bible and *Ecclesiastes 9:4* regarding Hope limited.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert graffed contrary to nature into a good olive tree: how much more shall these, which be the natural branches, be graffed into their own olive tree?

Behold, there are New Christian Converts not yet tried by satanic temptations. There are People of GOD – now, Christians – who once fell away but got back to the Right Track. See *Verse 15* above. Again, refer to the Parable of Prodigal Son (chapter 220). Our Spirit War is going on. New Victories and losses are ahead.

25 For I would not, Brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this Mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the Fulness of the Gentiles be come in.

It is the same *Fulness* as in the above *Verse 12*.

The *Church of GOD* has to be developed and well seen by all. *Matthew 5:13-16*. See chapters 241 (Switching Congregations) & 434 (Salt & Light).

> *26 And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob:*

Here, *Israel* is True & Spiritual. Kindly refer to *Romans 2:28-29*.

> *27 For this is My Covenant unto them, when I shall take away their sins.*

Study the *Covenant* by *Genesis 17:10; Exodus 19:5-6, 20:1-17, & 34:12-28*. Mind the *Spiritual* & *Everlasting* meaning thereof.

> *28 As concerning the Gospel, they are enemies for your sakes: but as touching the Election, they are Beloved for the fathers' sakes. 29 For the Gifts and Calling of GOD are without repentance.*

Again, Jews & Gentiles. See *Matthew 8:11-12, Romans 2:28-29, & James 1:17*. The "*enemies*" have Hope as per *Ecclesiastes 9:4*. Mind the above *Verse 16*.

> *30 For as ye in times past have not believed GOD, yet have now obtained Mercy through their unbelief:*

The Parallel: the *Parable of Great Supper*. Note *Matthew 22:8-10*. Chapter 207.

> *31 Even so have these also now not believed, that through your Mercy they also may obtain Mercy. 32 For GOD hath concluded them all in unbelief, that He might have Mercy upon all.*

You may kindly read about our Great Commission (*Matthew 28:18-20*) and the LORD GOD's Perfect Justice in chapters 43 and 320, respectively.

You may have a look at parallel chapters 59, 288, 323, 377, 378, and 599.

References.

Deuteronomy 10:16 & Jeremiah 4:4 – The Circumcision is best explained.
Jeremiah 9:25-26 – GOD's Warning.
Isaiah 65:1 & Romans 10:20 – Gentile.
Romans 9:30-33 – Jews & Gentiles. Faith.

516

Q: In the previous chapter 515, you mentioned *Genesis 17:10* as *Everlasting Covenant*. Let's talk about that.

A: It is written,

This is My Covenant, which ye shall keep,
between Me and you and thy seed after thee.
Every man child among you shall be circumcised. (Genesis 17:10)

In *Verses 11-14*, following the above Scripture, physical (natural) circumcision is commanded as a *Token* of the Covenant.
Our Covenants, Old & New, we discussed in "Q & A" chapters 16, 17, & 18.
As it seems to me, much better off is he who keeps the Covenant without the Token than vice versa. It is similar to fasting by *Isaiah 58* only, full stop.
(That we discussed in chapter 73 – True Fast).
We spoke about *Circumcision* in chapter 149. However, why only *males* had been commanded to be circumcised, we didn't touch on.
Therefore, as *Genesis 17:10* requires, we, *Brethren*, are to be Spiritual Leaders of our families, Christian Congregations, and countries.
Sisters were created to *help* us (*Genesis 2:18*), as they did prove able so many a time. That was the subject of chapter 147 (Intuition).

They say that behind every successful man, there is a great woman.
(M. Cerullo, Son, Build Me an Army, p.127)

Q: Does God allow bad things to happen in order to respect Free will?.
Q: For example, if someone wants to cause a disaster, does God refrain from stopping it to respect that decision (however evil it may be)?
Please, answer with Yes or No and then explain.

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: No. LORD GOD does respect our Free will. However, the latter is not the only matter Life revolves around. For instance, the Bible says about *human* Authority over this planet. And by the same Source, *GOD* is Lord of Heaven & Earth. Much alike, besides our Free will, such other subjects as His Holy Will, Harvest Law, Blessings and curses, Spirit War, Eternal Covenant & (Conditional) Promises of GOD, &c., are considered by His Justice.

517

Q: How would you interpret *1Timothy 1:20*?

A: It is written,

> *18 This Charge I commit unto thee, Son Timothy, according to the Prophecies which went before on thee, that thou by them mightest war a Good Warfare; 19 Holding Faith, and a Good conscience; which some having put away concerning Faith have made shipwreck: 20 Of whom is Hymenaeus and Alexander; whom I have delivered unto Satan, that they may learn not to blaspheme. (1Timothy 1:18-20)*

Verses 18 & 19, as well as "Q & A" chapter 87, clarified that Discipline in the Church of GOD was a matter of our Spirit War – *Good Warfare*.
In his respective comments, Brother *John Calvin* well put it, saying,

> *A bad conscience is, therefore, the mother of all heresies; and we see that a vast number of persons, who had not sincerely and honestly embraced the Faith, are hurried along, like brute beasts, ... so that their hypocrisy is exposed. And not only so, but contempt of God is universally prevalent, and the licentious and disgraceful lives of almost all ranks show that there is either none at all, or the smallest possible potion of Integrity in the World; ... and God may leave the Pure Understanding of the Gospel to be possessed by very few. (Commentary on Timothy, Titus, Philemon)*

Verse 20 is about *excommunication*. To stay away from the Church of GOD means to be back to the heathen world ruled by the devil. However, that strict measure should have a good objective of Edification: *that they may learn*.
Note well *2Timothy 2:17-26*.
Excommunication, whether temporal or permanent, should *purify* the Church. All Members of the Local Congregation are supposed to discontinue their contacts with the person excluded. The last is free to make his (her) choice for the future.

... if thy Brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy Brother. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three Witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto the Church: but if he neglect to hear the Church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. (Matthew 18:15-17)

518

Q: How would you implement the Teaching given in *the Book of Jeremiah, Chapter 10*?

A: In the Bible, *every* Book, Chapter, or Verse is our *Guide*. Whenever it doesn't seem so, our *Understanding* of the Scripture is defective and in need of correction.

Jeremiah 10 is named "*Idols and the Living GOD*" in the *e-Sword* program. Let's read that Chapter and discuss some key Scriptures thereof.

> *Verse 2. Thus saith the LORD, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of Heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them.*

In chapters 50 (Modern idolatry), 94, 403, and others, we spoke about *idolatry*. In chapter 290, we touched on the subject of *science*. The last is the spiritual battlefield of Christians vs atheists.
You may refer to, say, *Psalm 53:1 & Isaiah 53:1*.
So, "*the way of the heathen"* is their *atheistic* approach to whatever discovery of science. Christians are welcome to use science too, however, as only second to Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom – the subjects of "Q & A" chapter 58.

> *Verses 6 & 12. ... there is none like unto Thee, O LORD; Thou art Great, and Thy Name is Great in Might ... He hath made the Earth by His Power, He hath established the World by His Wisdom, and hath stretched out the Heavens by His Discretion.*

These Verses echo the First & Second Commandments of the Law, considered in chapters 93 & 94, respectively. Believe this Truth wholeheartedly whenever humankind discovers or invents something new – hopefully, not evil. *Isaiah 44:6*.

> *Verse 14. Every man is brutish in his knowledge ...*

Every human intellect is *brutal* when it is not based on *True Knowledge*, which only our LORD GOD gives. You may see *James 1:17* and "Q & A" chapter 58.
The Parallel is *Jeremiah 51:17-18.*

> *Verse 19. Woe is me for my hurt! my wound is grievous: but I said, Truly this is a grief, and I must bear it.*

As the Servant of GOD, Prophet Jeremiah felt grief for the sinfulness of his people and their Fearful Doom, so we, *Christians,* do here & now.

> *Verse 21. For the Pastors are become brutish, and have not sought the LORD: therefore they shall not prosper, and all their Flocks shall be scattered.*

Kindly note *Ecclesiastes 1:9*. Defective Faith, split Christian Congregations, hypocritical Pastors, and lost Sheep – all that is our sad reality.
Mind well *Matthew 15:14* & *Luke 6:39* and our Accountability to LORD GOD.

> *Verses 23-24. O LORD, I know that the Way of Man is not in himself: it is not in man that walketh to direct his steps. O LORD, correct me, but with Judgment; not in Thine Anger, lest Thou bring me to nothing.*

The Parallels are *Psalms 139:23-24* & *Proverbs 3:5.*

I am the LORD: that is My Name: and My Glory will I not give to another, neither My Praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

Q: What does it mean that "out of the mouth of babes You have Perfected Praise" (*Matthew 21:16*)?

(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: It is written:

> *And when the Chief Priests and Scribes saw the Wonderful things that He did, and the children crying in the Temple, and saying, Hosanna to the Son of David; they were sore displeased, and said unto Him, Hearest thou what these say? And Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have ye never read, Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings Thou hast Perfected Praise? (Matthew 21:15-16)*

(By the *Amplified Bible*, "There would have been a large number of twelve* year old boys in the Temple preparing to celebrate their first Passover and their ceremonial entry into Manhood." * See chapter 171 regarding this age.)
To that good thought, I may add that Lord Jesus paraphrased *Psalms 8:2* and thus reminded us how, while growing up, we lose the Image & Likeness of GOD, yet seen in our little children.

... Suffer little children, and forbid them not, to come unto Me: for of such is the Kingdom of Heaven. (Matthew 19:14.)

519

Q: Reading *Ecclesiastes 3:1-8*, I can't help wondering why so obvious stuff is written down. What's your opinion of that Scripture?

A: Whether it may look baffling or obvious, keep in mind the Word:

All Scripture is given by Inspiration of GOD,
and is Profitable for Doctrine, for Reproof, for Correction,
for Instruction in Righteousness: that the Man of GOD may be Perfect,
throughly furnished unto all Good Works. (2Timothy 3:16-17)

So, we ought to leave the *obvious* (superficial) things alone, but instead, try to concentrate on *spiritual* meanings & reasons.
This way, the following Verses of *Ecclesiastes 3:1-8* may give rise to some other conclusions.

Verse 1. To every thing there is a season, and a time to every purpose under the Heaven:

The LORD, our GOD, alone is in Supreme Control over all things.
See *Psalm 33:11; Isaiah 42:8 & 44:6; Daniel 2:21-22; & 2Timothy 1:9*.

Verse 2. A time to be born, and a time to die; a time to plant, and a time to pluck up that which is planted;

According to the Holy Will of GOD, His Plan, and the Harvest Law (which embraces all inherited Blessings & curses), our lifetime is appointed.
We can plan a lot too. However, when the Truth of the LORD is revealed, our plans & ways might prove false and ought to be changed. Chapters 24 & 291.
See *1Kings 3:14, Proverbs 19:21, & Romans 14:7-8*.

Verse 3. A time to kill, and a time to heal; a time to break down, and a time to build up;

Such radical changes as our views on human relationships and every walk of Life may take place. See *Proverbs 20:24, Matthew 5:3-10, & 1John 2:27*.

Verse 4. A time to weep, and a time to laugh; a time to mourn, and a time to dance;

One can become a New person. Consequently, seeing all things differently, a man or a woman would take and react to them another way too.
See *Isaiah 25:1; John 17:14;* and *2Corinthians 5:17 & 10:5*.

> *Verse 5. A time to cast away stones, and a time to gather stones together; a time to embrace, and a time to refrain from embracing;*

Guided by the Holy Ghost, we can sort out our priorities, take other roads in Life, and find New Friends. See *Proverbs 13:20, Luke 16:9, & John 15:13-15*.

> *Verse 6. A time to get, and a time to lose; a time to keep, and a time to cast away;*

The values of this Life come and go according to the spiritual Law of Giving & Receiving. In the time Appointed, we understand that. And, at that time, the old values are reevaluated. See *Malachi 3:8-11, Galatians 6:7, & Philippians 3:8*.

> *Verse 7. A time to rend, and a time to sew; a time to keep silence, and a time to speak;*

The LORD's Appointed Timing might be accepted or rejected by us. After all, Father GOD blessed us with *Free will*, didn't He? However, the time comes when we get blessed with *Knowledge* & *Understanding*. Old arrogance is gone. It's time to teach our youngsters. But will they hear? Pray to GOD for that.
See *Deuteronomy 6:6-7, 32:46, Proverbs 22:6, & 29:15*.

> *Verse 8. A time to love, and a time to hate; a time of war, and a time of peace.*

One day, no more spiritually blind, we might understand the matters of *Spirit Warfare.* Yea, the sooner – the better.
See *Genesis 1:4, Isaiah 54:15-17, Matthew 5:11-16, & 2Corinthians 4:3-4*.

Further references: *Job 12:12* – Lifetime for Understanding.
Ecclesiastes 7:10 & 9:12 – Our ignorance of time.
Isaiah 50:4 – ... to speak a Word in season ...
John 12:16 – Time for Revelation Knowledge.
Acts 1:7 & Galatians 4:4 – Divine Timing.
Romans 8:28 – Divine Purpose.
2Corinthians 6:2 – The now.

520

Q: How would you explain Lord Jesus' Words in *Matthew 27:46*?

A: Behold the Words:

And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani? that is to say, My GOD, My GOD, why hast thou forsaken Me? (Matthew 27:46)

I can see only one weighty Reason: the *Cross of Christ, our Savior*.
Those excruciating physical & emotional sufferings *should* have been such.
Why? By the Holy Will of GOD, our Father, His Love & Perfect Justice, that was the Ultimate Price God Son Jesus *had* to pay for our Redemption, Reconciliation, Freedom, and Salvation.

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life. For GOD sent not His Son into the World to condemn the World; but that the World through Him might be saved. (John 3:16-17)

Therefore, our Lord *had to* encounter those professional torturers & murderers.
That fearful pain *could* be prevented by the Mighty Power of the Holy Ghost – that was done for many Holy Martyrs – but not for Christ, for the same Reason.
He *had* to die, and that not peacefully, but like those two criminals nearby.
The Holy Spirit of GOD *left* our Blessed Teacher in the Garden of Gethsemane.

Then saith He unto them, My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto death: tarry ye here, and watch with Me. And He went a little further, and fell on His face, and prayed, saying, O My Father, if it be possible, let this Cup pass from Me: nevertheless not as I will, but as Thou wilt. And He cometh unto the Disciples, and findeth them asleep, and saith unto Peter, What, could ye not watch with Me one hour? Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation: the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O My Father, if this Cup may not pass away from Me, except I drink it, Thy Will be done. And He came and found them asleep again: for their eyes were heavy. And He left them, and went away again, and prayed the third time, saying the same Words. (Matthew 26:38-44)

Read *Mark 14:33-39 & Luke 22:41-44* confirming the same.
Why else did He need an Angel of GOD to strengthen Him?

And there appeared an Angel unto Him from Heaven,
strengthening Him. (Luke 22:43)

Our Blessed Lord overcame the greatest fear – that of death – as a mere human being without any Spiritual Support from His Heavenly Father.
(His Disciple Peter fought the same fear. We discussed that in chapter 88.)

Then said Jesus, Father, forgive them;
for they know not what they do. (Luke 23:34)

Therefore, every time we face whatever problems which might demand us to accept worldly solutions, compromise with unbelievers, be flexible, reasonable, etc., let's remember that heavy cross and imagine *what* Jesus, our Eternal Shepherd, had to pass through.

GOD is our Refuge and Strength, a very present Help in trouble.
Therefore will not we fear, though the Earth be removed,
and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea;
Though the waters thereof roar and be troubled,
though the mountains shake with the swelling thereof. Selah.
(Psalms 46:1-3)

Read *Book of Martyrs* – True History of our Christian Church.

St. George was born in Cappadocia, of Christian parents; and giving proofs of his courage, was promoted in the army of the Emperor Diocletian. During the persecution, St. George threw up his command, went boldly to the Senate House, and avowed his being a Christian, taking occasion at the same time to remonstrate against paganism, and point out the absurdity of worshipping idols. This Freedom so greatly provoked the Senate that St. George was ordered to be tortured, and by the Emperor's orders was dragged through the streets, and beheaded the next day. The legend of the dragon, which is associated with this Martyr, is usually illustrated by representing St. George seated upon a charging horse and transfixing the monster with his spear. This fiery dragon symbolizes the devil, who was vanquished by St. George's Steadfast Faith in Christ, which remained unshaken in spite of torture and death.
(John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Persecutions Under Diocletian, A.D. 303)

Please, see parallel chapters: 4 (The Cross), 720 & 740 (The Ultimate Price).

521

Q: Brother, let's discuss the Story of a Loincloth written in *Jeremiah 13:1-9.*

A: It is written:

1 Thus saith the LORD unto me, Go and get thee a linen girdle, and put it upon thy loins, and put it not in water. 2 So I got a girdle according to the Word of the LORD, and put it on my loins. 3 And the Word of the LORD came unto me the second time, saying, 4 Take the girdle that thou hast got, which is upon thy loins, and arise, go to Euphrates, and hide it there in a hole of the rock. 5 So I went, and hid it by Euphrates, as the LORD commanded me. 6 And it came to pass after many days, that the LORD said unto me, Arise, go to Euphrates, and take the girdle from thence, which I commanded thee to hide there. 7 Then I went to Euphrates, and digged, and took the girdle from the place where I had hid it: and, behold, the girdle was marred, it was profitable for nothing. 8 Then the Word of the LORD came unto me, saying, 9 Thus saith the LORD, After this manner will I mar the pride of Judah, and the great pride of Jerusalem.

Here, a *linen girdle* might symbolize the Word of GOD, even the Holy Law we are supposed to follow. When foolishly shelved & forgotten, the Precious Value thereof is gone from our lives, and the Blessing is lost.
See that in the Bible-book forgotten on a dusty shelf, a golden cross decorating the neck of a thief or prostitute, the title "Reverend" bestowed on a liar, etc., etc.
Note chapters 173 (The Garment of Righteousness) & 176 (The evil of pride).

10 This evil people, which refuse to hear My Words, which walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing.

Accepted in our hearts, an evil spirit brings the spiritual infection of foolishness, disobedience, and pride. That dung leaves us spiritually naked, as the Holy Spirit (incompatible with any evil) leaves us. Then, how to stand before our Father GOD? We cannot cover ourselves with a *rotten* conscience. *Matthew 22:11-14*.
Satan is a liar, and the LORD continuously makes it clear to us. See *John 10:10.*

11 For as the girdle cleaveth to the loins of a man, so have I caused to cleave unto Me the whole House of Israel and the whole House of Judah, saith the LORD; that they might be unto Me for a People, and for a Name, and for a Praise, and for a Glory: but they would not hear.

Behold how our Heavenly Father continues to teach us when we show ourselves disobedient fools! Even as Chosen People of GOD allowed the devil to split them apart into *Judah* and *Israel* in the days of old and into different *denominations* nowadays, we have always been His Children. Remember *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.

... Thou, LORD, art Good, and ready to forgive;
and plenteous in Mercy unto all them that call upon Thee. (Psalms 86:5)

Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts:
and let him return unto the LORD, and He will have Mercy upon him;
and to our GOD, for He will abundantly pardon. (Isaiah 55:7)

Q: Why are we supposed to be sober and vigilant (*1Peter 5:8*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: It is written:

Be Sober, be Vigilant; because your adversary the devil,
as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:
whom resist stedfast in the Faith, knowing that the same afflictions
are accomplished in your Brethren that are in the world. (1Peter 5:8-9)

To be thus *Sober* means *spiritually Disciplined*, always adherent to the Word of GOD, nothing being able to lie us to compromise with the rules of this heathen world. *Spiritual Sobriety* is necessary to be *Spiritually Strong*.
Read *1Thessalonians 5:8* –

But let us, who are of the day, be Sober, putting on
the Breastplate of Faith and Love; and for an Helmet, the Hope of Salvation.

In the natural, sobriety is needed to welcome the Holy Spirit of GOD –

... be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit ...
(Ephesians 5:18)

(This Scripture, we briefly discussed in chapter 589 – The evil of alcoholism.)

Spiritual Vigilance is comparable with watchfulness in the military, as continuous readiness to fight the enemy as per *Ephesians 6:10-18*.
Please, consider relevant chapter 444 (Our Spiritual Weapons).

522

Q: In this book, you often use the word “conscience”.
Is there any difference between defining it in the *world* and the *Church*?

A: Yes, there is. *A Dictionary of the Holy Bible, by John Brown, 1789,* defines Conscience as,

... that reflecting Power of our mind, which compares our qualities and actions with the Law of GOD, known to us, and approves what appears Good, and condemns and upbraids for what appears evil, Romans 2:15. Conscience is Good, when, being sprinkled with Jesus’ Blood, it clearly discerns the Will of GOD, and urges Obedience to His Law, from Gospel-motives, and approves for the same, 1Timothy 1:5.
It is Pure, purged from dead works when, by the application of Jesus’ Blood, it is freed from the Sentence of death due to sin, delivered from the slavery of indwelling corruption; and, by the Instruction of the Holy Ghost, is rendered Clear in its views, Holy in its aims, and a vigorous opposer of every thing sinful, 1Timothy 3:9; Hebrews 9:14; 10:2,22.
It is Faithful, when it approves and condemns things, as they agree with, or are contrary to the Divine Law; and Powerfully restrains from every known sin, Romans 2:15 ...

Right, isn’t it? Behold the Blessed Communion of the Holy Spirit:

Therefore chastnest Thou them by little, and little, that offend,
and warnest them by putting them in remembrance, wherein they haue offended,
that leauing their wickednesse they may beleeue on Thee O LORD.
(Apochypha, Wisdome of Solomon, King James Bible, 1611)

Our Conscience is our *inner Witness*.

I say the Truth in Christ,
I lie not, my Conscience also bearing me Witness in the Holy Ghost,
that I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart. (Romans 9:1-2)

When our *heart* (spirit) is Pure, so is the Conscience. Mind the importance of the Sacrament of *Confession* – the only way to purify the heart.

Blessed is hee whose Conscience hath not condemned him,
and who is not fallen from his Hope in the LORD.
(Apocrypha, Ecclesiasticus or Sirach 14:2, King James Version, 1611)

The Pure Conscience is what assures our Unity with GOD and, therefore, really contributes to the Power to stay Faithful to Him, no matter what.

> *Unless I am convicted by Scriptures ... my Conscience is captive to the Word of GOD. I cannot and I will not recant anything, for to go against Conscience is neither Right nor Safe. GOD help me. Amen. (Roland H. Bainton, Here I Stand, A Life Of Martin Luther, p.185)*

Our *mind* is a spiritual battlefield, the *Conscience* being right in the heat of it. Please note chapter 39 outlining the Spirit War.

For this is Thankworthy, if a man for Conscience toward GOD endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do Well, and suffer for it, ye take it Patiently, this is acceptable with GOD. (1Peter 2:19-20)

Comparing how conscience is defined by the *Bible* (*Theological*) *Dictionaries* and those of the world, you can find the *difference* between Godly and worldly conscience. The last is "good without God". Even so, for the sake of your Christian Conscience, be Vigilant. Don't underestimate the enemy.

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the Apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an Angel of Light. (2Corinthians 11:13-14)

Further references.

2Samuel 24:10, Job 23:16-17, Jeremiah 4:19 & 17:1 – GOD & our conscience.
Isaiah 30:21, John 8:9, & 1John 3:20-21 – The way the Holy Spirit speaks.
Ezekiel 20:42-43, Proverbs 25:21-22, & Zechariah 12:10 – Waken by Goodness.
Matthew 5:8 & 2Corinthians 1:12 – The Joy of Pure Conscience.
Acts 24:16 & Romans 13:5 – Work hard to have your Conscience clean.
Romans 2:14-16, 9:1, 14:22; & Hebrews 10:2 – Our inner Witness.
1Corinthians 8:10-11 & 1Timothy 4:1-2 – A Conscience can be defiled.
1Timothy 1:5,18-19 & 3:9 – The Conscience is tied up with Charity & Faith.
Hebrews 9:14 & 10:22 – Our Conscience is purified by Holy Blood of Jesus.
1Peter 3:15-16,21 – Our Cross, Battlefield, and Baptism.

> *Pray for us: for we trust we have a Good Conscience, in all things willing to live Honestly. (Hebrews 13:18)*

523

Q: Let's talk about *Jeremiah Chapter 14* to see how the old Prophecy works here & now.

A: Okay. The following is *Jeremiah 14* and our *practical observations*, as Brother Thomas Scott (1747-1821) would have defined it.

> *1 The Word of the LORD that came to Jeremiah concerning the dearth.*
> *2 Judah mourneth, and the gates thereof languish; they are black unto the ground; and the cry of Jerusalem is gone up. 3 And their nobles have sent their little ones to the waters: they came to the pits, and found no water; they returned with their vessels empty; they were ashamed and confounded, and covered their heads. 4 Because the ground is chapt, for there was no rain in the Earth, the plowmen were ashamed, they covered their heads.*
> *5 Yea, the hind also calved in the field, and forsook it, because there was no grass. 6 And the wild asses did stand in the high places, they snuffed up the wind like dragons; their eyes did fail, because there was no grass.*

That *dearth* (drought) in the *natural* was (and still is) just the last link in the evil chain, the preceding links being *our* godlessness, the refusal of the Living Water of GOD's Word, and the *spiritual* drought caused thereby. See *Hosea 4:2-3*.
Our spiritual Authority (the subject of chapter 312) over the Earth and *our* due demerit (discussed in chapter 503) are seen in the above Verses.
It is folly to look for solutions in the *natural* when the cause of the problem is *spiritual*. Walking the wrong way, we get nowhere. See *John 4:14 & 7:37-39*.

> *7 O LORD, though our iniquities testify against us, do Thou it for Thy Name's sake: for our backslidings are many; we have sinned against Thee.*
> *8 O the Hope of Israel, the Saviour thereof in time of trouble, why shouldest Thou be as a stranger in the land, and as a wayfaring man that turneth aside to tarry for a night? 9 Why shouldest Thou be as a man astonied, as a mighty man that cannot save? Yet Thou, O LORD, art in the midst of us, and we are called by Thy Name; leave us not.*

A Prophet should pray for the people he belongs with. For our LORD GOD is the only Hope. Kindly see *Ecclesiastes 9:4* and "Q & A" chapter 138 (Hope).

> *10 Thus saith the LORD unto this people, Thus have they loved to wander, they have not refrained their feet, therefore the LORD doth not accept them; He will now remember their iniquity, and visit their sins.*

11 Then said the LORD unto me, Pray not for this people for their good [natural outcome]. *12 When they fast, I will not hear their cry; and when they offer Burnt Offering and an Oblation, I will not accept them: but I will consume them by the sword, and by the famine, and by the pestilence.*

GOD's Punishment & Perfect Justice were discoursed in chapters 64 & 320, respectively. Kindly note *Nehemiah 9:33, Psalm 106:6, & Daniel 9:5*.

13 Then said I, Ah, LORD GOD! behold, the prophets say unto them, Ye shall not see the sword, neither shall ye have famine; but I will give you assured peace in this place. 14 Then the LORD said unto me, The prophets prophesy lies in My Name: I sent them not, neither have I commanded them, neither spake unto them: they prophesy unto you a false vision and divination, and a thing of nought, and the deceit of their heart. 15 Therefore thus saith the LORD concerning the prophets that prophesy in My Name, and I sent them not, yet they say, Sword and famine shall not be in this land; By sword and famine shall those prophets be consumed. 16 And the people to whom they prophesy shall be cast out in the streets of Jerusalem because of the famine and the sword; and they shall have none to bury them, them, their wives, nor their sons, nor their daughters: for I will pour their wickedness upon them.

The LORD, our GOD, continuously teaches us Responsibility.
Please, note these Parallels: *Matthew 15:14, Luke 12:48, & Romans 14:12*.

17 Therefore thou shalt say this Word unto them; Let Mine Eyes run down with Tears night and day, and let them not cease: for the Virgin Daughter of My People is broken with a great breach, with a very grievous blow. 18 If I go forth into the field, then behold the slain with the sword! And if I enter into the city, then behold them that are sick with famine! Yea, both the Prophet and the Priest go about into a land [hell] *that they know not.*
19 Hast Thou utterly rejected Judah? Hath Thy Soul lothed Zion? Why hast Thou smitten us, and there is no Healing for us? We looked for Peace, and there is no Good; and for the time of Healing, and behold trouble! 20 We acknowledge [& confess], *O LORD, our wickedness, and the iniquity of our fathers: for we have sinned against Thee. 21 Do not abhor us, for Thy Name's sake, do not disgrace the Throne of Thy Glory: remember, break not Thy Covenant with us. 22 Are there any among the vanities of the Gentiles that can cause rain? or can the Heavens give showers? Art not Thou He, O LORD our GOD? Therefore we will wait upon Thee: for Thou hast made all these things.* [Comments in the brackets are mine.]

Verse 17 reminds us that GOD, our Judge, is our Father as well.
Our pains & tears are His also. However, once He Divinely established His Perfect Justice, He has been the first to follow it.
Verse 20 is a Good example of a Prayer of Repentance.
Look for the *spiritual* reasons and the *spiritual* ways out of every evil.

Father GOD promised us the Living Water in *Isaiah 49:10, 55:1, & 58:11; John 4:14; Revelation 7:16-17 & 21:6.*
At the same time, by *Jeremiah 2:13 & 17:13*, the LORD GOD warned us regarding our failing to treasure the Living Waters.

Q: How should we live in the Light of GOD's Saying,
"*Be Holy for I am Holy*" (*Leviticus 19:2; 1Peter 1:16*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org,* January 2021.)

A: It is written:

Y*e shall be Holy:*
for I the LORD your GOD am Holy. (Leviticus 19:2)

... He which hath called you is Holy, so be ye Holy in all manner of conversation;
because it is written, Be ye Holy; for I am Holy. (1Peter 1:15-16)

Leviticus 19:2 summarizes all of Chapter 19 where it belongs. That Chapter stands upon all the Holy Law and the Written Word of GOD.
The *conversation*, which *1Peter 1:15* speaks about, is all our Christian thinking, speaking, and acting. Kindly regard the words of Brother *Lewis* in chapter 220.

> *Holiness is derived from Hebrew root meaning separateness, withdrawal ... The idea of Holiness originates in the Revealed Character of GOD, and is communicated to things, places, times and persons engaged in His Service ... Holiness is interwoven with Righteousness & Purity. To seek Holiness apart from the other Qualities of Christlike Life, is to wander from the Way of Holiness ... (Zondervan Bible Dictionary)*

We cannot be *Holy* otherwise but *in* Lord Jesus. Many New Covenant Scriptures support that. And *Holy* means *separated* from the heathen world we live in.
To get thus separated, find & serve Him in your Christian Ministry (chapter 461). That makes us Members of One Church of GOD. However, our Ministries and Local Church Duties are to be *second* to our Christian Families.
You may find the relevant chapters in the Index. Godspeed.

524

Q: Brother, let's talk about *Luke 10:1-12*.
It teaches us how to follow our Great Commission, doesn't it?

A: Definitely. We can look upon it Verse by Verse.

> *1 ... the Lord appointed other Seventy also, and sent them two and two before His face into every city and place, whither He Himself would come.*

Please note that GOD's Direction should be sought for, heard, and complied with. Our *Great Commission* (the Twelfth Commandment per *Matthew 28:19-20*) was discussed in chapters 24 & 43.

> *2 Therefore said He unto them, The Harvest Truly is great, but the Labourers are few: pray ye therefore the Lord of the Harvest, that He would send forth Labourers into His Harvest.*

Mind the *Divine Timing* spoken about in chapter 519 (*Ecclesiastes 3:1-8*).
Here, we can also read about Evangelists as *GOD-Ordained Ministers*.
We mentioned that subject in chapter 24 (The Will of GOD for us).
Our Prayer for the Mighty Backup of the LORD is underlined too.

> *3 Go your ways: behold, I send you forth as lambs among wolves.*

As for "*lambs among wolves*", please read the following passage taken from the Blessed *Book of Martyrs*. In the same writing, you can also find the meaning of Jesus' Promise given in *Matthew 28:20* and fulfilled.

> *In the year 1524, at a town in France called Melden, one John Clark affixed a bill on the Church door, in which he called the Pope Antichrist : for this offence he was repeatedly whipped, and then branded in the forehead. His mother, who saw the chastisement, cried with a loud voice, "Blessed be Christ, and welcome these marks for His Sake!" He went afterwards to Metz, in Lorraine, and demolished some images, for which he had his right hand and nose cut off, and his arms and breast torn by pincers, while suffering these cruelties, he sang the 115th Psalm, which expressly forbids superstition. On concluding the Psalm, he was thrown into the fire and burnt to ashes.* *(John Fox, Book of Martyrs; Section 4, Persecutions in France ... p.98; Edited by Charles A. Goodrich, 1832)*

Yea, the *Book of Martyrs* is full of Wonderful Testimonies regarding the Mighty Power of GOD, our Father, ever Able to remove all *physical pains* in answer to our *fearless Faith* in Him. Remember, that (removing physical pain) wasn't in the case of Christ (chapter 520 – The Ultimate Price).
Verse 3 and the above notes are pertinent to the evil of persecutions.

> *4 Carry neither purse, nor scrip, nor shoes: and salute no man by the way.*

This Verse teaches that *Evangelists* (in the line of Duty) neither should get burdened with secondary stuff nor be distracted by worldly conversations.

> *5 And into whatsoever house ye enter, first say, Peace be to this house.*
> *6 And if the Son of Peace be there, your Peace shall rest upon it: if not, it shall turn to you again.*

We spoke about that Peace (*Shalom*) in chapter 168. Please read.

> *7 And in the same house remain, eating and drinking such things as they give: for the Labourer is Worthy of his Hire. Go not from house to house.*

Following *Verses 5-7*, Evangelists should stay where the LORD's Peace is.
And note, *Verses 7 & 8* don't overrule or cancel *Genesis 9:4*.

> *8 And into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you, eat such things as are set before you: 9 And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them, The Kingdom of GOD is come nigh unto you.*

Note, Welcome & Healing are connected. *Matthew 13:58; Mark 5:17 & 6:5-6.*
Our *Healing Ministry* is the subject of chapter 432. Please, look it up.

> *10 But into whatsoever city ye enter, and they receive you not, go your ways out into the streets of the same, and say, 11 Even the very dust of your city, which cleaveth on us, we do wipe off against you: notwithstanding be ye sure of this, that the Kingdom of GOD is come nigh unto you. 12 But I say unto you, that it shall be more tolerable in that Day for Sodom, than for that city.*

Shaking the dust from off the clothes is mentioned in *Nehemiah 5:13*.
That custom is derived from the *Rabbis* of old when they crossed the border of their homeland Israel returning from the Ministries abroad.
Jesus mentioned that in *Matthew 23:15*.

In *Verses 9 & 11,* the Words, "*the Kingdom of GOD is come nigh unto you*", I understand as the Warning, parallel to *Deuteronomy 30:19* & *2Corinthians 6:2*, as well as to every other Scripture, demanding of everyone to *make a choice*. *Sodom* was mentioned 47 times in the Scriptures, including *Genesis 13:13*, which Scripture is well worth to mind.

Note the Parallels: *Matthew 10:5-15, Mark 6:7-13, & Luke 9:1-5*.

> *Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. But beware of men: for they will deliver you up to the Councils, and they will scourge you in their Synagogues. And ye shall be brought before Governors and Kings for My sake, for a Testimony against them and the Gentiles. But when they deliver you up, take no thought how or what ye shall speak: for it shall be given you in that same hour what ye shall speak. For it is not ye that speak, but the Spirit of your Father which speaketh in you. (Matthew 16:20)*

Q: Please, explain *Matthew 5:23-24*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: In chapter 605 (Anger & criticism), we briefly spoke on this Scripture.
Welcome to take a look. Here, we may continue our conversation.
It is written,

> *... whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the Judgment ... Therefore if thou bring thy Gift to the Altar, and there rememberest that thy brother* [or Brother*] *hath ought against thee; leave there thy Gift before the Altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy Gift. (Matthew 5:22-24)*

To be angry with a brother or neighbor "*without a cause*" means a conflict based on trivial matters simply solvable. Any irritation or misunderstanding should be stopped dead before growing up into stupid enmity.

Please also note that it takes a Believer to bring a Gift to the Altar (i.e., giving Tithing or Offerings in a Church). Therefore, the Words "*there rememberest that thy Brother* hath ought against thee*" belong only to an Unction of the Holy Ghost. And it is He Who may (or may not – mind "*if*" in *Matthew 5:23*) direct you to that person for Reconciliation. [* Mind our Christian Unity.]

525

Q: Brother, what would you recommend me to do
for my Prayers to be answered by GOD?

A: To begin with, it is hard to recommend anything without hearing the relevant story. Therefore, the first thing to commend is *Confession*.
Please see the relevant chapters in the Index section.
However, as I've heard this question more than once before, we can consult the Written Word of GOD as to what things might be in the way of our Communion with Him by means of Prayers.

I know the Thoughts that I think toward you, saith the LORD, Thoughts of Peace,
and not of evil, to give you an expected end. Then shall ye call upon Me,
and ye shall go and pray unto Me, and I will hearken unto you.
And ye shall seek Me, and find Me,
when ye shall search for Me with all your heart. (Jeremiah 29:11-13)

Please see the following references.

2Chronicles 7:14; Psalms 32:56; 62:8; 86:5,7; 102:17;
Luke 18:1-7; & Philippians 4:6-7 – Seek Forgiving, Help, Healing.
Ecclesiastes 5:2 & Matthew 6:7 – Mind your wording.
Isaiah 58:4 – Put such things as strife far from you.
Isaiah 58:6-14 – Keep True Fast (see chapter 73).
Matthew 5:23-24 – Reconcile first.
Matthew 6:9-13 – Pray the Lord's Prayer (refer to the Index).
Matthew 18:19-20 – Consider a Prayer Team (see chapter 465).
Matthew 19:5-6 & 1Peter 3:7 – Keep Peace in your Family.
Mark 11:24 – Believe in your Prayer.
Mark 11:25 & James 5:16 – Consider Forgiving & Confession.
Luke 15:20 – Repent of any sin, walk the Right Way, and hope.
John 9:31 & 1John 5:14 – Mind the Holy Will of GOD.
John 14:14 – Pray in the Name of Jesus.
1Corinthians 14:2,14 – Follow the Guidance of the Holy Ghost.
James 4:3 – Don't ask for anything which may displease GOD.
James 5:16 – Don't underestimate Confession.
1John 3:21-22 – Keep Righteousness (see "Q & A" chapters 15 & 173).

You may see chapters 194, 397, 398, & 478, and look up the Index section.

526

Q: How to connect *Genesis 1:27* & *Jeremiah 17:9*?

A: All Holy Scriptures are interconnected.

Seek ye out of the Book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail,
none shall want her mate: for My Mouth it hath commanded,
and His Spirit it hath gathered them. (Isaiah 34:16)

But speaking of *Genesis 1:27 & Jeremiah 17:9*, namely –

So GOD created Man in His Own Image, in the Image of GOD created He him;
male and female created He them. (Genesis 1:27)

The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked:
who can know it? (Jeremiah 17:9)

– the connection is all about our failure to value the Greatest Gift of Father GOD, even His Image & Likeness, which every human being gets blessed with right from birth.

And GOD said, Let Us make Man in Our Image, after Our Likeness:
and let them have Dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air,
and over the cattle, and over all the Earth, and over every creeping thing
that creepeth upon the Earth. (Genesis 1:26)

... My Wellbeloved hath a Vineyard in a very fruitful hill:
And He fenced it, and gathered out the stones thereof,
and planted it with the Choicest Vine, and built a Tower in the midst of it,
and also made a Winepress therein:
and He looked that it should bring forth Grapes,
and it brought forth wild grapes. (Isaiah 5:1-2)

So, are we hopeless? – Negative on that.
How come? – Don't ever forget that the LORD, our Holy GOD, is Love.

Behold, for Peace I had great bitterness:
but Thou hast in love to my soul delivered it from the pit of corruption:
for Thou hast cast all my sins behind Thy Back. (Isaiah 38:17)

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son,
that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life.
For GOD sent not His Son into the World to condemn the World;
but that the World through Him might be saved. (John 3:16-17)

Regarding other Scriptural interconnections, you may consider the following –

Genesis 1:27 is witnessed & strengthened by *Ecclesiastes 3:14*.

I know that, whatsoever GOD doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it,
nor any thing taken from it: and GOD doeth it, that men should fear before Him.
(Ecclesiastes 3:14)

Jeremiah 17:9 is exemplified by *James 3:8*.

But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison.
(James 3:8)

Jeremiah 17:9 & *James 3:8* are cleared up by *2Corinthians 4:4*.

... the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not,
lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, Who is the Image of GOD,
should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:4)

These three – *Jeremiah 17:9, James 3:8, & 2Corinthians 4:4* –
direct us to the Way out by *1John 1:9 & 2Corinthians 5:17*.

If we confess our sins, He is Faithful and Just to forgive us our sins,
and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. (1John 1:9)

... if any man be in Christ, he is a New Creature: old things are passed
away; behold, all things are become New. (2Corinthians 5:17)

Luke 10:19 & *1John 1:9* back up one another.

Behold, I give unto you Power to tread on serpents and scorpions,
and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.
(Luke 10:19)

– And so forth. Thank you.

527

Q: Brother, let's study together *Chapter 17* of the *Book of Jeremiah*.

A: Okay, let's do it.

1 The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond: it is graven upon the table of their heart, and upon the horns of your altars; 2 Whilst their children remember their altars and their groves by the green trees upon the high hills. 3 O My Mountain in the field, I will give thy Substance and all thy Treasures to the spoil, and thy high places for sin, throughout all thy borders. 4 And thou, even thyself, shalt discontinue from thine Heritage that I gave thee; and I will cause thee to serve thine enemies in the land which thou knowest not: for ye have kindled a Fire in Mine Anger, which shall burn for ever.

These lines remind us of personal Accountability to the LORD for the iniquities sown by us into the lives of ours and our children. We have to confess & repent of the ungodly altars whereon so many Blessings were burned off, the GOD-Given Life-time inclusive. The Body of Christ is thus rebuked for the worldly ways she walked and compromised with the devil. The sinfulness of our hearts and spiritual imprisonment in the heathen world we serve is our Due Punishment.

5 Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the LORD. 6 For he shall be like the heath in the desert, and shall not see when Good cometh; but shall inhabit the parched places in the wilderness, in a salt land and not inhabited. 7 Blessed is the man that trusteth in the LORD, and whose Hope the LORD is. 8 For he shall be as a tree planted by the waters, and that spreadeth out her roots by the river, and shall not see when heat cometh, but her leaf shall be green; and shall not be careful in the year of drought, neither shall cease from yielding fruit.

As it is pointed out in the film "*Flywheel*", our living depends on the choices we make. Add to that our Eternal destiny. In this book, see chapter 15 (GOD First).

9 The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it? 10 I the LORD search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings. 11 As the partridge sitteth on eggs, and hatcheth them not; so he that getteth riches, and not by Right, shall leave them in the midst of his days, and at his end shall be a fool.

Verse 9 is talked over in the previous chapter 526. *Verse 10* reminds us of the Perfect Justice of the LORD. *1Corinthians 4:5* is a Parallel. See chapter 320.

> *12 A Glorious High Throne from the Beginning is the Place of our Sanctuary. 13 O LORD, the Hope of Israel, all that forsake Thee shall be ashamed, and they that depart from Me shall be written in the earth* [Expanded Bible: *recorded in the underworld*], *because they have forsaken the LORD, the Fountain of Living Waters. 14 Heal me, O LORD, and I shall be healed; save me, and I shall be saved: for Thou art my Praise.*

The Truth of *Matthew 6:21* & *Luke 12:34* is Parallel to *Verse 13*.
Worship the LORD, your Heavenly Father, continuously. *Deuteronomy 6:4-5*.

> *15 Behold, they say unto me, Where is the Word of the LORD? Let it come now. 16 As for me, I have not hastened from being a Pastor to follow Thee: neither have I desired the woeful day; Thou knowest: that which came out of my lips was Right before Thee. 17 Be not a terror unto me: Thou art my Hope in the day of evil. 18 Let them be confounded that persecute me, but let not me be confounded: let them be dismayed, but let not me be dismayed: bring upon them the day of evil, and destroy them with double destruction.*

Verse 15. Be always ready to encounter *the devil* in every *atheistic opposition*.
Verses 16-17. Communicate with the Holy Spirit of GOD and teach so others.
Verse 18. Know & fight your real enemy – *Satan* & *his demons* – not the heathen people. The last may still have Hope per *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.

> *19 Thus said the LORD unto me; Go and stand in the Gate of the children of the people, whereby the Kings of Judah come in, and by the which they go out, and in all the Gates of Jerusalem; 20 And say unto them, Hear ye the Word of the LORD, ye Kings of Judah, and all Judah, and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, that enter in by these Gates:*

These Words are to all Servants of our Father GOD to pass His Warning, as for the *choices* this World, the Authorities, and Christians make. *Matthew 7:13-14*.

> *21 Thus saith the LORD; Take heed to yourselves, and bear no burden on the Sabbath Day, nor bring it in by the Gates of Jerusalem; 22 Neither carry forth a burden out of your houses on the Sabbath Day, neither do ye any work, but hallow ye the Sabbath Day, as I commanded your fathers.*

By consecrating the *Sabbath Day*, we honor the LORD. One day a week should be dedicated to our physical & emotional rest. Those "*burdens*" denote every physical & intellectual work or task which can be done or solved before or after our Sabbath. Come to the Church *Free* of problems. See chapter 91 of this book.

> *23 But they obeyed not, neither inclined their ear, but made their neck stiff, that they might not hear, nor receive Instruction.*

That's it. Mind the ending Words of *Matthew 7:14*.
Our disobedience to Father GOD leads us to the evil of spiritual deafness. We cannot be *disobedient* unto Him, and *hear* His Voice at the same time.
The evil of disobedience is reinforced by the demons armed with such spirit dung as pride like a ground sown is fertilized. Note chapter 503 (The Harvest Law).

> *24 And it shall come to pass, if ye diligently hearken unto Me, saith the LORD, to bring in no burden through the gates of this City on the Sabbath Day, but hallow the Sabbath Day, to do no work therein; 25 Then shall there enter into the Gates of this City Kings and Princes sitting upon the Throne of David, riding in chariots and on horses, they, and their Princes, the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem: and this City shall remain for ever. 26 And they shall come from the cities of Judah, and from the places about Jerusalem, and from the land of Benjamin, and from the plain, and from the mountains, and from the south, bringing Burnt Offerings, and Sacrifices, and Meat Offerings, and Incense, and bringing Sacrifices of Praise, unto the House of the LORD. 27 But if ye will not hearken unto Me to hallow the Sabbath Day, and not to bear a burden, even entering in at the Gates of Jerusalem on the Sabbath Day; then will I kindle a Fire in the Gates thereof, and it shall devour the Palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched.*

Verse 24: The LORD's Compulsory Condition is stated. Make your choices.
Verse 25: The Good Parallel is *Jeremiah 3:15*. The Law of the Harvest is here: sowing the *Obedience* to GOD, we reap the Harvest of His *Blessings* and receive our due, the *Godly Rulers* inclusive. See chapter 44 (B & C).
Verse 26: Thus, *Obedience* to our Heavenly Father – keeping His Fourth Commandment – restores the LORD's Blessings, including the *Giving Attitude*.
Verse 27: Unreasonable as it may seem to *unbelievers*, dishonoring the Holy Sabbath brings about the only possible demerit of every *instability* & *crisis* in our countries up to the *wars*. See chapters 64 (GOD's Punishment) & 300 (The evil of wars). Kindly read about our choices in *Deuteronomy 30:15-20*.

528

Q: Let's clear up the Words "*Prove all things*" in *1Thessalonians 5:21*.

A: It is written,

Prove all things; hold fast that which is Good.
Abstain from all appearance of evil. (1Thessalonians 5:21-22)

Since that Epistle is to the *Church*, our question is all about *spiritual* matters. Considering our Accountability to the LORD GOD (*2Corinthians 5:10*), each of us should take these Words personally. In this regard, we ought to find all the ways to follow this Scripture. Kindly note *Jeremiah 7:3-7 & 26:13*.
The following matters are to be among those taken into account.

Examining our conscience – *Galatians 2:20*. "Q & A" chapter 15.
Proving our neighbors – *Exodus 23:1-3 & Joshua 24:14-15*. Chapters 40 & 41.
Proving our Friends – *John 15:14*. Chapter 121.
Proving our Shepherds – *Matthew 20:25-28 & Mark 10:42-45*. Chapter 436.
Proving our Congregations – *Philippians 3:18-19*. Chapter 242.
Testing our Ministry – *Matthew 5:13-16 & James 1:17*. Chapters 24 & 461.
Investigating our Employment – *Proverbs 24:4*. Chapters 40, 90, & 143.

In each particular case, the *Word of GOD* is our Examination Tool.

Q: (1) Does the Gift of Prophecy still exist?
Q: (2) And, if so, can God tell you when others will die?
Q: (3) And how to prevent it?
Q: (4) Or else, is death for only God to know about and decide?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: (1) Yes, it does. Kindly read *1Corinthians 14:1*.
(2) If you mean *natural* death, the LORD can tell that in different ways and to anybody. Please see "Q & A" chapter 32.
(3) The best way is to follow the Will of GOD. But to prevent *second* death is more important than a merely *natural* one. Please see chapter 167.
(4) The LORD, our GOD, knows, plans, and decides everything.
However, He has blessed us with Free will to follow the Way to *Eternal Life* or join the devil in *eternal death*.

You are welcome to visit the Index section for references.

529

Q: In chapter 171, you wrote, "... in *Mark 5:42-43*, we can read about the *spiritual starvation* – the reason of *death* – at the age of 12."
So, the question is: why are there so many old *unbelievers* who did not die for that reason?

A: Each human being has spiritual & physical *inheritance* – Blessings & curses – as well as those *accumulated* in his (her) lifetime. See chapter 44 (B &C).

Two men might have the same sickness – one died, another survived. So what? Their neighbors might speak up a lot of ideas or stay speechless about why.
In that particular case – *Mark 5:41-43* – we ought to consider such an important stipulation as the *Holy Will of GOD*. Our Father GOD taught and still teaches people by those striking examples of Healing & Deliverance during the Messianic Ministry of our Lord Jesus. *1Corinthians 10:6,11*.
Mind the Words preceding the Miracle in *Mark 5:36 & Luke 8:50*.
Note the way taken in *Matthew 9:25, Mark 5:40, Luke 8:54*, etc.

As for those old unbelievers (mentioned in our question) who haven't yet died, I am happy for them. Per *Ecclesiastes 9:4*, they still have Hope – if they care.

Q: I often see Christians *aggressively* against things happening in the World that seem to be leading toward the events described in Revelations. One World Government, currency, etc. If all that is the known direction of our civilization, the Sign of End Times and Return, why do they fight what must occur, being part of the Plan?

(Signed: Christian.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, September 2020. Condensed.*)*

A: Whatever you mean by saying "aggressively", please mind *Ephesians 6:12*.
Our fight (as you put it) is the attitude against evil and following the Great Commission. In this book, you may refer to relevant chapters 39 (The War outlined) & 43 (The Twelfth Commandment).
With all respect, I cannot agree with your words "part of the Plan" as well. LORD GOD did not plan evil, but He foresaw & predicted it.

... whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our Learning, that we through Patience and Comfort of the Scriptures might have Hope.
(Romans 15:4)

530

Q: In chapter 13, you wrote:
"By *Matthew 10:36,* family members become *spiritual foes* (by staying on *unbelievers*, *idolaters*, etc.) to every Christian Proselyte ..."
Does it mean that Christians are to leave their families for Christ's sake?

A: Not compulsorily. As a seaman for many years gone by, I remember this good rule: abandon a ship when & only when all attempts to save her failed.

It is written,

And a man's foes shall be they of his own household. (Matthew 10:36)

If any man come to Me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife,
and children, and brethren, and sisters, Yea, and his own life also,
he cannot be My Disciple. (Luke 14:26)

Matthew 10:36 does not say that those foes are incorrigible.
The Holy Will of GOD for them is stated in *John 3:16-17*.
The Christian Proselyte should *pray* for that Holy Will to be fulfilled in his (her) home, ask the Holy Ghost to give him (her) the right Words to them or send their way a better Teacher.
Luke 14:26 teaches us to hate our real & present enemies – the evil spirits of Satan – not spiritually weak kin invaded & infected by them.
What else *Matthew 5:44-45*, *Luke 6:27-36*, and so many other Scriptures teaching us *Love* are written for?

Remember our Blessed Lord and the Power we have in Him.

... All Power is given unto Me in Heaven and in Earth.
Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them
in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:
Teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you:
and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the World.
Amen. (Matthew 28:18-20)

Behold, I give unto you Power to tread on serpents and scorpions,
and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you.
(Luke 10:19)

Q: I am a Roman Catholic with a question I have been struggling to find out. God tells us to love our *enemies*, but does that include the devil and the occult? Because, technically, they are *enemies*.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: Jesus said,

... Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you ... (Matthew 5:44)

The above, along with *Matthew 5:45-47*, teaches us to love our neighbors, that is, *people* who in the world and for worldly reasons are labeled "enemies".
By *2Corinthians 4:4*, they are fooled by the devil. But, as per *Ecclesiastes 9:4*, those folks have Hope. Their company includes the people of "occult", meaning the followers of false & satanic beliefs.

However, in *Genesis 3:15*, our Spiritual War was declared. Satan & his every *evil spirit* became our *enemies*.

In the Parable of Wheat and Weeds (*Matthew 13:24-30*), *Verses 25 & 28*, the evil one is Rightfully called "enemy". In the same way, Satan is dealt with in *Matthew 4:10*, as well as in many other Scriptures.

Thank you for your question.

Q: I don't know what to do.. My parents have been divorced for quite a time now. My mom is having an affair with my best friend's dad. I wanna tell somebody, but it would get her in so much trouble. My best friend's mom is a friend of my mom. They always invite us to family events, and it makes me feel so uncomfortable. That is causing me so much stress because late at night, she sneaks him into our house almost every day. And I can't do anything about it. Please, help me.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/helpme*, June 2020.)

A: I am sorry to hear about every broken family.
Sort out your priorities. If you want to be honest, speak out your heart to your mom. And, if she won't hear, tell the same to that unlucky wife – your best friend's mom. But, if you want *worldly peace & quiet*, keep mum.
What is most important, you have to think well about how to build up your future family. I pray for you. Take care.

531

Q: I'm a Small Group Leader.
Talking about *Tithing* in our Small Group, I heard these opinions:
1. Nobody has a right to control our Tithing.
2. I tithe myself and don't care what others do.
3. I tithe as much as I can.
What would you tell these folks if *you* were their Leader?

A: That depends on the folks – their years of being with Christ.
And the more are those years the harder could be my rebuke.

The following would be my answers, which I put in the order the above opinions go, presuming that their authors are *Christians*.

1. *Every* Church Member has that right, given it is a Church, not a social club.
Mind the example of Christ, which your Pastor should be the first to follow.
Mark 12:41-44 & *Luke 21:1-4*.

... Jesus sat over against the Treasury,
and beheld how the people cast money into the Treasury ... (Mark 12:41)

2. If so, you do not care about your Congregation too. *John 17:21-23*.

3. Your first reference is *Revelation 3:15*, and *2Corinthians 5:10* is to be next.

Bring ye all the Tithes into the Storehouse,
that there may be Meat in Mine House, and prove Me now herewith,
saith the LORD of Hosts, if I will not open you the Windows of Heaven,
and pour you out a Blessing, that there shall not be room enough to receive it.
(Malachi 3:10)

Since you are a Small Group Leader, kindly be reminded of the Responsibility for the Sheep under your Care.

Personally, whether being a Small Group Member or Leader, my last participation there was when I found myself thinking, *what I'm here for?*

Please, see chapters: 6 (Tithes & Offerings), 56 (The Test of Giving),
286 (Small Groups), & 436 (The Shepherds).

532

Q: How can you explain the fact that in our land, the last tropical storm killed so many people, the devout *Christians* being among them?

A: I can only try to. GOD said:

... My Thoughts are not your thoughts,
neither are your ways My Ways, saith the LORD. (Isaiah 55:8)

And who is Devout and who is not, only He decides.

There is no wisdom nor understanding nor counsel against the LORD.
(Proverbs 21:30)

As for the Christians who die now & again, the only Scripture first crossing my mind is *Isaiah 57:1-14*. It explains away who does perish and who doesn't.

The Righteous perisheth, and no man layeth it to heart:
and Merciful men are taken away, none considering that the Righteous
is taken away from the evil to come. (Isaiah 57:1)

If I remember correctly, Kenneth Copeland once testified about his brother, a *Christian,* who had been killed in a traffic incident. Sorrowful, Kenneth asked the LORD about the reason. And GOD answered: "Your brother was not there." The LORD revealed that the spirit had been taken from the man *before* his body suffered the crash. And only GOD is competent to say who perished indeed.

GOD is our Refuge and Strength, a very present Help in trouble.
Therefore will not we fear, though the Earth be removed,
and though the mountains be carried into the midst of the sea;
though the waters thereof roar and be troubled, though
the mountains shake with the swelling thereof. Selah. (Psalms 46:1-3)

Q: (1) From a Christian perspective, what happens to the babies aborted?
Q: (2) If they are, in fact, people, do *they go to Heaven*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: From that perspective, your second question has the answer to both.
Only a willful sin (which is absent in such a case) can stand in the way of a GOD-created soul to Paradise & the Kingdom of Heaven.

533

Q: Please clarify *Scripturally* the term "*stranger*".

A: Within the meaning of the *Holy Scriptures*, it is every *non-Christian*, even the person who does not seek the LORD and serves Satan. Behold the following references.

Do thou likewise – *Luke 10:30-37*.
Kindly see "Q & A" chapter 205 (The Parable of Good Samaritan).

Welcome – *Genesis Chapter 18 & Job 31:32*.

Don't oppress – *Leviticus 19:10; 19:33-34; Deuteronomy 27:19; Jeremiah 7:6-7; 22:3; Ezekiel 47:22-23; & Malachi 3:5*.

Mind the Holy things – *Exodus 12:43-45; Leviticus 22:10; & Ezekiel 44:6-9*.

The Law of GOD covers – *Numbers 15:13-16,29,30; & Deuteronomy 29:9-15*.

Heavenly Father loves – *Deuteronomy 10:18-19; 26:11-12; & Psalms 146:9*.

Don't welcome the known enemies of Faith – *Deuteronomy 23:3*.

The LORD minds those who love Him – *Isaiah 56:6-7*.

And so we should – *1Kings 8:41-43 & Isaiah 58:7*.

Mind GOD-Ordained Equality –

... if a stranger sojourn with thee in your land, ye shall not vex him.
But the stranger that dwelleth with you shall be unto you as one born among you,
and thou shalt love him as thyself; for ye were strangers in the land of Egypt:
I am the LORD your GOD. (Leviticus 19:33-34)

One Law and one manner shall be for you,
and for the stranger that sojourneth with you. (Numbers 15:16)

The stranger did not lodge in the street:
but I opened my doors to the traveller. (Job 31:32)

534

Q: Brother, let us continue our talk about *Love* & *Charity* (chapter 135) and study *1Corinthians 13* Verse by Verse.

A: In chapter 135, we defined *Charity* as Love in action. *1Corinthians Chapter 13* will tell us more.

> *1 Though I speak with the tongues of men and of Angels, and have not Charity, I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal.*

The purpose of every education, whether common or Christian, yet deprived of Love is questionable. Why? Because GOD is Love. *1John 4:8*.

> *2 And though I have the Gift of Prophecy, and understand all Mysteries, and all Knowledge; and though I have all Faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not Charity, I am nothing.*

Whatever Precious Gifts we might be blessed by the LORD with are lost in and by us when we are void of Love. Because without the needful indwelling of the Holy Spirit of Love, evil spirits can enter and rule our hearts. See *1John 4:16*.

> *3 And though I bestow all my goods to feed the poor, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not Charity, it profiteth me nothing.*

Again, without Love, i.e., without our Father GOD, all our Works & Sacrifices might serve the lie, pride, and other garbage of the devil. Mind *John 10:10*. Kindly see chapters 180 & 324. So, where shall we end up in the long run?

> *4 Charity suffereth long, and is Kind; Charity envieth not; Charity vaunteth not itself, is not puffed up,*

On the other hand, when there is (the Holy Spirit of) Love in our hearts, our Understanding broadens and so does Wisdom. We ignore sufferings. Doing the Works of Charity, we disregard pride. Note well *Matthew 6:3-4*.

> *5 Doth not behave itself unseemly, seeketh not her own, is not easily provoked, thinketh no evil;*

What is *seemly* and what is not Christians measure by the Written Word of GOD only. We are no more aspiring career-seekers, easily irritated hotheads, or evil-minded conspirators.

6 Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the Truth;

Our spiritual values and priorities are considerably changed. Taught by GOD, Christians see a Pure Joy where they did not see it before. And vice versa.

7 Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.

Armed with True Love, Believers can bear what atheists cannot. We believe & trust our LORD GOD – Whom the heathen world does not know, our Hope is where the heathen mind cannot go, and we endure the things impossible to us before. All that is made possible by the Guidance & the Power of the Holy Ghost.

8 Charity never faileth: but whether there be Prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be Knowledge, it shall vanish away.

The LORD, our GOD, is Eternal, and so is Love. Such other good things as Prophecies, tongues, and Knowledge have their definite limits.

9 For we know in part, and we prophesy in part.

The Gift of Knowledge is limited to the present World and Time.
The Gift of Prophecy is limited, even more, given to a few of us.
See chapter 180 and the article "About the Writer" at the end of this book.

10 But when that which is Perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away.

It is a clear-cut state of Perfection. It can neither be "*in part*" nor have any defective component. The Holy Word of GOD is thus Perfect.

11 When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things.

And that is the way of a human being. Please see chapter 58 (K & U & W).
However, GOD's Image & Likeness can be found in children more than in many adult persons. *Mark 10:15* & *Luke 18:17*.
We touched on this theme in chapters 166, 440, and others.

12 For now we see through a glass, darkly; but then face to face:
now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known.

Here we can read about the Timing of our Father GOD. See *Ecclesiastes 3:1*.
For our Perfect Knowledge is a part of the LORD's Purpose for us in the Kingdom of Heaven –

... we all, with open face beholding as in a glass the Glory of the Lord,
are changed into the same Image from Glory to Glory,
even as by the Spirit of the Lord. (2Corinthians 3:18)

13 And now abideth Faith, Hope, Charity, these three; but the greatest of these is Charity.

Consequently, Love, Faith, and Hope can be understood, valued, and trained as the Power qualities of our spirit. Please, see chapter 444 (Our Spiritual Weapons).

In 1Corinthians 13:8-13, Paul has three final things to say of this Christian Love.
(1) He stresses its absolute Permanency. When all the things in which men glory have passed away, Love will still stand. ... That is one of the great reasons for believing in Immortality. When Love is entered into, there comes into Life a Relationship against which the assaults of time are helpless and which transcends death.
(2) He stresses its absolute Completeness. ... In this Life Paul feels we see only the reflections of GOD and are left with much that is mystery and riddle. We see that reflection in GOD's World, for the work of anyone's hands tells us something about the workman, we see it in the Gospel and we see it in Jesus Christ. Even if in Christ we have the Perfect Revelation, our seeking minds can grasp it only in part, for the finite can never grasp the infinite. Our knowledge is still like the knowledge of a child. But the way of Love will lead us in the end to a Day when the veil is drawn aside and we see face to face and know even as we are known. We cannot ever reach that Day without Love, because GOD is Love and only he who loves can see Him.
(3) He stresses its absolute Supremacy. Great as Faith and Hope are, Love is still greater. Faith without Love is cold, and Hope without Love is grim. Love is the Fire which kindles Faith and it is the Light which turns Hope into Certainty.

(William Barclay, The Daily Study Bible)

535

Q: Let's clear up *Luke 17:34-37*.

A: Let me take the *Geneva Bible (1599)*. It runs "*two in one bed*" rather than "*two men in one bed*", like many other editions proudly present us with.

> *33 Whosoeuer will seeke to saue his soule, shall loose it: and whosoeuer shall loose it, shall get it Life. 34 I tell you, in that night there shall be two in one bed: the one shalbe receiued, and the other shalbe left. 35 Two women shalbe grinding together: the one shalbe taken, and the other shalbe left. 36 Two shalbe in the fielde: one shalbe receiued, and another shalbe left. 37 And they answered, and saide to him, Where, Lord? And He said vnto them, Wheresoeuer the body is, thither shall also the eagles bee gathered together. (Luke 17:33-37, Geneva Bible 1599)*

Luke 17:33-37 teaches us that on Judgment Day, our Lord will discriminately separate people per their spiritual attitudes.

Verse 33 is a determinant: what is first in our lives, the Truth of GOD, or the reason of this unbelieving world? Chapters 15 & 248 deal with this question.
Verse 34 plots the Judgmental Line through our families when all our attempts to evangelize them failed. Chapters 60, 530, & 532 may tell more.
Verses 35 & 36 draw the above Line through our Ministries. The purposes of the latter are also very different. See *Matthew 24:40-41* and consider chapter 461.
V*erse 37* makes it clear: the Judgment will be Omnipresent, just as our GOD is.

References.

Proverbs 11:4; Ecclesiastes 12:14; & 1Corinthians 3:13 & 4:5 – the Judgment.
Matthew 3:10 & 1Peter 4:17-18 – the Warning.
2Corinthians 5:10 & Romans 14:12 – the Account.

The LORD is not slack concerning His Promise, as some men count slackness; but is Longsuffering to us-ward, not willing that any should perish, but that all should come to Repentance. But the Day of the LORD will come as a thief in the night; in the which the Heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the Earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up. (2Peter 3:9-10)

536

Q: Brother, let's talk on *1Corinthians 7* – the Teaching on Marriage, Celibacy, Purity, and Family.

A: That's right. *1Corinthians Chapter 7* runs –

> *1 Now concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: It is Good for a man not to touch a woman. 2 Nevertheless, to avoid fornication, let every man have his own Wife, and let every woman have her own Husband. 3 Let the Husband render unto the Wife due Benevolence: and likewise also the Wife unto the Husband.*

Verse 1. The question is as old as our World. Kindly read *Matthew 19:9-12*.
You may see chapter 462 on the subject of *Monasticism*.
Verses 2-3. Besides explaining *Verse 1*, here, we have a Confirmation of what is written in *Genesis 2:18,24*. The Husbands should remember *1Peter 3:7*.
And, regarding a *Christian Family,* you may read "Q & A" chapter 60.

> *4 The Wife hath not power of her own body, but the Husband: and likewise also the Husband hath not power of his own body, but the Wife. 5 Defraud ye not one the other, except it be with consent for a time, that ye may give yourselves to Fasting and Prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency*.*
> *6 But I speak this by Permission, and not of Commandment.*
>
> [* *Inability to refrain the appetites; unchastity.*
> *Johnson's Dictionary, 1756.*]

Kindly consider chapter 73 as for the *Fast* and 452 about *Love* & *lust*.
Verse 6 clarifies that *Verses 4-5* are just a Good Proposition and, therefore, to be considered individually by Christian couples. *Isaiah 58:6-14* & *Matthew 17:21*.

> *7 For I would that all men were even as I myself. But every man hath his Proper Gift of GOD, one after this manner, and another after that. 8 I say therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is Good for them if they abide even as I.*

Brother Paul was a full-time Servant with no Matrimony strings attached.
Verse 1 is confirmed here. Every one of us has the *Gifts of GOD*, Calling, and Free will to decide regarding Family & Home.

Have a look at chapters 60, 499, and 461.

> *9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry:*
> *for it is better to marry than to burn.*

This is clear. Yet, we are *not* supposed to marry *only* to avoid fornication.
Please consider chapters 8 & 534 about *hell* & *Love*, respectively.

> *10 And unto the married I command, yet not I, but the Lord. Let not the Wife depart from her Husband: 11 But and if she depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to her Husband: and let not the Husband put away his Wife.*

Note, *Marriage* is a serious business. GOD hates divorce. *Malachi 2:13-16*.

> *12 But to the rest speak I, not the Lord: If any Brother hath a Wife that believeth not, and she be pleased to dwell with him, let him not put her away. 13 And the Woman which hath an Husband that believeth not, and if he be pleased to dwell with her, let her not leave him. 14 For the unbelieving Husband is Sanctified* by the Wife, and the unbelieving Wife is Sanctified* by the Husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they Holy.* [* Find the reason in *Genesis 2:24*.]

Thus *Love* preponderates *Faith*. See *1Corinthians 13:13* & “Q & A” chapter 534.

> *15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A Brother or a Sister is not under bondage in such cases: but GOD hath called us to Peace. 16 For what knowest thou, O Wife, whether thou shalt save thy Husband? or how knowest thou, O Man, whether thou shalt save thy Wife? 17 But as GOD hath distributed to every Man, as the LORD hath called every one, so let him walk. And so ordain I in all Churches.*

Two things are first to note. First is our *Free will*. Mind *Deuteronomy 30:11-20*.
Second is LORD’s *Holy Will*. See *Acts 2:47* and chapter 27 (The Widowhood).

> *18 Is any man called being circumcised? let him not become uncircumcised. Is any called in uncircumcision? let him not be circumcised.*
> *19 Circumcision is nothing, and uncircumcision is nothing, but the keeping of the Commandments of GOD.*

In this book, you may find chapter 149 dedicated to *Circumcision*.

Verse 18 seemingly speaks only about outward circumcision, whereas *Verse 19* stresses the inward one – our *Obedience* unto *Righteousness*.

> *20 Let every man abide in the same Calling wherein he was called. 21 Art thou called being a servant? care not for it: but if thou mayest be made free, use it rather. 22 For he that is called in the Lord, being a servant, is the Lord's Freeman: likewise also he that is called, being free, is Christ's Servant. 23 Ye are bought with a Price; be not ye the servants of men.*
> *24 Brethren, let every man, wherein he is called, therein abide with GOD.*

The freer we are in the world, the more possibilities (& Responsibilities) are there for us to serve our Lord Jesus. That should be taken into account when choosing the walk of life. See *Acts 5:29* parallel to *Verse 23* is – no compromises.

> *25 Now concerning virgins I have no Commandment of the Lord: yet I give my judgment, as one that hath obtained Mercy of the Lord to be Faithful.*
> *26 I suppose therefore that this is Good for the present distress, I say, that it is Good for a man so to be. 27 Art thou bound unto a Wife? seek not to be loosed. Art thou loosed from a Wife? seek not a Wife. 28 But and if thou marry, thou hast not sinned; and if a virgin marry, she hath not sinned. Nevertheless such shall have trouble in the flesh: but I spare you.*

Apostle Paul, filled with the Holy Ghost, could thus give us his Good Advice only. Whenever we find ourselves in whatever troubles or dangers, know that our Lord is with us, as He Promised in *Matthew 28:20*. And our marital status should not be a handicap for a Christian *Ministry*. Please note that getting married, we have to prioritize. Our *Family* should have a priority over *any* other Ministry.

> *29 But this I say, Brethren, the time is short: it remaineth, that both they that have Wives be as though they had none; 30 And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not; and they that buy, as though they possessed not; 31 And they that use this World, as not abusing it: for the fashion of this World passeth away.*

Here, we get reminded about sorting out our priorities. The LORD, our Heavenly Father, is First. And that is to be a Law in every Christian Home. The Family is second – it is our chief Christian Ministry. Any other Christian Work is third. All worldly business stays last. See chapters: 15, 60, 461, & 591.

> *32 But I would have you without carefulness. He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may please the Lord:*

33 But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may please his Wife. 34 There is difference also between a Wife and a Virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that she may be Holy both in body and in spirit: but she that is married careth for the things of the world, how she may please her Husband. 35 And this I speak for your own Profit; not that I may cast a snare upon you, but for that which is Comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without distraction.

Verse 33 condemns worldliness sneaking into a Family. There is only one way to care for the latter, even Godly, not worldly. Pray for the Holy Will of GOD to be done in your Christian Life, Family, and Home. *Matthew 6:10*. *Philippians 4:6-7*.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himself uncomely toward his Virgin (New International Version: the Virgin he is engaged to), if she pass the flower of her age, and need so require, let him do what he will, he sinneth not: let them marry. 37 Nevertheless he that standeth Stedfast in his heart, having no necessity, but hath Power over his own will, and hath so decreed in his heart that he will keep his Virgin, doeth Well.

Please, note that the above-said *Power* is the Blessed Gift of the Holy Ghost, not our achievement. See *Matthew 6:13* and chapter 65 (Baptism in the Holy Spirit).

38 So then he that giveth her in marriage [Christian Marriage] *doeth well; but he that giveth her not in marriage doeth better.* [my note]

Christian parents are hereby taught what's *well* and what's *better*.

39 The Wife is bound by the Law as long as her Husband liveth; but if her Husband be dead, she is at liberty to be married to whom she will; only in the Lord. 40 But she is Happier if she so abide, after my judgment: and I think also that I have the Spirit of GOD.

Remarriage is okay, provided the Law of GOD is followed. Chapter 27.
Verses 6 & 25, as for Saint Paul's Credentials in the Lord, are confirmed here.

Friends, listen to the Holy Ghost when studying the Written Word of GOD.

... when He, the Spirit of Truth is come, He will guide you into all Truth:
for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear,
that shall He speak: and He will shew you things to come. (John 16:13)

537

Q: Do you agree with such sayings as “our God is the God of a second chance”, or “our God gives a second chance to all”, etc.?

A: No, I don’t. Probably, the folks mean Love, Loving Kindness, Compassion, Mercy, and similar Acts of His Goodness.
However, the “second chance” is not a Biblical term. The *Hope* is.

When we people are in charge or authority of something and, instead of taking some due corrective measures within our power, give a *second chance* to an offender, it usually means the punishment procrastinated until the *second failure* of that person.
Applied to GOD, the *second chance* is sometimes evidenced by the years of His seeming Silence, observing so many repeated *sins* willingly or unwillingly committed against Him.

Therefore, as it seems to me, what folks call a “GOD-given second chance”, is nothing but *Hope,* as per *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
We discussed it in chapter 138 (Hope).

Q: Please also explain the phrase, “GOD closes one door and opens another”, which has a place in a Christian movie, “*The Lost And Found Family*”.

A: It is explainable the same way we found in the previous question, even by applying the proper term(s). The wording you question, however, not found in our Bible, fits right in the meaning of *Grace*.
Please, see chapter 561 (The Love of GOD), which answers your question from another angle. The following Scripture might be an example.

And unto Adam He said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy Wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy Life; thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; in the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. (Genesis 3:17-19)

I cannot say that *that* “another door” was better or might be compared to the Garden of GOD. But it was infinitely better than hell & death eternal.

Further references: *Deuteronomy 30:1-6* – Repentance & Forgiviness.
Proverbs 3:34 – ... He giveth Grace unto the Lowly.
Jeremiah 26:3 – If so be they will hearken ...
James 4:6 – GOD ... giveth grace unto the Humble.
1Peter 5:5 – ... giveth Grace to the Humble.
Jude 1:21 – Keep yourselves in the Love of GOD ...

Q: Why would God ask for *Worship*?
I think, it does not seem that *Worship* would be a part of any healthy relationship. If you could clear this up for me, that would be great.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: In your question, *GOD* is the keyword for the answer.
Read *Psalms 29:2, 95:6-7, & 96:9*.
His Glory is Eternal and is to continue in the Life to come. *Isaiah 66:22-23*.
In His Word, the LORD made it clear our Worshiping Him is needful for Salvation. See *Jeremiah 13:16 & Revelation 14:7*. In *John 4:23-24*, our Lord Jesus made stress upon the Sincerity of our Worship.
You write, "Worship would [not] be a part of any healthy relationship."
It is correct, but not for our Relationship with our Heavenly Father.
Revelation 19:10 & *22:9* run: *See thou do it not ... worship GOD.*
I thank you for your good question.

Q: Did I get *the mark of the beast*?.
When I was younger, I got an upside cross on my hand. Now, I'm worried because of how I felt when I got the mark. A lot of my friends were getting tattoos at the time. God has blessed me in every part of my life – health, finance, happiness, and anything I've ever asked for – but I still think I might have done something I should not. I'm getting it removed, and it is halfway gone in the way of the laser treatment.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: Friend, please do not mix up the tattoo prohibited by *Leviticus 19:28* and "the mark of the beast" condemned by *Revelation 13:16-17 & 14:9-10*.
The tattoo is evil, yet it is just a beginning thereof, and you do well by exterminating it from your body. Kindly check up and do the same with *any* other tattoo. The latter includes a cross printed in a "correct" way.
The place for the Cross of Christ is in your heart & mind, not on your skin.
And "the mark of the best" is to be purged from your heart & mind.
See chapter 137 (The number 666). Thank you for your question.

538

Q: Please, explain *John 1:17* in the light of a co-relation of the Old & New Testaments.

A: I tried to explain that in chapters 16, 17, & 18, covering the Testaments. Let's continue the discussion.

To start from, the Old & New Testament Scriptures are in Perfect Harmony, even as the Holy Trinity of GOD is.

Seek ye out of the Book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail,
none shall want her mate: for My Mouth it hath commanded,
and His Spirit it hath gathered them. (Isaiah 34:16)

Now, *John 1:17* runs:

For the Law was given by Moses, but Grace and Truth came by Jesus Christ.

The Scripture becomes more comprehensible if we take *Grace & Truth* not as introduced but renewed –

And of His Fulness have all we received, and Grace for Grace. (John 1:16)

You may read chapters 192 & 322 dealing with the subject of Grace.
That was done in the unprecedented Way of *John 1:12-13 & 3:16-17* –

But as many as received Him, to them gave He Power to become
the Sons of GOD, even to them that believe on His Name: which were born,
not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of GOD.
(John 12-13)

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son,
that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life.
For GOD sent not His Son into the World to condemn the World;
but that the World through Him might be saved. (John 3:16-17)

A good Parallel is *John 14:6*, subject to *John 8:31-32*.

... I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

... If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My Disciples indeed;
And ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free.
(John 8:31-32)

Many of us experienced working for some person – our employer. Often, we had to get re-employed and renew our contracts (or agreements). The new conditions proved right only if that boss was honest. Otherwise, our contract stood just a piece of paper (or empty words), didn't it?

In a way, the above example might resemble our relationship with Father GOD. The LORD stays the same. *Malachi 3:6*. His Conditions – Old & New – have never been like some impassable jungles. *Deuteronomy 30:11-20*.

For this Commandment which I command thee this day,
it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off.
... But the Word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart,
that thou mayest do it. (Deuteronomy 30:11,14)

Now, what about following the Covenant on *our* part? We are going to have to remember *Luke 15:20*, which is mentioned more than once in this book.

And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off,
his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck,
and kissed him. (Luke 15:20)

Please read the Words the LORD, our GOD, spoken about Himself:

... The LORD, The LORD GOD, Merciful and Gracious, Longsuffering,
and abundant in Goodness and Truth, keeping Mercy for thousands, forgiving
iniquity and transgression and sin, and that will by no means clear the guilty;
visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children, and upon the children's
children, unto the third and to the fourth generation. (Exodus 34:6-7)

Isaiah 53 & John 1:1-18 well describe Christ Jesus, the Son of GOD.

And *Jeremiah 33:20-22* clarifies what our Covenant with GOD is all about.
So,

Hear ye, and give ear; be not proud: for the LORD hath spoken.
(Jeremiah 13:15)

539

Q: In *Jeremiah 27*, the LORD commanded the Israelites to submit to *slavery*. How can that Scripture stay instrumental today?

A: I trust that in the Holy Bible, *every* Scripture is so instrumental.

Chapter 27 of the *Book of Jeremiah*, along with some other Prophecies, indeed commanded the sinners to accept their due Punishment and surrender to foreign bondage in the *natural* but not continue as the *spiritual* slaves of the devil. Please refer to chapter 64, dealing with the Punishment of GOD.

Should one people serve another? Hardly, but don't forget: *thus saith the LORD*. When we humble ourselves and do what GOD ordered us to, He broadens our Understanding and enables us to see *beyond* the natural.

Now, the best (and Godly) way to serve is to do people Good. And what is better than bringing the spiritually blind back to their Father GOD?

Godly prisoners were supposed to set the right example to their unbelieving taskmasters by having the LORD in the first place in their lives and obeying His Commandments no matter what.

Take, for instance, the Fourth Commandment. Slavery might last only until the first Sabbath when the slaves refuse to work in Obedience to the Law of GOD. In such a case, they are put to death* (unto the Life Eternal), or understood, respected, and even learned from. Read *1Timothy 4:12 & 1Peter 2:20-21*.

All things become possible when we take up the LORD on His Word, which in our case, is *Jeremiah 27:11*.

> * You don't like it? – Me too. But might one ask, is there any other way out of the mess the offenders had made? The good alternative is Integrity. *James 4:7 & 1John 5:18*.

Further references –

Proverbs 21:30 & Jeremiah 27:5 – The reason why.
Matthew 19:26; Mark 9:23 & 10:27 – All things are possible.

540

Q: How would you explain *Jeremiah 31:22*?

A: Here, we again encounter one of many Scriptures which contain more than one meaning. We also ought to depend as little as possible on a variety of respective translations. The reason why I always start from *the oldest* Versions is explained in chapter 118 (Different translations).

Agreeing with the translations of *Miles Coverdale* (1535), *Thomas Matthew* (1537), *Richard Taverner* (1539), *The Great Bible* (1540), *The Bishop's Bible* (1568), *Geneva Bible* (1569), *King James Bible* (1611), *People's Standard Edition* (1872), *English Revised Version* (1872), *J.N. Darby* (1890), etc., *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* runs:

How long wilt thou go about, O thou backsliding daughter?
for the LORD hath created a New thing in the Earth,
A Woman shall compass a Man. (Jeremiah 31:22)

The first interpretation may come right from *New Living Translation* (1996):

For the LORD will cause something New and different to happen –
Israel will embrace her GOD.

It seems well within the meaning of Chapter 31 and the whole *Book of Jeremiah*.

Go on. By the Versions of *John Wycliffe* (1382) & *Wycliffe-Purvey Noble* (1395),

... a Woman shall go about (or *shall protect*) *a Man.*

That suggestion – "*protect*"– also can be found in *Revised English Bible* (1877), *The Amplified Bible* (1954), *Good News Bible* (1976), *Expanded Bible* (2011), etc. So, I dare to sum it up by taking *Revised Standard Version* (1952):

For the LORD has created a New thing on the Earth: a Woman protects a Man.

A *GOD-fearing Wife* indeed plays her part (or invests) in her Man's Salvation. See *Genesis 2:24 & 3:15* and chapter 147 (Intuition) of this book.
In my opinion, both interpretations don't contradict the Truth of GOD and, thus, are worthy of our consideration.

You may visit *https://www.biblegateway.com* and check out other Versions.

Kindly take a look at parallel "Q & A" chapters 60, 104, 118, 144, & 147.

Read about Godly Wife in *Proverbs 5:15-19, 18:22, 19:14, & 31:10-31*.

Q: (1) How do you understand Prosperity?. Many Christians talk about how God has blessed them with material things, like clothes, food, houses, &c.
Q: (2) So, what about Christians who don't have those things?
Q: (3) It also confuses me because Jesus called the *Poor in spirit* (*Matthew 5:3*) and the *Poor* (*Luke 6:20*) Blessed. Why?
Q: (4) So, what did God mean by these Promises?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Corrected.)

A: (1-2) Please see chapter 504 (*Giving & Receiving),* where we spoke about *Prosperity & poverty*, whether spiritual or material.
I define *Prosperity* as the abundance of GOD's Blessing & Testing us by spiritual & physical values. *Matthew 25:20-23* & *Luke 19:15-19,26*.
Please see the rest of your first paragraph in the Light of these Scriptures.
(3) *Matthew 5:3* & *Luke 6:20* are parallel and connected with *Mark 10:28* & *Luke 18:28*. Please also have a look at chapter 115 (Poor in spirit).
(4) Please see the beginning of chapter 789 regarding the Promises of GOD.

Q: Is it possible to be a *Perfect* Human?.
The sinful nature is inescapable as long as we live in the body.
However, I believe it is possible to be perfect for short periods.
When you repent and Atonement sets in, you become blameless until you sin again. And in that window of time, before you sin again, you are perfect.
Be ye therefore Perfect, even as your Father which is in Heaven is Perfect.
(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, September 2020.)

A: My answer to your question is, Yes, it is possible, but only *in* Christ Jesus.
In this light, I would like to read the rest of your post and agree with you.
Please see *Romans 8:1*.
Kindly note that the term *Perfection* is not always used in the same sense in the Scriptures. You may consult, say, *Buck's Theological Dictionary*.
In this regard, I take Perfection (in Love, Faith, Hope, Knowledge, and other Virtues, attitudes, or deeds) as the highest possible state we strive for.
The Right way there (so often mentioned in this book) is *Luke 15:20*.

541

Q: In *Matthew 2:1-12*, we read about some "*Wise men from the east*".
Who were they?

A: Different translations call those men differently,
including *astronomers*, *astrologers*, *magi*, *Kings*, &c.
However, considering the following translations –

William Tyndale New Testament (1526), *Miles Coverdale Bible* (1535),
Thomas Matthew Bible (1537), *Richard Taverner Bible* (1539),
The Great Bible (1540), *The Bishop's Bible* (1538), *Geneva Bible* (1569),
and *King James Bible* (1611),

as well as the Scripture –

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above,
and cometh down from the Father of Lights, with Whom is no variableness,
neither shadow of turning. (James 1:17)

– I wholeheartedly accept "*Wise men*". So, let me also take it as a keyword.
All the falsehood in the World can't and won't bring anybody to *Jesus*.
Therefore, we speak about the folks gifted from the LORD to *seek* His Truth.
Apparently & regretfully, there were not many such folks in Israel. *John 1:11*.

Those *Wise men* were led by a Miracle called "*His Star*" in *Matthew 2:2,9,10* and
the Warning of the Holy Ghost in *Matthew 2:12*.
They gave the Lord the best they could. See *Matthew 2:11*.
Please, refer to chapter 56 (The Test of Giving).

Behold the following Prophecies.

The Kings of Tarshish and of the isles shall bring presents:
the Kings of Sheba and Seba shall offer gifts. Yea, all Kings shall
fall down before Him: all nations shall serve Him. (Psalms 72:10-11)

And the Gentiles shall come to Thy Light,
and Kings to the Brightness of Thy Rising. (Isaiah 60:3)

Also, you may see the sequential chapter 598 (Wise men).

542

Q: What would you recommend me to do, as the question of switching my job has come up? There is a lot of *pro et contra*, you know.

A: It is always easier to advise knowing the whole story. However, I commend your "lot of *pro et contra*", for that means you are not given to whims.

I've got my share and experience in job-hunting – it is not a joyful venture. If possible, try it while staying employed.

Mind your Name and, therefore, prefer *Christian* employers.
Ask your Christian Friends to pray for you.
In no way stop *Giving* to GOD or quit your Ministry.

But let my advice stay as such. Pray & listen to the *Holy Ghost*.
He might remind you of the Scripture to stand on. *John 14:26*.

Kindly note the following references too.

Labour not to be rich: cease from thine own wisdom. (Proverbs 23:4)

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon Earth,
where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal:
but lay up for yourselves Treasures in Heaven, where neither moth
nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal:
for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also.
(Matthew 6:19-21)

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath Righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath Light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the Temple of GOD with idols? For ye are the Temple of the Living GOD; as GOD hath said,
I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their GOD, and they shall be My People. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate,
saith the LORD, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you,
and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My Sons and Daughters,
saith the LORD Almighty. (2Corinthians 6:14-18)

543

Q: Brother, let's talk about *Jeremiah 48:10*.

A: Well, it is written,

Cursed be he that doeth the Work of the LORD deceitfully,
and cursed be he that keepeth back his Sword from blood.
(Jeremiah 48:10)

Within the meaning of the *Book of Jeremiah Chapter 48*, the above Verse spoke about the army of Chaldeans as the Instrument of GOD's Punishment over idolatrous Moab.
The Parallels to *Jeremiah 48:10* can be found in the *Book of Joshua Chapter 7* and the first Chapters of the *Book of Judges*. For, when Israel fought for the Promised Land, every instance of her disobedience to GOD turned out to be a curse. You may have a look at chapter 44 (B & C).

Yet, those Chaldeans, Moabites, and other ancient *idolaters* are so long dead, whereas

... GOD is not the God of the dead, but of the living. (Matthew 22:32)

So, how ought *Jeremiah 48:10* to be followed by us today?
By *Ephesians 6:17*, we are given –

... the Sword of the Spirit, which is the Word of GOD ...

– which is the most Powerful & needful. Chapter 444 (Our Spiritual Weapons).
For a Christian to do the Work of GOD *deceitfully* means using the Gifts of the Spirit in every ungodly way of career & money making.

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers,
transforming themselves into the Apostles of Christ.
And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an Angel of Light.
Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed
as the Ministers of Righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.
(2Corinthians 11:13-15)

And to "*keep back*" our *Sword* means using worldly excuses & reasons instead of "*It is written: ...*" spoken in Faith. Kindly refer to "Q & A" chapters 40 & 41.

544

Q: In chapter 15, you wrote about some *dress code* for the Church Service. Why can't we wear something casual there?
(We discussed it in the Baptist Church "Grace", one Adventist Church, and non-denominational Church "The Word of Life" – all in Odesa, Ukraine.)

A: By all means. In some Churches, I saw folks who could not care less. My point is all about sorting out our priorities, no more than that.

Our wardrobe always depends on our financial state, taste, and neatness. What we choose to put on depends on our seeing the matter at hand.

Thus, for the Church Service, one can wear what he (she) thinks appropriate. But if for any other occasion – some important interview, celebration, marriage ceremony, or whatsoever else your standards are higher – *that*, in my humble opinion, is wrong.

In chapter 71, I referred to the Scriptures pertinent to the Priests. Quite relevant to our question, those passages have been included in the references below.

And they [the Holy Garments] *shall be upon Aaron, and upon his sons, when they come in unto the Tabernacle of the Congregation, or when they come near unto the Altar to minister in the Holy Place; that they bear not iniquity, and die: it shall be a Statute for ever unto him and his Seed after him. (Exodus 28:43)*

... then shall they [the Priests] *not go out of the Holy Place into the Utter Court, but there they shall lay their Garments wherein they minister; for they are Holy; and shall put on other garments, and shall approach to those things which are for the people. (Ezekiel 42:14)*

... they [the Priests] *shall not gird themselves with any thing that causeth sweat. (Ezekiel 44:18)*

And if ye offer the blind for Sacrifice, is it not evil? And if ye offer the lame and sick, is it not evil? Offer it now unto thy Governor; will he be pleased with thee, or accept thy person? saith the LORD of Hosts. (Malachi 1:8)

Godspeed.

545

Q: In the Christian literature, including some books which you recommend for our reading, the writers advise how "to break through the bondage of debts". What would you recommend *to avoid* any debts?

A: Your observation is correct. In chapter 183, we spoke about the Words of Lord's Prayer "*forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors*" as those of Healing. I confirm that conclusion and dare to extend understanding of the Scripture further, even to help breaking up *the burden of debts*.

As you know, our debts are different as per the following relations: with GOD & His Church, Family & friends, society & business (see chapter 90), etc.

Our Duties to the LORD are constant and not supposed to be a *burden* to us. Other responsibilities are second to and regulated by those to our Father GOD.

Financial debts are the most common wicked load and should be debared, full stop. (I know the family who often goes to a pawnshop for a loan. They get their pawned stuff back at the *interest*. The latter proves their ability to live *without* any pawn and even save, doesn't it? Sadly, it teaches them nothing.)
Can't all folks make their ends meet otherwise? Yes, they can. How? Just stand on what *Romans 13:8* ordered. By the way, as it is written therein, we can't *love our neighbor* otherwise. Take a look at chapters 228 & 546.

Owe no man any thing, but to love one another:
for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the law. (Romans 13:8)

The Godly way out of debts (once you are in) is *Honesty*: work hard to pay them off. The Godly logic is contrary to that of the world. *Mark 12:41-44*.
Please note that any indebtedness is not to stay in the way of Giving.
Kindly see chapters: 41 (Common sense) & 56 (The Test of Giving).

You may read the book, *The Christian Guide To Worry-free Money Management*, written by *Daniel D. Busby*, *Kent E. Barber*, and *Robert L. Temple*.
(By this title, you can enter the Internet and find other suchlike manuals.)

References: *Psalms 37:21* – Know the difference.
Proverbs 22:7 – The bondage.
John 15:14 – Jesus' Friends are our Friends.

546

Q: In our previous conversation, we discussed the bondage of *debts*.
Don't the *lending* & *borrowing* work up that bondage together?

A: Sure thing. Folks say, "If you want to lose a friend, lend him money."
The Bible confirms that. Consider *Psalms 37:21 & Jeremiah 15:10*.

Standing upon the Eleventh Commandment of Christ (the subject of chapter 80), we are supposed to be neither *creditors* nor *debtors*.

Now, it is written:

Give to him that asketh thee,
and from him that would borrow of thee turn not thou away. (Matthew 5:42)

This Scripture I understand *only* in the light of doing Good, not just give out to promote corruption, laziness, and addictions.

Giue to the Godly man, and helpe not a sinner. Do Well unto him that is Lowly,
but giue not to the vngodly ... Giue vnto the Good, and helpe not the sinner.
(Apocrypha – Sirach 12:4,5,7 – King James Version, 1611)

So, I say *No* in the following cases:
Lend me for my business. – No. Go to banks. They also love *interest*.
Lend me, for I haven't income. – No. Visit the *unemployment* office.
Lend me, for they pay me little. – No. Stop *smoking*. Or spend less. Or both.

On the other hand, I do not expect any financial payback when helping people who are really in trouble.

Please, have a look at "Q & A" chapter 314 (A Cheerful Giver).

Withhold not good from them to whom it is due,
when it is in the power of thine hand to do it.
Say not unto thy neighbour, Go, and come again, and tomorrow I will give;
when thou hast it by thee. (Proverbs 3:27-28)

But when thou doest Alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth:
That thine Alms may be in Secret: and thy Father which seeth in Secret
Himself shall reward thee openly. (Matthew 6:3-4)

547

Q: My Orthodox friends call themselves Christians. However, speaking with them, I understood that they did not read the Bible, preferring their Orthodox writs instead. They believe it is *evil* when a black cat crosses your way, *wrong* when you put your keys on a table, *right* to knock wood when told that they are doing okay, and such other bull.
The question is: how to convince them on the contrary?

A: Actually, that bull is known as *superstition(s)*. Your friends do not necessarily belong to The Body of Christ. That irrationality is much rather spread among unbelievers, making the last *followers of lies.*

How can we educate them? Certainly not by our abilities. Pray for the Holy Will of GOD to be done in their lives. The *Lord's Prayer* is the right choice.

If you are willing to continue communicating with them, you may ask, what for do they wear a *cross* on their necks? What does it mean? Why is the *Holy Bible* held second to the stuff they read? And let them be more *explicit* about every superstition you mentioned.
Kindly note: to explain stupidity is impossible, other than by *2Corinthians 4:4*.

Turn ye not unto idols, nor make to yourselves molten gods:
I am the LORD your GOD. (Leviticus 19:4)

I am the LORD: that is My Name: and My Glory will I not give to another,
neither My Praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

Who is among you that feareth the LORD, that obeyeth the voice of His Servant,
that walketh in darkness, and hath no Light? Let him trust in the Name
of the LORD, and stay upon his GOD. Behold, all ye that kindle a fire,
that compass yourselves about with sparks: walk in the light of your fire,
and in the sparks that ye have kindled. This shall ye have of Mine Hand;
ye shall lie down in sorrow. (Isaiah 50:10-11)

Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden,
and I will give you Rest. Take My Yoke upon you, and learn of Me;
for I am Meek and Lowly in heart: and ye shall find Rest unto your souls.
For My Yoke is easy and My Burden is light. (Matthew 11:28-30)

548

Q: Brother, let's talk about our actual use of the Book of *Ezekiel, Chapter 3*.

A: Let me guess that the Ministry of *Prophet Ezekiel* there & then is clear to the readers. So, we speak only about its implementation here & now. As I quote *Ezekiel Chapter 3* from the *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*, you may kindly compare it with other Versions.

> *1 Moreover He said unto me, Son of man, eat that thou findest; eat this Roll, and go speak unto the House of Israel. 2 So I opened my mouth, and He caused me to eat that Roll. 3 And He said unto me, Son of man, cause thy belly to eat, and fill thy bowels with this Roll that I give thee. Then did I eat it; and it was in my mouth as honey for Sweetness.*

We are supposed to be spiritually fed and fill our minds with the Written Word of GOD before preaching anything to His Church. The Word is the Precious Gift of the LORD and does us nothing but Good.

> *4 And He said unto me, Son of man, go, get thee unto the House of Israel, and speak with My Words unto them. 5 For thou art not sent to a people of a strange speech and of an hard language, but to the House of Israel; 6 not to many people of a strange speech and of an hard language, whose words thou canst not understand. Surely, had I sent thee to them, they would have hearkened unto thee.*

Our Church – the Body of Christ – is our priority. But it is easier to preach the Truth to those who have never heard it than those who might think themselves Learned Believers but live by distorted Truth. Sent by GOD, we have His Holy Spirit with us. We are supposed to speak only the Words He gives us. See chapters 86 (How to prove what we preach?) & 236 (Preaching in the Spirit).

> *7 But the House of Israel will not hearken unto thee; for they will not hearken unto Me: for all the House of Israel are impudent and hardhearted. 8 Behold, I have made thy face strong against their faces, and thy forehead strong against their foreheads. 9 As an adamant harder than flint have I made thy forehead: fear them not, neither be dismayed at their looks, though they be a rebellious house.*

However strange it may seem to us, Father GOD gives a chance (chapter 537) to all sinners. His Servants should fight all fears by the Power of the Holy Ghost.

10 Moreover He said unto me, Son of man, all My Words that I shall speak unto thee receive in thine heart, and hear with thine ears. 11 And go, get thee to them of the captivity, unto the children of thy people, and speak unto them, and tell them, Thus saith the LORD GOD; whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear.

The Word of our Heavenly Father, His Holy Scriptures, are to be received in our spirits to train the spiritual hearing. *Spiritual* captivity is our first concern. *Thus saith the LORD GOD* or *It is written* is our chief argument & evidence.

12 Then the Spirit took me up, and I heard behind me a Voice of a great rushing, saying, Blessed be the Glory of the LORD from His Place.
13 I heard also the noise of the Wings of the Living Creatures that touched one another, and the noise of the Wheels over against them, and a noise of a great rushing. 14 So the Spirit lifted me up, and took me away, and I went in bitterness, in the heat of my spirit; but the Hand of the LORD was Strong upon me. 15 Then I came to them of the captivity at Tel-abib, that dwelt by the river of Chebar, and I sat where they sat, and remained there astonished among them seven days.

In all matters of *GOD-Ordained Ministry*, we have His Mighty Backup.
Kindly read *Isaiah 30:20-21 & 41:10 & 50:4.*

16 And it came to pass at the end of seven days, that the Word of the LORD came unto me, saying,

It is one of many Scriptures teaching us *Patience*. See relevant chapter 191.

17 Son of man, I have made thee a Watchman unto the House of Israel: therefore hear the Word at My Mouth, and give them Warning from Me.
18 When I say unto the wicked, Thou shalt surely die; and thou givest him not Warning, nor speakest to warn the wicked from his wicked way, to save his Life; the same wicked man shall die in his iniquity; but his blood will I require at thine hand. 19 Yet if thou warn the wicked, and he turn not from his wickedness, nor from his wicked way, he shall die in his iniquity; but thou hast delivered thy soul. 20 Again, When a Righteous man doth turn from his Righteousness, and commit iniquity, and I lay a stumblingblock before him, he shall die: because thou hast not given him Warning, he shall die in his sin, and his Righteousness which he hath done shall not be remembered; but his blood will I require at thine hand.

21 Nevertheless if thou warn the Righteous man, that the Righteous sin not, and he doth not sin, he shall surely live, because he is warned; also thou hast delivered thy soul.

The above Verses are self-explanatory. GOD teaches us *Accountability* to Him.

22 And the Hand of the LORD was there upon me; and He said unto me, Arise, go forth into the plain, and I will there talk with thee. 23 Then I arose, and went forth into the plain: and, behold, the Glory of the LORD stood there, as the Glory which I saw by the river of Chebar: and I fell on my face.

We can *better* hear the Holy Spirit of Almighty GOD when *away* from unbelieving crowds. Lord Jesus also prayed in *secluded* places. See *Luke 5:16*.

24 Then the Spirit entered into me, and set me upon my feet, and spake with me, and said unto me, Go, shut thyself within thine house. 25 But thou, O Son of man, behold, they shall put bands upon thee, and shall bind thee with them, and thou shalt not go out among them: 26 And I will make thy tongue cleave to the roof of thy mouth, that thou shalt be dumb, and shalt not be to them a Reprover: for they are a rebellious house. 27 But when I speak with thee, I will open thy mouth, and thou shalt say unto them, Thus saith the LORD GOD; He that heareth, let him hear; and he that forbeareth, let him forbear: for they are a rebellious house.

Be ready for opposition & persecution. The Words *Thus saith the LORD* & *It is written* should remain with us. The LORD might Mercifully shut us up, thus to help avoid any backbiting or payback in "*an evil for an evil*" way on our part.

References: *Deuteronomy 8:3, Matthew 4:4, & Luke 4:4* – Our spiritual food.
Isaiah 61:1-3 – The GOD's Servant.
Luke 12:48 – The level of Responsibility.
John 6:48 – The Bread of Life.
Ephesians 6:17 – The Sword of the Spirit.

The Spirit of the LORD GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me to preach Good Tidings unto the Meek; He hath sent me to bind up the brokenhearted, to proclaim Liberty to the captives, and the Opening of the prison to them that are bound; to proclaim the Acceptable Year of the LORD, and the Day of Vengeance of our GOD; to comfort all that mourn ... (Isaiah 61:1-2)

549

Q: How should *Christian Families* avoid quarrels?
Far as we know, that evil is evident, isn't it?

A: Yes, it is. However, *Charity never faileth ... (1Corinthians 13:8)*

When I got your question, the Scripture which crossed my mind was *Genesis 2:24 –*

Wherefore a Man shall forsake [his] father and mother, and shall cleave to his Wife, and they shall be twain in One flesh [and two shall be in One flesh]. (Translated by John Wycliffe & John Purvey, A modern-spelling Edition, 2001)

Meditating on the above Words, we can hardly admit a possibility for a single quarrel *in one flesh*, can we, such as between our right & left arms.
So, the answer to your question is *Oneness*, as the Holy Ghost teaches us.

Now, does that *Oneness* of two persons begins right at their first meeting? No, they can only *like* one another. In my opinion, their *liking* should be strengthened by mutual *knowing*. The latter is possible by talking on the following subjects.

Are you a *Christian* (yes or no), and why? – Here, the liking may grow or stop.
What are your Church and *denomination*? – The controversy may arise.
What is your Ministry (if any), whether it is present or desirable?
Do you love Bible Study? Charity? Sacrificial Giving? – Note the answers well.
Tell me about your parents & sibs. Do you love them?
What kind of family would you like to have? Do you mind having kids?
What do you think about your country, politics, and military?
Do you like animals, sports, reading, and traveling? Any hobbies?
And whatever else *you* think is necessary to clarify for future harmony.
A young couple ought to decide what matters are worthy of further discussions and what are not.
After that, as people correctly say: hindsight is always clearer than foresight.

Wise indeed are those of us who ask our Heavenly Father to find for them the right spouse. Kindly consider *Proverbs 19:14 & 31:10-31*.
But these lines might be read by many who have already married, even before Coming to Christ. What about them?
Our Love for GOD, as per *Deuteronomy 6:4-5* & *John 15:14*, is ever able to unite us on the firm ground of that Chief priority in our Life.

Sincere *Confession* can spiritually cleanse both spouses in the Eyes of GOD and, consequently, one another.
A Husband is in Charge of his Family & Accountable to the LORD, our GOD.

In the Index section, please see *Christian Family* & *Christian Marriage*.

You may find the following Scriptures well worth your attention –

Husbands: *Proverbs 5:15-19, 18:22; Malachi 2:13-15; Colossians 3:19; 1Timothy 5:8; & 1Peter 3:7.*

Wives: *Colossians 3:18 & 1Peter 3:1-2.*

Parents: *Deuteronomy 6:6-7, 11:19-20, & 32:46; Proverbs 13:24; 19:18; 22:6,15; 23:13-14; & 29:15,17; Ezra 9:12 & Sirach 16:1-4.*

Family: *Matthew 19:6 & Mark 10:8-9.*

Q: Why do parents give their older teenage children *ultimatums* to believe or leave if the teenager states they have faith no longer?
I've known quite a few people whose Christian parents kicked them out of the house for being nonbelievers.
One can read many stories on *https://www.reddit.com* of the same.
All the people I knew were 18 or older, so they were technically adults but were not in a position to be 100% independent.
Q: What are parents hoping to accomplish by doing this?
Q: Do they want their children to believe even if it is not genuine?
Q: Is it a control thing for the parents?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Probably, the reason for that persisting stupidity is the lack of *Christian Education* on the part of those parents. I have no reason to doubt your post.
Regretfully, there is no lack of fools around.
And – GOD is Praised! – such reports are not much commonplace.
The "ultimatum" is the last thing that may cross every Sound Christian mind.
Yet, if it does, the right thing is to report that evil to the Congregation those "believers" belong with. And, far as I see it, *excommunication* for whatever period is the right thing to do.
Please see the Index section for *Christian Education*.

550

Q: Why the Eleventh & Twelfth Commandments were given?
Q: Aren't they seen in the Old Testament Scriptures?

A: For starters,

There is no wisdom nor understanding
nor counsel against the LORD. (Proverbs 21:30)

The *Eleventh Commandment*, establishing *Love* & *Unity* in the Body of Christ (see "Q & A" chapter 80), is seen in *Leviticus 19:18* –

Thou shalt not avenge, nor bear any grudge against the children
of thy people, but thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: I am the LORD.

For "*the children of thy people*" there & then were GOD's Chosen People, Israel. Then, there was the Prophecy:

And ye shall leave your name
for a curse unto My Chosen: for the LORD GOD shall slay thee, and call His Servants by another Name: that he who blesseth himself in the Earth shall bless himself in the GOD of Truth; and he that sweareth in the Earth shall swear by the GOD of Truth; because the former troubles are forgotten, and because they are hid from Mine Eyes. (Isaiah 65:15-16)

Our Father GOD appointed His New Chosen People *Christians* (chapter 59), and the first Covenant was renewed and confirmed as Eternal. Chapters 16 & 538.

As for the *Twelfth Commandment*, regarding Preaching the Gospel of Repentance unto Salvation (see chapter 43), we can find it in the following Words:

Say among the heathen that the LORD reigneth:
the World also shall be established that it shall not be moved:
He shall judge the people Righteously. (Psalms 96:10)

The Spirit of the LORD GOD is upon me; because the LORD hath anointed me
to preach Good Tidings unto the meek; He hath sent me to bind up
the brokenhearted, to proclaim Liberty to the captives, and the Opening
of the prison to them that are bound; to proclaim the Acceptable Year
of the LORD, and the Day of Vengeance of our GOD;
to comfort all that mourn ... (Isaiah 61:1-2)

However, as the Covenant was renewed, the Two New Commandments were *specifically* added to those Ten of the Holy Law.
In the Old Testament, read about *Love* & *Unity* (the Eleventh Commandment):

> *Psalms 133:1, Proverbs 25:21-22, Ecclesiastes 4:9-12, Isaiah 58:4, Jeremiah 23:1, Jeremiah 32:39-40, Ezekiel 37:19, & Malachi 2:10.*

The following Scriptures teach us about *Preaching the Truth of the LORD* (the Twelfth Commandment):

> *Genesis 17:4-5, 22:18, & 26:4; Deuteronomy 4:5-6;*
> *Psalms 50:20, 57:9, 67:1-4; 68:1, 108:3, & 117:1;*
> *Proverbs 23:9 & 24:11-12; Isaiah 45:22, 49:6, 52:7, & 55:5-7;*
> *Jeremiah 1:5, 4:2-3, & 31:10; Micah 4:1-5; Zechariah 2:11 & 8:21-22.*

Q: What do you think of *Sola Scriptura*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Edited. Condensed.)

A: According to *Wikipedia – https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Sola_scriptura –* Sola Scriptura (*Scripture alone*) is a theological doctrine ... that [the Holy Scriptures] are the sole infallible Source of Authority for Christian Faith and Practice ...
So what's wrong with that? My *Statement of Faith*, published on *https://christian498979569.wordpress.com/*, runs the same way –

It is written: *... fear thou the LORD and the King ... (Proverbs 24:21)*
Therefore, first,
We believe in the Holy Trinity of GOD: Father, Son, and Holy Ghost. We trust One Complete Indivisible Written Word of GOD (the Holy Bible is to be) as our Highest & Final Authority in every matter throughout our GOD-given Life.
We believe in Salvation unto Life Eternal by the Grace of GOD our Father through our Faith in the Cross of Christ.
We believe in the One & Indivisible Body of Christ – the Church of GOD.
Second,
In obedience to all Authorities, whether given us by the LORD, our GOD, as a Blessing or a curse, we try our best to comply with all National & International Regulations. And we do that until those Regulations conflict with the Holy Law of GOD, in which case only, the LORD has made them null & void.
So help us, GOD.

Christian Mind Ministry

551

Q: What's your opinion as to the meaning of the *Book of Ezekiel Chapter 4*?
Q: Is it standing on?

A: In my opinion, the meaning is *spiritual slavery* in the heathen world. *Spiritual Manna* is rejected by many people for *defiled* spiritual bread. And, Yes, it is standing on. To be brief, I quote here only *Verse 13*.

And the LORD said, Even thus shall the children of Israel eat their defiled bread among the Gentiles, whither I will drive them. (Ezekiel 4:13)

If you are a *Christian*, kindly consider how the *Holy Word of GOD* is followed in your country, especially in the matters of education, legislation, home & international affairs, and any other (you think is) important business.

Now there is surely no man upon Earth who suffers the hundredth part as much from bad fellows as He must daily suffer, not alone by this, that men abuse His Goods and all His Creatures for purposes of sin and shame ...
(Martin Luther, Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount ... p.222)

Q: (1) I'm a bit confused with the *Book of Genesis*. I am getting back into Christianity (I was a "lukewarm" before). But I don't know what to make of the Book of Genesis. What have you made of Creationism?
(2) I believe in the Bible and want to follow it word for word, *but* I also believe in science and archaeology.
Q: (3) I've seen many things like Young Earth Creationism, Progressive Creationism, and Evolutionary Creationism. What do you believe in?
Q: Is it considered twisting GOD's Word believing in Progressive Creationism or Evolutionary Creationism?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020.)

A: (1) Sorry, but your doubt, unbelief, or confusion as to the *Book of Genesis* makes you "Progressive", "Evolutionary", etc., but not a *Christian*.
And, sorry, "Creationism" is not in my vocabulary. Creation is.
(2) If you "believe in the Bible, and want to follow it word for word", please, put a full stop at that. No any "but". See "Q & A" chapters 40 & 103.
(3 & 4) I believe in *Genesis*. All other theories lie.
Thank you.

552

Q: These Words – *and they shall know that I am the LORD* – we can find in *Ezekiel 5:13; 6:10,13,14; 7:27; 12:15,16; 25:11,17; 26:6;* as well as other Scriptures, in particular, when GOD's Punishment is concerned. (?)
Q: How to explain the fact that those "they" did not come to their senses but continued to sin one generation after another?

A: I believe some representatives of the punished nations (the rebellious Israel inclusive) did "come to their senses", as you correctly put it. Otherwise, why such a term as *Remnant* (of GOD) is also found in the old Prophecies?

However, as you noticed, *most* sinners died in their sins, one generation after another. You may kindly read *Psalms 9:17, Matthew 13:15, Acts 28:27, 2Corinthians 3:14 & 4:4* – all to that effect.
In our "Q & A", you may find helpful chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).
In my humble opinion, the only plausible explanation of the Words "*and they shall know that I am the LORD*" is that every sinner gets that knowledge & understanding in *hell*. For there are not *unbelievers* there.
Kindly consider "Q & A" chapter 8 (Hell).

Q: What Lessons shall we take from the story of Prophet Balaam (the *Book of Numbers, Chapters 22-24*)?

A: In *Chapter 22*, please compare *Verses 12 & 22* –
we are not supposed to ask the Holy Will of GOD twice.
In the first part of *Verse 20*, try to recognize His Sarcasm.
Compare *Verses 30 & 34-35* – the LORD answers our Honest Confession.
Kindly note that through the pain, we learn the Obedience to our Heavenly Father when finding ourselves on the hard way of disobedience to Him.

Chapter 23, Verse 19 – search the Scriptures, where *Thus saith the LORD* is written or meant and find the Proof in what you can see & hear around.
Chapter 24, Verse 2 – Brother Balaam saw the Cross, which the Tribes of Israel formed per *Numbers 2*. That was a foreshadow of the Body of Christ to come.

The Prophecies of Balaam are about True *Spiritual* Descendants of Abraham – Faithful Jews and, later, Christians – our Church of GOD.
Note the words of Balak, the heathen. In our Churches, far too often, Blessing is welcomed more willingly than Reproof. Yet both are from One LORD GOD.

553

Q: Speaking of the Book of *Ezekiel*, how would you interpret the Vision of the Glory of GOD?

A: I can only meditate on the subject in writing. *Ezekiel 1:4-28* runs:

> *4 And I looked, and, behold, a Whirlwind came out of the North, a Great Cloud, and a Fire infolding itself, and a Brightness was about it, and out of the midst thereof as the colour of amber, out of the midst of the Fire.*

We discussed a *whirlwind* (tornado) in chapter 233. Its power & inexplicability reminds us of GOD. *North* might denote the LORD in the middle of His Great Creation, as Stars revolve around Polar one. In the Bible, the Fire has more than one denotation. As the Vision was given to a Prophet, I take it for *Enlightening*.

> *5 Also out of the midst thereof came the likeness of Four Living Creatures. And this was their appearance; they had the likeness of a Man. 6 And every one had four faces, and every one had four wings. 7 And their feet were straight feet; and the sole of their feet was like the sole of a calf's foot: and they sparkled like the colour of burnished brass. 8 And they had the hands of a man under their wings on their four sides; and they four had their faces and their wings.*

The *likeness of Man* reminds *Genesis 1:26-28*. The number *four* might stand for the main directions on Earth and thus the Omnipresence, Omnipotence, and Omniscience of GOD. The *straight feet* & *calf's foot* could symbolize the Mighty Standing of GOD's Servants under the LORD. *Isaiah 41:10 & Ezekiel 3:8-11*.

> *9 Their wings were joined one to another; they turned not when they went; they went every one straight forward. 10 As for the likeness of their faces, they four had the face of a man, and the face of a lion, on the right side: and they four had the face of an ox on the left side; they four also had the face of an eagle. 11 Thus were their faces: and their wings were stretched upward; two wings of every one were joined one to another, and two covered their bodies. 12 And they went every one straight forward: whither the Spirit was to go, they went; and they turned not when they went.*

Joined wings remind me of our GOD-Ordained Unity. See chapters 80 & 124. Moving *straight forward* stands for Obedience to the LORD, no matter what.

The *lion*, *ox*, and *eagle* represent all living creatures that GOD created and put under our *Dominion*. Chapter 312. The upward direction means LORD-ward.
I don't see much difference between the above description of *Cherubims* or *Cherubs* and the one in *Ezekiel 10:14*. They were the same Angels of GOD.

> *13 As for the likeness of the Living Creatures, their appearance was like burning coals of fire, and like the appearance of lamps: it went up and down among the Living Creatures; and the Fire was bright, and out of the Fire went forth Lightning. 14 And the Living Creatures ran and returned as the appearance of a flash of lightning.*

Angels carried the Light of GOD, even as we should. *Matthew 5:14* & *John 8:12*.

> *15 Now as I beheld the Living Creatures, behold one Wheel upon the earth by the Living Creatures, with his four faces. 16 The appearance of the Wheels and their work was like unto the colour of a beryl: and they Four had One Likeness: and their appearance and their work was as it were a Wheel in the middle of a Wheel.*

As it seems to me, the inside Wheel was to be at the right angle to the outside one and placed horizontally so that the vertical outside Wheel could freely revolve and turn in every direction sliding upon the stable inside one.

> *17 When they went, they went upon their four sides: and they turned not when they went. 18 As for their Rings, they were so high that they were dreadful; and their Rings were full of Eyes round about them Four.*

The manifold of *Eyes* means Omniscience of the LORD. Sitting on the Rings, the Eyes look in every direction.

> *19 And when the Living Creatures went, the Wheels went by them: and when the Living Creatures were lifted up from the earth, the Wheels were lifted up. 20 Whithersoever the Spirit was to go, they went, thither was their Spirit to go; and the Wheels were lifted up over against them: for the Spirit of the Living Creature was in the Wheels. 21 When those went, these went; and when those stood, these stood; and when those were lifted up from the earth, the Wheels were lifted up over against them: for the Spirit of the living creature was in the Wheels.*

Here we are reminded of *our* Unity with the Holy Ghost. See *1Corinthians 6:19*.

22 And the Likeness of the Firmament upon the heads of the Living Creature was as the colour of the terrible crystal, stretched forth over their heads above. 23 And under the Firmament were their wings straight, the one toward the other: every one had two, which covered on this side, and every one had two, which covered on that side, their bodies. 24 And when they went, I heard the noise of their wings, like the noise of great waters, as the Voice of the Almighty, the Voice of Speech, as the noise of an host: when they stood, they let down their wings. 25 And there was a Voice from the Firmament that was over their heads, when they stood, and had let down their wings.

The *Voice of the Almighty GOD* is His Holy Will. As the LORD thus commanded the moves of Holy Angels, His Will is *our* Law too. See *Deuteronomy 6:17-19*.

26 And above the Firmament that was over their heads was the likeness of a Throne, as the appearance of a sapphire stone: and upon the likeness of the Throne was the Likeness as the appearance of a Man above upon it. 27 And I saw as the colour of amber, as the appearance of Fire round about within it, from the appearance of His loins even upward, and from the appearance of His loins even downward, I saw as it were the appearance of Fire, and it had brightness round about. 28 As the appearance of the bow that is in the cloud in the day of rain, so was the appearance of the Brightness round about. This was the appearance of the likeness of the Glory of the LORD. And when I saw it, I fell upon my face, and I heard a Voice of One that spake.

The Throne of our Heavenly Father moved to symbolize His Omnipresence around His Great World. That was the same *Throne of Grace* we are taught about in *Hebrews 4:16*.
You & I are not supposed to go far away in search of it. It is right where we are.
And that *Brightness* which surrounded the Throne of GOD is the Light of His *Truth*, which is in His Eternal Written Word. See chapter 58 (K & U & W).

The above notes of mine are the search of the actual Guidance *here & now* seen in the Vision of the Prophet Ezekiel *there & then*. Please see the extended comments recommended in the Reference section of our book.
Also, you may note the following Biblical references.

Deuteronomy 29:29 – The Revelation Knowledge.
Isaiah 6:2 – The Seraphims.
Isaiah 53:2-3 & Revelation 1:14-15 – The appearance of Jesus.

554

Q: In *Ezekiel Chapter 8*, the LORD showed His Prophet
the abominable idolatry GOD's People committed right in His Temple.
I can hardly imagine our modern Christian Temples *that* idolatrous.
So, how can this Scripture be instructive to us?

A: Considering *our heart* as the Sanctuary, we can see this Chapter as a very Personal Letter from the LORD, our GOD, to us. For it is written,

> *... he that is joined unto the Lord is One Spirit. Flee fornication. Every sin that a man doeth is without the body; but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body. What? know ye not that your body is the Temple of the Holy Ghost which is in you, which ye have of GOD, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a Price: therefore glorify GOD in your body, and in your spirit, which are GOD's. (1Corinthians 6:17-20)*

What does *The Book of the Prophet Ezekiel, Chapter 8*, begin with? The *Elders* of Judah approached the Prophet to obtain the Guidance of LORD GOD: how to get out of the mess they had found themselves in? But who else but the Elders were the first guilty of that? Kindly see *Verses 17-18* regarding GOD's Answer.

Ecclesiastes 1:9 teaches: "*... there is no new thing under the Sun*."

Every sin begins not in the Temple made of bricks but in the human heart. Therefore, let's pray to GOD that His Spirit would help us search well our hearts and throw away whatever *compromise* with the devil. Kindly note chapter 40.

Check out chapter 403 (Idolatry) and those named *Spirit War*.

Q: What does the Bible say about *gambling*?

(Signed: *Roman Catholic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Answering you, we can continue the discussion started in this chapter.
Gambling is one of the ways of *mammon & idolatry*.
See chapter 438 (The evil power named mammon). Therefore,

If any man defile the Temple of GOD, him shall GOD destroy;
for the Temple of GOD is Holy, which Temple ye are. (1Corinthians 3:17)

555

Q: In *Ezekiel 6:8-10* & *11:16-20*, we meet the term "*remnant"* related to the LORD's Mercy on those *Jews* who escaped His Punishment. How that relates to GOD's *Chosen People*, "Q & A" chapter 59 is about?

A: I believe the *Remnant of GOD* are all those who ever cared for the Image & Likeness of GOD in their hearts. See chapters 412 & 510.

Keeping Remnant for Himself is the Purpose & Policy of our Father GOD. Note *Psalms 66:10, Ezekiel 11:17-20, Hosea 2:23, & Zechariah 13:9*.

For My Name's sake will I defer Mine Anger, and for My Praise will I refrain for thee, that I cut thee not off. Behold, I have refined thee, but not with silver; I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction. For Mine Own sake, even for Mine Own sake, will I do it: for how should My Name be polluted? and I will not give My Glory unto another. (Isaiah 48:9-11)

The Remnant of the LORD, our Father, neither compulsory belongs among the Jewish nationals nor the state of Israel. See *2Chronicles 16:9 & Zechariah 6:15*. Agreeing with our above definition, the *Remnant (Residue)* are those who answer the Call of GOD and become Christians. Kindly consider *2Kings 19:30; Jeremiah 23:3-8 & 24:5-7*.

At the same time, Faithful to the Promise (*Genesis 12:2-3 & 17:1-9*) given to His Friend Abraham (*Isaiah 41:8*), our Father GOD sent His Son Jesus to *Jews* first (*Matthew 10:6 & 15:24*). The Mission and the Battlefield of our Blessed Lord were on the Land of Israel only. Until the cross. *John 19:30*.

This "Q & A" book is for the Remnant. I hope so.

Further references.

Proverbs 5:21, 15:3, 16:2, & 21:2 – beholding the evil and the Good.
Jeremiah 29:13 – GOD's Compulsory Condition in His Letter to the Remnant.
Jeremiah 31:7-9 & 32:37-42 – The Remnant of *Jews* are not forgotten.
Ezekiel 34:17, Amos 5:3, & Romans 2:9-11 – GOD's Perfect Justice.

Kindly read these books: *Kenneth Copeland, Honor.*
Gloria Copeland, Walk With GOD.

556

Q: Brother, let's talk more about *our Christian Testimony*, as you called it, the *Experience with GOD* in chapter 65.

A: Speaking of *Christian Testimony*, I'd like to advise not mixing up the *Experience with GOD* and just the regretful *memory of past sins*.

If thou prepare thine heart, and stretch out thine hands toward Him; if iniquity be in thine hand, put it far away, and let not wickedness dwell in thy tabernacles. For then shalt thou lift up thy face without spot; Yea, thou shalt be Stedfast, and shalt not fear: because thou shalt forget thy misery, and remember it as waters that pass away: and thine age shall be clearer than the noonday; thou shalt shine forth, thou shalt be as the morning. And thou shalt be Secure, because there is Hope; Yea, thou shalt dig about thee, and thou shalt take thy Rest in Safety. (Job 11:13-18)

In our Local Churches, I heard the Testimonies, which contained such words as *I was an alcoholic*, *I was an addict*, and so on.
When one Christian mentioned another, he silly added: "She was a prostitute."
Now, tell me please, what for is all that *giving glory to the devil*, even in the past tense? And why do we allow ourselves to *relay* the devilish garbage which somebody (unwisely) confessed in public?

Fear not; for thou shalt not be ashamed: neither be thou confounded; for thou shalt not be put to shame: for thou shalt forget the shame of thy youth, and shalt not remember the reproach of thy widowhood any more. (Isaiah 54:4)

Moreover, *the LORD* Himself forgave & *forgot* that sin. *Isaiah 43:25*.

There are nice words in the old song *Amazing Grace*:
I once was lost but now am found – was blind, but now I see!
In my opinion, these lyrics present us with much better *Testimony* than foregoing negative examples.
You can hear examples of beautiful Testimonies in the movie *Christmas Candle*.

Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the Mark for the Prize of the High Calling of GOD in Christ Jesus. (Philippians 3:13)

557

Q: Could you please briefly compare *Faith* & *Hope*?

A: You can find the definitions of *Faith* in chapters 237, 468, & 486.
Hope is defined in chapter 138.

Considering those definitions, you can see that while *Faith* & *Hope* differ from one another, they are closely connected –

Romans 5:1-2 & 1Peter 1:21 – as the needful ties with the LORD;
1Corinthians 13:13 – as great spiritual Values; and
Ephesians 6:16-17 & 1Thessalonians 5:8 – as Mighty spiritual Weapons.

Faith & *Hope* can't & don't exist separately. We can't *hope* for something we don't *believe* in. And do we *believe* in whatever, if consequently don't *hope*?

To sum up the above, *Faith* is our wholehearted believing GOD. *Proverbs 3:5*. *Hope* stands on that fundament of *Faith* and reaches further on. As we put it in chapter 138, we cannot just *believe* in our Salvation – that final Decision is not ours – but we may and ought to *hope* for it, trusting in the Cross of Christ.

For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping,
that they are the enemies of the Cross of Christ: whose end is destruction,
whose god is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame,
who mind earthly things. (Philippians 3:18-19)

Deuteronomy 6:4-5 & 1John 4:16 – Love is the Good ground for Faith.
Psalms 40:4, John 16:33, & 1John 5:4 – Faith is the fundament of Hope.

Q: (1) How much Faith is enough to be a Christian?
Q: (2) Am I a Christian?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: (1) Good question. I'm of the opinion that it is never enough.
Please, see *Faith* in the Index section. And take a look at chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry). For,

Faith without works is dead. (James 2:26)

(2) It's another good question. My answer is: *when it becomes a statement*.

558

Q: What should we learn from *Ezekiel Chapter 19*?

A: That was a *Lamentation* for all people who ever sought for themselves power & authority, thus making careers in the world of unbelievers.

The LORD continued the Prophecy given in *Ezekiel Chapter 18 –*

Cast away from you all your transgressions, whereby ye have transgressed; and make you a New heart and a New spirit: for why will ye die, O House of Israel? For I have no pleasure in the death of him that dieth, saith the LORD GOD: wherefore turn yourselves, and live ye. (Ezekiel 18:31-32)

Thus *Ezekiel Chapter 19* runs:

> *1 Moreover take thou up a Lamentation for the Princes of Israel, 2 And say, What is thy mother? A lioness: she lay down among lions, she nourished her whelps among young lions. 3 And she brought up one of her whelps: it became a young lion, and it learned to catch the prey; it devoured men.*

The Lamentation denotes the LORD's Sorrow for His Children, which gradually lose His Image & Likeness for a blind pride deprived of Responsibility.
As for us, it is GOD's Call for an Intercession to wake up their conscience.
The lioness & lions stand for a worldly society bringing up the predators – "mighty of this world", the enemies of GOD and men. In their world, strong ones enslave & murder weaker ones, the end of all sinners being death eternal.

> *4 The nations also heard of him; he was taken in their pit, and they brought him with chains unto the land of Egypt. 5 Now when she saw that she had waited, and her hope was lost, then she took another of her whelps, and made him a young lion. 6 And he went up and down among the lions, he became a young lion, and learned to catch the prey, and devoured men.*
> *7 And he knew their desolate palaces, and he laid waste their cities; and the land was desolate, and the fulness thereof, by the noise of his roaring.*
> *8 Then the nations set against him on every side from the provinces, and spread their net over him: he was taken in their pit. 9 And they put him in ward in chains, and brought him to the King of Babylon: they brought him into holds, that his voice should no more be heard upon the mountains of Israel.*

The nations form a military fist against those predators and crash them. Great. But, regretfully, that's not for long. Another roaring lion will arise as well as the need for another bloody war for liberty. And so forth. See chapter 300.

> *10 Thy mother is like a vine in thy blood, planted by the waters: she was fruitful and full of branches by reason of many waters. 11 And she had strong rods for the sceptres of them that bare rule, and her stature was exalted among the thick branches, and she appeared in her height with the multitude of her branches. 12 But she was plucked up in fury, she was cast down to the ground, and the east wind dried up her fruit: her strong rods were broken and withered; the fire consumed them. 13 And now she is planted in the wilderness, in a dry and thirsty ground. 14 And fire is gone out of a rod of her branches, which hath devoured her fruit, so that she hath no strong rod to be a sceptre to rule. This is a Lamentation, and shall be for a Lamentation.*

Here we can see the story of GOD's Chosen People, Israel. It's a good lesson for every man or nation who would ever come to the LORD. For we cannot misuse His Blessings, listen to the lies of Satan, and become prideful. The proud ones eventually find themselves in the *spiritual wilderness* of the satanic world and end up by *death eternal*. Please, see chapter 176 about the evil of pride and chapter 439 dedicated to all those of authority.

And it shall be, when he sitteth upon the Throne of his Kingdom, that he shall write him a copy of this Law in a book out of that which is before the Priests the Levites. And it shall be with him, and he shall read therein all the days of his Life: that he may learn to fear the LORD his GOD, to keep all the Words of this Law and these Statutes, to do them. That his heart be not lifted up above his Brethren, and that he turn not aside from the Commandment, to the right hand, or to the left: to the end that he may prolong his days in his Kingdom, he, and his children, in the midst of Israel. (Deuteronomy 17:18-20)

Q: What does it mean to humble yourselves in the Sight of the LORD *(James 4:10)*?

(*https://www.gotquestions.org,* January 2021.)

A: You may find the answer in this Scripture:

> *... the LORD seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)*

559

Q: In *Chapter 20 of Ezekiel*, *Verses 11* & *25* contradict one another, don't they?

A: I don't think so. Please read all the Prophecy of *Chapter 20,* which I dare here condense to explain the Verses of your concern.

5 ... Thus saith the LORD GOD; In the day when I chose Israel, and lifted up Mine Hand unto the seed of the House of Jacob, and made Myself known unto them in the land of Egypt ... saying, I am the LORD your GOD; 6 ... to bring them forth of the land of Egypt into a Land that I had espied for them, flowing with Milk and Honey, which is the Glory of all lands: 7 Then said I unto them, Cast ye away every man the abominations of his eyes, and defile not yourselves with the idols of Egypt: I am the LORD your GOD. 8 But they rebelled against Me, and would not hearken unto Me: they did not every man cast away the abominations of their eyes, neither did they forsake the idols of Egypt ... 9 But I wrought for My Name's sake, that it should not be polluted before the heathen, among whom they were, in whose sight I made Myself known unto them, in bringing them forth out of the land of Egypt. 10 Wherefore I caused them to go forth out of the land of Egypt, and brought them into the wilderness. 11 And I gave them My Statutes, and shewed them My Judgments, which if a man do, he shall even live in them. 12 Moreover also I gave them My Sabbaths, to be a Sign between Me and them, that they might know that I am the LORD that sanctify them. 13 But the House of Israel rebelled against Me in the wilderness: they walked not in My Statutes, and they despised My Judgments, which if a man do, he shall even live in them; and My Sabbaths they greatly polluted ...
17 Nevertheless Mine Eye spared them from destroying them, neither did I make an end of them in the wilderness. 18 But I said unto their children in the wilderness, Walk ye not in the statutes of your fathers, neither observe their judgments, nor defile yourselves with their idols: 19 I am the LORD your GOD; walk in My Statutes, and keep My Judgments, and do them; 20 And hallow My Sabbaths; and they shall be a Sign between Me and you, that ye may know that I am the LORD your GOD. 21 Notwithstanding the children rebelled against Me: they walked not in My Statutes, neither kept My Judgments to do them, which if a man do, he shall even live in them; they polluted My Sabbaths ... 25 Wherefore I gave them also Statutes that were not Good, and Judgments whereby they should not live; 26 And I polluted them in their own gifts, in that they caused to pass through the fire all that openeth the womb, that I might make them desolate, to the end that they might know that I am the LORD.

Now, this is the substantial difference between what *Verses 11 & 25* mean. The *Animal Sacrifices* were per the latter but not the former.
Animals did pay by their innocent lives for the sins of people. However, those Sacrifices were unable to recreate our sinful *hearts*.
You may see chapters 4 (The Cross) &120 (Animal Sacrifices) of this book.
For that reason, as *Verse 25* declared, the Statutes which prescribed those Sacrifices were Good neither to people created in the Image & Likeness of GOD (*Genesis 1:26-27*) nor regarding the animals which were Good by the LORD's Estimation (*Genesis 1:25*).

So, why did those *Statutes that were not Good* come up at all? As I can make it, the reason is *Free will*. Sacrifices paid for sins but did not change sinful hearts. If a person Obediently followed those Statutes to the letter – and that was possible as per *Deuteronomy 30:11-14* – then he (she) became indeed *Clean* in the Eyes of GOD right after the Sacrifice. And *free* whether to amend his (her) ways or continue to follow the devil.

Regretfully, the last option was chosen massively, up to sacrificing children to Satan (*Verse 26* and many other Scriptures).
See chapter 50, dealing with modern idol worship & evil sacrifices.

Q: What is the meaning of "captives in your train" in *Psalms 68:18*?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, February 2021.)

A: It is written:

18 Thou hast ascended on High, Thou hast led captivity captive:
Thou hast received Gifts for men; Yea, for the rebellious also,
that the LORD GOD might dwell among them.
19 Blessed be the LORD, Who daily loadeth us with Benefits,
even the GOD of our Salvation. Selah. (Psalms 68:18-19)

As it seems to me, in *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*, "*Thou hast led captivity captive*" stands for those "*captives in Your Train*". And the latter expression you have taken from another translation.
What is the meaning? It is spiritual. Those "captives" are Satan, his demons, and his human servants. The Words of *Psalms 68:18-19* denote Victory & Judgment of our GOD. His Eternal Victory is our Salvation. Judgment & death eternal await those who reject the LORD Almighty. All Psalm 68 speaks about that.
Thank you for your question.

560

Q: Why *Onan* (*Genesis Chapter 38*) was found wrong?

A: It is written,

And Judah took a wife for Er his firstborn, whose name was Tamar. And Er, Judah's firstborn, was wicked in the Sight of the LORD; and the LORD slew him. And Judah said unto Onan, Go in unto thy brother's wife, and marry her, and raise up seed to thy brother. And Onan knew that the seed should not be his; and it came to pass, when he went in unto his brother's wife, that he spilled it on the ground, lest that he should give seed to his brother. And the thing which he did displeased the LORD: wherefore He slew him also. (*Genesis 38:6-10*)

At that time, Brother Judah (the head of his family) was far from Righteousness. See *Genesis 37:26-27* & *38:2*. The last event was against *Genesis 28:1*.
However, what Judah commanded as the father to his son Onan later became *Levirate Law*, written in *Deuteronomy 25:5-10*, the Holy Will of GOD.
The Fifth Commandment of the Law (*Exodus 20:12* & *Deuteronomy 5:16*) was yet to come, but (by *Genesis 1:26-27)* it was written on every heart.

Verse 9 is clear about Onan's only reasoning: stubborn pride. That was against GOD's Will. See *Numbers 15:30 & Proverbs 16:5*. See chapter 176.

Q: Does *Numbers Chapter 31, Verses 9 & 18* justify slavery?

A: Negative on that. How could the Written Word of GOD be discrepant?
Please open the Bible on *Numbers 31:1-20* and read attentively.

Following the direct Command of the LORD, the Army of Israel killed all men of their heathen enemies. Yet, they showed compassion and took women as P.O.W. By the word of Moses, the LORD rebuked the warriors and allowed them to keep only virgins of the prisoners. Far as I understand, that was the Act of GOD's Mercy and commanded Duty of Israel to converse into Believers those who were most ready to. The ground & possibility for Conversion are in *Genesis 1:27*.
Our Heavenly Father also ordered soldiers to purify themselves. And inward Purification is crucial compared to a mere outward one. Otherwise, how to purify others when we are not Pure ourselves?
Thus what might seem like "slavery", actually, was a chance o' Freedom.

561

Q: In a Christian movie, "*The Lost And Found Family*", there are these words: "*GOD closes one door and opens another*." How would you explain them?

A: The question was answered in chapter 537. (A second chance. A door.)
The words are correct and might be explained in many ways, say, by the words spoken in another Christian movie, "*The Encounter*," namely,

I have so much more in Store for you.
If you trust Me ... I have many Wonderful things in Store for you.

But the best explanation is the *Love of GOD*.

For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the Love of GOD, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Romans 8:38-39)

In the course of Life, due to whatever reasons, we might suffer a loss of a family, health, home, friends, or job – all that would cause pains & sorrows.
However, keeping the *Faith* in our Father GOD on, especially at the hard times – we lose nothing. Remember the story of Brother *Job*.

The Written Word of GOD exemplifies that "second door" or "second chance" many times more, in fact, in *all* Books of the Holy Bible.

Q: God's Appearance.
Do you ever think about what GOD would look like?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: The Bible doesn't give us His Appearance.
I guess the LORD, our Heavenly Father, doesn't think it is necessary.
You can see one of a few & brief descriptions of Him in *Ezekiel 1:26-28*.
Instead, the Scriptures speak a lot about His Heart. E.g., *Exodus 34:6-7*.
The following is more needful to know –

GOD is a Spirit: and they that worship Him
must worship Him in Spirit and in Truth. (John 4:24)

562

Q: I heard something about communicating with *animals* and *plants* as a tested way to shake our stresses off. What would you say to that?

A: I think Communion with our Heavenly Father is better. See chapter 32. We can commune with Him through His Creation – *animals* & *plants* – too.

In this regard, we ought to clarify the ways of that communication.

When we have plants in our dwelling place, be it an apartment or a garden, like and look after them, that should in no way become a sort of *obsession*. For the last can mess up our True Values. The same is about pets.

Thou shalt not muzzle the ox when he treadeth out the corn.
(Deuteronomy 25:4)

A righteous man regardeth the life of his beast:
but the tender mercies of the wicked are cruel. (Proverbs 12:10)

That's why, as it seems to me, the best way to communicate with animals and plants is by doing them good *everywhere*, not only in our home.

If thou meet thine enemy's ox or his ass going astray,
thou shalt surely bring it back to him again. If thou see the ass of him
that hateth thee lying under his burden, and wouldest forbear to help him,
thou shalt surely help with him. (Exodus 23:4-5)

There is nothing wrong with having plants. But what about the plants which belong to nobody? Seeing some broken young tree, why not bind it up? It may well revive later on and be double pleasant to look at.

The same is applicable to animals. It is good to have a cat, better not a pedigree, but a picked-up stray one. And why not give some money to an animal shelter as well? And so on. In a neighborhood, one can always find an opportunity for a small personal Ministry.

In one of the Reader's Digest books, I read that a horse is more dangerous to ride on than a motorcycle. I guess that's right, speaking of *transportation*. (At the beginning of the film *Love's Everlasting Courage*, we can see the proof.)

However, you can read *Jack* (the novel by *Brian Carter*) and see the beast from another angle.

Welcome these books to your library: *James Bowen, A Street Cat Named Bob*
A Gift From Bob

These movies are worth your while: *Hachi: A Dog's Tale*
A Street Cat Named Bob

Q: Searching the Internet, I tried to find the answer to my question, *why do cats eat grass*? I got no definite answer – the scientists are not sure about that – but there are some theories: to help digestion, to get folic acid, to prevent constipation, etc.
What do you think? Sorry if my question is not for this book.

A: Why "not for this book"? I love animals, cats, in particular.
In our "Q & A", you can find more about animals in chapters 28 & 306.

As for your search on the Internet, you may ask *our Heavenly Father* any question – mind well *Jeremiah 33:3* – and search the Holy Bible too.
In the *Book of Exodus*, it is written:

And they shall eat the flesh in that night, roast with fire, and unleavened bread; and with bitter herbs they shall eat it. (Exodus 12:8)

Therefore, the first of the theories you have found – to help digestion – is correct. (We remember the *spiritual* meaning of the above Scripture too.)
Let me also remind you of these Words –

> *And GOD said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the Earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the Earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the Earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. And GOD saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was Very Good. (Genesis 1:29-31)*

Therefore, a nutritional theory is okay too. (Please, ignore every mention of "evolution" therein.) Yet, not every green herb is good to eat, as nature was corrupted by our sinfulness. In the Index section, please see *Spiritual Authority*.

563

Q: Now & again, we can read & hear the media information about the corruption of the *Christian Clergy*. Dirty stories. How should we take it?

A: In chapter 132 (Tongue), we mentioned the Three Golden Gates: the first – "*Is it true?"* the second – "*Is it needful?"* and the third – "*Is it Kind?"* Well, let's give it a try.

First, *is it True?*
Well, it is possible. Check it out by the Word of GOD and find the confirmation. Say, the *Book of Ezekiel Chapter 8*, which we considered in chapter 554.
Kindly take into account the expected losses in our Spirit War. *Zechariah 13:7-9*.

Second, *Is it Needful?*
For Christians – Yes, it is. We are to mention ASAP every sinful case (murder, rape, abuse, theft, lie, &c., &c.,) especially in the Body of Christ, in our Prayer, so that the LORD's Rod of Correction was on every guilty person.
For unbelievers – Yes, maybe even more, provided the information is full and contains the statistic of *all* such cases in the nearest years in *every* walk of life (government, military, police, media, education, &c., &c.) Please, consider *Leviticus 19:35-36; Deuteronomy 25:15; Proverbs 11:1; 16:11; 20:10,23; Ezekiel 45:10; & Micah 6:11*.

Third, *Is it Kind?*
It is if *Ephesians 4:15* is complied with.
Kindly refer to chapter 31 (Speaking the Truth in Love).

You may refer to parallel "Q & A" chapters 2, 49, 177, 436, and 637.

Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed
against the LORD thy GOD, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers
under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed My Voice, saith the LORD.
Turn, O backsliding children, saith the LORD; for I am married unto you:
and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion.
And I will give you Pastors according to Mine Heart, which shall feed you
with Knowledge and Understanding. (Jeremiah 3:13-15)

Kindly note these Scriptures – *Matthew 20:25-28; Mark 9:35 & 10:42-45; & John 10:11* – regarding the Shepherds we need.

564

Q: Can we continue our talk about old Prophecies, chapter 443, and consider the *Book of Ezekiel* in this regard?

A: We can. The old Prophecies are mentioned in our "Q & A" book quite often. In *Chapters 26-32,* Brother Ezekiel pictured the ancient world – *Tyre, Sidon, Egypt, Babylon* – so much resembling modern international relations.

In his *Practical Observations* to *Chapter 26,* Brother *Thomas Scott* wrote:

> *Many maxims, current in the commercial world, are diametrically opposite to the Law of GOD, which requires us "to love our neighbour as ourselves": for the selfish love of gain influences men to rejoice in the calamities of others, even of cities and nations, which interfere with this leading object; especially if they can hope to grow rich when others are impoverished. But GOD will shew Himself to be against such mercenary selfish traders, whose hearts grow callous to every humane feeling, through the love of riches.*

Chapters 29-31 are about GOD's Judgement over *Egypt* – the country idolatrous and powerful. Are modern "super-powers" free of that Judgment?
Please read these *Practical Observations* of Rev. Thomas Scott to *Chapter 31* –

> *Many of the most powerful, prosperous, and renowned, have also been the most abominable of mankind: and whilst millions have been subjected to their will, perhaps they had not one subject more vile in the Sight of GOD than themselves. This consideration may serve to abate our admiration of those gaudy distinctions, which the LORD evidently deems so worthless and perilous; and may teach us to seek more Valuable and Enduring Advantages. – All greatness and success come from GOD, through whatever channels they are conveyed: but how few properly consider their dependence on Him and Obligations to Him!*

In *Chapter 35*, we read about GOD's Perfect Justice over the *Edomites* –

> *Because thou hast had a perpetual hatred, and hast shed the blood of the children of Israel by the force of the sword in the time of their calamity, in the time that their iniquity had an end: therefore, as I live, saith the LORD GOD, I will prepare thee unto blood, and blood shall pursue thee: sith thou hast not hated blood, even blood shall pursue thee. (Ezekiel 35:5-6)*

It is of fatal consequence for parents to teach their children resentment or enmity against others; and still more so to instil into them prejudices against the Cause and People of GOD: for these seeds will spring up and yield most pernicious fruit, after they have gone down to the grave. — The Wrath of GOD is loudly proclaimed against those, who have perpetual hatred to His People; and who take advantage of their calamities to insult over them and oppress them ... The LORD Himself will punish the crimes of ungodly professors of His Holy Religion, and chastise His offending Children: but He will let His enemies know that He dwells in His Church, notwithstanding all her sins and sufferings ...

(Thomas Scott, Practical Observations to Ezekiel 35)

Chapters 27, 28, 30, and *32* (as well as many other Scriptures) might give rise to the question: *why* our Father GOD lamented those idolaters, murderers, and even Satan himself (*Chapter 28*)?
The answer is found in many Scriptures, *1John 4:8,16,* in particular, as the last states: *GOD is Love*. To the world of *unbelievers,* that Love has always been unreasonable and incomprehensible. However, whether they believe it or not, there is no other way. See *Hebrews 2:3-4*.

The Wonderful old Prophecy.

For unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given: and the Government shall be upon His shoulder: and His Name shall be called Wonderful, Counseller, The Mighty God, The Everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of His Government and Peace there shall be no end, upon the Throne of David, and upon His Kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with Judgment and with Justice from henceforth even for ever. The Zeal of the LORD of Hosts will perform this. (Isaiah 9:6-7)

Further references.

Isaiah 53:1 & Jeremiah 9:12 ..... Who hath believed our Report?
Isaiah 61:6-9 …..... The fulfilled Prophecy about the Remnant.
John 16:13 …..... The Spirit of Prophecy.
1Corinthians 13:9 ..... A Prophecy is never full.
1Corinthians Chapter 14 …..... The Gift of Prophecy.
Revelation 19:10 …..... The Testimony of Jesus.

565

Q: In the *Book of Ezekiel*, *Chapter 33*, the Prophet was appointed a *Watchman* over his people Israel. Does it mean that every contemporary Prophet of GOD is the Watchman over the Body of Christ?

A: Yes, it does, provided the Prophet or Prophetess is True & proved as such. His (her) Prophecy must not contradict the (Spirit of) the Holy Scriptures.

I will raise them up a Prophet from among their Brethren, like unto thee, and will put My Words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto My Words which he shall speak in My Name, I will require it of him. But the prophet, which shall presume to speak a Word in My Name, which I have not commanded him to speak, or that shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die. And if thou say in thine heart, How shall we know the Word which the LORD hath not spoken? When a prophet speaketh in the Name of the LORD, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that is the thing which the LORD hath not spoken, but the prophet hath spoken it presumptuously: thou shalt not be afraid of him. (Deuteronomy 18:18-22)

The Prophecies of Brethren *Isaiah*, *Jeremiah*, and *Ezekiel* did not contradict one another and stood strictly in line with all other Divinations of the Bible. And, as I pointed out more than once in this book, every Word of the LORD spoken & written *there & then* remains instructive *here & now*.
See *Deuteronomy 29:14-15, Psalms 102:18, & Isaiah 34:16*.

Speaking of the Servants of GOD who prophesy these days, we ought not to exclude ourselves from the company of such *if*, following our Great Commission, we preach the Gospel of Repentance unto Salvation and the Lord Jesus as the only Way, Truth, and Life. *Mark 16:15; Luke 4:18; John 14:6; Revelation 19:10*.
Last but not least. The Prophet (Watchman) of the LORD must not belong to the *evil shepherds* – those clerical & civil leaders – accused in *Ezekiel 34:1-10*.
In chapter 324 (Normal & paranormal), we discussed how those gifted persons misused the Blessings of GOD and served the devil. *Jeremiah 23:9-32*.

Please refer to *Jeremiah 14:20* – The Prophet's Intercession.
Jeremiah 15:10-21 & 20:7-11 – The Prophet's Life.
Kindly read *Kenneth E. Hagin, The Gift Of Prophecy*.
Also, you may consider parallel "Q & A" chapter 180 (The Gift of Prophecy).

566

Q: In *Chapters 38-39* of the *Book of Ezekiel*, we read about *Gog* & *Magog*. How would you define them?

A: *Gog* & *Magog* stand for GOD's enemy, the king & his country, respectively. So, I take these names for every *anti-Christian* Ruler and his (her) country. Folks say *non-Christian.* Yet, considering *Matthew 12:30* & *Luke 11:23*, I don't see the difference. Let us also note some other explanations.

John Brown's Bible Dictionary (1797) –
Gog may signify the Governor; and Magog, when joined with it, may denote the people. Magog was the second son of Japheth, and gave name to his seed; his posterity seem to have peopled Tartary, a large country on the north of Asia, and part of Europe, reaching, in length, from west to east, about 5000 miles; and in breadth, from north to south, about 2700; most of which at present pertains the Russian Empire. The ancient Tartars called themselves Mogli, or Magogli, or Mungli, or Mungugli, the children of Magog ...

Calmet's Bible Dictionary (1832) –
Gog and Magog, in Ezekiel and the Revelation are to be taken allegorically, for Princes who are enemies to the Church ...

Smith's Bible Dictionary (1863) –
Magog represents the important race of the Scythians ... however, we must not be understood as using the latter term in a strictly ethnographical sense, but as a general expression for the tribes living north of the Caucasus ...

Thus saith the LORD:

The King's heart is in the Hand of the LORD, as the rivers of water:
He turneth it whithersoever He will. (Proverbs 21:1)

Say unto the King and to the Queen,
Humble yourselves, sit down: for your principalities shall come down,
even the crown of your glory. (Jeremiah 13:18)

Please, have a look at chapters 103 (Avoid errors),
567 (Gog & Magog exemplified), and 718 (Gog & Magog).

567

Q: The following is taken from *Smyth & Helwys Bible Commentary*, which you mentioned in the References. Do you agree with it?

> *Ezekiel tells us that Gog, the nation that will lead all of the other powers of darkness against Israel, will come out of the north. Biblical Scholars have been saying for generations that Gog must be Russia. What other powerful nation is to the north of Israel? None. But it didn't seem to make sense before the Russian revolution, when Russia was a Christian country. Now it does, now that Russia has become communistic and atheistic, now that Russia has set itself against GOD. Now it fits the description of Gog perfectly. (Ronald Reagan, California, 1971)*

A: I do, in a way, but not totally.

First. Brother Reagan said, "... *Russia was a Christian country*." No, she wasn't. Had she been such, the bloody *revolution* would have never happened.
Galatians 6:7. Please also note that any *empire* cannot be Christian.
That *evil* empire Russia indeed was, annexing & enslaving the neighboring lands: Alaska, Belarus, Caucasus, Central Asia, Finland, Moldova, Poland, Siberia, South-East Baltic, and Ukraine.

And Russia was not alone – many other colonizing states did the same. Certainly, *Deuteronomy 19:14, 27:17; Proverbs 22:28, 23:10-11;* and other Scriptures had been ignored by "Orthodox" Russia and her likes.

Second. It is written,

> *Therefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest:*
> *for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself;*
> *for thou that judgest doest the same things. (Romans 2:1)*

Third. The Prophecy also says,

> *And I will send a fire on Magog, and among them that dwell carelessly*
> *in the isles: and they shall know that I am the LORD. (Ezekiel 39:6)*

Take *the isles* for larger pieces of land surrounded by waters and see *every* heathen (of more than 6 billion) as the correct addressee of the above Warning.

For the rest, the saying of Brother Reagan is correct, even beyond his time.
The following Scripture well testifies to that.

The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be; and that which is done is that which shall be done: and there is no new thing under the Sun. (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

The chapters relevant to our question are 55 (Christian Country), 566 (Gog & Magog defined), and 718 (Gog & Magog).

Q: How to understand those *Four Horsemen* in *Revelation 6:1-8*?

A: It is written:

1 And I saw when the Lamb opened one of the Seals, and I heard, as it were the noise of thunder, one of the Four Beasts saying, Come and see. 2 And I saw, and behold a white horse: and he that sat on him had a bow; and a crown was given unto him: and he went forth conquering, and to conquer. 3 And when He had opened the second Seal, I heard the second Beast say, Come and see. 4 And there went out another horse that was red: and power was given to him that sat thereon to take peace from the Earth, and that they should kill one another: and there was given unto him a great sword. 5 And when he had opened the third Seal, I heard the third Beast say, Come and see. And I beheld, and lo a black horse; and he that sat on him had a pair of balances in his hand. 6 And I heard a Voice in the midst of the Four Beasts say, A measure of wheat for a penny, and three measures of barley for a penny; and see thou hurt not the oil and the wine. 7 And when He had opened the fourth Seal, I heard the Voice of the fourth Beast say, Come and see. 8 And I looked, and behold a pale horse: and his name that sat on him was Death, and Hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the Earth, to kill with sword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beasts of the Earth. (Revelation 6:1-8)

Teachers, including those mentioned in the References of this book, explain "the Four Horsemen of the Apocalipse" differently.
Per *Ecclesiastes 1:9*, those evils – *lie, cruelty, famine, death* – are not new.
You can see and hear of them daily. Yet, in *Matthew 24:21*, Lord Jesus warned that their scale would be exclusive. And so would be human losses to hell.

Kindly give a try to recognize those *horsemen* in the Parallels:
Zechariah 6:1-8, Matthew 24:4-24, Mark 13:5-23, Luke 21:8-24, & John 16:1-3.

568

Q: How can we possibly calculate the age of our Earth?
Q: And how to best explain it to *unbelievers*?

A: We touched on the first subject in chapter 105 (Evaluation of Scriptures) when mentioned the long lists of names and detailed descriptions found in the Bible.

So, this is one of the reasons *why* those names or genealogies are mentioned in *Matthew 1:1-16* (from Brother Abraham to Lord Jesus) and, especially, in *Luke 3:23-38* (from Brother Adam to Lord Jesus). Those are real persons in *Genesis* and the Books following, along with their respective ages when their children were born.
You can make the relevant calculations yourself, check out by the Christian books, or visit Christian sites, such as <*https://creation.com*> (June 14).

So, it is about *six thousand years* – not millions. The most simple calculations one can find on <*https://answersingenesis.org*> (June 2026).

How to explain that or anything else we believe in unto *unbelievers*?
That is the first thought which crossed my mind: make sure their blasphemy does not get instigated by your words. Not sure – leave them alone. See *Matthew 7:6*.
And don't be much surprised if the folks just politely wait when you finish talking. Their *unbelief* is usual & commonplace. Remember *2Corinthians 4:4*.
Kindly note those chapters here named "*The unbelievers ask*".
In chapter 254, see how the quoted words from a Christian movie (along with its name, *A Matter of Faith*) explain the matter.

You may read the arguments in parallel chapter 328.

References: *Genesis Chapter 5* – From Brother Adam to Brother Noah.
Genesis Chapter 10 – The descendants of Brother Noah.
Genesis 11:10-26 – From Brother Shem to Brother Abram.

These books are worth your while: *Grant R. Jeffrey, The Signature of GOD.*
The Handwriting of GOD.

Please, take the time to watch – *GOD Of Wonders.*
Genesis: Paradise Lost.

569

Q: How can we possibly implement the *Book of Lamentations* today?

A: We can find the Scriptural answer to your question in the *First Chapter* of *The Lamentations of Jeremiah*.
In the following two *Verses*, you can see the *Warning of GOD* addressed to all people, not only those so many years dead.

12 Is it nothing to you, all ye that pass by? behold, and see if there be any sorrow like unto my sorrow, which is done unto me, wherewith the LORD hath afflicted me in the day of His Fierce Anger ... 18 The LORD is Righteous; for I have rebelled against His Commandment: hear, I pray you, all people, and behold my sorrow: my virgins and my young men are gone into captivity. (Lamentations 1:12,18)

In Bible Study, you may find it helpful to copy the Word of GOD into your PC and make your notes after each Verse. Or else, use brackets.
Let's take, for instance, some Verses from *Lamentations Chapter 3.*
I put my notes in brackets so that the original text might be read either together or without them. This way, we get a personal amplified version.

3 Surely (only) *against* (the sin in) *me* (His Creature) *is He turned; He turneth His Hand against* (the evil, I foolishly allowed to indwell my being, which gradually corrupted) *me all the day.*

7 (GOD of Love), *He hath* (Mercifully) *hedged* (the thoughtless & spirit-blind) *me about* (by the strange circumstances, so) *that I cannot get out* (into even more evil): (in His Wisdom) *He hath made my* (Satan-made) *chain heavy* (for me to recognize and comprehend it better).

8 Also when I cry and shout, He (in Wisdom) *shutteth out my Prayer* (so that Communion with Him to be free from any foolishness on my part).

11 (My GOD,) *He* (Prudently) *hath turned aside my* (wrong) *ways* (for my Good) *and pulled* (the corrupted) *me in pieces* (by painfully tearing the evil part from off evil-sick myself): (Glory to GOD!) *He hath made* (the self-confident) *me desolate* (in the spiritually blind eyes of the heathen world).

Studying the Bible from *Genesis* to *Revelation*, you may eventually get back to your old notes, correct them, and notice your spiritual growth.

Moreover, when what you write is the Truth revealed by the *Spirit of GOD*, your notes would be of great practical help, say, for the next *Small Group* Meeting. You know, the Bible Study schedule in the Group may differ from yours. Say you are studying the *Book of Ecclesiastes*, whereas the Group is busy with the *Gospel of Luke*. It won't be a problem. Your old notes will help you out.

Me, the personally written *Concordance, Sermons, Notes* (and now this book) are my first references on many occasions, writing this chapter inclusive.
See *Psalms 119:125, Proverbs 10:14, &c.*

These Scriptures are most pertinent to our Bible Study –
Jeremiah 33:3; Matthew 7:7-8, 11:12; John 3:27; & Sirach 3:21-23.

And "Q & A" chapters 29 (Mind your approach), 83 (New Revelations), 104 (The Promised Teacher), and 122 (Researches) are relevant too.

Q: Please, explain *Leviticus 21:1-4*.

A: It is written:

1 And the LORD said unto Moses, Speak unto the Priests the Sons of Aaron, and say unto them, There shall none be defiled for the dead among his People: 2 But for his kin, that is near unto him, that is, for his mother, and for his father, and for his son, and for his daughter, and for his brother, 3 And for his sister a virgin, that is nigh unto him, which hath had no husband; for her may he be defiled. 4 But he shall not defile himself, being a Chief man among his People, to profane himself. (Leviticus 21:1-4)

The literal meaning is clear and should be followed by our Priests.

But there is also another point here.
As one exposition runs, *allegorical interpretation proposes that the basic elements of a text are symbols of a deeper lesson.*

Our Priests are not to be employed (earn their living) in the world (*dead* to our Faith). They should keep a full-time Church Service and not combine (*defile*) it with any worldly job, paid or free. See the same symbolical meaning in *Verse 11*.

Chapter 21 of Leviticus presents us with other allegories too.

570

Q: Brother, how would you define our *Christian Courage*?

A: In principle, it is our following the Word of GOD no matter what, even facing real *natural* danger.

> By *Websters Unabridged Dictionary* (2001), *courage* means, *the quality of mind or spirit to face difficulty, danger, pain, etc., without fear ...*

This definition is quite general, isn't it? For it embraces the bravery* in such *non-Christian* walks of life as imperialistic* cruel military and crime.
(This is limited by mere fear. E.g., the Russians invading Ukraine in 2022.)

> By Rev. John Brown's *Dictionary of the Bible* (1789), *Courageous* means f*ree from fear, full of Boldness & Hope, Joshua 1:7.*

That's why, to define such an attitude as Christian Courage, we ought to learn it by the Written Word of GOD and Bible Dictionaries rather than public sources.

> *For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. (Ephesians 6:12)*

You may see chapters 99 (A cup of water) & 172 (How to fight fear?).
See the Scriptures about trusting our Heavenly Father –

> *Deuteronomy 20:3-4 & 31:6;*
> *Psalms 27:1,14; 31:24; 56:3-4; 118:6;*
> *Isaiah 41:10 & 43:1;*
> *Romans 8:31; & Hebrews 13:6.*

The books to read: *John Fox, Book of Martyrs*
Kenneth Copeland, Freedom From Fear

These movies are relevant to our discussion: *Paul, Apostle Of Christ*
Luther
GOD's Outlaw
Silence
Hacksaw Ridge

571

Q: When I chat with my kin or friends and turn to spiritual things, I often hear back: "*Have you forgotten, what you have been?", "Do you remember what you used to say?"* or suchlike stuff reminding me of my shameful past.
My answer, "*Now, I am another man."* doesn't help much, as they continue to laugh at me speaking of the things gone.
What counterargument would you suggest?

A: Firstly, give the LORD Glory by saying, "*Praise GOD"* before stating, "*I'm another man*." That will invite *Him* into the conversation. *Psalms 22:3*.
Be attentive to what *the Spirit* might suggest. *Romans 8:14*.

When you *turn to spiritual things*, you are right. Because those subjects might happen to be the only things *worth* saying. *Joshua 1:8 & Proverbs 18:21*.

When facing any criticism, accept it but humbly ask, "*What about you?*"
Kindly note that the correct answer is, "*Yes, me too*." *Romans 2:1 & 3:23*.

Be alert to avoid blasphemy. *Psalms 39:1-2 & Matthew 7:6*.
You can see the possibility thereof well in advance by attentive listening to speakers. *Isaiah 50:4 & Matthew 12:34*.
See chapter 132 (Tongue).

End your conversation Rightly. Say, "*GOD bless you.*" And mean it.

A *Good man out of the Good Treasure of the heart bringeth forth Good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give Account thereof in the Day of Judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned. (Matthew 12:35-37)*

But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, Whom the Father will send in My Name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. (John 14:26)

Further references: *John 16:13* – Listen to the Holy Ghost.
Ephesians 4:29 – No corrupt communication.
2Timothy 2:16 – No foolish chat.
1John 2:27 – Mind your Anointing.

572

Q: My *unbelieving* colleagues call themselves “free men”.
After work, they indeed have more *free* time to spend with their families, whereas I have to sacrifice a part of my time for *Bible Study* and the *Ministry*. What would you say to that?

A: The *quality* of your time dedicated to your family is much better than that of *unbelievers*. Hopefully, your spouse well backs you up.

The Christian Family should be *above* every other Ministry.
Your Bible Study is needful to *both* you and your family.

As for those who live without GOD in their hearts and call themselves “free men”, well, they are mistaken. Why? Because all determined by *Genesis 1:4* – we are either with the LORD or Satan. And when people choose the latter, they are *his*. Thinking & speaking about themselves as “free”, they blindly accept & repeat lies of their *puppeteer*, the devil. Let me remind you of *2Corinthians 4:4*.

Their “freedom” is nothing but living according to the satanic rules of this world. For them, *atheism* (see *John 1:5* & *1John 2:22*) is truth & education, *unbelief* (see *1Corinthians 2:14* & *Jude 1:10*) – knowledge & understanding, and *godlessness* (see *Psalms 53:1* & *John 3:18-20*) – the policy & behavior.

Take a look at relevant chapters 36, 50, 60, 85, and 158.

Further references: *Matthew 7:15-20 – ... by their fruits ye shall know them*.
John 3:36 – ... the Wrath of GOD abideth on him.
Romans 1:18-20 – ... they are without excuse ...
2Thessalonians 2:10-12 – ... they received not the Love ...

Q: Is there any difference between *adultery* and *fornication*?

A: *Webster’s Dictionary (1911)* defines *adultery* as a *violation of marriage-bed* and *fornication* as *the illicit sexual intercourse of unmarried persons*.
The last definition also has *adultery* as a synonym.

Thus the *difference* can be determined only by the marital status of a person.
But the chief *common* point is a violation of the Seventh Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.

573

Q: Is there any substantial difference between *hell* & *eternal death*, and *Paradise* & *Eternal Life*?

A: Those two spiritual pairs are *one* condemnation and *one* Blessing, subdivided into two abodes each. The condemnation and Blessing are *final* since it is hardly possible to get from *hell* (the first abode condemned) to *Eternal Life* (the second Blessed Abode) and from *Paradise* (the first Blessed Abode) to *death eternal* (the second abode condemned).

In *Revelation 2:11, 20:6,* & *21:8*, we can read about "*the second death*". The most clear-cut Scripture is –

And death and hell
were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. (Revelation 20:14)*

The Salvation in the two Abodes of the Righteous also is implied in the Holy Scriptures, including the following –

Psalms 15:1-2; Isaiah 43:25, 51:6;
Mark 16:15-16; John 3:16-17, 6:54-57, 8:51; & 2Thessalonians 2:13-14.

Speaking of a substantial difference between *hell* & *eternal death* and *Paradise* & *Eternal Life*, these two couples of eternal condemnation and Eternal Blessing have one turning point of subdivision – the Day of Judgment *(2Peter 3:10)*.

The people alive and those abiding in Paradise and hell are to stand before the Judgment seat of Christ to be separated. The Righteous ones are welcome to *Eternal Life* in the Kingdom of GOD. The wicked will have to be in the outside darkness of *eternal death*.

For GOD shall bring every work into Judgment,
with every secret thing, whether it be Good, or whether it be evil.
(Ecclesiastes 12:14)

Before that Fearful Day of LORD GOD, we all – whether alive or dead, abiding in Paradise of suffering in hell – are judged by the Holy Ghost speaking with us through our conscience.

But standing before GOD is different. All questions will be answered by Him. (See chapter 224 – *The Parable of Sheep & Goats*). But will sinners be able to answer His Question? Note *Verse 12* in the context of *Matthew 22:1-14*:

And He saith unto him, Friend, how camest thou in hither
not having a Wedding Garment? And he was speechless. (Matthew 22:12)

* Why is the second death *the lake of fire*? Because the fire of *eternal agony of conscience* mentioned in chapter 8 (Hell) will get more pain, even the revealed knowledge of sins (not repented of by an evildoer), even their *consequences*.
I believe even those Justified in and through our Lord Jesus will have to remember (or be reminded) many things regretful (*Psalms 51:3*).

... we shall all stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ.
For it is written, As I live, saith the LORD, every knee shall bow to Me,
and every tongue shall confess to GOD. So then every one of us
shall give Account of himself to GOD. (Romans 14:10-12)

Q: (1) What about people who are taught the wrong thing? Growing up, at school, I was taught the fundamental things that Christians believe. But my teachers were not Christians themselves. They taught me the Christian content but, at the same time, that it was not correct. My education on Christianity encouraged learning but not Faith. *I have since come to believe, slowly becoming interested, taking courses, and finding my way*.

Q: (2) But what about people who are actively discouraged from Christianity and, subsequently, never interested in it?

Q: (3) Some people don't have a Christian education. Should they be penalized, i.e., damned, for being educated in an environment that is entirely hostile to the idea of Christianity?

Q: (4) Do they deserve damnation if they never have a chance to learn Truth?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020. Edited.)

A: (1-2) Your text which I put in italic, is the answer to your post's name and the first two questions. Notwithstanding the wrong education or the absence of such, every mentally healthy person can see the World & Life the right way. Kindly note *Genesis 1:26-28*.
(3-4) Therefore, people who were deprived of Christian education or taught hostile to our Faith are to get judged according to the choices they made and the ways they took. The wrong rearing & education is the problem & Responsibility of their parents & teachers if any. But *conscience* and *Free will* are both given to all. You may go as far as the Index section for references.
Thank you.

574

Q: Brother, let's study the Prophecy of *The Book of Daniel*, *Chapter 7*.

A: In our "Q & A", I wrote more than once that the Prophetic Word of GOD cannot be confined to a particular time, place, and people.
Such limited Scriptures would have been useless to us nowadays.

With all due respect to many Teachers, their good commentaries are impractical to me, as they speak about the kingdoms which have been thousands of years gone. Believing *Ecclesiastes 1:9*, I write my notes, at least as parallel interpretations. And such is my seeing *Daniel Chapter 7*.

> *2 ... the four winds of the Heaven strove upon the great sea.*

The Spirit War is all around the World, with no neutral zones left.
Genesis 1:4; Ephesians 6:12.

> *3 And four great beasts came up from the sea, diverse one from another.*

There are four such satanic powers as *imperialism*, *racism*, *communism* (*fascism*), and *atheism*.

> *4 The first was like a lion, and had eagle's wings: I beheld till the wings thereof were plucked, and it was lifted up from the Earth, and made stand upon the feet as a man, and a man's heart was given to it.*

Imperialism is cruel, canny, and knows its timing. When slaves cry for freedom and other states demand their cut of colonies – that is the "right" time for war.

> *5 And behold another beast, a second, like to a bear, and it raised up itself on one side, and it had three ribs in the mouth of it between the teeth of it: and they said thus unto it, Arise, devour much flesh.*

Racism is most horrific under the banner of *fascism*. It devoured those possessed by *unbelief*, *compromise*, and *fear*. The cowards always accept their slavery.

> *6 ... and lo another, like a leopard, which had upon the back of it four wings of a fowl; the beast had also four heads; and dominion was given to it.*

Communism is twice as strong as the first beast.

His four heads cook up lying freedom, elusive equality, treacherous friendship, and false love. Simpletons are happy to welcome that lie.

> *7 ... and behold a fourth beast, dreadful and terrible, and strong exceedingly; and it had great iron teeth: it devoured and brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with the feet of it: and it was diverse from all the beasts that were before it; and it had ten horns.*

Atheism is Satan himself and has a "bulldog grip" on fools. Death & hell follow him. He promises pleasures, and his lies are hidden until it is too late. The ten horns (see *Verse 24*) are his chief devils manipulating the strongest Kings.

> *It is important to note that Daniel does not have a Vision of an eagle, bear, and leopard, but of animals like an eagle, like a bear, and like a leopard ... (Sharon Pace, Smyth & Helwys Bible Commentary)*

> *8 I considered the horns, and, behold, there came up among them another little horn, before whom there were three of the first horns plucked up by the roots: and, behold, in this horn were eyes like the eyes of man, and a mouth speaking great things.*

The little horn is Satan's human servant, the *antichrist*. His little military power (the only stuff the world recognizes) is made up for by the eyes – knowledge & understanding (which others lack). The antichrist knows well *whom* he serves. *Matthew 4:9*. He willfully unites with Satan and does away with stronger ones. Throughout all history, antichrists lie their way hard to doubt. *2Corinthians 4:4*.

> *9 I beheld till the thrones were cast down, and the Ancient of days did sit, Whose Garment was white as snow, and the hair of His Head like the pure wool: His Throne was like the fiery flame, and His Wheels as burning fire.*

Let's never forget Whose we are and Whom we serve. *Deuteronomy 11:22-23*.

> *10 A Fiery Stream issued and came forth from before Him: thousand thousands ministered unto Him, and ten thousand times ten thousand stood before Him: the Judgment was set, and the Books were opened. 11 I beheld then because of the voice of the great words which the horn spake: I beheld even till the beast was slain, and his body destroyed, and given to the burning flame.*

Unbelievers won't disbelieve the LORD GOD at the Judgment. *Revelation 1:7*.

12 As concerning the rest of the beasts, they had their dominion taken away: yet their lives were prolonged for a season and time.

Our Father GOD is Patient. He proves His Saints and gives sinners time to repent. And that until the time is up. The last is in His Power. *Acts 1:7*.

13 ... behold, one like the Son of Man came with the clouds of Heaven, and came to the Ancient of days, and they brought Him near before Him. 14 And there was given Him Dominion, and Glory, and a Kingdom, that all people, nations, and languages, should serve Him: His Dominion is an Everlasting Dominion, which shall not pass away, and His Kingdom that which shall not be destroyed.

These Verses are self-explanatory. Jesus is Lord. *Acts 9:5* & *Philippians 2:11*.

17 These great beasts, which are four, are four Kings, which shall arise out of the Earth.

In *Verses 4-7*, I interpreted the beasts as satanic powers. Here, they are presented as Kings. And that without much disagreement, since it is needful for human evil agents to manifest definite evils. *Daniel 10:13,20* & *2Corinthians 4:4*.

18 But the Saints of the Most High shall take the Kingdom, and possess the Kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever.

This is also self-explanatory. See *Luke 12:32*.

19 Then I would know the Truth of the fourth beast, which was diverse from all the others, exceeding dreadful, whose teeth were of iron, and his nails of brass; which devoured, brake in pieces, and stamped the residue with his feet; 20 And of the ten horns that were in his head, and of the other which came up, and before whom three fell; even of that horn that had eyes, and a mouth that spake very great things, whose look was more stout than his fellows. 21 I beheld, and the same horn made war with the Saints, and prevailed against them; 22 Until the Ancient of days came, and Judgment was given to the Saints of the Most High; and the time came that the Saints possessed the Kingdom.

Nobody promised us the Spirit War & persecutions easy and without losses. *2Samuel 1:25, Daniel 10:13, & Matthew 4:1-11*. “Q & A” chapters 39 & 444.

23 ... The fourth beast shall be the fourth kingdom upon Earth, which shall be diverse from all kingdoms, and shall devour the whole Earth, and shall tread it down, and break it in pieces. 24 And the ten horns out of this kingdom are ten Kings that shall arise: and another shall rise after them; and he shall be diverse from the first, and he shall subdue three Kings.
25 And he shall speak great words against the Most High, and shall wear out the Saints of the Most High, and think to change times and laws: and they shall be given into his hand until a time and times and the dividing of time.*

Like I said earlier, the LORD, our GOD, proves His Saints. *Zechariah 13:7-9*.
* Take a look at chapter 302 (... *a time & times & the dividing of time* ...).

26 But the Judgment shall sit, and they shall take away his dominion, to consume and to destroy it unto the end. 27 And the Kingdom and Dominion, and the Greatness of the Kingdom under the whole Heaven, shall be given to the People of the Saints of the Most High, Whose Kingdom is an Everlasting Kingdom, and all dominions shall serve and obey Him.
28 Hitherto is the end of the matter. As for me Daniel, my cogitations much troubled me, and my countenance changed in me: but I kept the matter in my heart.

Also self-explanatory, *Verse 28* has this important parallel – *Matthew 7:6*.

... when we look at such beasts as dreadful and terrible, and exceedingly strong, and consider their fatal successes ; we should recollect, that they are under the Secret Direction of GOD, Whose "Counsel shall stand, and He will do all His Pleasure" : and thus we shall be preserved from either admiring or dreading them. For these lions, and monsters of more savage breed, are all chained : the dominion given them has its Appointed extent and duration ; their wrath shall turn to the Praise of the LORD ...
(Thomas Scott, Comments on The Book of Daniel)

For we know how restless are the fancies of mankind, and how insane a disease is a vain curiosity. GOD is aware of what is Useful for our information, and so He adopts His Method of Teaching to our capacity and Profit.
(John Calvin, Comments on The Book of Daniel)

You may see sequential chapter 575 (Daniel, Chapter 8).

575

Q: The Prophecy in the *Book of Daniel*, *Chapter 8*, looks different from what we discussed in our previous talk (chapter 574 – *Daniel, Chapter 7*).
So, how would you interpret *Chapter 8* of the *Book of Daniel*?

A: The Prophecies might *look* different, but their Truth stays unchanged.
It is much the same as our Lord Jesus' Parables.
As for my interpretations, as I said before, it is all about the search for parallel Truth pertinent to these days, not ancient history.

Let's read the Prophecy.

> *3 ... behold, there stood before the river a ram which had two horns: and the two horns were high; but one was higher than the other, and the higher came up last. 4 I saw the ram pushing westward, and northward, and southward; so that no beasts might stand before him, neither was there any that could deliver out of his hand; but he did according to his will, and became great.*

One devil can manage to rule a couple of Kings (Queens, Presidents, Rulers, etc.), whether uniting them in the evil alliance or separating – *war* is always his satanic aim. See chapter 300 (The evil of wars).

> *5 And as I was considering, behold, an he goat came from the west on the face of the whole Earth, and touched not the ground: and the goat had a notable horn between his eyes.*

The air forces of another state might come up confident in their military might. See chapter 9 (Military).

> *6 And he came to the ram that had two horns, which I had seen standing before the river, and ran unto him in the fury of his power. 7 And I saw him come close unto the ram, and he was moved with choler against him, and smote the ram, and brake his two horns: and there was no power in the ram to stand before him, but he cast him down to the ground, and stamped upon him: and there was none that could deliver the ram out of his hand.*

Verses 6-7 stand for the curse of war where each side is moved by Satan's demons (devils, puppet-masters), and all human participants thereof, from Kings to the soldiers & citizens, are but their blind puppets.

Some Teachers commented on the above Verses as prophesied about some countries of old, which had the ram and he-goat the state emblems. I don't know why but in our lands, each of those creatures (add an ass to their company) symbolizes only *stupidity*. And that seems to be quite relevant, seeing nothing but *spirit-blindness* in every war which had ever broken out on the face of Earth.

> *8 Therefore the he goat waxed very great: and when he was strong, the great horn was broken; and for it came up four notable ones toward the four winds of Heaven. 9 And out of one of them came forth a little horn, which waxed exceeding great, toward the south, and toward the east, and toward the Pleasant Land. 10 And it waxed great, even to the Host of Heaven; and it cast down some of the Host and of the Stars to the ground, and stamped upon them.*

The political powers might crush one another and become great in the eyes of the heathen world, but not in the Eyes of GOD. The little horn resembles the one discussed in chapter 574 – *Daniel 7:8*.
Verse 10 is about our Spirit War, also considered that chapter – *Daniel 7:21*.
Satan's power was proved by his lying the third part of the Angels off from our Heavenly Father to the death eternal.
See *Matthew 25:41, 2Peter 2:4, Jude 6,* & *Revelation 12:3-4,9.*

> *11 Yea, he magnified himself even to the Prince of the Host, and by him the Daily Sacrifice was taken away, and the Place of His Sanctuary was cast down.*

These are the strategy and local achievements of Satan –
(1) Convince Christians to discontinue Sacrificial Giving to GOD.
(2) Stop True Worship (*John 4:24*) to their Heavenly Father. *Daniel 11:31*.

> *12 And an host was given him against the Daily Sacrifice by reason of transgression, and it cast down the Truth to the ground; and it practised, and prospered.*

That transgression of robbing GOD (*Malachi 3:9*) brings about its evil demerit: the host of Satan's servants increased, and the Truth of the LORD got forgotten.

> *13 ... How long shall be the Vision concerning the Daily Sacrifice, and the transgression of desolation, to give both the Sanctuary and the Host to be trodden under foot?*

14 ... Unto two thousand and three hundred days; then shall the Sanctuary be cleansed. ... 17 ... at the Time of the End shall be the Vision.
(by Expanded Bible, ... *this Vision is about the Time of the End*.)
19 ... at the Time appointed the End shall be.

Verses 13,14,17, & 19 deal with the Timing of GOD, the End of this World inclusive, which subjects, I guess, are better to leave alone. See *Matthew 24:36*.

20 The ram which thou sawest having two horns are the Kings of Media and Persia. 21 And the rough goat is the king of Grecia: and the great horn that is between his eyes is the first king. 22 Now that being broken, whereas four stood up for it, four kingdoms shall stand up out of the nation, but not in his power. 23 And in the latter time of their kingdom, when the transgressors are come to the full, a king of fierce countenance, and understanding dark sentences, shall stand up. 24 And his power shall be mighty, but not by his own power: and he shall destroy wonderfully, and shall prosper, and practise, and shall destroy the mighty and the Holy People.

Like I wrote in the previous chapter 574, my interpretation does not contradict the one given in these Verses, as all human evil Rulers of all times have ever been nothing but the blind puppets of their satanic puppeteers.
See *2Corinthians 4:4.*

Read *Daniel Chapter 10*, *Verses 13 & 20*, in particular. Does the Angel of GOD have to fight with such human stuff as a King or a kingdom? The Scripture is clear: the Angel's coming up alone is enough for a man to be strengthened or to fall. What *Daniel 10:13,20* calls "prince" or "Prince" might stand for only the *devil* (Satan or his chief demon) or the *Angel of GOD*, respectively.

Media & Persia exist no more. Are the human Rulers of modern Greece or Egypt that mighty? But the devils who ruled those ancient states are still alive & active. One strong King comes up after another. They steal, kill, destroy, and go to their graves & hell where they fit right in. But Satan still lives and continues to murder around through his human puppets.

25 And through his policy also he shall cause craft to prosper in his hand;

Satan's policy stands firmly upon his profound knowledge of human beings.
His faithful human servant, the King – "the little horn" mentioned in *Verses 9-10* and the previous chapter – has always been led by him successfully to the death eternal inclusive. See chapter 36 (The power of Satan).

and he shall magnify himself in his heart,

Pride is the weak side of our enemy. See *Isaiah 14:12-15*.
They don't like to get beaten up. See *1John 5:18*.

and by peace shall destroy many:

That worldly peace – the complacency, self-assurance, self-righteousness, etc. – is as deceptive as Satan himself. *John 8:43-45*.
Mind the Words of our Lord in *Matthew 10:34,38,39* & *John 14:27*.

he shall also stand up against the Prince of Princes; but he shall be broken without hand.

Thus saith the LORD. And,

He is Faithful that promised. (Hebrews 10:23)

See also *John 16:11* & *Revelation 12:12; 20:10*.

26 And the Vision of the evening and the morning which was told is True: wherefore shut thou up the Vision; for it shall be for many days.

The Parallel, which is relevant to the end of the *Book of Daniel, Chapter 7* – even *Matthew 7:6* – is due here too.

See yourself as the LORD, your GOD does.

Thou art My Battle Axe and Weapons of War: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms. And with thee will I break in pieces the horse and his rider; and with thee will I break in pieces the chariot and his rider. With thee also will I break in pieces man and woman; and with thee will I break in pieces old and young; and with thee will I break in pieces the young man and the maid. I will also break in pieces with thee the shepherd and his flock; and with thee will I break in pieces the husbandman and his yoke of oxen; and with thee will I break in pieces captains and rulers. (Jeremiah 51:20-23)

Read *John 16:33 & 1John 3:8* – our enemy has already been defeated.
Note *Luke 10:19* – mind your Power.

576

Q: *Chapter 11* of the *Book of Daniel* is full of historical predictions.
Is there any Teaching given us by all that?

A: Well, I won't quote that long Chapter, okay? You may open your Bible – whatever edition you like or have at hand. Try the *Expanded Version* on <*https://www.biblegateway.com/versions/Expanded-Bible-EXB/*>.

Verses 2-26 end with these Words: "*... and many shall fall down slain.*"
Let's try to see beyond these Writings – it is hundreds of millions of human lives throughout our history. See chapter 300 (The evil of wars).
Verses 27-35 picture the top of Spirit War – persecutions of Saints. Chapter 39.
In this unbelieving world, it is all commonplace. *Matthew 5:10-12 & 24:4-13*.
Verses 36-45 speak again about the servant of Satan, the maniac "little horn" we discussed in previous chapters 574 & 575 (*Daniel, Chapters 7 & 8*).
The end of *Verse 44* much resembles *Verse 26*. So, why does it happen?

The Reason: sowing & reaping. *Galatians 6:7*. Chapter 503 (The Harvest Law).
The Lesson: remember *Nehemiah 9:37*. See chapter 21 (Voting).
The Question: what will happen to those slain in Eternity?
The Answer: *Nehemiah 9:33*. Chapters 8 (Hell) & 153 (Kingdom of Heaven).
The Teaching: mind well *Deuteronomy 6:4-5 & James 4:7*.

Submit yourselves therefore to GOD.
Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. (James 4:7)

Our history is the bloody chronicle of murders and devastation called the *world*, *civil*, *patriotic*, and other *satanic* wars. There have always been "the king of the south" & "the king of the north" or those of east & west (e.g., Stalin & Hitler) – two mere mortal men, a pair of idiots, servants of the devil, leading millions of simpletons to their stupid idolatrous decorations, graves, and hell.

Note *Daniel 4:17,25,35; 5:21 & Matthew 28:18* – the LORD GOD reigns.

... All Power is given unto Me in Heaven and in Earth. Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; teaching them to observe all things whatsoever I have commanded you: and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the World. Amen. (Matthew 28:18-20)

577

Q: Regarding the Sacred Names, “the LORD” in *Joel 2:32*
and “the Lord” in *Acts 2:21* & *Romans 10:13*, our Bible says:

... whosoever shall call on the Name of the Lord shall be saved.

Doesn’t it make Salvation so easy for everybody?

A: No. The Way of Salvation has never been the easy one.
We talked about that in chapters 76, 77, 308, and some others.

As for the Scriptures you mentioned, I believe they can be taken *literally*.
The Most Holy Name of our Father GOD is unknown to and will never cross the mind of *unbelievers*. Why? Read the Word:

The fool hath said in his heart, There is no GOD. (Psalms 14:1; 53:1)

Whatever we said in our hearts is fixed there. Mind also *Isaiah 43:1 & 44:21*.

Once, I foolishly jump from a breakwater to swim in stormy waters, about five meters deep, close to the shore. I quickly found it hard to keep normal breath since the waves coming from the sea and reflected from the breakwater made quite a mess there. At the same time, the current carried me steadily off.
Seeing nobody around to throw me a line, I angrily called: *Jesus!* And I meant it. His Answer well matched my call: in less than a minute, I was thrown upon nearby stones and got me, all covered with minor cuts, ashore. *2Samuel 22:17*?
Praise GOD!

When you praise the LORD, exalt Him as much as you can;
for He will surpass even that. When you exalt Him, put forth all your Strength,
and do not grow weary, for you cannot praise Him enough.
(Sirach 43:30, Revised Standard Version)

You may see parallel chapter 415 (In Promised Name of Jesus).

References.

1Corinthians 1:18,21,25; 2:14; & 3:18-19 – The foolishness and Wisdom.
2Corinthians 1:9 – We should not trust ourselves but GOD.

578

Q: How would *you* define such terms as *Prayer*, *Intercession*, *Supplication*, *Fast*, *sackcloth*, and *ashes* for our Christian living?

A: Every Christian can define all that for him (her) self.
For personal use, I define these terms as follows.

Prayer – our Communion with GOD seeking His Guidance & Help.
See *Psalms 139:23-24 & Matthew 6:5-15*.

Intercession – a Prayer for & on behalf of other people.
See *Jeremiah 14:20, Daniel 9:3-19, & 1Timothy 2:1-2*.

Supplication – a Prayer containing our needs as *we* understand them.
See *Matthew 26:39,42*.

Fast – the abstaining from everything preventing our Communion with LORD GOD. See *Isaiah 58:6-14*.

Sackcloth – the part of a Fast concerning our outward comfort.
See *Isaiah 58:7, Ezra 8:21, Jonah 3:5-10, & Matthew 19:21*.

Ashes – the part of a Fast concerning our outward joy.
See *Daniel 10:2-3, Jonah 3:5-10, & Matthew 5:4*.

Q: If we were made in the *Image & Likeness of GOD*, are we *gods* too?.
It is written so in *Psalm 82:6* and confirmed in *John 10:34*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020. Condensed.)

A: What is written is True.
However, we should understand what the term “gods” mean and implement it per the Holy Will of our LORD GOD.
He is the Creator of Perfection – we keep it. *Genesis 1:31* & *Psalms 8:6*.
He is Love – we are to be such. See *1John 4:8,16*.
He is Light – we are to copy Him. See *John 8:12* & *Matthew 5:14*.
And so on.
Follow His Word, and GOD will meet us. See *Luke 15:20*.
Kindly read chapter 312 (Our spiritual Authority).
Godspeed.

579

Q: *Daniel 9:12* runs:

And He hath confirmed His Words,
which He spake against us, and against our Judges that judged us,
by bringing upon us a great evil: for under the whole Heaven
hath not been done as hath been done upon Jerusalem.

The question is: what could have happened to *Jerusalem*, such as had never been done to any other place on Earth?

A: In chapter 323, I tried to differentiate between Jerusalem, the city on a map, and *spiritual Jerusalem*, which might stand for our Christian Shepherds.

Indeed, what had been done to that ancient Jerusalem so long ago?
Robbery, destruction, slavery, and death have always been well known throughout the World.
But there has never been such grief to the Servant of GOD as to experience that awful contrast between the *Blessing* and the *curse*, even between the City of the LORD where His Holy Spirit dwelt and the same place which had become the abode of the devil. See chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).

Probably, not many idolatrous Jews there & then could have comprehended that issue. As most of us would, they were more concerned about their *physical* sufferings & losses. *Hosea 4:6*. See chapter 666 (The Promised Messiah).
Not many Christians (to whom the Scripture is addressed now) can grasp that too. Note *Mark 4:24-25 & Philippians 3:18-19*.

Well, to understand this point better, look back at your Christian experience.
Have you ever been so blessed by your Heavenly Father as to do His Works on the level of Miracles but, after a while, relaxed, got complacent, and found yourself in a sorry company of swine, i.e., those warned about in *Luke 15:16* & *Matthew 7:6*? I have. There was a long road for a Prodigal Son thereafter. Remember *Luke 15:15-20*.
Yea, GOD be praised, for He closes one door and opens another.
Note *Psalms 32:5 & 103:1-5*. Kindly see chapter 537 (A second chance. A door).
See chapters 463 (The dangerous relaxation) & 561 (The Love of GOD).

Therefore, from the bitter personal experience, and more than once, this book warns & counsels: my Dear Brothers & Sisters, let's not step on the same rake.

580

Q: What do you make of the fact that *Jude 14* cites the *Book of Enoch* as a Scripture?. The first Christians believed that the *Wisdom of Solomon* and the *Book of Enoch* were the Scriptures. Yet these texts are not in modern Bibles.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: Small correction: Brother Jude cited *from* the Book of Enoch, yet not mentioned the latter *as* the Scripture.

Jude 1:14-15 runs,

> *14 And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thousands of His Saints, 15 To execute Judgment upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against Him.*

Now, it is written,

Seek ye out of the Book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail,
none shall want her mate: for My Mouth it hath commanded,
and His Spirit it hath gathered them. (Isaiah 34:16)

This Scripture is pertinent here to find the relevance of the Prophetic Words spoken through Brother Enoch and the Holy Bible.
So, kindly consider *Deuteronomy 33:2* & *Jude 14* as paralleled.

Please also note that this Scripture, even *Jude 9*, is not mentioned anywhere else in our Bible. However, it does not contradict the Spirit thereof.

As for the *Apocryphal Books*, which were included in the old Bibles but not in the modern editions of the Holy Scriptures, your good question is to the editors. See for yourself which edition to trust.

In our book, we touched on that subject in chapters 118 (Different translations) & 258 (*The unbelievers ask:* Which edition is the Word of GOD?).

Thanks for the question.

581

Q: Brother, how should we understand our Unity with GOD in Christ, seeing all that denominational *split* in the Body of Christ?

A: We spoke on the subject of our *Christian Unity* in chapters 5 (Religions & denominations), 80 (Eleventh Commandment), 124 (Jesus' Prayer for our Unity), and 531 (Our Congregational Unity). Kindly have a look.

Incompatibility of Christianity (let alone Christian Unity) with the imperialistic military we discussed in chapter 154 (Soldiers).
At the same time, the Christian heart's attitude, contrary to denominationalism, is inconsistent & conflicting with those of compromise & worldly reason.
You may see chapters 40 and 41, respectively.

In my experience – attending Charismatic, Pentecostal, Baptist, Adventist, Jewish Messianic, and Non-denominational Congregations – I've never heard such a demanding subject as *Unity* preached or discussed. On the contrary, the critical words about *another* denomination were often present there.
The same can be said about Orthodox Christians, Watchtower Witnesses, and Mormons, as far as I can recall our occasional chats. See chapters 422 & 423.

But to return to our question, take the *Unity with GOD in Christ* as our Eleventh Commandment (chapter 80) and the Statement of fact (chapter 124).
Please, see sequential chapter 582 (The Spirit of Unity).

Woe be unto the Pastors that destroy and scatter the Sheep of My Pasture! saith the LORD. Therefore thus saith the LORD GOD of Israel against the pastors that feed My People; Ye have scattered My Flock, and driven them away, and have not visited them: behold, I will visit upon you the evil of your doings, saith the LORD. (Jeremiah 23:1-2)

Further references: *Jeremiah 32:39* – Spirit of Unity in the Fear of GOD.
John 13:34-35 – The Eleventh Commandment.
John 15:16-17 – To work Fruitfully we should be united.
1Corinthians 6:17 – The Spirit of Christian Unity.
1Corinthians 10:17 – Seek Unity.
2Corinthians 11:13-14 – Beware of false teachers.
Hebrews 11:40 – Our Unity in Eternity is promised.

582

Q: I've never met a Christian who sincerely wished the Body of Christ to stay split up. Let's continue the discussion we started in chapter 581 about our *Christian Unity*.
Yet, one question remains: what shall we, Christians, do about it?

A: Well, I also have not met such bold sectarists. However, some of them do think that the *split* we talk about is the "normal" event.

At the end of chapter 25 (What if you are wrong?), I spoke about the risky business of those Teachers who *distort* the Holy Word of GOD by preaching their erroneous interpretations thereof in the Churches. But not all of them sincerely desire the split in the Body of Christ.

Far as my understanding goes, our general problem is in total rejecting the *Baptism in the Holy Spirit* (covered by chapter 65) by most denominations, the exceptions being only Pentecostal & Charismatic Christians.
I cannot say that for sure about all Non-denominational & Ecumenical Churches. The denominations & Confessions (meaning the subdivisions) of the latter are so numerous, you know.

But even being *baptized* in the Holy Ghost (and Blessedly gifted with *tongues*), we still ought not to spiritually relax.
Please, read chapter 463 (The dangerous relaxation).

It is *impossible* to be filled with and led by *One* Holy Spirit of GOD and preach against His Truth (in favor of some denominational doctrine) at the same time.

The Leadership of the Holy Spirit, in my opinion, is the only Right Way and the answer to your question. You may refer to chapter 292 (Fellowship with GOD).

If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children:
how much more shall your Heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit
to them that ask Him? (Luke 11:13)

But the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost,
Whom the Father will send in My Name, He shall teach you all things,
and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.
(John 14:26)

583

Q: Let's clarify the term "*letter of the Law*" in *Romans 7:6*.

A: In chapter 196 (*Romans, Chapter 7*), we spoke about that Scripture. Please also take a look at chapter 128 (Literally or figuratively?).

By *Robert Young's Literal Translation* (*1898), Romans 7:6* runs –

... now we have ceased from the Law, that being dead in which we were held, so that we may serve in Newness of Spirit, and not in oldness of letter.

In chapter 196, I explained "*the oldness of the letter*" as not to be taken as "the outdated Law". The point is, mere *reading* of every book, not only the Bible, comes first, but an *understanding* of the writing is always second.
We can take some Scriptural examples. For instance, *Deuteronomy 24:1-4* prescribes the procedure for divorcing. But the Spirit of the Word well explained the whole matter in *Chapter 3* of *Hosea; Malachi 2:14-16; Matthew 5:31-32, 19:9; Mark 10:2-12;* & *1Corinthians 7:10-11*. Our Heavenly Father hates divorce. You may also consider the following Scriptures –

... if the uncircumcision keep the Righteousness of the Law, shall not his uncircumcision be counted for Circumcision? And shall not uncircumcision which is by nature, if it fulfil the Law, judge thee, who by the letter and circumcision dost transgress the Law? For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that Circumcision, which is outward in the flesh. But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and Circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose Praise is not of men, but of GOD. (Romans 2:26-29)

And such Trust have we through Christ to GOD-ward. Not that we are sufficient of ourselves to think any thing as of ourselves; but our sufficiency is of GOD; Who also hath made us Able Ministers of the New Testament; not of the letter, but of the Spirit: for the letter (taken without Understanding)* *killeth, but the Spirit giveth Life. (2Corinthians 3:4-6)* * My comment.

As for the correct definition of "*letter of the Law*", Brother *John Brown*, in his *Dictionary of the Holy Bible (1789),* called it "*the outside of things*".
Thinking the same way, I agree with him. The history of Christianity knows many examples of blind following *Satan* by sticking to "the letter of the Law".

584

Q: Please clarify the Teaching given in the *Book of Joel*.

A: The main point of that Teaching is the same as in all Holy Bible: the LORD's Call for *Repentance*. You may see chapter 155 (Repentance).

Let's also consider some other points. Kindly check out my interpretation by reading more than one translation (e.g., https://www.biblegateway.com) and listening to the Holy Spirit of GOD.

Joel 1:1-4 & 2:3-11.
The Warning of Punishment for disobedience to GOD is given.*
We discussed the Work of Punishment in chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).

Joel 1:5.
Here, the *drunkards* – not only the *alcoholics* but the multitude of consumers of all devilish rubbish, such as *drugs*, *gambling*, *pornography*, *empty talks*, and so forth – always skip over the Deep Spirit things of GOD (*the New Wine*).

Joel 1:6-7.
The "disposable" instrument of Punishment might be very different: natural disasters, plagues, heathen invasion, etc. See chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).

Joel 1:8-20.
People ought to be sorry for the only loss: the Love of GOD, Who gives Peace.

Joel 1:12,18,20.
Note that the loss of *Joy* is the *reason*, not the result. Even so, here, we are dealing with the Joy of our spirit, which comes from Communion with the LORD only, rather than a mere emotional matter stimulated by natural things.
The total spiritual dependence of *Nature* on *Man* is reminded.**

And GOD said, Let us make Man in Our Image, after Our Likeness: and let them have Dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the Earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the Earth ... And GOD blessed them, and GOD said unto them, Be Fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the Earth, and subdue it: and have Dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the Earth. (Genesis 1:26,28)

Joel 1:9,13,16.
These Verses are clearly about the discontinued *Giving to GOD*.
The Shepherds of GOD are mentioned accordingly.*
Note well *Malachi 3:8-12*. Chapter 56 (The Test of Giving).

Joel 1:14 & 2:15-17.
Here, we can see a *Fast* as a National Approach to GOD in time of disasters.

Joel 2:1-2.
GOD's Final Punishment – the Day of the LORD – is warned on.
We've got used to taking that Day as something in the far future, by GOD's Judgment. Why then it is repeated throughout our Bible for thousands of years? My guess is that it is well worth it. All Prophesies are completed by the Book of Revelation written down by Apostle John. So, the LORD's Warnings stay pertinent. And they are well-timed too, considering the Scripture –

The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength
they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow;
for it is soon cut off, and we fly away. (Psalms 90:10)

Joel 2:12-14.
True Repentance is taught. The Blessing of *Giving Attitude* is GOD's Promise.

Joel 2:18-20,23-27.
The Holy LORD promised the Harvest of Blessings for our *Repentance*.

Joel 2:21-22.
Our Spiritual Authority over Nature is repeated.**
Genesis 1:26,28; Joel 1:12,18,20.
See also chapter 312 (Our spiritual Authority).

Joel 2:28-32.
The Holy Spirit of GOD is promised.
As for the Day of the LORD, it is not to be fearful to whom is given to know the Power of the Name Most Holy & the Promised Name *Jesus*.
Chapters 22 (The Third Commandment) & 577 (The Promised Name *Jesus*).

Joel 3:1-21.
The LORD's Perfect Justice on Judgment Day is reminded again.
See chapter 320 (The Perfect Justice).

Joel 3:2,12,14.
See *2Chronicles Chapter 20* regarding the *Valley of Jehoshaphat.*
The name might denote every place of mass destruction of the heathen.

Joel 3:16-17.
Notwithstanding all outward disasters concomitant with Judgment Day,
... the LORD will be the Hope of His People. (Joel 3:16)
GOD's People, Christians, will experience what they believe in.

Joel 3:18.
New Life is promised. The *Wine*, *Milk*, and *Waters* might have their *spiritual* interpretation, not only standing for a *natural* abundance.
See *Numbers 25:1-3* regarding the *Valley of Shittim* – the place of sin.
Mind, however, *John 3:16, Romans 5:8, & 1Timothy 1:15*.

> * *... since the Prophets claimed no Authority for themselves, except as far as they Faithfully executed the Office Divinely committed to them, and delivered, as it were from hand to hand, what the LORD commanded, we may hence feel assured that no human doctrines ought to be admitted into the Church. Why? Because as much as men trust in themselves, so much they take away from the Authority of GOD ...*
>
> *(John Calvin, Commentary on the Twelve Minor Prophets; Volume Second, Joel, Amos, Obadiah; Preface to the Commentary on Joel)*

> ** *Even the brutes groan under the effects of man's sins; and they seem, in their way, to cry and complain to the LORD, that without their fault they are reduced to perish by hunger and thirst, through the wickedness of their oppressor and tyrant, Man. How stupid then are sinners, who are insensible under such Judgments, or only lament with a rebellious and unhumbled sorrow!*
>
> *(Thomas Scott, The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes, Commentary on Joel)*

Further references:

Believe in the LORD your GOD, so shall ye be established;
believe His Prophets, so shall ye prosper. (2Chronicles 20:20)

Surely the LORD GOD will do nothing,
but He revealeth His Secret unto His Servants the Prophets. (Amos 3:7)

585

Q: What do the Words "*from the Foundation of the World*" mean?

A: Thanks to (the OS Windows application) good program *e-Sword*, I've found these Words six times in the Scriptures. There are more such expressions as "*from the Beginning*" for you to find & meditate on.

Let's consider only specific meanings of "*from the Foundation of the World*" in the following Scriptures. And skip other valuable issues there.

That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,
I will open My mouth in Parables; I will utter things which have been kept
Secret from the Foundation of the World. (Matthew 13:35)

– The above Scripture clarifies that every Revelation of GOD is spoken according to His Divine *Timing*.

Then shall the King say unto them on His right hand, Come,
ye Blessed of My Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you
from the Foundation of the World ... (Matthew 25:34)

– Within the meaning of our question, *Matthew 25:34* makes it clear: the LORD Creator does not depend on His Creation, the *Time* inclusive.

That the blood of all the Prophets, which was shed from the Foundation
of the World, may be required of this generation ... (Luke 11:50)

– The above depicts our human *history*, full of evil on the part of corrupted men.

For we which have believed do enter into Rest, as He said,
As I have sworn in My Wrath, if they shall enter into My Rest:
although the Works were finished from the Foundation of the World.
(Hebrews 4:3)

– All GOD's Works are Eternal, done & accomplished bypassing *Time*.

And all that dwell upon the Earth shall worship him [the beast],
whose names are not written in the Book of Life of the Lamb
slain from the Foundation of the World. (Revelation 13:8)

– The Holy Purpose of GOD has *always* been our Salvation through Christ Jesus. Again, His Plan is effected passing the *Time* by.

The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the Earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the Book of Life from the Foundation of the World, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. (Revelation 17:8)

– In *Revelation 17:8*, we again meet the Book of Life. It is written "*from the Foundation of the World*" – now, as a matter of *Eternal* Justice of the LORD.

In all the above Writings, the expression "*from the Foundation of the World*" is tied up with the Divine *Timing* & *Eternity* of our Father GOD.
You may see chapters 305 (Eternity) & 621 (GOD and Time).

Further references: *Psalms 33:11, Ecclesiastes 3:14, & John 1:1-5.*

Q: Does GOD love Satan? Back it up by Scriptures, please.

(Signed: *Christian, ex-atheist*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2021. Edited.)

A: Kindly see *Job 1:6-12 & 2:1-6.* Those spiritual conversations between our LORD GOD and Satan were not antagonistic. No hatred was (and could never be) shown by our Holy GOD, Who is *Love*. See *1John 4:8,16.*

The same you can find in the *Epistle of Jude 1:9*. The Holy Angel of GOD, led by His Holy Spirit, did not speak offensively to the evil one.

Ecclesiastes 9:4 is clear about Hope, which *every* alive person has. That should include the devil and all his puppets.

However, *Isaiah 14:15, Revelation 20:10, 22:15,* etc., foretell the future Punishment awaiting Satan and all his followers – demons & people.

Does not the devil know that? Of course, he does. But his *pride* is mightier than any reason (*Isaiah 14:13-14 & Ezekiel 28:17*). Satan remains evil, the fearful knowledge of his doom notwithstanding. He knows that his time is short. See *Revelation 12:12.*

Thank you.

586

Q: What's your interpretation of *Micah 3:9-12*?

A: Every *interpretation* stands on personal *understanding* of a matter at hand. And every *understanding* operates with the *definitions* accepted.

Speaking of Bible Study, *Micah 3:9-12* in particular, I prefer the way of "practical observations" taken by Brother *Thomas Scott* in his Commentaries to the Holy Scriptures. Thus, we can best see our Bible as pertinent *here & now*.

> *9 Hear this, I pray you, ye Heads of the House of Jacob, and Princes of the House of Israel, that abhor Judgment, and pervert all Equity.*

Since the LORD addressed the "*Heads of the House of Jacob*" and the "*Princes of the House of Israel*", the addressee is every man or woman of *Authority* who professed him (her) self a *Christian*. And here, I dare to define the "Authority" more encompassing: civil Officials, Church Ministers, and heads of families. See relevant chapters: 436 (The Shepherds), 439 (For all that are in Authority), and 502 (To a man of Authority). The "*Judgment*" obviously means that of our GOD.

> *10 They build up Zion with blood, and Jerusalem with iniquity.*

Taking "*Zion*" & "*Jerusalem*" for a Christian Institution or Institutions, we can interpret *Verse 10* as satanic attempts of some to build up Believers tolerating evil and Christian Temples on stolen money.

> *11 The Heads thereof judge for reward, and the Priests thereof teach for hire, and the Prophets thereof divine for money: yet will they lean upon the LORD, and say, Is not the LORD among us? none evil can come upon us.*

The *corruption*, which from the Beginning of Time has never had an "expiration date", is well shown. In the Churches, the *compromise* with the devil corrupts the Servants of our LORD GOD. See chapter 40 (Compromise).
In this regard, I cannot understand a "copyright" on Christian books. It is mere moneymaking. But on the printed *Holy Bible*, such a label is certainly offensive.

> *12 Therefore shall Zion for your sake be plowed as a field, and Jerusalem shall become heaps, and the Mountain of the House as the high places of the forest.*

To the above definitions, you may kindly add "*the Mountain of the House*" as standing for some Christian Temples.
The latter, within the meaning of the Scripture, are in danger of profaning.
You may see *Matthew 21:13*, *Mark 11:17*, & *Luke 19:46*.

> *... it is grievous to reflect how His Word has been disregarded, even by His Worshippers, in every age of the Church; and how much more labour, expense, and self-denial have been exercised by idolaters and the devotees of superstition, than have been observable among those, who professed to adhere to the Scriptural and Spiritual Worship of our GOD.*
>
> *(Thomas Scott,*
> *The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes, Commentary on Amos)*

Q: How to understand *Leviticus 19:19*?

A: We ought to consider this Scripture line by line.

Ye shall keep My Statutes.

We should be Obedient to all the Holy Law of GOD, the text following, in particular. Because these lines, besides their literal implementation, command us to hold out any compromise with the devil and not mix up the Holy Scriptures with the reason of the heathen world. Please see "Q & A" chapters 40 & 41.

Thou shalt not let thy cattle gender with a diverse kind:

Doing on the contrary, we may get nothing good. Besides, the Spirit reminds us of the Parallel – *Ecclesiastes 3:14*.

thou shalt not sow thy field with mingled seed:

To the previous comments, we may add the spiritual meaning. Ruling our family or whatever group of people, we must not mix the Truth and lie into one policy.
See chapters 60 (Christian Family) and once again 439 & 502 (To Authorities).

neither shall a garment mingled of linen and woollen come upon thee.

In the natural, our clothes may serve us best when not made of mixed fabrics.
In the spiritual, we cannot cover ourselves by the Truth of GOD and satanic "rules of this world". You may refer to chapter 177 (Truth and lie).

587

Q: How to properly understand the Books of *Jonah* & *Nahum*?
For by the first, the city of Nineveh was successfully led to Repentance, yet by the second, she was punished by the LORD.

A: Searching the Biblical Dictionaries and other references mentioned in our book, I've found many contradictory opinions as to the history of *Nineveh*.

Considering the sources, we see that the account given in the Books of the Prophets *Jonah* & *Nahum* could have taken place in about 800 and 600 years BC, respectively. Our Bible confirms the foundation of Nineveh by *Genesis 10:11*, the above events by the Writings of *Jonah* & *Nahum* and, further on, by the Gospels – *Matthew 12:41* & *Luke 11:32*. Please see chapter 103 (Avoid errors).
As for the correct Understanding of these Prophetic Books, we ought to see the Repentance and the Punishment described as quite *distant in time* from one another and, therefore, referred to very different people.
Kindly see chapters 163 (*National Repentance*) & 64 (*GOD's Punishment*).

Looking around, we can see our contemporaries – *Christians* and *heathen*. They also choose two different ways to their respective destiny.

Q: Please explain the value of *Numbers Chapter 19* nowadays.

A: Open your Bible on that Chapter. (Note <https://www.biblegateway.com>.)

The first ten Verses deal with the Animal Sacrifice for sin and our Purification by the ashes thereof. Lord Jesus discontinued all Animal Sacrifices by His Ultimate Substitutive Sacrifice. We, Christians, are purified by the Holy Blood of Christ. The Sacrament of Confession does that Purification nowadays.

Verses 11-22 deal with the subject of necessary Purifying after any contact with dead human bodies. In the *natural*, the body of a deceased person produces dangerous infection proportionate to the time of decay. That resembles how, in the *spiritual*, the devil in sinner may contaminate other people by sinfulness.
Here, a dead body stands for an ungodly attitude leading to eternal death.
Again, our Purification is available by means of Repentance & Confession.

In his respective comments, Brother Thomas Scott correctly stated that the Atoning Sacrifice of Christ is the only Purchase of our Purification.

588

Q: Are there in the Bible any references to *pentagram* and *hexagram*?

A: Not that I know of. But anyhow, both should not be our *idols*.
You may refer to chapter 403 (*Idolatry*) for more.
Folks might see them differently, whether a six- or five-pointed star can be chosen to represent six or five Beatitudes or evils.
Kindly search the Internet, Wikipedia inclusive, and see for yourself a lot of meanings labeled on those symbols.

I take the *pentagram* to mean the doomed kingdom of the devil, the five parts thereof being *Satan* (*John 8:44*), his *demons* (*Matthew 12:43-45*), the *antichrist* (*Daniel 7:8*), the *unbelievers* (*Psalms 14:1* & *53:1*), and persons calling themselves Believers but *compromise* with the evil one (*Philippians 3:18-19*).
This formula, as it seems to me, is quite simple, with nothing to add or take from.
The *hexagram* (again, for personal use only) I see in the Holy *Trinity* of GOD (Father, Son, and the Holy Ghost – *1John 5:7*) and the *trinity* of Man (spirit, soul, and body – *Deuteronomy 6:5*), interconnected (by Baptism) in *1John 5:8*.
You may see chapters 108 (*The trinity of man*) & 459 (*Holy Trinity of GOD*).

At the same time, observing five-pointed star(s) on the flags, state emblems, as well as orders & medals of many countries, I cannot and won't associate all that with the above evil pattern. Same as the crosses on the said stuff, far not always honor the Cross of Christ.

I am the LORD: that is My Name: and My Glory will I not give to another, neither My Praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

Q: Can you have a preference (when looking for a Wife) as a Christian?
(Christian, non-denominational.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, June 2021. Condensed.)

A: Why not? However, it is good to Prayerfully approach our LORD GOD.

... for the LORD seeth not as man seeth;
for man looketh on the outward appearance,
but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)

You may find our discussion about a Christian Family in chapter 549.

589

Q: In chapter 174, we talked about *Sobriety & Healthy Life*.
Let's discuss the problem of *alcoholism* separately.

A: You are right. The problem does exist.
It is written,

... be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit ...
(Ephesians 5:18)

Thus alcohol addiction is incompatible with the Presence of the *Holy Ghost*. It is also inconsistent with Precious Communion with our Heavenly Father.

Neither shall any Priest drink wine, when they enter into the Inner Court.
(Ezekiel 44:21)

Why ought we see *alcoholism* as the evil weapon of *Satan*? – Definitely, not only because it is so harmful to human physical health & mind.

Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging:
and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise. (Proverbs 20:1)

Whoredom and wine and new wine take away the heart. (Hosea 4:11)

The drunk folks are easy to rule into whatever *evil*, up to a murder.
On the other hand, the drunkard is permissive to be led away from doing *Good*, even saving a life.
Please, see the relevant chapter 40 (Compromise).

... they also have erred through wine, and through strong drink are
out of the Way; the Priest and the Prophet have erred through strong drink,
they are swallowed up of wine, they are out of the Way through strong drink;
they err in Vision, they stumble in Judgment. (Isaiah 28:7)

Behold, his soul which is lifted up is not upright in him: but the Just shall live
by his Faith. Yea also, because he transgresseth by wine, he is a proud man,
neither keepeth at home, who enlargeth his desire as hell, and is as death ...
(Habakkuk 2:4-5)

590

Q: How shall we explain to our children what is wrong with the *porn* other than just prohibiting the latter?

A: Good question. Any prohibition without the correct explanation might be received as our autocratic will, instead of *thus saith the LORD*. That's why, even before any forbiddance, build up a *Christian Family* in your Home. Consider relevant "Q & A" chapters 60 (Christian Family) and 499 (Christian Home). May chapter 40 (Compromise) help you too.

Mind your integrity and personal example to kids. *Mark 4:22* & *Luke 8:17*. Note the danger of the bad example condemned by *1Corinthians 8:9-11*. What can be said & done against the evil of *pornography*? Read *Matthew 4:10*. Let's also consider this spiritual dung weighed in the balance of our *conscience*. What can be put on the scalepan called "good"? Some sexual stimulation, which *Love* (unknown to pornographers) exceeds greatly. And what to place on the plate of "evil"? That sure investment into the *kingdom of Satan*, as the latter deteriorates more & more people. Doesn't it remind you of *Daniel 5:27*?

Thou art weighed in the Balances, and art found wanting. (Daniel 5:27)

Q: Can I have advice on how to break my pornography addiction? (*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: Let me firstly assume that you are a *Christian* and the Word of GOD is the Law to you. Know, therefore, porn is *evil* condemned by our Father GOD. It is written:

The light of the body is the eye: if therefore thine eye be single, thy whole body shall be full of light. But if thine eye be evil, thy whole body shall be full of darkness. If therefore the light that is in thee be darkness, how great is that darkness! (Matthew 6:22-23)

In *Matthew 28:20*, Our Lord Jesus promised to be on our side. Even so, we can stop *any* evil.

I will set no wicked thing before mine eyes: I hate the work of them that turn aside; it shall not cleave to me. (Psalms 101:3)

Turn away mine eyes from beholding vanity;
and quicken Thou me in Thy Way. (Psalms 119:37)

591

Q: What should we learn from the *Book of Haggai 1:5-7*?

A: We ought to sort out the priorities in our Life.

Verses 5 & 7 say:

Thus saith the LORD of Hosts: Consider your ways.

We are not supposed to expect the LORD's Guidance & Blessings when He is not in the first place in our Life. See chapter 15 (GOD First).

Verse 6, expanded by my notes in brackets, looks this way:

> *Ye have sown much* (in the natural & flesh), *and bring in little* (to your Righteousness & Peace with GOD); *ye eat* (to satisfy your flesh), *but ye have not enough* (in your spirit); *ye drink* (again, for the flesh), *but ye are not filled with* (the spiritual) *drink; ye clothe you* (to cover your body), *but there is none warm* (for your spirit remains naked); *and he that earneth wages* (big or small) *earneth wages to put it into a bag with holes* (in the long run, you lose because of robbing the LORD – *Malachi 3:8-11*).

In his Commentaries on the *Book of Haggai*, Brother Thomas Scott wrote:

> *Providential Dispensations are seldom interpreted properly, without a careful attention to the Word of GOD: thus many conclude that poverty or trouble excuses them from Duty, when indeed it is intended to rebuke their negligence ... Those who plead, that they cannot at present afford to contribute to Pious or Charitable Designs, often lavish in needless expenses on their tables, houses, furniture, apparel, or decorations, ten times as much as was expected from them for far better purposes: and few are at all aware how large a fund frugality and self-denial might raise, even from persons of moderate incomes, for Good Works, without the least injury to them or their families ... if we attend to His Word, consult His Ministers, enquire of Him in Prayer, and examine ourselves, we shall not fail to find out the Cause. Perhaps some Duty is neglected, the Payment of some Vow is postponed, or some worldly object is idolized. When this discovery is made, we should without delay amend what has been amiss ...*

Let's also see our point in the Verses preceding those we considered above –

2 Thus speaketh the LORD of Hosts, saying, This people say, The time is not come, the time that the LORD's House should be built. 3 Then came the Word of the LORD by Haggai the Prophet, saying, 4 Is it time for you, O ye, to dwell in your cieled houses, and this House lie waste? 5 Now therefore thus saith the LORD of Hosts; Consider your ways.

Did the LORD speak only about rebuilding His Sanctuary ruined by the heathen? Our Heavenly Father has been ever teaching us, His People, to build another, even Greater Temple – His Abode in our hearts. *1Corinthians 3:16-17; 6:19;* and *2Corinthians 6:16*. See chapter 746 (The True Treasures).

Further references: *Psalms 5:3* – The first thing in the morning.
Psalms 84:10 – Christian Living.
Psalms 119:16,23 – The Christian Mind.
Ezekiel 14:6 – Repentance.
Matthew 6:33 & Luke 12:31 – The priority.
Mark 4:24, 10:28-30; & Luke 18:28-30 – A demerit.
Hebrews 12:1-2 – Lay aside every weight.

Q: *Deuteronomy 18:10*. Why is an *observer of times* seen as being sinful? The *observer of times* is what we call a *historian*.
Q: Why is this seen as a sin, according to Christian lore?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: It is written,

10 There shall not be found among you any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch, 11 Or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer. 12 For all that do these things are an abomination unto the LORD: and because of these abominations the LORD thy GOD doth drive them out from before thee. 13 Thou shalt be Perfect with the LORD thy GOD.
(Deuteronomy 18:10-13)

You are welcome to visit <*https://www.biblegateway.com*> and see different translations (in particular, *Amplified Bible & Expanded Bible*), which have some other variants for "an observer of times".
Please see "Q & A" chapters 103 (Avoid errors), 118 (Different translations), and the Index for *History*. Kindly note that the above Scripture speaks about all *liars*, regardless of how they may be named.

592

Q: How would you explain *Zechariah 1:18-21*?

A: Behold,

18 Then lifted I up mine eyes, and saw, and behold four horns.
19 And I said unto the Angel that talked with me, What be these? And he answered me, These are the horns which have scattered Judah, Israel, and Jerusalem. 20 And the LORD shewed me Four Carpenters. 21 Then said I, What come these to do? And he spake, saying, These are the horns which have scattered Judah, so that no man did lift up his head: but these are come to fray them, to cast out the horns of the Gentiles, which lifted up their horn over the land of Judah to scatter it. (Zechariah 1:18-21)

In those "*four horns,*" I can see the human powers of Satan mustered from the "four winds", i.e., all the unbelieving world, against GOD's People Christians. Please see chapter 574, in which we considered *four* well-known satanic powers.

Behold, they shall surely gather together, but not by Me:
whosoever shall gather together against thee shall fall for thy sake.
Behold, I have created the Smith that bloweth the Coals in the Fire,
and that bringeth forth an Instrument for His Work; and I have created
the Waster to destroy. No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper;
and every tongue that shall rise against thee in judgment thou shalt condemn.
This is the Heritage of the Servants of the LORD,
and their Righteousness is of Me, saith the LORD. (Isaiah 54:15-17)

By *Zechariah 1:21* (as well as so many other Scriptures), the Victory is ours. The "*Four Carpenters*" might stand for the True Servants of GOD, also from all the World, who follow His Holy Will, in particular, the Great Commission. In the Bible, *four* (same as *three*, *seven*, *ten*, *twelve*, &c., subject to the respective context) denotes *fullness* or *completeness*. Note, "*Carpenters*", not "*Warriors*".

For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities,
against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world,
against spiritual wickedness in high places. (Ephesians 6:12)

I cannot insist that the above explanations are the only correct ones. No. As I've pointed out more than once before, there are many Scriptures in the Holy Bible, which presume several different, yet not conflicting interpretations.

593

Q: It is written:

Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt Good manners.
(1Corinthians15:33)

Does it mean that Christians should totally avoid every possible contact with *unbelieving* folks for fear of some *spiritual infection*?

A: No, it does not. Kindly note chapters 24 (The Will of GOD for us) & 43 (The Twelfth Commandment).
The Amplified Version runs *1Corinthians 15:33* this way:

Do not be so deceived and misled! Evil companionships (communion, associations) corrupt and deprave good manners and morals and character.

Living in the world, we do not *belong* thereto.
In our "Q & A", see chapters 241 (The Salt) & 287 (We are not of the world).

... uncleanness was more easily communicated than Holiness ... evil communications corrupt Good manners ; and yet the company of Saints has no natural efficacy to sanctify : for diseases are often infectious, but Health cannot be imparted in the same way ... That thing, which is of itself Good, cannot make another thing so ; and therefore they ought not to justify themselves by their Sacrifices and Ceremonies : but contrary he that is unclean and not Pure of heart, doth corrupt those things, and make them detestable to GOD, which else are Good and Godly ...

(Thomas Scott,
The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes, Commentary on Haggai)

As for how to avoid "*evil communications*", I can speak out of the experience: avoid *evil* by doing *Good*. Please, see chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry).
When I plan to attend the Church Service or Small Group, there remains no time for other (worldly, secondary) matters. First things – first.
In some Churches, Pastors keep Ministers so busy that free time is a luxury. Those Shepherds are to be reminded of our Family needs – the second to none.
In a lot of companies, I find myself wishing to run away – so dull they are. The same way those folks might think about me. How come? – We have no common issues to discuss. To them I am a boring one interested in the Word of GOD only.

So, are there any worthy & useful conversations outside a Church?
– Well, there are. Note chapter 199 (Evangelizing).

See *Psalms 1:1-3, 119:74; Malachi 3:16; & Hebrews 3:13, 10:25* – Communion.
Haggai 2:12-14 – The infection of corruption.

Q: (1) I understand that we are all sinners, but certainly, some sins are heavier than others. (?)
Q: (2) So, under what circumstances will God forgive sins?
Q: (3) What if you are unaware of or cannot recall a specific sin and, therefore, cannot repent of it?
Q: (4) Some sins are intentionally committed. Most of us commit greed, pride, gluttony, sloth, etc., knowing well what we do. What about all that?
Q: (5) How to repent of something that will, almost certainly, continue?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: This topic is relevant to the previous one and thus well sits in this chapter.
(1) That's correct. *Romans 3:23* & *1John 5:16*.
(2) It is *sincere* Repentance (not what you mentioned in your question 5. *Luke 15:20*. Kindly see "Repentance" in the Index section.
(3) How is it a sin if you & I are *unaware* of what we do? –
Well, that awareness depends on how close we keep to the Holy Ghost.
(4) Even intentionally committed sins can be repented of and forgiven.
See the references in question 2.
(5) In that case, you undoubtedly write about being lost to a *sinful attitude*.

For it is impossible for those who were once Enlightened, and have tasted
of the Heavenly Gift, and were made Partakers of the Holy Ghost,
and have tasted the Good Word of GOD, and the Powers of the World to come,
if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto Repentance;
seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of GOD afresh,
and put Him to an open shame. (Hebrews 6:4-6)

For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the Knowledge of the Truth,
there remaineth no more Sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful looking for
of Judgment and Fiery Indignation, which shall devour the adversaries ...
who hath trodden under foot the Son of GOD, and hath counted
the Blood of the Covenant, wherewith he was Sanctified, an unholy thing,
and hath done despite unto the Spirit of Grace ... (Hebrews 10:26-31)

594

Q: Reading *Zechariah Chapters 5 & 6*, one can find the important Prophecies there. Now, speaking of our *following* the Word of GOD, what would you say about those particular Scriptures?

A: *Chapters 5 & 6* of the Book of Prophet *Zechariah*, as well as the rest of the Bible, bless a reader with the Truth of GOD, the Lesson, the Warning, and the Guidance. Let's talk about the Prophecies. Please have your Bible ready at hand and, if possible, more than one Version thereof. You may find *https://www.biblegateway.com/versions/Expanded-Bible-EXB/* very helpful. But I prefer *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*.

Zechariah 5:1-4. The Vision of a Flying Scroll.

> *... This is the curse that goeth forth over the face of the whole Earth: for every one that stealeth shall be cut off as on this side according to it; and every one that sweareth shall be cut off as on that side according to it. I will bring it forth, saith the LORD of Hosts, and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by My Name: and it shall remain in the midst of his house, and shall consume it with the timber thereof and the stones thereof. (Zechariah 5:3-4)*

We are reminded of the *Third* & *Eighth* Commandments. Please, refer to chapters 22 & 127 of this book. Do you agree that all humankind could have been happy if only *evil tongue* and *stealing* had been abolished? Note *Zechariah 8:16-17*.

Zechariah 5:5-11. The Vision of a Woman in a Basket.

> *This is an ephah that goeth forth ... This is their resemblance through all the Earth ... there was lifted up a talent of lead: and this is a woman that sitteth in the midst of the ephah ... This is wickedness. ... and he cast the weight of lead upon the mouth thereof ... and they lifted up the ephah between the Earth and the Heaven ... To build it an house in the land of Shinar: and it shall be established, and set there upon her own base.*

That *ephah* might stand for a measure and *a woman* for humanity.
Once *this is* wickedness, *Ezekiel 45:10* is not complied with by people.
So, the *dishonesty* is to be removed from the People of GOD.
Thus the second Vision logically continued and is connected to the first one.

Zechariah 6:1-8. The Vision of Four Chariots.

> *... there came Four Chariots out from between Two Mountains; and the Mountains were mountains of brass. In the First Chariot were red horses; and in the Second Chariot black horses; And in the Third Chariot white horses; and in the Fourth Chariot grisled and bay horses ... These are the Four Spirits of the Heavens, which go forth from standing before the LORD of all the Earth. The black horses which are therein go forth into the north country; and the white go forth after them; and the grisled go forth toward the south country. And the bay went forth, and sought to go that they might walk to and fro through the Earth: and he said, Get you hence, walk to and fro through the Earth. So they walked to and fro through the Earth. Then cried he upon me, and spake unto me, saying, Behold, these that go toward the north country have quieted My Spirit in the north country.*

In principle, the above Scripture is all about the Judgment of the LORD, so much resembling *Revelation 6:2-8*. The Chariots of GOD *walk to and fro through the Earth*. They visit our countries now & again as per the Harvest Law.
Reading contradicting one another commentaries, I dare to disagree only with the Teachers who could not forget ancient Babylon, Chaldea, Macedonia, etc. The Written Word of our Heavenly Father is not an archive.

> *Let us then know that all fortuitous events, as they are called by the unbelieving, are GOD's Chariots, are His Messengers, who declare and proclaim what was before concealed from us.*
>
> *(John Calvin, Commentary on the Twelve Minor Prophets ...)*

Q: How do you interpret *Deuteronomy 22:5*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: It is written:

> *The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman's garment: for all that do so are abomination unto the LORD thy GOD. (Deuteronomy 22:5)*

Genesis 1:27 & 5:2 underlined that Man & Woman – both made by One GOD and in His Image & Likeness – were called differently as different they were. Even so, their garment has ever been a Sign of peculiar & unequal duties in a family and society. We should remember that. Kindly read *Proverbs 31:10-31*.

595

Q: I'm a *Small Group Leader*. I've found myself among quite *impassive* folks. They call themselves Christians but show very little interest in Bible Study and come to our Group meetings just to have the *routine* thing done. The same they do attending the Church Services.
Have you any suggestions as to how to wake them up?

A: It is written,

... Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you. For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if he ask a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent? Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children: how much more shall your Heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask Him? (Luke 11:9-13)

So, take your stand on this Scripture and start from the Top. *Jeremiah 33:3*.
Discuss the matter with other Group Leaders, if any, and your Pastor (Minister). The last is a *Shepherd* and, as such, should know his Flock and preach to them accordingly from the Pulpit. *Matthew 20:25-28, Mark 10:42-45, & John 10:14*.
Don't be so surprised to see your Group Members *not ready* for a Session.
You can easily find that out by listening to *what* they chat about with one another "to kill time" before the Service. If they kindly come.
Did they read and meditate on the Scripture or the subject you proposed at the last Session? Otherwise, in your Group, *Matthew 18:20* is not followed.

Come to your Group to *learn*, not only teach. From experience, I can frankly say that even in the "*impassive*" Groups, the Holy Spirit continued to teach *me* as He opened *my* understanding to some aspect of this or that Scripture not yet opened to or considered by *me*. Mind *1John 2:27*.
Little by little, try to know your Group Members. Ask them simple questions about their personal Bible Study at the moment. What is being read, are there any "hard" Verses, questions, etc.? Some will tell you they "have no time". So ask about their occupation, problems, and any help required. Do they have time for *TV*? What is a favorite program? Thus you may know their priorities.

See "Q & A" chapters 47, 286, 413, and 445.
You may visit <*http://www.smallgroupchurches.com*>.

596

Q: In chapter 27, you wrote about *widowhood* and, if I'm not much mistaken, you sympathize and support it.
In the same chapter, you mentioned a Christian movie, "*Love comes softly*".
There, one good thought is spoken up, namely: *the child needs a mother*.
A man who lost his wife said so to a woman who lost her husband.
Later on, the *second* marriage was proposed and accepted.
So, the question is: do you agree with such an argument and solution?

A: Regarding the argument, the first Scripture which crossed my mind is *Isaiah 41:10*. Written to encourage the ancient People of GOD. These Words stand on and are needful in many walks of life, Christian Family inclusive.

Fear thou not; for I am with thee: be not dismayed; for I am thy GOD:
I will strengthen thee; Yea, I will help thee; Yea, I will uphold thee
with the Right Hand of My Righteousness. (Isaiah 41:10)

Yes, I agree with the reasoning in your question. But only in the Light of the above Scripture. The Scripture (and the rest of the Bible) requires a definite amount of Faith to be accepted not as some "nice to hear" Preaching but, rather, True Guidance. Kindly read *Psalms 55:22*.

Can we welcome more of the *Holy Spirit of GOD* in our hearts when (for some time, not forever) our Christian spouses left us (along with World) to live with Him? Cannot? Well, a second marriage is prohibited nowhere in the Written Word of GOD. Our Heavenly Father will understand our weakness. See *Psalms 103:14*. Please, read chapter 307 (*Heavenly Love*).

Q: (1) Who is right in this situation?
Q: (2) Wives should submit to husbands. Should a wife quit her career dreams because it intimidates a husband's role as a protector, or ought a husband to love his wife and support her in reaching her aspiration?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: (1) From *my* Christian viewpoint, in your example, nobody is right.
(2) Please read the last paragraph of chapter 85 (The right education).
If a woman has "career dreams", she should think twice before building up a family and giving birth to kids. That includes a full-time Christian Ministry, which is her following not dreams but the Holy Will of GOD.

597

Q: Let's clarify the meaning of the Words,
"*every family apart, and their wives apart*" in *Zechariah 12:12-14*.

A: It is written:

And the land shall mourn, every family apart; the family of the house of David apart, and their wives apart; the family of the house of Nathan apart, and their wives apart; the family of the house of Levi apart, and their wives apart; the family of Shimei apart, and their wives apart; All the families that remain, every family apart, and their wives apart. (Zechariah 12:12-14)

The above Scripture (better grasped starting from *Verse 10*) speaks about the Repentance the People of GOD (whether of the days of old, or at our time, or future generations) Mercifully are blessed with by the LORD, our GOD.

Why "*every family apart*"? Because the Repentance, being a personal matter, yet is a burden & Responsibility of *Men* – the spiritual Shepherds of their families.

Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved, and thy house. (Acts 16:31). See also *Acts 11:14*

And why "*their wives apart*"? Because Oneness of Husband & Wife (as per *Genesis 2:24*) far not always might be found in Christian Families, much less in the rest of the World. You may consider chapters 60, 549, and 626 of this book.

Hear, O Israel: The LORD our GOD is One LORD: And thou shalt love the LORD thy GOD with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. And these Words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart. And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. And thou shalt bind them for a Sign upon thine hand, and they shall be as Frontlets between thine eyes. And thou shalt write them upon the posts of thy house, and on thy gates. (Deuteronomy 6:4-9)

Kindly refer to *John Calvin, Commentary on the Twelve Minor Prophets*
Thomas Scott, The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes
Adam Clarke, The Holy Bible with a Commentary
E.W. Bullinger, The Companion Bible

598

Q: Are you aware that chapter 541 conflicts with so many translations of *Matthew 2:1,7,16,* as well as commentaries regarding those *Wise men*?

A: I am. It is written:

> *1 Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the King, behold, there came Wise men from the east to Jerusalem,*
> *2 Saying, Where is He that is born King of the Jews? For we have seen His Star in the east, and are come to worship Him. (Matthew 2:1-2)*

The translations you mentioned belie the *Spirit* of the Word of GOD.

I resolutely reject the idea that *astronomy*, *astrology*, *magic*, or those three together were of any help to those men. How could our Scriptures have called them *Wise* if the first of those "skills" is well under the Wisdom of LORD GOD *(Genesis 1:14-18 & Psalms 147:4*), the second is evil & absurd according to *Isaiah 47:12-14,* and the third is worth of death per *Leviticus 20:27*?

By *Brother B. I. Gladkov,* the author of Russian "*Commentaries to the Gospels*",

> "... there are two questions here: why those gentile scientists, people of another country, culture, and beliefs should have taken that long and dangerous journey to worship a new-born child, and how had they come to that sure Knowledge of a King Worthy of all those risks? And the only possible answers are the *Revelation from GOD* given unto those ready to believe, and *His Holy Will* for their trip to be safe and Worship Acceptable."
> (My translation.)

Q: How were certain moments in the Bible recorded if no one was there?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Please, note that "no one" does not include the Holy Spirit of Omnipresent LORD GOD.

Knowing this first,
that no Prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation.
For the Prophecy came not in old time by the will of man:
but Holy Men of GOD spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.
(2Peter 1:20-21)

599

Q: Kindly explain the argument of John the Baptist in *Matthew 3:9.*

A: It is written:

> *And think not to say within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that GOD is Able of these stones to raise up Children unto Abraham. (Matthew 3:9)* – See the same in *Luke 3:8.*

In his relevant comments, Brother William Barclay wrote,

> *To the Jew Abraham was unique. So unique was he in his Goodness and in his Favour with GOD, that his Merits sufficed not only for himself but for all his descendants also. He had built up a 'Treasury of Merit' which not all the claims and needs of his descendants could exhaust. So the Jews believed that a Jew simply because he was a Jew, and not for any merits of his own, was safe in the Life to come.*

In chapter 44, we talked about Blessings and curses. The Blessing inherited from *Saint Abraham* was Great indeed. The LORD's Statement in *Exodus 34:6-7* confirms that. But the same Scripture teaches about inherited curses and the possibility of becoming the source thereof.

Therefore, having inherited Blessings from Godly ancestors, one can stop them dead and generate curses for his (her) descendants.

But Praise to Almighty GOD, our Father, Who made possible His Great Salvation even to sinners of *stony* hearts. Mind the Blessed example of Apostle Paul.

See parallel chapters 59 (Chosen People of GOD), 77 (The Way of Salvation), and 308 (Salvation).

For ye are all the Children of GOD by Faith in Christ Jesus.
For as many of you as have been baptized into Christ have put on Christ.
There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for ye are all One in Christ Jesus. And if ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's Seed, and Heirs according to the Promise.
(Galatians 3:26-29)

600

Q: Why *Jesus* needed Baptism per *Matthew 3:13-17*?

A: Let's study *Matthew 3:13-17* together.
The Parallels are *Mark 1:9-11, Luke 3:21-23, & John 1:29-34*.

> *13 Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him.*

Lord Jesus had been given the Divine Knowledge of being the *Christ* (*Messiah*)*, as His Baptism confirmed. See *Matthew 3:16-17*.
Most of the Great Knowledge due to God Son, before His Mission, our Lord had been deprived of. Note the *Book of Hebrews, Chapter 2*.
Our Water Baptism unto Righteousness was certainly not needful unto Him, the Sinless Man, the Righteous One, born of the Holy Ghost. What He needed was the Mighty Confirmation & Encouragement from His Heavenly Father, even the Words spoken in *Matthew 3:17*.

* By *Charles Buck, A Theological Dictionary (1826),*
Messiah signifies Anointed, the Title given by way of Eminence to our Saviour; meaning the same in Hebrew as Christ in Greek, and alludes to the Authority He had to assume the characters of Prophet, Priest, and King, and that of Saviour of the World ...

> *14 But John forbad Him, saying, I have need to be baptized of Thee, and comest Thou to me?*

John, obviously knowing *Who* Jesus was (*John 1:29-31*), did not compulsorily understand those Intentions of Father GOD. See *Isaiah 55:8*.

> *15 And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all Righteousness. Then he suffered Him.*

We all need the Revelation Knowledge from our LORD GOD. Especially, it is the Knowledge of *Righteousness* – what is Right and what is wrong in His Eyes – which must determine our further Right Standing with Heavenly Father.
For the only Righteousness is the one defined & made known by the LORD. Kindly note the connection of *Isaiah 64:6* & *Jeremiah 23:6*.
It is a Pure Joy for every Christian to hear from the LORD, our Teacher, again & again. And that we need for a Good Purpose of Walking in His Spirit on & on.

Here is the Blessed Fruit of our Communion with Father GOD.

> *16 And Jesus, when He was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the Heavens were opened unto Him, and He saw the Spirit of GOD descending like a dove, and lighting upon Him: 17 And lo, a Voice from Heaven, saying, This is My Beloved Son, in Whom I am Well Pleased.*

So, Jesus' Walking in the Holy Spirit, along with His Messianic Ministry, started from that moment forward.

> *... And the Spirit of the LORD shall rest upon Him, the Spirit of Wisdom and Understanding, the Spirit of Counsel and Might, the Spirit of Knowledge and of the Fear of the LORD; and shall make Him of Quick Understanding in the Fear of the LORD: and He shall not judge after the sight of His eyes, neither reprove after the hearing of His ears: but with Righteousness shall He judge the Poor, and reprove with Equity for the Meek of the Earth: and He shall smite the Earth with the Rod of His Mouth, and with the Breath of His Lips shall He slay the wicked. (Isaiah 11:2-4)*

Further references: *Psalms 2:7-9 – Thou art My Son ...*
Isaiah 42:1 – Behold My Servant, Whom I uphold ...
Isaiah 53:11-12 – My Righteous Servant ...
Romans 6:4 – Baptism unto death ...

Q: Why did God get Mary pregnant without consent?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: It is written,

... that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost.
And she shall bring forth a son, and thou shalt call His Name JESUS:
for He shall save His People from their sins. (Matthew 1:20-21)

... The Holy Ghost shall come upon thee, and the Power of the Highest
shall overshadow thee: therefore also that Holy thing which shall be born of thee
shall be called the Son of GOD. (Luke 1:35)

Through Brother Matthew, the Spirit of GOD explains the Holiness of Jesus and His Ultimate Sacrifice, which by the Wisdom, Justice, and the Holy Will of GOD was required for our Salvation. And by the Words of Brother Luke, the Holy Ghost confirmed how Eternal God Son was sent to us in the human body.

601

Q: It is written,

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. (Matthew 4:1)

The same is run by *Mark 1:12* & *Luke 4:1*.
The question is: what was that *temptation* for?

A: By Brother Barclay, the word "tempted" means "tested" in the Greek Text. We are *tested* by the LORD, Who allows some devilish temptations (the wicked attempts to make us deviate from the Right Way) to enter our everyday life. As William Barclay noticed, the Test had been right after *Baptism*. That did not happen only to the Man Christ Jesus – we all are expected to prove our Righteousness. See *Exodus 16:4 & Deuteronomy 8:2*.

... Hezekiah prospered in all his works. Howbeit in the business of the Ambassadors of the Princes of Babylon, who sent unto him to enquire of the wonder that was done in the land, GOD left him, to try him, that He might know all that was in his heart. (2Chronicles 32:30-31)

To be under the Supervision of our Heavenly Father doesn't mean only His day & night Protection. He may & does test & train us. *1Corinthians 10:13.* See parallel chapters 36, 184, 292, & 654.

Q: What exactly was Satan tempting Jesus with in the desert?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: Please open the Bible on *The Gospel according to St. Matthew, Chapter 4*.
Verses 2-3 – "*command that these stones be made bread"* – it shows the provocation, even pushing the natural food to get above the spiritual one.
Verse 4 – the Lord rejects that provocation.
Verses 5-6 – "*cast thyself down: for it is written ...* " – the devil tempts Lord Jesus (& us) to misuse the (follow the misused) Written Word of GOD.
Verse 7 – rejects that provocation and teaches us to use the Word rightly.
Verses 8-9 – "All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me." – Satan tries to lie the Lord (& us) into betraying the LORD. Mind *Verses 10-11*.
Please note that *Psalms 139:23-24* is a good Prayer for the Guidance of our Heavenly Father, and *1John 5:18* is the desired result.

602

Q: Brother, at our Small Group meeting, we passed *Matthew 5:1-16* in one session. *Verses 4 & 5* were unclear only to me, so I didn't want to interrupt the studying with my questions. Could you please explain these Verses?

A: What you've covered in one session is quite a race. However, I've seen even "faster" Groups. And have to say that, as far as our Bible is concerned, *speed* and *Study* are reversely proportionate. But back to the question.

1. It is written,

Blessed are they that mourn: for they shall be comforted. (Matthew 5:4)

In Mourning, the first point is *Repentance* (chapter 155), even the Repentance indeed, to be proved by resolute Life-turning, not some pathetic weeping around.

... turn ye even to Me with all your heart, and with Fasting, and with Weeping, and with Mourning: And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the LORD your GOD: for He is Gracious and Merciful, slow to anger, and of Great Kindness, and repenteth Him of the evil. (Joel 2:12-13)

The second point is *Intercession*. See chapters 112 & 426.

> *... only begin and be a Christian, and you will soon learn what Mourning means. If you cannot do better, take a Wife, and settle yourself, and make a living in Faith, so that you love the Word of GOD and do what belongs to your Calling ; then you will soon learn, both from neighbors and in your own house, that things will not go as you would like, and you will be everywhere hindered and hedged so that you will get enough to suffer and must see what will make you sad at heart ... But Christians have this Advantage, that although they mourn they shall be comforted and be blessed both here and there ... We read of a case of this kind in the Prophecy of Ezekiel, Chapter Nine, how GOD sent Six Men with deadly Weapons to the City of Jerusalem. But He commissioned one among them to go through the midst of the City with "a writer's inkhorn by his side," to "set a Mark upon the foreheads of the Men that sigh and that cry for all the abominations that be done in the midst thereof". Those thus marked were to remain Alive, but the rest were all to be slain ...*
>
> *(Martin Luther, Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount, pp 36-38)*

2. It is written,

Blessed are the Meek: for they shall inherit the Earth. (Matthew 5:5)

The Meek ones cannot be ambitious, angry, envious, greedy, proud, self-pitying, etc., thus spiritually marred by the devil.
The Meekness Lord Jesus spoke about had nothing to do with *cowardice* too. It comes with *Peace* based upon *Trust* in Promised Backup from Almighty GOD.

Now, how does it mean, "*... they shall inherit the Earth.*"? Well, we ought to forget all worldly reasons. Throughout the Holy Scriptures, we ought to see spiritual points first. Thus to "*inherit the Earth*" means becoming the Rightful Owners, the last guaranteed by the Written Word of GOD, all existing spiritual powers being under.

> *Therefore choose one of the two, whichever you please: either to live with Meekness and Patience among the people and keep what you have with Peace and a Good Conscience, or with racket and rumpus to lose your own, and besides have no Peace. For this is settled, the Meek shall inherit the Earth. (Martin Luther, Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount, p.45)*

Q: (1) Does God not trust Jesus? The Bible says that God & Jesus are One, and so is the Holy Spirit and that Jesus has the Knowledge of the Father. So, He knows everything too (if that's not true, please, correct me).
Q: (2) But Jesus also says that He does not know the Day & Time of the Second Coming. So, if He knows everything but does not know that, it alludes to some form of distrust. What do you think?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: (1) To what you said, "Jesus has the Knowledge of the Father. So, He knows everything too ...", I propose a small correction: *that* kind of Knowledge has limits too.
(2) If Lord Jesus says (as you put it), "... He does not know the Day & time of the Second Coming.", it does not presume any "distrust" within the Holy Trinity of GOD. No. It meant that such information was not necessary to our Lord (at least, at the time of His Ministry) to keep it Secret from His Disciples. Revelations have their Timing (*Ecclesiastes 3:1-8* & *John 16:12*).
Read *Sirach 3:21-23* quoted at the end of chapters 569 & 669.
You may also note *Deuteronomy 29:29*.
Thank you.

603

Q: The question is about *Matthew 5:9-12*. Once we stand for *Peace* & *Righteousness*, why should any *persecutions* be expected?

A: Actually, it is hard to find anybody who does not want "peace" or to have everything "right" around. The problem is in human *minds,* where these two concepts are defined so differently. See chapters 36 & 234.

The *Christian* mind is ruled by the heart, where the Holy Ghost dwells, versus the *atheistic* mind, directed by the devil.

In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the Image of GOD, should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:4)

As for the *persecutions* a Christian might happen to face, they (instigated by Satan) are also very different – from the loneliness of a kid in a public school to the stage of execution in ripe years. Please have a look at chapter 287.

Read about the Peace of GOD in *Isaiah 26:3, 26:12, 51:7, & 54:10.*

Q: How to *let* the Peace of Christ rule in your hearts (*Colossians 3:15*)?
(*https://www.gotquestions.org,* January 2021.)

A: It is written:

... let the Peace of GOD rule in your hearts,
to the which also ye are called in One Body; and be ye Thankful.
Let the Word of Christ dwell in you richly in all Wisdom ...
(Colossians 3:15-16)

Please see this Parallel –

Peace I leave with you, My Peace I give unto you:
not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled,
neither let it be afraid. (John 14:27)

Kindly read parallel chapters 53 & 678 (The Peace of GOD).
Even so, let us value in our hearts that Peace, which only Father GOD can bless us with. It comes with the Precious indwelling of His Holy Spirit (of Love, Faith, Hope, Peace, Knowledge, Understanding, Wisdom). To *let* Him rule, we ought to spend more time with GOD by Communion with Him and following Him.

604

Q: Our question is about *Matthew 5:20*. Why the righteousness of those nearly two-thousand-years-dead people was set as the level for us to surpass?

A: Our Lord Jesus said:

> *Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the Prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For Verily I say unto you, Till Heaven and Earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least Commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of Heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called Great in the Kingdom of Heaven. For I say unto you, that except your Righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.*
>
> *(Matthew 5:17-20)*

There & then, in reality, those Teachers of the Law were the first who violated it.

Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written,
This people honoureth Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me.
Howbeit in vain do they worship Me,
teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. (Mark 7:6-7)

As for their being *dead*, I would call them very much *alive*, seeing how one *denomination* strongly opposes another to further the split of the Body of Christ. Years ago, I visited two *Baptist* Congregations, one after another. Pastors did not object to my *financial* Offerings but forbade me to join their Small Groups once they had heard that I had come from the *Pentecostal* Church. No comments.

In the context of *Matthew 5:17-20, Verse 20* is quite outstanding:

... except your Righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the Scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the Kingdom of Heaven.

The Lord has brought to Light two attitudes. First, the Right-standing before LORD GOD with a Pure heart (*Matthew 5:8*). Second, the right-standing in the eyes of men, which is hypocrisy. We should “exceed” by seeking the first, not the second, and nothing in between those two. The borderline is thin. *Genesis 1:4*.

605

Q: Why does Jesus equal *anger* to *murder* in *Matthew 5:22*?

A: We have already discussed the subject "*hatred* & *murder*" in chapter 251 – the Teaching of *1John 3:15*. It is linked up with *Matthew 5:22*.

It is written,

> *21 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the Judgment: 22 But I say unto you*, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the Judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, "raca", shall be in danger of the Council: but whosoever shall say, "thou fool", shall be in danger of hell Fire.*
> *23 Therefore if thou bring thy Gift to the Altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath ought against thee; 24 Leave there thy Gift before the Altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother**, and then come and offer thy Gift. (Matthew 5:21-24)*

* These Words of the Lord we discussed in chapter 145 (*But I say unto you* ...).
** Please, see the story told by *Genesis 4:3-8*.

Let's try to answer our question – *the reason why* – considering the Lord's Words "*without a cause*" – that is, without due regard to the rational motive.
In his respective comments, Brother *Martin Luther* well wrote:

"*... hate the cause, yet love the person ...*"

So, the point we have come to is the Spirit War, right?
To hate *without a cause* means nothing but to be spiritually blind (or short-sighted, you pick). Hatred (anger, enmity, contempt, revenge, &c.) is the reaction stimulating its outward expression (manifestation, demonstration) and is caused by a demonic infection. And that, of course, if such an infection is there at all, speaking of the person being hated. As for the angry person, his (her) heart, obviously, has been corrupted (by anger).

We know that we have passed from death unto Life,
because we love the Brethren. He that loveth not his Brother abideth in death.
Whosoever hateth his Brother is a murderer: and ye know
that no murderer hath Eternal Life abiding in him. (1John 3:14-15)

Anyway, *anger* is the acquired demonic response to everything (Good or bad, Right or wrong), which doesn't correspond to the angry person's standards. Therefore, *Matthew 5:22* warns us not only about *anger* but *criticism* as well.

... let every man be swift to hear, slow to speak, slow to wrath.
For the wrath of man worketh not the Righteousness of GOD. (James 1:19-20)

The Expanded Bible runs *Matthew 5:22* as follows –

> *But I tell you, if you are [everyone who is] angry with a brother or sister, you will be judged [subject to Judgment]. If you say [whoever says] bad things ["Fool!"; Raca – an Aramaic term of derision] to a brother or sister, you will be judged [subject or liable to judgment] by the Council [Sanhedrin]. And if you call someone a fool [idiot; moron], you will be in danger of the Fire of hell [Gehenna; a valley outside of Jerusalem where in the Old Testament period children were sacrificed to a pagan god; later used as a burning trash heap; a metaphor for hell].*

Brother *Thomas Scott* commented it this way:

> *We ought to be angry at sin in ourselves and others, and to shew our disapprobation of it, according to our relation to the offender: we should seek his humiliation and reformation by proper means; but not his hurt in any respect, at least not in our private capacity ...*
>
> *(Thomas Scott, The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes ...)*

In chapter 424, we spoke about "*the sacrifice of fools*", as per *Ecclesiastes 5:1*. Within the meaning of the present conversation, *Matthew 5:23-24* is well relevant to that discussion too.

> *O LORD, open thou my lips; and my mouth shall shew forth Thy Praise.*
> *For Thou desirest not Sacrifice; else would I give it: Thou delightest not in Burnt Offering. The Sacrifices of GOD are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O GOD, Thou wilt not despise. (Psalms 51:15-17)*

For I desired Mercy, and not Sacrifice;
and the Knowledge of GOD more than Burnt Offerings. (Hosea 6:6)

See parallel chapters 132 (How to tame a tongue?), 141 (The evil of criticism), 293 (The evil of anger), & 524 (Reconciliation).

606

Q: What would you suggest to *Christian* grandparents who are concerned about the way their *Christian* children build up their own families and rear kids?

A: Hopefully, the *children* we talk about are not abusive & cruel in their home. Otherwise, calling the last *Christians* would be incorrect.

The evils* excluded, I would suggest to grandparents *pray* more for those young families. The *Lord's Prayer* is a good choice. Please see chapter 112.

* See all chapters *Spirit War* in the *Contents*.

Standing on *Genesis 2:24*, grandparents are not supposed to step in where they are not asked to. The time of educating the little ones is up.

On the other hand, are we, grandparents, so learned from GOD that our children – fathers & mothers themselves – are willing to learn from (GOD via) us?

So, what those *concerns* are all about? To argue about design & fashion is stupid.

As for any disagreements where Christian matters are involved, I don't know a better way of a solution than a *Small Group*, which the above parents & children might do well to form themselves. See *Matthew 18:20*. Because, once two parties are Christians, they are welcome to the best possible Arbitrator in whatever disputable business – our Father GOD. *Jeremiah 33:3*. Please also see parallel chapter 505 (Grandparents).

Q: I have an unequally yoked marriage. When I was an unbeliever, I married an atheist. I've since come to believe in God and devote my Life to Him. My husband has not. He views the Church and God as an affair and that I am not loyal. If I am to surrender or submit to my husband (*1Peter 3:1-6*), how can I practice Faith and show him Christ through my actions and also obey him when he wants me to stop going to the Church or pushes me away every time I want to talk about anything remotely Christian?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: One thing is missing in your good letter – whether you have children. Your Husband misunderstands you. So, do your best to let him know the difference between *Faith* and *affair*. And if, when all is said & done (rearing the children to be Christians inclusive), you still *love* the man and want to keep your Union with him, well, stop going *to* the Church, knowing that you remain *with* the Church. Please see the Index section for *Christian Family* to find the relevant chapters. Important: pray more for your Husband and ask the Church to back you up accordingly. I pray for you. May GOD bless you.

607

There are some questions about *Matthew Chapter 6*. Namely,
Q: (1) do *Verses 2 & 3* just repeat one another as for *Alms*?
Q: (2) And how to avoid the negative examples shown in *Verses 2 & 5*?

A: *Pure Cambridge Edition* of *King James Bible* runs *Matthew 6:2-5* thus:

> *2 Therefore when thou doest thine Alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the Synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. 3 But when thou doest Alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: 4 That thine Alms may be in Secret: and thy Father which seeth in Secret Himself shall reward thee openly. 5 And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the Synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.*

In my opinion, *Verses 2 & 3* differ in meaning. There are many repetitions in the Bible. Yet, that only to clarify the matter, but it is not so *throughout*.
Here, the "*trumpet*" might denote calling for the attention of many.
Therefore, *Verse 2* is about the false *glory in the world*.
But "*thy left hand*" & "*thy right hand*" should stand for a more intimate circle – our Congregation & we. There, the *temptation* to "testify" about our good deeds (rather than confessing* wrongs) should be resisted too. (* Chapters 46 & 556.)

> *He does not rebuke the Work, but their purpose and aim in doing it. For the deed would be in itself Good, but it is spoiled by their smearing their filth over it, because they seek only their own glory and honor before the people by it, and do it not for the sake of GOD or their neighbor ... Yes, the world will never get to understand what it really means to give Alms ...*
>
> *(Martin Luther, Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount, p.230-231)*

The same approach – *separating* the world and the Church – we should take to extirpate the negative example condemned in *Verses 2 & 5*.

We are not supposed to pray aloud in public places. Kindly mind *Matthew 7:6*.
When somebody approaches us and asks us to pray for him (her), for this or that, it is better to lead the person *away from the crowds* for a quiet conversation, Confession, Counseling, and Prayer. See *Mark 7:33 & Acts 9:40*.

When we lead a *Common Prayer* from a Pulpit, let it be short & simple.
See *Ecclesiastes 5:2* & *Matthew 6:7-8*.
The impressive eloquence is out of place there. Note *1Corinthians 14:9*.

I saw some Brothers praying before their audience and having their eyes closed. It is wrong. On the contrary, observe attentively how your Congregation unequally participates in a Prayer. So, pass the most weighty matters to a *Prayer Team*. Please consider "Q & A" chapter 465 (A Prayer Team).

Verses 2 & 5 state, *They have their reward.* What is that but false glory, self-righteousness, and pride? Remember *Matthew 7:21-23*.

There is nothing more Peaceful than Communion with our Heavenly Father in privacy. More than once, according to the Gospels, Lord Jesus went to secluded places to pray. See, for example, *Luke 5:16*.

Further references: *Psalms 119:29* – Pray to be empowered against falsehood.
Jeremiah 6:16 – The applicability to our talk.
Jeremiah 8:6 – ditto.
Matthew 15:14; 16:6 – Beware of false teachers.
Mark 7:6-7 – Mind your Honesty.
Luke 7:31-32 & 12:1-3 – ditto.

Q: I've been ruminating on *Exodus 4:22*, where God says,
"*Israel is My Son, My Firstborn*." What are your thoughts on this Verse?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: I take "Israel" in *spiritual* meaning. Kindly consider the context –

> *And thou shalt say unto Pharaoh, Thus saith the LORD, Israel is My Son, even My Firstborn. And I say unto thee, Let My Son go, that he may serve Me: and if thou refuse to let him go, behold, I will slay thy son, even thy firstborn. (Exodus 4:22-23)*

This Scripture serves as a Warning to every *antichrist* (a Ruler, King, President, etc. – serving Satan) and his followers (unbelievers) who persecute Christians – *My Son, even My Firstborn*.

You may see the Index for *Antichrist*, *Christians*, & *Israel*.
Thank you.

608

Q: Could you please outline *Confession* for those who have never made it other than by a few words in the Prayer of Repentance?

A: Confession, whether the first or each following is the same.
It requires due preparation and pondering of the Twelve Commandments.
All relevant chapters are in the Index section of this book.
Kindly find there "*Commandments*" and "*Confession*."

The notes below should help both Confessor & Confessionalist.
Our Sincerity before GOD has utmost importance. However, all names, dates, and places are to be left out. Mind chapter 46 (Confession & Confidentiality).

The First Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess your following worldly reason & superstitions, compromising with and harboring every lie of the devil: fear, pride, mammon, greed, anger, revenge, envy, lust, unbelief, doubt, shame, &c., &c.
Kindly see chapter 93 (The First Commandment) and those marked "*Spirit War*."

The Second Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess idolatry. We should kneel before and trust the LORD our GOD only.
You may consider chapter 94 (The Second Commandment).

The Third Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess profaning the Name Most Holy either by yourself or, because of your negligence, by others. Consult chapter 22 (The Third Commandment).

The Fourth Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess profaning Sabbath by yourself or your family.
We discussed this Commandment in chapter 91 (The Fourth Commandment).

The Fifth Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess any disrespect to your father & mother as well as your father & mother in law. Note chapter 79 (The Fifth Commandment).

The Sixth Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess your every action against GOD-Given Life. Confess abortion(s) made, advised, or demanded. Murder is to be reported to Police.
Consult chapters 125 (The Sixth Commandment), 405 (Confessing crimes), & 506 (Back to Father GOD).

The Seventh Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess your lustful thoughts, words, and deeds. See relevant chapter 126.

The Eighth Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess your pertinent acts of corruption: bribery, pilferage, cheating, etc. Stealing is to be made up for. See chapters 127 & 297 (The evil of corruption).

The Ninth Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess your every lie. "Q & A" chapter 129 has more to the subject.

The Tenth Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.
Confess what chapter 130 calls "... the sin of envy and its evil backups & follow-ups: lust, jealousy, adultery, anger, enmity, strife, stealing, corruption, &c."

The Eleventh Commandment of Christ.
Confess your every tolerance to denominationalism. See chapters 5, 25, & 80.

The Twelfth Commandment of Christ.
Confess your complacency, laziness, pride, sectarianism, and whatever other evil standing in the way of Preaching Good News. See chapters 43, 483, & 496.

Add to the above the need to get up from every spiritual dirt back on the Right Track as per *Luke 15:20* before and steadily following GOD after Confession.

These chapters are on the Sacrament of Confession: 19, 34, 42, 46, & 609.

Q: People, who were or are part of Charismatic Churches,
has someone ever prophesied something over you that did not come true, yet, it consequently negatively impacted you in some way?
(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020.)

A: You may extend your question beyond the *Charismatic* Churches.
And, if you mean strictly personal prophecy only, please, consider some general or circular way of "prophesying", whether printed or spoken junk.
But speaking about myself, I heard both – Prophesying and "trying to". The "negative impact" depends on our dealing with a *lie*. The thing is, when you encounter True Prophecy, you *feel* it by the Power of the Holy Ghost. Don't *seek* a Prophet. When LORD GOD has something to tell you, He finds you.

609

Q: What about *Common Confession* practiced in Orthodox Churches?
Q: Can it be the alternative to *personal* Confession?

A: Being *not* an Orthodox Believer, I have never witnessed the Ceremony. However, I read about it in one Orthodox brochure. That manual did not recognize Common Confession as the alternative, seeing instead the *lame* reason thereof in something like “no time” on the part of a Priest and “no willing” on the part of his Congregation. I saw that with Protestants.

Once, in the absence of our Pastor, the Brethren asked me to preach in the Church Service. I reminded them that it was the day they usually served the *Lord’s Supper* and asked them to fetch a bottle of red wine and a loaf of wheat bread in order to follow the known custom. (See chapter 35 – Holy Communion). When everything was ready, I briefly explained to the Congregation the need for *Confession* (chapter 19). As there & then it was “no time”, I decided to organize what *later* I read about in the above-named brochure as *Common Confession*.
For, notwithstanding the fact of different principles of Faith, I found in that small book a lot of things indeed acceptable. Verily, One Spirit dictated* that to the authors thereof and me in my notes (preceding this book).
I advised my Friends to confess their failures to follow the Commandments of GOD. How did we do it? Just by raising hands when I read each Commandment and outline the meaning thereof. And so we did as I spoke the following.

Against the First Commandment – *our* deviations from the Word, including voting in a non-Christian country.
Against the Second – *our* past adherence to every value of the world, which GOD condemns. (Chapters 40, 41, 287. See *Commandments* in the *Index*.)
Against the Third – *our* instances to speak about GOD (Father, Son, and the Holy Ghost) lightly and tolerance when other people do so.
Against the Fourth – *our* failure to plan the Sabbath and keep it Holy.
Against the Fifth – *our* every disrespect shown to parents.
Against the Sixth – *our* abortions & military serving a non-Christian country.
Against the Seventh – *our* lustful thoughts & deeds.
Against the Eighth – *our* every case of unlawful gain in this world.
Against the Ninth – *our* criticism.
Against the Tenth – *our* every giving in to envy.
Against the Eleventh – *our* tolerance to denominationalism and, at the same time, criticizing Christians who stay with other denominations.
Against the Twelfth – *our* negative examples to unbelievers.

I tried to explain to that Congregation every instance of the above failures until all hands were raised and was the first who did so all twelve times.

Could that help our *total* spiritual cleansing? Hardly. But there & then, it was much better than so widely accepted *unworthy* approach to the Lord's Supper.
Mind well *1Corinthians 11:26-30* quoted in chapter 35 mentioned above.
Regretfully, that *Common Confession* was not followed by *personal Confessions* thereafter. Well, at least, as per my observations of that Local Church.

The reason, as it seems to me, is (on the part of Believers) harboring the devilish thoughts of *fear*. Apparently, the *Confidentiality* of a personal Confession is seen as something impossible and, therefore, terrible. Please see chapter 46.
On the part of Pastors, probably, it is listening too much to their denominational ideologists, proponents, exponents, and so on, up to *Satan* himself. *John 8:43-44*.
If (as one Pastor sincerely explained it to me) Protestant Shepherds were not afraid to follow the negative example of Catholic & Orthodox Leaders, who secretly serve their National Security Services, it was okay with him. Was it?
But why do they *do* follow Catholic & Orthodox Believers in the way of Church Service? Doesn't our Sermon resemble their Mass? And don't your Temples, which you construct, more resemble the Catholic & Orthodox ones than that of Brother Solomon, which he built by the Standards of the LORD?

* Mind the *distortions* I mentioned here, in the article "About the writer".

Q: Can we fight as Christians if the government breaks its laws?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: To start from, it is *our* laws, not *the government's*. For it is a country, which the LORD, our GOD, gave *us* to live in. It is the government *we* deserve and some Believers voted for. You may take a look at chapter 21 (Voting).
As to those high-ranked officials, who (in many countries) break the laws (let alone the Holy Law of GOD), we are not supposed to *fight* them in any worldly way.

For we wrestle not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. (Ephesians 6:12)

So, let us not ignore the Power of Prayer, on our knees asking the LORD for His Rod of Correction on those officials. And for us to be forgiven.

610

Q: In chapter 86, you spoke about *proof* as a matter of *Faith*.
But once *Matthew 7:12* is called by Christians a *Golden Rule*, it's presumed that this Scripture has already been *proven* and more than once, isn't it?
Q: So, how to dissuade those *unbelievers*, who see things "just opposite"?

A: To begin with, a "rule" is something *to be followed*, proven or not.
Therefore, *Matthew 7:12* is *our* Rule, *followed* first and *proven* second.

And kindly note, it is not *we* who are supposed to defend the Word of GOD, but *He* through us. *2Chronicles 20:15; Isaiah 29:14; 1Corinthians 1:19 & 3:18-19*.

When we (have to) talk with unbelievers, two things ought to be kept in mind.

First, the *Holy Spirit of GOD* is standing behind us (*Isaiah 30:21*) to remind the right Scriptures to mention. He might also command us to shut up. *Matthew 7:6*.
To hear as *Learned*, as per *Isaiah 50:4*, means to attentively listen to *His* Small Voice, not only the lying arguments of unbelievers. Please, see chapter 292.

Second, peacefully & patiently ask him (her) or them to present you with at least one example. Take the last and try to clear up the circumstances which made the folks think that our Rule didn't work. The important thing for you to know is *the reason why* people did or refused to do what they called "good". And the more you (follow the Holy Ghost and) bring to the Light of GOD the *demon-inspired motives* (which fire up every complication in this World), the stronger your position in the LORD would be. *Proverbs 21:30*.

Q: Should our Churches ignore a ban on singing or worship in other ways?
(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: Our local Authorities may impose that ban for their anti-Christian views or complaints of the neighbors, who might need a quiet rest.
Whether it is Congregational singing in Temples or Small Groups in apartment buildings, we are to respect our neighbors. Whatever our place of Worship is, there are ways to keep politely quiet – sing not loudly, and (or) do that only by Choir or a few devoted Singers.
And may those restrictions never discourage those who love singing with the full power of the voice. Please, don't worry. GOD hears you just fine.

611

Q: Let's clarify the meaning & implementation of *Matthew 7:27 & 8:16-17*.

A: It is written,

> *24 Therefore whosoever heareth these Sayings of Mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: 25 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. 26 And every one that heareth these Sayings of Mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: 27 And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. (Matthew 7:24-27)*

In *Verse 27*, a "*great fall*" means, and first of all, such confusion in our *spirit* that affects our relationship with Father GOD and, consequently, our Eternal destiny. Secondly, that *fall* might draw many other failures, whether moral or physical, as well as curses on our family, Ministry, employment, friendship, and so forth. Why? – Because it is the inevitable fall of hopes & works based on wrong motives when the devil lies us into taking the wrong way.

So, our Guide & implementation can be found only in *Verses 24-25*.

Go on. It is written:

16 When the even was come, they brought unto Him many that were possessed with devils: and He cast out the spirits with His Word, and healed all that were sick. 17 That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by Esaias the Prophet, saying, Himself took our infirmities, and bare our sicknesses. (Matthew 8:16-17)

This Scripture reminds us that it is not *we* who are supposed to heal all the suffering ones, but *GOD* by the Power of His Holy Spirit through *us* armed with His Word, even as He did through our Lord Jesus, at the time of His Messianic Ministry. Thus the only implementation is following the above-quoted Scripture – *Matthew 7:24* – the Teaching of Christ.

The Parallels: *1Samuel 10:6-7* --- The Guidance of the Holy Spirit.
Luke 24: 49 -------- We are powerless without Him.
John 14:12-14 ----- Greater Works ought to be done in Faith.
John 20:21-23 ----- The Power & Authority of the Holy Ghost.

Q: (1) How bad is it to *desecrate* a Bible?
Q: (2) If a person has fallen into hard times, feels hopeless, and chooses to lash out in anger and fear by burning a Bible, is that bad, or what?
Q: (3) How might a person try to find a replacement for an *antique* Bible, the one that would likely just be sought after for sentimental value, unsure if rare or markedly valuable?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: To start from, we should keep the evil of anger at bay. We *can* do it.

We know that whosoever is born of GOD sinneth not;
but he that is begotten of GOD keepeth himself,
and that wicked one toucheth him not. (1John 5:18)

(1) Nobody can "desecrate" the Written Word of GOD. It is not that easy.
(2) When one angrily burns the Bible or throws it into a dumpster, it shows folly. Yet, it is just a paper. Please repent of stupidity and go the way of *Luke 15:20*.
(2) The old Book might be a good thing, especially if it (did not and) does not sit on a dusty shelf but is a daily tool (as it possibly was for years) in Bible Study and Prayer. Kindly know the big difference between the Book, which, however relatively cheap, is Holy for you, and some heavy, rare, antique, expensive, &c., stuff which became a mammonish ballast never opened.
In a way, the latter resembles those misused Books in some courtrooms, which officials employ to make atheists lie more than they commonly do.
But –

... the Word of GOD is Quick, and Powerful,
and sharper than any twoedged sword, piercing even
to the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the joints and marrow,
and is a Discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart. (Hebrews 4:12)

So, note the difference. Godspeed.

Q: What does the Bible say about interracial marriage?

(*https://www.gotquestions.org*, January 2021.)

A: It is written:

... there is no respect of persons with GOD. (Romans 2:11)

The same is to be our approach to Godly Marriage. No racism.

612

Q: Please explain *Matthew 11:13-15*.

A: It is written:

> *13 For all the Prophets and the Law prophesied until John.*
> *14 And if ye will receive it, this is Elias, which was for to come.*
> *15 He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.*
>
> *(Matthew 11:13-15)*

Verse 13 is well explained by Brother *Thomas Scott* in his respective comments:

> *All the Prophets, and Moses in the Law, both by types and express predictions, foretold the coming of the Messiah as a future event : but John declared Him to be at hand, and even pointed Him out as already come.*
>
> *(Thomas Scott, The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes ...)*

Verse 14 becomes clear after reading the arguments of Brother *Henry Alford*, which we quoted in chapter 267:

> *... the name of one Prophet is here substituted for that of another, to teach us not to regard the Prophets as the Authors of their Prophecies, but to trace them to Divine Inspiration.*
>
> *(The New Testament for English Readers, vol.1, p.202)*

The Words of Lord Jesus in *Verse 15* – repeated in *Mark 4:9; Luke 8:8; 14:35* – go beyond these Scriptures and cover all the Written Word of GOD.
In chapter 118, read the informative & instructive reasoning of Brother *Luther.*

Right before the “Index” section of this book, in the article “About the Writer”, I wrote something about my hearing GOD.
Please also have a look at chapters 32, 104, 181, & 292.

Our spiritual hearing might be well promoted by Obedience.

Heare Me, and I will instruct thee, hearken to the thing that I say, & I shal tell thee more. (Apocrypha, 2nd Esdras 5:32, King James Version, 1611)

Please find the same in *Ecclesiastes 5:1; Psalms 95:7-8; Jeremiah 11:4,7; Hebrews 3:7,8,15; 4:7; & 12:25*.

613

Q: How shall we implement *Matthew 11:16-19* at present?

A: It is written:

> *16 But whereunto shall I liken this generation? It is like unto children sitting in the markets, and calling unto their fellows, 17 And saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned unto you, and ye have not lamented. 18 For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil. 19 The Son of Man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But Wisdom is justified of her Children. (Matthew 11:16-19)*

The same one can read in *Luke 7:31-35*.
In his respective comments, Brother John Calvin wrote,

> *... nothing is more unreasonable than to submit the Truth of GOD to the judgment of men, whose acuteness and sagacity amounts to nothing more than mere vanity.*

Indeed, *Verses 16 & 17* picture the reasoning of this world – including Pharisees there & then and their likes here & now – as no more than foolish pride and total absurdity in the Eyes of GOD.
And *Verses 18 & 19*, on the contrary, depict Godly Wisdom as it was and still is "seen" by non-Christian folks. That is the Lesson.
As for our actual implementation, we can find it in the closing Words of the above Scripture,

But Wisdom is proved Right by her deeds.
(New International Version)

Justification denotes & intends Victory, Glory, and Peace, as the Truth of GOD leads us nowhere but to the Life Eternal.

So shall My Word be that goeth forth out of My Mouth:
it shall not return unto Me void, but it shall accomplish that which I please,
and it shall prosper in the thing whereto I sent it. (Isaiah 55:11)

Wisdom is also explained in *1Corinthians 1:18-31*.
See parallel "Q & A" chapter 166 (The Wisdom of GOD).

Q: (1) Why did Jesus change some Laws?. For example, in the Old Testament, it is said, *an eye for an eye*, but now Jesus says, *turn the cheek*.
Q: (2) Why did God change it?
Q: (3) Is it due to *the harsh times* in the Old Testament?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: (1) Speaking of the Law of GOD, Jesus changed nothing except abolishing the Animal Sacrifices by His substitutional Ultimate Sacrifice of Himself. See *Matthew 5:17-18* & *Hebrews 7:26-27*.
(2) As for "*an eye for an eye"* and "*turn the cheek*", the first Rule was & remains for Judges in the Courts of Justice, whereas the second is our Spiritual Warfare principle. The second has never changed the first over. See chapters 145 (But I say unto you) & 146 (Resist not evil).
(3) Please note *Ecclesiastes 1:9* regarding your guess on "the harsh times".

Q: (1) What if Jesus *was* serious?
Q: (2) What if Jesus *meant* what He said in *Matthew 6:24*?
Q: (3) What if Jesus *meant* what He said in *Luke 14:33*?
Q: (4) And what if Jesus *meant* what He said in *John 12:48*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: (1) Our Lord & Savior has always been serious and more than.

Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me?
the Words that I speak unto you I speak not of Myself:
but the Father that dwelleth in Me, He doeth the Works. (John 14:10)

(2) What's wrong with that Scripture?
You may refer to chapters 40, 41, 56, & 438.

(3) It looks like you are afraid to lose something. Please, don't be.
Read chapters 15 & 287. And note well *Luke 18:28-30.*

(4) Of course, He did, and *John 12:48* confirms that –

For I have not spoken of Myself; but the Father which sent Me,
He gave me a Commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak.
(John 12:48)

Thank you.

614

Q: How to understand the Words of Jesus –

... whether is easier, to say,
Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and walk?

– in *Matthew 9:5*?

Q: Is it not quite easy to say whatsoever?

A: It is easy to say anything (and sin) when we are not under the Command of the *Holy Ghost*. The above Scripture is well comprehended in this light. For it is written:

... out of abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh.
(Matthew 12:34)

Both matters in *Matthew 9:5 – Forgiving sins* & *Healing* – might seem equally hard to the heathen world, which Christians do not belong to. You may see chapter 287 (We are not of the world).
However, the first subject is followed up by the second when (and only when) the Holy Spirit of GOD speaks and works through us. See *John 20:22-23*.
On the other hand, mere *physical healing* might be a trick of the same demon who caused sickness and thus is nothing but evil (in the long run). In our book, kindly consider chapter 81 (The devilish healing).
The Lord gave us the Blessing of *Baptism in the Holy Spirit*. See chapter 65.
Depending on whether the Holy Spirit of GOD did indwell your heart, as you welcomed Him, decide for yourself what is easier for you to say.

Scriptural references: *Joshua 1:8-9* – Stay focused on the Written Word of GOD.
Psalms 39:1-2; 141:3 – To be under the LORD's Control.
Isaiah 50:4 – Value your True Edifying.
Ephesians 4:29-32 – Avoid corrupted words.

Q: (1) Why does not God heal everyone who has cancer?
Q: (2) And why does He allow diseases in the first place?
(Signed: *Christian, Non-Calvinist.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, November 2020.)

A: (1) What is that healing for, to continue sinning or following Him?
(2) Please see chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment) regarding *who* allows it.
Please also refer to the Index section for more.

615

Q: I have two little kids and a lot of work around my home. Honestly, there is no free time. I have got no choice but to stop for a while my Bible Study. What Verses from the Word would you recommend me to read (as some Bible Editions and Christian books do) to break that bondage?

A: What I recommend is to get back to your Bible Study right where you left it off. Continue your broken Conversation with the LORD.

Now & again, we all get so busy that no time for such a Precious Conversation seemingly remains. We remember GOD, our Father, and run to Him only when we (being so busy) get in trouble and need His Help. See chapter 68 & 101.

In my files, I still keep one old letter dated March 11, 1996, from Brother Kenneth Copeland. These words therefrom might well answer your question.

> *... Stay focused on the Word. The bigger the problem or the bigger the project, the more the Word should receive your first attention ... Remember: You don't have to put up with things the way they have been. GOD gets great Pleasure from prospering you, especially when you go to Him instead of the world to get your needs met. Begin to think of yourself as Free in Jesus, doing GOD's best instead of being satisfied in doing just enough ...*

Q: Can Christians date non-believers?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Yes, they can, but seeing only one perspective: to build a *Christian Family*. See *Genesis 2:24*, "Q & A" chapter 60, and the Index section for more.

Q: Do people actually "sell their souls to the devil"?
(Signed: *Christian, Protestant*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: You may call it "*sell*" or "*surrender*", *actually* or *figuratively* – it doesn't matter. The *real* thing is that most of the humankind turns their backs to the LORD, our GOD. Therefore, your question can be turned into a statement. Please, read *2Corinthians 4:4*.
Thank you.

616

Q: Is *Matthew 10:5-10* just a history, or has it something to do with our Christian Living?

A: In the Bible, *every* Scripture (if not expressly named as a Parable) is both a history (repeated per *Ecclesiastes 1:9*) and a Teaching for us today.

It is written,

*5 These Twelve Jesus sent forth, and commanded them, saying, Go not into the way of the Gentiles**, and into any city of the Samaritans** enter ye not. 6 But go rather to the lost Sheep of the House of Israel**. 7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The Kingdom of Heaven is at hand. 8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: Freely* ye have received, Freely* give. 9 Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses, 10 nor scrip for your Journey*, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the Workman* is Worthy* of his Meat*.*

(Matthew 10:5-10)

* The capitalization marks a spiritual meaning regardless of time & place.
** The capitalization points to a spiritual import for implementation today.

Lord Jesus' Ministry to the People Israel was completed as per *John 19:30*.
That Great Ministry concluded the Ministries of many Old Testament Prophets and is being continued by our Great Commission – the Twelfth Commandment.

Verse 5.
Our Ministries should have nothing to do with the ways, styles, and purposes of some *worldly* enterprises hypocritically called "charitable".
Christian Churches, which are strictly *denominational* and, as such, *contradict* the Eleventh Commandment of Christ (chapter 80), are to be passed by.

Verse 6.
Visit those who once were Christians but *fell away* back to the heathen world, got *lost* to sins, or *compromised* with the devil. Note *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
See chapters 40 (Compromise), 59 (The Chosen People of GOD), & 138 (Hope).

Verse 7.
This well corresponds to our Great Commission. See chapter 43.
We should be Worthy Instruments for the Works of (the Holy Spirit of) GOD.

Verse 8.
Please, see chapter 432 (Healing Ministry). The Scripture is considered there.
This Command ought to be followed *spiritually* (for the desired manifestation in the *natural*) as the *Power* of Anointing of the Holy Ghost has been with us.
Mind the Word "*Freely*". It means not simply "without money" but "Free of mammon". See chapter 438 (The evil power named mammon).

Verses 9-10.
Mind the keyword "*Worthy*". It is well explained by *Matthew 28:20* –

Lo, I am with you alway, even unto the End of the World. Amen.

Please also mind *Matthew 10:1*.
So, who are those Worthy? These are –

... they forsook all and followed Him. (Luke 5:11)

See relevant chapters: 41, 213, 287, 509, & 537.

See Parallels –

To *Verse 5*: *... they be blind leaders of the blind ... (Matthew 15:14)*
To *Verse 6*: *... thou art neither cold nor hot ... (Revelation 3:15-16)*
To *Verse 7*: *... preach the Gospel to every creature. (Mark 16:15-18)*
To *Verse 8*: *But ye shall receive Power ... (Acts 1:8)*
To *Verses 9-10*: *Behold, they shall surely gather together ... (Isaiah 54:15-17)*

... go, get thee to them of the captivity, unto the children of thy people, and speak unto them, and tell them, Thus saith the LORD GOD; whether they will hear, or whether they will forbear ... But when I speak with thee, I will open thy mouth, and thou shalt say unto them, Thus saith the LORD GOD; he that heareth, let him hear; and he that forbeareth, let him forbear: for they are a rebellious house. (Ezekiel 3:11,27)

> *At present, Providence must direct us where to exercise our Ministry; for every restriction is now taken off, and we are authorized "to preach the Gospel to every creature". There are lost sheep in every land, as well as "of the House of Israel" ; and we must seek them out, wherever scattered in this wicked world, that they may be brought home to "the Shepherd and Bishop of our souls." (Thomas Scott, Commentaries, Matthew Chapter 10)*

617

Q: Studying the Gospels by *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures*, we found *Genesis 3:1, Romans 16:19, & Philippians 2:15* as the Parallels to *Matthew 10:16*. Do you agree with it?

A: No, I don't. And once you question, possibly, you also doubt all that. *New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures (NWT)* is not the best Edition for our Study. However, one can have *NWT* at hand, as containing better Parallels too. All those Parallels ought to be well checked out since, in the above case, *Genesis 3:1* is presented wrongly.
It is written:

Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves:
be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. (Matthew 10:16)

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field
which the LORD GOD had made ... (Genesis 3:1)

Lord Jesus would have hardly mentioned the second of the above Scriptures to support His Words. Note *Genesis 3:14*.
Yet, this reasoning of mine should never diminish the Value of *Genesis 3:1* or any other Scripture, which some interpreters misuse.

As for *Romans 16:19 & Philippians 2:15*, these Scriptures might be presented as Parallels to *Matthew 10:16*, depending on what meaning or keyword they are to support. Read *Isaiah 34:16* and listen to the Holy Spirit.

Q: Is *Matthew 7:6* talking about the Gentiles?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.))

A: Nay. Kindly consider the Word:

I said, I will take heed to my ways, that I sin not with my tongue:
I will keep my mouth with a bridle, while the wicked is before me.
I was dumb with silence, I held my Peace, even from Good;
and my sorrow was stirred. (Psalms 39:1-2)

The above Scripture says, the *wicked*, not the *Gentile*.
In this "Q & A" book, you may note chapter 59 (The Chosen People of GOD).

618

Q: There are many conflicting opinions as to how to understand the Words of Jesus,

Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of Man be come. (Matthew 10:23).

What is your comment?

A: It is written,

... ye shall be hated of all men for My Name's sake: but he that endureth to the End shall be saved. But when they persecute you in this city, flee ye into another: for Verily I say unto you, Ye shall not have gone over the cities of Israel, till the Son of Man be come. (Matthew 10:22-23)

There & then, the First Disciples of Christ would have never managed to go over all towns & villages of *Israel* during their lifespan, even without persecutions.
To be heard there, at least once and by every adult person, would have required much more time, efforts, and Preachers than were available.
Yet, they had seen *Jesus* resurrected and received their Great Commission.
That Commission had tightly connected *there & then* with *here & now*.
So now, in the above Scripture, "*ye*" & "*you*" ought to be taken for all Christians – the Followers of Christ. *John 1:12-13*.
And "*the cities of Israel*" might stand now for all municipalities of the World.

Don't see the similitude? Mind *Isaiah 53:1* manifested in the Gospels.
The above reasoning is just a try to comprehend the Words of Christ.
Matthew 9:37 & *Luke 10:2* still depict great Harvest & few Laborers.

Q: What does it mean to be *wise as serpents and harmless as doves*?

A: It is written:

Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves. (Matthew 10:16)

To follow the Twelfth Commandment of Christ, especially in the conditions of "*sheep in the midst of wolves*", we should act wisely, not always openly showing our being Christians (*serpents* are not so easily seen around). Our behavior must not embarrass anyone (*doves* are much less disturbing than some folks).
Kindly remember *Matthew 7:6*.

619

Q: What is the Message of *Matthew 10:41*?

A: It is written:

He that receiveth a Prophet in the name of a Prophet
shall receive a Prophet's Reward;
and he that receiveth a Righteous man in the name of a Righteous man
shall receive a Righteous man's Reward. (Matthew 10:41)

Christian Intercessory Backup equals Spiritual Battlefield Fight.
Here, take *receive* as implying *share*. Note the relevant examples described in *the Book of Joshua 22:8 & the First Book of Samuel 30:24*.

... as his part is that goeth down to the battle, so shall his part be
that tarrieth by the stuff: they shall part alike. (1Samuel 30:24)

Our devoted Prayer is a real investment into the Body of Christ and a very needful Backup to every Minister of our Lord Jesus.
Please, read *Ephesians 6:18-19 & Colossians 4:2-4*.
See also chapters 99 (A cup of water), 112 (The Lord's Prayer – Intercession), & 465 (Prayer Team).

It has been said that the lives of the early Christians consisted of "persecution above ground and Prayer below ground". Their Lives are expressed by the Coliseum and the catacombs ... When the Christian graves have been opened the skeletons tell their own terrible tale. Heads are found severed from the body, ribs and shoulder blades are broken, bones are often calcined from fire. But despite the awful story of persecution that we may read here, the inscriptions breathe forth Peace and Joy and Triumph ...
(John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Persecutions under M.A. Antonius, A.D.162)

Q: Why do people pray to God in times of need when He is Omniscient and already knows their want?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: Please note *Matthew 6, Verses 8 & 10.*
Your words – *already knows* – are correct. GOD knows better than we do.
(You may find the relevant chapters in *Index – Prayer – Lord's*.)

620

Q: What is the Right Way to follow *Matthew 12:30*?

A: It is written,

He that is not with Me is against Me;
and he that gathereth not with Me scattereth abroad. (Matthew 12:30)

Here, to "*gather"* means only sowing & harvesting the Way Lord Jesus taught. To "*scatter"* stands for any other way. Kindly note *John 10:12 & 14:6*.
Good question – *What would Jesus do?* – may help you & me in any doubt.

As we pointed out in chapter 25 (Writer, what if you are wrong?), many Christian *denominational* Churches claimed to learn & teach the Word of GOD. However, their Pastors do that their chosen way, contradicting one another. Moreover, now & again, they criticize one another. Mind *John 13:34-35*.

See chapters 80 (*Eleventh Commandment*) & 124 (*Jesus' Prayer for our Unity*).

Some Christians say it is okay, as we all "belong" to One Body of Christ. I think they are wrong. To preach & follow the Word of GOD, we are not supposed to do it the way traditional, approved, recommended, etc. Kindly see *Matthew 6:24*.

On the other hand, *gathering* with Jesus applies to every aspect of our Christian Living, such as Family, Ministry, employment, and others.

Q: What is *morality*, and how is it conceived?.
Q: Is morality specifically and exclusively the following of the Bible, or is it something more, or is it something entirely different?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: I guess the answer to the above questions is in your words "specifically and exclusively the following of the Bible" period.
That is from the Christian viewpoint.
You might also want to read our discussions on the same subject with atheists in chapters 644, 661, & 710.
You may see chapter 58 on the subject of K & U & W as for conceiving.
Thank you.

621

Q: What does it mean, "*before the World began"* in *2Timothy 1:9*?

A: It is written,

Who hath saved us, and called us with an Holy Calling,
not according to our works, but according to His Own Purpose and Grace,
which was given us in Christ Jesus before the World began ... (2Timothy 1:9)

Since the question is about the Mystery of GOD & Time, we may consider the above Scripture in that regard only. We did so in chapter 585 (GOD and Time).

As far as I can comprehend, "*before the World began"* is a metaphor. It could be chosen & dictated by the Holy Ghost and written down by the Holy Man of GOD to best feed the limited Understanding of Believers ever reading these Lines.

GOD is the Creator of everything, the Time inclusive. *John 1:3 & Romans 11:36*. We, His Creatures, made in His Image & Likeness, can & do create (by employing substance created by GOD), change, or destroy things created (*Genesis 1:26-28*). That activity is possible only under the LORD's Divine Supervision (*Psalms 127:1*) and subjected to His Judgment. See chapter 503.

GOD is the Divine Ruler of Time. The former doesn't depend on the latter.
Therefore, "*before the World began"* means "*LORD GOD observed all things & events before the Time was started by Him and both physical & spiritual Realms were created & ordered by Him to live in that Time*."
That also means the LORD Himself, His Holy Purposes & Works are greater than Time and the rest of His Great Creation.
Note well *Isaiah 38:8* & *Ezekiel 37:4:10*.

Q: Does God ever lose Patience?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: No, He doesn't. The Divine Qualities of the LORD GOD cannot expire.
Thus He is Patient with us during our lifetime, which is shortened by us.

The LORD is not slack concerning His Promise, as some men count slackness;
but is Longsuffering to usward, not willing that any should perish,
but that all should come to Repentance. (2Peter 3:9)

622

Q: How to properly differentiate "*it shall be forgiven"* and "*it shall not be forgiven"*, in *Matthew 12:32*?

A: It is written:

And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this World, neither in the World to come. (Matthew 12:3) Kindly see the Parallels – *Mark 3:29* & *Luke 12:10*.

Our Lord & Savior Christ Jesus, the Son of Almighty GOD, is God from Eternity to Eternity. He is a Part of One & Indivisible Triune GOD – Holy Trinity – existing above & separately from Time & Space (the Natural World).
You may see chapters 459 (The Holy Trinity of GOD) & 621 (GOD and Time).
Yet on that incomprehensible Scale, for thirty-three years, Jesus was a Man as, by the Holy Will of His Heavenly Father, His Messianic Mission demanded so.
Meek & Humble was that Man – *Isaiah 53* & *Zechariah 9:9*. That's why any wicked words & actions against Jesus as the Son of Man are seen & judged by GOD as all human matters. But whatever word against Jesus' Teaching is a blasphemy against the Holy Spirit Who spoke through our Lord Jesus, the Christ. Kindly refer to *Isaiah 11:2-4* & *Mark 3:28-30*.
The same is True & applicable when *we* preach or prophesy in the Spirit.
As for the Words, *neither in this World, neither in the World to come* – it is a Warning, not a Verdict. LORD GOD holds the blasphemers guilty *in this World* to reap the harvest of the evil affecting their Life and that of their descendants.
It also means that the blasphemy (which we discussed in chapters 298 & 492) determines *the Eternal destiny* of blasphemers.

However, there is Hope. Mind *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
The *Sacrament of Confession* rectifies the matter. See chapter 19.

Q: (1) Do you believe that people will be offered a final chance to *accept* God after their death?
Q: (2) Is there any evidence for this in the Bible? Thanks!
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: (1) Negative on that. Kindly note the above-mentioned *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
(2) And the same Scripture is the evidence. See also *2Corinthians 6:2*.
You may refer to *Index – Jesus –* "*accepting*". Thank you.

623

Q: What does Judgment *1Corinthians 6:1-4* teach us about?

A: It is written,

Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to Law before the unjust, and not before the Saints? Do ye not know that the Saints shall judge the World? And if the World shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? Know ye not that we shall judge Angels? How much more things that pertain to this Life? If then ye have Judgments of things pertaining to this Life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the Church. (1Corinthians 6:1-4)

The Scripture teaches about the Judgment we should have in the Church. When people seek Justice in the Court of Law of a non-Christian state, they don't belong to the Church. Why? Note well *1Corinthians 6:17*.
See chapter 38 (How to forgive).
1Corinthians 6:1-4 also implies – as well as all our Bible, directly & indirectly, teaches & commands – a Prohibition to participate in any matters that the world legitimizes but *GOD* outlawed.
Kindly read *Isaiah 28:18 & 1John 2:15-17*.

Q: How do you respond to some Verses in the New Testament that may be oppressive or inhibiting to women? By *Galatians 3:26-29*, there is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither slave nor free, there is no male and female, for we are all One in Christ Jesus. But:
Q: 1. By *Ephesians 5:22-24, Colossians 3:18, Titus 2:3-5,* and *1Peter 3:1-6,* Wives are to be submissive to their Husbands.
Q: 2. By *Ephesians 5:23* & *1Corinthians 11:3,* a Husband is the head of a Wife.
Q: 3. By *1Corinthians 14:33-35*, Women should keep silent in Churches. If there is anything they desire to learn, let 'em ask their Husbands at home.
Q: 4. *1Timothy 2:11-15* does not permit a Woman to teach or to exercise authority over a Man.
Q: 5. By *1Timothy 3* & *Titus 1*, Women are excluded from the position of Qverseers & Elders of Congregations.

(Signed: *Christian, Non-Calvinist*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* November 2020. Condensed.)

A: Dear *Christian*, such terms as "oppressive" & "inhibiting" (in the line of mere "humiliating" and not Discipline) do not dwell in the *Church of GOD*. Those constituents belong in the heathen world, together with pride & envy.

Possibly, you forgot *Genesis 2:24 – Therefore shall a Man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his Wife: and they shall be One flesh*.

This GOD-commanded *Oneness* in the Family makes all the Scriptures (which you correctly named) comprehensible & fit in the One Indivisible Body of Christ.
Your contradictory "but" might be excluded by the following.

Points 1 & 2 & 4. Within One body, only one of two members is to be the head. By the Will of our LORD GOD, a Man is to be in that charge. *Genesis 2:18 & 3:16*.
Kindly find chapter 147 (Intuition) regarding the counsel a Woman can give.
Points 3 & 5. Please, see in those Scriptures a matter of Discipline by the same Holy Will. See chapter 87 (Discipline in the Church).
Thank you.

Q: When God did the Flood, killing everything *indiscriminately*, how was that Just?

(Signed: *Christian, Non-Calvinist*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: Dear *Christian*, when you dare to speak about our LORD GOD, behold, "indiscriminately" is not the right word.
Kindly see chapters 64 (GOD's Punishment) & 739 (the question "Flood").
Read *Matthew 10:29-31* and kindly note that not a single human suffers *injustice* from the Father GOD. See also chapter 26 (Killing Canaanites).

Q: Why was God closer to man in the past?
Reading the Old Testament, I noticed how often GOD spoke directly to a man. He thus spoke to Moses, Job, Ezekiel ...

Q: Is there a reason why this doesn't happen nowadays as opposed to Biblical times?

(Signed: *Christian, Catholic*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: Dear *Christian*, read – *I am the LORD, I change not* – in *Malachi 3:6*.
Then go to *Jeremiah 33:3* and, standing on that Scripture, ask LORD GOD any question troubling you and wait for the Answer coming right into your mind. And kindly note that "Biblical times" have not ended.

624

Q: What's the meaning of "*things new and old"* in *Matthew 13:52*?

A: It is written:

... every Scribe which is instructed unto the Kingdom of Heaven
is like unto a man that is an householder, which bringeth forth
out of his treasure things new and old.

The meaning we can find out by simple logic.

A *Scribe* (here & now) might stand for Evangelist, Preacher, Teacher, and, peculiarly, Writer – who may share their Blessing of being "*instructed unto the Kingdom of Heaven*" with others by means of Christian Communion or writing.

Consequently, the *Treasure* which the *Scribe* is supposed to share with other Christians is not *the wisdom of this world*, but the Revelation Knowledge & Understanding given by our LORD GOD to the Church through His Servant.
In this book, I covered this subject in "*Preface"* and "*About the Writer*".

The *things new and old* might stand for the Truth of GOD revealed by portions of Precious Knowledge. *Old* things are continuously amended by *new* ones.
That's why many Christian books may have more than one edition.
And such is also our "Q & A" book being worked on.

The Scriptures to mind: *Joshua 1:8* – Stay focused on the Word.
Isaiah 30:20-21 – Listen to the Holy Ghost.
Jeremiah 33:3 & John 14:26 – Mind your Teacher.
John 18:37 – Truth & Hearing.
Luke 12:48 & Hebrews 10:26 – Responsibility.

Q: What does it mean that Love is not proud (*1Corinthians 13:4*)?
(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021.)

A: It means that Godly *Love* and worldly *pride* do not mix or co-exist in one Christian heart.

... as we spake all things to you in Truth,
even so our boasting ... (2Corinthians 7:14)

625

Q: What is your opinion as to the Teaching which is given by Lord Jesus in *Matthew 15:3-9* & *Mark 7:6-13* and, in particular, the implementation?
Q: Didn't that Teaching contradict Jesus' calling His Disciples to leave all and follow Him?

A: Regarding the first question, the obvious answer is: the LORD GOD, Who commanded us to honor our fathers & mothers (in the *Fifth Commandment*, which we discussed in chapter 79), also said to put Him above all (as in *Jewish Creed* – chapter 161). And that must be in Perfect Harmony.
GOD would not tolerate any "honor" at the cost of our parents' sufferings.
The Scripture says,

Then came to Jesus Scribes and Pharisees, which were of Jerusalem, saying, Why do thy disciples transgress the tradition of the Elders? for they wash not their hands when they eat bread. But He answered and said unto them, Why do ye also transgress the Commandment of GOD by your tradition? For GOD commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and, He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. But ye say, Whosoever shall say to his father or his mother, It is a Gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; and honour not his father or his mother, he shall be free. Thus have ye made the Commandment of GOD of none effect by your tradition. Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto Me with their mouth, and honoureth Me with their lips; but their heart is far from Me. But in vain they do worship Me, teaching for Doctrines the commandments of men.
(Matthew 15:1-9) See also *Mark 7:5-13.*

The implementation is valid forever, regardless of circumstances. The examples (not excuses) might be many. In chapter 509 (One lost sheep), find one of them.

Please note that in *Matthew 15:3-9* & *Mark 7:6-13*, we can read about the initiative of some "worshippers" misled by the foolish tradition. But the Calling of the Twelve was the Plan & Will of our Father GOD. In such a case only (for instance, *Matthew 4:22*), we should leave our loved ones under His Divine Care & Protection and go whithersoever the LORD commands. Mind *Isaiah 55:8.*

"Contradictions" are impossible with LORD GOD. See *1Corinthians 14:33.*
The words of Confucius, which I quoted in chapter 401, well support that.
In our book, you may kindly note many chapters named "Contradictions".

626

Q: I noticed the similarity in *Matthew 14:21 & 15:38*, namely,

"... men, beside women & children."

So, the obvious question is, does it mean the *men* are more important to the LORD than *women & children* by such a count?

A: More *important* – No. More *accountable* – Yes.
Even so, what is implied here is *Responsibility*.

That subject is by far greater than our book. For all Holy Bible – teaching the *Mankind* Righteousness of GOD – will testify one day in our favor or against us. Kindly note the following few references.

See chapters 111, 436, 439, 597, 672, and the Index concerning *Responsibility*.

References.

Deuteronomy 11:19-21, 32:46; & Proverbs 22:6,15 – Parents.
Isaiah 24:4 & Hosea 4:1-3 – We are responsible for our lands.
Jeremiah 23:1 & Ezekiel 34:2-10 – False shepherds.
Matthew 15:14, Luke 6:39, & John 9:41 – ditto.
Matthew 12:36-37 – Mind your words.
Luke 12:48 – The measure of Responsibility.
Acts 16:31 – The Head of a Christian Family.
Romans 14:12, 1Corinthians 6:15-20, & 2Corinthians 5:10 – We.
1Timothy 3:1-13, Titus 1:6-9, James 3:1, & 1Peter 5:2-3 – Leaders.
1John 3:20-22 – Our Checkpoint.

Q: If a Pastor or Priest or Pope or anyone in a Leadership position misguides the people to whom they preach, either by promoting hate and judgment or far worse things, will anyone be held accountable after death?
Q: If yes, will it be the Leader of the people?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: Who is accountable? I think, both – the false Shepherd and the followers (not lust listeners) – as persons responsible for that evil spread around. Kindly refer to *Matthew 15:14.*

627

Q: How to understand the Words of Christ in *Matthew 16:18-19*?

A: It is written:

> *15 He saith unto them, But Whom say ye that I am? 16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the Living GOD. 17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon Bar-jona: for flesh and blood hath not revealed it unto thee, but My Father which is in Heaven. 18 And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this Rock I will build My Church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. 19 And I will give unto thee the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on Earth shall be loosed in Heaven. (Matthew 16:15-19)*

Thus our Lord Jesus answered the Statement of *Faith* made by His Disciple.
Please, think about *your* Statement to Him.

You know that "*Peter*" means "*Rock*".
The Words, "*upon this Rock I will build My Church*", imply that the whole *Construction* would have to depend on that *Foundation o' Faith*.
And kindly note, *Who* is the Builder. Note *Acts 2:47*.

Therefore, "*the gates of hell shall not prevail against it*".
It means *Salvation* is where such a Church is. Because we, humankind, have only these two options, Life or death – Heaven or hell. Remember *Genesis 1:4*.

Now, "*the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven*" stand for the Truth (the Light) of our Lord Jesus we should stick to. Mind *John 6:63*.
And, as *Verse 17* makes it so clear, *our* Knowledge of Truth is *given* us by the Holy Spirit of GOD, not developed by ourselves. See *James 1:17*.

The Words, "*whatsoever thou shalt bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on Earth shall be loosed in Heaven*", are of the same meaning as those spoken in *John 20:22-23*.
It's all about the Power & Authority that the *Holy Ghost* exercises through us.
Because only united with *Him* we obtain & use those Power & Authority.
Kindly read *Matthew 6:13, 28:20; & 1Corinthians 6:17*.

628

Q: In the *Book of Acts 20:35*, Apostle Paul quoted the Words of Christ Jesus absent in the Gospels –

It is more blessed to give than to receive.

How to conceive that?

A: It is written,

33 I have coveted no man's silver, or gold, or apparel.
34 Yea, ye yourselves know, that these hands have ministered unto my necessities, and to them that were with me. 35 I have shewed you all things, how that so labouring ye ought to support the weak, and to remember the Words of the Lord Jesus, how He said, It is more blessed to give than to receive. (Acts 20:33-35)

In chapters 264 & 373 of our book, this *Verse 35* got referred to.
Kindly note what is written about our human limitations –

Lo, these are parts of His Ways:
but how little a portion is heard of Him? ... (Job 26:14)

Imagine the three-years Ministry of Lord Jesus. Could the Disciples remember His every Word, when later on, they tried to put their Testimony in writing?

And many other Signs Truly did Jesus in the presence of His Disciples,
which are not written in this Book: but these are written, that ye might believe
that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of GOD; and that believing
ye might have Life through His Name. (John 20:30-31)

And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which,
if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the World itself
could not contain the books that should be written. Amen. (John 21:25)

What the Spirit had brought to the mind of the Four Evangelists (*John 14:26)* was just a brief & concise Account that was found sufficient for our Edification.

Howbeit when He, the Spirit of Truth, is come, He will guide you into all Truth:
for He shall not speak of Himself; but whatsoever He shall hear,
that shall He speak: and He will shew you things to come.
He shall glorify Me: for He shall receive of Mine, and shall shew it unto you.
(John 16:13-14)

Please consider the *implementation* of the Scripture in question – *Acts 20:33-35*.
Have ever seen a Pastor or a Minister who had taken his fair share in the *physical* works of a Church or a Ministry? Happy you are if you do.
See chapters: 56 (The Test of Giving), 431 (For a Memorial of her),
and 504 (Giving & Receiving).

Q: (1) Why are some Christians averse to alcohol? ...
Q: (2) What is wrong with enjoying a glass of wine?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Shortened.)

A: For *natural* wine, please consider the following references.
You can find more in our Bible.

Negative examples – *Genesis 9:20-21 (Noah); 19:33,35 (Lot); 27:24-25 (Isaac).*
The Rules for Priests – *Leviticus 10:9, Numbers 6:20,* and *Ezekiel 44:21*.
Sobriety & Knowledge of the LORD – *Deuteronomy 29:6*.
Designed by GOD to gladden the heart of man – *Psalms 104:15.*
Woe to drunkards – *Proverbs 20:1, 23:29-35; Isaiah 5:11,22, & 28:7-8.*
Stupid feasts – *Isaiah 5:12*.
The Wisdom of sobriety – *Jeremiah 35:6.*
The danger of that indulgence – *Hosea 4:11 & Habakkuk 2:5.*
Worldly blackmail – *Matthew 11:18-19.*
Incompatibility with Presence of the Holy Ghost – *Ephesians 5:18*.
The recommended medicine – *1Timothy 5:23*.
Wise using – *Apocrypha, 2Maccabees 15:39, Tobit 4:15,*
Sirach 19:1-2 & 31:25-31.

You may see chapters 40 (Compromise) & 589 (The evil of alcoholism).

Q: (1) What is the point of stars & planets from a Christian perspective?
Q: (2) And the animals too, like the great apes, for instance, which have no practical use for humans.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: (1) Please read *Genesis 1:14-15*. The Answer is there.
(2) As for the animals, see *Genesis 1:24-25*.
Mind the Words: *GOD saw that it was Good*.
Also note, per *Genesis 1:26-28*, we have *Spiritual Authority* over the Earth.
It was our sinfulness that made changes to flora, fauna, and the human body.

629

Q: How do you understand "*the depths of Satan*" written in *Revelation 2:24*?
Q: And what relevant comments of other Writers, if any, do you agree with?

A: *Revelation 2:20-29* runs:

20 ... I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a Prophetess, to teach and to seduce My Servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. 21 And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. 22 Behold, I will cast her into a bed, and them that commit adultery with her into great tribulation, except they repent of their deeds. 23 And I will kill her children with death; and all the Churches shall know that I am He which searcheth the reins and hearts: and I will give unto every one of you according to your works. 24 But unto you I say, and unto the rest in Thyatira, as many as have not this doctrine, and which have not known the depths of Satan, as they speak; I will put upon you none other burden. 25 But that which ye have already hold fast till I come. 26 And he that overcometh, and keepeth My Works unto the end, to him will I give Power over the nations: 27 And he shall rule them with a Rod of iron; as the vessels of a potter shall they be broken to shivers: even as I received of My Father. 28 And I will give him the Morning Star. 29 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches.

The above is the context, which *Revelation 2:24* belongs in.

Verse 20. Quite possibly, a *false prophet* or a *prophetess* is not compulsorily the one intentionally serving *the devil*, but also the one thinking of him- either herself serving GOD, yet fooled around by *Satan*. However, this Verse makes a stress on *spiritual fornication* and *poisonous media* – the things we discussed in chapters 40 (Compromise) & 49 (The worldly media), respectively.

Verses 21-22 remind us about the Patience of our Father GOD.
Verse 23 was discussed in chapter 260 (*The unbelievers ask*).
Verse 24 – by *The Expanded Bible* – says:

> *But others [the rest] of you in Thyatira have not followed her teaching and have not learned what some call Satan's deep secrets. I say to you that I will not put any other load [burden] on you.*

We should remember the first rule of war: *don't underestimate the enemy*.
That enemy was spoken about in chapters 36, 39, 87, and 662.

His "*depths*" or "*deep secrets*" or whatever other evil is nothing else but deeper & better knowledge of and experience in spiritual tactics & strategy. And that we dealt with in chapter 87 (Discipline in the Church).
So what? We also have been given the Right Weapons as per *Ephesians 6:10-18*. Please, see chapter 444 (Our Spiritual Weapons).

Verses 25-29, as many other Holy Scriptures also do, teach us on Christian Faithfulness. That Teaching reinforces our opposition to every worldly doctrine, tradition, or law contradicting the Law of our GOD.

Regarding the commentaries you mentioned in your question, please start from the Biblical references below, then visit the "References" section of this book.
In chapters 139 (Our Teachers) & 451 (Reading commentaries), we spoke about Teachers. Me, I prefer the way of *Practical Observations* like those taught by Brother *Thomas Scott*.

The references: *Ezekiel 28:3-5 & Daniel 8:24-25* – "*deep things*" of the devil.
John 8:44 & 2Corinthians 4:4 – ditto.
Romans 12:2 – ... be not conformed to this world ...

Q: What was the Leviathan?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: Leviathan is mentioned in *Job 41:1-34 & Psalms 74:14, 104:26;* and *Isaiah 27:1*. Kindly read these Scriptures in their *spiritual* meaning. So, the answer to your question is *Satan*. As simple as that.

Will he make a covenant with thee? ... Behold, the hope of him is in vain ... Who hath prevented Me, that I should repay him? ... His heart is as firm as a stone; Yea, as hard as a piece of the nether millstone. ... Upon Earth there is not his like, who is made without fear. He beholdeth all high things: he is a king over all the children of pride. (Job 41:4, 9, 11, 24, 33, 34)

Thou [GOD] *brakest the heads* of Leviathan in pieces ... (Psalms 74:14)*
[* The chief servants of the evil one.]

In that day the LORD with His Sore and Great and Strong Sword shall punish Leviathan the piercing serpent, even Leviathan that crooked serpent; and He shall slay the dragon that is in the sea. (Isaiah 27:1)

630

Q: In chapter 129, you quoted: "*There is a big difference between what you saw and what happened*."
So, how would *you* explain what happened in *Mark 2:3-12*?

A: It is written,

3 And they come unto Him, bringing one sick of the palsy, which was borne of four. 4 And when they could not come nigh unto Him for the press, they uncovered the roof where He was: and when they had broken it up, they let down the bed wherein the sick of the palsy lay. 5 When Jesus saw their Faith, He said unto the sick of the palsy, Son, thy sins be forgiven thee. 6 But there were certain of the Scribes sitting there, and reasoning in their hearts, 7 Why doth this man thus speak blasphemies? Who can forgive sins but GOD only? 8 And immediately when Jesus perceived in His spirit that they so reasoned within themselves, He said unto them, Why reason ye these things in your hearts? 9 Whether is it easier to say to the sick of the palsy, Thy sins be forgiven thee; or to say, Arise, and take up thy bed, and walk? 10 But that ye may know that the Son of Man hath Power on Earth to forgive sins, (He saith to the sick of the palsy), 11 I say unto thee, Arise, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine house. 12 And immediately he arose, took up the bed, and went forth before them all; insomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified GOD, saying, We never saw it on this fashion. (Mark 2:3-12)

What did happen we can grasp & explain only within the limits of the level o' Faith the LORD our GOD has blessed us with. And that Faith we are supposed to value, train, and use as long as we live.
The same is True about our Communion with GOD by hearing His Holy Spirit.
Now, let's study *Mark 2:3-12* Verse by Verse.

Verses 3-4.
The Faith led people to Jesus, the Man of GOD, capable work *physical* healing for their friend.
"*... they could not come nigh unto Him for the press ...*" means a selfish crowd, on-lookers & busybodies inclusive, since nobody made way for them.

Verse 5.
One can *see* Faith by human actions – the same as "seeing" a wind by its work.
As Lord Jesus had the Authority to forgive sins (see *Verse 10*), so did He.
In a way, we may repeat our reasoning in chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).
Forgiving sins presumes subsequent total (spirit, soul, and body) Healing.

Led by the Holy Ghost, the Angel of GOD stepped forward and the demon, keeping the man in sickness, gets off. For, as we made it clear more than once in this book, the Will of the LORD is very serious business. Note *Isaiah 55:11*.

Verses 6-7.
The only thing demons could do in the circumstances was to throw the thoughts of *unbelief* in the minds of those apt to accommodate it.

Verses 8-10.
The Holy Ghost is a Good company to keep, isn't He? He shows the minds affected by the devil and gives the Right Words to admonish them.

Verses 11-12.
Here we can see little difference between "*I say unto thee*" and "*in the Name of Jesus*" as our Blessed Lord promised us in *Mark 16:17-18* and the Holy Spirit reminded by *John 14:26*.
The Words "*they were all amazed, and glorified GOD, saying, We never saw it on this fashion*" are essential, especially "*glorified GOD*". For the *crowd* had been *spiritually* healed to become a *Church*. The Parallel is *Luke 5:17*.

One might ask, why do so many Prayers *in the Name of Jesus* remain unanswered? Kindly see chapters 194 & 415.

Q: (1) Why do you believe God is Omnipotent?
Q: (2) Omnipotent usually means something like being able to actualize all possible worlds, and other people believe it might mean being able to do anything at all. Why do you believe this?
Q: (3) When the *original Writers* would say God is All-Powerful, do you believe they were thinking about Omnipotence, or could they have been thinking *Powerful* and just used the worship language to describe it?

(Signed: *Christian*, *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) Dear *Christian*, my answer is simple: His Creation makes me think so. Please meditate on *Chapter 1 of Genesis, Isaiah 65:17,* and *John 1:3*.
(2) The answer is the same as the previous one with one amendment: it is hard to push the LORD into the limits of our terminology. Please read *Proverbs 3:5 & Jeremiah 32:17*.
(3) Those "original Writers" wrote down what they *heard*, not thought about. The same is about the language. You may refer to *2Peter 1:20*.

631

Q: It is written,

11 And unclean spirits, when they saw Him, fell down before Him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of GOD. 12 And He straitly charged them that they should not make Him known.

(Mark 3:11-12)

The worship of demons is also seen in *Mark 5:6-8* and other Scriptures. So, the question is: why didn't Jesus accept what was due?

A: Thus saith the LORD,

Give unto the LORD the Glory Due unto His Name; worship the LORD in the Beauty of Holiness. (Psalms 29:2)

"Worship" of evil spirits was but a lame try to make *false* peace with Christ. Their "sincerity" can be compared to that of murderers in *Matthew 27:27-29*. Remember St. Paul's Words: "*speaking the Truth in Love*" in *Ephesians 4:15*. *Mark 3:12* implied that there & then our Father GOD and His Written Word should have been known first. The Cross of Christ and the New Testament were yet to come. (Kindly see chapter 17 – The New Covenant).
In *Mark 3:11-12*, *w*e ought to see that a fake is never acceptable by the LORD. Is such "worship" in any way honest if a *demon* or a *sinner* will continue as such thereafter?

GOD is a Spirit: and they that worship Him must worship Him in Spirit and in Truth. (John 4:24)

So, "Shut up!" should be *our* only possible answer to liars. And *casting out* is the only way to deal with the demons. For such was our Lord's Way.

References: *1Chronicles 16:29* – The Holy Worship.
Psalms 96:9 – ditto.
Jeremiah 13:16 – Give glory to LORD GOD!
John 8:43-45 – Those who cannot worship.

Good reading: *John Calvin, Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists*
Thomas Scott, The Holy Bible, with Explanatory Notes

Relevant movies: *Matthew (1993)* *The Gospel of John (2003)*
Jesus (1979) *Acts (1994)*

632

Q: (1) *Why* were people *"offended at Him"*, as it is written in *Mark 6:3*?
Q: (2) And what are we supposed to learn from that?

A: Let us read the story.

1 And He ... came into His own country; and His Disciples follow Him. 2 And when the Sabbath Day was come, He began to teach in the Synagogue: and many hearing Him were astonished, saying, From whence hath this man these things? And what wisdom is this which is given unto him, that even such mighty works are wrought by his hands? 3 Is not this the carpenter, the son of Mary, the brother of James, and Joses, and of Juda, and Simon? And are not his sisters here with us? And they were offended at Him. 4 But Jesus, said unto them, A Prophet is not without Honour, but in his own country, and among his own kin, and in his own house. 5 And He could there do no Mighty Work, save that He laid His hands upon a few sick folk, and healed them. (Mark 6:1-5)*

By the Amplified Bible, *Verse 3* runs:

... And they were [deeply] offended by Him [and their disapproval blinded them to the fact that He was anointed by GOD as the Messiah].

Why Jesus' neighbors were offended is seen in *John 1:5* & *2Corinthians 4:4*.
As for your second question, it is in line with *Ecclesiastes 1:9* and, therefore, is well worth our consideration.
We should stand out against worldly reason, unbelief, doubt, envy, pride, and other evils the Scripture points at. See chapters 41, 176, and 404.
Imagine yourself hearing something indeed valuable & useful from a person you never expected. What about encountering the Teaching Most Important by the audience which lacked Understanding?

Lord Jesus, the Son of GOD, of all His Eternal Life, thirty-three years was a Man and, before taking up the Ministry of Christ, He was an ordinary carpenter.
Those years of His earthly trade were a stumbling block for many to comprehend the Word of GOD given freely *through* Jesus. Notwithstanding the folks saw & heard Christ, they were deaf to His Teaching. But He, our Lord, taught:

... the Words that I speak unto you I speak not of Myself: but the Father that dwelleth in Me, He doeth the Works. (John 14:10)

* Few humans have ever noticed & comprehended that GOD had chosen His Servants, the Prophets, out of ordinary people at any moment of their Life span.

Such evil as unbelief is “normal” in the atheistic world. Opposition in the form of scorn, contempt, and cruel persecutions is commonplace.
But regardless of any satanic actions, we should follow Christ.

Q: (1) Jews brought about Salvation. (?)
Q: (2) However, *Martin Luther* wrote his “*On The Jews and Their Lies”*.
(3) And *John Calvin* published *“A Response to Questions and Objections of a Certain Jew”*.
(4) *Christians* have had a long history of hating and antagonizing *Jews*, as they feel that the *Jews* are responsible for Jesus’ crucifixion & death. (?)
Q: (5) However, this has always confused me. The *Christian Faith* is built on the belief that Jesus’ death was inevitable and necessary for Atonement and Eternal Salvation of humankind. (?)
Q: (6) Why, then, hate the Jews for bringing about His death?
Q: (7) Should you not embrace and be thankful to them for bringing about this crucial event?
(8) They set the plan of Salvation in motion by bringing His death.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) The (corrected) name of your post, “Jews brought about Salvation”, is wrong. The LORD, our GOD, did that, not Jews. *Isaiah 43:11*.
(2) My Teacher, Martin Luther, was against Judaism, not Jews. I removed what you quoted from his book. It may prove only his *mistake*, not hatred. Our wording should be clear-cut, that’s all. Angry at Master Luther, my other Teacher called him “second to Hitler”, and I was wroth at that Teacher for the offense. Thus we have a wicked chain reaction due to one mistake.
(3) The same can be said about your quoting Brother John Calvin.
(4) Who hated who? A *Christian* hates only Satan, his demons, and evils. As for crucifixion, please, read *Mark 15:13-14, Luke 23:21,* & *John 19:6.*
(5) Fair enough.
(6) There is no reason for hatred. Kindly note that our Heavenly Father is neither blind nor deaf. See *Job 12:22 & 1Corinthians 4:5.*
(7) So what, lovely embrace murderers – Jewish crowd & Roman soldiers?
(8) With that logic, you can be thankful even to those many torturers mentioned in the *Book of Martyrs* and to every pair of idiots, such as Hitler & Stalin, who acted as GOD’s disposable Rod of Correction.
You may see chapter 64 (GOD’s Punishment).

633

Q: Brother, at our recent Small Group Meeting, we discussed *Mark 7:1-23*. Let me know your opinion on how to implement that Scripture today.

A: Well, let's discuss *Mark 7:1-23* (cf., *Matthew 15:1-20 & Luke 11:37-52*).

> *1 Then came together unto Him the Pharisees, and certain of the Scribes, which came from Jerusalem. 2 And when they saw some of His Disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with unwashen, hands, they found fault. 3 For the Pharisees, and all the Jews, except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the Elders. 4 And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brasen vessels, and of tables. 5 Then the Pharisees and Scribes asked Him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the Elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands?*

Verses 1-5 might stand for every *criticism* from whosoever aimed at you or your Local Church or Small Group. Critics – denominationalists, compromisers, unbelievers – neither can nor are willing to help. Why? Read *John 10:10*.

Deuteronomy 23:10-14 & *Leviticus Chapters 13-15* – teach on physical hygiene. (Note, it was *hygiene* taught by the Holy Bible that stopped the bubonic plague – a.k.a., "black death" – in the fourteenth century in Western Europe and saved so many lives.) *Jeremiah 2:22* well differentiates physical and spiritual hygiene.

Many Old Covenant Scriptures became the *traditions of Elders* written down in the *Talmud*. That writ was obviously designed by *Satan* to harden our way to Father GOD. There are a lot of rules, whether religious or secular, the *evil one* breathing from those prescriptions. See "Q & A" chapters 90, 248, and 287.

> *6 He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth Me with their lips, but their heart is far from Me. 7 Howbeit in vain do they worship Me, teaching for Doctrines the commandments of men. 8 For laying aside the Commandment of GOD, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. 9 And He said unto them, Full well ye reject the Commandment of GOD, that ye may keep your own tradition.*

Verses 6-9 should open our eyes on every lie against the Written Word of GOD. See chapters 103 (Avoid errors) & 177 (Truth and lie).

> *10 For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: 11 But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a Gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; he shall be free. 12 And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother; 13 Making the Word of GOD of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye.*

Verses 10-13 exemplify our previous reasoning. Kindly note: "*Moses said*" means, "*the LORD GOD said through Moses*".
See the Parallel in *Matthew 15:4 –*

> *GOD commanded, saying, Honour thy father and mother: and,*
> *He that curseth father or mother, let him die the death. (Matthew 15:4)*

As per Brother Barclay's research, the meaning of the word "*Corban*" was changed more than once. Here, it denoted a Gift to the LORD that can never, by Lord Jesus' Teaching, relieve anyone from following the Written Word of GOD.

> *14 And when He had called all the people unto Him, He said unto them, Hearken unto Me every one of you, and understand: 15 There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man. 16 If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. 17 And when He was entered into the house from the people, His Disciples asked Him concerning the Parable. 18 And He saith unto them, Are ye so without Understanding also? Do ye not perceive, that whatsoever thing from without entereth into the man, it cannot defile him; 19 Because it entereth not into his heart, but into the belly, and goeth out into the draught, purging all meats? 20 And He said, That which cometh out of the man, that defileth the man. 21 For from within, out of the heart of men, proceed evil thoughts, adulteries, fornications, murders, 22 thefts, covetousness, wickedness, deceit, lasciviousness, an evil eye, blasphemy, pride, foolishness: 23 All these evil things come from within, and defile the man.*

Verses 14-23 give us the Teaching of Christ on ruling our tongue. (Kindly refer to chapter 132.) By *Verses 18-19*, all sorts of *physical* foodstuff, including those poisonous and destroying our flesh, are unable to touch our *spirit*.

That conclusion, however, does not relieve us from the Responsibility for our GOD-given *physical* health.

The Bible commands us not to eat *the food sacrificed unto idols* (the subject of chapter 48), the blood, and the dead stuff. We must not ignore Fast (discussed in chapter 73). But our decision "*to eat or not to eat*" comes from the heart (spirit) and thus corresponds to the Teaching given in *Verse 15*.

> Regarding our implementation of Jesus' Teaching, we should always be able to say *No* to the devil and his every human puppet, no matter what.

Q: *Exodus 20:13* is a clear statement that murder is wrong. My questions are: (1) Is execution *murder*? I ask this because, in the Bible, there is Ordered Punishment for a long list of actions.
Q: (2) Is killing in war murder? I suppose there are two questions within this:
Q: (3) Is the killing of *soldiers* murder? There are wars fought in the Bible by GOD's People at His Command.
Q: (4) Is killing *civilians* in war murder?
Joshua 6:17,21 & *Deuteronomy 20:16-17* – both Scriptures said to kill everyone, and this would include children and other non-combatants.
Q: (5) Is *abortion* murder? *Numbers 5:11–31* sound like abortion.
Q: (6) Also, if a child ought to be killed for disobedience, does it make an unwanted child *equal* to a disobedient one?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Edited.)

A: (1) The execution is or is not a murder depending on whether or not the respective verdict conforms with the *Law of GOD*. I had to remove your many references for the sake of brevity. We have the full list of evils worthy of the death penalty in chapter 95 (Capital punishment).
(2) A war is a murderous evil itself, and so are the killings.
Please, have a look at chapter 300 (The evil of wars).
(3) It is murder when LORD GOD does not command that act.
See chapters 125 (Sixth Commandment) & 154 (Soldiers).
(4) The answer is the same as in question (3).
Kindly note that when the LORD command "to kill everyone", it is not *murder* but the *death penalty*. See chapter 26 (Killing Canaanites).
(5) Abortion is murder. See chapter 770 (The Scriptures against abortion).
Your quoting *Numbers 5:11–31* is irrelevant.
(6) An unwanted child cannot be equal to a disobedient one.
Please, check your wording. I had to put "equal to" instead of "classed".

634

Q: How to follow *Matthew 16:6* & *Mark 8:15* at this time?

A: It is written,

... Take heed and beware of the leaven
of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees. (Matthew 16:6)

Take heed, beware of the leaven
of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod. (Mark 8:15)

In the Verses following up – *Matthew 16:7-12* & *Mark 8:16-21* – Lord Jesus reminded His Disciples about the Miracles* o' feeding five & four thousand folks with five & seven loaves of bread, respectively. You may see relevant chapter 56 of this book. Those two Miracles* were among many other proofs of the Mighty Power of our GOD described in our Bible.

The substance of *leaven* makes dough & bread quite different, you know.
Here, "*the leaven of Pharisees*" might stand for Satan-inspired doctrines, teachings, and misinterpreting the Word of GOD. That leaven is aimed at making Believers different: spiritually blind and, as such, easily ruled by the devil.
The "*the leaven of Herod*" might represent satanic teaching – *worldly reason* – the subject of chapter 41 (Common sense). That lie can and does make people *unbelievers*. How? By corrupting their natural (*Genesis 1:27*) Love & Goodness, as well as by compromising with and thus joining ungodliness (*Genesis 1:4*).

Tradition says that Herod was of the sect of Sadducees. A simple comparison of *Matthew 16:6* & *Mark 8:15* readily allows that. But does it matter? The liars & murderers stay such, united or separated. According to *Smith's Bible Dictionary*, that sect didn't believe in the resurrection and rewards or punishment after death. Thus they had never left the heathen world by sticking around between the *letter* of the Law, which they taught, and atheism, which they followed.

Look at our Scriptures in question and remember how often in the Gospels, those *Pharisees & Sadducees* are mentioned together as one gang, notwithstanding substantial differences in their teachings. Don't some modern Churches thus behave, being tolerant of atheism in their countries?

Shall we forget what compromising with Satan made of Chosen People of GOD and their Holy Land?

* When the Disciples of Christ compared those Two Miracles, they had to comprehend: *give everything ye have and let GOD do the rest*. Put Him in the First place in your Life, and He will back you up *whithersoever thou goest*. Doesn't it remain actual?

No matter what Congregation or Confession you are a Member of or what Church Rank you hold. Ask yourself whether the devil's doctrine (dressed up the way pointed at in *2Corinthians 11:13-14*) has blinded you.

Thus saith the LORD,

Let them alone: they be blind leaders of the blind.
And if the blind lead the blind, both shall fall into the ditch.
(Matthew 15:14)

Q: Out of all Christian denominations, which one is True?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021. Condensed.)

A: Hardly such a one exists.
Lord Jesus said:

... thou art Peter, and upon this Rock I will build My Church;
and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. And I will give unto thee
the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on Earth
shall be bound in Heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on Earth
shall be loosed in Heaven. (Matthew 16:18-19)

The same Lord gave us the Eleventh Commandment (chapter 80) –

A New Commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another;
as I have loved you, that ye also love one another. By this shall all men know
that ye are My Disciples, if ye have Love one to another. (John 13:34-35)

Now, do you know one denomination*, which can honestly state that *that* is "My Church" our Lord spoke about? I don't. And I've never been in a Church where, from a pulpit, an accusation finger was not put at some other denomination. However, I believe in *One Indivisible Body of Christ*. See chapters 124 & 581.

* Recently, one inquirer wrote, "demoniations". If it was written intentionally, fine – as they say, "it takes one to know one". Otherwise, if it was a mistake, I dare to justify it. Nothing could be better derived from a word "demon".

635

Q: How would you apply the strategy "*see yourself literally in every negative & erring person*" (recommended in chapter 102) reading about those false teachers and the soldiers who killed Jesus?

A: It is written:

... it is impossible for those who were once Enlightened, and have tasted of the Heavenly Gift, and were made Partakers of the Holy Ghost, and have tasted the Good Word of GOD, and the Powers of the World to come, if they shall fall away, to renew them again unto Repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of GOD afresh, and put Him to an open shame. (Hebrews 6:4-6)

The same *open shame* is a due reward *we* get when, due to *our* betraying Christ, the heathen folks scornfully put forth their dirty fingers at us.

For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the Knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth no more Sacrifice for sins, but a certain fearful looking for of Judgment and Fiery Indignation which shall devour the adversaries. He that despised Moses' Law died without Mercy under two or three witnesses; of how much sorer Punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of GOD, and hath counted the Blood of the Covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of Grace? (Hebrews 10:26-29)

We must be resolute and reject all "reasons" to denounce our Lord Jesus.

Among many other Saints, the Blessed Apostle Peter was condemned to death, and crucified, as some do write, at Rome; albeit some others, and not without cause, do doubt thereof. Hegesippus saith that Nero sought matter against Peter to put him to death; which, when the people perceived, they entreated Peter with much ado that he would fly the city. Peter, through their importunity at length persuaded, prepared himself to avoid. But, coming to the gate, he saw the Lord Christ come to meet him, to Whom he, worshipping, said, "Lord, whither dost Thou go?" To whom He answered and said, "I am come again to be crucified." By this, Peter, perceiving his suffering to be understood, returned into the city. Jerome saith that he was crucified, his head being down and his feet upward, himself so requiring, because he was (he said) unworthy to be crucified after the same form and manner as the Lord was.

(John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Chapter 1)

Perhaps we feel inclined to disagree with Him. But there is a difficulty about disagreeing with GOD. He is the Source from which all your reasoning power comes: you could not be right and He wrong any more than a stream can rise higher than its own source. When you are arguing against Him you are arguing against the very Power that makes you able to argue at all: it is like cutting off the branch you are sitting on.

(C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity, p.48)

Proverbs 30:12 – ... a generation that are pure in their own eyes...
Isaiah 5:21 – ... wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight...
Matthew 26:69-75; Mark 14:66-72; Luke 22:54-62; John 18:15-27 –
– The example of Brother Peter.

Q: If all Members of the Holy Trinity are individually & together God and the Father God is Omniscient, then, by having the God Son being killed on the cross with a given Purpose, is not God committing a suicide?.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020. Condensed.)

A: No, He is not.

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son,
that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life.
For GOD sent not His Son into the World to condemn the World;
but that the World through Him might be saved. (John 3:16-17)

Our Heavenly Father could not send His Son on that cross for suicide only.
It was the Act of Love & the Ultimate Sacrifice.
Neither laying down a Life noe having the Unique Knowledge & Power to take it back again can be called “a suicide”.

I am the Good Shepherd, and know My Sheep, and am known of Mine.
As the Father knoweth Me, even so know I the Father: and I lay down My Life
for the Sheep. And other Sheep I have, which are not of this Fold:
them also I must bring, and they shall hear My Voice;
and there shall be One Fold, and One Shepherd.
Therefore doth My Father love Me, because I lay down My Life,
that I might take it again. No man taketh it from Me, but I lay it down of Myself.
I have Power to lay it down, and I have Power to take it again.
This Commandment have I received of My Father. (John 10:14-18)

636

Q: Please explain the expression "*salted with Fire*" in *Mark 9:49*.

A: Various translations may cause different understanding & interpretations. Wrong are those contrary to one another and the Spirit of the Holy Bible.

Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition runs,

> *For every one shall be salted with Fire,*
> *and every Sacrifice shall be salted with Salt. (Mark 9:49)*

Most of the older and modern English Versions agree with the above wording.
Note the Parallel –

> *10 And now also the Axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth Good Fruit is hewn down, and cast into the Fire. 11 I indeed baptize you with water unto Repentance. But He that cometh after me is Mightier than I, Whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost, and with Fire: 12 Whose Fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly purge His Floor, and gather His Wheat into the Garner; but He will burn up the chaff with Unquenchable Fire. (Matthew 3:10-12)*

Verses 11 & 12 are the subject of chapter 310 (Fire Baptism).
Verses 10-12 imply & exemplify the different meanings of the term "*Fire*":
Verses 10 & 12 indicate Eternal Punishment, whereas, in *Verse 11*, it is a fundamental attribute of Baptism – the Fire of *Love*, *Faith*, *Hope*.

Now, let's get back to our commented Scripture – *Mark 9:49*.
Here we can find still another Value expressed as *Fire* – GOD's Perfect Justice.
See relevant chapters: 320 (The Perfect Justice) & 697 (GOD's Perfect Justice).
His Justice covers all humankind, not only Believers.

Further references –

Leviticus 2:13 – The Salt of the Covenant.
Matthew 3:11-12 – With the Holy Ghost & the Fire.
Colossians 4:6 – Always with Grace, seasoned with Salt.
Hebrews 12:28-29 – Our GOD is a Consuming Fire.
Jude 1:7 – The Vengeance of Eternal Fire.

Q: How shall I find the proper meanings of many other Biblical terms?

A: Sacrifice your time, ponder the context, and lo, listen to the Holy Spirit. Please consider Bible Dictionaries. There are some I put in the References. Take a look at chapter 104. As it is said more than once in our book, there might be several (not contradictory) meanings or ideas in a context.

Q: (1) Is sin unconditional? For example, lying to Nazis to save the Jews in your attic. It is the morally right thing to do. Yet the Bible tells us lying is a sin. If sin is unconditional, then lying to save people would be wrong.

Q: (2) We also know that trying to interpret what is and is not a sin is dangerous because that is up to God, and once we start deciding what is and is not moral, we can stray from God's Command. For example, I do not personally see homosexuality as morally wrong, yet the Bible says it is sinful, so it is a sin. But if I followed my moral path, I would go on a different path from God, and my morals would misalign with God's. Therefore, we cannot rely on ourselves to decide if something is a sin or not. Please explain that.

(Signed: *Christian, Protestant*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) Sin is determined by the Word of GOD only. Call it "Condition". Please note *Ephesians 4:15* discussed in chapter 31 (Speaking the Truth in Love). Your example is answered there too.
(2) If you mean *1Corinthians 4:5*, the Scripture deals with *judging* (and that above the given level of Understanding), not "trying to interpret".

... judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, Who both will bring to Light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have Praise of GOD. (1Corinthians 4:5)

The last is not "dangerous". Remember Who is our Counselor – the Holy Ghost.

... Receive ye the Holy Ghost: whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained. (John 20:22-23)

Homosexuality is evil. Please see the Index section for relevant chapters.
Signing "Christian", mind well:

... whoever is united with the Lord is One with Him in Spirit. (1Corinthians 6:17, New International Version)

637

Q: How do you understand *Mark 10:31*?

A: It is written,

28 Then Peter began to say unto Him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed Thee. 29 And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for My sake, and the Gospel's, 30 but he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, Houses, and Brethren, and Sisters, and Mothers, and Children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the World to come Eternal Life. 31 But many that are first shall be last; and the last first. (Mark 10:28-31)

Considering the above Scripture, I read *Verse 31* this way: most of our Christian Leaders will find themselves the last persons in the Kingdom of Heaven, whereas some not high-ranking Christians may receive a better Reward.
The Word "*many*" should call the attention of our Shepherds, as many Bishops, Pastors, Teachers, and so on tend to forget the Words of our Lord written in *Matthew 5:5, 20:25-28, 23:8,* and many other Scriptures teaching us Humility.
In *Verse 30,* I capitalized what can be preceded by or changed for "Christian".

Brother Barclay thought that *Verse 31* was "*a Warning to Peter*".
I respectfully disagree. In *Verse 28*, Brother Peter said "*we*", not "*I*".
He had yet to know the Truth of *James 1:17*, but that is another story.

Q: What is the difference between *Evangelical* and *Evangelist*?

(Signed: *Christian, Anglican*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, February 2021. Condensed.)

A: Far as I understand,

Evangelical means belonging to the Gospels, to Preaching of Good News, standing upon the Teaching of Christ Jesus.

Evangelist is a full-time Preacher of Good News & the Teaching of Christ.
You can find that Title in *Ephesians 4:11*.
It also stands for a Writer of one of the Four Gospels.

Both terms are derived from *Evangelio* – Gospel.

638

Q: *Mark 11:13-14* describes the curse on a fig tree.
But "*... the time of figs was not yet.*" If so, what was the reason to curse?

A: Indeed, it is written,

And seeing a fig tree afar off having leaves,
He came, if haply He might find any thing thereon: and when He came to it,
He found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not yet. And Jesus answered
and said unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever ... (Mark 11:13-14)

Most, if not all, English translations of the Bible run the same way. In this regard, note the opinion of Master Luther, mentioned in chapters 102, 103, and 118.
However, reading the Comments of Adam Clarke, one can find that he was in disagreement with the above translation and the meaning it might imply.
As Brother Clarke wrote,

"... 'For it was not the season of gathering figs yet.'
This I am fully persuaded is the True sense of this Passage ..."

That means the tree had not *any* fruits, ripe to reap or growing to be such or buds. So is the reason to curse –

... every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit
is hewn down, and cast into the fire. (Matthew 3:10)

A tree cannot be altogether useless, as it gives a shadow in heat, wood for carpentry, etc. But our human fruitlessness is something else in the Eyes of GOD.

Were they ashamed when they had committed abomination? Nay, they were not
at all ashamed, neither could they blush: therefore shall they fall among them
that fall: in the time of their Visitation they shall be cast down, saith the LORD.
I will surely consume them, saith the LORD: there shall be no grapes on the vine,
nor figs on the fig tree, and the leaf shall fade; and the things that I have given
them shall pass away from them. (Jeremiah 8:12-13)

... I know thy works, that thou hast a name that thou livest, and art dead.
Be watchful, and strengthen the things which remain, that are ready to die:
for I have not found thy works Perfect before GOD. Remember therefore how
thou hast received and heard, and hold fast, and repent. If therefore thou shalt
not watch, I will come on thee as a thief, and thou shalt not know what hour
I will come upon thee. (Revelation 3:1-3)

639

Q: In *Matthew 21:12-13*, we read about Purifying of the Temple by Jesus. So, what does that Scripture teach us today?

A: It is written in every Gospel.

> *And Jesus went into the Temple of GOD, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the Temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves. And said unto them, It is written, My House shall be called the House of Prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves. (Matthew 21:12-13)*

Read about the same event in *Mark 11:15-17*, *Luke 19:45-46*, & *John 2:13-17*.

What do these Scriptures teach us today? Compare what is written to what you factually see in every place that your Christian Congregation, Group, Ministry, or Team dedicates to Prayer, Worship, Works, or Study. There is nothing wrong in selling legally distributed copies of Christian movies, publications, etc., provided it is not done in the place and at the time of Service.

The same can be said about any other distraction: the presence of little children (see chapter 446), irrelevant talks to one another, mobile phones, and so forth.

Now, how to follow Christ when we notice any profaning of the Holy Place?
To make *a scourge of small cords*, as Lord Jesus did in *John 2:15*?
In such a case, our Whip should be the same *Written Word of GOD* Christ Jesus used in *Mark 11:17 & Luke 19:46*.

What, you had honestly tried, and it did not help? Think about your leaving, as chapter 242 suggested. A compromise in Christian Discipline matters is a sin.

> Refer to *Psalms 69:9; 1Corinthians 3:16-17, 6:19-20;* & *2Corinthians 6:16*.
> You may see chapters 68 (The Sacrifice of time),
> 87 (Discipline in the Church), and 424 (The sacrifice of fools).

Q: During the protests, the destruction of property is not good. So, why did Jesus turned tables & goods and created destruction at the Temple?
Q: What is the difference between the two?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: I agree with you regarding the “property”. The last thing crossing the mind of a protester would be the destruction of *his* property, would it?

But note the Words “My House” & “My Father’s House” in the Scriptures discussed in the previous question. That was (and remains) the Property of LORD GOD. That is the difference.

Q: What do you consider the grounds for divorce?

(Signed: *Christian, Evangelical*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: Lord Jesus said,

... whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery ... (Matthew 5:32)

We should consider this Scripture above every “special” situation.
See chapters 98 (Facing divorce) & 126 (The Seventh Commandment).

Q: Does the Bible say anything about teens with a perverted attitude towards females? I’m a teenager who struggles a lot with this problem.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2021.)

A: We can find there the subjects of *teens* and *perversions* separately.
Thus the Holy Bible has the Scripture about a teenager – *Mark 5:42-43* – relevant to your question. Read chapter 171 (The spiritual starvation).
Why is it relevant? Because deprived of the Truth of GOD, you can find yourself in whatever devilish dung, sexual perversions inclusive.

The Amplified Bible (see *https://www.biblegateway.com*) presented us with an interesting commentary on *Matthew 21:15-16*. That’s a better story.
Please see the end of chapter 518 (*Jeremiah, Chapter 10*).
And there are many Scriptures about sexual perversions.
We discussed that subject in chapter 182 (Sexual perversions).
In your question, the words “struggles a lot” are good.
Kindly note that the fight will be much more productive if you stand on the Word of GOD. What about *Luke 15:20*, mentioned so often in this book?
From personal experience, I strongly advise you to take your share in Charitable Works – find your Christian Ministry.
Have a look at chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry). Godspeed.

640

Q: What is our Lesson in *Matthew 26:41* & *Mark 14:38*?

A: It is written:

Watch and pray, that ye enter not into temptation:
the spirit indeed is willing, but the flesh is weak. (Matthew 26:41)

Watch ye and pray, lest ye enter into temptation.
The spirit Truly is ready, but the flesh is weak. (Mark 14:38)

To begin with, as the preceding Verses in both Gospels make it clear, Lord Jesus did not ask His Disciples for anything impossible, just a *Prayer Backup*.
The *temptation*, in that case, was (and so often is) to give in to physical tiredness and act against the Word of the Lord. We defined a *temptation* in chapter 184.
In the above Scriptures, the first lines teach us a *Prayer* as a good remedy against the evil of *temptation*.
The second lines are implicative. Our physical endurance or fortitude depends on the power of our spirit, which, in turn, is determined by whether the *Holy Ghost* indwells our inner being. The conclusive Words "*the flesh is weak*" testify that being "*willing*" and "*ready*" is not enough.
The blessed *Book of Martyrs*, bearing Witness of the Power of the Holy Spirit of GOD, is the best proof of my point.
Therefore, the Lesson for us is to value the Precious Communion with our Heavenly Father, which His Holy Spirit freely offers. Walk in that Spirit.
See chapter 292 (Fellowship with GOD).

For I delight in the Law of GOD after the inward man:
but I see another law in my members, warring against the Law of my mind,
and bringing me into captivity to the law of sin which is in my members.
(Romans 722-23)

This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfil the lust of the flesh.
For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh:
and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do
the things that ye would. (Galatians 5:16-17)

Good reading: *Kenneth Copeland, How To Discipline Your Flesh*
Gloria Copeland, Walk In The Spirit

641

Q: How would you interpret *Mark 15:33*?

A: It is written,

And when the sixth hour was come,
there was darkness over the whole land until the ninth hour. (Mark 15:33)
See the same in *Matthew 27:45* & *Luke 23:44*.

Probably, at that place & time, there should *not* have been any darkness. Otherwise, what is the reason for this Scripture? Here, I see the Sign of *spiritual* darkness ("*over all the Earth*", as Brother Luke put it).
It could also mean the Grief of our Heavenly Father, for the spiritual darkness would be *accepted*, whereas the Price paid for Redemption had been *rejected* by most of humankind.

... Let him be crucified ... Let him be crucified ...
His blood be on us, and on our children. (Matthew 27:22,23,25)

And the Light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not ...
And this is the condemnation, that Light is come into the World, and men loved darkness rather than Light, because their deeds were evil. (John 1:5 & 3:19)

Q: (1) Did Jesus only die for the sins of Israel or the whole World?
In reference to *Mathew 15:24*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: Lord Jesus died for all, not only the population of Israel. See *John 3:16-17*.
As for your reference, let us find the right Parallel to explain it.

I am not sent but unto the lost Sheep of the House of Israel.
(Mathew 15:24)

Thus saith the LORD; stand in the Court of the LORD's House,
and speak unto all the cities of Judah, which come to worship
in the LORD's House, all the Words that I command thee to speak unto them;
diminish not a Word. If so be they will hearken, and turn every man
from his evil way, that I may repent me of the evil, which I purpose
to do unto them because of the evil of their doings. (Jeremiah 26:2-3)

So, *Mathew 15:24* may stand for a "second chance". See this term in the Index.

642

Q: I have forty questions.
Regarding the world religion (questions 1-3).

A: Thanks for your questions. Kindly see the answers in chapters 642-650.

Q: (1) If a hundred different religions have to be wrong for yours to be right, does it show that people from all over the world invent gods that don't exist?

A: [Regardless of what you mean by "religion(s)"], No, it does not. For there is one named *Satan* to concoct all those lies and pass them on to the minds welcoming. See *2Corinthians 4:4.*

Q: (2) If your parents had belonged to a different religion, do you think you would belong to that religion too?

A: Yes, I do. And I would surely continue so until the Time appointed by the LORD to call me where I fit right in. It is written,

I, even I am the LORD; and beside Me there is no Saviour. (Isaiah 43:11)

Q: (3) If people from the five major religions are told conflicting information by their respective gods, should any of *the latter* be believed?

A: People are to decide that personally. On that decision depends the Eternal destiny of theirs & their children. *Exodus 20:1-6 & Deuteronomy 5:6-10.*

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian* May 2019. See chapters 642-650)

Q: This I don't understand. Two men die, one at 22, the other at 90.
The 22-year-old sinner goes to hell. After reflecting on his life experiences at 45, the 90-year-old had a Revelation and became Christian, thus going to Heaven. That is immoral, as one had more time to repent and be saved.
And, if God compensates by making the sentence lighter for the 22-year-old, this is *immoral* as well, since the 22-year-old knowingly committed a crime yet received a softer conviction merely due to spiritual ignorance.
These two scenarios are irreconcilable. How does Christianity explain this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Edited.)

A: It is written,

... there is no respect of persons with GOD. (Romans 2:11)

Add to that
the concept that our GOD, Almighty Creator, is above His Creation, Time inclusive. He can see the future, e.g., that 22-year-old character would never repent and live long enough to make many folks very sorry about that.
On the other hand, for 45 years, a 90-year-old could resist the devil and do many good things to his (her) neighbors. The LORD could see that too.
The above is my simple guess. In reality, the vast picture of Life is much more complicated. Thus it is wise to praise GOD rather than doubt Him.

Q: (1) When you hear a fact of science that goes against a traditional religious understanding you hold, how do you respond?.
(2) What is your view of science overall?
(3) Do you think it serves a worthy purpose in society?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) Honestly? I would completely ignore that "fact". Kindly see chapter 103.
(2) Please read chapter 290 (Science).
(3) Speaking of *atheistic* science, negative on that. See *2Corinthians 10:5*.

Q: I heard that there was a corrective surgery & treatment for children who are born hermaphrodites. If *your child* was born a hermaphrodite, would you apply for such a correction made to an infant, or let it grow up with both sex organs and decide for him (her) self later on as for surgery & treatment?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: In your question, let me take "your child" for "a child", okay?
So, I would propose & support the correction ASAP.
And that (along with respective Prayer Support) for *every* child thus born.

Q: Is there any amount of evidence that one can give that will cause you to leave Christianity?
Q: If so, what is it?
Q: If not, then don't you have blind faith?
(*https://carm.org/atheism/questions*, March 2021.)

A: I can only repeat my Statement published in chapter 663: Nobody can prove or disprove or defend GOD. What you call "blind faith" I name *Faith*.
Moreover, I don't have to *believe* when I *know*. You may see chapter 52.

643

Q: Regarding Communication with God (questions 4-7):
(4) How can you tell the Voice of God from a voice in your head?

A: Before you wrote this question down, there were some thoughts in your head too. And, before thoughts, there was an attitude of your heart. If one of those thoughts was, "*It is written ...*" and the right Scripture followed, *that* would have been the Voice of GOD. Your attitude toward Him was decisive. However, this reasoning of mine is simplified. *1Corinthians 13:9-10.*

Q: (5) How can you tell the Voice of God from the voice of the devil?

A: Certainly, the devil might try to use the Word of GOD the wrong way, as he did so in *Matthew 4:1-11*. In the same Account, we can note that Jesus followed the Holy Will of our Heavenly Father (*Verse 1*) and spoke the Scriptures shown by His Holy Spirit. So, the Voice of the LORD cannot & doesn't contradict any Scripture of the Bible. His Will remains unchanged. See *Malachi 3:6.*

Q: (6) Would you find it easier to kill someone if you believed God supported you in the act?

A: For starters, it is forbidden by *Exodus 20:13 & Deuteronomy 5:17.* Therefore, your words "easier" & "supported" are wrong. They allow human reasoning to come before GOD's. The right way for the act is His clear & direct Command heard, backed by His Written Word, and obeyed. Kindly see chapters 26 (Killing Canaanites) & 95 (Capital punishment).

Q: (7) If GOD told you to kill an atheist, would you?

A: My reasoning here is the same as in the previous question. The long list of deadly crimes in chapter 95 helps to see *atheism* as the root of those evils. Chapters 131 & 705 (Executioner) ought to be referred to as well.
Kindly note *1Corinthians 6:17.*

Therefore, the only right answers to whatever questions you ask Christians are those backed by the Written Word of GOD and given us by His Holy Spirit.

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian*, May 2019. Chapters 642-650.)

Q: What does the Bible say about sex *after* Marriage?
Q: Are there more Stipulations?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: The first Scripture crossing my mind is *Malachi 2:14-16.*
Look at the wording offered by Expanded Bible at <*biblegateway.com*>.
Regarding Stipulations, the first & foremost here is our *Faithfulness to Marriage*. Sex is to be in its proper place, i.e., second to *Love*. If sex comes first, then *adultery* follows.

Q: How can Worshipping God be a free choice if *hell* exists to punish all non-believers?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Edited.)

A: That Worship is not a free choice. For me, it is as natural as Life.
But *hell* is free to choose.

Q: For Christians who pray to Jesus in the Hope that He will intercede with God, does this make sense if Jesus and God are One?
(*https://carm.org/atheism/questions*, March 2021. Edited.)

A: I believe in the Holy Trinity of GOD (chapter 459). Therefore I just pray to GOD. To answer your question, such a Prayer to our Lord Jesus (as per *1John 2:1-2*) makes sense only if a Christian sincerely repents of the sin(s) committed. Kindly see *Psalms 34:18*.

Q: Why are modern-day Miracles less impressive than those in Biblical times?
(*https://carm.org/atheism/questions*, March 2021.)

A: I agree with the answer given by the <*carm.org*> site.
However, kindly note that, in a way, modern Miracles are even more impressive than those in Biblical times.
First & foremost, Christ said so in *John 14:12*.
Second, following the Twelfth Commandment (*Matthew 28:19-20*), we, Christians (as the Instruments in Mighty Hands of the LORD), manage to build on & on the Church of GOD and thus help Salvation to a great more people than in the time of Lord Jesus' Messianic Ministry.
This is the Greatest Miracle in the history of humankind.
You may find Miracle(s) in the Index section of this book.

644

Regarding morality (questions 8-13).

Q: (8) When an atheist is kind & charitable out of the kindness of his heart, is his behavior more or less commendable than a religious man who does it because God instructed him to?

A: When an *atheist* is kind & charitable out of the Goodness of his (her) heart, that behavior is Right in the Eyes of GOD. *1John 3:7.*
A Christian, who does it because GOD instructed him to, has the same Approval. *Romans 2:11*.
To be more accurate, let me clarify "atheist" as a person who has not come to GOD via Christ Jesus as yet. For True Charity & Kindness are the Gifts from Above only. *James 1:17.*

Q: (9) If you are against the Crusades and the Inquisition, would you have been burned alive as a heretic during those events?

A: Here, I have to narrow such general terms as "Crusades" and "Inquisition" to the known satanic events of the "dark ages".
Yet, kindly note *Ecclesiastes 1:9.*
Would I have to pay for my Faith by being burned alive (or otherwise executed) as a "heretic" (or any other labels) during (always possible) persecutions of Christians? Yes, I would, given the Holy Will of GOD is such. Kindly read chapters 99 (A cup of water) & 603 (Persecutions).

Q: (10) If your interpretation of the Holy Book causes you to condemn your ancestors for having a different interpretation, will your descendants condemn you in the same way?

A: GOD is First. From Him comes Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom.
See chapter 58 (K & U & W). Only this way the Knowledge of the Holy Scriptures might come to me. The interpretation – explanation, teaching, preaching – is a serious business. I would prefer Communion, as this book exemplifies. There is no reason for me to "condemn" my ancestors – Christians – who served GOD before me other than willingly condemn myself. Mess. Don't ignore *Romans 2:1.*
As for my descendants, I have no idea. Our Spiritual Warfare continues. And, every war does not consist only of parades – the losses are there too.

Q: (11) Rape wasn't always a crime in the Middle East two thousand years ago. Is that why "do not rape" is not part of the Ten Commandments?

A: "Rape wasn't always a crime in the Middle East two thousand years ago." – Says who: the old writs or modern newspapers? Whatever, but *lies* are as old as the *devil*. Here, I would prefer to talk about the Written Word of GOD only. Kindly read *Romans 3:4.*
As for the Ten Commandments, they embrace more than you and I might think of and well stand out against every evil, "do not rape" inclusive. That sin is condemned by the Seventh Commandment of the Holy Law – *Exodus 20:14 & Deuteronomy 5:18.* Please, refer to "Q & A" chapter 126.

Q: (12) Do animals need *God-given morality* to understand how to care for their young, co-operate, or feel anguish at the loss of a companion?
Q: Why do we?

A: What you call "God-given morality", I name *GOD's Image & Likeness*. And, as far as my Knowledge & Understanding goes, what animals need is *our* human keeping of what had been given by GOD to *us* so long ago, even that Precious Image & Likeness, which *presumed* Spiritual Authority over animals. Kindly read *Genesis 1:26-28* and see chapters 28 (The Word about animals) & 312 (Our spiritual Authority) for more.

Q: (13) If an organized religion requires a civilization in which to spread, how could the last exist without first having a moral code to make it civil?

A: Sorry, but you operate the terms, which sound strange (or required clarification) to me as a Christian. What you call "an organized religion" I can accept only as *Christianity*. The "civilization" for me is *Creation*, Humanity being a Masterpiece thereof. A "moral code" is clearly seen in the *Law of GOD*. And "civil" is to mean *Righteous* before the LORD, our GOD.

This way, your question turns into the answer: Christianity has all GOD's Great Creation in which to spread; in the latter, our Humankind should live by the Law of Father GOD in Righteousness to the Glory of the LORD. Please, read *Romans 1:16-17.*
You may refer to chapter 661 (Morality).

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian* May, 2019. Chapters 642-650.)

645

Regarding the Characteristics of God (questions 14-19).

Q: (14) All-Knowing God can read your mind, so why does He require you to demonstrate your Faith by Worshipping Him?

A: When you look for needful information or a solution to a problem, would you start from the highest or the lowest source thereof?

Call unto Me, and I will answer thee, and shew thee
Great and Mighty things, which thou knowest not. (Jeremiah 33:3)

Apparently, in this discussion, you have ignored the *best* source, choosing instead to try the *least*. Whatever.
LORD GOD does require us to prove our *Faith* for more than one reason. *Worship*, which I suspect you understand little, exceeds our Services in Temples but embraces all Christian Life. Kindly note *James 2:26*.
Faith is the Power of our spirit and the Source of Life. *Romans 1:17; 3:28*.
By Faith, we receive GOD's Support. *2Chronicles 20:20 & Matthew 21:22*.
Faith is the ground of our True Intelligence & Education. *Hebrews 11:3*.
Our Faith is the Victory (in this dispute too). *Ephesians 6:16* & *1John 5:4*.
Faith gives Peace. *Romans 5:1*. May this sink in. The list is much longer.

Q: (15) If God is All-Knowing, why do the Holy Books describe Him as surprised or angered by the actions of humans?
Q: He should have known what was going to happen, right?

A: Wrong. The LORD is Omniscient. The Holy Bible describes Him as best as our (Prophets' & Translators' & Readers') limitations allow. So, praise Him. For being "surprised" or "angered", as it may seem to a human, He is Patient with us. Knowing "what was going to happen", He calls His wayward Children – ... *for they know not what they do. Luke 23:34*.

Q: (16) All-Knowing God knows who will ultimately reject Him.
Why does God create people who, as He knows, will end up in hell?

A: The Purpose of the LORD to create humans is best stated in *Genesis 1:26*.
GOD's Estimation of His Creation is written down in *Genesis 1:31*.
Kindly note: our Father GOD is the Source of Eternal Life too. *Isaiah 43:11*.
Make your choices. Read *Joshua 24:14-15*.

Q: (17) If GOD is All-Knowing, then why did He make humans, knowing that He would, eventually, have to send Jesus to His death?

A: The Reason for creating humans has been answered to your previous question. And the following Scripture might explain the Purpose of our Lord Jesus' Ministry.

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son,
that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life.
For GOD sent not His Son into the World to condemn the World;
but that the World through Him might be saved. (John 3:16-17)

You may find more in chapter 4 (The Cross).

Q: (18) Why did a *supposedly* Omnipotent God take six days to create the Universe, and why did He require Rest on the seventh day?

A: Note, your word "supposedly" is the *blasphemy* against GOD and the *offense* to Christians. It is the very *insult* you "supposedly" tried to avoid, given I have understood correctly the preface to your "40 Questions".
Your question is answered at the beginning of chapter 331 (Sabbath).

Q: (19) Is Omnipotence necessary to create our Universe when a larger & denser Universe would have required more Power?

A: Either I don't understand your question, or you the *Omnipotence*, or both.
And who in the World can comprehend something like "a larger, denser Universe" which "would have required more Power" when such stuff as "our Universe" is beyond our human comprehension?
Please see *Isaiah 65:17* regarding New Creation.
That New Creation is also mentioned in *Isaiah 66:22* & *Revelation 21:1*.
Nowhere is said "larger" or "denser", just *New*.
Personally, I see the Reason for New Creation as the need for the total annihilation of what we, humans, so badly spoiled, even our Earth and her atmosphere. The rest of the Universe might stay as it is.
However, it is written: *Thy Will be done*. Amen.

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian*, May, 2019. Chapters 642-650.)

Q: I have heard, Christians say, “Thank you, God!” when they are Thankful, “God works in Mysterious Ways” when they do not understand God, and “God does not intervene” when God does not fix something (like peace). Don’t these sentences contradict each other?
Q: So, does or does not God intervene?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: I have heard that too, except the last, “GOD does not intervene”.
But let us assume, you’ve heard that, okay?
In that case, you heard the words of or communicated with the people unlearned. Kindly note *Psalms 89:14*.
Kindly see chapters 64 (GOD’s Punishment), 320 (The Perfect Justice), and 697 (GOD’s Perfect Justice) of this book.

Q: Does God have free will?
Q: And if He does, how does it differ from a human’s free will?
(Signed: *Agnostic, Ex-Protestant*)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: GOD Creator has *Freedom* & *Free Will*. See *Jeremiah 32:17*.
Created in His Image & Likeness, we have those Gifts too. Yet, the LORD’s Free Will does not affect His Love & Wisdom (*Malachi 3:6*), whereas our Free will, contaminated by sin, worsens GOD’s Image & Likeness in us.
In this book, kindly see the Index for more.

Q: How would you reintroduce Christianity to someone who experienced severe trauma from their previous experience with Christianity?.
Most, if not all, atheists experienced some degree of psychological trauma due to Christianity being used in an abusive manner to reinforce the projector’s beliefs (i.e., using Christianity to suppress freedom of intellectual thought or discussion).
Q: How would you try to change that deeply implanted image of your religion to someone with such negative prior experience?
(Signed: *Atheist, Secular Humanist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, September 2020.)

A: Any trauma “due to Christianity” is impossible.
Kindly avoid implying any “(re)introduction into evil”.
Back to the question, I would recommend the Blessed *Book of Martyrs*, written by Brother John Fox. For nobody willingly dies for lies.

646

Regarding the Bible (questions 20-22).

Q: (20) Why are Churches filled with riches when Jesus asked His Followers to give their wealth away?

A: According to *Webster's Dictionary (1911)*, "*Church – the collective Body of Christians; a particular Body of Christians; the Clergy*".
(*Clergy* – by the same source – *a Body of men set apart by Ordination for the Service of the Church.*)

If you call "Church" every building with a cross on the roof, I don't.
And I have never joined a Church financially rich.
However, I accept the info of gathering excessive monetary wealth by some (not all) Christians & Ministers. Otherwise, what *Revelation 3:17-18* is for?
But the more of *mammon* in our *hearts* the less we are Christians – Faithful Followers of Christ. Read *Matthew 6:19-24; Luke 12:33-34 & 16:13*.
Therefore, why all that false witnessing?

Q: (21) While in the desert, Jesus rejected the temptations of the devil.
He didn't censor or kill the devil, so why are Christians so in favor of censoring or condemning many earthly temptations?

A: Jesus, God from Eternity to Eternity, was a Man for 33 years of His Ministry. That Ministry was not about killing or censoring, much rather Teaching. And how to fight temptations of the devil by the Written Word of GOD was a crucial part of His Teaching & Personal Example.
"Censoring" is a wrong word and a strange accusation. *Censoring* has two chief meanings: *prohibition* & *criticism*. The first sounds ridiculous, at least officially, for Christian states are not so numerous, are they? Within a family, it is a matter of personal Accountability of parents before the LORD. And I don't think the families living without GOD are in any way happier.
The second term is strictly personal business, a matter of choice.
We preach the Gospel of Repentance unto Salvation and Life Eternal.
You teach all contrary. May the Time be our Judge. See *Ecclesiastes 3:1-8*.

Q: (22) Given that the story of Noah's Ark was copied almost word-for-word from the much older "Sumerian Epic of Atrahasis"
(https://owlcation.com/humanities/The-Sumerian-Flood-Story),
does this mean that our true ruler is the supreme sky god, Anu?

A: "Given that the story of Noah's Ark was copied ..." – *Given* but not *taken*. Do you indeed believe "*The-Sumerian-Flood-Story*", which you published? That concoction of Satan is a bit younger (and never older, as his corrupted mind was younger & weaker than the Mind of his Creator) than the Account of *Genesis Chapters 6-8*. Much the same way, Satan (playing "the Angel of Light") founded the Church of Mormons. *2Corinthians 11:13-14*. Verily, *there is no new thing under the Sun.*
Now, "... does this mean that our true ruler is the supreme sky god, Anu?" Yes, it does, if "our" stands for *unbelievers'* and "the supreme sky god, Anu" – for one of many nicknames of *Satan*. Mind well *John 8:44*.

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian*, May, 2019. Chapters 642-650.)

Q: What did God do before creating humans? Bible says He exists forever.
Q: So, how did He pass His Time before creating us?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Bible also says,

All things were made by Him;
and without Him was not any thing made that was made. (John 1:3)

Thus, Time was created by the LORD. In *Genesis 1:1*, The Word *Beginning* applies to Creation, not the Creator. *Revelation 3:14* & *Deuteronomy 29:29.*

Q: (1) How could Satan think that he could have a revolt against someone Who is All-Knowing and All-Powerful?
(2) How could there even be a war in Heaven when God would know that beforehand and could wipe out all opposition?
(3) Why did God try to kill Moses right after sending him on the Mission to free the Jews from Egypt (*Exodus 4:24-26*)?
(4) And then why did a foreskin-ectomy stop Him?
http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.
April 2021. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1-2) I guess the evil one had the same stupid logic as those who blaspheme our LORD GOD without a second thought. See chapter 629 and the Index.
(3-4) As Brother Thomas Scott explained, Moses was rebuked for neglecting to circumcise his son. His Mission demanded of him to be the Example of Obedience to the Covenant of GOD.

Regarding religious conversion (questions 23-27).

Q: (23) If your desire is to convert atheists so that they become more like you, do you think that you are currently better than them?

A: My desire is to follow the Twelfth Commandment ("Q & A" chapter 43). But "so that they become more like you" is not written there – viz., in *Matthew 28:19-20*. And I cannot think myself in whatsoever way "better" than anyone, atheists inclusive. Kindly read *Romans 3:23.*

Q: (24) If religious people don't respect their children's right to pick their own religion, how can society expect religious people to respect anyone's right to freedom of religion?

A: Christians' first Respect is their Heavenly Father and His Written Word. We call it the Sacred Fear of GOD. Our Education is *Deuteronomy 6:4-7*. What you call "respect their children's right to pick their own religion" I call *respecting the mass madness to abandon GOD and follow Satan*. That I cannot and won't ever respect. What the antichristian society expects or respects is my last concern.

Q: (25) If Missionaries from your Religion *should* be sent to convert people in other countries, *should* missionaries from other religions be sent to your country for the same reason?

A: Christian Missionaries *can* be sent by the LORD, their GOD, only. Note *Ephesians 4:11-13*. That is well within our Twelfth Commandment. The "missionaries from other religions" *are* sent. They, as it seems to me, have been fooled by the devil and *should not* be welcomed by Christians. *Matthew 23:15, 2Corinthians 11:2-4, Galatians 1:6-9,* & *1Timothy 2:5*.

Q: (26) If children are likely to believe in Santa Claus and fairies, does this explain why religion has been taught to children for thousands of years?

A: Little children believe the words of their parents, full stop. You may refer to *Deuteronomy 6:6-9, 11:18-21, 32:46-47; Proverbs 22:6,15, 23:13-14; Matthew 19:14; &c., &c*. So, what would *our* children believe and who they would listen to is entirely up to *us*. I have no idea what children around the World have been taught by their parents for thousands of years, but I can well guess it seeing the results.

Q: (27) When Preachers and Prophets claim to be special Messengers of God, they often receive special benefits from their followers. Does this ever cause you to doubt their intentions?

A: "To be" and "claim to be" are things different. The Messengers of GOD should reject any "special benefits" rather than accept them. *1Kings 13:7-9, Acts 20:34-35, 1Corinthians 4:10-16, & 1Thessalonians 2:9*. I neither listen to nor support the "messengers" acting otherwise.

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian*, May 2019. Chapters 642-650.)

Q: Would you say that Christianity is about obtaining a grand afterlife or achieving spiritual enlightenment?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: I would say both. It is Preaching of Repentance unto Salvation as the only Way to the Life Eternal and teaching the True Spiritual Values. *John 14:6.*

Q: (1) If the fruit of the *Tree of knowledge of good and evil* contains that knowledge, then how could Adam & Eve have known it was "wrong" to disobey God and eat the fruit before they did?
Q: (2) Also, if God had explained to Adam & Eve what right and wrong were before they ate the fruit so that they would understand why it was wrong to eat the *apple*, then wouldn't God have essentially given them the knowledge that He had just forbidden them to have? Remember: *this* is the *original sin*, the basis for the need for Salvation in Christianity.
Q: (3) Why did God put the Tree of knowledge in the Garden of Eden?
Q: (4) Especially if He knew what was going to happen?
(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Edited.)

A: (1) Please, read chapter 440 (The Tree of knowledge of good and evil). Adam & Eve *knew* Father GOD and *heard* His Word. Was it not enough?
(2) The LORD did explain that in *Genesis 2:16-17*. Kindly read it.
Where did you find "apple" in *Genesis*? And who taught you about "the original sin, the basis for the need for Salvation"?
(3) Read the first three Chapters of *Genesis*. See chapter 440 named above.
(4) Please see also the Index for GOD's – Omniscience & Will.

Regarding Miracles (questions 28-31).

Q: (28) When you declare a Miracle, does this mean you understand everything that is possible in nature?

A: Probably, you and I define a *Miracle* differently.
Firstly, I can see Miracles in our Heavenly Father, all His spiritual & physical Creation, our Life, and the work of Harvest Law therein.
Secondly, it is every phenomenon a Christian mind explains as the LORD's Divine Intervention or an Answer to our Prayers.

By *Webster's Dictionary (2001)*, Miracle is,
1. an effect or extraordinary event in the physical world that surpasses all known human or natural powers and is ascribed to a supernatural cause.
2. such an effect or event manifesting or considered as a Work of GOD ...

Me, I don't "declare a Miracle" but testify what LORD GOD has done for a Christian. Such a Testimony I state to my Friends in Christ only.
See *Matthew 7:6*.
And, as far as I "understand everything that is possible in nature", there is absolutely nothing in our social life, science, flora, fauna, &c., free of Divine Control of the Father GOD. See *Psalms 33:11*.

Q: (29) If a woman was cured of cancer by means unknown to us, and everyone declared it a Miracle, would the chance of scientifically replicating this cure be more or less likely?

A: Let me ponder the question.
"If a woman (*Believer or not*) was cured of cancer by (*the natural*) means unknown to us (*Believers and unbelievers*), and everyone (*Believers and unbelievers*) declared it a Miracle, would the chance of scientifically (*by the atheistic scientists*) replicating this cure (*in future, whether nearest or distant*) be more or less likely?" – Why not? Are not such a thing as technical progress desirable? I pray for that. Because regretfully, my knowledge of medicine far not always is a delightful one.

Q: (30) If humans declared fire to be a Miracle thousands of years ago, would we still be huddling together in caves while we wait for God to throw another lightning bolt into the forest?

A: Excuse me, but how can you possibly know that? Namely, what did they "declare" and where abode "huddling together" thousands of years ago?
In our lands, for instance, we've got enlightened that *history* is not the stuff to believe. Our late ungodly rulers managed to cook up a total bull of twentieth-century events, let alone the millennia.
As for "God to throw another lightning bolt into the forest," I guess it is also the last thing the folks (such as those living in California) "wait" for.

Q: (31) If *GOD gave a man cancer*, and *the devil cured* him to subvert GOD's Plan, how would you know it was not a Divine Miracle?
Q: What if he was an unkind, atheist, homosexual?

A: GOD's Punishment was discussed in chapter 64, devilish cure – in 81.
"GOD gave a man cancer, and the devil cured him to subvert GOD's Plan" is nonsense. Sorry. These two – Divine Miracle and absurdity – don't mix.
As for "an unkind, atheist, homosexual," please go as far as *Ecclesiastes 9:4* and chapter 138 of this book. Mind *Romans 2:11*.

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian*, May 2019. Chapters 642-650.)

Q: (1) How could an All-Loving God send *anyone* to hell? God is punishing sinners for the sake of inflicting pain and suffering forever. There is no lesson to be learned or benefited from this type of punishment. (?)
Q: (2) Which is worse, Hitler killing 10,000,000 people (Jews, homosexuals, atheists, gypsies, etc.) or God keeping hundreds of millions of people alive just to torture them for eternity; some simply for not believing in Him?
Q: (3) According to Christianity, all of the Jews that Hitler tortured and killed later on were promptly sent to hell for not believing that Jesus was the Christ & Savior. But, according to the Bible, these are God's Chosen People. (?)

(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1) Refer to chapter 8 (Hell), if you please. There, you can find the references to relevant Scriptures and my humble comments.
Have a look at chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment). Get your lesson.
There are many other subjects (which you question) in the Index.
(2) Also, in the Index, please see *Death, Evil, Jew(s), Sin*.
(3) I guess you understand Christianity as much as I do atheism.

649

Regarding hell (questions 32-36).

Q: (32) Should an instruction to convert to your religion upon the threat of eternal torture in hell be met with anything other than hostility?

A: Apparently, by that "instruction to convert to your religion upon the threat of eternal torture in hell", you meant the Bible. Okay, if you please. But that "threat" (called by Christians the *Sacred Fear of GOD*) is, and most surely, the best threat of all ever existed.
Read *Deuteronomy 5:29; Psalms 25:12-14, 86:11; & Ecclesiastes 12:13-14*.

As for the relevant *hostility*, don't take the pain to question it.
Because hostility began with the beginning of Satan and became the norm for all heathen folks. You may leaf through the pages of "Book of Martyrs."

Q: (33) Can a mass murderer go to Heaven for accepting your Religion, while a kind doctor goes to hell for not?

A: Yes, theoretically, they can. Mind *Ecclesiastes 9:4* & *John 6:65*.

Hitler could have been saved, even shortly before his death, had he not so resolutely rejected GOD and united with Satan as his servant, the antichrist.
See *Daniel 7:8* (discussed in chapter 574 – Daniel, Chapter 7).

Every "kind doctor" would be much better off if he (she) kindly accepts the simple fact that it is GOD Who had Graciously blessed him (her) with the profession & attitude both so needful to people. Note *James 1:17*.
Yea, if those Blessings haven't been diluted in mammon, career, credits, &c.

And, accepting the Religion or not, nobody gets to hell for naught.
Refer to *Nehemiah 9:33, Psalms 33:5, Isaiah 5:1-7, & Jeremiah 32:18-19.*

Q: (34) Did the mass murdering crusaders and inquisitors make it into the Christian Heaven?

A: The "mass murdering crusaders" is a matter of *history,* and there should be a number of different sources to consider to exclude a *lie* inasmuch as possible. Note our previous discussion regarding my view on that branch of science in chapter 648. We spoke about crusades in chapters 262 & 644.

Wikipedia runs: “The Crusades were a series of religious wars sanctioned by the Latin Church in the medieval period. The most commonly known Crusades are the campaigns in the Eastern Mediterranean aimed at recovering the Holy Land from Muslim rule, but the term ‘Crusades’ is also applied to other Church-sanctioned Campaigns ... ”

That *satanism* had nothing to do with the Great Commission of Christ commanded by *Matthew 28:18-20*. Note *John 16:2*.
As for the *inquisitors*, the Blessed & Trustful *Book of Martyrs* pictures them as torturers & murderers. Such characters hardly inherit the Kingdom of Heaven. Note *Psalm 15*. See “Q & A” chapters 125 & 251.

Q: (35) How can we know what is Right when we don’t know for sure who makes it into Heaven and hell?

A: Who are those *we*? Christians know what is Right – unbelievers don’t.

Yes, “we don’t know for sure who makes it into Heaven and hell”. So what? Even knowing that we cannot just copy any human, due to very different circumstances & conditions we are in, our personalities, Blessings, curses, Gifts, limitations, and so forth. In this book, you may read chapters 220 & 308 about the Right Way. Kindly consider *Luke 15:20*.

Q: (36) If aliens exist on several worlds that have never heard of your God, will they all be going to hell when they die?

A: Do you seriously believe in aliens? I don’t.
Genesis 1:14-18 well exalts our Earth.

Years ago, I read in the *Readers Digest* magazine (was it a joke?) that when some media workers asked the USA Minister of Defense why he denied the existence of aliens, whereas the last had been seen there in every State but one, he answered: “That is the one where the Dry Law is still in force.”

But even your “if” is impossible. For our Father GOD did not create any soul deprived of the Knowledge of Him. Think over *Romans 1:20*.
Read *Revelation 3:14* and ask yourself your questions.

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian*, May, 2019. Chapters 642-650.)

Q: Why is it so difficult for people to agree with what the Bible means, even when it comes to crucial Passages?.

Q: How do Christians resolve the seeming incongruity between:
A) The Bible is meant to reveal God's Will to us.
B) The key Verses from the Bible seem amenable to opposite interpretations from people who are all faithfully & rigorously examining the Bible.
This question was inspired by watching a discussion of M*atthew 5:18* ... : "until the End of the World", "until all the Requirements of the Law are met", "until the Arrival of the Messiah".
These interpretations all imply very different understandings of how absolute *Mosaic Law* is for Christians in the current era ... (?)

Q: What do Christians make of this?

(Signed: *Agnostic Atheist*.)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed.)

A: Your first question might be answered thus: the *difficulty* will stay as long as the devil-inspired *denominationalism*. See the Index section for the latter.
The same is true regarding the question about "incongruity". The Bible does not have anything of the sort. See the Index for "Contradictions".

Those "who are all faithfully & rigorously examining the Bible" have very different reasons to do so, being faithful to their denominations or atheistic ideas or whatever other dung. Few are those who study the Written Word of GOD to be spiritually fed.

As for the above-mentioned *Matthew 5:18*, all three interpretations are correct, each one in its proper time & sequence. The interpreters probably, belong to some denominations.

Kindly note that what some call the "Mosaic law" or "the law of Moses" is *the Law of GOD, given us through His Servant Moses*. This Law remains standing as per *Matthew 5:17-19*.

Q: Do you have a personal relationship with the Holy Spirit?
And how it works, please.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Kindly see chapters 32 (Communion with GOD) & 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit). The Holy Spirit reminds me – so that I *know* – what the Bible says for this or that particular case. See *John 14:26*.

The Promises of Religion (questions 37-40).

Q: (37) If someone promised you Eternal Life, the protection of a loving super being, a feeling of moral righteousness, a purpose for living, answers to all the big questions, and a rule book for achieving the pinnacle of human potential, all in exchange for having faith in something that was not proven – would you be suspicious?

A: Yes, I would, given the following.

That "someone" is a person who only talks or write. *1Corinthians 2:4-5* should be followed. See the Testimony at the end of chapter 133.

That "loving super being" is just "some god", "any god", not our LORD GOD. For only He is Worthy of our Faith, Trust, & Obedience. *Deuteronomy 6:4-5*.

The promises of suchlike feelings don't count. Our Righteousness has nothing to do with feelings, emotions, mood, etc. *Deuteronomy 6:25*.
Same about "a purpose for living". To know our Purpose, we should know Truth, which is in the Word only. *Psalms 119:142, Ecclesiastes 12:13, & John 8:31-32*.

A speaker promised answers? Only the Bible is big enough to give the "answers to all the big questions" (your 40 inclusive). *Jeremiah 33:3 & Hebrews 4:12*.
For "a rule book for achieving the pinnacle of human potential", one can go to the heathen authors who wrote tons of the stuff. *Jeremiah 9:3-6 & Jude 1:10-11*.
The Christ Jesus is the best we can achieve in this Life. See *Philippians 3:8*.
Again, you need the Written Word of GOD. *2Timothy 3:15-17 & 2Peter 1:20-21*.

And "something that was not proven" is not for me. *1Thessalonians 5:21*.

Q: (38) If someone promised to give you a billion dollars after ten years but only if you worshipped them until that time – would you believe them?

A: To worship who? Rich thieves? Fanatics? No way. Read *Matthew 4:8-10*.

Q: (39) If someone promised you Eternal Life upon death, but only if you spent your life worshipping *a god* – would you believe them?

A: As for promising Life Eternal, only the LORD, our GOD, has enough Power and Authority for that. Not "a god". *Isaiah 42:8, 44:6; & Revelation 1:8*.

Q: (40) Why does religion appeal more to poor, weak, vulnerable, young, ill, depressed, and ostracized people?
Q: Could religious promises be more of a temptation to these people?

A: Maybe, some religions *appeal*. But the LORD, our GOD, *calls* –
– *poor* to enrich them by True Riches;
– *weak* to empower them by True Strength;
– *vulnerable* to grant them Real Protection;
– *young* to be taught about the Right Way;
– *ill* to bless them with Healing & Health;
– *depressed* to free them of mental captivity;
– *ostracized* to welcome them where they belong.

All that is standing upon *Isaiah 42:16, 53:4-6, 61:1-3; Matthew 11:28-30;* and so many other Precious Promises. If some "religious promises" could be more of "a temptation" to those people, the Word of Father GOD is not. *Jeremiah 13:15*.
By the way, "temptation" is defined in chapter 184, if you may kindly read it.

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian*, May 2019. Chapters 642-650.)

Q: (1) Many things don't make sense about the Bible & God. (?)
(2) But one thing stands out and makes *zero sense*, namely, why am I going to burn in hell for Eternity for simply not believing?
(3) I don't rape or murder people. I'm a good person. (?)
(4) I took care of my grandmother for about a year and a half until she, eventually, passed. I also looked after my father this past week before he went into the hospital. From those experiences, I put other people's needs before mine. My heart is sensitive. (?)
Q: (5) So, why am I gonna burn in hell for not believing?
Q: (6) Why are there people who have murdered and raped but go to Heaven for believing & repenting?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) If you look(ed) for (worldly) reason in the Bible & GOD, please, don't. Take a look at chapters 29 (Mind your approach) & 41 (Common sense).
(2) Regarding *hell*, kindly refer to chapter 8 (Hell).
Faith is not so "simple". See the relevant chapters in the Index section.
(3) So far, you are "a good person" by *your* standards. Our LORD GOD may have another opinion. See "*GOD – Judgment*" in the Index.

(4) You correctly put it, “From those experiences”. What about other parts of your life? In *Romans 3:23*, the Bible says that *all have sinned*.
(5) That “believing” I call “the Life of Faith”. It is not an easy way.
Kindly read chapter 442 (The Life in scorn of consequences).
(6) For *Repentance*, please again see the Index section. It is a long talk.

Q: (1) I have heard from many Christians that God has a Plan. Does He?
Q: (2) Why do they use it to explain away tragedies?
Q: (3) But if God has a Plan, doesn’t that mean we don’t have Free will?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Please see the Index for “GOD’s Plan” and “Free will” to find the relevant chapters of our “Q & A” book.
(1) The Written Word of GOD, which is given to us in the Holy Bible, said,

The Counsel of the LORD standeth for ever,
the Thoughts of His Heart to all generations. (Psalms 33:11)

... GOD, Who hath saved us, and called us with an Holy Calling,
not according to our works, but according to His Own Purpose and Grace,
which was given us in Christ Jesus before the World began. (2Timothy 1:8-9)

(2) You may see chapters 64 (GOD’s Punishment) and 653 (question 8).
According to *Genesis 1:26*, we (humans) have GOD-given Dominion over all the Earth. See also chapter 312 (Our spiritual Authority).

(3) You may see it this way. The Purposes of LORD GOD (one of them is our Free will) don’t contradict and interfere with one another.
By Free will, we may choose to serve Him or not.
Serving our Heavenly Father, we surrender all our being (Free will inclusive) to His Holy Will. And we believe that we gain Eternal Life.
If we choose not to serve Him, our Free will is ruled by the devil, notwithstanding how “free” we may think we are.
The choice is yours.

Q: What crime deserves an eternity of punishment?
(*https://carm.org/atheism/questions*, March 2021.)

A: It is every sinful attitude not repented of. *Psalms 34:18*.
Please see the Index section for *Repentance*, *Sin*, *Death eternal*, and more.

651

Q: I have ten questions (chapters 651-653).

A: Thanks for the questions. Before we proceed any further, kindly note: the only Right Answer to your every question is in the Written Word of GOD. Please see *Jeremiah 33:3* & *Luke 16:31*.

Q: (1) Why can't God control everything? If He can create an entire World, I don't understand why He can't control it.
Q: Could He not make a way to help us or control certain things without some messing up all our other freedoms?
Q: So, can He even control Himself?

A: The LORD, our GOD, did create, as well as can & does control everything His Great Creation consists of – even every atom of the Universe.
That is written in *John 1:3 & Colossians 1:17.*
Don't understand? Please find the reason in *John 1:4-5.*
Regarding "a way" and "messing up", read *John 14:6 & Nehemiah 9:33.*
His Divine Control is well explained by *Psalms 33:5.*

Q: (2) If God is our Father, why does He allow "free will" to harm us, His Children?
Q: Many people are born into horrible lives before they ever have a chance to make their *own* decisions. These children are abused or neglected, and God does nothing. I understand letting adults be *affected* by "free will", but why God doesn't step in when it comes to children?
Q: Should all children not be given the opportunity to start out Life with positives?

A: The LORD is our Father, and *our Free will* was not Divinely established by GOD to harm ourselves. Rather on the contrary, *our Free will* ought to keep ourselves in His Image & Likeness, that is, His Children indeed.
Kindly see *Genesis 1:26-28.*

Yes, "Many people are born into horrible lives before they ever have a chance to make their own decisions." You can find the explanation for that in the Blessings and curses (*B & C*) and the *Harvest Law* we spoke about in chapters 44 & 503, respectively. Please mind well the Credentials of GOD in *Exodus 34:6-7.*
That Scripture well explains the rest of your question 2.

Q: (3) How can God be Loving if He allows number 2? If I allow someone to rape or beat my child, I am a horrible person and must not love my child.
Q: However, if God allows it to happen, He is somehow Loving?!
Q: Wouldn't He have provided Himself a foolproof way of loving us without ruining something else if He was Truly Loving?

A: What's "number 2?" It is hard to clearly answer something not asked so. Your *question 2* is answered above. Please read *1John 4:8* about Love.

Do you want to protect your child from rape & beating only or from whatever evil the devil may throw his (her) way? What about the Eternal destiny of your family? Kindly note *Exodus 34:6-7* and start from *yourself*, even personal Right Standing with GOD.
Kindly don't ever judge the LORD. Leave it with Him what to allow and what not to. The Creator is always Greater than His Creation. *Isaiah 29:16.*

Please, note:

> *... every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give Account thereof in the Day of Judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned. (Matthew 12:36-37)*

Q: (4) The explanation offered by many Christians for child abuse and other bad things is that somehow "God is teaching us something" or "that it is GOD's Plan to make us into a good person".
My question is, there has to be a better way to teach a child, right?
If my child needs to learn manners, I don't beat it into him.
Q: Why not find a nicer approach to life lessons?

A: Either you don't understand those "many Christians", or they don't study the Written Word of GOD hard enough, or both. Because our Heavenly Father *does* teach us (whether we try to understand Him or not). And He, the LORD Almighty, indeed is willing to restore His Image & Likeness in us.
Please refer to *Genesis 1:26-28 & Proverbs Chapter 8*.
For "a better way to teach a child", read chapter 60 (Christian Family).
As you put it, "nicer approach" – by the Way of Correction –
in our "Q & A", is disclosed in chapter 78 (The Rod of Correction).

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian.*
May 2019. Edited.)

652

Q: (5) How do you believe in something without any *evidence* existing?
I hear Christians saying, “We cannot see air but we know it is there.” True, but it has been *proven* to be there as the thing that keeps us alive.
Q: All “Miracles” can be explained with *rational* thoughts. So, how do you justify belief in something that has never been shown real?

A: Your question, this or that way, has been dealt with in many “Q & A” chapters named “Unbelievers ask”. Welcome to read.
As for our Christian Faith, *nobody* has any evidence or proof contrarywise. Add to that *your* initial attitude against GOD and His Word. See chapter 29.
What *you* count & accept as “proven” and what not is totally up to you. Chapters 237, 468, 486, and 557 are about our Faith matters, if you care.
In chapter 648, we spoke about Miracles. The latter cannot be explained by your “rational thoughts”, meaning the atheistic ones.
Kindly read *Proverbs 21:30, Isaiah 29:14,* and *1Corinthians 1:19.*
It is hard for Believers to explain their Faith to unbelievers. *Hebrews 11:1*.
My way to GOD began, as I briefly described it, at the end of chapter 133.

Q: (6) How do you explain the multiple *impossible* things in the Bible?
Everyone knows a dead person cannot come back to life.
Q: Have you ever witnessed a walking dead person?
Q: How is *Jesus* any different than any other story about zombies?

A: In my opinion, what is possible and what is not is determined personally by each of us. That attitude begins with what we were taught by our parents and teachers. After that, we grow up to make our own choices.
So, I take your question as a *personal* one and ignore “everyone knows”.
LORD GOD does the same. Kindly read *Ecclesiastes 3:17 & Galatians 6:7*.
There is nothing “impossible” to GOD. See *Job 38:2 & Jeremiah 13:15*.
I have not seen yet “a dead person to come back to life”. But I heard the Testimonies of other Christians to that effect and trust them, as well as many other Miracles. Some of them I described, say, in chapters 199 & 306.
As for my Lord Jesus, His death, Resurrection, and Ascension were witnessed & described by too many persons to reject it.
And, I pray, mind your words, will you? Kindly note *Proverbs 18:21*.

(Ten questions – chapters 651-653. *https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian.* May 2019. Edited.)

653

Q: Ten questions. (Chapters 651-653.)

A: Kindly read what you have published on those “Hub Pages”. Your repeated words “I don’t understand” and “I can’t see” are the only correct ones there. And something like “atheist” or “struggle” testify against you.
Please, see *Psalms 14:1; 53:1 & John 9:41*.

Q: (7) Why do you think your God is the only right one?
As an *atheist*, I *struggle* with this.
Q: If I am wrong and there is a God, how do we know that there is one God or multiple gods, and which one is the right one?
I mean, there have been gods of sorts since pretty much forever.
Q: How do Christians justify the fact they pick this one God to worship?

A: It is explained away in *Isaiah 42:8 & 44:6.*

Q: (8) Natural disasters are another thing. Do you think this is God’s way of controlling the planet’s population or just another thing God chooses to do to His People out of spite? I mean, killing thousands of people in a tsunami just doesn’t sound like something a loving being would do.

A: Please, read *Genesis 1:26 & Psalms 8:6.*

Q: (9) Birth defects and child illness. This is one I *struggle* with very much. With all the children that are born with defects or end up with childhood cancer, how do you fit that in with your faith in God?
Q: Is it something, as many say, to make stronger people?
Q: Losing a child – does it something in one to help another parent face the same problem?
Q: But let’s be real – if it never happened, to begin with, then no one would need to be stronger in that way. Why not just keep it from happening?

A: These questions are answered by *Exodus 23:25 & Proverbs 4:20-22.*

Q: (10) Religion is simply faith with no answers. There is no questioning God. Things happen in his time and way, and we are to simply believe & worship.
Q: How do you worship someone who lets *all of the above* happen?
Q: How do Christians find faith in God when their child dies, their husband is hit by a drunk driver, or their wife has breast cancer?

A: Once upon a time, I had suchlike questions too. *Ecclesiastes 1:9 & 3:1*.
Now, I follow *Deuteronomy 6:4-5*. Your "all of the above" is also explained away above. So, I can only send you to *Jeremiah 33:3 & Matthew 11:28-30.*

(*https://hubpages.com/religion-philosophy/40-Questions-to-ask-a-Christian*, Condensed. May 2019. Edited.)

There is no reason to comment on the rest of suchlike posts on "Hub Pages".
The only correct answer to every Faith question is in the Holy Bible.
Human arguments are a waste of time.

For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh;
but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit.
For to be carnally minded is death;
but to be spiritually minded is Life and Peace. (Romans 8:5-6)

Q: I've been told by Christians that God is not responsible for sin, the fall of man, human actions, Satan's actions, suffering, and evil.
It is a universal idea that power and responsibility go hand in hand.
God has plenty of power. What is He responsible for?

(Signed: *Agnostic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, May 2020. Edited. Condensed.)

A: A good question back: responsible, answerable, or accountable to who?
The above "universal idea" applies to humans only.
Please note *Psalms 89:14* & *Isaiah 29:16*.

Q: How would your life be different if you discovered that your Christian beliefs were not true?.
Q: How would this impact you personally?
Q: What would this change about your everyday life?
Q: How would you adjust your worldview going forward?

(Signed: *Agnostic Atheist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020.)

A: Your hypothetical question resembles the one asked in chapter 259.
So, the answer is much the same: me, my life, and whatever stuff of mine would utmostly differ as being non-existent.
Now, what about you if you discover Christian Faith is True?

654

Q: In *Matthew 4:1-11* & *Luke 4:1-12*, we read about the temptations of Satan withstood by Jesus. What is our Lesson in those Scriptures?

A: There is more than one Lesson there. Take just the following two.

First, we are reminded that Satan, all his demons, and spiritually blind human followers are *liar*s, the *lie* being their chief weapon. See *John 8:44*.
Take, for instance, Satan's bull recorded in *Luke 4:6* and that contradict GOD's Word in *Psalms 8:4-6*. See "Q & A" chapters 36 & 313.

Thus reminded, we are supposed to act accordingly. See *2Corinthians 6:14*.

Second, it is the Word of GOD, even the Sword "*It Is Written: ...*"
Our enemy knows by heart every letter in the Holy Scriptures. Yet, it is neither *Revelation Knowledge* & *Understanding* nor the *Sword of the Spirit* – just memorizing & citation. Note *John 1:5*.
How our Lord Jesus answered every temptation of Satan is the best Example of Knowledge & Implementation of the Scriptures. See *John 16:13*.

So, it is not just quoting the Written Word of GOD that works out. A weapon without due training on how to handle it does not count.
The same Training in the Holy Bible we, Christians, need most. See *Hosea 4:6*.

And we have the Best Teacher, Loving & Patient. Mind *James 1:5*.

Q: Hi, I'm a Jew seeking Christ, and I'm curious as to why we worship Jesus, if He never specifically told us to worship Him?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: The "never specifically" does not mean "not at all".
It is written:

I and My Father are One. (John 10:30)

Please consider our discussion in chapter 459 (The Holy Trinity of GOD).
It does not matter Whom One or Two or Three of those Three we worship.
Follow these Good Words:

Worship GOD. (Revelation 19:10 & 22:9)

Godspeed.

655

Q: Why do GOD and Jesus seem to disagree in some situations?
For example, in the Old Testament, there is a laundry list of crimes that are punishable by stoning, but in the New Testament, Jesus comes along and says: “let he who is without sin cast the first stone”.
That seems *contradictory* or leaves out some very important information.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/*, June 2019.)

A: There are neither disagreements in the Holy Trinity of GOD nor discrepancies in the Bible. All errors are in the eye of the beholder.

Yes, in *Leviticus 20:10*, we find the Verdict (which ought to be followed).
As for *John 8:3-11*, which you mean, it doesn’t “contradict” the Old Testament.
Right on the contrary, Lord Jesus spoke up against *murder*. Lo, there was not a single Godly Judge there, just a bunch of false teachers and their stupid followers.
It is written:

And the man that committeth adultery with another man’s wife, even he that committeth adultery with his neighbour’s wife, the adulterer and the adulteress shall surely be put to death. (Leviticus 20:10)

Reading *John 8:3-11*, I cannot find “*the adulterer*” there, can you?
What, was he “missing in action”?
In chapter 96 (Throw the first stone), we discussed *John 8:3-11* more.
Please see chapter 145 (But I say unto you), parallel to our question.

Q: Was Jesus born in Nazareth or Bethlehem? *Matthew* & *Luke* give off some *contradictory* parts about His day & place of birth.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: In the context of *Matthew 2:1-6*,

... Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judæa ... (Matthew 2:1)

By *Luke 1:26*, Nazareth was the place of Angel’s Visitation to Sister Mary, not the place of Jesus’ birth.
By *Luke 2:4-5* (within the context of *Luke 2:1-16*), in Bethlehem, Christ was conceived & born.
As to His exact Birth date, it is hard to find it out for the reason of different calendars now and then.

656

Q: I am a *Buddhist*. What is it like to be a *Christian* in practice, as opposed to a more broad, open-ended spirituality? I ask coming from a place of feeling entirely content with my spiritual path, wondering what it is that leads people to Jesus, as I have never managed to do that despite overwhelmingly convincing spiritual experiences lifting me out of secular atheism.

Q: If I feel entirely confident in my spirituality and see no reason, nor even method, of accepting Jesus, how could I hypothetically go about becoming Christian? This is not meant to sound rude or derogatory, but I cannot make sense of what it is to be a Christian or what gives people confidence in it. Thank you for your time.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/* on June 2019.)

A: My relationship with Jesus, My Lord & Savior, is based on His Word,

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

My Christian Way I is that of a Prodigal Son (*Luke 15:20*). I believe that He Who created everything ever created is waiting for you too, regardless of your present spiritual state. See *John 1:12-13; 3:16 & 1Timothy 2:5*.
Not agree? Tell you what: in every dispute, should be an Arbiter recognized by both parties. Is it not Time? Kindly note *Isaiah 45:22-23*, *Romans 14:11*, *& Philippians 2:10-11*. So, until then. Thanks for your question.

Q: Why doesn't God reveal Himself in a way that undoubtedly gives us evidence of His existence?

Q: If He wants people to follow Him out of Free Will, then why not make sure that all people are aware of the Truth of Christianity? Then people can decide freely on whether or not they should follow Him.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Far as I understand the question, you don't have enough "evidence of His existence". It is strange. By *Luke 16:8,* you, unbelievers, are *wiser* than Christians. Nevertheless, you cannot see & comprehend more than we do.
Well, *Romans 1:18-22* & *2Corinthians 4:4* can explain that.
And *Matthew 11:25-26 & 18:3* states the Holy Will of LORD GOD.
So, try to think above your *common sense* (the subject of chapter 41).
Try the Way shown in *Matthew 11:12,28-30* & *Luke 15:20*.

657

Q: I doubt what to believe. These questions keep me from believing.

A: Kindly note, you are not alone. Let's consider your questions one by one.

Q: How come that skeletons of ancient humans have a form different from what they have now?

A: I have no idea about those skeletons. The Written Word of GOD – the only Source I trust – does not say anything about that. Let alone what is written in *Luke 20:38*. I suspect you mean the bull named "paleontological discoveries in favor of evolution". What to believe is entirely up to you.

Q: Why are women less important than men?

A: They are not. Nobody has taken away *GOD's Image & Likeness* from them. And there is no "respect of persons" with the LORD. See *2Chronicles 19:7*.

Q: What does the Bible exactly say about gay marriage?

A: It said well enough in *Leviticus 18:22 & 20:13*.

Q: Why does God put people who don't believe without a proof (like Thomas) in hell?

A: Could you please provide the relevant Scripture?
And, please, watch what you say about the Saints of the LORD.

Q: If you know that all the people you love end up in hell, can you be happy in Heaven?

A: To begin with, if all the people *I love* end up in hell, how can *I* get in Heaven? As for my being happy, it is impossible only without Christ.

Q: Why would God ask Abraham to kill his son?
Q: What is the purpose of that story?

A: It is the Lesson. The Purpose is the Test o' Faith.

Q: What happens to pets when they die?

A: I believe they have Future per *Isaiah 11:6-9 & 65:25*, and Account per *Genesis 9:5*.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2019.)

Q: In the Bible, it says that rejecting God will take you to hell, but what does rejecting God actually, mean?

Q: Can you pray, be a good person in deeds, and practice faith in any power or god by any name, and go to Heaven?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written:

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

So, *rejecting GOD* (the LORD) is denying the above Word, wholly or partly. To "practice faith in *any* power or god by *any* name" is *rejecting GOD* too, since that supposition equals our Lord Jesus Christ with a falsehood. You may consider our discussions in chapters 650 & 653.

Q: Why do innocents suffer? Globally, 3.1 million kids (less than 5 years old) die from starvation.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Corrected & condensed.)

A: The same question GOD will ask on the Judgment Day of all concerned. Please read *Deuteronomy 5:7-10* and chapter 50 (Modern idolatry). Kindly have a look at *Harvest* in the Index section of this "Q &A".

Q: (1) How can Omniscient God be surprised or angered by anything we do?

Q: (2) And why does God get angry, and demand vengeance when we succumb to the weaknesses that *He put in us* in the first place?

(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1) Please find *GOD's Omniscience* and *Wrath* in the *Index*. See chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment) too.
(2) Please, don't lie. The LORD, our GOD, *did not* put weaknesses or any other satanic evil in us. Read *Genesis 1:27,31 & 4:7*.
Thank you.

658

Q: What do you think about *usury*?
Q: How is receiving a loan with interest on the principal different from working at a bank?
Q: Are Christians not supposed to work at banks?
Q: Or is it okay to be a teller, not a loan officer?
Q: Does *anybody* even care about *such things* these days?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/*, June 2019.)

A: Thanks for your questions. It is hard to answer right from the bat without knowing more about this or that bank.
Your doubts are correct: *usury* is evil, and a *loan* is a risky business.

As for a job,

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers:
for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness?
and what communion hath light with darkness? (2Corinthians 6:14)

In your last question, I dare take "anybody" for unbelievers and "such things" for the matters of Christian Honor.
So, do *you* care what they care about?

Kindly see parallel "Q & A" chapters 40, 90, 542, and 546.

Q: I know people who believe that any music except Christian is sinful.
That *any music* includes songs about peace, love, unity, or even classical music. What are your views on this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: I think Christian music & songs are good & profitable.
However, I don't exclude other arts, which are sinful only *if* they oppose or scorn the LORD GOD.
Psalms, such as 96, 98, 149, and 150, encourage us to compose and sing New Songs unto our Father GOD and give Him Praise.

Let the Word of Christ dwell in you richly in all Wisdom; teaching
and admonishing one another in Psalms and Hymns and Spiritual Songs,
singing with Grace in your hearts to the Lord. (Colossians 3:16)

659

Q: How to explain & defend my Faith to a person who does not believe?
My Sunday School Teacher would always say to spread the Word of God because, well, it is our Job as Christians. So, when Religion came into the conversation with a group of classmates, I talked about my Faith.
Several said they were atheists and all had similar opinions about Religion.
"Why should a two-thousand-year-old book define my lifestyle?"
"I asked God to help me, but nothing happened, so He cannot be real."
"He is All-Powerful, so, why there are things like sickness and disasters?"
"Everything can be explained by science. Just because we cannot explain it yet does not mean that it can be answered by your religion."
I want to *help them understand*, but those atheists tend to be pretty ignorant.
Q: Am I ignorant for not listening to what they say?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/*, June 2019.)

A: So, you are a Christian. By "Religion", you & I mean our Christian Faith. When your classmates said they were atheists, you could do well to stop at that and listen more than talk. *Isaiah 50:4, Matthew 7:6, & James 1:19*. (In the "Ask A Christian" Forum, note the multitude of snake-like questions from atheists.) Continue your Bible Study and, most important: *follow* the Written Word of GOD. Note *Ephesians 5:1*. Your Christian Lifestyle might better "help them understand" than your words.

Q: What does a single Woman of God look like?
I recently returned to Jesus and am very interested in being a Godly woman. However, whenever I search for the qualities that a Godly woman should live by, I only find advice for married folks.
Q: As a single Woman of Faith, what are some tips I can follow to enhance my femininity within God and follow Him better? Hope it makes sense.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Dear Sister, once you don't explain your *singleness* – never married, divorced, widowed, etc., note –

There is neither Jew nor Greek,
there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female:
for ye are all One in Christ Jesus. (Galatians 3:28)

You may also note *1Corinthians 7:34* within the context relevant for you. Serve our LORD GOD employing your Gifts (chapter 24). Godspeed.

660

Q: Is *transhumanism* incompatible with *Christianity*?
Q: Is it seen as a sin?
Q: Or the work of Satan?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/* on June 2019.)

A: Wikipedia runs: *Transhumanism is an international intellectual and cultural movement supporting the use of science and technology to improve human mental and physical characteristics and capacities. The movement regards aspects of the human condition, such as disability, suffering, disease, aging, and involuntary death as unnecessary and undesirable. Transhumanists look to biotechnologies and other emerging technologies for these purposes.*

Transhumanism is against Christianity since, as per the last sentence of the above, it looks the wrong way. Why? Because "to improve human mental and physical characteristics and capacities", we are supposed to come to the LORD.

Come unto Me, all ye that labour and are heavy laden,
and I will give you Rest. Take My Yoke upon you, and learn of Me;
for I am Meek and Lowly in heart: and ye shall find Rest unto your souls.
For My Yoke is easy and My Burden is light. (Matthew 11:28-30)

Therefore, transhumanism is *the work instigated by Satan*. Dressed up in love, it is aimed to deviate people from following their GOD. And every activity of the evil one is a *sin*. Kindly read chapter 67 (*Healing Promises*).

Q: (1) What is the purpose of hell?
Q: (2) Why not just make non-believers cease to exist?
Q: (3) Is that punishment not enough?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A; Please see chapter 8 (Hell).
(1) Far as I comprehend, the purpose is *separating* the People of GOD from servants of the devil.
(2) Created in GOD's Image & Likeness, we cannot *cease to exist*.
So, eventually, we continue in Eternal Life or eternal death (chapter 573).
(3) Please also read chapter 64 (*GOD's Punishment*).
In my research, I concluded that hell is *self-punishment*.

661

Q: As a Christian, how would you define *morality*?
For *an atheist*, it is easy to define morality as the instinct that has evolved in us to do what is right to our fellow man in order to aid the survival of our species. But if you are a Christian and believe in an objective, absolute, or arbitrary morality, then it seems to me to be much harder for you to define exactly what it is.

A: *Christian Morality* is keeping GOD's Image & Likeness for our Salvation. Therefore, we do to our fellow humans what is Right for our Salvation.

Q: Are you saying then that morality *evolved* in order to aid the survival of our species? Because that would seem to contradict the following points that I have heard Christian apologists say and *appear to be in* the Bible.
1. We did not *evolve* – we were created in the Garden of Eden.
2. Morality is a reflection of God because we were created in His Image.
3. Morality's purpose is not for our *survival* but is objective and absolute and is simply the Character of God.

Q: Also, if morality is in the interest of humans, then why is God moral?
Q: Is God's only purpose to serve us?

A: What I'm saying is my opinion. The apologists have theirs. You have yours. But kindly agree that "appear to be in" and "in" are things different.
Evolve, by Webster's first definition, is *develop gradually*. So, for this discussion, I don't accept "evolve", as it is close to the idea of "evolution".
As for those three points brought to our conversation, in my opinion –

1. We are created in GOD's Image & Likeness. Everyone of us (spiritually) develops on & on as he (she) chooses. Kindly see *Free will* in the Index.
2. Thus, our morality develops as per our choices, whether we prefer to keep that Image & Likeness or follow something else.
3. *Christian Morality* holds GOD's Image & Likeness to work our Salvation on.

Believers' morality differs from that of unbelievers, as by Webster's, it is the *conformity to the rules of right conduct*, and those rules are very different. Our Christian Morality *is* in the interest of humans. At least, it should be so.
We cannot call the LORD "moral" or "amoral" or whatever else if this or that character is not stated in His Written Word. He is *our LORD GOD*, period.
His Purpose is not "to serve us". *We* should serve *Him* for our Good.

Q: You said, “Christian morality is in the interest of humans”. But then you seem to contradict the saying, “Morality’s purpose is not for our survival”. So, is morality’s purpose in aiding our *survival* or not?

A: I also said that *Christian* morality differs from that of *unbelievers*, even as our goal of (spiritual) *Salvation* differs from their aim for (natural) *survival*. That’s why atheistic morality claims to be in their interest but has nothing to do with Salvation which atheists don’t believe in.

As for Salvation and Christian Morality, the first does not depend on the second, but the second, being the *conformity to Christian Rules of Right conduct*, is the Work for & the Reward of the first (cf., *Giving Attitude* shown in chapter 56). Please also note the difference between *survival*, striving against the fiction of “non-existence”, and *Salvation* – the Victory of Eternal Life over eternal death.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/* on June 2019. Edited.)

Kindly see relevant “Q & A” chapters 412 & 510 (The Image & Likeness), 644 & 710 (Morality), and 305 & 573 (Eternity).

The Scriptures about Christian morality: *Leviticus 18:6-23, 20:10-21; Deuteronomy 23:17, 27:20-23; Psalms 119:9; Proverbs 6:23-26,32; Malachi 2:14-16; 1Corinthians 5:9-11, 6:13-18; & Ephesians 5:3-4*.

Q: Can you convince a creationist that evolution is compatible with the Bible?
(Signed: *Agnostic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: I cannot (and will not) do that because the theory of evolution contradicts the Holy Bible, *Genesis Chapter 1*, in particular.

Q: How does one find the right religion?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: For me, it is our Christian Faith. My LORD GOD calls you too.

Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear My Voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with Me. (Revelation 3:20)

662

Q: I heard somewhere (but I can't recollect) that the devil has to foretell & layout his plans. And there is a Passage about it in the Bible. Is it true?
Q: Which Verse?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/* on June 2019.)

A: To foretell & lay out? Not that I've read of.
On the other hand, Satan can't hide anything from our LORD GOD and, consequently, *we* can deduct something from His Written Word.
There are many Scriptures depicting the corrupted mind of the despised one.
For instance, take a look at these –

... if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here is Christ, or there; believe it not.
For there shall arise false christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if it were possible, they shall deceive the very elect.
Behold, I have told you before. (Matthew 24:23-25)

Why do ye not understand My Speech? even because ye cannot hear My Word.
Ye are of your father the devil, and the lusts of your father ye will do.
He was a murderer from the Beginning, and abode not in the Truth,
because there is no Truth in him. When he speaketh a lie, he speaketh of his own:
for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I tell you the Truth,
ye believe Me not. (John 8:43-45)

But if our Gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost.
In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not,
lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, who is the Image of GOD,
should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:3-4)

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves
into the Apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed
into an Angel of Light. (2Corinthians 11:13-14)

But the rest of you in Thyatira have not followed this evil teaching;
you have not learned what the others call "the deep secrets of Satan".
I say to you that I will not put any other burden on you.
(Revelation 2:24, Good News Translation)

You are welcome to visit the Index section for relevant chapters.

663

Q: This is an age-old question that I'm sure has been asked a million times.
Me: Why didn't God create a sinless world?
Christianity: Because then we would not have Free will.
And if we didn't have Free will, then we would be robots.

Q: Me: So, will there be a sin in Heaven?
Christianity: Absolutely not. God will take away the urge to sin.

Q: Me: Why didn't He create us without introducing the urge to sin?
Christianity: Because then we would not have Free will.

Q: Me: So, will there be Free will in Heaven?
Christianity: Yes, we will have Free will, but it will be sinless Free will.

Q: Me: Why not start out Creation *that* way instead of all suffering & pain?

Q: So, what is *your* response to why didn't God create a sinless world?

A: "Why didn't GOD create a sinless world?" – He did. Read *Genesis 1:31*.
Then, our Free will was instituted. Read *Genesis 2:16-17*.
The choice was & is ours. And please, *Christianity* is not as you see it.
As for your every "why?", kindly see His Answer in *Isaiah 55:8-9*.
Please also visit the Index for the relevant chapters.

Q: If humans were sinless and unaware of good and evil – as the presence of the Tree that contained the knowledge of it seems to imply – can *they* be blamed for making the wrong choice?

A: Yes, *we* can & should be blamed. Many Warnings (from *Genesis 2:17* onward) were given. Please see chapter 440 dealing with that Tree.

Q: If the narrative is to be believed, can those sinless and naive humans be held accountable after being actively persuaded by a malicious entity?

A: To believe the narrative or not is a matter o' *Faith* (or *faith*, it depends). Naive? Maybe. But wise enough as created in *GOD's Image & Likeness*, and, therefore, accountable. The bloody entity has never had any power other than his *lie*. His "authority" can be compared to that of the mafia, his "ability" to that of a crap-seller. And nothing changed. See *Ecclesiastes 1:9*.

Q: If the world was sinless and free of death, how could humans know death?

A: Who has called the world "sinless"? It is sinful. However, it was not created as such. Kindly note *Genesis 1:31*. As for death, see *Genesis 2:17*.

Q: Can a human be held accountable for not knowing the Mind of God, especially, if His Ideals and Thoughts are so *lofty*?

A: Yes, ignorant folks can be held accountable for *not being willing* to know. Are *you* willing to get Knowledge from GOD? Study our Holy Bible. Mind *Luke 15:20*. Kindly note, GOD is Great, but not *lofty*. You ought to read *Matthew 11:29*. The lofty one would have never chosen the bloody cross. Yet, it depends on what we mean. *Webster's Dictionary* defines "lofty" in more than one way. And you may refer to *Isaiah 55:8-9.*

Q: *Isaiah 55:8-9* is, basically, a long-winded way of saying, "God works in mysterious ways" to any question of the Nature of God or His Actions. It is a hand-waving non-answer to any difficult area of theology and worthless in any sort of *real discussion*. It is fine, if you believe it, but don't expect others to accept that if they are asking *serious questions*.

A: Well, it is again a matter of Faith. Real discussion? What do you expect to hear from *Christians*? A compromise with unbelievers? No way. As for the "serious" questions, your questions are such. So are my answers. And your every godless argument.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/.* June 2019. Condensed. Edited.)

Q: If we had *scientific* proof of God's existence, would that change anything about your Belief in God?
Q: How might it change?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Nobody can prove or disprove or defend GOD. The Creator is always above His Creation. Kindly note *Isaiah 55:8*. You may see chapters 103 (Avoid errors), 336 (*The unbelievers ask*), and 699 (Purification) on the relevant arguments.

Q: Are we the epitome of God's Ability to create?
Q: Are humans the best thing that God can create?.
Q: Considering that God suffers and loves us so much, it makes me think that God can't create anything better than humans. Or can He?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: We might be that epitome, summary, model, or whatever else.
There are no limits to His Creative Power.
Regarding the Creation of humans, it is covered by *Genesis 1:27*.

Q: How do you define a “person”? I think *personhood* has mostly to do with the ability to feel emotions and the degree to which they’re felt. Rationality is also a clear indication of personhood, but emotions are the baseline.
(Signed: *Atheist, ex-Protestant*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: By *Genesis 1:26-27*, humans are created by GOD in His Image & Likeness. GOD defines a *person* or determines *personhood* by His Standards, which are written in His Word. Thus it is His Image & Likeness, not “rationality”.

Q: (1) What, exactly, is your basis for believing that the Bible is true; not necessarily the Word of God, but true?
Your answer cannot be “Because the Bible says it is true”, *any* book would be true by that measure, and any religion would be true by such standard. They cannot *all* be true because they contradict each other.
Q: Further, if you have read it, you know that it is not a good book; that is, God does not exactly set a good example. He is a ruthless dictator, and the Book is full of His atrocities. (?)
Q: (2) Is it just because your parents told you that it was true?
Q: (3) Or because most of the people you know think that it is true?
Q: (4) What real, extra-biblical basis do you have to believe it is the Work of God? And if you’re considering answering “I just feel that it is true”, go to my article entitled “Feelings aren’t facts”.
(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians*.
April 2021, Edited.)

A: (1) My basis is the Proof I received. Please, see the end of chapter 133.
Your argument is correct. It resembles the one I mentioned in chapter 728.
The Bible is True, and it says so, but, speaking of myself, I believed LORD GOD before I commenced my studying this Book. Other religions lie.
(2) Negative on that. Please see chapter 681 (questions 11 & 24).
(3) Negative again. Most people are unbelievers.
(4) That basis does not exist. As I put in in chapter 726, “if you will only try to imagine that there is the One of Unsearchable Wisdom & Power, Who created our Earth & Universe, Yea, and our Life – what a miserable value would have all our arguments “for” or “against” Him?”

664

Q: Do you believe that *all liars go to hell*?

But as for the cowardly, the faithless, the detestable, as for murderers, the sexually immoral, sorcerers, idolaters, and all liars, their portion will be in the lake that burns with fire and sulfur, which is the second death.
(Revelation 21:8)

A: In this Scripture, I take "*all liars*" along with other evildoers mentioned, as those of humans who did not repent of and confess their sins.
Kindly note that *hell* is not mentioned here as the condemned state before *the second death.* You may see "Q & A" chapters 8 & 573.
Note well *Matthew 12:34* and the following references.

Exodus 20:16 & Deuteronomy 5:20 ---------- Lie is forbidden.
Joshua 1:8 ---------- Live in Truth.
Psalms 101:7, Isaiah 5:20, & Matthew 15:13 ---------- Lie is condemned.
Matthew 5:13-16, Mark 9:49-50, & Luke 14:33-35 ---- The Salt.
John 18:37 ---------- Truth & Hearing.
2Corinthians 4:4 ---------- Satan's main weapon.
Ephesians 4:15 ---------- No Truth without Love.
Colossians 3:9 & Revelations 21:8 ---------- Lie is forbidden.

Q: So, how many lies can a *saved* person tell before they lose the opportunity to repent and be forgiven?

A: Good question. The "saved" ones are those in Heaven.
How many lies? That might depend on what we define as or think is a "lie". Technically, many times. (Our Lord Jesus couldn't teach us to forgive "seventy times seven" and not do it Himself.)

We lose the opportunity to repent on Judgment Day or when we die, whatever happens first. The Right way out of that mess is Confession.

The only way to avoid a lie is (as you should know) constant Communion with GOD via Bible Study, Prayer, Meditation, and Fast (as per *Isaiah 58*).

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/* on June 2019. Condensed.)

665

Q: The *New Perspective on Paul (NPP)* is a different way of understanding Paul and the role of Works and Faith in Salvation. It is believed by proponents that Paul was not criticized in all Works, but specifically those related to *Judaism* (like Circumcision) as well as Jewish ethnic identity. It seems to be accepted by a lot of Bible Scholars, so perhaps there is some merit to the idea?

Q: What are your thoughts on it?

A: Regarding that "NPP", it is written:

For the time will come when they will not endure Sound Doctrine;
but after their own lusts shall they heap to themselves teachers,
having itching ears; and they shall turn away their ears from the Truth,
and shall be turned unto fables. (2Timothy 4:3-4)

Regarding those "Bible Scholars", it is written:

For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves
into the Apostles of Christ. And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed
into an Angel of Light. (2Corinthians 11:13-14)

Be careful. Before preaching something "new", think twice. And, for our Lord Jesus' sake, seek the Guidance of the LORD rather than an opinion of men.

... We ought to obey GOD rather than men. (Acts 5:29)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/* on June 2019.)

See "Q & A" chapters: 7 (False teachings), 177 (Truth and lie),
342 (Grace Ambassadors) & 391 (Our Judgment).

... If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My Disciples indeed;
And ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free.
(John 8:31-32)

... the Comforter, which is the Holy Ghost, Whom the Father will send
in My Name, He shall teach you all things, and bring all things
to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you. (John 14:26)

666

Q: I am a Jew. What evidence could you give me
that Jesus of Nazareth is the Messiah?

A: Shalom!
According to *Romans 2:28-29*, I'm a Jew too.
The evidence of Jesus, the Christ of GOD, is His Written Word.

Q: Care to cite some Old Testament Verses to prove that?

A: Why not?
Kindly see *Isaiah 6:8-10, 7:14, 9:6, 11:1-5, 42:1-7, 53:1-12, & 66:7;*
Jeremiah 23:5-6 & 33:15-16.
There are more.

Q: I fail to see how these refer to Jesus Christ. Care to explain it to me?

A: Okay.

Isaiah 6:8-10 – You can see Christ Jesus sent by our Father GOD and recognize the Lord's Words in *Matthew 13:13-15*.
Isaiah 7:14 – Jesus' unique Birth and the Power of His Name were predicted.
Isaiah 9:6 – The Message to us regarding His Birth & Name.
Isaiah 11:1-5 – Jesus is God & Man. His Power is in the Holy Spirit of GOD.
Isaiah 42:1-7 – Jesus is the Son of GOD. His Ministry was thus declared.
Isaiah 53:1-12 –That was the Life & Ministry of our Lord, Savior & Redeemer.
Jeremiah 23:5-6 – Salvation by *the Lord our Righteousness* was promised.
Jeremiah 33:15-16 – Salvation of the Church of GOD was foretold.

That's but briefly. Try to believe it.

Q: Alright. How do you explain all the Prophecies He did not complete?
Namely, *Isaiah 2:1-4, 32:15-18, 60:15-18; Zephaniah 3:9; Hosea 2:20-22;*
Amos 9:13-15; Micah 4:1-4; Zechariah 8:23, 14:9;
& Jeremiah 31:33-34.

(These Scriptures were printed on *https://www.aish.com/jw/s/48892792.html*)

A: Thanks. The Scriptures which you mentioned have *metaphorical* meanings.

Isaiah 2:1-4 – Done. See *Judah*, *Jerusalem*, and *Zion* not literally but as the *Church of GOD*. Her Growth in Truth & Peace was promised.
Isaiah 32:13-18 – Done, seeing *My People* as Christians, and *wilderness* as former unbelievers. The Spirit of GOD guides Christians.
Isaiah 60:14-18 – Done for the Body of Christ.
Zephaniah 3:9 – Done. It is Communion of the Holy Ghost unto our Unity.
Hosea 2:20-22 – Done. Knowledge of the LORD was assured.
Amos 9:13-15 – Done. The Spiritual Revival of the Church of GOD was stated.
Micah 4:1-4 – Done. GOD's People Christians have been foreseen.
Zechariah 8:23 – Done. The Truth of the LORD, our GOD, is in Christians.
Zechariah 14:9 – Done. The Lordship of Christ Jesus is established.
Jeremiah 31:33-34 – Done. It is the New Covenant and the Church of GOD.

Again, the above is interpreted very briefly.
All have been fulfilled by our Blessed Lord in His Church.
Shall we wait for another fulfillment? That is useless.

Q: Can you explain this further? I don't see how you reached these conclusions when reading these Verses.

A: As I said before, those are *metaphorical* expressions.

For he is not a Jew, which is one outwardly; neither is that circumcision, which is outward in the flesh: But he is a Jew, which is one inwardly; and Circumcision is that of the heart, in the spirit, and not in the letter; whose Praise is not of men, but of GOD. (Romans 2:28-29)

The above Scripture explains the term "Jew". In the same way, trying to see beyond the state borders & the time of ancient Israel, I've come to those conclusions.

You said you were Jew. So, you are not indifferent to the land of Israel and the Holy City of Jerusalem, are you?
Have a look at a map. Compare the territory of *Israel* to that of *Promised Land*.
Look at *Jerusalem*. Some time ago, I watched TV and saw the thing incredible: a disgusting *gay parade* in the Holy City of Jerusalem.
And you seriously wait for those Prophecies to be fulfilled without Christ?
You have everything in Christ Jesus, our Lord. Just take it.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/* on June 2019.)

Once, a friend of mine, an unbeliever, was in Jerusalem. To buy some souvenirs, he visited a shop. There, he saw a pile of small crosses and a pile of small images of crucified Christ with holed hands & feet. A shop's owner apologized for the stuff only "half-made", proposed to buy the cross and the image separately, and, using a small hammer & nails, to "assemble" it right there. Knowing not why my friend refused to do it and rushed away.

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the Prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! Behold, your House is left unto you desolate. For I say unto you, Ye shall not see Me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed is he that cometh in the Name of the Lord. (Matthew 23:37-39)

References.

Isaiah 43:6-7,21 & 49:3 – Jews & Israel.
Psalms 4:3, Daniel 12:10, Hosea 2:23, Zechariah 2:11 – The Chosen ones.
Matthew 21:33-44, 22:14; & Acts 10:34-35 – ditto.
Romans 1:6-7, 2:6-11, 8:14,16; & Ephesians 1:4-5 – ditto.
1Thessalonians 1:2-5 & 2Thessalonians 2:13-14 – ditto.
Matthew 3:9 & Revelation 2:9 & 3:9 – Jews True and false.
Acts 13:47-48, Galatians 3:16, & Revelation 3:7-8 – The Promises of GOD.

Kindly see "Q & A" chapters 59, 288, 323, 579, & 599.

Q: (1) Thailand is only 1% Christian out of 70 million people.
So, do you believe that 99% of the nation of Thailand is hell-bound?.
(2) Geography plays a major role in what we believe. (?)

A: (1) In my humble opinion, be it Thailand or any other country, the percentage of people calling themselves "Christians" does not matter for Salvation, Kingdom of Heaven, and Eternal Life. The Right-standing with LORD GOD does. And "hell-bound" are the resolute sinners only.
(2) Negative on that. The crucial role is with the Holy Will of GOD.
And His Will is Salvation & Life.

For GOD so loved the World, that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life. (John 3:16)

667

Q: How do you know that your Bible is the real thing?
Q: What makes this book more valid than any other religious text?
Q: Is it by Faith only?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian/* on June 2019.)

A: The Bible is inspired. But here, my Knowledge & Understanding stop. Christian Faith matters are hard to explain just to answer *curiosity,* not a willing mind. Kindly see relevant chapters: 58, 104, 292, & 514.

If I read aright the record of Christian Experience through the years, those who most enjoyed the Power of the Spirit have had the least to say about Him by way of attempted definition. The Bible Saints who walked in the Spirit never tried to explain Him. In post-Biblical times many who were filled and possessed by the Spirit were by the limitations of their literary gifts prevented from telling us much about Him. They had no gifts for self-analysis but lived from within in uncritical Simplicity. To them the Spirit was One to be loved and fellowshipped the same as the Lord Jesus Himself. They would have been lost completely in any metaphysical discussion of the nature of the Spirit, but they had no trouble in claiming the Power of the Spirit for Holy Living and Fruitful Service.

(A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)

References: *Deuteronomy 8:3 & Proverbs 4:20-22* – The Word of Life.
John 6:48, 8:51; & Revelation 21:6 – ditto.
Joshua 1:8, Proverbs 3:5-6, & Jeremiah 33:3 – The Word of Wisdom.
Isaiah 34:16 & Luke 21:33 – The Word of Power.
John 8:31-32 – The Word of Truth.

Q: Could you please explain the concept of why eternal damnation is fair?. Quick background: I'm a *Satanist* that can not understand why eternal damnation should exist.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: As far as I can understand the word "*Satanist*", you are a follower of Satan. You are against GOD, the Creator of everything ever created (which does not include the Angels who had chosen to rebel against Him and became Satan & demons). That also means that you are against Christians, too. Okay, whether you accept my answer, I state the Written Word of GOD.

O man, who art thou that repliest against GOD? Shall the thing formed say to Him that formed it, Why hast Thou made me thus? Hath not the potter power over the clay, of the same lump to make one vessel unto honour, and another unto dishonour? What if GOD, willing to shew His Wrath, and to make His Power known, endured with much Longsuffering the vessels of Wrath fitted to destruction ... (Romans 9:20-22)

It is also said,

... to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope ... (Ecclesiastes 9:4)

You might want to read the above Scriptures in their full context.
Find the relevant chapters in the Index section. And suit yourself.

Q: Does the Bible say anything about video games being "spawn of Satan?"
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: The Written Word of GOD can answer any question. Note *Jeremiah 33:3*.

Video games are very different. Those which you may find useful should have their due place & time. See *Ecclesiastes 3:1 & Ephesians 15:16*.
Some games are to be thrown away. See *Psalms 119:37 & Ezekiel 20:7*.
As for "spawn of Satan", please, see *John 8:43-44*. Satan is a liar.
Such a "small thing" as a video game might be the devil's tool to steal our time and stand in the way of Understanding.

Q: (1) Do Christians find it offensive or insulting when they hear someone exclaims, "Jesus Christ!"?.
Q: (2) Does it make a difference whether the person is saying it in surprise, disappointment or anger, etc.?
Q: (3) Does it make a difference if *you know* whether the person is a Christian or belongs to another religion or no religion?
Q: (4) What does or doesn't bother you about it? Thank you!
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: (1) I don't see any insult here, just folly. Note *Psalms 39:1-2*.
(2 & 3) It depends on the motive of a speaker. See *Matthew 12:36*.
(3) In your question, instead of "you know" try, "GOD knows".
(4) What always bothers me is the lack of *wise* people around.
Thank you.

668

Q: What does *Matthew 10:32-33* exactly demand of us:
preaching the Good News to unbelievers or communicating with Christians?

A: In my opinion, neither. It is written,

Whosoever therefore shall confess Me before men, him will I confess also before My Father which is in Heaven. But whosoever shall deny Me before men, him will I also deny before My Father which is in Heaven. (Matthew 10:32-33)

This question resembles the one answered in chapter 99 as for *Matthew 10:42*. Yes, we should preach the Truth of GOD to the World in accordance with our Great Commission. And we ought to communicate with our fellow Believers too. But *Matthew 10:32-33* demands something else, even confessing Christ when it becomes costly. Please, read *Matthew 10:34-39* & *Luke 14:26-27,33*.
Get ready to lose your family, kin, friends, home, career – everything for Lord Jesus. Happy you are coming to Christ before creating your Christian Family or recreating the worldly one into Godly. Regretfully, that is not always so with Christians, and a tough decision regarding sorting out the priorities is to be taken. Mind *Jeremiah 33:3* & *Matthew 28:20*. GOD is our Advisor in every hard case.

Study the Scriptures: *Isaiah 41:10, Matthew 10:28, & Luke 12:4-9.*
Read *John Fox, Book of Martyrs*.
See parallel chapters 76 (Our Cross) & 287 (We are not of the world).

Q: Is using birth control for medical issues a sin?
Q: Is using contraceptives to help with medical problems like severe period pain or endometriosis okay?
Q: Is it only a sin using it to prevent pregnancy? Thank you for any answers.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Kindly see chapter 281 and the answer to the question,
Do you agree with birth control?

Do not desire a multitude of useless children, nor rejoice in ungodly sons.
If they multiply, do not rejoice in them, unless the Fear of the LORD is in them.
(Apocrypha, Sirach 16:1-2, Revised Standard Version)

See also chapter 487 (Doctor’s orders). Thank you.

669

Q: What are we supposed to know about Meditation?

A: *A Theological Dictionary by Charles Buck (1850)* runs,

> *Meditation is an act by which we consider any thing closely, or wherein the soul is employed in the search or consideration of any truth. In Religion it is used to signify the serious exercise of the Understanding, whereby our thoughts are fixed on the observation of spiritual things, in order to practice ... Meditation is a duty which ought to be attended to by all who wish well to their spiritual interests ...*

The following Scriptures teach us the Right Meditation.

Joshua 1:8 – The Word of GOD is the main subject of our Meditation.
Psalms 1:2 – See Meditation as your Blessing.
4:4 – Meditate & listen to Him.
19:14 – The LORD of Meditation.
77:10 – Physical infirmity is not the reason to stop Meditation.
104:34 – Our Meditation is Joy.
119:11,16,59 – The Meditation backs our Righteousness.
119:97 – Sacrifice your time unto Meditation.
119:98-99 – Right Meditation is the source of Wisdom.
139:17 – Our Meditation is Communion with the Mind of GOD.
143:5 – Meditate on your Christian Experience.
Jeremiah 33:3 – LORD GOD is our only Teacher.
1Timothy 4:15 – Meditate on your Christian Duties.

... Brethren, whatsoever things are True, whatsoever things are Honest, whatsoever things are Just, whatsoever things are Pure, whatsoever things are Lovely, whatsoever things are of Good Report; if there be any Virtue, and if there be any Praise, think on these things. (Philippians 4:8)

Seek not what is too difficult for you, nor investigate what is beyond your power. Reflect upon what has been assigned to you, and do not be curious about many of His Works, for you do not need to see with your eyes what is Hidden. Do not meddle in what is beyond your tasks, for matters too great for human understanding have been shown you. (Apocrypha, Sirach 3:21-23, Revised Standard Version, 1952)

670

Q: In chapter 21, you made very clear your point against *voting*.
Don't you think that such a position of yours is in favor of *anarchy*?

A: No, I don't. Have you ever heard about *anarchy* as something that factually existed in history? I haven't.
If, for any reason (revolution, war, natural disaster, and alike), a country finds itself without a government or more than one government, local folks would elect the leaders to see for their needs. Or some bandits (whether elected or not) might come to power. There are a lot of examples.
But *anarchy* – which is, by Webster's Dictionary, a (continuous)* state of society without (any)* government or law – is impossible. * (My notes.)

Q: You also quoted the Scripture teaching against the election of President.
Listen, I'm also a Christian. But don't you expect too much from GOD?

A: Christians are not supposed to doubt GOD's Faithfulness to His Word.
How can we "expect too much" from the Creator of Heaven & Earth?
We can only trust Him *too little*.

Q: How can you prove your words?

A: Only by *It is written* ... In this regard, kindly see the References below.

See also parallel chapters 55 (Christian country), 486 (Faith & Trust),
502 (To a man of authority).

References: *Psalms 37:3-5 – Commit thy way unto the LORD ...*
Psalms 62:8 – Trust in Him at all times ...
Proverbs 21:30 – ... no wisdom nor understanding nor counsel ...
Jeremiah 17:5 – Cursed be the man that trusteth in man ...
Hosea 4:6 – ... thou hast rejected Knowledge ...
Luke 7:23 – ... whosoever shall not be offended in Me.
Romans 10:17 – ... Faith cometh by Hearing ...
1John 5:4 – ... the Victory that overcometh the world ...

Good reading: *Kenneth Copeland, The Force Of Faith*
Faith And Patience – The Power Twins
Gloria Copeland, Walk With GOD

671

Q: *Ephesians 4:9* runs,

Now that He ascended, what is it but that He also descended first into the lower parts of the Earth?

This Scripture is commented that Jesus, paying for the sins of humankind, got into *hell* for those three days which passed between His crucifixion and Resurrection. Do you agree with that?

A: No, I don't. Such an interpretation is contrary to my understanding of *Christ Jesus* (mind the Scriptures below) and *hell* (see "Q & A" chapter 8).

I explained hell as *the eternal agony of conscience*. Our Blessed Lord could and did willingly endure the *cross*, but what had He to do in *hell*?

During His thirty-three years as the Son of Man, He walked with GOD, led by the Holy Ghost. Satan and his demons could not fight Lord Jesus, much less overcome Him. So, what *agony of conscience* (hell is all about) could be expected of Him? Negative on that. Our Lord descended *into the lower parts of the Earth* – Paradise (see *Luke 23:43*). He preached *unto the spirits in prison*, as per *1Peter 3:18-20.* The latter is the subject of chapter 512 (The spirits in prison).

References: *Psalms 16:10 – Thou wilt not leave my soul in hell.*
John 10:30 – I and My Father are One.
John 11:25 & 14:6 – I am the Resurrection, and the Life.

Q: Is there any references to Jesus specifically in the Old Testament?
I'm struggling to believe that Jesus really was the Messiah and that it was all messed up through orally telling the stories and translations.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: Kindly see *Psalms 110:4; Isaiah 6:14, 9:6, 11:1-5, 53:1-12; Micah 12:13; & Zechariah 9:9* – There are so many more.
You may consider our discussion in chapter 666 (The Promised Messiah).
Please, read Christ's Words in *Matthew 22:43-45* repeated in *Acts 2:34-36.*
Kindly note *Hebrews 1:13* – It is referred to *Psalms 110:1*.
And mind His Words in *Luke 24:27 & John 5:39.*
Study the Old Testament and find more Scriptures to answer your question.

672

Q: In chapter 66, you referred to *1John 5:8* as *Threefold Baptism* and *our Unity with GOD*. Could you please explain that?

A: Sure. Many Verses in the Written Word of GOD have more than one Truth & Lesson and, consequently, imply correct & consistent interpretations. You may see our References for many commentaries on the Holy Scriptures.

This is He that came by water and blood, even Jesus Christ; not by water only, but by water and blood. And it is the Spirit that beareth Witness, because the Spirit is Truth. For there are Three that bear Record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Holy Ghost: and these Three are One. And there are Three that bear Witness in Earth, the Spirit, and the Water, and the Blood: and these Three agree in One. (1John 5:6-8)

Lord Jesus said: *Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the Name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost ... (Matthew 28:19)*

... Go ye into all the World, and preach the Gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. (Mark 16:15-16)

Thus we have approached the connection: *Threefold Baptism* (determined by *Matthew 28:19*) and our *Accountability to LORD GOD* as per *Mark 16:15-16*.

In *1John 5:8, Three that bear Witness in Earth ... and these Three agree in One* –

– the *Water* Baptism of Repentance coming back to our Heavenly Father;
– the Baptism in the Name *& Blood o*f Jesus – our only Lord & Savior;
– the Baptism in the Holy *Spirit*, His Truth & Power.

Hopefully, the above interpretation does not contradict the Spirit of our Bible.

You may refer to chapters 20 (*Water Baptism*), 65 (*Baptism in the Holy Spirit*), and 316 (*Baptism in the Name of Jesus*).

The relevant Christian movies: *Matthew (1993)* *The Case For Christ*
The Apostle (1997) *Let There Be Light*

673

Q: What does *Luke 13:1* tell us about?

A: It is written,

1 There were present at that season some that told Him of the Galilæans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their Sacrifices.
2 And Jesus answering said unto them, Suppose ye that these Galilæans were sinners above all the Galilæans, because they suffered such things?
3 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. 4 Or those eighteen, upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and slew them, think ye that they were sinners above all men that dwelt in Jerusalem? 5 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye shall all likewise perish. (Luke 13:1-5)

By Brother Thomas Scott,

The Galileans, here mentioned are supposed to have been concerned in the insurrection made by Judas of Galilee, (Acts 5:37), who opposed paying tribute to Caesar, and submitting to the Roman authority. When, therefore, they were come to Jerusalem to worship, and were presenting their Oblations in the Court of the Temple, Pilate sent a company of soldiers, who slew them, and 'mingled their blood with their Sacrifices.'

By Brother William Barclay,

We have here references to two disasters about which we have no definite information and can only speculate ... Galilaeans were always liable to get involved in political trouble because they were a highly inflammable people. Just about this time Pilate had been involved in serious trouble. He had decided rightly that Jerusalem needed a new and improved water supply. He proposed to build it and, to finance it with certain Temple monies. It was a laudable object and a more than justifiable expenditure. But at the very idea of spending Temple monies like that, the Jews were up in arms. When the mobs gathered, Pilate instructed his soldiers to mingle with them, wearing cloaks over their battle dress for disguise. They were instructed to carry cudgels rather than swords. At a given signal they were to fall on the mob and disperse them. This was done, but the soldiers dealt with the mob with a violence far beyond their instructions and a considerable number of people lost their lives. Almost certainly Galilaeans would be involved in that ...*

Both the above suppositions are possible. The Bible does not provide details. Lord's Warning in *Verses 3 & 5* is much more important. Living in sins, we are to perish in hell and eternal death. Here, *likewise* means *spiritually comparable*.

* Kindly note the conclusion made at the end of chapter 103 regarding the Holy Scriptures versus historical documents.

Welcome to see chapters 155 (Repentance) & 163 (National Repentance).

Q: What happens to a person who repents on his (her) death bed?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: If by "repents" you mean Sincere Repentance as per *Psalm 51*, then what is written in *Luke 15:20* or *Luke 23:43* is in Order. See "Q & A" chapters 220 (The Parable of Prodigal Son) & 243 (Paradise today), respectively.
If, however, Sincerity to GOD is absent, the Right Answer is in *Acts 5:4*, *Thou hast not lied unto men, but unto GOD.* Chapter 231 (The Lesson ...).

Q: How do you repent?. I don't feel remorse or regret when I repent.
All I say is, "Dear Heavenly Father. Please forgive *all* my sins.
In Jesus' Name, I pray. Amen."
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: Your question has the Answer in *Matthew 3:8*. I try to keep it this way. Kindly read chapter 155 for Repentance. See the Index for more references. In your Prayer, the word "all" is wrong. Communicate with GOD through the Bible more. Thus you will know *what exactly* to regret. Be Blessed.

Q: How can be the *Promise of God* always with you by *feeling good* when it does not amount to Healing, Comfort, *awareness* of His Presence, and God's Voice? Children get cancer and die. People suffer for their entire lives. That repeats forever in countless millions.
Q: Where was God comforting and healing them?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: You may see chapters 1 (The reason for evil), 32 (Communion with GOD), 312 (Our spiritual Authority), and the Index section for *Healing* and *Health*. Ignoring all his sufferings and death looming, Brother Paul wrote,

I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor Angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come, nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the Love of GOD, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord. (Romans 8:38-39)

674

Q: How would you explain *Luke 13:25-28*?

A: It is written,

> *25 When once the Master of the House is risen up, and hath shut to the Door, and ye begin to stand without, and to knock at the Door, saying, Lord, Lord, open unto us; and He shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: 26 Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in Thy Presence, and Thou hast taught in our streets. 27 But He shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from Me, all ye workers of iniquity. 28 There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the Prophets, in the Kingdom of GOD, and you yourselves thrust out. (Luke 13:25-28)*

Verse 25. The time is up. The Lord would never shut the Door of the Kingdom on His People He is One with. *Galatians 3:28, Ephesians 4:1-6, etc*.
The Door stands for Judgment & Separation: Eternal Life or eternal death, the Kingdom of Heaven or outer darkness. Just as, many a time, the choice was given and recorded. E.g., *Deuteronomy 30:15, Ezekiel 18:4-9*, etc.

Verses 25-27. The conversation between Christ Jesus and the folks found unworthy of His Kingdom is metaphorical and will forever take place in their condemned conscience. I tried to explain that in chapter 8 (Hell).

I take *Verse 26* for a lame argumentation (if any – *Matthew 22:12*) of those who have been Christians statistically only. They followed religious rules & traditions (such as our customary Thanks for meals), attended Church Services, and were Members of Congregations, but never took the pain of the Cross. Their "selective" service is far from being an Honest one. Read *Philippians 3:18-19*.
The Words "*Thou hast taught in our streets*" mean the Truth was heard but remained outside the heart, not welcome therein. Remember *Ezekiel 33:31-32*.

That's why *Verse 27* repeats the Verdict of the LORD, our GOD.
The Lord's "not knowing" is nothing else but *not recognizing* the folks led by worldly reason, not by the Word of Truth. Consider *Genesis 1:4 & 3:9*.

Verse 28 depicts *hell* & *second death*, the subject of chapters 8 & 573 of this book. "Seeing" the Saints of GOD in their Kingdom is mental only. It is hard for a condemned *spirit* to "see" anything in & beyond the spiritual *outer darkness*.

At the same time, the condemned *soul* can & will well remember the Truth, once so graciously taught and foolishly ignored.

Further references.

Hosea 4:6 – ... because thou hast rejected Knowledge ...
Matthew 7:21-23 – Not every one ...
Hebrews 6:4-6 – ... if they shall fall away ...
Hebrews 10:26-29 – ... if we sin wilfully ...

Q: (1) Fellow Christians, why don't we all learn Hebrew or Greek?
Q: (2) If the Old Testament was written in Hebrew and the New Testament in Greek, aren't we doing ourselves a *disservice* by ignoring these languages? (3) Just think about how many elements of the Bible we are missing *because* we do not read it in the original languages! (?)

(Signed: *Episcopalian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1) Dear Christian, the Gift of *learning* (old) languages is given to a few of us. Yet, we are gifted in many other ways. See *Ephesians 4:11-13*.
But the ability to *follow* the Written Word of GOD is given to all people – that is written in *Deuteronomy 30:11-14*.
Please read what Brother Luther wrote about *grammarians* in chapter 103.
(2) In chapter 118, you may find how Brother Roland H. Bainton described the position of Master Luther: *The Bible for him was not strictly identical with the Word of GOD.*
Please also mind *Jeremiah 33:3* regarding our Communion with GOD.
You may kindly note the difference between knowledge of the languages and understanding of the meaning. Please, read chapter 58 (K & U & W).
(3) The study you propose should be only under the Guidance of the Holy Ghost. Note *Matthew 23:13-33*, wherefrom the following Words are taken.
Thus our Lord Jesus warned some *grammarians*:

But woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye shut up the Kingdom of Heaven against men: for ye neither go in yourselves, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye devour widows' houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation. Woe unto you, Scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves. (Matthew 23:13-15)

675

Q: How to comprehend the Words of Christ in *Luke 16:15*?

A: It is written,

> *13 No servant can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve GOD and mammon. 14 And the Pharisees also, who were covetous, heard all these things: and they derided Him. 15 And He said unto them, Ye are they which justify yourselves before men; but GOD knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly esteemed among men is abomination in the Sight of GOD. (Luke 16:13-15)*

Those Words our Lord Jesus said at the beginning of the Christian Era were actual before & ever since (*Ecclesiastes 1:9*). For there have always been Believers who compromised with the devil and never forgot such things as career, prestige, reputation, wealth, etc. *Matthew 13:7* & *Philippians 3:18-19*.
If those *Pharisees* are no more here & now, many are they who deride our Christian Faith. In this "Q & A", you may note many chapters titled "The unbelievers ask".
Even so, let us not forget *Genesis 1:4* and know how to answer that first Question of our Heavenly Father recorded in *Genesis 3:9*.

> *The True Christian ideal is not to be happy but to be Holy. The Holy heart alone can be the Habitation of the Holy Ghost.*
>
> *(A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)*

Relevant "Q & A" chapters: 40 (Compromise), 41 (Common sense), & 287 (We are not of the world).

Q: Please explain *1Corinthians 16:22* –

If any man
loves not the Lord Jesus Christ, let him be Anathema Maran-atha.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Edited.)

A: Having the Bible Dictionaries consulted with, we may take "Anathema" for "cursed" and "Maran-atha" for "the Lord is coming".
Please also read "loves not" as "does not follow". Thank you.

676

Q: It is written,

Whosoever putteth away his wife, and marrieth another, committeth adultery: and whosoever marrieth her that is put away from her husband committeth adultery. (Luke 16:18)

Let's say a family broke up. Both exes found their better spouses and were happy to continue that way. Was it wrong?

A: What to say first, good or bad? The (only) good thing is those two families are (said to be) happy. The bad thing is that as the first family, the subsequent two were built on an ungodly foundation.

It is written,

Therefore shall a Man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his Wife: and they shall be One flesh. (Genesis 2:24)

... know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? (1Corinthians 6:16)

And the good news is *Ecclesiastes 9:4*, meaning the folks in question must repent, confess their crime, and join the Church of GOD. No other way but.

Kindly see relevant chapters: 60, 98, 126, & 138.

Further references: *Isaiah 55:6-7* – The only Way is GOD-ward.
Daniel 5:27 – The reason why.

Q: Does the Bible say anything about people with severe disabilities: should they have children?. I saw something that sparked my mind about this topic, and wondered how God would feel.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Disabilities are different: physical, psychic, and spiritual. All might be sequential from ancestral *sin*. That's a *curse* that can and should be broken. See chapters 44 (Blessings and curses) & 123 (Who did sin?).
On the other hand, such an option as adoption ought to be considered too. See chapter 495 (The Ministry of Adoption).
You are welcome to visit our Index section too.

677

Q: Let's discuss *Luke 17:20-21*.

A: Well, it is written:

> *... when He was demanded of the Pharisees, when the Kingdom of GOD should come, He answered them and said, The Kingdom of GOD cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the Kingdom of GOD is within* you. (Luke 17:20-21)*

The Kingdom within is well recognized in our Communion with the Holy Ghost. We can and ought to keep Union with Him by actual walking with the LORD through our Obedience, Sacrifice, and Service. See chapter 292 for more.

The constituent parts of the Kingdom of GOD are our hearts. *Revelation 3:20*. That *Kingdom within* can be found (or lost), strengthened & valued (or corrupted & estranged) right where we are. We may open (or close) our *spirit* for the Holy Spirit of GOD. One can keep on (or break up) that Union by standing through (or failing) the Tests of every-day life. Being Faithful or unfaithful to GOD, we can either belong to or get alienated from His Kingdom, respectively. *John 14:23*.

The *Kingdom of GOD* is more than some distant future. It is here & now.
Our *Christian Way of Salvation* is a compulsory *Condition* to be a Subject thereof. Read *Luke 15:20*.
Even so, *where art thou?* See *Genesis 3:9*.

> *The world's artificial pleasures are all but evidence that the human race has to a large extent lost its Power to enjoy the True pleasures of Life and is forced to substitute for them false and degrading thrills.*
>
> *(A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)*

* Another translation – *"the Kingdom of GOD is among you"*
or else, *"the Kingdom of GOD is in your midst"* –
can be found in the footnotes of many Bible Editions: *Amplified Bible, Expanded Bible, Darby Translation, English Standard Version, New International Version, Revised Standard Version,* etc.

Please, check it out on *https://www.biblegateway.com/verse/en/Luke17:21*.
That might call for seeing the Truth from another aspect – even the Kingdom of GOD represented by our Lord Jesus.

However, being *One Spirit* with Him, as per *1Corinthians 6:17*, we are united with Father GOD Himself. His Image & Likeness is secured *in* ourselves. And therefore, our previous conclusions are not far from Truth.

Relevant chapters: 153 (The Kingdom of Heaven), 238 (Thy Kingdom come), 292 (Fellowship with the Holy Spirit).

Q: Does God bless only certain people?
Q: Does God intervenes in our lives and causes good things to happen?
Q: Or does He let us be for everything to play out without any intervention?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: Negative to all that. Please, read chapters 24, 32, & 44.
The following Scriptures will best answer your question.

... there is no iniquity with the LORD our GOD, nor respect of persons ...
(2Chronicles 19:7)

... if any man be in Christ, he is a New Creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become New. (2Corinthians 5:17)

Blessed be the GOD and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ,
Who hath blessed us with all spiritual Blessings in Heavenly places in Christ ... (Ephesians 1:3)

Q: (1) For God's Glory – where does this notion come from?
Q: (2) Is His Glory the only reason God does anything?
Q: (3) What does it mean?
(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, March 2021.)

A: (1) By Wikipedia, *Ad Majorem Dei Gloriam – To the Greater Glory of GOD* – is the Latin motto of the Society of Jesus (Jesuits), an Order of the Catholic Church. The origin of that phrase is attributed to the founder of the Jesuits, Saint *Ignatius of Loyola*. (Kindly watch this Christian movie.)
(2 & 3) GOD is Love (*1John 4:16*). See here His Glory as well as the Meaning and the Reason for His Works. Kindly note that the Glory of GOD & our Christian Glory are united. Read *1Corinthians 6:17*.
In our "Q & A" Index section, you may find the relevant chapters for "*GOD's Glory*" and "*GOD's Praise*".

678

Q: *Luke 19:41-44* tells us about the coming destruction of Jerusalem, which was to happen shortly after Jesus' death & Resurrection, doesn't it?

A: Yes, it does. Yet Jesus' Prophecy by far exceeded that sad event. It is written,

> *41 And when He was come near, He beheld the City, and wept over it, 42 Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things which belong unto thy Peace! But now they are hid from thine eyes. 43 For the days shall come upon thee, that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side, 44 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee; and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another; because thou knewest not the time of thy Visitation. (Luke 19:41-44)*

In my humble opinion, the keywords of the Prophecy are,

... the things which belong unto thy Peace ...

What things belong to *worldly peace*? I define the latter as *the peace with Satan*. That "peace", simply determined as the absence of war, is as lying as the devil himself. The history of mankind is loaded up with wars, which have never had anything to do with Righteousness.
See chapters 300 (The evil of wars) & 743 (the question about *Matthew 10:34*).
And what belongs to Godly Peace? Are they not *Love*, *Faith*, *Hope*, *Unity*, *Obedience*, *Courage*, *Joy*, and other Blessings?
Read chapter 53 (The Peace of GOD).

Per the *Dictionary of Bible Proper Names (compiled by Cyrus A. Potts, 1922)*, *Jerusalem* means *Possession of Peace, the abode of Harmony ...*
We are supposed to choose *our* Peace & Harmony.
See chapter 323 (Pray for the Peace of Jerusalem).

And if it seem evil unto you to serve the LORD, choose you this day whom ye will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell: but as for me and my house, we will serve the LORD. (Joshua 24:15)

As for *the days* mentioned in *Luke 19:43-44*, please see *Revelation 6:4*.

679

Q: Please, clarify the Teaching given in *Luke 22:36*.

A: *Luke 22:36* teaches us about Spiritual Purse, Script, and Sword.

> *35 Then He said to them, When I sent you without purse and scrip and sandals, did you want any thing? And when they said No; then He said to them, 36 But now let him who hath a Purse take it, and likewise a Scrip. And let him who hath not a Sword sell his mantle and buy one. 37 For I say to you, This portion of Scripture "And He was ranked with malefactors"*, must yet be accomplished in Me. For the things concerning Me are coming to a close. 38 Then they said, Master, here are two swords. And He said, It is enough. (Luke 22:35-38, Charles Thomson Translation, 1808)*
>
> ** Isaiah 53:12.*

The Words "*But now ...*" indicate the second part of every *Christian Discipleship* – our actual Service. No Teacher is commendable more than the Holy Ghost.

Taking a "purse" for a money receptacle and a "scrip" for a small handbag, as the common dictionaries generally agree with, we can try to deduct the *spiritual* meaning from that *metaphorical* wording.
Thus *Purse* might stand for our financial investment into a Ministry we serve the Lord in. That "purse" of ours does not contain any money but rather the Treasures taught about in *Matthew 6:20-21*.
We discussed *Christian Giving Attitude* in chapter 56 (The Test of Giving).

Scrip, in my opinion, is sorting out the priorities as per the "GOD First" rule.
Please see chapter 15 (GOD First) for more.
The same Wisdom is the Words "*sell his mantle and buy one*".
As a scrip is small, so ought to be our worldly necessities.

The Sword "It Is Written" is disclosed in chapters 444 (Our Spiritual Weapon) & 654 (The Sword "It Is Written ...").

Verse 38 plainly shows that the Disciples understood nothing at the moment.
Since there is *a Time for every Purpose under the Heaven*, the Holy Spirit of GOD well taught the Disciples of Christ later on and continues to do so nowadays.
Kindly take a look at "Q & A" chapter 72 (Why Parables?).

680

Q: Is it possible to lose our Salvation?

A: Yes, it is. Kindly check out “Salvation” in the Index.

Q: How then can you explain the Scriptures calling us “saved”?

A: Well, consider some of them given in the references below (there are many more) and see that in each case, our Faith can be corrupted and Salvation lost *if* we start compromising with the unbelieving world and sin willfully.

References.

Acts 16:31 – Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ…
Romans 5:9 – ... justified by His blood ...
Romans 8:24 – ... we are saved by Hope ...
Romans 10:9 – ... confess with thy mouth ... believe in thy heart ...
1John 1:9 – If we confess our sins, He is Faithful and Just to forgive ...

Q: Did you see or hear about some examples of such a fall?

A: I did, but prefer not to mention it here, knowing not the end of those sad stories. *1Corinthians 4:5*.
Let’s instead be satisfied with the example our Lord gave in *Matthew 11:11*. That was discussed in chapter 165 (Saint John the Baptist).

Q: Do you think that by *Hebrews 6:4-6 & 10:26-29*, one willful sin on our part can destroy all Hope for Salvation?
Q: How then will *Ecclesiastes 9:4* stand?

A: *Ecclesiastes 9:4* stands okay, and *Hebrews 6:4-6 & 10:26-29* do not contradict it. See these Scriptures again and note:

... to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope:
for a living dog is better than a dead lion. (Ecclesiastes 9:4)

In “Q & A” chapter 138 (Hope), we mentioned this Scripture as a ground for Hope. And it is so for every human being, a *willful sinner* inclusive. The only question is, will that sinner repent?
Now, look closely at the following Warning.

4 For it is impossible for those who were once Enlightened, and have tasted of the Heavenly Gift, and were made Partakers of the Holy Ghost, 5 And have tasted the Good Word of GOD, and the Powers of the World to come, 6 If they shall fall away, to renew them again unto Repentance; seeing they crucify to themselves the Son of GOD afresh, and put Him to an open shame. (Hebrews 6:4-6)

In *Verses 4 & 6*, mark the words *impossible & fall away*.
Why? Because "*fall away*" does not mean "one willful sin" in your question, but rather, quite an attitude of some "ex-Christians". And kindly note, *Repentance* is not something to be easily manipulated. It is the Gift from our Father GOD.
For it is written:

Every Good Gift and every Perfect Gift is from Above, and cometh down from the Father of Lights, with Whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. (James 1:17)

The same is seen in *Hebrews 10:26-29*.

26 For if we sin wilfully after that we have received the Knowledge of the Truth, there remaineth no more Sacrifice for sins, 27 But a certain fearful looking for of Judgment and Fiery Indignation which shall devour the adversaries. 28 He that despised Moses' Law died without Mercy under two or three witnesses; 29 Of how much sorer Punishment, suppose ye, shall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of GOD, and hath counted the Blood of the Covenant, wherewith he was sanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done despite unto the Spirit of Grace? (Hebrews 10:26-29)

Verse 26 is not "one willful sin". It is the attitude condemned by *Verse 29*.

Chapter 138 also has another good reference, *Luke 15:18-21*.

18 I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, 19 And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. 20 And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. 21 And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. (Luke 15:18-21)

This attitude is Repentance indeed, the Gift of LORD GOD.

The Reward is promised in *Verse 20*.
But the earlier asked question remains, *will a sinner repent?*

(The Charismatic Church *Victory*. Small Group discussion.)

Q: What happened if someone died before Jesus?.
Those folks, obviously, didn't know the Christian God, Atonement, etc.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

A: It is written:

If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him. (Genesis 4:7)

That was said well before Jesus' Ministry.
It is also said,

... I am the LORD, I change not ... (Malachi 3:6)

Therefore, it was always possible to repent & come to Father GOD.
Earlier in this chapter, please find *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.

Q: Could someone be saved *after* death?.
Q: If someone who lacked a belief in God were to die, and they found out *after* death that God and Christianity were correct, would they be able to ask forgiveness and be saved?
Q: If not, why?

(Signed: *Atheist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2020.)

A: To your first question, my answer is negative.

Your reasoning is correct, as there are no unbelievers *after* death, in hell, in particular. Kindly read "Q & A" chapter 8 (Hell).

However, your second question can be answered negatively too.
The earlier-quoted *Ecclesiastes 9:4* is the reason why.

And, once you ask, contemplate on *Luke 15:20*. This Scripture is quoted & mentioned more than once in our "Q & A". That is a Good Way to be saved.

681

Q: Please answer these forty-four Spiritual Conversation Starter Questions.
(*https://www.evangelismcoach.org/44-conversation-questions*)

A: Well, let us try to answer them one by one (in "Q & A" chapters 681 & 682).

Q: (1) Where are you in your spiritual pilgrimage?

A: I'm somewhere on the Way of a Prodigal Son. *Luke 15:18-21*. Chapter 220.

Q: (2) In your opinion, how does one become a Christian?

A: *... men do not become Christians by associating with Church people, nor by Religious contact, nor by Religious education; they become Christians only by Invasion of their nature by the Spirit of GOD in the New Birth.*
(A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit Of Man)

I agree with Brother Tozer. To his right words, I dare add our passing the constant Test of *Giving*. See relevant chapter 56.

Q: (3) What single thing would you like to make absolutely certain you do (if at all possible) during your lifetime?

A: It is *Giving*, which I pointed out in answering your previous question.

Q: (4) How do you think a person can keep from becoming a workaholic?

A: I guess you mean a person pictured in *Matthew 13:7*, *Mark 4:7*, & *Luke 8:7*.

... choked with cares and riches and pleasures of this life, and bring no Fruit to Perfection. (Luke 8:14)

The Words "and pleasures" might be omitted as irrelevant for a *workaholic*. As for how can he (she) keep from that? Just sort out the priorities. You may consider chapter 15 (GOD First).

Q: (5) What character can you imagine yourself to be (any period of history)?

A: We imagine a lot. See chapter 99 (A cup of water) for better imagination.

Q: (6) What are you reading that is not an assignment or required by your work?

A: Right now (the year of 2019), I continue my studying the Written Word of GOD and *reading* "Experiencing the Presence of GOD – Teachings from the Book of Hebrews", by A.W. Tozer.

Q: (7) How do you know you will go to Heaven when you die?

A: I cannot know that. Kindly see chapter 308 (Salvation).

Q: (8) How are you growing personally?

A: Meaning spiritually? Speaking only o' Faith, it is written in *Romans 10:17 & James 2:26.*
The first Scripture is followed per my answer to your question 6, the second by my humble Ministry, *Christian Mind*.

Q: (9) In a conversation with someone who has never heard about God, what would you say about Him from your experience?

A: Let me suppose the conversation is started & continued, given a person I speak to is willing to hear. My experience resembles *Luke 15:20*.
Again, kindly read chapter 308 (Salvation).

Q: (10) In your opinion, how does one become a Christian?

A: You repeated your question 2. See the answer there.

Q: (11) How would you describe your father and his impact on your life?

A: My (earthy) father was an atheist. That was his negative impact on me.
For the rest, I miss him and still would like to talk to him.

Q: (12) Tell me about your Mentor and his (her) impact on your life.

A: If you mean my Christian Teachers, the answer to this question is in chapter 139 (Our Teachers). Kindly have a look.

Q: (13) What do you think would probably surprise most people about you?
Q: Why?

A: Most people are *unbelievers*. What the latter would be surprised about me (as well as every Christian) is our Faith. Why? It is in *2Corinthians 4:4.*

Q: (14) What is your greatest strength, and what are you doing to develop it?

A: My Greatest Strength is the Holy Ghost in me. He is greater than he who is in the world. See *John 4:4*. In this regard, "to develop" means to continue Communion & Fellowship with Him. "Q & A" chapter 292 has more.

Q: (15) Why do people do what they do?
Q: What are the assumptions you make about people?

A: Unbelievers (and those who are *the synagogue of Satan – Revelation 2:9*) follow Satan-inspired "rules of this world". Those folks think themselves "free", but they are not. Read *2Corinthians 4:4*.
Christians try to follow Jesus. However, far not all of us got rid of worldly wisdom. You may see chapters 40, 41, and all subtitled "Spirit War".

Q: (16) How do you handle pressure?
Q: When the pressure is really on, what do you need from your friends?

A: If you mean "a spiritual pressure", whatever way it might be manifested in the natural, it's better to follow *1John 5:18* and keep the evil at arm's length. However, "when the pressure is really on", I'd like to have a Prayer Backup. Please read chapters 232 (Our Prayer Backup) & 465 (Prayer Team).

Q: (17) Has anything ever happened to you that was dramatic, personal or spectacular enough to cause you to be certain there is God, Who is both Infinite and personally caring?

A: I believe every Christian has a Testimony or Testimonies to that effect.
As for mine, you may read it in chapters 199, 233, 306, & 577.

Q: (18) What do you consider to be two major turning points in your life?

A: What can be called "two major turning points" are my coming to *Lord Jesus* in 1994, and an unforgettable encounter with the *Holy Ghost* in 1997.

Q: (19) What is something you consider to be a great personal success?
Q: Why was it so significant?

A: A great success, yet not only my, is *Communion with our LORD GOD* and *Hearing His Holy Spirit*. Why is it so significant? Because, without Him, we hardly speak *Truth*.

Q: (20) What is the key to maintaining balance in your life?

A: It is *following* the Holy Ghost. The more I am *Obedient to GOD,* the better is Balance. Or *Peace*. You may see relevant chapters: 53, 292, & 549.

Q: (21) What are two or three major Truths upon which you have based your decision-making?

A: I like the Rule "WWJD" – *What Would Jesus Do?* But, speaking of Biblical Truths, it is *Deuteronomy 6:4-6, Isaiah 41:10, &c., &c*.

Q: (22) Tell me about two of your life-long friends and why they have such an impact on your life. What made you choose them?

A: Speaking of people, I have only one. It is Lydia, my Wife.
The impact she made on my Life can be described by the words of one of her letters: "No matter what, know, there is a Home where your Family loves and waits for you."
Since we married well before we came to Christ, I can say only about what made me keep this Union strong: Love.
You may see chapters 60, 499, and 549 for more.

Q: (23) Have you dealt with the questions, "How much money is enough?"
Q: and "What do I do with the rest?" Please answer.

A: I deal with many questions, as you can see in this "Q & A".
Dealing with money, we would do well by following *Malachi 3:8-12*.
In this simple way, GOD Himself makes it enough and takes care of the rest.

Q: (24) How would you describe your mother and the impact she has had on your life?

A: My mother called herself "a Believer who respects all Religions".
In my opinion, such an attitude did not do her any good. So, the "impact" could be better. Yet, I remained grateful to my loving mother.

682

Q: (25 – see chapter 681.) In your opinion, Who was & is Jesus Christ?

A: Jesus Christ is God Son, Second Person of One Triune GOD, our Lord, Redeemer, Reconciler, and Savior. He is the Head of our Christian Church – the Body of Christ – One & Indivisible as our Holy GOD is.

Q: (26) If you could know God personally, would you be interested?

A: Please, correct the question. GOD is incomprehensible. We can know Him, personally or otherwise, only within some limits. Note *Proverbs 21:30 & Isaiah 55:8-9*. As for being "interested", I need more such Knowledge. See chapters 32 (Communion with GOD) & 52 (Knowledge of GOD).

Q: (27) How would you define *materialism*?
Q: And how do you deal with it in your life?

A: Whether philosophy or attitude, materialism is a Satan-inspired lie directed against humankind. As a Christian, I follow the Creed of *Deuteronomy 6:4-9* and the Twelfth Commandment of *Matthew 28:19-20*.

Q: (28) What have you found to be the best way of absorbing disappointment, rejection, distress, and discouragement?

A: I would rather say not "absorbing" but *Understanding* those usual things of the heathen world deprived of *Knowledge*. See chapter 58 (K & U & W). The best way for a Christian to react to (or fight or live in) those situations is to communicate with Father GOD and seek His Good Guidance. Our Lord Jesus acted that way when Saint John the Baptist was murdered for nothing.

Q: (29) When you get to Heaven, what will be the first three questions you will ask God?

A: Sorry, I take this question as incorrect. Kindly see chapter 308 (Salvation).

Q: (30) If you were to inherit a million dollars today and couldn't spend it on your enterprise or keep it for yourself, what would you do with it and why?

A: No idea. I have never thought about that. Probably, I would ask GOD what to do with the stuff. He would direct my steps. Why? Read *Proverbs 3:5-6*.

Q: (31) What do you find most attractive about Christianity and the Person of Christ?
Q: What do you find least attractive about Christianity and the Person of Christ?

A: Most attractive are the Virtues – Love, Righteousness, Truth, Peace, and so forth. The least attractive is the Cross of dealing with evil.

Q: (32) Do you consider yourself a seeker of the truth?

A: No. Much rather, I am a Preacher of Truth.

Q: (33) What is your spiritual background?

A: In the beginning, it was Charismatic and Pentecostal Congregations. Later, it is a Non-denominational one.

Q: (34) Have you ever read the Bible?

A: Only once. After that, I *study* it.

Q: (35) Have your views on Religion changed since you started college?
Q: How?

A: *Religion* is not my word. *Faith* is. See chapter 110 (Religion & theology). My spiritual views changed when I came to Christ.

Q: (36) Have you ever discussed what Biblical Christianity is?

A: I did. See here all chapters subtitled “Unbelievers ask” & “Contradictions”.

Q: (37) Why do you think you feel the way you do toward Jesus Christ and His Message of Love & Forgiveness?

A: We talked about Jesus in your question 25. Here, I can only add that He is My Teacher. Why? Because I’m guided so by the Holy Ghost. *John 14:26*.

Q: (38) What is your philosophy of life based on?

A: The Word of GOD. *John 5:24, 6:47, 8:12, 14:6; Romans 14:7-8; &c., &c*.

Q: (39) Do you believe what you have been brought up with?

A: No, I don't. For that was materialism & communism, both of the devil.

Q: 40. Why do you think Christianity is not relevant to your life?
Q: 41. If Christ was Who He claimed to be, how would that affect your life?
Q: 43. If your questions could be answered in a way that would satisfy you, would you then believe in Christ?

A: Your questions 40, 41, & 43 are to an *unbeliever*. I pass them by.

Q: (42) What are you living for?
Q: What do you value most?

A: It is written:

... whether we live, we live unto the Lord; and whether we die, we die unto the Lord: whether we live therefore, or die, we are the Lord's. (Romans 14:8)

... lay up for yourselves Treasures in Heaven ... For where your Treasure is, there will your heart be also. (Matthew 6:19-20)

I believe the above Scriptures. So, I live for our Lord Jesus, Who has died for me and lives in me. And what I value most are the things the LORD, our GOD, blesses His Children with: Life, Righteousness, Love, Faith, Hope, Knowledge, Understanding, Wisdom, etc. All these Treasures the heathen world is unable to give and value.

Q: (44) The Kennedy questions:
First ask – "If you died today, do you know for sure you'd go to Heaven?"
Q: Then ask – "If you died and stood before God and He asked you 'Why should I let you into Heaven?' What would you say?"

A: To the first, my answer is the same as to questions 7 & 29. See chapter 308. The second is quite imaginary, as it seems to me. But, only to answer the question, the way of *Luke 15:21* is so much better than of *Matthew 7:22*.

(https://www.evangelismcoach.org/44-conversation-questions – answered in 2019, last checked out on June 2026.)

683

Q: It is written,

Then Judas, which had betrayed Him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the Chief Priests and Elders, saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? See thou to that. And he cast down the pieces of silver in the Temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. (Matthew 27:3-5)

Does it mean that Judas Iscariot repented and was saved?

A: No, it does not. The above Scripture proved his *sorrow*. However, that proved to be *the sorrow of the world*, which led Judas to *the sin of suicide*.

For Godly Sorrow worketh Repentance to Salvation not to be repented of: but the sorrow of the world worketh death. (2Corinthians 7:10)

Judas Iscariot was a traitor. That was his intention, plan, and attitude. *John 6:70*. Well, all Jesus' Disciples, except Peter & John, left Him and ran for their lives. Brother Peter was the most courageous one, but, led by common sense, thrice denied Jesus. Brother John did not revoke on the Teacher only because he was not so tempted as Brother Peter. Thus all the Disciples failed. Why? Mind the Holy Will of the LORD written down in *Zechariah 13:7* & *Matthew 26:31*. You may consider chapter 88 (Saint Peter). Didn't we – Christians – betray our Lord more than once? However, nota bene, notwithstanding their falls, the Disciples of Christ get up and back to the Right Track. Those who don't are lost forever.

For the mouth of the wicked and the mouth of the deceitful are opened against Me: they have spoken against Me with a lying tongue. They compassed Me about also with words of hatred; and fought against Me without a cause. For My Love they are My adversaries: but I give Myself unto Prayer. And they have rewarded Me evil for Good, and hatred for My Love. Set Thou a wicked man over him: and let Satan stand at his right hand. When he shall be judged, let him be condemned: and let his prayer become sin. (Psalms 109:2-7)

While I was with them in the world, I kept them in Thy Name: those that Thou gavest Me I have kept, and none of them is lost, but the son of perdition; that the Scripture might be fulfilled. (John 17:12)

684

Q: Let's discuss Jesus' Sermon on the *Bread of Life* in *John 6:32-58.*

A: Okay, consider the Scripture Verse by Verse.

> *32 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, Verily, I say unto you, Moses gave you not that Bread from Heaven; but My Father giveth you the True Bread from Heaven.*

Brother Moses, the Servant of the LORD, represented the People of Israel before Almighty GOD, and prayed for their *physical* needs. But True *spiritual* food is given only by our Heavenly Father.

> *33 For the Bread of GOD is He which cometh down from Heaven, and giveth Life unto the World.*

The Chief Property of True spiritual food (Bread from Heaven) is Life-Giving. Jesus, the Promised Messiah, is the Carrier of that Bread of Life. See *John 14:6.*

> *34 Then said they unto Him, Lord, evermore give us this Bread. 35 And Jesus said unto them, I am the Bread of Life: he that cometh to Me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on Me shall never thirst.*

Note the Words "*cometh to Me*", not "*accepteth Me*".
Jesus, our Lord & Teacher, is the *Bread of Life*, the only spiritual food for a human being, and the Word of Truth.
To come unto Him means to put aside all worldliness and give Father GOD the absolute Priority in our Life. Mind chapter 15 (GOD First).
To *believe in (on) Him* means to do it indeed, proving that in everyday living.
See the Parallel – *John 4:14.*

> *36 But I said unto you, That ye also have seen Me, and believe not.*

Those Jews had seen the Proof of Jesus' Authority shown through the Mighty Works done by Him. The same unbelief is seen today too.

> *37 All that the Father giveth Me shall come to Me;*
> *and him that cometh to Me I will in no wise cast out.*

Mind again, "come", not "accept". See also *Matthew 11:28.*

That is stressed again in *Verse 44*. Coming to GOD is a Blessing. He calls all but helps to come only to those with Penitent hearts. The people coming to GOD are welcome by Him. And, as in *Verse 35*, to come to the LORD means to give Him (the first place in) our Life. Again, kindly refer to chapter 15 (GOD First).

> *38 For I came down from Heaven, not to do Mine Own Will, but the Will of Him that sent Me.*

The LORD's Will is our Salvation. Remember *John 3:16-17*.
His Will to His Children is Love which knows no limits. Read *Romans 8:32-39*.
The Holy Will of our Heavenly Father is All-Powerful. See *Psalms 33:11*.
And He is the First One Faithful to His Plans & Decisions. Read *Isaiah 25:1*.
Our limited understanding cannot approach GOD's Wisdom.
See *Proverbs 21:30*.
That is the reason why forever & ever LORD knows better. Note *Isaiah 55:8-9*.
Therefore, whenever encountering any hard question, mind *Proverbs 3:5-6*.
And, doing GOD's Holy Will, let us start from our mind. Note *Romans 12:2*.

> *39 And this is the Father's Will which hath sent Me, that of all which He hath given Me I should lose nothing, but should raise it up again at the Last Day.*

That was fulfilled. See *John 17:12,24*.

> *40 And this is the Will of Him that sent Me, that every one which seeth the Son, and believeth on Him, may have Everlasting Life: and I will raise him up at the Last Day.*

Mother Theresa, standing upon *Matthew 25:31-46*, once asked the journalist interviewing her in the poor Quarters of her Order in India: *How many times have you met Jesus on your way here?*

> *41 The Jews then murmured at Him, because He said, I am the Bread which came down from Heaven. 42 And they said, Is not this Jesus, the son of Joseph, whose father and mother we know? How is it then that he saith, I came down from Heaven?*

That attitude our Lord is explained in *Luke 4:24*. See also *2Corinthians 4:4*.

> *43 Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves.*

44 No man can come to Me, except the Father which hath sent Me draw him: and I will raise him up at the Last Day.

Even so, let us see ourselves Chosen & Blessed by GOD to be *Christians* and value this Blessing. See the Parallels in *John 6:65 & James 1:17*.

45 It is written in the Prophets, And they shall be all taught of GOD. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto Me.

It is written in *Isaiah 54:13*. And what to learn is *1Timothy 2:5*. Kindly note, here, "*heard*" does not mean receiving a sound with our *physical* ears and understanding the language by the intellect. No, it means hearing by a *heart* (spirit) the Truth of the Written Word of GOD. See the same in *Romans 10:17*.

46 Not that any man hath seen the Father, save He which is of GOD,
He hath seen the Father.

Seeing the Credentials of Jesus, mind ours by *John 10:30 & 1Corinthians 6:17*.

47 Verily, Verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on Me hath Everlasting Life.

Considering all the Credentials & Proofs, the above Words of Lord Jesus are the only Conclusion a Godly-thinking man comes to. And, as we noted under *Verses 35-35*, to *believe* in Lord Jesus means to *follow* Him, proving that every day.

48 I am that Bread of Life.

Even as *natural* bread satisfies our *physical* hunger, the *Bread of Life* (the Word of Truth, our Daily Bread, the Holy Scriptures) satiates our *spiritual* hunger.
See the relationship between spiritual and natural things in *John 4:13-14*.

49 Your fathers did eat Manna in the wilderness, and are dead.

Manna – the Unique Masterpiece of LORD GOD – was natural food and a Symbol of spiritual Food. Those who ate it satisfied their natural hunger but got dead forever if they did not care about spiritual things.

50 This is the Bread which cometh down from Heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the Living Bread which came down from Heaven: if any man eat of this Bread, he shall live for ever: and the Bread that I will give is My Flesh, which I will give for the Life of the World.

Our Bread of Life gives us the comprehension of the Ultimate Sacrifice of Christ. To *eat of this Bread* means to embrace the Truth of the LORD, welcome it into our heart Lord *Jesus* Who died for our Salvation, and follow Him.
We eat this Bread at the Sacrament of the *Holy Communion*. See chapter 35.
This Sacrament, taken Worthily as per *1Corinthiahs 11:23-31*, has the Power to seal up our Membership in the Church of GOD.

52 The Jews therefore strove among themselves, saying, How can this man give us his flesh to eat?

See the reason for spiritual deafness in *John 8:43-45* & *2Corinthians 4:4*.

53 Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, Verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the Flesh of the Son of Man, and drink His Blood, ye have no Life in you.
54 Whoso eateth My Flesh, and drinketh My Blood, hath Eternal Life; and I will raise him up at the Last Day. 55 For My Flesh is Meat indeed, and My Blood is Drink indeed. 56 He that eateth My Flesh, and drinketh My Blood, dwelleth in Me, and I in him. 57 As the Living Father hath sent Me, and I live by the Father: so he that eateth Me, even he shall live by Me. 58 This is that Bread which came down from Heaven: not as your fathers did eat Manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this Bread shall live for ever.

These Verses, speaking of the Right spiritual food, are as closed up to every unbelieving mind as the rest of our Bible. *1Corinthians 2:14* explains that. But why did our Lord Jesus speak this "not clear" way at all? Our "Q & A" answered this question in chapter 72 (Why Parables?).

Q: Why is there a Commandment for children to respect their parents but not for parents to respect their children? Respect is a two-way street.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: Please, read *Deuteronomy 6:7, 11:19, 32:46; Ezra 9:12; Proverbs 13:24; 19:18; 22:6,15; 23:13-14; & 29:15,17.*
In those Scriptures, you will find "the second way" of "the street" you mentioned. There is no higher respect for our children than rearing them Godly. Thanks for asking.

685

Q: Since you referred to *Matthew 7:6*, I assume you mean that we should not share God's Truth with those who will deny that Truth ...
As to the meaning of *Matthew 7:6*, I do not see it referring to God's Word since that would contradict the Great Commission. My read would be that it more refers to entering into deep fellowship with those who claim to follow God but, in fact, do not. It is similar to *1Corinthians 5:11*. Or perhaps, it means not to become close to people whom you know will viciously tear you down for what you believe.
(From our discussion on *https://christianwriters.com/topic/15504-little-known-bible-verses/*, August 2019. Edited.)

A: It is written,

Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your Pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you. (Matthew 7:6)

I repeat here that, by the above Scripture, "the Bible Verses on t-shirts"* is a lame idea. And I repeat: *Matthew 7:6*, directed against blasphemy, does not contradict our Great Commission. There are better ways to follow it.
As for the meaning of *Matthew 7:6*, I believe you are wrong in saying, "... not to become close to people whom you know will viciously tear you down for what you believe." Consider the Blessed *Book Of Martyrs*. In the *natural*, many Saints were torn apart, burnt, devoured, &c., &c., but remained *spiritually* whole.
So, as per *Matthew 10:28* and the examples of Holy Martyrs, we ought not to fear the servants of Satan, but rather fear to be *spiritually* rented by whatever ungodly business & communication. As for the rest, I agree with you.
(The proposition made on <*christianwriters.com*> Forum.)

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath Righteousness with unrighteousness? And what communion hath Light with darkness? And what concord hath Christ with Belial? Or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel? And what agreement hath the Temple of GOD with idols? For ye are the Temple of the Living GOD; as GOD hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their GOD, and they shall be My People. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the LORD, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My Sons and Daughters, saith the LORD Almighty. (2Corinthians 6:14-18)

686

Q: It is written,

> *... Lord, behold, he whom Thou lovest is sick. When Jesus heard that, He said, This sickness is not unto death, but for the Glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby. (John 11:3-4)*

The question is, how come the sickness was "for the Glory of God"?
(*https://www.christforums.com*, August 2019.)

A: There is no Glory of GOD *in* sicknesses. Neither the Messiah was supposed to get any credit for healing those whom Father GOD allowed to get sick. No, the LORD is not a crude experimenter or torturer on His People. But overcoming the sickness & death the Mighty Power of GOD is Manifested unto *Enlightening*. That is what we ought to see in this Scripture.

GOD's Glory is always seen in our Edification. Every sickness & disease, according to the Harvest Law, has its roots & reasons in our sins. And Ever-Merciful GOD, our Father, teaches us Compassion by His Example.
See *John 9:3* (discussed in chapter 123 – *Who did sin?*).

The tradition says that Brother Lazarus (resurrected as per *John 11:1-45*) later on became a Bishop. But what he had seen (or had been revealed) during the days of his being dead made him very sad to the end of his earthy life.

And we know that all things work together for Good to them that love GOD, to them who are the Called according to His Purpose. (Romans 8:28)

Q: How were the first five Books of the Bible written?
(Signed: *Christian, Evangelical*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: Your question resembles the one asked in chapter 28 (Creation). Please, check it out. It is written,

... no Prophecy of the Scripture is of any private interpretation.
For the Prophecy came not in old time by the will of man:
but Holy Men of GOD spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.
(2Peter 1:20-21)

687

Q: In chapter 43 (The Twelfth Commandment), we read about our Duty to preach the Gospel as per *Matthew 28:19-20*. It is also said,

How then shall they call on Him in Whom they have not believed?
And how shall they believe in Him of Whom they have not heard?
And how shall they hear without a Preacher? (Romans 10:14)

In chapter 237 (Word – Hearing – Faith), we read about *spiritual* Hearing. The question is: when does that *spiritual* thing change the *natural* one over?

A: Thanks for the question. It is the time mentioned in the above Scripture by the Words "they hear". Why so? Because, besides *natural* hearing the Good News of Atonement, Repentance, Reconciliation, and Salvation, our audience should sense the *spiritual* hunger for the Written Word of GOD. Then the spiritual chain, pointed out in chapter 237, begins to work.
You & I ought to note what Brother A.W. Tozer spoke about our *wording*.
I quoted him in chapter 104 (The Promised Teacher).
That's why I try my best to correct & sharpen my words in this "Q & A".

Pray for the Revelations of the LORD –

I stretch forth my hands unto Thee:
my soul thirsteth after Thee, as a thirsty land. Selah. (Psalms 143:6)

GOD is willing to reveal His Truth –

Thus saith the LORD that made thee,
and formed thee from the womb, which will help thee. Fear not, O Jacob, My Servant; and thou, Jesurun, whom I have chosen. For I will pour Water upon him that is thirsty, and Floods upon the dry ground: I will pour My Spirit upon thy seed, and My Blessing upon thine offspring. And they shall spring up as among the grass, as willows by the water courses. (Isaiah 44:2-4)

Share the Revelations received –

And if thou draw out thy soul to the hungry,
and satisfy the afflicted soul; then shall thy Light rise in obscurity, and thy darkness be as the noonday: And the LORD shall guide thee continually, and satisfy thy soul in drought, and make fat thy bones: and thou shalt be like a watered garden, and like a spring of water, whose waters fail not.
(Isaiah 58:10-11)

688

Q: Doesn't *Luke 10:18* & *John 12:31* overrule your rejecting the power of Satan in chapter 36?

A: No, it does not. It is written:

17 And the Seventy returned again with Joy, saying, Lord, even the devils are subject unto us through Thy Name. 18 And He said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from Heaven. 19 Behold, I give unto you Power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy: and nothing shall by any means hurt you. 20 Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, because your names are written in Heaven. (Luke 10:17-20)

28 Father, glorify Thy Name. Then came there a Voice from Heaven, saying, I have both glorified it, and will glorify it again. 29 The people therefore, that stood by, and heard it, said that it thundered: others said, An Angel spake to him. 30 Jesus answered and said, This Voice came not because of Me, but for your sakes. 31 Now is the Judgment of this world: now shall the prince of this world be cast out. 32 And I, if I be lifted up from the Earth, will draw all men unto Me. 33 This He said, signifying what death He should die. (John 12:33)

The Scriptures quoted above and referred to below testify of Love, Holy Will, and Mighty Power of the LORD. Our Heavenly Father, far and away, overpowers the disgusting demons who invade the minds of those humans who willingly surrender(ed) themselves to condemned Satan. Kindly note, the LORD GOD was with Believers in the Old Testament times too. Read *Isaiah 41:10*.

See "Q & A" chapters: 36 (The power of Satan), 312 (Our spiritual Authority), 313 (Irrevocable Authority), & 727 (The power of Satan).

References.

Psalm 23 – The LORD is my Shepherd ...
Matthew 28:18 – ... All Power is given unto Me ...
John 16:11 – ... the prince of this world is judged.
1John 3:8 – The Purpose of GOD.

689

Q: Why do you insist on “study” when it comes to the Written Word of God? I would love to *read* my Bible without following any routine, or making notes, or suchlike. It gives me peace. (*The frequent question*.)

A: I respectfully disagree with you.
What you have called “insist”, far as I know, I *strongly recommend*.
A “routine” is not my word too. I pointed that out in chapter 29.
And “making notes” pertains to every devout study, not only our Bible.
The “peace” you mentioned is something very close to what is written:

And they come unto thee as the people cometh, and they sit before thee as My People, and they hear thy Words, but they will not do them: for with their mouth they shew much Love, but their heart goeth after their covetousness. And, lo, thou art unto them as a very lovely song of one that hath a pleasant voice, and can play well on an instrument: for they hear thy Words, but they do them not. (*Ezekiel 33:31-32*)

Remember the Word:

Think not that I am come to send peace on Earth:
I came not to send peace, but a Sword. (Matthew 10:34)

Q: Okay. Look at our Christian Forum and consider such a thing as *public opinion*. Your articles, obviously based on your way of study, get minimal “likes”, whereas those who criticize you get the most support.
Doesn’t this simple fact teach you something?

A: I do consider public opinion, especially that of Christians.
That is the very reason I visit our Forums, and this “Q & A” book exists.
As for the Teaching, I tried to explain Who teaches me and how in *Preface* & *About the Writer* articles of this book, chapter 25, etc.

I believe *reading* the Holy Bible without hard work of mind is not enough.

... thou schalt loue thi LORD GOD of al thin herte, and of al thi soule, and of al thi mynde, and of al thi myyt. (Mark 12:30, Wycliffe Bible)

Every Christian should generously sacrifice his (her) time & efforts to diligent Bible Study.

We may read our Bibles while sitting around airports & planes, railway stations & trains, and so on, “to pass time”. But when it comes to Communion with our Heavenly Father through His Written Word, let alone meditation, which accompanies every attentive reading, the Secret Room is needful. And some notes should be made (even better in a modern electronic way) in the file(s) & folder(s) separated for the purpose. Kindly avoid blotting out the Holy Book.

Let us remember our studies in public schools & colleges.
Did we just read manuals & handbooks without making some notes?
Is not the time sacrifice directly proportionate to the result desired?

... the children of this world are in their generation wiser
than the Children of Light. (Luke 16:8)

> *I have no place in my heart or in my head for a liberal, because a liberal insists on believing what he wants to believe, even rejecting what does not suit him. The result is that he has destroyed everything, because each thing depends upon everything else.*
>
> *(A.W. Tozer, Experiencing The Presence Of God: Teachings From The Book Of Hebrews)*

May the LORD help us to sort out the priorities now, for, as they say in the world, *it is better late than never*.
Think about Bible Study. It is worth your while. GOD bless you.

See relevant chapters: 106 (Feeding our spirit), 107 (Feeding our soul),
& 122 (Researches).

References.

Psalms 119:125 – The Prayer for Knowledge.
Proverbs 10:14 – Lay up Knowledge.
Jeremiah 33:3 – Call unto your Teacher.
Matthew 7:7-8 – GOD encourages the Study.
Matthew 11:12 – Spiritual Violence.

Good reading: *A.W. Tozer, The Pursuit Of GOD*
GOD’s Pursuit of Man
Grant R. Jeffrey, The Signature of GOD
The Handwriting of GOD

690

Q: Brother, on these pages, you discussed the Lord's Prayer many a time. Will you make a Summary?

A: You are right. Those are chapters 57, 112, 183, 238, 252, and 284. The *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* runs:

> *9 After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which* art in Heaven, Hallowed be Thy Name. 10 Thy Kingdom come. Thy Will be done in Earth, as it is in Heaven. 11 Give us this day our daily Bread. 12 And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. 13 And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For Thine is the Kingdom, and the Power, and the Glory, for ever. Amen. (Matthew 6:9-13)* * I pray *Who* or, *Thou.*

Verse 9.
It begins with the Words – *After this manner therefore pray ye ...* – That I understand as a Command. We spoke more about it in chapter 57.
Our Father which [Who] *art in Heaven* – this is our Christian Statement o' Faith.
Hallowed be Thy Name. – It is Giving Glory to GOD, as disclosed in chapter 75. Since we best glorify our Heavenly Father using Good Works being done through ourselves by His Holy Spirit – *Matthew 5:16, John 15:8,* etc. – we pray to be thus empowered by the Holy Ghost.

V*erse 10*.
Thy Kingdom come. It is the subject of chapter 238. We thus pray for Salvation and the desperate need thereof to be understood by all humankind.
The Lord's Prayer is an Intercession. I tried to make it clear in chapter 112.
The Words *"Thy Kingdom come"* stand upon the Promise given in *Luke 12:32*.
And, standing on *Luke 17:21*, we pray for the Precious Communion with the Holy Spirit of GOD.
Thy Will be done in Earth, as it is in Heaven. This is the Statement of Trust.
We spoke about the Holy Will of LORD GOD in chapters 24 & 529 and about Trust in chapters 485 & 486.

Verse 11.
Give us this day our daily Bread. It is the subject of chapter 284. We pray for the Revelation Knowledge coming from the Written Word of GOD only.
Note *Matthew 4:4; 6:31-33* & *John 6:48*. See also chapter 684 (The Bread of Life). Feeding our spirit & soul is discussed in chapters 106 & 107, respectively.
You may refer to "Q & A" chapter 58 (K & U & W).

Verse 12.
And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. Besides the Peace of GOD in our human relations, it is our praying for Healing. Note *Matthew 9:2,6-7* and chapter 183. In the Spiritual Realm, Forgiving & Healing are interconnected.
The Words "*as we forgive our debtors"* are better comprehensible if we note *Matthew 6:14-15* immediately following the Lord's Prayer. That Scripture teaches Forgiving and reminds us of the Harvest Law (chapters 503 & 508).

Verse 13.
And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil.* Again, the Harvest Law comes to mind. Chapter 64 of this book covers the LORD's Punishment.
* That I understand and pray as, *lead us away from temptations*. The subject of *temptations* – the LORD has nothing to do with – we discussed in chapter 184.
The Words *deliver us from* [our] *evil* were covered in chapter 252.

These *Verses – 12 & 13* – comprise our Petition for spiritual Purification.

For Thine is the Kingdom, and the Power, and the Glory, for ever. These Words are the Statement of our Knowledge & Understanding in GOD-given measure.

For Thine is the Kingdom ... – Verily, it is the only Value to live, work, and fight for. See *Matthew 11:12*.

... *and the Power* ... – It is our LORD GOD Who is ever Able to create & save.
... *and the Glory* ... – And it is our Heavenly Father all Glory belongs to.
... *for ever.* – We believe in the Eternity of the LORD, our GOD.

Amen. – We trust & believe in Him. "Q & A" chapter 301 is about the Word "Amen". It is a part of our Statement o' Faith. See *2Corinthians 1:20*.

Q: In his comments to *Matthew 6:9-13*, Brother John Calvin wrote:

... Christ does not enjoin His People to pray in a prepared form of words, but only points out what ought to be the object of all our wishes and Prayers. He embraces, therefore, in six Petitions what we are at liberty to ask from GOD. Nothing is more advantageous to us than such Instruction.

Do you agree with that?

A: No, I don't. I stated my point in chapter 57 (The Lord's Prayer – Guidance).

For me, the Lord's Prayer, even as a "*Form of Words*", is a matter of must.

As for "*what ought to be the object of all our wishes*", we can find it in many other Scriptures. You may see "Prayer" in the Index Section for relevant chapters.

Brother Calvin saw *"six Petitions what we are at liberty to ask from GOD"*. Does it matter? It depends on what perspective one sees the Lord's Prayer at.
I, for example, (considering it a Personal Prayer & Intercession) see *four* main parts & four Petitions there.

Verse 9 – Glory to GOD.
Verses 10-11 – Our Prayer for His Guidance and Spiritual Food.
Verse 12 & the first part of *Verse 13* – We seek Forgiving, Healing, & Guidance.
The second part of *Verse 13* – Glory to GOD.

You may see the Lord's Prayer from another angle, no problem.
We should only avoid contradictions in chief points.

Q: But are you aware that even those Teachers in the Reference section of your book, let alone a vast number of Christians, don't agree with your comments on *Verse 11*?

A: Yes, I am. Believe me I respect the opinions you mentioned and humbly expect the same from my Brothers & Sisters in Christ to me.
So, with all due respect, I cannot agree with the Believers thinking that the line "*Give us this day our daily Bread*" means our asking for natural (physical) food from our Father GOD.

To what is said in chapter 284 (The Lord's Prayer – Our daily Bread) of this "Q & A" book, I dare add the following.
In the natural, we need much more than just bread and other physical food.
Air, water, sunlight, clothes, shelter, &c., &c. – the list of those necessities is long, isn't it? But shall we worry about it knowing that the LORD cares?
Brother *F. W. Grant* wrote,

... It is not straining the request for daily Bread, to make it comprehend also a Spiritual application. With the Lord it would be simply impossible, while remembering the need of the body, to forget the immensely greater need of the soul. In both ways also the supply must be continual. The Manna must be fresh every morning, and freshly gathered as the morning comes ...

(The Numerical Bible, The Gospels, Third Edition, New York, 1904, p.91)

And what about such things as nature & wildlife – shall we ignore that part of GOD's Creation? Isn't our *spiritual* Bread (accepted with Reverence and not rejected) the first necessary to keep our Earth in due order? See *Genesis 1:26,28*.

In this regard, *Verses 10 & 11* are closely tightened up within the Lord's Prayer:

> *10 Thy Kingdom come. Thy Will be done in Earth, as it is in Heaven.*
> *11 Give us this day our daily Bread.*

I see it this way –

> Father GOD, may the Holy Spirit of *Thy Kingdom come* to indwell & rule our hearts. So, that *Thy Will be done* through our humble selves *on Earth,* which You put under our spiritual Dominion*, even *as it is in Heaven* – Your Sacred Abode.
> Even so, Father, *give us this day* new Revelation Knowledge of your Written Word – *our daily Bread* – which is our so needful spiritual food.
>
> * We talk about our *spiritual Authority* in chapters 36 & 312 & 313.
>
> Without the Written Word of GOD – our Bread of Life – we are spiritually blind (and therefore doomed), yet being well-fed physically.

Q: Was LORD GOD and the Holy Spirit thought of as Two separate Entities before Jesus came?

(Signed: *Christian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: Yes. Read, for instance, *1Kings 18:12* or –

Not by might, nor by power,
but by My Spirit, saith The LORD of Hosts. (Zechariah 4:6)

Moreover, the LORD, our GOD – One in Three Inseparable Beings – might be known to some. That was the Vision given to Brother Abraham.

And the LORD appeared unto him in the plains of Mamre:
and he sat in the tent door in the heat of the day. And he lift up his eyes
and looked, and, lo, Three Men stood by him ... (Genesis 18:1-2)

And *Jeremiah 33:3* was written for all people and times.

691

Q: Brother, how do you understand the Words of Jesus in *John 17:6* –

I have manifested Thy Name
unto the men which Thou gavest Me out of the world ...

– seeing that nowhere in the Gospels the Name of GOD is mentioned?

A: The Name Most Holy has been kept as such by many generations of Believers. It *must not* be spoken here & there, now & again, other than with Due Reverence in time of personal Worship.

I will declare Thy Name unto my Brethren: in the midst of
the Congregation will I praise Thee. (Psalms 22:22)

I wil geue Thankes vnto the LORDE with my whole herte:
Secretly amonge the Faithfull, and in the Congregacion.
(Psalms 111:1, Miles Coverdale Translation, 1535)

Yes, the Name of our Heavenly Father is mentioned nowhere in the Gospels. So, why the Lord called it *manifested,* and how it had been manifested (or else, by other Versions, *given Knowledge of*, *revealed*, *discovered,* etc.) by Him?

I am the LORD: that is My Name: and My Glory will I not give to another,
neither My Praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

The Truth is the Sacred Name of GOD our Father (unlike that of any human being) is His very Self. Note "Q & A" chapter 22 (The Third Commandment). The Knowledge of the Most Holy Name cannot be as simple as mere memorizing those four Hebrew letters and their correct or incorrect pronunciation. To *know* His Name is to *know* GOD. And since we cannot ever fully comprehend GOD, to *know* Him may mean only *striving* for that, obtaining that Knowledge to some *given* extent only, from one Revelation to another.
See relevant chapter 52 (Knowledge of GOD).

And they that know Thy Name will put their Trust in Thee:
for Thou, LORD, hast not forsaken them that seek Thee. (Psalms 9:10)

In Jesus' Words – *unto the men which Thou gavest Me out of the world* – we see the meaning of New Chosen People of GOD (the subject of chapter 59).

Our Heavenly Father, person by person, calls them up unto His Son Jesus and continues to do so by His Holy Spirit.
Read *John 1:12-13; 6:44-45,65 & Romans 8:14-16*.

References.

Exodus 20:7 & *Deuteronomy 5:11* – The Third Commandment.
Psalms 20:1,7; 91:14-16; 124:8 – The Name of our Trust.
Jeremiah 10:6 – ditto.
Matthew 7:6 – Keep it Holy or get punished.
John 17:11,26 – Jesus' Prayer (see chapter 124).

Q: I understand that not all Christians claim that Belief in Christ's Divinity is specifically required for Salvation (1), but my question is directed at those who do. It seems like, at two different points, *Luke* is pretty specific about what it takes to be saved, and in neither case is there any hint that Belief in Jesus as the Son of God or Messiah is suggested as a Requirement for Salvation. To be specific, *Luke 10:27* says that to inherit Eternal Life, one must "Love the LORD your God with all your heart, and with all your soul, and with all your strength, and with all your mind" and "Love your neighbor as yourself" (2). *Luke 18* contains the Parable of the Publican and the Pharisee, and the Publican is saved because he beats his breast and says, "God, have Mercy on me, a sinner." No indication in either case that Believing in Jesus is required (3). Again, I am not arguing against anyone who says, "Yes, but Jesus is the Son of God." I am arguing against the position that one *must* believe that Jesus is the Son of God in order to be justified & saved & inherit Eternal Life (4).
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: (1) To begin with, a *Christian* is a True Follower (Disciple) of Jesus Christ. See *Acts 11:26*. Therefore, not all *are* Christians who claim so.
(2) Lord Jesus also stated that there is *neither* difference *nor* discord between Him & GOD the Father. Read *John 10:30, 14:9, & 17:21-22*. These references are parallel. There are much more.
(3) Christ Jesus said, "I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life". If believing in *Jesus* is not for you, trust (by your words & deeds) GOD the Father, no problem. However, when it comes to Salvation, kindly note *John 3:16-17*.
(4) In your ending lines, you made stress (by *italic*) on "believe". I stressed, "must". For, in a way, nobody "must" anything. GOD blessed us with Free will. You may read the relevant conversation in chapter 666. Godspeed.

692

Q: By *Natasha Grain,*
"60 Faith Questions I Hope To Answer Before My Kids Leave Home."
(*http://christianmomthoughts.com/60-faith-questions-i-hope-to-answer-before-my-kids-leave-home/*)

A: Thanks for your questions. Only sixty? Let's consider them in these chapters (692 – 695), so that a chapter won't exceed four pages, as it is in our book.

The Bible

Q: (1) What should be the role of the Bible in a Christian's life?

A: The very first. *Jeremiah 13:15 & Hosea 4:6 & John 14:6*.
Kindly see chapters 101, 106, & 107.

Q: (2) How do you study the Bible beyond just reading it?

A: I read *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* on a PC screen, correcting my previous comments, and communicating with GOD. And (important) I do my best to follow. Kindly read *Deuteronomy 6:4-5 & Apocrypha, 2nd Esdras 5:32*. See "Q & A" chapters 102, 104, & 689.

Q: (3) What does it mean for the Bible to be inspired, inerrant vs other views?

A: The Bible is Communion with GOD employing His Written Word in Faith. *2Chronicles 20:20; Romans 10:17 & Hebrews 11:6*. See chapters 29 & 118.

Q: (4) What is the relationship between the Old & New Testaments?

A: They are interconnected.
Kindly note *Malachi 3:6 & Matthew 5:17-19*. See chapters 16, 17, & 18.

Q: (5) Why does the "Old Testament God" seem so different than the "New Testament God"?

A: It might just seem. Please, consider *Malachi 3:6 &* "Q & A" chapter 32.

Q: (6) Why would God use Chosen People (Israel) to reveal Himself?

A: GOD did so, being Faithful to His Promise to Brother Abraham.
He continues to reveal Himself to His Chosen People, Christians.
Read *Genesis 17:4-7 & Isaiah 65:15*. Have a look at chapter 59.

Q: (7) What are the theological and scientific challenges to the Creation?
Q: Are there any scientific challenges to evolution?

A: I don't consider any challenges (objections) to the Word of GOD. Read *Isaiah 34:16, Luke 21:33, 2Timothy 3:16,* and chapters 290 & 661.
You may watch a Christian movie, "*Genesis: Paradise Lost*". Chapter 454.

Q: (8) Why doesn't God interact with us today the way He did over the periods covered in the Bible?

A: He does. Note well *Jeremiah 33:3*. His Ways are incomprehensible.
Consider *Isaiah 55:8 & Malachi 3:6*. See chapters 33 & 233.

Q: (9) How can we know the Bible is reliable – historically and theologically?

A: The answer is the same as that to your question 3. Start from *Faith* in the Word. The Bible proves or disproves, be it history or theology. Chapter 103.

Q: (10) What are some of the most noted apparent contradictions in the Bible and what are possible explanations?

A: Such "contradictions" do not exist, apparent or not. Which of them are most noted ought to be asked of *unbelievers*. They know better. You may read chapter 119, as well as those named "Unbelievers ask" & "Contradictions". In each particular case the explanation is the same: *It is written* ...

Q: (11) What is the difference between descriptive and prescriptive Scriptures?

A: There is not any principal difference there. All passages teach us something. What we call "descriptive" and think "less important" might happen to be just closed up to our minds as yet. Note *Ecclesiastes 3:1*. See chapter 105.

Q: (12) What does the Bible say about Heaven and hell
(and how does that differ from the popular conceptions of both)?

A: Regarding (my understanding of) Heaven and hell,
you may see "Q & A" chapters 153 & 8, respectively.

The difference from the popular conceptions depends on how each particular Christian or unbeliever or concept is far from the Written Word of GOD. Please, see chapter 58 (Knowledge & Understanding & Wisdom).

Q: (13) What does the Bible say about the exclusivity of Jesus with regard to Salvation?

A: Read *John 3:16-17, 6:54, 8:51, 11:25-26, 14:6; 1Timothy 2:5; &c., &c.*

Q: (14) Why does it matter whether or not Jesus was raised from the dead?

A: It does matter to prove the Word of GOD spoken by Jesus in *John 11:25-26*.

Q: (15) What are the most common objections people raise against the validity of the Bible, and how can a Christian respond?

A: Those objections are as countless as unworthy. More or less common, they are the same death-directed. How to respond? Listen to the Holy Ghost reminding us of the Scripture appropriate in each particular case. Or commanding us to be silent. Kindly read *Psalms 39:1-2; Isaiah 50:4; Matthew 7:6, 10:8; Luke 5:17; Acts 8:6; & 1Corinthians 2:4-5*. Surely, there are more. Please, see chapter 86 (How to prove what we preach?).

Q: (16) How should and shouldn't you look for Biblical answers to "modern" questions (e.g., abortion, death penalty, stem cell research, etc.)?

A: In my opinion, our Holy Bible has always had the answers to whatever questions. *Jeremiah 13:15 & 33:3*. We should look for Truth and should not search for compromises. *Proverbs 3:5 & Philippians 3:18-19*. Chapter 40.
Thus abortion is a sin and the sequence of the same.
Romans 14:22-23. Chapter 125 (The Sixth Commandment).
The death penalty is the subject of chapter 95. Please, read it.
A stem cell, as well as any other research, should be seen from "Is it for GOD's Glory?" viewpoint. *Genesis 1:4 & 3:9*. Chapter 290.
Kindly mind *Ecclesiastes 3:14*.

Q: (17) How does the Bible differ from other "holy" books?

A: The Bible differs from any other book ever written, be the latter counted "holy" or not, and that by the Truth of the LORD. See chapter 177.

693

We continue the conversation started in chapter 692.

Q: (18) Why is the Bible so “weird” sometimes?

A: That might depend on who opens it. *2Corinthians 4:4*. Kindly refer to the chapters named “Unbelievers ask”. Mostly, they ask the same questions. In chapter 118, please find the quotation from Brother Roland H. Bainton. Kindly take a look at any chapter titled “Bible Study” – nothing is “weird”.

The Prayer

Q: (1) How often should you pray?

A: I think that our Prayer is a Conversation with GOD. So, I communicate & pray & intercede as often as I need or love to, which is often indeed. How can we ignore the Promise given in *Matthew 28:20*? See *Isaiah 26:3* and “Q & A” chapter 32 (Communion with GOD).

Q: (2) What should you pray about?

A: I see the Lord’s Prayer as a matter of must. It covers all our needs. *Matthew 6:9-13, Ephesians 6:18, & 1Timothy 2:1-3*. Chapters 57 & 690.

Q: (3) How do you listen to God in Prayer?

A: *The Number One Way GOD leads His Children is by a Witness in their heart. Usually not Voice but a Knowing ... Christians who don’t give GOD Attention by spending time in Prayer and in the Word usually aren’t Able to give Attention to the Inward Witness either.*

(Gloria Copeland, Walk with GOD, p.95)

GOD does not operate on our time schedule – the only way we’re going to hear His Voice directing us and leading us is by spending time with Him, and lots of it ... A weak and spiritually debased Church has deemphasized the Closet of Prayer and a good old carpet imprint on the forehead from hours spent on our faces before GOD. But you will not hear from GOD if you don’t spend time with Him.

(Morris Cerullo, Son, Build Me An Army, p. 248)

Kindly note *Jeremiah 33:3* and read chapter 181 (The Voice of GOD).

Q: (4) What's the point of thanking God for things He didn't "directly" give us?

A: Did He not? That is not a Believer's standpoint.
Read *James 1:17* and "Q & A" chapters 48, 75, & 487.

Q: (5) What does it mean to ask God for Forgiveness?

A: It means to ask the LORD for His Divine Help & Guidance for us to break & remove from our Life all the ungodly stuff standing in the way of Righteousness & Peace. Note, Forgiving is closely related to Healing.
Read *Psalms 38:3, 107:17; Jeremiah 17:14;* &c. See chapters 67 & 183.

Q: (6) When should you ask for Forgiveness?

A: We should do it daily, by the Lord's Prayer, and in every case o' failure.
Kindly read *Luke 15:20 & 1John 1:8-10*.

Q: (7) How should you ask for Forgiveness?

A: We should do it in the Promised Name of Jesus.
But you have to comprehend what it means to be gathered together and/or ask of GOD anything *in the Name of Jesus*. Why? Because it goes way further than just speaking it up. We are supposed to follow our Lord in word & deed. Ask yourself, *What would Jesus do?* (WWJD).
We ought to ask our Father GOD for the same things Lord Jesus would.
Read *John 14:14, 15:16, & James 5:14-16*. See chapter 415.

Q: (8) What are the ways to use a Prayer list to bolster your Prayer Life?

A: Speaking of Intercession(s), *a Prayer list* is just a piece of paper. When it comes to a Prayer Team, that list should have a form of a Prayer Log. In both cases, GOD's Answer to every Prayer should be promptly reported by the person who asked for a Prayer Backup. And Thanksgiving is in order. Note *Matthew 8:4 & Colossians 4:2*. See chapters 194, 409, & 465.

Q: (9) Why are many Prayers "unanswered"?

A: All Prayers are heard & answered by our GOD, be it Yes, No, or Silence.
Ecclesiastes 3:1; Isaiah 55:8-9, & 58:5-12. See chapters 71, 73, & 525.

Q: (10) How do you become comfortable praying out loud?

A: It is not my way to pray. I prefer the Secret Room. Kindly read *Matthew 6:6*. However, at times – in Prayer Team, Small Group, praying with the laying on of hands, etc. – I pray out loud when asked to. Then, I am comfortable only when all those around me indeed participate.
See chapters 232 (Our Prayer Backup) & 465 (A Prayer Team).

Q: (11) What are the ways to pray for other people?

A: These are the Lord's Prayer, Witnessing at a Confession, praying with the laying on of hands, Prayer Team, and every other case when we are asked for, or seeing or hearing about distress.
Note such a good Reinforcement to Prayer as Fast. Read *Isaiah 58:3-7*.
See chapters 42, 73, & 112. And check out "Prayer" in the Index.

The Church

Q: (1) Why does it matter if Christians go to Church
(can't you just be a Christian at home)?

A: Certainly, by "Church", you mean *a Temple* or *a place of Worship*.
And "be a Christian at home", apparently, stands for *not being* a Member of a Local Christian Church or a Congregation or Ministry. Right?
My answer is it does matter, but only *if* in such a Christian Assembly, you experience Peace and the Congregation follows Christ (not denomination, as these two are incompatible). Most important, there, you are Fruitful for the Body of Christ. Kindly see "Peace" and "GOD's Peace" in the Index.

To be "a Christian at home" is possible too *if* your home is a Shelter for the homeless, Foster Home for orphans, or your Christian Ministry can be conducted there. E.g., it is Christian Counseling by the Internet.
Read *Hebrews 13:16*. Take a look at chapters 461 & 499.

Q: (2) Why does *consistency* of going to Church matter?

A: The *consistency*, meaning *persistency*, matters only when you feel yourself spiritually at home there, and your fellow Members need you.
Note *Proverbs 13:20*. See chapters 15 & 242.

694

We continue the conversation published in chapters 692 – 693.

Q: (3) Why does GOD want us to worship Him?

A: Worshiping the LORD, our Father, we thank Him for giving us Life and every Good thing in & around ourselves. We love GOD by following His Word. When we do not do all that, we follow the devil in the way of death. *Genesis 1:4 & 3:9; Psalms 22:3, 29:2, 95:6; & James 1:17*. Chapter 631.

Q: (4) What is the spiritual significance of each element of Worship (e.g., Singing, Sermon, Communion, etc.)?

A: *If* our Worship is Sincere, then the following comes to pass.
Singing works out Teaching & Admonishing. See *Colossians 3:16*.
A Sermon wakes up, corrects, and directs. Consider *1Corinthians 2:4-5*.
The Holy Communion (a.k.a., the Breaking of Bread or Eucharist) confirms our Faith & Unity. Kindly read *1Corinthians 10:16-17* & *11:28-29*.
The Communion of Saints (Small Group) helps our Bible Study.
See *1Corinthians 14:26* and "Q & A" chapters 30, 35, & 445.

Q: (5) What should a Christian look at in selecting an appropriate Church?

A: Look at the Fruits. Do come as a guest. Don't hurry up to become a Member. *Luke 12:48*. Chapters 160, 488. See *Church* in the Index section.

Q: (6) Why are there so many Christian denominations?

A: It is not so per the Holy Will of GOD. Be no more than just a Christian. Note *1Corinthians 11:19*. Chapters 5 & 581. See *Unity* in the Index section.

Serving

Q: (1) What does it mean to serve others?

A: We best serve others when we walk with LORD GOD. Kindly see chapter 292 (Fellowship with GOD) and the worthy example in chapter 205 (The Parable of Good Samaritan). In chapter 610, we discussed our Golden Rule – *Matthew 7:21* – well relevant here.

Q: (2) What are the ways to serve others?

A: Be Obedient to the Voice of the Holy Ghost. He will show the ways.
It is all about *Charity* (see the Index). Note that your Local Church & *Ministry* (chapter 461) are *not* above your *Christian Family* (see the Index).

Q: (3) What kinds of major needs are there in your area?

A: The primary need throughout the globe is the Gospel. When people come to GOD, their needs greatly diminish. Second to that are other wants, even such as help for "natural" disasters, that come up as sequential to our living without GOD. See *Galatians 6:7* and "Q & A" chapters 312, 503, & 508.

Q: (4) What kind of major needs are there in your country?

A: To become a Christian state. Note *Deuteronomy 6:4-7*. Read chapter 55.

Q: (5) What kind of major needs are there in other areas of the world?

A: My answer is the same as that to your question 3.

Q: (6) What is the relationship between Witnessing for Jesus and serving specific needs?

A: The relationship is simple: our serving whatever specific need should be nothing but Witnessing for Lord Jesus in action.
Kindly read *Isaiah 43:10-13, 44:8; & Acts 1:8*. See chapters 135 & 534.

Q: (7) How can you put others first daily?

A: We can do it only by being subjected to and spiritually united with the Holy Spirit of GOD. Welcome the Spirit in your heart.
Our soul (will, intellect, abilities, character, emotions, &c.) should be under the command of (conscience – the voice of) our spirit (a.k.a., heart – not a physical one), which, in turn, is under the Holy Ghost.
The Holy Spirit enriches our intellect with Knowledge & Understanding, directs our will to the Way of Righteousness, adds Wisdom to abilities, changes our character, etc. Read *Luke 6:31 & 2Timothy 1:7*.
Have a look at chapters 15 (GOD First), 58 (K & U & W), 205 (The Parable of Good Samaritan), & 292 (Fellowship with GOD).

Christian Living

Q: (1) What does it mean to love God indeed?

A: It means obediently following Him. *Deuteronomy 6:4-5; John 14:15 & 15:10*.

Q: (2) What does it mean to *depend* on or *trust* God?

A: It means doing it wholeheartedly against worldly reason. See *Proverbs 3:5*.

Q: (3) Why doesn't God reveal Himself more obviously in everyday life?

A: He does it answering to our sincere seeking of Him. See *Jeremiah 29:13*.

Q: (4) Who is the Holy Spirit?

A: He is the Third Person in Triune GOD. Kindly read *1John 5:7*.
The Spirit of Life & Resurrection. See *Psalms 104:30 & Romans 8:11*.
The Spirit of Liberty & Rebirth. *1Samuel 10:6-7 & 2Corinthians 3:17-18*.
The Spirit of our Union with GOD & Adoption. *Romans 8:14 & 1John 4:13*.
The Spirit of Holiness. *John 3:8; 1Corinthians 3:16-17 & Ephesians 4:30*.
The Spirit of Power & Love & Sound mind. See *Acts 1:8 & 2Timothy 1:7*.
The Spirit of Knowledge & Understanding. Read *1Corinthians 2:7-16*.
The Spirit of Counseling & Prophecy & Judgment. Read *John 16:8-14*.
The Spirit our Guide. *Romans 8:4, Galatians 5:16-18, & Philippians 4:9*.
The Spirit of Prayer & Intercession. See *Romans 8:26-27 & Ephesians 6:18*.
The Spirit of Worship & Thanksgiving. *John 4:23-24 & Ephesians 3:20-21*.
Our Comforter & Teacher. *Isaiah 30:20-21; John 14:15-18,26; 1John 2:27*.

Q: (5) Does your choice of friends matters to your Faith?

A: Yes, it does. And not only my Faith is thus concerned.
Kindly note *John 15:14 & 2Corinthians 6:14 & Ephesians 5:1*.
Please see chapter 121 (How to make Friends?) and the Index.

Q: (6) What would be the impact on your life marrying a Believer versus non-believer?

A: That would be for the better impact, or the worse one, respectively.
Kindly refer to *Genesis 2:24 & 2Corinthians 6:14*.

695

We continue the conversation published in chapters 692 – 694.

Q: (7) How do you get out of a pattern of sin?

A: When I find myself in sin, I get out of it the way of a prodigal son. Kindly read *Luke 15:20-21 & 1John 1:8-10*.

Q: (8) What are the appropriate ways for a Christian to manage the relationship between politics and Faith?

A: For me, the only way is *Proverbs 24:21*. You may see chapter 143 for more.

Q: (9) Why do some people suffer much more in this life than others?

A: Kindly refer to chapter 503 dealing with the Harvest Law – *Galatians 6:7*.

Q: (10) How should Christians make Faith-based decisions about entertainment choices?

A: Ask yourself a simple question, “What would Jesus do?” See chapter 15.

Q: (11) How important is it for Christians to share Faith with others?

A: It is needful indeed. However, mind *Matthew 7:6*. See chapters 43 & 199.

Q: (12) What are some key ways to share Faith with others?

A: I see only one Way, even our Great Commission by *Matthew 28:19-20*. The latter ought to be done as per the following Scriptures.

Be prepared. *Joshua 1:8, Isaiah 50:4, Luke 10:3, 24:49; Romans 10:17 & 12:2*.
Be not surprised. See *Isaiah 53:1, Ezekiel 33:31-32, & 2Corinthians 4:4*.
Listen to the Holy Ghost. Read *Jeremiah 33:3, John 14:26, & 16:13.*
Avoid blasphemy. Note *Matthew 7:6*.
Fear not. Read *Joshua 1:9, Luke 10:19, 2Timothy 1:7, & James 4:7*.
Prove your Words. *Matthew 10:8, Luke 5:17, Acts 8:6-7, & 1Corinthians 2:4-5*.
Follow the example. *Acts 20:33-35, 1Corinthians 4:10-13, 1Thessalonians 2:9*.

Q: 13. What are the differences between Christianity and other religions?

A: There is only one – the Truth of LORD GOD. Mind *John 14:6*.

Q: (14) What is the difference between being a “good” person and a Christian?

A: A “good” person is called so by the heathen society. A Christian – meaning a True Follower of Christ – far not always is that “good” in the eyes of unbelievers. See *Exodus 23:2& Acts 5:29*.

Q: (15) What does it mean to live a Christ-centered Life, and how does that compare to simply being a “nominal” Christian?

A: To live a Christ-centered Life, we are to keep His Commandments.
Kindly read *Deuteronomy 6:4-5 & John 14:15-17*.
A “nominal” Christian is not necessary a Follower of Christ at all.

Q: (16) When people talk about “God’s Will”, what does that mean?
Q: Does God have a Will for your Life specifically, or only for all the World?

A: GOD’s Will means Love since He is Love. *Romans 8:38-39 & 1John 4:16*.
His Will is our Salvation. Remember *John 3:16-17*.
His Will also means Power, Truth & Wisdom.
Kindly read *Psalms 33:11; Isaiah 25:1, 55:8-9; & Proverbs 21:30*.
He has a Plan for every human Life, giving us Free will. See *Proverbs 3:5-6*.

Q: (17) How does a Christian approach the topic of homosexuality?

A: It is prohibited & condemned.
Kindly refer to *Leviticus 18:22, 20:13; Romans 1:18-32; & Jude 1:7*.
However, Repentance is possible. Read *Ecclesiastes 9:4 & Luke 15:20*.
If a sinner repents, the LORD takes care of the rest. See *Proverbs 3:5-6*.
Note: the above approach conflicts with the legislation in some countries.

Q: (18) How do you get back into “spiritual shape” if you have fallen away from GOD?

A: The answer is the same as that to your question 7 in this chapter.

Thank you. (The site *https://natashacrain.com/* existed on January 2024, but gone a year later.)

696

Q: (1) What does the Bible have to say about breaking the Ten Commandments?

A: Your answer is in the Second Commandment. Read *Deuteronomy 5:9-10;* chapters 93 (The First Commandment) & 94 (The Second Commandment).

Q: (2) The First Commandment says, “Thou shalt have no other gods before Me.” Does it mean that Hindus are breaking the First Commandment for worshiping hundreds of gods like Vishnu and Shiva?

A: Yes, it does. And True Knowledge is essential.

Therefore to him that knoweth to do Good,
and doeth it not, to him it is sin. (James 4:17)

Worship is the keyword in your questions and my answers.
What is better, to do *Good* ignorantly worshipping a false god
or *evil* while calling oneself a Christian? Kindly note *Acts 17:23*.

Q: (3) Also, what are the consequences of breaking this Commandment?

A: The consequences are *curses*. See “Q & A” chapter 44 (B & C).

Q: (4) Do Hindus go to purgatory, hell, or do they get to go to Heaven, even if they die still believing in the monkey god Hanuman.

A: The term “purgatory” is not Biblical, and its very idea is fictional.
You may find our conversation about *hell* in chapter 8.
Please also consider the answer to your second question.
Nobody but our LORD GOD alone can answer for *all* Hindus.
It is written,

Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come,
Who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness,
and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts:
and then shall every man have Praise of GOD. (1Corinthians 4:5)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed.)

697

Q: It is written:

And lest thou lift up thine eyes unto Heaven, and when thou seest the Sun, and the Moon, and the Stars, even all the host of Heaven, shouldest be driven to worship them, and serve them, which the LORD thy GOD hath divided unto all nations under the whole Heaven. (Deuteronomy 4:19)

Does it mean that God blessed the Children of Israel with True Knowledge, whereas deprived of the latter the rest of our human race?

A: Negative. GOD doesn't respect persons. *2Chronicles 19:17 & Romans 2:11*. The Scripture says,

18 For the Wrath of GOD is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the Truth in unrighteousness. 19 Because that which may be known of GOD is manifest in them; for GOD hath shewed it unto them. 20 For the invisible things of Him from the Creation of the World are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even His Eternal Power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse. 21 Because that, when they knew GOD, they glorified Him not as GOD, neither were Thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. (Romans 1:18-21)

Verse 18. The Wrath of GOD has never been a whim. No. He answered to those who knew yet rejected the Truth. How could they know? – By the Image & Likeness of GOD. *Genesis 1:26-28*. Note also chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).

Verse 19. That Knowledge has never been far away but within our very being. GOD's Image & Likeness in every human is hard to destroy. *Ecclesiastes 3:14*. And those Blessed Image & Likeness make the Knowledge forever possible.

Verse 20. Understanding GOD, His Love, Almighty Power, and Great Creation have ever been possible. It is well within human power to be not blinded by the devil (*2Corinthians 4:4*) but to see clearly. Unbelief is without excuse.

Verse 21. Even so, *they* (heathen, unbelievers, blasphemers, etc.) have always known the Truth. Yet, those sinners misused the Gift of Free will and preferred to be ungrateful to their Father GOD, Who gave them Life, but to become more & more fooled by Satan and serve the last unto their eternal damnation.

698

Q: It is written,

These six things doth the LORD hate: Yea, seven are an abomination unto Him: a proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, an heart that deviseth wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief, a false witness that speaketh lies, and he that soweth discord among Brethren. (Proverbs 6:16-19)

Why are those six things hated and seven abominated not simply combined as seven evils or so?

A: To begin with,

There is no wisdom nor understanding nor counsel against the LORD. (Proverbs 21:30)

Next, we ought to look at the first six evils (pride, lie, murder, evil-thinking, evil-doing, false witnessing) and the seventh one (sowing discord) separately.
The six crimes harm evildoers first and do so to others.
The seventh iniquity is underlined as more of a satanic accomplishment.
The six fiery darts harm fewer people – the seventh (as the satanic infection) hurts more.
In a family, every discord is one step toward a split.
In every team, the discordance proves the incompatibility of the members.
Within and between nations, that disagreement leads to mutinies & wars.
In the Body of Christ, the seventh abomination works denominationalism out.

See chapters: 124 (Jesus' Prayer for our Unity), 531 (Our Congregational Unity), 581 (Our Christian Unity), & 582 (The Spirit of Unity).

... Thus saith the LORD GOD; I will even gather you from the people, and assemble you out of the countries where ye have been scattered, and I will give you the Land of Israel. And they shall come thither, and they shall take away all the detestable things thereof and all the abominations thereof from thence. And I will give them One heart, and I will put a New spirit within you; and I will take the stony heart out of their flesh, and will give them an heart of flesh. That they may walk in My Statutes, and keep Mine Ordinances, and do them: and they shall be My People, and I will be their GOD. (Ezekiel 11:17-20)

699

Q: *Leviticus 12* said that a woman is unclean twice as long after giving birth to a girl as after giving birth to a boy. Can you explain that?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2019.)

A: Indeed, the *Book of Leviticus, Chapter 12, Verses 2* & *5* run:

> *2 ... If a woman have conceived seed, and born a man child: then she shall be unclean seven days; according to the days of the separation for her infirmity shall she be unclean. ... 5 But if she bear a maid child, then she shall be unclean two weeks, as in her separation: and she shall continue in the blood of her purifying threescore and six days.*

I believe the difference stated in *Verses 2* & *5* can be explained *the natural way* because males & females are different *in that way only*. There is no reason to think a male is in any possible way "cleaner" than a female and that right from birth. And, since there *is* such a difference between the two creatures, the Commanded purification for a mother is also different.

> Kindly note that for the above answer, I did not seek any "scientific" sources to consult with. No science can prove or disprove or challenge the Written Word of GOD. The Truth requires the reverse approach: *the Holy Scriptures* verify the science. We came to the same conclusion in chapter 103.

Q: Please, explain *Leviticus 19:27*.

A: It is written:

26 Ye shall not eat any thing with the blood: neither shall ye use enchantment, nor observe times. 27 Ye shall not round the corners of your heads, neither shalt thou mar the corners of thy beard. 28 Ye shall not make any cuttings in your flesh for the dead, nor print any marks upon you: I am the LORD.
(Leviticus 19:26-28)

As Brethren Thomas Scott & Adam Clarke explained (and I have no reason to doubt that), the above Scripture demands us not to follow the customs & traditions of the heathen. Those practices & styles are certainly rooted in idolatry and thus contradicted the Holy Law of GOD. Also, from a *spiritual* standpoint, we ought to reject every fashion or manner which does not give us Peace.

700

This question is for Christians who do not support or defend slavery.

Q: I am focusing on *Exodus 21*, which contains explicit instructions on how to own slaves, and what level of violence is acceptable towards them. (?)

Q: The Bible was used many times to justify owning slaves. (?)
Even if you believe that the people using the Bible this way are wrong, you hopefully may concede that they continue to do that.
So, assuming you agree that slavery is immoral,

Q: Will you remove the relevant Verses from your copy of the Bible?

Q: Will you take a pair of scissors and cut out the offending passages?

Q: Or put a note in the margin saying, “this is evil, please ignore”?

Q: If not, why not?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2019. Condensed.)

A: The Written Word of GOD *does not* justify any form of slavery.
I wholeheartedly support the position against that evil.
Seeing such a “justification” in the Holy Bible is a lack of understanding.
For *GOD is Love*. Read *1John 4:8,16*.

Exodus 21:2-11. Far as I understand, it is GOD’s Correction to our misusing of the Gift o’ Free Will. Per historical writs, slavery was chosen as an alternative to killing. We got into the bog of slavery, and Father GOD tried to guide us out.

The Written Word is not “explicit instructions on how to own slaves”, etc. How dare you? Can you see in *Exodus 21* or any other Scripture that slavery is a matter of must? I don’t. Could you note how many a time it is written “if” in *Exodus 21:2-11?* And I sense the same misunderstanding or unwillingness to understand in your statements like, “The Bible has been used many times to justify owning slaves.” Note that correct wording is not “used” but “misused”.

I’m not playing GOD’s Advocate or Defender – who am I? – but only try to answer you. Neither do I advocate *slavery*, including the spiritual one – *atheism*. Kindly note such evil as *spiritual slavery* (where you are) leads you & your likes to nowhere but the death eternal. In our “Q & A”, see chapters 539 & 551.

Now, to your questions regarding removal of some Verses from the Bible, taking scissors, cutting out, labeling “evil”, etc. – my answer is only negative.
I may like or dislike some Bible Translations & Editions. But the Written Word of GOD is Holy to me. Read *Jeremiah 13:15*.

701

Q: What is the hardest part of being a Christian for you?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2019.)

A: It is written,

... be not conformed to this world:
but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that Good, and acceptable, and Perfect, Will of GOD. (Romans 12:2)

So, the difficulties started when my mind got renewed. I got to see evil or sin in the things formerly accepted as normal, passable, or honorable. And hard it is to fight that evil in yourself. But GOD be praised, His Holy Spirit comes to help.
Please see also chapter 56, dealing with the Test of Giving.

> *... he* [Christian] *is poor, sad, miserable, suffers want and hunger, and along with this, towards others is a Useful, Beneficent, Merciful, Peaceable man, and does nothing but Good Works. ... although he is full of Good Works, even towards enemies and evil men, he must get this reward from the world, that he is persecuted, and lose body, life and everything for it. Therefore, if you wish to be a Christian, consider this well, that you may be unterrified, and not on that account become out of heart and impatient, but be Cheerful and Content with it all, and know that you are not badly off when this happens to you ...*
>
> *(Martin Luther, Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount, p.81)*

Further references: *Joshua 1:9* – The Promise.
Psalms 34:15 – GOD is our Help.
Psalms 139:23-24 – Seek His Guidance.
Jeremiah 33:3 – GOD is our Answer.

Q: How do you feel about the fact that there is a negative correlation between intelligence and belief in God?
(Signed: *Atheist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, October 2020. Condensed.)

A: I feel sorrowful for atheists, as the difference between their alleged intelligence and the Wisdom of GOD is more than they can imagine.
If you please, read *Isaiah 55:6-9*.
I have chosen to be with Him rather than with you.

702

Q: If Jesus said that lusting after a woman in your thoughts was the same as adultery, is thinking about killing someone the same as actual murdering that person?
Q: Is thinking about stealing something the same as actual stealing, etc.?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2019.)

A: No, it is not. Not yet, to be accurate.
Apparently, you mean *Matthew 5:21-22 & 27-28*, don't you?
Lord Jesus said,

> *... whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the Judgment ...*
> *... whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. (Matthew 5:22,28)*

Kindly read the Commandments in *Exodus 20:12-16* & *Deuteronomy 5:16-20*, and see that there is nothing like "*angry*" or "*in his heart*".
However, in *Exodus 20:17* & *Deuteronomy 5:21*, it is commanded to avoid even evil thoughts. Why? To prevent sinful actions.
No, wrong thinking and wrongdoing are not exactly the same. But mind your mind where the evil must not be born. *Genesis 4:7.*
Kindly see the Index for "Mind".

Q: Can you still have your Prayers answered if you have no or shaky Faith?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: When *thus* stipulated, are you sure the Prayers are GOD-addressed?
Please see *Mark 11:24* & *Hebrews 11:6* for "no",
and *Jeremiah 29:13* & *Luke 15:20* for "shaky".
You may also take a look at the *Index* section for *Prayer*.

Q: (1) If God tells you to do something horrible would you do it?
Q: (2) Or rather, wouldn't you think that this order can't be from GOD?
(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1) I obey my GOD. He is *Love* and does not demand any evil from us.
(2) GOD does not controvert the Spirit of His Written Word.

703

Q: Christians inform me that I am a sinner unworthy of Eternal Life and can obtain that Life not through personal worth (which I do not possess) but only through the Grace of Jesus' Sacrifice. At the same time, they tell me that I am Precious as made in God's Image. But of course, any Value thus conveyed is *God's*, not mine. So, what's *my* Value per Christian worldview?

Q: Am I correct to assume that, according to Christianity, I by myself have no Value at all?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2019.)

A: Those Christians answered you correctly. The wording might differ from one Believer to another, but *John 3:16-17* proves our common point. So, please don't be offended whatever any harsh words – they are better than a lullaby. All are sinners, not you only. Note well *Romans 3:23*.
And you are not right in your assumption.

In my opinion, every personal Value can be estimated by how we practically value GOD's Creation, our human selves in particular.
In the natural, physically, we can well maintain our bodily health through sports. One can help others through rescue, medical, and other services. Or else, it is possible to destroy our bodies with drugs and other unhealthy stuff and promote or ignore that evil where we live.
Intellectually, we spend our lives learning and teaching Good or evil, seeing those two from Godly or worldly viewpoints, nothing in between.
Spiritually, we feed ourselves and our children by the Written Word of GOD or writings of unbelievers. There is no middle ground here too. See *Genesis 1:4*.

References: *1Corinthians 1:17-19* – The Cross of Wisdom.
Galatians 2:20; 6:14 – The Cross of Life & Glory.
Philippians 3:18-19 – The Cross of Honor.

Q: If you repeat sins, even after God has given you Grace, are you cut off from Him?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: Negative on that. Kindly read *Romans 8:38-39*.
It is a sinner who can cut off GOD from him (her). See *Joshua 24:14-15*.
Every living soul has Hope. Note *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.
However, a sinner might be taken unaware. Mind *2Peter 3:9-10*.

704

Q: The Bible clearly states that you can pray for *anything* and you will receive it, that nothing is impossible for Believers. There are no exceptions. (?)

"Again I say to you, if two of you agree on Earth about anything they ask, it will be done for them by My Father in Heaven. And whatever you ask in Prayer, you will receive, if you have Faith. Therefore I tell you, whatever you ask in Prayer, believe that you have received it, and it will be yours. Whatever you ask in My Name, this I will do, that the Father may be glorified in the Son. If you abide in Me, and My Words abide in you, ask whatever you wish, and it will be done for you. You did not choose Me, but I chose you and appointed you that you should go and the Father in My Name, He may give it to you. If you have Faith as small as a mustard seed, you can say to this mountain, 'Move from here to there,' and it will move. Nothing will be impossible for you." – Jesus.

Q: What happens when two Believers pray for contradictory things? For example, Christian A prays for the rain, but Christian B prays for the sun. Or Christian A prays for Team A to win, but Christian B prays for Team B.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2019.)

A: What you collected (however, not from the Translation used in this book) is correct. I beg to pay attention to some keywords the Lord used. Thus "*you*" stands for *Christians* – True Followers of Christ. And Christians ask GOD nothing but only what Jesus would (see *WWJD* on the Index). The same approach is also applicable, touching on the terms "*Faith*", "*in My Name*", and "I*f you abide in Me, and My Words abide in you*".

True Followers of Christ cannot pray for contradictory things.
In the Lord's Prayer, Jesus taught: *Thy Will be done*. He followed that Himself in *Matthew 26:39*. So, "the case of rain & sun" is closed.
As for the "Team A & Team B" business, I don't think it is worth a Prayer at all. What to pray for? Money interest? Your team to feel good and the other one bad?
You may see chapters 253, 414, 465, & 693 relevant to the subject of Prayer.

Q: If God cannot commit logical contradictions (making a square circle or making 1+1=3), how can He make a virgin give birth or a man raised from the dead?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: Your question itself is a “logical contradiction”.
GOD gave you birth and the ability to understand the laws of elementary mathematics, which you kindly mentioned. And now you dare to question His Word? You *will* receive the Answer along with the experience of what you worded and questioned. Just be patient. Please, note *Isaiah 29:16.*

Q: How can you *defend* the ten plagues of Egypt?.
I am asking this on behalf of my atheist friend. He argues, “The Ten Commandments and the Law are all about being kind, not doing bad things, etc. Yet God broke them with the ten plagues and killing thousands of innocent children, who had done nothing wrong.”
Q: Can someone tell me how I should respond to this argument?
(Signed: Confessional Luteran.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, Condensed. September 2020.)

A: Kindly see chapters 26 & 64, 503 & 508 as for GOD’s Punishment and the Harvest Law. Read him also *Isaiah 55:8*. And mind *2Corinthians 4:4*.

Q: Were domesticated animals created already domesticated?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: Negative on that. I think “domesticating” was not needful. Otherwise, we are going to have to presume the Creation of *predators* and their *victims* in the (non-domesticated) wildlife, which was not. Please read *Genesis 1:30.*

Q: (1) If this life is short and the next one eternal, then why should we try to *do* anything other than “praise the LORD” while we are here?
Q: (2) Why go to school or pursue a college education?
Q: (3) Why do anything other than just study the Bible and wait?
Turn off your PC & TV, park your car, and throw away your cell phone. The entire world would revert to medieval times (or before).
(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.*
April 2021. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1) This suggestion is correct. Sadly, it is not sincere.
Have a look at chapters 75 & 200, if you please.
(2) Kindly check out *Christian Education* in the Index section.
(3) Small correction: *study & obey*. That way, PC, TV, car, cell phone, &c., &c., might be found useful. Don’t worry: the entire World will never get back – only forward to the End. Capitalism & militarism will see to it.

705

Q: The Bible says not to shed innocent blood. If someone gets the death penalty, executed, and later found innocent, is the executioner guilty of sin?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2019.)

A: Yes, he does. Chapter 49 (dealing with worldly media speakers) might serve as a good analogy. In chapter 154, I reasoned that it was hard for a soldier (acting by wicked orders) to be a Christian. And in chapters 95 & 131, we discussed capital punishment and the job of an executioner, respectively.
I believe that kind of mistake mentioned in your question is impossible in a Christian country. There, every Verdict of a Court of Justice firmly stands on the Word of GOD, and so does the Constitution. You may see chapter 55 (Christian Country). Yet, in a non-Christian state, the legislation far not always is close to the Law of GOD. Executioners (as a final link of corrupted justice) might be found guilty of murder on Judgment Day.

Exodus 23:2 – Thou shalt not follow a multitude to do evil ...
Joshua 1:8 – ... observe to do according to all that is written ...
Proverbs 3:5 – Trust in the LORD with all thine heart ...
Proverbs 21:30 – ... nor counsel against the LORD.
Proverbs 30:12 – ... a generation that are pure in their own eyes ...
Isaiah 5:21 – Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes ...

Q: (1) Would you kill a child if you were sure that God commanded you so?. There were times when God directly commanded and rewarded the killing or willingness to kill children in His Name. E.g., Abraham, Jephthah, and the countless conquests in His Name by the Israelites.
Q: (2) And before you answer, “He wouldn’t command that in modern times”, the Bible makes it abundantly clear that God does not change His Mind. God Who commanded those deaths is the same today. (?)
Q: If you contest my basis for these conclusions, I will gladly point out the Scripture. That said, back to the question. This dilemma is honestly one of the reasons why I decided to leave the Abrahamic Faith. (?)
(Signed: *Agnostic, Ex-Messianic Jew*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) My short answer to your question is *Yes*. Take a look at chapter 26.
(2) The LORD, GOD of Justice, most surely would. See chapter 64.
(3) There is no “the Abrahamic Faith”. It is “Christian Faith” or “Faith”.

706

Q: Could anyone point me to some specific Bible Verse(s) about suffering in life and how it is for the greater good?

Q: Are there Verses (in the Old and the New Testaments) about the unsatisfactory conditions of this world and our share in Jesus' suffering? Thank you.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2019.)

A: I agree with what Christians in *Ask A Christian* Forum quoted & posted to answer your question. So, I dare add the following to your main points.

To begin with, any *suffering* is not the Holy Will of GOD for any human Life. Therefore, following His Will, we are not supposed to suffer any other way than in the *natural* when encountering the evil works of human followers of Satan. Please see *Isaiah 54:15-17 & Matthew 5:10-12* as for the work of suffering. The "unsatisfactory conditions" are explained in *Genesis 3:17-19 & John 3:19.* Read about our "sharing Jesus' suffering" in *Isaiah 53:3-8 & Luke 14:26-27.*

The above Scriptures are some of many, taken from the Old & New Testaments, as requested, answering your questions.
You may want to read chapters 77 & 308 of our "Q & A". Thank you.

Q: If unlimited suffering is *just* according to the Bible, what makes temporary suffering caused by murderers, rapists, and thieves *injustice* on the Biblical worldview? Thanks.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* September 2020. Condensed.)

A: First. When you write "according to the Bible", it would be correct to provide at least one Scripture to that effect. Otherwise, how can one know what passage made you think so?
What about *Matthew 10:16-22*? It is written about sufferings, however, not as "just" but *evident* for the satanic world of unbelievers.
Please see *GOD's Judgments & Justice* in the Index section.
Second. Kindly find the answer to the "temporary suffering" (as you put it) in *Exodus 20:13-15* & *Deuteronomy 5:17-19*. Read "Q & A" chapter 95.
Briefly, I can answer your post by *Psalms 33:5.* Thank you.

He loveth Righteousness and Judgment:
the Earth is full of the Goodness of the LORD. (Psalms 33:5)

707

Q: I am honestly confused about the Biblical concept of Heaven..
Do you go to Heaven when you die, or do you lie dead in the ground until the Second Coming and then go to Heaven?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2019.)

A: This question was partly answered in chapters 8, 77, & 243.
I support the Christians who told you about their belief in a "spiritual waiting area" before the *Judgment Day*. Please see chapter 573 (Eternity).

Two "waiting areas" are spoken about in the Parable we discussed in chapter 222.
The Righteous ones are with GOD in Paradise as per *Luke 23:43*. Chapter 243.
Kindly consider chapter 8 dealing with hell.
That clarified, please, check out the Scriptures below.
Try to read "dead" instead of "in the graves" in *John 5:28 (King James Bible)*.

References.

Spiritual & physical bodies divided – *Ecclesiastes 12:7; 1Corinthians 15:42-44*.
Resurrection – *Job 14:14; 19:25-27; John 5:28-29; 11:25-26;& Romans 8:11*.
New Heaven & Earth – *Isaiah 65:17; 66:22; & Revelation 21:1*.
New bodies – *1Corinthians 15:51-55; Philippians 3:20-21; & Colossians 3:4*.

Q: (1) What is the purpose of Life?.
Q: (2) If the end result is to be in Heaven with God or hell without Him, why have the middle step of Life?
Q: (3) If God knows where you will end up, why not just have you created there?
Q: (4) If you are going to end up in hell, why not not create you at all and save you the suffering?
Q: (5) If the centuries or millennia that humans will live is but a blink in Time for God, why create it if Eternity is the afterlife?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: (1) GOD's Purpose for Human Life is Peace & Authority on Earth.
Genesis 1:26,28. "Q & A" chapters 53, 312, 313, and 452.
And Earth is the Center of His Universe. Kindly read *Genesis 1:1,14-18*.
(2) Our "end result" came along, and Life became the "middle step" later, after our fall. Read *Genesis Chapter 3*.

(3) GOD does know where this or that person ends up – He created Time. See *John 1:3*. The reason "why not just have you created there" is in the above two answers.

(4) We are created for Eternal Life, not eternal suffering. It is up to us how to end up.

(5) The "afterlife" was not GOD's Design. *We* horned in in His Plan (by misusing His Gift of Free will) and got Eternity divided into now & after.

Q: Should I be glad that some people will go to hell? After watching all of these riots and innocent people targeted and caught in the crossfire, I can't help but feel angry. I know that many perpetrators won't be arrested but will be held accountable by God.

Q: I'm angry (to the point of hoping) they'll suffer in hell. Is this wrong of me?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020.)

A: Please read chapter 8 of this "Q & A" book. It is on the subject of *hell*. Don't be glad regarding the Punishment of those blind servants of Satan. Seeing or hearing of cruelty, remember the Words, *Thy Will be done*. Amen.

Q: How do those in Heaven reconcile losing their loved ones to eternal, hopeless torment, whatever it turns out to be? I was asked this question on a different *subreddit* forum and wasn't entirely sure how to answer.

Q: Is it just something that we won't think about? Thanks!

(Signed: Christian, Anglican.

https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020.)

A: Probably, we ought to accept the simple fact that the *Spiritual War* we wage does not consist only of Victories but losses too.
Please mind the Words of Christ in *John 15:14* as for the "loved ones".
As for our thinking, the subject you brought up is worthy and correlates with the *Twelfth Commandment.* See "Q & A" chapter 43. Thank you.

Q: When our relatives die and go to Heaven, do they know all our sins and everything about us?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: I don't think so. That kind of Knowledge belongs to our LORD GOD.

... the LORD seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)

708

Q: Why am I met with such skepticism when I ask simple questions to get answers to what words mean?
Q: Clear definitions matter. Otherwise, what are we even talking about?

A: Friend, some time ago, I was a member of this sub-forum as a Christian and also met the *skepticism* of unbelievers when answered their questions. However, I didn't *question* their attitude. Kindly see *1Corinthians 2:7-8*.

As for definitions, you can find 'em in Theological Dictionaries (e.g., those in this "Q & A" Reference section), the books I trust, use, and quote.

Q: I don't know what a "god" means outside of characters in books considered to be Scripture. What does it mean?

A: Speaking of our *LORD GOD*, He is Creator of Heaven & Earth, Life-Giver (*Genesis Chapter1*). GOD is Love (*1John 4:16*) and Savior (*John 3:16-17*). He is Incomprehensible. *Proverbs 21:30, Isaiah 55:8-9, &c*.
Otherwise, how can He be GOD?
Speaking of other *gods*, which some folks worship, they are idols.

Q: What is the "Eternal Father"? All fathers have the intrinsic property of death and are generally lifeforms.

A: You can find the terms "father" and "eternity" in common dictionaries.
The Person of GOD – our Father & Creator – I mentioned earlier.

Q: What do Heaven & Eternity mean?
Q: How can you be "in" it?
Q: What is it?
Q: Where is it?

A: By *Heaven*, we often mean the part of Spirit World where the LORD abides.

By *Buck's Theological Dictionary (1850)*,
Heaven is to be considered as a place as well as a state; it is expressly so termed in Scripture, John 14:2-3; and the existence of the Body of Christ, and those of Enoch and Elijah, is a further proof of it ...

You may see other *Theological Dictionaries* and chapter 153 for more.

As for *how to be in it*, honestly, I am also interested.

Q: What does “rose from the dead” mean?
Death means that Life cannot return.

A: For me, once the Holy Bible says it is possible, it is. I heard the Testimonies of Christians to that effect and believe them. From personal experience, I know that sickness & death *can* be overcome. To explain all that, I can only by quoting the Scriptures. But would you accept that explanation?

Q: I don’t know what “rose physically into Heaven” means, do you?
Q; Can we see this man living in Heaven?
Q: Does Heaven have oxygen and other life that man can hunt and eat?
Q: Is Heaven on a planet?
Q: Which one?

A: If you mean taking up to Heaven the Prophet Elijah or Jesus, the Christ, it is hard to explain. I simply believe it as it is said. If you don’t, the case closed. Heaven is *spiritual* and cannot be seen by our *physical* eyes.

Q: “GOD is the Spirit” What does *a spirit* mean?
Q: How can humans detect spirits?
Q: If we cannot, how do we know they exist?

A: A *spirit* has several definitions. GOD, God Holy Spirit (a.k.a., Holy Ghost, the Spirit); an incorporeal (immaterial) part of the human trinity (a.k.a., heart); an Angel of GOD, a demon of Satan (the latter is a spirit too).
We can detect spirits, Good or evil, by their works, as they communicate Good or evil on human beings.
We know all about them from the Bible.

Q: What is a *soul*?
Q: How to detect a soul?
Q: How do we see whether a spirit can dwell in a soul?
Q: Once we cannot detect a soul, how do we know it exists?

A: A soul is well defined in dictionaries. In this book, we spoke on the subject in chapter 23 (Spirit & soul). As for the indwelling of *spirits*, it is not as hard as it may seem. Just observe the behavior of and listen to the words spoken by a person. See *Matthew 12:34*.

Q: When I asked these questions, I met with *uncivil words* that implied I knew exactly what they meant and that I was simply being uncivil. I am quite interested in these definitions as I think we would agree that religions will define each word in extremely different ways.

A: Your complaint about *uncivil words* is understandable. Where else but from GOD did those rules about being *civil* come from? Believe me, I missed the same politeness when I dealt with unbelievers in that Forum.
You know, *religion* is not my word. Nevertheless, I agree with you regarding very different ways Christians and unbelievers define some things. You can find it in this "Q & A" too.
Thanks for your questions.

References: *Deuteronomy 8:3 & Matthew 4:4* – The Bread of Life.
Jeremiah 33:3 – Get the Answer to whatever question.
Hosea 4:6 – The dangerous ignorance.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2019.)

Q: According to Christianity, what exactly happens right after you die?
Q: What do you see?
Q: Do you go straight to Heaven?
Q: Are there any Bible Passages that talk about this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020.)

A: Your questions are answered in the context of *Luke 16:22-23 & 23:42-43*.
Kindly see chapters 8, 153, and the Index section of this book for more.

Q: (1) If the Lord says that He will harvest every Loyal & Worthy human soul to Him, why would dying be a bad thing?
Q: (2) If our beloved ones and we will go to Heaven, why are most people afraid of dying?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: To your first question, dying is neither good nor bad,
but the necessary thing, per *Genesis 3:19*.
Most people are afraid of death since that fear is from the devil
to whom they listen. Read *2Corinthians 4:4*.
The word "if" in your second question is the most correct one.
Please mind *Matthew 7:13-14 & Philippians 2:12*.

709

Q: Creationist Christians, how do you explain toenails?
(From *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2019.)

A: We are not "Creationist Christians" but *Christians*, and we believe in Creation, full stop. If you question the Design of GOD, we don't.

It is written: *And GOD saw every thing that He had made, and, behold, it was Very Good. (Genesis 1:31)*

It is also said that the LORD, our Father, had created us humans in His Image & Likeness and put all the Earth under our spiritual Dominion. *Genesis 1:26-28*.

That Blessed Design could & did suffer a change, as per *Genesis 2:16-17 & 3:17-19*, respectively, because of our spiritual fall (a.k.a., *the fall*).
We cannot comprehend all the details of the LORD's Design and the changes thereof if any. Read *Isaiah 55:8-9*.
Kindly note the story written in the *Book of Daniel 4:28-37*, with particular attention to *Verse 33*:

> *... and he was driven from men, and did eat grass as oxen, and his body was wet with the dew of heaven, till his hairs were grown like eagles' feathers, and his nails like birds' claws.*

In the same way, GOD's Image & Likeness *corrupted* by sin might well be seen in our present spiritual, intellectual, and physical state.

Further references: *Proverbs 21:30* – The Wisdom of GOD.
John 1:3 – The Creation of GOD.
Galatians 6:7 – The Harvest Law.

Q: What do fully religious people think of *neanderthals*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: I have no idea who those "fully religious people" are, but once you have asked Christians, my guess is we think about those goons the same way as "fully atheistic people" think about Creation.
You may kindly watch a film, *"Genesis: Paradise Lost"*.
Thank you.

710

Q: What is the difference between *legality* and *morality* from a Christian view?
Q: I hear people say, “Atheists have no objective morals, religious do.” Can we be sure of this?
Q: Why are religious rules called *morality* and not *legality*? After all, part of following these rules is to avoid Punishment, as in hell. I’ve heard people argued against the death penalty, “No, you cannot do that, the laws of Earth are not above the Laws of God.”
Q: Notice, they called them the Laws of God, not the moral code. Why?
Q: Is it because those religious rules are only a different set of laws?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2019.)

A: Let me define *legality* as, first, conformity to the Law of GOD and, second, to the legislation of men. Let us also take *morality* as personal seeing right from wrong. Now, from *my* viewpoint, Christian morality is following GOD, thus making these two – *legality* and *morality* – the same.
At the same time, Christian morality, as per *Proverbs 24:21*, demands our following worldly laws until the last begin contradicting GOD’s Law.
As for the rest of your questions, see chapters 64, 95, 144, 644, & 661.
Thank you.
The useful references: *Psalms 25:11-14; 34:7-9; Proverbs 16:6; 23:17-18; Ecclesiastes 12:13-14; & Hebrews 12:28-29.*

Q: Why is freedom so *controversial* to God?.
The freedom to love, the freedom to choose – God seems to consider many freedoms sinful.
(Signed: *Pagan, Thelemite*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, September 2020.)

A: You may kindly have a look at many definitions of *freedom* in Dictionaries and on the Internet. And find yourself totally “free” never & nowhere.
Please also see relevant “Q & A” chapter 158 (Freedom) written from a *Christian* viewpoint. The best Words about Godly Freedom are –

... where the Spirit of the LORD is, there is Liberty. (2Corinthians 3:17)

... If ye continue in My Word, then are ye My Disciples indeed;
and ye shall know the Truth, and the Truth shall make you Free.
(John 8:31-32)

711

Q: This question is to all my fellow Christians. How do we distance ourselves from the hoodlums who call themselves “Christians” but do not act as such? I’m talking about people like the idiots from Westboro Baptist Church as well as the corrupt leadership of the Catholic Church that excuses pedophilia and rape. These are not True Christians, and they put a stain on our Faith. God Himself called them “goats among the sheep”.

Q: So I ask, is it possible to separate the *goats* from the *sheep*?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2019.)

A: It’s not our job to do spiritual weightlifting. Note *Matthew 13:24-30* and our Q & A chapter 230. Our Christian Responsibility does not go beyond our Local Congregations and Outreaching Ministries. You may see chapter 626 (Responsibility). So, kindly avoid criticism. Leave it with unbelievers. Consider chapter 141. Read these Scriptures: *Matthew 6:16 & 1Corinthians 4:5*. See chapter 230 (The Parable of Wheat and Weeds). Thank you.

Q: (1) I was told that we are all judged in the afterlife. It was also explained to me that God gave us Free will, but we pay for our transgressions later. So, He leaves us alone and to our own devices, yes?

Q: (2) Does God want us sticking our noses into the lives & sins of others?

Q: (3) He leaves people alone to choose to sin or not, right?

Q: (4) Would it make sense for God to want us to do something He does not?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) Our LORD GOD does not want us to be alone, either in this Life or in Eternity, but to live *with* Him. And only in His Written Word you can find the Right Answers to all your questions. Amen.

What you call “our own devices”, factually, are designed by the devil. Kindly regard *Proverbs 3:5-6*.

(2) In the last Verses of the *Gospel of Matthew*, you can find the Words of our Great Commission (the Twelfth Commandment). Christians may follow it very differently, but the personal example is the best way.

(3) Negative on that. Please read chapter 8 about hell. Before that damned darkness, nobody is left alone. Once again, note *Matthew 28:20*. On & on, the Holy Ghost speaks through your conscience – listen to Him.

(4) No, it would not. Our GOD is Love, and He wants us to love one another, even as He does. If you have Love in your heart, it is Him working through you. Thank you for your questions.

712

Q: Do many Churches avoid talking about some topics out of fear that it may offend their Congregation and lose Members?.

Q: For example, non-Christian people always harp on Church's emphasis on LGBT* that *outweighs* other sins like divorce, gluttony, gossip, or premarital sex. Many more people would be part of the latter sins (high divorce rate in USA, obesity epidemic or lots of frivolous purchases, so many tabloid magazines, and a lot of teens/unmarried pregnancy) compared to a number of LGBT* people in the Church. If Churches were more stringent on other sins, would they lose a lot of Members who are doing/have done these sins? (* lesbian, gay, bisexual, transgender.)

A: To begin with, there is the Church of GOD – the Body of Christ – *and* the LGBT den of the devil. These two don't mix. Christian Church is not supposed to have LGBT garbage as her Members. As for the topics to be avoided, they must not offend GOD. Please read *1Corinthians 14:26*.

Q: Was it not the Christian view that we are all sinners?

Q: You are no better than the "LGBT garbage", right?

Q: If you can be a Member of a Church, why can't they?

A: Well, as somebody said, *Christianity is the Religion of sinners*.
However, a sinner should repent and go the Way shown in *Luke 15:20*.
GOD will take care of the rest. The question is: *will a sinner repent?*

Q: It is categorically untrue. We are all sinners. We all "offend" God.
And calling any group of people "garbage" is unchristian in and of itself.

A: Do you think the word "garbage" is wrong? What about "wretch" (see the beautiful song "Amazing Grace") or "generation of vipers" (spoken in *Matthew 12:34*)?
Sometimes, it is better to say even some unpleasant word and well shake somebody up to help that person avoid the thing much worse, e.g., hell.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019. Condensed.)

The above discussion was way more lengthy than presented here. Some other subjects were touched, and there were arguments more wordy than worthy.
However, the Forum "Ask A Christian" is a good one to drop by now & again.

See chapters 40 (Compromise), 155 (Repentance), 182 (Sexual perversions).

Further references: *Genesis 1:4 & 3:9 – Where art thou?*
Revelation 2:9 – The synagogue of Satan.

Q: (1) If God hates gay people, why did He create us?
Q: (2) Do we exist for the sole purpose of suffering?
Q: (3) Did God create us just so He could torture us?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: (1) Our LORD GOD does not hate you and did not create you that evil way.

And GOD said, Let Us make Man in Our Image, after Our Likeness ...
So GOD created Man in His Own Image, in the Image of GOD created He him; male and female created He them. (Genesis 1:26-27, shortened*)*

For the Wrath of GOD is revealed from Heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the Truth in unrighteousness ... when they knew GOD, they glorified Him not as GOD, neither were Thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools ... Wherefore GOD also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: who changed the Truth of GOD into a lie ...
(Romans 1:18-25, from the context of *Verses 18-32)*

(2) That question you should ask yourself. Read & follow *Luke 15:20*.
(3) Negative on that. Read and think well on *Deuteronomy 30:19-20*.

Q: Why didn't Jesus talk about homosexuality?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020.)

A: He did & does. Kindly read *Matthew 15:13; John 8:34,42-45; 9:39;* etc.
And He will. Read *Matthew 16:27 & Revelation 22:12*.

Q: Why is premarital sex a sin?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: Will *premarital* sex help you build a Christian Family? Will after-marital sex be only within your Godly Family? If you can answer positively to these questions happy you are. Otherwise, by *Genesis 4:7, sin lieth at the door*.

713

Q: Good day! I fully believe in *science* and what's been discovered about our physical existence in this Universe is true, e.g., *the big bang theory*. (?)
Q: Based on *personal research*, I believe that this event happened. (?)
Now, I'm getting into learning Christianity and what it means to me.
Q: I question nearly every aspect and attempt to have it make sense to me within the context of our *physical* existence. (?)
Q: I try to correlate God's creation of the Universe and the *big bang*. (?)
Q: I think, for our Universe to exist without chaos, He had to start the Universe with a physical spark essentially and allow it to evolve naturally. (?)
Q: God knew that would lead to the *evolution* of humans (and potentially other sentient beings across the Universe). (?)
Q: The alternative to this theory is that God simply placed the Universe into existence as fully formed. I don't believe it at all (because of *science*). (?)
Q: And I think if we are the only sentient beings in the Universe. It is because God knew that the *big bang* would result in an expanding Universe that had to physically exist the way it does for humans to have evolved and thrived to become followers of God. (?)
Q: Does anyone have thoughts on this line of thinking? Thank you!
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019. Condensed)

A: It is hard for a Christian to "fully believe in science" (as you put it).
The latter is mostly an atheistic one. Kindly watch Christian films, "*A Matter Of Faith", "Genesis: Paradise Lost"*, and "*GOD Of Wonders*".

The "big bang" was impossible, as that would contradict *Genesis 1:13-15*.
This Scripture, by the way, indicates that our Earth is the Center of the Universe. Note well *Genesis 1:1,14-15* & *Revelation 6:13-14*.
And what kind of "*personal research*" could make you believe in "*the big bang*"? Nobody could witness that stuff.
You can skip "question nearly every aspect and ... attempt to have it make sense ... within the context of our *physical* existence" by considering human *spiritual* existence per *Genesis 1:27*.

Another contradiction is between "the eventual evolution of humans (and potentially other sentient beings across the Universe)" and *Genesis 1:26-27*.
These Scriptures eliminate any "evolution" and establish human spiritual Dominion over the Earth and nowhere else.
Thank you for your post.

714

Q: (1) What will happen to those who want to believe but can't?.
Q: (2) I don't believe in God. I've tried pretty hard for ten years to do it, but I'm terminally skeptical; Faith just wasn't something I could do, no matter how much I tried. (?)
Q: (3) I figured it would be better to be a nonbeliever entirely rather than a half-arsed Christian. (?)
Q: (4) If my gut instinct is wrong and, when I kick the bucket, I'm standing before the Gates, will there be any Clemency for the wishy-washy like me?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

A: (1) In my opinion, they stay unbelievers, and their destiny is eternal death. Because "can't" is a wrong word bought from the devil. You *can* and *ought to* believe to be no better or worse than any Christian. There is no respect of persons with the LORD, our GOD.
(2) You tried not hard enough. Because, if you are right, then the Written Word of GOD is wrong, *Luke 15:20*, in particular.
(3) Both those positions are wrong, but to be *against* a half-Christian life is correct. See *Revelation 3:15*.
(4) Such Clemency does exist. The above-mentioned *Luke 15:20* is the Answer. However, you ought to walk the way of Repentance *now* (*Ecclesiastes 9:4*). Otherwise, the Heavenly Gates will be shut on you.
Please, read chapters 155, 220, and 319.

Q: If Righteousness comes by Faith, then how is it possible to be "more Righteous" than someone else? The Bible lists several places where someone is declared "more Righteous" than another person, and it seems to be due to their actions — not the amount of Faith they have.
Here are some examples: *Genesis 38:26*, *Ezekiel 16:52*, & *Habakkuk 1:13*.
Q: How can someone be "more Righteous" than someone else?
(Signed: *Agnostic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, March 2020. Condensed.)

A: Righteousness does come through Faith. See *Genesis 15:6, Romans 4:3, & Galatians 3:6*. So, by the measure of Faith (taught in *Romans 12:3*), one can be, at times, *more* Righteous than another. You may call it *spiritually stronger*, working personal Salvation *harder*, etc.
Faith & *Righteousness* are things different, but the first determines our words & actions, which prove the second.
Deuteronomy 6:25, *Romans 10:10*, *James 2:26*, etc.

Q: (1) Is this how God works?.
Q: (2) Let's say I rape a bunch of women, kill 90% of the world's population, rape a bunch of kids, torture people, make them slaves, etc., do all the bad things in the world, but then at the last second, I repent and accept Jesus as my Lord, I love Him, and then all will be forgiven, and I go to Heaven. (?)
Q: (3) If this is true, how can anyone believe in this "perfect" God?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: (1) To know how GOD works, you ought to study the Bible, believe it, and obediently follow. To some folks, it may seem "hard", or "impossible", or "boring". *2Corinthians 4:4* well explains that.
(2) Such a venture, especially "90%", seems impossible to me, at least, for one human being to manage. Repentance, to your information, is a Gift from GOD and a total change of personality. Is it possible in your example?
(3) So, hardly it is true. Therefore, many believe.

Q: (1) What is the meaning of circumcision?
Q: (2) Why did God send Moses to Egypt to free the Jews and then "harden Pharaoh's heart" (*Exodus 7:3*), so that he would not let the Jews leave, thus making it necessary to set ten plagues loose on Egypt?
Q: (3) Doesn't that pretty much negate Pharaoh's free will?
Q: (4) Why were punished all the people of Egypt because of it?
Q: (5) Why would God condemn His Son to torment and death at the hands of the people whom He was planning to forgive anyway?
Q: (6) Why not just forgive them?
Q: (7) Was that not in His Power?
Q: (8) Why does God let Catholic Priests victimize *our* children?
(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1) Kindly see the Index section and the relevant chapters for *Circumcision*.
(2) Read the *Book of Exodus* & "Q & A" chapter 29 (Mind your approach).
(3) Please see chapter 739 (Free will), dealing with the same question.
In the Index, you may find *Free will* for other chapters to refer to.
(4) There is no punishment without guilt. Kindly note chapter 21 (Voting).
(5) In this book, kindly go as far as chapter 4 (The Cross).
(6-7) GOD forgives those who repent. See *Index – Repentance, Salvation*.
(8) What business do *your* (atheists') children have with Catholic Priests? You may ask this question to the spineless Authorities which *you* elected.

715

Q: I recently regained Faith and am trying to be better and more active Christian, but have some questions I either couldn't find the answers to or did not get clear answers.

A: To begin with,

... we know in part, and we prophesy in part.
But when that which is Perfect is come, then that which is in part
shall be done away. (1Corinthians 13:9-10)

So, let us consider the questions.

Q: Do pets go to Heaven? I've gotten mixed responses on this, and my pets mean the world to me, so I always assumed they go to Heaven.

A: When I had read my Bible the first time long ago, that was my first question to GOD too. Yes, they do. But animals killing people don't. See chapter 28.

Q: I know lying is a sin, but what about *white lies*?

A: That "white lie" is defined in different ways, very close to *compromising* with the devil. So, kindly avoid it, "white" or not. See chapters 40 & 177.

Q: I know this may sound silly but is watching porn and masturbation a sin? Every time I've tried to find the answer, I got a 50/50 split on "yes" and "no". I remember a long time ago in my health class, we talked about these topics, and were told it was normal. So, I've always assumed it is okay unless it becomes an addiction.

A: Porn & masturbation are evils. May GOD bless you with a loving spouse. That Blessing makes these two evils even more stupid than they are. You may see relevant chapters 560 & 590.

Q: What will happen to my friends who don't have Faith but are good people? My good friends are good people, but one is an atheist and another agnostic.
Q: If they still lead good lives, will they be able to go to Heaven?

A: Jesus said:

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

It means that our estimation as to who is good and who is not might differ from GOD's. Please see chapter 2 (Honesty) of this "Q & A".

Q: I am a new Christian. How do I know whether I am committing sin?
Q: Will I be forgiven for sins I made while I didn't know?

A: Study your Bible to know that for sure. Mind well the Confession.
See chapters 19 (Confession – spiritual cleansing) & 58 (K & U & W).

Q: How do I apologize for any sins I've committed?

A: Start from the Top – our LORD GOD. Confess your sins.
Then go to people you might offend and apologize. Do that as straight as you can. Make up for any damage you made.
Please see "Confession" in the *Index* section.

Thanks for your questions.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

Q: Why did God have to extend His Punishments to *innocent* lives?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: Kindly see chapters: 26 (Killing Canaanites), 64 (GOD's Punishment),
320 (GOD's Perfect Justice), 697 (GOD's Perfect Justice),
706 (Suffering. Justice and injustice),
and the Index section for *GOD's Judgment & Justice*.

Please note that nobody in this World suffers as "innocent". *Romans 3:23*.

Innocence could have always been the Way, not the state –

I have not sat with vain persons, neither will I go in with dissemblers.
I have hated the congregation of evil doers; and will not sit with the wicked.
I will wash mine hands in Innocency: so will I compass Thine Altar, O LORD.
That I may publish with the voice of Thanksgiving,
and tell of all Thy Wondrous Works. (Psalms 26:4-7)

– even the Way, which now we follow *in* Christ Jesus. *Romans 8:1-2*.

716

Q: (1) As a Christian, how can I know my experiences with God are real and it is not just a *psychological* phenomenon?.
Q: (2) I still identify as a Christian, but I've been struggling with *doubts*. (?) When I'm reading the Bible, praying, going to Church, etc., my doubts *seem* to disappear, as I'm able to feel God's Presence during those times.
Q: (3) Lately, however, I've been *doubting* those "feelings". It seems like other religions, including Islam, Hinduism, etc., – all have religious experiences where they are able to feel their gods' presence.
Q: (4) So, this makes me think, is it all just a psychological phenomenon? I hope it is not, but that would mean I would have to say with sureness what I'm feeling is real and that what they're feeling is fake. I still cannot say that with *confidence*.

A: Good question. Thank you.
It is written:

I am the LORD: that is My Name: and My Glory will I not give to another, neither My Praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

(1-2) The only proof I know is the Written Word of GOD – our Holy Bible.
Pay special attention to Communion with GOD – chapter 32.
There is a good way to dissolve all doubts – to find your Christian Ministry – and continue that Communication through Charitable Works. Chapter 461.

Ye are the Light of the world ...
Let your Light so shine before men, that they may see your Good Works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven. (Matthew 5:14,16)

You are welcome to our Index section to find all relevant "Q & A" chapters.
(3-4) Hardly the followers of other religions who proved their goodwill are all evildoers. But our Father GOD said:

I am the First, and I am the Last; and beside Me there is no God. (Isaiah 44:6)

Even so, other religions are distortions of Truth.

I have sworn by Myself, the Word is gone out of My Mouth in Righteousness, and shall not return, that unto Me every knee shall bow, every tongue shall swear. (Isaiah 45:23)

We can only pray for those people to come to True Knowledge, no more. Our Lord's Prayer well covers that need.
As for the doubts, they are normal. Why? Because of the reality of our Spiritual Warfare. Don't underestimate the enemy. That "psychological phenomenon" has its proper name – *lie* – which is the chosen weapon of the devil. See chapter 177.

Ye are My Witnesses, saith the LORD, and My Servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe Me, and understand that I am He: before Me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after Me. (Isaian 43:10)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

Q: In what way will the Second Coming of Jesus Christ happen?
Q: How will His Second Coming happen? He promised that when He'd come *for the second time*, He'd receive us, and we could be with Him.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: It is written,

For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a Shout, with a Voice of the Archangel, and with the Trump of GOD: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet with the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. (1Thessalonians 4:16-17)

Behold, He cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see Him, and they also which pierced Him: and all kindreds of the Earth shall wail because of Him. Even so, Amen. (Revelation 1:7)

It means what it says. Take it literally. Please find the relevant chapters in the Index. Thanks for your question.

Q: (1) Can artificial intelligence achieve consciousness or soul?
Q: (2) Why or why not?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020.)

A: (1) Negative on that.
(2) It is written:

I know that, whatsoever GOD doeth, it shall be for ever: nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it: and GOD doeth it, that men should fear Him. (Ecclesiastes 3:14)

717

Q: Should or shouldn't an unmarried couple live together?
Q: How would or wouldn't it be better for their relationship?

A: To both questions, my answer is: it doesn't matter. Only Love does.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

Considering the objections I've got from some Christians in this Forum, let me explain my point.
What a Family is to be firmly grounded on is Love only. If we take Love off from our families, the latter can't stand. Why? Because what remains – a Church Ceremony, a Marriage Contract, promises, obligations, etc. – would never hold a couple together. On the other hand, if our Family has Love but lacks the above-mentioned stuff, can that Union survive? Aye. One may know or hear about many examples when, due to circumstances, two people were separated from one another and waited for years to get back together.
Please note that I have nothing against a happy Church Ceremony and legal Marriage Certificate. Both are helpful and final, as a lot ought to be done before that. Therefore, the wording "should or shouldn't" & "would or wouldn't" in your question is wrong – "can or cannot" is better.
What might help a future relationship in the Family is a proper communication. All matters important to spouses-to-be in the future ought to be clarified *now*.

A Marriage Contract (stipulating who pays and how much in the case of divorce) does nothing good to a Christian Family. See chapters 60 & 74.

Q: At school and even at friends' homes, I get asked to pray. Their parents will ask, "Dan, please say Grace for us before this dinner." My teacher asks me, "Dan, could you pray for us today before we go home?" I decline their offers. Is this wrong for me to do? I don't feel comfortable praying in front of others, not because I'm ashamed, but because I prefer to pray alone.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: When folks ask you to pray, please see nothing wrong in that. Note the Words *pray for us* in *1Thessalonians 5:25*. However, your Prayer should be sincere. So, if you "prefer to pray alone", do it. There is nothing wrong with that too, for *Matthew* 6:6 says,

... enter into thy closet,
and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in Secret;
and thy Father which seeth in Secret shall reward thee openly.

718

Q: How many percents of the world's population do you think will be part of Gog & Magog?
The soldiers of Gog and Magog are predicted to be as numerous as grains of sand, so it could be expected that a sizable chunk of the world's population will be a part of them.

A: Most humans are not True Followers of Christ. So, *Gog & Magog* are.

How many percent? It is hard to answer. As per the latest statistics, Christians have grown up to one-third of the world population. But that, of course, includes all who call themselves such. So, if we divide that amount by two (as *The Parable of Ten Virgins* does), then *Gog & Magog* might get as much as 85%. But that is not a Prophecy.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

Read about Gog & Magog in *Ezekiel Chapters 38-39* & *Revelation 20:8*.
You may also refer to chapters 566 & 567 of this "Q & A".

Q: (1) How can I learn to trust that God is in Control?. Sometimes, it seems that He is not stretching forth His Hand, and evil happens because of humans. I want to trust God's Control but, apparently, He lets humanity take its course.
Q: (2) So, if some can plan to blow up the Earth, would God step in or let all life perish?
(Signed: *Baptist.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021. Edited. Condensed.)

A: In the third question of chapter 261, we briefly spoke about the Divine Intervention. Kindly take a look.

(1) If you want to learn to trust GOD, begin with believing His Written Word. Note the Words, *GOD of Heaven & Earth* in *Ezra 5:11* and
LORD of Heaven and Earth in *Matthew 11:25, Luke 10:21, & Acts 17:24*.
(2) Nobody will blow the Earth up, able or not, willing or not. The End of this World is described in *Hebrews 12:26-27; 2Peter 3:10;* and other Scriptures. Humans have no part in that other than deserving the event.

Kindly note, had not our LORD GOD been in control, you & I and all this World would haven't existed. See *Daniel 8:24-25; Revelation 12:12;* etc.

719

Q: When you say God talks to you, what is it you *feel*? I am just curious when people say God talks to them. I will never know this, so I am interested in what you *feel*.
Q: *What* do you experience that you interpret as God talking to you?
Q: Is it a voice in your head, or is it more of a gut feeling?
Q: And a follow-up question to your reason: how do you know that it is *God* and not just a human emotion or feeling or response?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

A: It is written:

... behold, I will pour out My Spirit unto you,
I will make known My Words unto you. (Proverbs 1:23)

Standing upon this Scripture, I can say that His Word to me is that of *Knowledge*. The latter has not anything to do with feelings. Knowing that it is the LORD, I know what to say, write, or do. Moreover, I'm reminded of the *Scripture* relevant. And, answering your follow-up, the best indicator to recognize GOD's Voice is His *Written Word*. The former does not contradict the latter.
To be sure that GOD will continue to talk to us, we are supposed to trust Him.

Trust in the LORD with all thine heart;
and lean not unto thine own understanding. (Proverbs 3:5)

Kindly read *1Kings 19:12; 1Chronicles 28:19; & Job 4:12-14.*
Please have a look at parallel chapters 32, 181, & 643.
See also "Communion with GOD" in the Index section.

Q: How would you comfort someone on his deathbed if he was a strong atheist?

(Signed: *Atheist, Secular Humanist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, September 2020.)

A: I guess nobody but the LORD, our Father, alone can do it.
Whether the person I happen to be with is a Christian or an atheist, I will listen to the Holy Ghost and pray for the right Scripture or words to be sent to me. But it seems you mean, "an atheist to the end", don't you? In such a case, my words would be – *those living whom you love still have Hope* – according to *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.

720

Q: I was a Christian but gave up my Faith. (?)
Q: Something was weighing on my mind recently. If Jesus, Who was both Man and Divine cried out, *"My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?"* how can we, humans, believe that God has not forsaken us?
Q: Jesus was in Contact with God, worked Miracles, knew the Plans of His Father, yet He cried out that the LORD had *abandoned* Him. (?)
Q: Is it surprising that 2000 years later, He could leave us too?
Q: Then how does God look at the sinful world? Surely He would be Wroth at it if He forsook His Son, Whom He sent to take away the sins of the world.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019. Condensed.)

A: *Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani? (Matthew 27:46 & Mark 15:34)*
We discussed these Words in chapter 520 (The Ultimate Price). Please read.
Yes, the Holy Spirit had left Jesus to face death alone, just like two criminals on His left & right. That was the Price for your broken Faith too.
So, walk the Way shown in *Luke 15:20*, will you?

Now I begin to be a Disciple. I care for nothing, of visible or invisible things, so that I may but win Christ. Let fire and the cross, let the companies of wild beasts, let breaking of bones and tearing of limbs, let the grinding of the whole body, and all the malice of the devil, come upon me; be it so, only may I win Christ Jesus!
[The words of *Ignatius*, Bishop of Antioch, next to St. Peter. Thrown to beasts.]
(John Fox, Book of Martyrs, Persecutions under Trajan, A.D. 108.)

Q: (1) If God is constantly curing illnesses through Prayer, and Faith Healers, why cannot He re-grow an arm or a leg? You never see that happen. The cures that we are told *do* happen are unverifiable.
Q: (2) If God really loves us, why doesn't He command His Faith Healers to go to hospitals and heal the people there?
(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1) Please see chapter 254 (the first question) & 270 (the first questions). Who are that "you"? Kindly speak of yourself, okay?
(2) Sickness is the sequence. The sinful attitude is the cause. GOD did command us, Christians, to fight that evil cause. See *Matthew 28:18-20*.
And so long before that, His Condition was stated in *Exodus 23:25*.

721

Q: (1) Where did people who never knew of Jesus or God go?.
Q: (2) Like where did ancient Greeks, Aztecs & Incas, cavemen, etc., go if they had no way of knowing of the Bible? These people were either at the wrong time or geographically separated from other cultures.
Q: (3) So, it seems a bit cruel to think they weren't permitted to Heaven. (?)
Q: (4) Or is there something that allows for this? It is a baffling question.
Q: (5) Personally, I don't think it matters which Religion you follow, as everyone worships the same Love and Universal Good. (?)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019. Edited.)

A: (1-3) As it seems to me, those ancient folks you ask about *knew* the Truth in their hearts. Note *Genesis 1:26-28*. Free to choose, people reap what they sow. In *Genesis 2:16-17*, our Free will is clearly stated.
You may find the same in *Deuteronomy 30:19* (in the context of *Deuteronomy 30:11-20*) and *Joshua 24:15*.
Kindly find "Free will" in the Index section.

(4-5) Created in the Image & Likeness of GOD, you & I also knew Right & Good from wrong & evil since our childhood. But after coming to Christ, we know better. *John 14:6 & 1Timothy 2:5*.
I don't support the idea of "the same Love and Universal Good". In chapter 716 of our "Q & A", you may find the Scriptures from the *Book of Isaiah*.

Q: If the devil and his angels *perish* in the lake of fire, then who continue in the eternal torture of the damned? Thanks!

(Signed: *Christian Universalist.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020. Corrected.)

A: That "perish" is not "stop exist".

And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. ... and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of fire. (Revelation 20:10-15)

Please see "hell" and "death eternal, second" in the Index.

722

Q: (1) *If* Adam and Eve didn't eat the forbidden fruit, would they and all subsequent generations never sin at all?.
Q: (2) Would every human be Christ-like?
Q: (3) And, *if* a subsequent generation of humans got tricked by the serpent, would all humans sin or just the descendants of the tricked human?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

A: (1) Hypothetically, had the first humans kept the devil at arm's length and taught their children to do the same, it would have been easier for their descendants to follow that good example and harder for the evil one to tempt them. Note *Deuteronomy 5:7-10*. That, however, does not exclude any subsequent satanic temptations, and our sins in the case of our failures.

(2) The same, yet not hypothetically, can be said about our being Christ-like. As Jesus, the Son of Man, had to encounter & overcome the temptations of the devil, every human has. But those who are in Christ have the Promise of Victory.

(3) And the same can be answered to your last question. The example of an ancestor, whether good or bad, helps or wrongs his descendants. Yet, nobody is free of temptations and to be tempted above his (her) ability to overcome.

See chapters: 44 (B & C), 184 (Temptations),
440 (The Tree of knowledge of good and evil), 503 (The Harvest Law).

You can also find *Curse, Harvest, Sin, & Temptation* in the Index section.

Further references.

John 16:33 – ... I have overcome the world.
1Corinthians 10:13 – ... will not suffer you to be tempted above ...
Hebrews 2:18 – ... He is Able to succour them that are tempted.

Q: I only want a *Yes* or *No* to this question, no roundabout answer.
If I truly give myself to God and have a relationship with Him, but then backslide, lose all that, and *stop* believing in Him, will I still go to Heaven?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Edited.)
A: No.

723

Q: How to know whether you're interpreting the Old Testament Scriptures correctly or not?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

A: To begin with – be it the Old or New Testament Text – no human can present us with a profound interpretation thereof since nobody thus comprehends GOD. All Bible editions at hand are not free of errors too.

But we have our Promised Teacher, even the Holy Spirit of GOD. Christians ought to listen to Him when studying the Scriptures. (The same is true regarding reading whatever Bible Handbooks & Commentaries.)
So, the point matter is more than *our* correct or incorrect interpretation, but how clear we can & do hear the *Holy Ghost*. And the more we *follow* the Scriptures, the more Truth He opens to us.

... Heare Me, and I will instruct thee, hearken to the thing that I say,
& I shal tell thee more.
(Apocrypha, 2nd Esdras 5:32, King James Version, 1611)

See chapters: 102 (The Strategy), 103 (Avoid errors),
104 (The Promised Teacher), 726 (Interpretation of the Bible).

References: *John 14:26 – ... He shall teach you all things ...*
John 16:13 – ... He will guide you into all Truth ...
1Corinthians 2:9-10 – ... GOD hath revealed ... by His Spirit.
1John 2:27 – ... the same Anointing teacheth you of all things ...

Q: If you committed a terrible mistake that affected the whole World and everyone's life, would God forgive you?.

Q: What if millions died from a vengeful act you committed but then regretted that afterward and sought Redemption and Forgiveness?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2021.)

A: To both questions, the answer is Yes, if that mistake or vengeful act is followed by Repentance. For such is the Holy Will of GOD stated in *Job 33:27-28; Psalms 32:5; Proverbs 28:13; Ezekiel 33:11; Luke 15:20;* and so many other Scriptures. And nowhere the "size" of sin is stipulated.

724

Q: I am a Christian, specifically Lutheran. I know God says to put Him above anything else, but I don't go to Church. Should I go to Church?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

A: Your Local Church (*if* she proved her standing upon the Word of GOD) can & should provide you with many good things, such as promoting Sacrifices, Communion of Saints, Prayer Team Backup, personal Ministry, &c., &c.
Just make sure it is a Christian Church, not a synagogue of Satan.
Please read and note well *Malachi 3:16 & Hebrews 13:16.*

You mentioned your Lutheran Confession. That should mean that *Master Luther* is your spiritual Teacher. Well, he is mine too – nice to meet you. So, please, note the words of Brother Martin Luther about Sacrifices (to be made) –

> *... the Great and Merciful GOD, of His Superabounding Grace, always appointed, together with His Word, some certain and visible Sign of His Grace ; in order that men being admonished and kept in Remembrance, by means of the certain Signs or Works of the Sacraments, may the more surely believe that GOD is Favourable and Merciful unto them ... And it was also a Great Consolation to Adam, that after Paradise had been lost, and the Tree of Life also, and those other Blessings of Paradise which had been outward Signs of the Grace of GOD, GOD gave unto him another Sign of His Grace ; namely, that of the Offering of Sacrifices ; in order that, by this given Sign, he might understand that he was not cast off by GOD, but was still the Care of his Maker, and the Concern of his Maker ...*
>
> *(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis, p.329-330)*

Regretfully, the Rules (e.g., those regarding Membership) of Christian Churches & Ministries differ from one denomination to another.
Even so, with your question, Prayerfully approach the Holy Ghost. He will lead you through such an ungodliness as denominational disagreements.
See chapters 488, 627, and "Church" & "Denominations" in the Index.
Godspeed.

Q: (1) Can I have a Relationship with God without going to Church?
Q: (2) How to know what Church to join? There is so much racism there. People expect you to go to a Church with black Christians if you are black or a "white" Church if you are white. I find that thinking wrong.

Q: (3) Shall I get married? Marriage is something pushed by the Church. In the Church, people always feel the need to gossip about you or horn in into your business. I want to get the Word of God and keep to myself.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) The answer to this question (the post's title) is positive.
(2) Our relationships with GOD and local folks are things different.
I agree with you, but for definitions. The Church of GOD and the synagogue of Satan should be seen & told apart.
Pray GOD to send you to your Christian Ministry (chapter 461). The latter is the Congregation itself or a part thereof. When it comes to the Works of GOD, your "color" and personal life are the last things True Christians care.
(3) Marriage is too Sacred to let a stupid curiosity in. Note *Genesis 2:24*.
Please consider chapters 32 & 242. Take a look at our Index section.
Thanks for your question. GOD bless you.

Q: (1) How much exposure to a non-Christian culture should children in Christian Families get?.
(2) For example, I hear of people homeschooling their kids to ensure Christian Values get taught or not letting them watch secular TV.
(3) At what age can they encounter other teachings, such as what the World is like, be independent, and choose Christianity rather than seeing it as the only thing existing?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: (1) The danger of that "exposure" is underestimated if a Christian Family is too busy and forget the Christian Education of kids and overestimated if that Good Education makes a Christian Home a Monastery.
It is written,

We know that whosoever is born of GOD sinneth not; but he that is begotten of GOD keepeth himself, and that wicked one toucheth him not. (1John 5:18)

(2) That "homeschooling" can be very different, depending on its purpose. The same is correct regarding secular TV. Kindly see chapters 70 & 85.
(3) It is hard to specify the age to "encounter other teachings". It is personal. For children (until graduating a school) is enough to learn to answer *anybody* something like, "my Dad taught me otherwise", or "I will do as my Mom told me to" if Dad & Mom teach them to fear our LORD GOD, not their parents. Please see chapter 60 and the Index for *Christian Family*. Thank you.

725

Q: Why did GOD destroy Sodom and Gomorrah, but tolerates modern-day sinners?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

A: Why do you think He tolerates? He does not.
GOD said:

... I am the LORD, I change not ... (Malachi 3:6)

The destruction of abominable Sodom & Gomorrah, described in the *Book of Genesis 19:23-25*, was unique only outwardly. The Supreme Justice of the LORD, our GOD, has not ever changed, even as He & His Word stood the same.

> *Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, and changed the Glory of the Uncorruptible GOD into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore GOD also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: who changed the Truth of GOD into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is Blessed for ever. Amen. (Romans 1:22-25)*

See chapters: 8 (*hell*), 64 (GOD's *Punishment*), 508 (The Harvest Law).
In the Index section, please find "GOD's Judgment & Justice".

The Scriptures to mind:

Jeremiah 13:15 & Hosea 4:6 – Hear ye, and give ear ...
Matthew 24:35 & Luke 21:33 – My Words shall not pass away.

Q: So, if you commit a sin and then die, the Blood of Jesus still protects you from going to hell, right?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: First. Please don't mix a *sin* (commonplace for all people, Christian inclusive) and a *sinful attitude* (pertained only to willful sinners).
Second. The Holy Blood of Christ does protect us only when we are *in* Him.

In Whom we have Redemption through His Blood,
even the Forgiveness of sins ... (Colossians 1:14)

726

Q: (1) Why does the Bible need interpretation?
Q: (2) Shouldn't the Text be clear to all reading it?. Especially as it is said to be the Message the LORD wants all people to know, believe, and obey.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2019.)

A: (1) The Bible does not need interpretation. It needs only these two things: diligent Study & Obedient following. (2) Neither the Scriptures should be clear to all. The Word of GOD is closed to people who won't do these two things. And that because what our LORD GOD desires and some folks want, regretfully, contradict one another. See "Bible Study" in the Index.

Q: Why would God allow some humans, even if it is through Satan, to have the desire to commit such heinous acts as torturing others to death?.
Throughout history, there have been people who did things that make you ask how God could tolerate that. Their victims were burned or crushed to death, impaled, etc., especially over religious disagreements.
The Catholic Church even tortured to death.
(Signed: Agnostic.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, September 2020. Edited.)

A: Kindly read chapters 1 (Evil) & 299 (The evil of cruelty), in which we spoke about that. *Throughout history*, we – a person, family, nation, or all humankind – reap only the harvest due. See relevant chapters: 503 & 508. Please also note that alone, without GOD, we cannot make any corrections.

Q: (1) Is there any argument for God that doesn't presuppose His existence?
Q: (2) A common argument is that God's existence is obvious in His Creation all around us. This statement presumes that God exists and that He creates everything around us. Isn't it a reaffirmation of a belief you already have?
Q: (3) Another common argument might be Jesus' Acts and Resurrection. (?) These arguments seem to break down when we examine the certainty of these claims. Can we be sure that the claims of the Bible are true unless we believe that it is Divinely inspired, which would presuppose that God exists?
Q: (4) Lastly, the philosophical claims. Some presuppose that the Universe had the Beginning. They assume that an "unmoved mover" is necessary. (?)
I'm interested in exploring these ideas if one of them has convinced you.
(Signed: *Agnostic Atheist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, December 2020. Edited.)

A: (1) Probably, the short & simple answer to your question & arguments would be, “Is there any argument for GOD’s ‘non-existence’ that does not presuppose His ‘non-existence’?” As a Christian, I know that there is *the evil one* who feeds every unbelieving mind with many opposing arguments.
(2) That common opinion does not “presumes” but *proves*.
(3) I cannot agree with any “break down when we examine the certainty”. *What* documented facts (written by *who?*) ought to be examined? And to *what* purpose is the pain to be taken? Are *you* not predetermined that “GOD does not exist”?
(4) That exploration may take time, too precious to spend it out, whereas my Faith in GOD is enough for *me* and your standing upon atheism for *you*.
I heard that mathematicians calculated the possibility that the Universe had been created without the Creator. It is about “1 of 100.000.000.000 in 123 power”. So what? I am not a mathematician to check it up. Are you?
Your concluding phrase and your post’s title, in my opinion, should be answered only No. Why? Because any argument, idea, supposition, etc., of any human about anything may stand only until some other individual would prove & thus convince the first one contrarywise. But, if you only try to imagine that there is the One of Unsearchable Wisdom & Power, Who created our Earth & Universe, Life & our argumentative selves, what a miserable value would have all our statements “for” or “against” Him?

Q: (1) If God is All-Loving, how could He allow children to get cancer? Anyone on Earth would have more love & compassion for children. I can’t imagine a single human that would intentionally give cancer to a child or even *allow* him (her) to get cancer if that human could prevent it.

Q: (2) In a Court of Law, if you know about a crime that is about to be committed, and you don’t try to report or prevent it, you’re considered an accessory to that crime. Thus God, Who knows everything that is about to happen, is an accomplice to every child murder, rape, or kidnapping that happens anywhere on the planet. (?)

(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Corrected.*)*

A: Regarding cancer, kindly see our discussions in chapters 257 & 331.
“Anyone on Earth”? Are you that naive? There are guilty persons. And they will get their due. The lawless Courts of Law will face GOD’s Judgment too. To blame GOD the way you do is *blasphem*y against our Life-Giver.
And it is stupidity. Just think, what if your so active unbelief is a terrible mistake and your eternal destiny is as described in this “Q & A” chapter 8?

727

Q: When I was very young (around 14), I was in a horrible situation mentally & spiritually. My family was falling apart, all things in school were going badly, and I had been abused. As a sort of rebellion against what I was taught and as a last resort, I decided to sell my soul to Satan. I looked up how to do the ritual and did it ... Can this be forgiven?.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Condensed.)

A: In chapter 36 (The power of Satan), we made clear that Satan had neither spiritual nor any other authority over any human being. The same is true regarding all his demons and that "selling-soul" bull.

And your covenant with death shall be disannulled,
and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge
shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it. (Isaiah 28:18)

In chapter 90 (Faithfulness to GOD), we clarified that the LORD, our GOD, forever made null & void every law contradicting His Law. Your "contract" with Satan costs nothing. See *Matthew 6:13* as for Who is in Command.
In chapter 248 (An oath on the Balance), we said that the Holy Law of GOD outweighs everything which might dare to contradict it. Every satanic ritual is no more than a "monkey-business".
Chapter 688 (The crushed enemy) reminds you that the power of the evil one is only over the minds of simpletons.
Kindly read *John 8:44; 2Corinthians 4:4; & Ephesians 2:2-3*.

Q: What characteristics should cause a Christian to regard a person as a willing servant of Satan?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

A: In my opinion, speaking only about humans, "a willing servant of Satan" is only the antichrist. Please see chapter 574 (*Daniel, Chapter 7*).
Speaking about other his willing servants, namely, the spiritual ones, they are fallen angels, a.k.a., the demons.

Of course, the evil one has many more human servants – "the unwilling ones". Those comprise the unbelieving part of humankind and those who believe in different satanic falsehoods. See chapters: 5 (Religions & denominations) & 7 (the parts first & third – "The Word" & "The Truth").

728

Q: I've tried having a debate with Christians before, and it's common for them to use quotes from the Bible to justify their beliefs, knowing full well that, as an atheist, I don't consider the Bible a reliable source. Why is this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

A: Why what, why do they quote the Bible, or why you don't believe it (joke)? Kindly note that following the Commission of Christ, Christians around the globe also try to speak with atheists. Some got into debates – I don't. Why? Because a disputation, more often than not, leads us to a quarrel & hatred, which is the last thing needed.

One atheist told me that it was wrong to prove the truthfulness of a book by quoting the same. And that is correct when dealing with every human writing. But try to imagine, just hypothetically, that there is some *Supreme Power* or *Being* (as our GOD is called by the opponents) Who created everything ever created. Try thinking on, even that He dictated His Servants the Word. Would that Holy Book need to be proved or disproved by any writ of His Creatures, the species who intellectually are infinitely lower than He?

Q: (1) Why does God let Televangelists take money, *in His Name*, from the sick, old, and infirm who cannot afford it, and who will suffer because of it?
Q: (2) Why did GOD allow the serpent to tempt Eve?
Q: (3) If Christians know they are forgiven no matter what they do, why should they refrain from doing evil?
Q: (4) Atheists don't have that expectation for forgiveness, but they don't go around killing and stealing. (?)
Q: (5) They know they have to live with the consequences of their actions in the real world; and that it is the only world they're going to get. (?)
(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Edited. Blasphemy cut off.)

A: (1) Sorry, but you speak about something you hardly understand.
So, how can you be understood? Possibly, your answer is in chapter 256.
(2) Please read *Genesis 2:16-17*. See also *Index / Temptation(s).*
(3) That silly question every child can answer you.
(4-5) Don't they? Previously (see chapter 726), you wrote about Courts of Law. So, what are the latter for if there is no evil? And what is your last sentence for, to complain? Are you not happy to be an atheist or what?

729

Q: (1) Does living an “exemplary & perfect life” get a non-Christian to hell?
Q: (2) On the other hand, does every Christian living an “ordinary 21st-century life” go to Heaven, just because of being a Christian? .
Q: (3) What about many religious beliefs in the world (although they differ a lot), they condemn murder, teach to be kind to each other, and so on?
Q: (4) What if non-Christian persons live a “perfect” life, say, by going to war-zones to help the civilians or care for abandoned children or do other things of “good” and “desirable” and “exemplary” behavior?
Q: (5) Do these people, due to their not believing in a Christian God, automatically go to hell, even though they have lived lives “better” than most people (including most Christians)?
Q: (6) How is that justifiable for you?
Thanks for your answer!

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

A: (1-6) It is written:

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life:
no man cometh unto the Father, but by Me. (John 14:6)

Please refer to chapter 448 – *Matthew 21:28-32* – The Parable of Two Sons.
One son was obedient by words, the other one by actions.
But thus saith the LORD:

... Faith without Works is dead ... (James 2:20,26)

Please read chapter 175 – *Matthew 25:1-13* – The Parable of Ten Virgins.
Only half of them were wise since they had the Light with them.

I am the Light of the World: he that followeth Me
shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the Light of Life. (John 8:12)

Both Parables speak on the Perfect Judgment as to who is who.

... we shall all stand before the Judgment Seat of Christ ...
(Romans 14:10 & 2Corinthians 5:10)

Thank you for your questions.
You may refer to “Q & A” chapters 8 (hell) & 153 (Heaven).
Kindly read *C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity*

730

Q: Is there a rational, non-contradictory explanation of the claim that "Jesus was 100 percent God and 100 percent Man"?
Q: Or must we simply throw up our hands and concede that God is not bound by the laws of logic?

A: What might seem "a rational, non-contradictory explanation" for unbelievers is not so for Christians. And for our LORD GOD.

For My Thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways My Ways, saith the LORD. For as the Heavens are higher than the Earth, so are My Ways higher than your ways, and My Thoughts than your thoughts. (Isaiah 55:8-9)

The same is true regarding "the laws of logic". People created them, not GOD. The Creator is not bound by any inventions of His Creatures.
The "throwing up hands" dwells in the realm of emotions, so let me omit it.
Far as I understand the Written Word of GOD, our Lord Jesus, the Son of GOD, is God from Eternal Past to Eternal Future. Of all Eternity, by the Holy Will of GOD, He was a Man for thirty-three years to fulfill His three-years Mission of Reconciliation. Kindly see *Isaiah Chapter 53*.

Q: Do you think *witchcraft* is real, or do you think Christian belief in witchcraft was a mistake? I am interested in what the modern Christian view might be.

A: Yes, the witchcraft is real. Otherwise, why GOD specifically commands to exterminate it? Kindly read *Exodus 22:18* & *Leviticus 20:27*. The modern Christian view on the subject cannot differ from that of the previous one. You may find "witchcraft" in the Index.

Maybe I misunderstand something since I don't believe in God.
Q: (1) Why does God want you to pray to Him?
Q: (2) Why do you have to believe in Him to go to Heaven?
Q: (3) Wouldn't He consider Life to be a Gift, want His Children to enjoy it, not spend it praying to Him and, instead, being Good to one another?
I don't mean to be rude to anyone Religious. I am just curious.

A: Sorry to hear that you don't believe in GOD.
(1) GOD wants us to pray to Him since Prayer is one of the means for GOD's Creation to communicate with the Creator. See more in chapter 32.

(2) We have to trust our Father GOD to be united with Him in this Life and the one to come in Heaven.
(3) Yes, our Life is a Gift from GOD. He gave us Life to enjoy it, not to destroy. Hardly Believers can spend all their Life praying. But continuous *Communion with GOD* is possible and needful. One of the ways to thus communicate is by following His Will and loving our neighbor as ourselves.

Q: Why could not God have created evil or sin?.
Q: All of Creation is supposedly created by God, correct?
Q: If so, how is evil, or our sinful natures, or sin itself, something separate?
Q: Side question: Christians say: God couldn't have authorized sin, cannot lie, cannot this, cannot that. That seems strange to me. The very statement seems ridiculous. How is it possible for God to be unable to do something?

A: In my opinion, GOD cannot (intentionally, purposefully) create evil & sin. Why? Simply because it is written: GOD is Love. Read *1John 4:8,16*.

For your information, there are many Christians who disagree with me on that. They quote *Isaiah 45:7** and (even in this Forum) call me evil names. Yet I stay on my opinion, believing that, now & again, *we* encounter errors in different translations, rather than the Word of GOD. Kindly read chapter 441 of this book.
* See *E.W. Bullinger, The Companion Bible* as to the interpretations.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

Q: (1) If there were no Religious texts or Religious practitioners in the World – nothing to tell you about God – would you come to know God?
Q: (2) Could God directly speak to you?
Q: (3) How would you know that that is not just you talking to yourself if no one else know God?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: (1) The questions are hypothetical, aren't they?
Thus saith the LORD:

... I am the LORD, I change not ... (Malachi 3:6)

So, GOD does not change and, therefore, His Plans for Creation also wouldn't. That should include His Servants & the Written Word. If His Servants & the Bible would not exist, that could have only meant "not yet". (2-3) Then, I would certainly, know about GOD from Him directly because I would be Adam.

731

Q: If Christians are tricked into sinning, thinking they are doing God's Work, do they go to Heaven or hell?

(Signed: *An atheist, ex-Christian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

A: That Final Decision belongs to the LORD, our GOD, as per His Perfect Judgment on the Last Day. Here, we can only speculate on the matter.

So, I hardly believe a Christian can be fooled around inasmuch that he (she) wouldn't see the GOD's Work from the evildoing. Or else, to be tricked into sinning while doing a GOD's Work, if that's what you mean.

For, standing upon many New Testament Scriptures, I cannot define a *Christian* any other way than a *True Follower of Christ*. That might not exclude errors but rules out sin(s). And such an Attitude is not a *personal* achievement, but rather GOD-*given* Ability to hear & obey a Still Small Voice of His Holy Ghost.

Kindly visit the Index to clarify the main subjects in your question.
See also "Christian" and "GOD's Judgment & Justice" there.

The relevant Scriptures –

1Samuel 10:6-7 – ... the Spirit of the LORD will come upon thee ...
Acts 1:8 – ... the Holy Ghost is come upon you ...
2:38 – ... ye shall receive the Gift of the Holy Ghost.
1Corinthians 2:12 – Now we have received ... the Spirit which is of GOD ...

Q: What can you say about psychological disorders?.
Q: Would God punish murder that happened from a psychological illness?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: We can find the list of psychological disorders on
www.verywellmind.com/a-list-of-psychological-disorders-2794776
(last checked on June 2026).

In chapter 288, we discussed OCD (obsessive-compulsive disorder) to ascertain whether a person can *control* his (her) actions. Seeing or not that self-control, we can determine a "murderer" to be prosecuted or a "sick person" to be *isolated* in a mental hospital.

Q: As a teenager, I had many questions in Bible Class. Some of my questions about Jesus and His Sacrifice were as follows.

A: The questions following the Bible Study are okay and welcome.

Q: Would Jesus still have died for our sins had He died a natural death?

A: No. Please, read *John 3:16-17 & 1Peter 3:18*.

Q: What crimes have you committed that deserve the death penalty?

A: None, if you mean the crimes punished per the laws of the countries I resided in. But in my godless past, I did deserve the *death eternal*.

Q: How sensible is it to pay a fine if I get the money back three days later?

A: If you mean the Resurrection of Christ, it is cynical, at least. Try to imagine *yourself* on that cross, knowing that the Resurrection will follow.
Yet, meaning the Tithes & Offerings in exchange for the receipt labeled "for tax purposes", that, I think, is a "sacrifice o' fools".

Q: Suppose a mass murderer was executed and died but immediately resuscitated and released. How fair would you think that is?

A: If you mean legally executed criminal brought back to life, let the legislators see to it. The Eternal destiny of executed is not affected by that fact. If you draw a parallel with the Sacrifice of Christ – which made Atonement & Reconciliation unto the Life Eternal of many – the comparison is wrong.

Q: Could *anyone* be executed once a year for crimes of all? Other criminals can get away with it, no matter what they did, as long as they accept the sacrifice. (You could also revive him immediately afterward or just taken someone who had died of natural causes and then said that he had died for the crimes of others.)

A: Again, trying to draw a parallel with the Sacrifice of Christ is not wise.
But, if you talk about human foolishness, it is endless and leads nowhere.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

732

Q: (1) Re: *contradictory* ideas of “Predestination” and “Accepting Christ”. (?) .
I grew up Reformed and was taught that God chose His People before the Beginning of Time and predestined our path. (*Romans 8:29-33*)
However, exposed to variations of the Christian Belief, I have become more confused by this train of thought –
Q: (2) If God had *chosen* us all, then why do Christians go on Mission trips?
Q: (3) Or why are we called to *witness* to others?
Q: (4) Does it matter to be *predestined* to go or not go to *hell*?
Q: (5) If God has chosen us and predestined our path, does it make us *robots*?
Q: (6) If we are following a Course already set for us from the Beginning, how can we be *responsible* for our sins?
Q: (7) *Accepting* Christ implies that we had to do something to be saved.
If we got saved by Grace, isn’t accepting Christ *our* work?
Q: (8) If Jesus wants to save us, but we have to accept Him, doesn’t that *diminish* His Power if He cannot save us unless we do something?
I’m an 18-year-old college student who takes her Faith seriously and wants to understand how the Lord works.

(Signed: *Christian, Reformed*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, January 2020. Edited.)

A: It is written:

... all things work together for Good to them that love GOD, to them who are the called according to His Purpose. For whom He did foreknow, He also did predestinate to be conformed to the Image of His Son, that He might be the Firstborn among many Brethren. Moreover whom He did predestinate, them He also called: and whom He called, them He also justified: and whom He justified, them He also glorified. What shall we then say to these things? If GOD be for us, who can be against us? He that spared not His Own Son, but delivered Him up for us all, how shall He not with Him also Freely give us all things? Who shall lay any thing to the charge of GOD’s Elect?
It is GOD that justifieth. (Romans 8:28-33)

To rule out any misinterpretation, please note:

GOD is Love. (1John 4:8,16)

– which resolutely rejects such conclusions as “GOD created evil”, “GOD made hell”, “GOD punished”, “GOD killed”, &c., &c., regardless of where they might be found, some Edition either Translation of or Commentaries to the Holy Bible. The same is correct regarding misunderstood “predestination” (see chapter 507).

Answering your good questions, I beg you to note the following.
(1) "Contradictory" are only *our* translations & interpretations of the Written Word of GOD, not the Word itself. We are supposed to differentiate between "GOD said" and "the Bible said", "it is written" and "it is printed".
(2-3) The Works of GOD (done through us) *follow* His Word, not contradict it.
(4) There is not "black list" with GOD but rather the Ordained Way of Salvation.
(5) Negative on that. Note well *Genesis 1:26-27*.
(6) Following does not free from stumbling. Get up and go on. Note *Luke 15:20*.
(7) In some Editions, the words "*accept* Jesus" or "*accept* Christ" are used. When somebody knocks on our door, it is up to us to open the door and let (accept) a person in or not. When it is Lord Jesus Who calls us, who are we to "accept" on "not accept" God? Our sound reaction is to open our hearts & welcome or *come* to Him and pray *to be accepted*. Then, it is up to God to accept or reject.
(8) We cannot "diminish" the Power of GOD. However, blessed by *Free will*, we can misuse this Gift, turn our back to Him, and follow the devil.

As for the works (Works), you may note *James 1:17* to clarify the matter. For, in the first place, we should ascertain who (Who) is the author (Author) thereof.

Thanks for the questions.

Kindly see chapters: 104 (The Promised Teacher), 118 (Different translations), 507 (Predestination), 561 (The Love of GOD).
Have a look at "Bible Study", "Free will", "Works", etc., in the Index.

Q: (1) How to find God? I don't know where to start.
Q: (2) Yes, there is the Bible, but simply reading it doesn't seem to be enough, as there are numerous translations, and many things need interpretation. (?)
Q: (3) That would lead me to the teachings of a Church, but how does one go about finding the right Church to learn from?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) Kindly read *2Chronicles 15:2* & *Jeremiah 29:13*.
Don't underestimate the Written Word of GOD.
(2) Yes, "simply reading it doesn't seem to be enough."
(3) Therefore, you may go as far as chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry).
Believe it or not, by *doing* the Works of GOD – that is, allowing Him to work through us – we get more Understanding than (no disrespect) listening to many Sermons. See also chapter 151 (How to seek the LORD?).
Godspeed.

733

Q: (1) What do you think of this phrase, “Do what you want religiously, in any way, between consenting adults, in your own houses, but accept that your authority on others must end at your door, as well as their authority over you must be limited the same way.”?.

Q: (2) It is an idea that seems to be the most ethical religious view possible:
– Do what you will between adults who are informed. Worship as you will.
– Accept at all costs you have no power, authority, or dominion, nor are you entitled to any ever, over others, beyond your own house.
– Your house is where you live or your House of Worship.

Q: (3) Essentially: I can’t tell you what to do in your Worship or Life in religious terms, and you can’t to me either. You can *suggest*, but that’s it. A hard firewall in *policy*, but not in *preaching*. So, you can *say and pray* how you will, but just as the Government shouldn’t tell a Church, mosque, temple, synagogue, coven, etc., how to internally worship, or, say, marry people, the same way a religious body is entitled to nothing beyond its own.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Condensed.)

A: On this forum, I met enough misunderstanding as to where the criticism (condemned in *Romans 2:1*) ends and Christian Admonishing (as per *Galatians 6:1*) starts, and vice versa. Therefore, keeping in mind what you underlined as *essential*, let me answer you by speaking of myself only.

I cannot accept your statement in the first question. Some clarification or example is desirable. I cannot do anything contrary to what the Holy Ghost tells me. My authority might be spiritual & social, both going quite beyond my dwelling place. (E.g., our Great Commission according to *Matthew 28:19-20*.)
The same is correct about any power of others over me.

Regarding “the most ethical religious view”, I see no relevant confirmation from the Scriptures. Accepting or seeking a compromise with non-Christian views, if that is what you mean, is not for me.
My spiritual Power is given to me by Christ in *Luke 10:19*.
My Ministry might extend far beyond my home.
As for *my house*, I defined it in chapter 13 (Foes in a household).

Please, consider this book – *Kenneth E. Hagin, The Believer’s Authority.*

734

Q: How to feel as close connection to Christ as I do with God?.
I hope this question is not silly, as I feel a little embarrassed asking it, especially as someone who feels the dreaded “impostor syndrome” in almost everything I do, now being a Christian. I’ve been recently converted to the Episcopal Church after about 15 years of no *churchgoing*, agnosticism, and seeking. I feel a very close connection with God and – with the *full* understanding of the Trinity – do not feel nearly the closeness with Christ that others in my Church or most Christians do. I have *read* the Gospels but hope that my problem is just a lack of knowing Him yet. I pray over it and wonder if anyone else experienced something similar.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Edited.)

A: To begin with, a connection to *Christ* and that with *GOD* is the same.
To get your Knowledge of our LORD GOD in order, please, understand that *reading* Gospels and *churchgoing* is not enough.
Join a good Christian Ministry. What Ministry? Take a look at chapter 461 (Discover your Ministry) and consider those Gifts the LORD blessed you with. Godspeed.

Q: Why hasn’t God gifted me with a *belief*?.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: For starters, GOD has not singled out anybody. Read *2Chronicles 19:7*.
You have not been deprived of the Love of GOD. Note *Romans 8:38-39*.
What you call *belief*, I call *Faith*. The latter is offered to all. Take it.
How? First, communicate with GOD through Bible Study. *Romans 10:17*.
Second, strengthen your Faith by following *James 2:26*.

If I may, this is the answer to the rest of your post sentence by sentence.

“I pray that God gifts me with a *belief*.”
– Be sure, He hears. See *Jeremiah 29:13* & *1John 5:14*.
Note the Lord’s Prayer − *Matthew 6:9-13*.

“The *belief* that Jesus was resurrected.”
– Study the Bible and accept the Resurrection as a fact. See *1Corinthians 15:4-6*.

“I cannot generate this *belief* on my own. I cannot choose to believe.”
– Yes, you cannot generate. *James 1:17*. But you can choose. *Joshua 24:15*.

“I’ve prayed for it.”
– Act on Faith, not on worldly reason. See *Joshua 24:14 & Luke 14:26-27,33*.

“I’m not denying that Jesus is Who He said He was. I just don’t know it.”
– Know the difference between Faith and Knowledge. See “Q & A” chapter 52.

“I lack the *belief* that is required for my Salvation.”
– What is required is action, not just sitting around and believing. *Luke 15:20*.
You may read my answer to the first question of this chapter.

“I’ve looked for the evidence, to have it enough to generate *belief* in my heart.”
– The only evidence needed is the Bible. *2Timothy 3:16-17* & *2Peter 1:19-21*.
Study the Written Word of GOD on. Godspeed.

Further references.

2Chronicles 15:2,7 – ... seek Him ... your Work shall be rewarded.
Psalms 18:24 – ... according to the Cleanness of my hands ...
Apocrypha, 2nd Esdras 5:32 – Heare Me, and I will instruct thee ...

Q: At what age shall we let our children read the Scriptures?.
As we know, our Scriptures are *not G-rated*.
Q: On the contrary, there are many passages in almost every Holy Book that are hard to digest (even for adults) due to their graphic and violent imagery.
Q: My question is, at what age do we allow our children to read the *unfiltered* Version of the Scriptures? Thanks and God bless!

(Signed: Christian Catholic.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, September 2020.)

A: Well, “not G-rated” and “the unfiltered Version” are some of many human labels put on the Written Word of GOD. In chapter 171, we talked about the age of Bible Study and *spiritual starvation*. Kindly read.
Your question stands on the presumption that we diligently study the Holy Scriptures and can explain them correctly to our children.
Therefore, I dare mention, first, the individual approach to every child and, second, the best source of home rearing, which is our *example* of following the LORD, our Father.
Please mind the Guidance given in *Deuteronomy 6:4-9*.
GOD bless you.

735

Q: (1) Is there any connection between *logic* and *God*?
Q: (2) If there is, how does one demonstrate that connection?

A: There is a compulsory connection between *GOD* & *His Logic* and not a link between Him and worldly reason. See “Q & A” chapter 58 (K & U & W).

Q: (1) When debating doctrines, do you believe *personal experiences* should be used to support your (Christian, non-denominational). view?
Q: (2) Is it adequate for someone to say, “Because of personal experience, I believe teaching X to be true or false?”
Q: (3) Or should we always view *what the Bible says* and argue accordingly? I believe personal experiences can be used to provide clarity on a subject but not used as primary evidence to support your argument. (?)
Q: (4) The only evidence we should use is the Bible. We should see every passage in it as a fact. We use precept upon precept to *argue our view* on a specific subject or doctrine within the Bible. (?)

A: I agree with you as to our firm standing on the Holy Scriptures.
As for personal experiences, i.e., Christian ones, those with the LORD, they are Testimonies to share in our Communion, not for debates, if any.
For me, personal experience with GOD makes my Faith Knowledge.
The last might shorten arguments. Or cut ’em off.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

Q: To all weapon-toting and martial arts-trained, Christians, what do you say to the “turn the other cheek” Scripture?

A: You mean *Matthew 5:38-39*, don’t you?
To begin with, such a person as Police Officer, in the line of duty, may have a business with criminals rather than personal enemies. Acting on behalf of the country, he (she) must use his (her) arms & skills to the extent necessary. Speaking of civilians and free-of-duty situations, Christians should know their first & real enemy – the devil – and, as a good fighter recognizes an opponent, should see the puppet-master behind his puppet(s) approaching. Address the demon by the Word of GOD. As for a criminal, thus saith the LORD: *fear him not*. The circumstances may demand of you to protect others & yourself – GOD will not leave you alone. Listen to Him.

736

Q: Does God really love me?. I honestly don't know if He does.
Q: Yes, the Bible says, He loves us, but why does He keep hurting me?
Q: God wants me to love myself, but how can I after being hurt so many times?
Q: God wants us to love Him, but how can I after He keeps hurting me?
Q: Does He think I'm some kind of punching bag for Him to punch around?
Q: What did I do so wrong for deserving this type of hurt from Him?
Q: I want Him to explain Himself to me. What is He thinking?
Q: Does He love me, or does He love hurting me?

A: In my humble opinion, to get the most qualified answers to the above questions, you ought to go to Confession. There & then, depending on your sincerity, your Local Christian Pastor or a good Christian friend can answer every particular question of the above post. Since here you speak in generalities, I can answer your first question only: "Does God *really* love me?" – Yes, He does. Kindly see chapters 320 (The Perfect Justice), 608 (Confession outlined), and the Index section for more.

Q: (1) I was baptized when I was a baby. So, I didn't have a say in it.
I am not a Christian and was wondering how or if there's a way to "reverse" my Baptism?
Q: (2) From what I've read online, it seems that if you don't believe in Christianity, the Baptism is not valid. I don't know if this is true or not. (?)
Q: (3) I will convert to another Religion soon when I feel ready, and this has just been bugging me. I don't believe in it, but if there is a way to reverse it?

A: (1-3) To "reverse" your child Baptism (which, in my opinion, has no spiritual Power but involve the Accountability to GOD of the adult doers thereof), you ought to go far as the Church where that procedure took place and report on your intentions to the person in charge of the records. The same you should state to your (alive) Parents & Godparents.
Please see chapter 45 (the first question) and the Index section for more.

Q: What are your thoughts on female Ordination?
In the Church of England, women can now be Vicars. However, in other denominations, this isn't allowed. Please tell me how do you feel about that.

A: My thoughts & feelings on such an Ordination (as well as that of Pastors, Preachers, Teachers, &c.) are stated in chapter 467. Kindly read.

Q: (1) Why do you quote Bible Verses to atheists?.
If someone doesn't believe the Bible is anything more than a bunch of old texts written by ordinary people, they are not going to care what it says and, certainly, won't believe it. Answering their questions or objections with Bible Verses will just look like you are evading the point.

Q: (2) Do you think the text will miraculously convert them, even though it hasn't in the past?

Q: (3) Or is there some other reason?
These are genuine questions, not a criticism. Just trying to understand the thinking behind it because it is very common but seems pointless or even counterproductive to me.

A: I can answer every word of your questions by the Scriptures. And back up myself. However, once you rejected the Truth of GOD and prefer, instead, the discussion or debate or *human* reasoning, my counter-question is, why do you ask *Christians* on this Forum? If you, an *unbeliever*, want to talk with somebody who trusts GOD and put His Wisdom & Word above his (her), get ready to hear something that might seem to you unconvincing, irrelevant, stupid, counterproductive, and so on. And bring up your wisdom. As for Conversion, believe it or not, it is GOD's business, not ours.

(The above discussions are from *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Edited.)

Q: Who is speaking in this Verse?

Q: If it is not God, then who is it?.

Masters, provide your slaves with what is Right and Fair, because you know that you also have a Master in Heaven. (Colossians 4:1)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Condensed.)

A: GOD is behind His Written Word. Probably, you had a word against the evil of *slavery* and got misled. So, I quote the same Verse from *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*, which is chosen to be first to stand on in this "Q & A".

Masters, give unto your servants that which is Just and Equal; knowing that ye also have a Master in Heaven. (Colossians 4:1)

Kindly refer to the chapters indicated in the Index section for "Slavery".

737

Q: How does a Christian's day-to-day Life differ from an atheist's life?
Q: Ignoring mental beliefs and exercises, is there a necessary difference between an atheist's day-to-day life and a True Christian's day-to-day Life?

A: I think the main difference between those two ways of living is between following and ignoring the Teaching of Christ. That diversity manifests in a variance in thinking, saying, and doing things. If, by your request, we exclude "mental beliefs and exercises" or, as I put it, "thinking and doing", then, at least, the distinction of speech remains.
You might find more in "Q & A" chapters named "Christian Living".

Q: Why do *you* believe in God?
I was raised Catholic, but not sure *what* I am and *what* I believe in now.

A: For me, believing (Faith) in GOD became Knowledge & Trust in Him.
Please read relevant chapters 52, 58, and 486.

Q: How do you fit *fun* into your Religion? I've been trying to pray more often, and when I'm alone or have work to do, I feel like I can connect well with God, but my social life feels completely separate. I try to be comfortable in large groups, which also doesn't help. I see people having a lot of fun at things and think about how Religion has brought me closer to many of my friends in so many ways, but rarely in any party-like way.
Q: Should I try to connect the two?
Q: Should I separate the two? Any experience or advice is much appreciated!

A: Friend, try to start with definitions.
Let me guess, by "Religion", you mean "Christian Faith" or "Christianity", and "fun" agrees with *Webster's 2001 Dictionary* – "... something that provides mirth or amusement ... enjoyment or playfulness ..."

Not totally excluding, I put *fun* to a secondary place and have Christian *Joy* above it. By the same Dictionary, *joy* stands for "... the emotion of great delight or happiness caused by something exceptionally good or satisfying; keen pleasure; elation ... a source or cause of keen pleasure or delight; something or someone greatly valued or appreciated ... a state of happiness or felicity ..."
You can hardly disagree that the reasons for joy or fun greatly vary from person to person, especially, Believers to unbelievers. Kindly note *2Corinthians 5:17*.

So, your questions, “Should I try to connect the two? Should I separate the two?” have affirmative answers if the first relates to your Friends in Christ and the second to the unbelieving world. Godspeed.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Edited.)

Q: Is it wrong to turn to God because I’m afraid of spending Eternity in hell?. The last year I have been slacking in my Faith. Because of quarantine, I cannot go to Church. So, I watch a Sermon at home every Sunday. The problem with that is every time I watch it, I get a lot of fear of going to hell because I realize how much I sin. That encourages me to turn to God.

Q: Is it wrong to follow God because I’m afraid of going to hell?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020. Edited.)

A: There is nothing wrong with what you’ve written about. Nobody in his (her) right mind does want to get in hell and (a bit of correction here) spend Eternity in the second death. Have a look at “Q & A” chapters 8 & 573.
So, continue to watch Christian programs on TV, *study* your Bible,
and, the most important, *follow* the Written Word of GOD. Godspeed.

Q: Do you believe that since all of this horrible stuff in the World is happening, we should listen for the sound of Trumpets signaling that the Lord is back?

(Signed: *Christian non-denominational*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, June 2020.)

A: The “horrible stuff in the World” has nothing to do with our Christian Living and following GOD’s Commandments. Neither should we “listen for the sound of Trumpets”. At the time Due, you & I, dead or alive, *will* hear, don’t worry about that. Mind your Christian Family and Ministry.

Q: (1) What do you think: is the Biblical Role of the Followers of Jesus in society today?

Q: (2) Are Christians doing it?

Q: (3) Why or why not?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) In my opinion, it is following LORD GOD, His Twelfth Commandment – our Great Commission, in particular. Please see “Q & A” chapters 43 (The Twelfth Commandment) & 496 (Following the Commandment).
(2 & 3) And it is a matter of personal Responsibility of this or that person claiming him (her) self to be a Christian.

738

Q: (1) How can a Christian justify any pursuit in life other than Missionary Work, whether locally or abroad?.
Q: (2) It seems if you're so convinced that you've got the meaning and purpose of the Universe *profoundly figured out*, that nothing should be of interest to you besides spreading the Good News. (?)

A: (1) A Christian justifies those "other" pursuits if they do not contradict the Written Word of GOD. Kindly see chapter 85 (The right education).
(2) Regarding "the meaning and purpose of the Universe", nobody can "figure that out profoundly" due to the limitations of our mind, Christian or not. As to the Good News, it is our Great Commission (chapter 43).

Q: I need to stop judging people.. I'm becoming extremely bitter and angry toward the people who surround me in life. It freaks me out to see how inconsiderate people can be and how they fail to see their faults, which stop them from improving and striving to become better. (?)
I'm not religious, but I believe Jesus was very Wise and would appreciate any guidance offered here. Thank you.

A: That need is justified by the Word of GOD. Please see chapter 141.
Bitterness & anger must give way to Understanding, not *worldly reason*, because Truth supports the first, not the second. Following the Teaching of the Lord will make you Wise enough to repudiate *criticism*. Thank you too.

Now, let me answer to your further reasoning step by step.

Q: What is the evidence for the existence of a soul?.

A: Only the Bible.. *Here I stand. (Martin Luther)*

Q: I'll be the first one to admit it certainly *feels* like I have a soul, i.e., my experience tells me that I'm not just a material body. (?)
A: Roger that.

Q: But simultaneously, I also don't see any reason to believe I am anything more than my body. (?)
A: Negative on that. Our physical body is ruled by a non-material center. Please see "Q & A" chapter 108 (The trinity of a human).

Q: The Bible describes the soul as the place where my thoughts, desires, and emotions reside. (?)
A: That's correct.

Q: But all those things are the result of complex connections and signals within my brain and nervous system. (?)
A: The brain & nervous system are physical substances. Those complex connections and signals are *movements* of natural members ordered by some immaterial intellectual stuff.

Q: It makes sense to me that the ancients needed a word for this phenomenon and, for lack of a better explanation, came up with the idea of a 'soul.' (?)
A: The ancient folks were (even as their nowadays descendants are) in need of Knowledge, Understanding, & Wisdom only GOD gives. See Chapter 58.

Q: But I'm open to accepting my being wrong about that. (?)
A: Well, me too.

Q: What would you say is the evidence for the existence of a soul?
A: My evidence is only the Written Word of GOD.
Kindly see the Index section at the end of this book for cross-references.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Edited.)

Q: (1) Why did an All-Loving God create *evil* (*Isaiah 45:7*)?
Q: (2) Why He allowed Satan to live amongst us?
Q: (3) How are we supposed to know what is true if Satan is there to fool us?
Q: (4) How could an All-Loving God command His People to kill children?
Q: (5) How do I know what to believe? Every different sect of Christianity and every religion says I have to have faith to believe what *they* say is true.
(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1) You may see chapter 730 (the question "Evil"). Brother E.W. Bullinger wrote: "*God brings calamity about as the inevitable consequence of sin*." Kindly have a look at chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment) in this regard.
(2) Please see chapter 3 (Satan) and the Index for the same.
(3) If by "we" you mean "atheists", my answer will hardly convince you.
(4) Your quotes are wrong. Please see chapter 26 (Killing Canaanites).
(5) See chapters 5 (Religions & denominations) & 177 (Truth and lie).

739

Q: Wasn't GOD's hardening of the Pharaoh's heart a violation of Free will?

A: No, it wasn't. The Pharaoh *had* chosen to be the idolatrous servant of Satan. Hardening his heart was just another wording for and the manifestation of GOD's Punishment. Kindly see relevant chapter 64.

Q: What did Paul mean when he said, "the Saints will judge the World"?. The passage is:

Dare any of you, having a matter against another, go to Law before the unjust, and not before the Saints? Do ye not know that the Saints shall judge the World? And if the World shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters? (1Corinthians 6:1-2)

Q: He later went on to say that the Saints would also judge angels. (?) What was he talking about exactly?

A: In *1Corinthians 6:1-8*, Apostle Paul admonished his Friends in Christ. We are not supposed to bring to a heathen Court of Law the claims against one another, which could & should be settled in our Local Church.
As to our part in Judgment, condemning the sinners & demons, it can be simply explained that True Christians are One with GOD through their Lord Jesus. And it is not we that judge, but the Christ through ourselves.
Please read *John 20:21-23; 1Corinthians 6:17; & 1John 2:27*.

Q: ... The Bible says, "*the wages of sin is death"*. Wouldn't it follow that once our bodies die, we pay the wage, thus fulfilling the penalty?.
Q: One might say it is spiritual death, but how can an eternal spirit die?
Q: And if death just means spiritual separation from God, why would God have to become a Man to make an Atonement, since the body does not factor into the equation?

A: Please don't confuse *physical* and *spiritual* death. Our physical body dies, but a spirit does not. The spirit of a sinner continues to live in hell and, later on, in the darkness of the second (eternal) death. Kindly see relevant chapters 8 & 573 for more. Physical death does not separate us from GOD, the second death does. Lord Jesus paid the Ultimate Price of our Atonement & Reconciliation with the LORD, our Father. Kindly read *1Timothy 2:5-6*.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Edited.)

Q: What happens to a baby that dies in the womb, according to the Bible?.
I mean aborted, stillborn, etc. I'm an *agnostic* that came from the Baptist Church. I remember a lot was said about being born in sin, but I don't recall the status of the unborn.
Q: Do they just skip all this mess and go to Heaven? Thanks!
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: The word "dies" presumes "lived", and the latter is applicable here since a physical life existed. The only option is (Paradise &) Eternal Life, whereas a sin, leading to (hell &) death eternal, is impossible for such an age of human. So, the above cases – *dies in the womb* or *aborted* or *stillborn* – may mean only being deprived of Life here & now, but not of the Life Eternal.
Thanks for the question. Please visit our Index section for references.

Q: Can you explain to me the Flood, please?
Q: (1) I understand that the World was ridden with evil, but killing off every single person, mother, child, and baby doesn't seem reasonable, especially as the World ended up as it was before. (?)
Q: (2) Omniscient God knew how to set up the World for us to live the way He wants us to. Why would God need to kill all people with the Flood when it was He Who gave them Free will in the first place?
Q: (3) It seems contradictory we have Free will and then kill every single body (except for Noah & his crew) and rebuild the World the way it was. (?)
Q: (4) Are our lives that expendable to God?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: (1) I guess it is wrong to tell "the World ended up as it was before". Here & now, remained nobody who witnessed what was there & then.

(2) Read about Creation in *Chapter 1* of *the Book of Genesis*. The World *was* Perfect. Our Free will was given to live in and rule that World. And Free will remains as well as our Godly Image & Likeness stay on.
Regretfully, people understand Free will differently, even *free to do Good* and *free to do evil*. Please see chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).
I believe the Flood was equal to total sin there & then, even as our every misfortune is always commensurate to personal error.

(3-4) Negative on that.
Kindly read *Isaiah 54:7-10* & *John 3:16-17*.

740

Q: What are your thoughts on *Matthew 26:42*?
My Church has always said that Jesus was Loyal, Faithful, and Strong to the end, but I've always thought this event was an obvious *lapse* in Faith.
I don't blame Jesus: a torturous death awaited Him.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

A: We touched on this subject in chapters 520 & 720 (The Ultimate Price).
Chapter 88, dedicated to Brother Peter, deals with the same.
The "lapse o' Faith", even "obvious", has nothing to do with that Scripture.

He went away again the second time, and prayed, saying, O My Father,
if this Cup may not pass away from Me, except I drink it, Thy Will be done.
(Matthew 26:42)

The Holy Spirit of GOD had *left* our Lord to face the strongest of fears – the fear of death – even the same way the condemned criminals did. That was the Price for our Salvation. The following Words of the Prophet *Isaiah* are for you & me.

He is despised and rejected of men; a Man of sorrows, and acquainted
with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from Him; He was despised,
and we esteemed Him not. Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried
our sorrows: yet we did esteem Him stricken, smitten of GOD, and afflicted.
But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities:
the Chastisement of our Peace was upon Him; and with His stripes
we are healed. All we like sheep have gone astray; we have turned
every one to his own way; and the LORD hath laid on Him
the iniquity of us all. (Isaiah 53:3-6)

He regards Faith alone : that is, a Trust in His Mercy through Christ. It is by this Faith and this Trust that the persons begin to please GOD : then, after this, their Works also please Him ... It is in this Trust in the Mercy of GOD that the True Church walks, with a Humble Confession of her sins and unworthiness, while she believes that GOD will pardon her through Christ. And now the Works which follow upon this Trust in GOD's Mercy are, as it were, Evidences and Testimonies of the man's Faith ; and they please GOD, not on account of themselves, but on account of the Faith of the person who offers them ...

(Martin Luther, The Creation: A Commentary
on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis)

741

Q: (1) How are you convinced that GOD exists and that His Words are True?.
If you touch something solid, like a metal rod, you get a sensation, feeling, and thought about the qualities of that object. You would be convinced of this sensation, and no argument would be able to change your perception of that metal rod. But you would only experience this sensation if you *felt* that rod. You would not be as convinced or get the same perception if someone *told* you about the rod.

Q: (2) If you would apply this logic to the belief that God exists, can you say that you are as convinced about God existing as you would be about some physical object, as your arm feels it a certain way?

Q: (3) Is it applicable to your thinking about the Bible?

Q: (4) Could you still think that the Words of the Bible are the best way of living by, even if the God that gave them to us *didn't* exist?

A: (1) What you write about a rod is okay regarding *physical* matters, but not applicable to *spiritual* things if you believe in the latter.
(2) *Your* logic does not work here. Our Faith is rewarded by Knowledge.
(3) *My* logic is applicable – I believe, and GOD proves His Written Word.
(4) Please check your question out: how can GOD give His Written Word and not exist simultaneously?
Kindly see the Index for references.

Q: Is God evil?.

Q: If God's Will is a product of His Nature, reality a product of His Will, and evil part of reality, it would mean evil is part of God's Nature. (?)

Q: Am I missing something here?

A: Is God evil? – No. Are you missing something here? – Yes.
What exactly? – Us, humans. *Genesis 1:26-28* is clear about our Creation in GOD's Image & Likeness and our spiritual Dominion over all the Earth.
So, evil is *our* product, not GOD's. Kindly refer to chapters 312 & 313.

Q: (1) If God is the most Gracious being, why do you have to believe in Him in order to not suffer?.
(2) Did He put us in this World just to play a game pretty much?
(3) If we end up believing in Him, then we are saved, but if not, are we doomed to torture for Eternity?
(4) Wouldn't He want Goodness to happen to all humans?

A: (1) *Believing*, *we* avoid suffering in Eternity, not excluding suffering now.
(2) The LORD, our Father, is very Serious. Playing "games" with Him is the dangerous business of Satan & his blind followers – blasphemers & scoffers.
(3-4) These questions, even sarcastic ones, are answered positively.
Take a look at chapter 573, dealing with Eternity. See the Index section too.

Q: What is evil?
Q: Are *good* and *evil* simply names for God's preferences?

A: It is written: *GOD is Love. (1John 4:8,16)*
Therefore, *evil* cannot be His preference. Not even close.
The common definition of *evil* you can find on the Internet.
For a Christian explanation, kindly refer to chapter 109 and the Index.

Q: Before God creates people, does He know their future when it comes to ending up in Heaven or hell?
Q: If so, why create the folks that will go to hell at all?.
Q: From what I understand, God knows what will happen in all time (correct me if I'm wrong). That means He knows which unborn babies will end up in hell. That means *these people don't have a chance to save themselves* – because that means *God would be wrong* about His prediction. (?)
Q: So, why create them in the first place, knowing *their ultimate destiny* of eternal torture?

A: My answer is No to all that I highlighted in italic above.
Many (if not all) unbelievers don't understand what *Free will* is. You may find it defined in the chapters indicated in the Index section of this "Q & A".
GOD gives us Life to live eternally. To follow GOD or Satan, do Good or evil, pursue Eternal Life or eternal death – that's all our Free will is about.
The LORD, our GOD, cannot be wrong. We can.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Edited.)

Q: (1) Is sin unavoidable for a human with Free will?
Q: (2) Can humans use their Free will to choose to never sin?
Q: (3) If so, why didn't God use His Knowledge of future events to only create humans that wouldn't sin?
Q: (4) If not, wasn't a human "programmed" to sin?

(Signed: *Agnostic Atheist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, March 2020.)

A: (1) A sin is avoidable and has no power over a human, but only *in* Christ Jesus. Kindly read *1John 5:18*.
(2) Humans can use their Free will to follow LORD GOD and thus never sin. Follow *Galatians 5:16*.
(3) GOD created humans as best as He could. Kindly note *Genesis 1:26-31*.
(4) A human was not "programmed" to sin. Again, see *Genesis 1:26-27*.
You can find more on *Free will* and other subjects in our Index section.

Q: What does this Prophecy of Zechariah mean? In *Zechariah 14:12*, the Prophet foresees the day when God will send a plague on the nations attacking Jerusalem:

Their flesh shall consume away
while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away
in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth.

Some say this is describing nuclear warfare. But it also says that this same plague would befall the *horses*, *mules*, *camels*, *donkeys*, and all the animals in their battle camps. No one uses these animals in battle anymore.

Q: So what does this mean exactly?

(Signed: *Agnostic, Ex-Christian.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: Here, I understand *Jerusalem* metaphorically as our spiritual battlefield. The same way, seeing *Jews* as Christians and *Israel* as the Body of Christ, *Zechariah 14:12-15* teach us about the persecutions of Christians and the self-inflicted punishment of evildoers – the *spiritual* degrading, bad beyond Repentance. You may see chapters 64 (GOD's Punishment) and 312 (Our spiritual Authority). All animals depend on us, humans. *Genesis 1:26-28.*

Q: If you're an *atheist* or *agnostic*, during the *Judgment*, could you beg God for Forgiveness, and would He administer it to you?

Q: If you ask for Forgiveness, would you be denied and still sent *to hell*?

(Signed: *Agnostic*.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: If, by an *atheist* or *agnostic*, you mean a person who lived *contrary* to the *Written Word of GOD*, then on the Day of Judgment, he (she) comes up from *hell* and, condemned, and passes on to *eternal death*. One should pray for Forgiveness in *this* Life-span. You may refer to chapter 573 (Eternity). Kindly visit the Index for *Hope*, *Hell*, and *Death eternal*.

742

Q: Why did God make some people ugly?
I am not talking about average people, but those who are disfigured or really below average. They were born that way, trying their best to change and look better. Yet, it doesn't work – they just got a bad card in life. It would have been better if everyone was average and some, maybe, above average. I know some folks are mentally tortured because 80% of people probably, don't want to be with them. It's even worse for those who have a disfigured face. I don't think that disproves God. It would be an ignorant fallacy.

A: It is written,

... the LORD seeth not as man seeth;
for man looketh on the outward appearance,
but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)

Thinking about the reasons, let's not forget the *Harvest Law*. Everything wrong has its spiritual reason – the sin – committed generations before.
As you write, people try their best to change. But do they? There are many things folks tend to forget, i.e., *Communion with GOD* through *Fast*, *Prayer*, and *Confession*, seeking help in the Local Church and her *Prayer Team*. There are *Healing Ministries*, including those conducted by the "Prosperity Preachers", labeled so by very different people due to many reasons & motives of critics. However, the Holy Ghost proved to be there with True Preachers.
Last but not least, it is also a personal matter of yours & mine. You know that some folks thus suffer. Well, have you prayed for them? Remember them in your daily Prayer. The *Lord's Prayer* is our best choice.
Thanks for the question.
The terms (I put in italics) of my answer are in the Index ending this book.

Q: Why do people die?.
Q: If God loves people, why does He take our loved ones away from us?

A: For starters, nobody dies forever. When physical Life ends, our spirit & soul continue to abide in *Paradise* and further in the Kingdom of *Heaven*. Or else, it is *hell* and onward the darkness of *death eternal*.
Father GOD loves us, for He is Love. Our loved ones leave on us, or we on them – depending only on the destination deliberately taken – for a time or forever.
The relevant chapters of the above key subjects (in italics) are in the Index.

Q: What exactly is *irredeemable* in the eyes of a Christian?
Q: Infidelity, murder, rape?.

A: It is written,

... to him that is joined to all the living there is Hope:
for a living dog is better than a dead lion. (Ecclesiastes 9:4)

... All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men:
but the blasphemy against the Holy Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men.
And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of Man, it shall be forgiven him:
but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him,
neither in this World, neither in the World to come. (Matthew 12:31-32)

I acknowledged my sin unto Thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid.
I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD ;
and Thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah. (Psalms 32:5)

Even so, while living this GOD-given Life in the natural, we have *Hope* for Salvation & Life Eternal.
The sin of *blasphemy* against the LORD, His Holy Spirit, and His Holy Word (the latter being written or spoken) cannot be forgiven. Note well *Mark 3:28-30*. It is hard to turn back to Father GOD when, due to the blasphemy, His Protection is removed and the evil one gets his hold on the sinner. Kindly note chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).
However, Sincere *Confession* to the LORD, our GOD, is able to spiritually cleanse those who answer His Call and begins walking the way of a Prodigal Son (*Luke 15:20*). Kindly see the Index for the relevant "Q & A" chapters.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

Q: Why did God make toxic and ordinary berries and mushrooms look alike?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: He did not. It is written,

And GOD saw every thing that He had made,
and, behold, it was Very Good. (Genesis 1:31)

We, humans, did all abnormalities in His Creation.
You may see chapters 312 (Our spiritual Authority)
& 313 (The Irrevocable Authority), dealing with our Power over the Earth.

743

Q: What does it mean to *receive the Grace of God in vain*?.
I am studying *2Corinthians Chapter 6* and wondering what it practically means *to take the Grace of God in vain*. Thanks for your insight.

A: Let us consider the Scripture.

1 We then, as Workers together with Him, beseech you also that ye receive not the Grace of GOD in vain. 2 (For He saith, I have heard thee in a Time Accepted, and in the Day of Salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now is the Accepted Time; behold, now is the Day of Salvation.)
(2Corinthians 6:1-2)

In my opinion, to receive anything in vain means to take it lightly, ignore, scorn, reject, forget, not follow, and so forth.
As we put it in chapter 192, *Grace ... is not some blind forgiving of whatever we do. Nay. It is GOD-given undeserved Mercy manifested in the Blessing of Power unto Obedience unto Righteousness & Holiness, to stay Christians, no matter what.* So, the Grace of GOD is too serious to be ignored and made vain.
The second Verse of the above Scripture makes the stress on grasping Grace *now*, without any procrastination.
Thanks for the question. Please find the references in the Index.

Q: What is your opinion on *Mark 16:9-20*?

A: Please open your Bible on that Scripture.

Verses 9–14. Jesus appeared to His Disciples. Those who didn't personally witness (Not only Brother Thomas!) didn't believe. See chapter 133.
These Scriptures teach us to see *Faith* from *Knowledge*. See chapter 52.
Verse 14. (Our) unbelief is rebuked by Father GOD. Note Baptism in the Holy Spirit. See relevant chapter 65.
Verses 15–16. It is our Great Commission (the *Twelfth Commandment*). Unbelief is condemned. See the Index section for the relevant chapters.
Verses 17–18. The Proof of the Truth of GOD was Promised.
Verse 19. It is well confirmed in *1Corinthians 15:6*. Note that Proof well.
Verse 20. Note the sequence: Preaching the Truth comes first, confirmation by the Signs (to Believers) second. Remember, it is the Lord Who does the Work and, so, is Worthy to receive all Glory. We are to be His Good Instruments. Amen.

Q: How do we reconcile *Matthew 10:34* and *Matthew 5:9*?.
On the one hand, the Son of God is saying, “I will bring division because of My Coming.” On the other, He is saying that people who make Peace are to be called the Sons of God.
Q: Are we to expect division among us, as *Jesus says*, or should we be Peacemaking in our midst, as *Jesus expects*?
Q: Which state is preferable, and how does one not cancel out the other?

A: Sorry for replacing your quotation with mine.
I prefer the *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*.
So,

Think not that I am come to send peace on Earth:
I came not to send peace, but a Sword. (Matthew 10:34)

Blessed are the Peacemakers:
for they shall be called the Children of GOD. (Matthew 5:9)

Like it is often recommended in this “Q & A”, let us begin with the definitions.
The Peace of GOD is seen from the peace of the heathen (unbelieving) world in chapters shown in the Index for “GOD’s Peace” and “Peace”, respectively.
Long story short, the *Peace of GOD* is not just an absence of war, as the atheists see their *peace*. The (spiritual) first is the only ground for the (natural) second.
And, by His (Eleventh) *Commandment**, our Lord Jesus did not and does not preach or tolerate any division (*denominationalism**) in the Church of GOD.
* See the Index section for the relevant “Q & A” chapters.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020. Edited.)

Q: (1) In what areas do you think the Church today is failing?
Q: (2) How can we do better?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

A: (1) It is hard for me to speak about all the Body of Christ.
But seeing manifold of (Satan-inspired) denominations, I think it is wrong.
(2) We all can be better off by following the Eleventh Commandment.
Please see the Index for “Unity of Saints” and “Denominationalism”.

For by One Spirit are we all baptized into One Body,
whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free;
and have been all made to drink into One Spirit. (1Corinthians 12:13)

744

Q: How are we to treat the homeless?.
I live in California, in a city where the homeless population is huge. My reading of the Bible and attendance of a Church, unfortunately, have been so scant in recent years. So, I'm only able to draw upon my distant memory as far as what the Testaments say about helping the poor.
I know giving Alms and helping a fellow man out of the Goodness of one's heart (and not for any personal gain) are, probably, things we can all agree with as *Christ-like*. Being Kind, too, is important. So, I volunteer about 10 hours a week down at the local shelter, and I feel good about it.
However, there are many homeless in my immediate area and, oftentimes, they approach me humbly and ask for things, say, *cigarettes* or *a dollar*. I am always wary and, saying, "I don't have anything", keep walking.

Q: Pragmatically, maybe, this is the smartest choice, but is it *Christ-like*?
I stay clear of gatherings of the homeless out on the street mostly to avoid these types of questions or anything. I also *fear* that doing this for the locals near me will prompt them to ask me again and again if I make a known habit of it. But it is also a little disconcerting.

Q: I do volunteering, but doesn't God teach us to be good to the needy in *all* areas of life?

Q: Shouldn't the better thing be done to *temporarily ease the suffering* of these folks?

Q: Why should I allow my *discomfort* and *fear* to get in the way of helping people who are harmless to me?
It is not like I cannot defend myself in an altercation should one arise.
I'm not poor – the Navy pays me well enough. I feel as though *I have enough to give*.

Q: So, what is the Biblical answer to this?

Q: What is enough?

Q: What is considered "fair-weather Christianity"?

A: I thank you for your letter & questions.
Let me answer all the questions and your words I highlighted in italics.

In chapter 56, I wrote about Giving. I believe our Tithing should go to (and be checked out for correct using in) our Local Christian Church or Ministry, whatever we find most Trustworthy & Fruitful.
Your Volunteering job is a good Offering of your time & efforts to add to the above. *Malachi 3:8-11*.
Now, about beggars.

At the end of the nineties, I was in Rotterdam. There, I ran into many young able men (never elders and women) begging around. Passing an unemployment office, I dropped in and asked what I could do to help those mendicants and was told *not to give money.* Those offices had more than ten programs to help & employ, offer free shelters, food, clothes, and even light drugs.
The money thus begged would be used for drugs only.
The same picture I saw in London, read in the books* and watched in the movies* referred to below.
Cannot say anything about your whereabouts since I've never been to the Western coasts of the USA. You might get useful information from the local Officials and Charitable Ministries.
You say: *I have enough to give*. What about this: *I give, and therefore, I have enough*? What I advise as to *what else can be done* to the poor folks is Prayer. Please, don't underestimate it.
I wish you to have Christian Friends with the same attitude as yours.
Kindly note *1Corinthians 15:33*.
Now, regarding "fair-weather Christianity". Since I have never heard of that stuff, I had to check it out on the Internet. Tell you what, once – Praise GOD! – your heart is open to Good that term has nothing to do with you.
Thanks again for what you are doing. May the LORD bless you.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, January 2020.)

Cross-references: chapters 56 (Giving), 112 The Lord's Prayer – Intercession), 296 (Poverty).

You may visit the Index section for more.

Be not deceived; GOD is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that soweth to his flesh shall of the flesh reap corruption; but he that soweth to the Spirit shall of the Spirit reap Life Everlasting. And let us not be weary in Well doing: for in Due season we shall reap, if we faint not. (Galatians 6:7-9)

Relevant books: * *James Bowen, A Street Cat Named Bob*
A Gift From Bob

Relevant movies: *The Perfect Gift*
Clancy
Pay It Forward
Do You Believe?
* *A Street Cat Named Bob*

745

Q: I have a good friend, Christian, who goes to the Church where they believe that Christians can be possessed by demons. I've asked him some details regarding the exorcisms the Pastor of his Church performs on the Members thereof. The details of the exorcisms seem to be relatively innocuous as well as the suspicions (such as coughing) which have *no* relation to demonic possessions. To me, this seems to be confirmed bias. A large majority of Orthodox Christians believe that you cannot be possessed, which *seems* to be correct. The belief on the contrary is very much in minority.
So, do you believe that Christians can be possessed by demons? Thanks!
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020. Edited.)

A: Starting from definitions, let us see a *Christian* as a True Follower of Christ. Can such be *possessed* (to mean, held in possession, commanded) by an evil spirit (demon)? Hardly. Therefore, "possessed" is not the right word.

Now & again, we can be harmed by some *physical* infirmities, sicknesses, bad emotions, etc., no more than that.
As for "exorcisms" – casting our demons – whatever way it might be called & done, we should see the results thereof. Giving Glory to GOD is most needful.
Kindly note that such Christian Works as Healing Ministry, Preaching the Word of GOD, Prayer, Confession, &c., might have the same Healing achievements.
Thanks for the question. Please visit our Index section for references.

Relevant reading: *Danelle Ice, Dangerous But Good: A no-nonsense Guide to casting out demons & evil spirits*

Q: (1) Why do exorcised unclean spirits travel through "waterless" places, and
Q: (2) what kind of "rest" are they looking for there?

When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest, and findeth none. Then he saith, I will return into my house from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits more wicked than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first. Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation. (Matthew 12:43-45)

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020.)

A: In this “Q & A”, we considered the above Scripture in chapters 39 (The War outlined) & 87 (Discipline in the Church). Kindly look it up.
In this context, the “exorcised” or *cast-out* unclean spirits (demons) find themselves in the “waterless” or “dry” spiritual area. It means *out of action*.
The “rest” looked for is their corrupted peace of mind and with Satan, their evil leader. And, as it is written, *findeth none,* since the latter means failure, losing a battle, being overcome – the things the evil one does not accept.

Q: What is the right response to unbelievers as for “Biblical contradictions”?.
Q: The example: “God is supposed to be All-Loving, but in the Bible, He kills innocent people and genocides the entire Earth.” (?) *
Q: “How can a Loving God be so evil?” *
Q: “The Nature of God and the Biblical stories contradict one another.” (?) *
Q: Their stupid attitude against God is evident. How should we respond?
Q: Or is it better not to respond at all?

(Signed: *Christian, Protestant*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, July 2020.)

A: It is written:

I said, I will take heed to my ways,
that I sin not with my tongue: I will keep my mouth with a bridle,
while the wicked is before me. I was dumb with silence, I held my Peace,
even from Good; and my sorrow was stirred. (Psalms 39:1-2)

Give not that which is Holy unto the dogs,
neither cast ye your Pearls before swine, lest they trample them
under their feet, and turn again and rend you. (Matthew 7:6)

So, always listen to the Holy Spirit of GOD, especially encountering atheism.
If He is silent, be silent too, to avoid the *blasphemy* of unbelievers.
My attempts to answer those characters you may read in many chapters subtitled “*The unbelievers ask.*”
When you find yourself in a *polite* discussion (which is rare), ask your opponents to be specific regarding those “contradictions”, and listen to the Holy Ghost for *His* Answers.
Kindly have a look at all chapters titled “Contradictions” and visit the Index section for “GOD” and other relevant subjects.
* You may see chapter 26 (Killing Canaanites) as one example to answer and chapter 64 (GOD’s Punishment) for another.

746

Q: (1) I was recently rededicated to the Faith and am thinking on Jesus' Saying – "lay up for yourselves Treasures in Heaven".
What do you think is meant by it?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020.)

A: The Bible says,

Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon Earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: but lay up for yourselves Treasures in Heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: for where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. (Matthew 6:19-21)

I believe in this part of His Sermon on the Mount, the Lord teaches us about sorting out our priorities. Some mistakenly take it as, "the more good things we do in this life, the more we are going to get in Heaven". But that is not true. Such thinking presumes some "scales" on which all *our Good Works** should overweigh our evil deeds. That contradicts the Spirit of the Word of GOD. For in the last Words of this Scripture is all the Lesson we are supposed to learn. To *lay up for yourselves Treasures in Heaven* means to see Eternal Life in the Kingdom of GOD as the only Treasure & Purpose of this Life on Earth.
(* Strictly speaking, it is *the Works of the Holy Ghost* done through us.)

See chapters 15 (GOD First) & 591 (Our priorities).

Q: (2) Why did God regret the Creation of us if He is All-Knowing?

And it repented the LORD that He had made Man on the Earth, and it grieved Him at His Heart. (Genesis 6:6)

A: Please find our conversation in chapter 330 (GOD & Creation).
GOD is Love. Seeing the *eternal death* of His Children is painful to Him.

Q: (3) Knowing that we *would* sin and turn evil, how could He be regretful?

A: To my previous answer, I ask you to note those many parents who presently (let alone for Eternity) wished for another way of living for their children.

Q: (4) And why would He create all those people if He knew He was going to wipe them out anyway?

A: In my opinion, the LORD, our GOD, does not wipe away anybody. The sinners do it themselves. Please see chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).

Q: (5) Who or what is the *Us* God referred to?

> *And the LORD GOD said, Behold, the man is become as one of Us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the Tree of Life, and eat, and live for ever. (Genesis 3:22)*

A: The Triune LORD GOD is. See chapter 459 (The Holy Trinity of GOD). You may refer to the Index regarding "GOD's Sarcasm".

Q: (6) Why was Cain's gift to God not good enough?

A: GOD explained that to him in *Genesis 4:6-7*. The man was dishonest. See our second conversation in chapter 123 (What if?).

Q: (7) Why is a live Sacrifice better than what Cain offered to God?

A: Meaning *Genesis 4:3-4* "a live Sacrifice" was in no way better. The Faithful Giving was. See again *Genesis 4:6-7*.

Q: (8) Isn't the intention what matters and not the gift?

A: That's correct. Speaking in general, and not only about *Genesis 4:1-8*, our intentions stem from the respective attitudes of our hearts.

Q: (9) Why would God care about that anyway – both gifts are completely insignificant in God's Greatness – so, how is the symbolic meaning any different? *Hebrews 10:1,4-8,10-12,14.*

A: Like I answered the previous question, the attitude of a human heart is what matters to our Father GOD. Please see chapter 56 (The Test of Giving). As for your referring to *Chapter10 of Hebrews*, it is not applicable (but *Verse 4*) in the case of those first folks. The Obedience to GOD is.

Thank you for your questions.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

747

Q: (1) What's the significance of the *threshing* floor (threshold) in the Scripture?. *1Samuel 5:5 (New King James Version)* says,

Therefore neither the priests of Dagon nor any who come into Dagon's house tread on the threshold of Dagon in Ashdod to this day.

In my Bible reference, this passage is linked with *Zephaniah 1:9* that says,

In the same day I will punish all those who leap over the threshold, who fill their masters' houses with violence and deceit.

Q: (2) Is the *threshold* the same thing as the threshing floor?
Q: (3) What's the significance of these things in the Scripture?
I know it comes up multiple times. It seems to be a metaphor for something or pointing to some theological significance.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020. Edited.)

A: Webster's Dictionary (2001) defines a *threshold* as,

1. the sill of a doorway.
2. the entrance to a house or building.
3. any place or point of entering or beginning ...

The third of the above definition is the best answer to your question(s). Because every way of sin has its first step or beginning. *Zephaniah 1:9* is a good Parallel. It speaks about overstepping the border between Light and darkness. Kindly read *Genesis 1:4*. You may also refer to "Compromise" & "Sin" in our Index section.

And GOD saw the Light that it was Good: and GOD divided the Light from the darkness. ... And the LORD GOD called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? (Genesis 1:4 & 3:9)

... For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping, that they are enemies of the Cross of Christ ... who mind earthly things ... (Philippians 3:18-19)

748

Q: Here's a pair of Verses that are completely incompatible:

And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of Man,
it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth
against the Holy Ghost it shall not be forgiven. (Luke 12:10)

For whosoever shall call upon the Name of the Lord shall be saved.
(Romans 10:13)

A: The first Verse condemns blasphemy. The example of the latter is your site –

https://thoughtcatalog.com/jim-goad/2014/05/30
-pairs-of-bible-verses-that-contradict-one-another/.

The second Verse presumes Confession and a steady Way GOD-ward. No contradiction. The error is in the eye of the beholder.

Q: If Adam and Eve were the original humans, how did the World populate itself without incest?

A: That thing became *incest* when the LORD called it so. See chapter 339.

Q: God changes His Mind? In *Leviticus*, God lays down Laws and calls them "Everlasting". Then in the New Testament, we hear this –

For if that first Covenant had been faultless,
then should no place have been sought for the second. (Hebrews 8:7)

A: The Old & New Covenant is One Everlasting Word of GOD. No changes. See *Malachi 3:6*. However, in the *New Testament*, we are blessed with an Ultimate Substitutional Sacrifice of Christ. That discontinues Animal Sacrifices as per the first Covenant. And it gives us, *who* made the above-mentioned faults, the better Promises. No contradiction. See chapters 16-18.

Q: For your edification & enlightenment, here are 30 more pairs of the Bible Verses that contradict one another.

A: GOD willing, may it be for your education & learning too.

Q: (1) *Thou shalt not kill. (Exodus 20:13)*

Thus saith the LORD GOD of Israel, Put every man his sword by his side, and go in and out from gate to gate throughout the camp, and slay every man his brother, and every man his companion, and every man his neighbour. (Exodus 32:27)

A: *Exodus 20:13* is the Sixth Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD. *Exodus 32:27* was the Verdict of the LORD against those who'd broken the First Commandment. The death penalty has never been abolished by our Father GOD. See chapter 95 (Capital punishment). No contradiction.

Q: (2) *The first Angel sounded, and there followed hail and fire mingled with blood, and they were cast upon the Earth: and the third part of trees was burnt up, and all green grass was burnt up. (Revelation 8:7)*

And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the Earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the Seal of GOD in their foreheads. (Revelation 9:4)

A: The first Scripture is a matter of fact. The second is Command. Discrepant?

Q: (3) *Lying lips are abomination to the LORD:*
but they that deal Truly are His Delight. (Proverbs 12:22)

... the LORD hath put a lying spirit in the mouth of all these thy prophets, and the LORD hath spoken evil concerning thee. (1Kings 22:23)

A: The first Scripture presents GOD's Teaching. The second is His Punishment. Read "Q & A" chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment). I see no contradiction here.

Q: (4) *And in the fifth month, on the seventh day of the month, which is the nineteenth year of King Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, came Nebuzar-adan, Captain of the guard, a servant of the King of Babylon, unto Jerusalem ... (2Kings 25:8)*

Now in the fifth month, in the tenth day of the month, which was the nineteenth year of Nebuchadrezzar King of Babylon, came Nebuzar-adan, Captain of the guard, which served the King of Babylon, into Jerusalem ... (Jeremiah 52:12)

A: By the Expanded Bible, it is *August 14, 586 BC* & *August 17, 586 BC*. So what? The 3-days discrepancy in the ancient accounts & translations? Horrible. Why not consider what immediately follows those details?

Q: (5) *For by Grace are ye saved through Faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the Gift of GOD: not of works, lest any man should boast.*
(Ephesians 2:8,9)

Ye see then how that by Works a man is justified, and not by Faith only.
(James 2:24)

A: The first Verse speaks of Salvation by the *Grace* of GOD, not the works of a man. The second teaches that Faith should be proved by the Works of GOD done through us. It's not a contradiction. *2Corinthians 4:3-4* is just for you.

Q: (6) *Jehoiachin was eighteen years old when he began to reign, and he reigned in Jerusalem three months ... (2Kings 24:8)*

Jehoiachin was eight years old when he began to reign, and he reigned three months and ten days in Jerusalem ... (2Chronicles 36:9)

A: Here, I can see the same strange approach to the Bible as in your question 4. The details are scrutinized but, regretfully, not the evil described.
No comment.

Q: (7) *Moreover of the children of the strangers that do sojourn among you, of them shall ye buy, and of their families that are with you, which they begat in your land: and they shall be your possession. And ye shall take them as an inheritance for your children after you, to inherit them for a possession; they shall be your bondmen for ever: but over your Brethren the Children of Israel, ye shall not rule one over another with rigour. (Leviticus 25:45-46)*

Is not this the Fast that I have chosen? To loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? (Isaiah 58:6)

A: *Leviticus 25:45-46* rules the ancient relationship. Folks of strange beliefs come to sojourn. They were free to sell themselves, not get enslaved. GOD's People commanded to be Brotherhood. *Isaiah 58:6* calls to Freedom, the spiritual one first. There cannot be a contradiction in such different subjects.

Q: (8) *For I am the LORD, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed. (Malachi 3:6)*

And the LORD repented of the evil which He thought to do unto His People. (Exodus 32:14)

A: Both Scriptures are in Perfect Harmony. The LORD, our GOD, is Love. In *Exodus 32:14*, He answered the Prayer of Moses, His Servant. But Who inspired the Prayer? No contradiction.

Q: (9) *Thou shalt have no other gods before Me. Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in Heaven above, or that is in the Earth beneath, or that is in the water under the Earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I, the LORD thy GOD, am a Jealous GOD, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate Me; and shewing Mercy unto thousands of them that love Me, and keep My Commandments. (Exodus 20:3-6)*

The LORD is Good to all: and His tender Mercies are over all His Works. (Psalms 145:9)

A: I had to amend your quoting *Exodus 20:3-6* (cut short as you did other Scriptures) – the Second Commandment of the Law of GOD. *Verses 5-6* are His Perfect Justice. The same, along with the LORD's Love, is written down in *Psalms 145:9*. Only the ignorant might see a contradiction here.

Q: (10) *No man hath seen GOD at any time; the only Begotten Son, which is in the Bosom of the Father, He hath declared Him. (John 1:18)*

And Jacob called the name of the place Peniel: for I have seen GOD face to Face, and my Life is preserved. (Genesis 32:30)

A: The first Scripture is a True Statement of fact. The second one is a metaphor written per the words of Jacob, who met the *Angel* of the LORD. Holy Angels do GOD's Will and thus represent Him. What, a contradiction again?

(From *https://thoughtcatalog.com/jim-goad/2014/05/30-pairs-of-bible-verses-that-contradict-one-another/* February 2020. Condensed. Blasphemy is cut off. *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* quoted.)

749

The following is the follow-up to chapter 748.

Q: (11) *1 Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are Spiritual, restore such an one in the Spirit of Meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted. 2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfil the Law of Christ. 3 For if a man think himself to be something, when he is nothing, he deceiveth imself. 4 But let every man prove his own Work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another. 5 For every man shall bear his own burden. (Galatians, Chapter 6)*

A: So, you have difficulty comparing *Verses 2 & 5*. *Verse 2* teaches us on Christian Love & Unity. *Verse 5* reminds us of personal Responsibility. The contradiction is in your reasoning, not the Written Word of GOD.

Q: (12) *For all have sinned, and come short of the Glory of GOD.*
(Romans 3:23)

There was a man in the land of Uz, whose name was Job; and that man was Perfect and Upright, and one that feared GOD, and eschewed evil.
(Job 1:1)

A: Per *Romans 3:23*, all humans inherited sinfulness, passing the latter from one generation to another. However, the (*Perfect & Upright*) example of Job (and so many others) makes it clear that we *can* (do our best) to fear our LORD GOD and *eschew* every evil sticking to us now & again. Your seeing "contradictions" where there are none is well explained in *John 8:43-45*.

Q: (13) *Two and twenty years old was Ahaziah when he began to reign; and he reigned one year in Jerusalem ... (2Kings 8:26)*

Forty and two years old was Ahaziah when he began to reign, and he reigned one year in Jerusalem ... (2Chronicles 22:2)

A: See your "contradictions" explained in questions 4 & 6, chapter 748. The evil exposed is ignored by you again, and thus the Teaching is lost. And kindly see how you, critic, quoted the Holy Bible in your question 11, even how it is posted on your site, not the corrected way in our "Q & A". You better direct your criticism on your "educated" self.

Q: (14) *Submit yourselves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's sake: whether it be to the King, as supreme; or unto Governors, as unto them that are sent by Him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. (1Peter 2:13-14)*

... Did not we straitly command you that ye should not teach in this name? and, behold, ye have filled Jerusalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's blood upon us. Then Peter and the other Apostles answered and said, We ought to obey GOD rather than men. (Acts 5:28-29)

A: It is written,

... fear thou the LORD and the King ... (Proverbs 24:21)

The LORD, our Father, is first. Human authorities, their laws, regulations, &c., are to be obeyed until they get into opposition with the Holy Law of GOD, in which case only He makes those laws, orders, &c. null & void.
Thus, there is no contradiction between *1Peter 2:13-14* & *Acts 5:28-29*.

Q: (15) *And when the Sabbath was past, Mary Magdalene, and Mary the mother of James, and Salome, had bought sweet spices, that they might come and anoint Him. And very early in the morning the first day of the week, they came unto the sepulchre at the rising of the Sun. (Mark 16:1-2)*

The first day of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the sepulchre, and seeth the stone taken away from the sepulchre. Then she runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other Disciple, whom Jesus loved, and saith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the sepulchre, and we know not where they have laid Him. (John 20:1)

A: Probably, you see a contradiction in the above two accounts here: *Mary Magdalene* was among the other Believers in the first but not in the second. Suchlike "discrepancies" are discussed in a good movie *GOD's Not Dead 2*.
The differences between (rather than uniformity of) the Testimonies better contribute to their credibility.
Taking enough pain, you could connect these Accounts into one passable story, say, *Mary Magdalene* took a trip to the *sepulchre* twice.
However, I don't want to encourage anybody to "defend" the Holy Scriptures. Who are we?

There is no wisdom nor understanding
nor counsel against the LORD. (Proverbs 21:30)

Q: (16) *And it was the third hour, and they crucified Him. (Mark 15:25)*

And it was the preparation of the Passover, and about the sixth hour: and he saith unto the Jews, Behold your King! But they cried out, Away with him, away with him, crucify him. Pilate saith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? The Chief Priests answered, We have no King but Cæsar. Then delivered he Him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jesus, and led Him away. (John 19:14-16)

A: I can answer you the same way as to your question 15. Here you can see the different Testimonies. The details which caused your foolish concern are miserable compared to the Account behind them. No comment.

Q: (17) *... as by one man sin entered into the World, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned ... (Romans 5:12)*

Verily, Verily, I say unto you, If a man keep My Saying, he shall never see death. (John 8:51)

A: *Physical* (natural) death is spoken about in the first Scripture, and the second (*eternal*) death in the second one. I see no contradiction here.
John 8:51 is well worthy of all your attention. If you please.

Q: (18) *Every moving thing that liveth shall be meat for you; even as the green herb have I given you all things. But flesh with the life thereof, which is the blood thereof, shall ye not eat. (Genesis 9:3-4)*

For meat destroy not the Work of GOD. All things indeed are pure; but it is evil for that man who eateth with offence. It is good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor any thing whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak. (Romans 14:20-21)

A: In this context, as a “contradiction-seeker”, you could have taken a look at (and quote) *Genesis 1:29-30*. Yet, to no avail too. For *sin* had changed us, humans, created by our Father GOD.
So, *Genesis 9:3-4* was given to people degraded by sin.
Romans 14:20-21 (as well as a whole *Chapter 14* of that Epistle) teaches us about our (natural) food as a secondary thing, to be accepted with Thanksgiving, and not to be a subject of unnecessary quarrel.
Therefore, there is no contradiction here at all.

Q: (19) *Then said Pilate unto Him, Hearest thou not how many things they witness against thee? And He answered him to never a word; insomuch that the Governor marvelled greatly. (Matthew 27:13-14)*

Then Pilate entered into the Judgment hall again, and called Jesus, and said unto Him, Art thou the King of the Jews? Jesus answered him, Sayest thou this thing of thyself, or did others tell it thee of Me? (John 18:33-34)

A: Far as I understand, the question is: did Lord Jesus answer Pilate or not? Yes, He did, according to the above-quoted Accounts of *John 18:33-34* and *Matthew 27:11*. Brother Matthew wrote down only what he heard of the Holy Ghost. The LORD, our GOD, might shorten that Account.
So, no contradiction.

Q: (20) *... he cast two pillars of brass, of eighteen cubits high apiece: and a line of twelve cubits did compass either of them about. (1Kings 7:15)*

... he made before the House two pillars of thirty and five cubits high, and the chapiter that was on the top of each of them was five cubits.
(2Chronicles 3:15)

A: So, what? Praise GOD for those ancient Accounts that have got to us at all. In the Bible, seek Wisdom to learn, rather than absent "contradictions".

Q: (21) *4 Answer not a fool according to his folly, lest thou also be like unto him. 5 Answer a fool according to his folly, lest he be wise in his own conceit. (Proverbs 26)*

A: By *Verse 4*, we should not answer a fool resembling such a character.
By *Verse 5*, our answer ought to be either silence per *Psalms 39:1-2*, or else – obeying the unction of the Holy Ghost – exposing that folly up.
A good example is this discussion with the unbeliever(s).

I held my Peace, even from Good; and my sorrow was stirred. (Psalms 39:2)

There is no contradiction again.

(https://thoughtcatalog.com/jim-goad/2014/05/30-pairs-of-bible-verses-that-contradict-one-another/ February 2020. *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* quoted.)

750

The following is the follow-up to chapters 748 & 749.

Q: (22) *Let your Light so shine before men, that they may see your Good Works, and glorify your Father which is in Heaven. (Matthew 5:16)*

Take heed that ye do not your Alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no Reward of your Father which is in Heaven.
(Matthew 6:1)

A: Following *Matthew 5:16*, Christians (as GOD's Instruments) should do His Works, so that all people best see GOD in the Works and give Him Glory. *Matthew 6:1* teaches us the good way of Charity, i.e., to be seen by as few persons as possible. Thus we keep the evil of pride off. A contradiction?

Q: (23) *Then Judas, which had betrayed Him, when he saw that he was condemned, repented himself, and brought again the thirty pieces of silver to the Chief Priests and Elders, saying, I have sinned in that I have betrayed the innocent blood. And they said, What is that to us? See thou to that. And he cast down the pieces of silver in the Temple, and departed, and went and hanged himself. And the Chief Priests took the silver pieces, and said, It is not lawful for to put them into the Treasury, because it is the price of blood. And they took counsel, and bought with them the potter's field, to bury strangers in. (Matthew 27:3-7)*

Now this man [Judas Iscariot] *purchased a field with the reward of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out. (Acts 1:18)*

A: It seems to me that *Matthew 27:3-7* is a Trustworthy account of the events. *Acts 1:18* does not much vary therefrom, since "*purchased*" might presume a deed on behalf of Judas. His death happened by suicide (*hanged himself*). The falling of his dead body could well have taken place thereafter. My point here is the same as the answer to your question 15. Kindly see it. So, hardly is there a "contradiction" in the Word, rather your spiritual blindness. And how could it be otherwise?

... the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, Who is the Image of GOD, should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:4)

Q: (24) *Think not that I am come to send peace on Earth:*
I came not to send peace, but a Sword. (Matthew 10:34)

These things I have spoken unto you, that in Me ye might have Peace.
In the World ye shall have tribulation: but be of Good Cheer;
I have overcome the World. (John 16:33)

A: To see a "contradiction" here means only total ignorance of spiritual things. In *Matthew 10:34*, the word "peace" *naturally* means the absence of such things as war, persecution, and other social unrest. The "Sword" has its *spiritual* denotation, i.e., the fight for Good against evil. The New Power – the Church of LORD GOD – was about to take her part in the Spirit War. In *John 16:33*, Peace is spiritual, which does not depend on any evil deeds.

Q: (25) *And of every living thing of all flesh, two of every sort shalt thou bring into the ark, to keep them alive with thee; they shall be male and female. Of fowls after their kind, and of cattle after their kind, of every creeping thing of the Earth after his kind, two of every sort shall come unto thee, to keep them alive. (Genesis 6:19-20)*

Of every clean beast thou shalt take to thee by sevens, the male and his female: and of beasts that are not clean by two, the male and his female. Of fowls also of the air by sevens, the male and the female; to keep seed alive upon the face of all the Earth. (Genesis 7:2-3)

A: In your rage against our Bible, you stumbled on the different wording: "two" in the first Scripture and "seven" in the second. But that is explained by *Genesis 7:2* (the second Scripture clarifying the first). Please, try other translations on <*https://www.biblegateway.co*m>. It helps (if one looks for the Truth). So, (Satan through) you missed the mark again.

Q: (26) *And after six days Jesus taketh Peter, James, and John his brother, and bringeth them up into an high mountain apart, and was transfigured before them: and His face did shine as the Sun, and His raiment was white as the light ... (Matthew 17:1-2)*

And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, He took Peter and John and James, and went up into a mountain to pray. And as He prayed, the fashion of His countenance was altered, and His raiment was white and glistering. (Luke 9:28-29)

A: The seeming “discrepancy” here is “*six days*” & “*eight days*” in the first & the second Scriptures, respectively. I can explain that no other way but by the answer to your question 15, chapter 749. Brothers Matthew & Luke wrote their Testimonies much later than the events described. The Holy Spirit could omit the trifle details but reminded them of the things of Value.

Q: (27) *Then said Jesus unto him, Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword. (Matthew 26:52)*

Then said He unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take it, and likewise his scrip: and he that hath no Sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one. (Luke 22:36)

A: It is the same incompetence you showed in your question 24. Hi again. Because *Matthew 26:52* is all about a *natural* weapon, whereas *Luke 22:36* means the Sword of the Spirit. You are welcome to *Ephesians 6:17*.
And kindly read the words of Confucius in the second part of chapter 401.

Q: (28) *Therefore Michal the daughter of Saul had no child unto the day of her death. (2Samuel 6:23)*

But the King took ... the five sons of Michal the daughter of Saul, whom she brought up for Adriel the son of Barzillai the Meholathite ... (2Samuel 21:8)

A: Once it is written, “*whom she brought up*”, it does not strictly mean her *physical* children but fostered. Is it clear?

Q: (29) *... our Lord Jesus Christ ... Who is the Blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords; Who only hath Immortality, dwelling in the Light which no man can approach unto; Whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to Whom be Honour and Power Everlasting. Amen.*
(1Timothy 6:14-16)

The LORD reigneth; let the Earth rejoice; let the multitude of isles be glad thereof. Clouds and Darkness are round about Him: Righteousness and Judgment are the Habitation of His Throne. (Psalms 97:1-2)

A: In these Scriptures, you “see” a contradiction between *Light* in the first and *Darkness* in the second. Both terms have their *spiritual* meaning denoting Wisdom & Incomprehensibility, respectively. There is no “discrepancy” with our LORD GOD. And the less you point your finger at Him, the better.

Q: (30) *Rejoice not when thine enemy falleth, and let not thine heart be glad when he stumbleth: lest the LORD see it, and it displease Him, and He turn away His Wrath from him. (Proverbs 24:17-18)*

The Righteous shall rejoice when he seeth the Vengeance: he shall wash his feet in the blood of the wicked. So that a man shall say, Verily there is a Reward for the Righteous: Verily He is a GOD that judgeth in the Earth. (Psalms 58:10-11)

Here (and not the first time), I noticed your inaccurate quotations, which I had to correct. So, your bewilderment is, "*Rejoice not when thine enemy falleth ...*" and "*The Righteous shall rejoice when he seeth the Vengeance: he shall wash his feet in the blood of the wicked ...*"
Both Scriptures – *Proverbs 24:17-18 & Psalms 58:10-11* – are about the Perfect Justice of GOD. You may take a look at "Q & A" chapters 320 & 697.
Considering *Ecclesiastes 9:4,* the first Scripture – *Proverbs 24:17-18* – prohibits Believers rejoice at the falls of heathen *humans*. And, by the second one – *Psalms 58:10-11* – we rejoice when the *Justice* of our LORD GOD comes.
Here, I don't see a "contradiction" other than betwixt what is written and what *you* read.

(https://thoughtcatalog.com/jim-goad/2014/05/30-pairs-of-bible-verses-that-contradict-one-another/, February 2020. *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* quoted.)

The conclusion:

But if our Gospel be hid, it is hid to them that are lost: in whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the Light of the Glorious Gospel of Christ, Who is the Image of GOD, should shine unto them. (2Corinthians 4:3-4)

Q: No fear in Perfect Love?
Q: If there is no fear in Perfect Love, how can we love God Perfectly?
Q: If we should fear God, how can we love Him Perfectly?

(Signed: *Christian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Friend, in chapter 144, please see the definition of unknown to you *Fear of GOD*, and chapter 172 deals with the evil o' *fear* you are more familiar with. *1Corinthians Chapter 13* rejects the second, but not the first. Thank you.

751

Q: My questions are about the *Book of Revelation*.
How does this all fit together?

But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death. (Revelation 21:8)

And the City had no need of the Sun, neither of the Moon, to shine in it: for the Glory of GOD did lighten it, and the Lamb is the Light thereof. And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the Light of it: and the Kings of the Earth do bring their Glory and Honour into it. (Revelation 21:23-24)

Blessed are they that do His Commandments, that they may have Right to the Tree of Life, and may enter in through the Gates into the City.
... without are dogs, and sorcerers, and whoremongers, and murderers, and idolaters, and whosoever loveth and maketh a lie. (Revelation 22:14-15)

Q: (1) *Revelation 21:23-24.* Is there Remnant of God's Children in the nations of the Earth that are spared & saved, yet do not dwell in the New Jerusalem?
Q: (2) Are they free to go in and out of the City?
Q: (3) *Revelation 22:14-15* seem to indicate that there are still sinners on the New Earth that are outside of the New Jerusalem, while the *Revelation 21:8* seems to indicate sinners are consigned to the lake of fire, which is the second death (annihilation). Why so?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020. Condensed.
Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition quoted.)

A: *Revelation 21:8* metaphorically describes the eternal death. See chapter 8.
Revelation 21:23-24 metaphorically describes the Life Eternal. Chapter 153.
Revelation 22:14-15 strictly divides the above two in Eternity. Chapter 573.

Thus, it does fit together in Perfect Harmony of the Perfect Justice of GOD. Will the Kingdom of Heaven consist of New Earth only, and whether the latter be more than New Jerusalem, hardly anybody can answer for sure now. You are welcome to our Index section to find more of the subjects of Life, Death, Salvation, etc. Thank you for your diligent Study. Godspeed.

Q: Why didn't God talk about more things in the Bible?

A: I believe the Holy Bible covers *all* the subjects which are needful for our Knowledge, Understanding, and Wisdom. See chapter 58 (K & U & W). And whatever "more things" are profitable to us, we can always ask our Father GOD per *Jeremiah 33:3*.

Q: Why doesn't the Bible talk about the "theory of evolution", warning future people to not believe in it?
Q: Or the "big bang", or the "ice age", or future false religions, or dinosaurs, or how old our Earth is?

A: Please see the Index section for *Big Bang*, *Dinosaurs*, *Earth*, *Evolution*, *Falsehood*, and other topics. Sorry, the *Ice Age* is not there. Kindly see *Lie* instead.

Q: Why didn't God (in the Bible) warn Jews about the holocaust?

A: Sorry again, in chapter 31, the subject of the *holocaust* is mentioned only as "Holocaust ethical question". However, you can find relevant chapters for *Jews* and *Wars* in the Index. As for the Warnings, which our LORD GOD gave to His People through the ages, they are many. E.g., *Isaiah 42:23-25*. See also *GOD's Warnings* in the Index section.

Q: Why didn't the Old Testament prophesy more events?

A: The Old (& New) Testament Scriptures prophesied more than we can bear. Note well *John 16:12 & Hebrews 5:11*.
You may want to find these two books about encoded Messages –
Grant R. Jeffrey, "The Signature of GOD" and "*The Handwriting of GOD"*.

Q: If it did, I'm 100% certain the Bible would be taken more seriously by more people for its early accurate predictions. So, why didn't God do that?

A: In chapter 32, please find the Words of *Apocrypha, 2nd Esdras 5:32*.
People are supposed to come to GOD, not vice versa. And what He reveals, they should obediently follow. Would they? See chapters 40 (Compromise) & 41 (Common sense). Kindly note *2Corinthians 4:4* too. Thank you.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020.)

752

Q: Why does God like the smell of burnt lambs?.

And ye shall offer with the bread seven lambs without blemish of the first year, and one young bullock, and two rams: they shall be for a Burnt Offering unto the LORD, with their Meat Offering, and their Drink Offerings, even an Offering made by fire, of Sweet Savour unto the LORD.
(Leviticus 23:18)

Q: And what can we learn from this Scripture? Thanks.

A: The LORD does not like the *smell*, as we use this term. What He does is our *Love* manifested in Sacrificial *Giving*. As somebody rightly commented,

Allegorical interpretation proposes that the basic elements of a Text are Symbols of a Deeper Lesson.

So, what can be learned?
1. Many thousands of those innocent animals were sacrificed for sinful people to pay for human sins, to wake up their conscience to Repentance. Studying the Bible, we can see that, sadly, very few folks responded to that.
2. The Ultimate Love Sacrifice of Jesus Christ, which discontinued those Animal Sacrifices, opened to us a better way to GOD.
Thanks for the question.

Q: In *2Corinthians 5:14*, Paul says,

For Christ's Love compels us, because we are convinced that One died for all, and therefore all died.

Q: I don't understand what is meant here. Christ died and, so, we *all* died?
In the next Verse, he says that we no longer live for ourselves, so I thought, maybe, Paul is talking about dying to self. But here's the issue: *all* died.
Q: And clearly, all of us don't die to ourselves. So, what does he mean?

A: It is written:

For the Love of Christ constraineth us; because we thus judge, that if One died for all, then were all dead: and that He died for all, that they which live should not henceforth live unto themselves, but unto Him which died for them, and rose again.
(2Corinthians 5:14-15)

Yes, Apostle Paul meant dying to *self*. Also, you are right that not *all* of us died to ourselves. Yet, by *us*, we ought to understand *all people*, not all Christians. Our Lord Jesus died for all, but *not all* folks thankfully accepted that, even not all who became Christians. Thank you for your question.

Q: Is "God is Love" all we need to understand?
It seems to me that *1John 4:7-21* sums up our entire Faith.
Q: What is there besides?

A: Briefly speaking, not much is there besides.
Please see chapter 52 (Knowledge of GOD). *Prove* your Love & Faith.
Godspeed.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020. Condensed.
Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition quoted.)

Q: If we are to believe that no Christian ever truly dies, wouldn't asking Saints to pray for you be analogous to asking someone else to pray for you?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.
Condensed. Edited.)

A: Kindly accept this correction: we are not to believe in this error.
Nobody "ever truly dies". Because, whether in Eternal Life or eternal death, we ever continue. The answer to your question is No.
We pray to our LORD GOD and only Him address in the Spirit World.
On Earth, we can ask our Friends in Christ to stand with us in Prayer(s) as per the following Teaching.

Verily I say unto you,
Whatsoever ye shall bind on Earth shall be bound in Heaven:
and whatsoever ye shall loose on Earth shall be loosed in Heaven.
Again I say unto you, that if two of you shall agree on Earth
as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of My Father
which is in Heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in My Name,
there am I in the midst of them. (Matthew 18:18-20)

In the above Scripture, you may kindly note the Words, *on Earth*, as the place where our Prayers are to be made & backed & work. And "two of you" & "two or three are gathered together" stand for the Saints on Earth, not yet in Heaven.

753

Q: How do you interpret *Zechariah 13:1-6*?.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020. Condensed.
Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition quoted.)

A: We can consider the Scripture Verse by Verse.

> *1 In that day there shall be a Fountain opened to the House of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness.*

When Lord Jesus, the Christ, establishes His Church, He would be a Fountain of Living Water to His Followers to feed and purify them.

> *2 And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the LORD of Hosts, that I will cut off the names of the idols out of the land, and they shall no more be remembered: and also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit to pass out of the land.*

Every false teaching will be known as null & void, lying teachers & prophets condemned, and unclean spirits put under the Power of the Judgment of GOD.

> *3 And it shall come to pass, that when any shall yet prophesy, then his father and his mother that begat him shall say unto him, Thou shalt not live; for thou speakest lies in the Name of the LORD: and his father and his mother that begat him shall thrust him through when he prophesieth.*

In a Christian Family & Home, a lie has no place.

> *4 And it shall come to pass in that day, that the prophets shall be ashamed every one of his vision, when he hath prophesied; neither shall they wear a rough garment to deceive:*

Those who spread lies – atheism, agnosticism, false religion, etc., etc. – shall be ashamed. A lie dressed as “scientific” cannot stand against the Truth of GOD.

> *5 But he shall say, I am no prophet, I am an husbandman; for man taught me to keep cattle from my youth.*

The honesty of every walk of life can & will be proved by the Light of GOD.

6 And one shall say unto him, What are these wounds in thine hands? Then he shall answer, Those with which I was wounded in the house of my friends.

Every fake “proof” for atheism and other falsehood will be a shame.

Q: (1) What does it mean to curse someone?
E.g., Noah curses Canaan because Ham saw Noah naked.
Q: (2) How did that curse work?
Q: (3) And why could Noah do it on Canaan?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Condensed.)

A: This is the story.

And the sons of Noah, that went forth of the ark, were Shem, and Ham, and Japheth: and Ham is the father of Canaan. These are the three sons of Noah: and of them was the whole Earth overspread. And Noah began to be an husbandman, and he planted a vineyard. And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren without. And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it upon both their shoulders, and went backward, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their faces were backward, and they saw not their father’s nakedness. And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done unto him. And he said, Cursed be Canaan; a servant of servants shall he be unto his brethren. And he said, Blessed be the LORD GOD of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. GOD shall enlarge Japheth, and he shall dwell in the tents of Shem; and Canaan shall be his servant. (Genesis 9:18-27)

By *Easton’s Bible Dictionary*,
[Curses are] *denounced by GOD ... Divine maledictions (Genesis 3:14, 4:11), which carried their effect with them. Prophetical curses were sometimes pronounced by Holy Men (Genesis 9:25; 49:7; Deuteronomy 27:15). Such curses are not the consequence of passion or revenge, they are Predictions. ...*
[In the same source, you can read about cursing GOD and a neighbor.]

So, that curse spoken by Noah was, in fact, the Prophecy.
We spoke about the person of Noah in chapter 340 (Righteous Noah).
Please also see chapter 44 (Blessings and curses). And note *Ezekiel Chapter 18* & *2Corinthians 5:17* – the curses that can be broken.

754

Q: Does *Romans 6:7* contradict *Revelation 20:12*?.
The Book of Romans says the dead are acquitted of their sins, but
The Book of Revelation says we are judged. Please, explain.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, February 2020. Corrected.)

A: It is written:

3 Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into His death? 4 Therefore we are buried with Him by Baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the Glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in Newness of Life. 5 For if we have been planted together in the Likeness of His death, we shall be also in the Likeness of His Resurrection: 6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with Him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin. 7 For he that is dead is freed from sin. 8 Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with Him: 9 Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over Him. (The Book of Romans, Chapter 6)

12 And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before GOD; and the Books were opened: and another Book was opened, which is the Book of Life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the Books, according to their works. 13 And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. 14 And death and hell were cast into the lake of Fire. This is the second death. 15 And whosoever was not found written in the Book of Life was cast into the lake of Fire.
(The Book of Revelation, Chapter 20)

As we concluded in chapter 119, as well as all chapters titled “Contradictions”, there are not any of the sort in our Holy Bible.

Chapter 6 of *The Book of Romans* spoke about us, Christians, who are dead to sin, not on the matter of physical death. Kindly read *Romans 6:7* this way: *Because he that is dead to sin is freed from sin.* See “Q & A” chapters 739 & 742.

Chapter 20 of The Book of Revelation prophesied about Judgment Day.
We all, Christians or not, are to stand before Lord Jesus in Judgment.

Ecclesiastes 12:14 – LORD GOD shall bring every work into Judgment.
Romans 14:10-12 & 2Corinthians 5:10 – The Judgment Seat of Christ.
1Corinthians 4:5 – The Profound Judgment.

The Written Word of GOD is not "contradictory". It cannot be such.

Q: (1) How do you rationalize the Power of Prayer with the notion that God has a Plan for you?. I'm an *atheist*, but even when I was Christian, *I didn't understand that, so I didn't think about it.* (?)
Q: (2) If God has a Perfect Plan for your Life, which you don't know ahead of time but know that you *will* play out no matter what, then what is the purpose of praying for Guidance, Assistance, or for something to happen? I understand that the act of praying may *feel* good, but most Christians do not consider their Prayer merely symbolic.
Q: (3) I can only see this as a *contradiction*. Either Prayer is obsolete, or God's Plan is malleable by your human whims. (?)
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: A Prayer is one of the ways of our Communion with the LORD, our GOD. That Communion helps our better Understanding of His Holy Word & Will. As for a "contradiction" between GOD's Purpose for us and our Prayers to Him, please note the Words, *Thy Will be done* in the Lord's Prayer. They well explain the meaning & aim of our Prayers for His Guidance & Help, even to be within His Perfect Plan for our Life.
God's Plan is not "malleable". We have our *Free will* to follow GOD or not.

Q: How to Reconcile these (nine) *contradictions* regarding the empty Tomb?

A: *Matthew 7:7-8*, besides other points, is sarcastic for "contradiction-seekers".

Q: (1) The number and identity of the women who went to the Tomb differ. *John 20:1* says that only Mary went to the Tomb, while the Synoptics have several women. But they differ in numbers and identities. *Mark* has three women, *Matthew* two, and *Luke* over three. *Luke* also has Joanna as a Witness, not mentioned in *Matthew* and *Mark*. Likewise, *Mark* has Salome, the only time she is mentioned in the Four *Gospels*.
Q: (2) The time at which the women reached the Tomb differs: in *Mark 16:2*, it is "*very early ... after the Sun had risen*". However, in *John 20:1*, it is "*early while it was still dark*".

A: (1 & 2) The mentioned Witnesses were there at different times.

Q: (3) The Angel(s) in *Mark*, *Luke*, and *John* are pictured inside the Tomb upon the discovery of the women, but in *Matthew*, the Angel is sitting on the stone outside of the tomb.

Q: (4) Different number of Angels at the Tomb: *Mark 16:5* & *Matthew 28:2-4* mention one, while *Luke 24:4* & *John 20:12* mention two.

Q: (5) The posture of the Angel(s) is different. In *Matthew 28:2*, *Mark 16:5*, and *John 20:12*, they were "sitting." But in *Luke 24:4*, they "stood beside."

A: (3, 4, 5) Those Visions & Visitations differed from one Witness to another.

Q: (6) The stone in *Mark* was one that had to be "rolled", but in *John*, the stone had to be "taken away". So, the two *Gospels* are referring to different kinds of stones to cover the Tomb. *Mark's* "rolling stone" indicates that the stone was round. Amos Kloner, however, discovered that up to 99% of the tombs were closed by unrounded square stones before the end of the Jewish war.

A: (8) Can you roll a toy-cube made of paper?
In the same way, the Holy Angel of GOD handled the mentioned stone.

Q: (7) In the *Gospel of Luke*, Peter is the only male Disciple to check on the empty Tomb. But *John* includes the Beloved Disciple.

A: Kindly see my answer to your questions 1 & 2.

Q: (8) The Messages of the Angels to the women (or Mary) is *drastically* different when one compares the synoptics to the *Gospel of John*.

A: Kindly see the answer to questions 3, 4, & 5, and apply them to the Messages. Note that there is a *drastic* difference between the *Word of GOD* and Bible translations, editions, commentaries, etc., made by humans.

Q: (9) In *Mark*, the women told nothing to anybody, which was a huge problem for early Christians, as evidenced by the later additions in *Mark 16:9-20*. *Matthew* & *Luke* changed *Mark*: the women went straight to the Disciples.

A: *Mark 16:8* applied to a limited time (of that day) and the number of people. And "anybody" should firstly mean those who yelled, "Crucify him!"

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Edited.)

755

Q: Where does the Old Testament say that the Messiah will resurrect?
Resurrection is the most important aspect of Christianity.
Q: There are many Prophecies about the Messiah.
Which one did prophesy that the Messiah would resurrect?
This is a common Jew's objection to a Christian.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020. Corrected.)

A: It is written,

The LORD said unto my Lord,
sit Thou at My Right Hand, until I make Thine enemies Thy footstool.
(Psalms 110:1)

That was quoted in *Matthew 22:44; Mark 12:36; Luke 20:42-43; Acts 2:34-35;* and *Hebrews 1:13*.

It is also said,

Yet it pleased the LORD to bruise Him;
He hath put Him to grief: when Thou shalt make His soul an Offering for sin, He shall see His Seed, He shall prolong His days, and the Pleasure of the LORD shall prosper in His hand. He shall see of the travail of His soul, and shall be satisfied: by His Knowledge shall My Righteous Servant justify many; for He shall bear their iniquities. (Isaiah 53:10-11)

Now, according to *Isaiah 34:16*, we have two Scriptures of the Old Testament (and more so by the New) to make a sound Doctrine and answer your question.

Seek ye out of the Book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail,
none shall want her mate: for My Mouth it hath commanded,
and His Spirit it hath gathered them. (Isaiah 34:16)

As for "a common Jew's objection to a Christian" (as you put it), I'd recommend to every Jew to read *The Epistle of Paul the Apostle to the Hebrews.* That book was firstly addressed to Jews as well as all those who oppose our Christian Teaching on the subject of Resurrection.

Thanks for the question.
See chapter 666 (The Promised Messiah) and the Index for more references.

756

Q: Believers cannot heal the sick, handle deadly snakes, safely drink poison, or speak in tongues, can they?. I'm on a *journey* trying to believe the key-parts of Christianity, but it is really hard.

Q: How the heck do you read things like the closing lines of *the Gospel according to Mark* and still believe?

Q: How can you possibly reconcile your life experience with this:

> *And He said unto them, Go ye into all the World, and preach the Gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned. And these Signs shall follow them that believe: In My Name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues; they shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.*
> *(Mark 16:15-18)*

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: If you want to believe, do so with your worldly logic switched off. The latter has no place in the above Scripture as well as all the Bible.

Your statement, "Believers cannot heal the sick, handle deadly snakes, safely drink poison, or speak in tongues ..." is correct, yet speaking of our human abilities. What about the Power of GOD?

> *I am the Vine, ye are the Branches: He that abideth in Me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much Fruit: for without Me ye can do nothing. If a man abide not in Me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned. If ye abide in Me, and My Words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you. (John 15:5-7)*

Kindly note the Works of GOD are not to be done just for a show.

Scriptures to consider: *Luke 15:20* – Your Journey.
John 6:28-29; 14:12 – Faith first.
John 10:37-38 – Believe the Proof.

Thanks for the question. In the Index section, you may find more references.

757

Q: The Prophecies quoted by St. Matthew (that he claimed were fulfilled by Jesus) were out of context or not Prophecies at all. (?)
Q: For example, in *Matthew 13:35,* he claims that Jesus, speaking in Parables, fulfills *Psalm 78:2*, which says, “I will open My Mouth in Parables”, but the Psalm itself wasn’t making a Prophecy or describing the Messiah. (?)
Q: Also, in *Matthew 27:9,* he claims that Jesus, being sold for 30 pieces of silver, fulfills *Zechariah 11:12-13*, but no Prophecy was being made in that Verse either. (?)
Q: The same idea is for “Out of Egypt I have called My Son”. Matthew claims that it refers to Jesus, but the Verse refers to Israel. (?)
Q: Can someone refute the claims that St. Matthew was using Old Testament Verses out of context when claiming Jesus fulfilled them?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* March 2020. Condensed.)

A: What you mentioned as “St. Matthew” would have more sense to you as “it is written” or “the Bible says”. Please, mind *2Peter 1:19-21*.
Read *Matthew 13:35* (which quoted *Psalm 78:2* only in part) attentively.

That it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the Prophet, saying,
I will open My Mouth in Parables; I will utter things which have been
kept Secret from the Foundation of the World. (Matthew 13:35)

Give ear, O My People, to My Law: incline your ears to the Words of My Mouth.
I will open My Mouth in a Parable: I will utter dark Sayings of old:
Which we have heard and known, and our fathers have told us. (Psalms 78:1-3)

It is the Prophecy, which mentioned, by the by, not only Lord Jesus, the Messiah, but addressed every serious reader & follower of the Written Word of GOD.
The same attentive reading is a key for *Matthew 27:9* & *Zechariah 11:12-13*.

Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the Prophet, saying,
And they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued,
whom they of the children of Israel did value ... (Matthew 27:9)

And I said unto them, If ye think good, give me my price; and if not, forbear.
So they weighed for my price thirty pieces of silver. And the LORD said unto me,
Cast it unto the potter: a goodly price that I was prised at of them.
And I took the thirty pieces of silver,
and cast them to the potter in the House of the LORD. (Zechariah 11:12-13)

For it is a Prophesy. And not only about our Lord Jesus. Lo, betrayal of the World and the corrupted Church stood out not against Him only. Read *Book of Martyrs*.

We can also meditate on *Matthew 2:15* & *Hosea 11:1*.

... that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the LORD by the Prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called My Son. (Matthew 2:15)

When Israel was a Child, then I loved Him, and called My Son out of Egypt. (Hosea 11:1)

This Prophecy is not only about the ancient long-dead people of Israel or strictly Christ Jesus, but all the Church of GOD yet to come.

Q: What would you do if a terrorist threatened to kill your family but *would* spare them if you verbally renounce your Faith in Christ? My question sounds edgy, but it is coming from genuine interest and personal life-pondering. No insult or trolling is meant.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Edited)

A: It is written,

... fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear Him which is Able to destroy both soul and body in hell. (Matthew 10:28)

I would follow the Word of Lord Jesus. So help me, GOD.

Q: (1) How can God blame us for imperfections when He made us that way?
Q: (2) If He didn't want fornication, why did He make our sex drive so strong?
Q: (3) The Bible says that homosexuality is a sin and an abomination, so why did God create people that way?
Q: (4) How easy would be for you to reverse your sexual orientation?
(*http://churchandstate.org.uk/2016/08/22-questions-for-christians.* April 2021. Condensed. Edited.)

A: (1) It is a lie. Read *Genesis 1:27,31*.
(2) It is a lie. Read *Genesis 4:7 & 1John 5:3*.
(3) It is a lie. Read *Romans 1:18-32*. See chapter 182 (Sexual perversions).
(4) We speak of perverts, okay? So, there is a way – *Luke 15:20*.

758

Q: (1) Did Mary, the mother of Jesus, believe in her son's Resurrection?
Q: (2) And how do we know that?.
Q: (3) It seems Mary was not a Believer during Jesus' Ministry. She and Jesus' brothers are described in the Gospels as coming to take Jesus home because He was "out of His mind". (?)
Q: (4) Even after the Resurrection, the only mention of Mary is in *Acts 1:14*, which says that she and Jesus' brothers would regularly join the Apostles in Prayer. But it doesn't say anything about what she believed about her son.
Q: (5) Is it possible that Mary was not a Believer?

(Signed: *Agnostic*, *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: (1) To your first question (the post's name), my answer is *possibly*.
That possibility is deduced from the conversations in *Luke 1:28-55*.
(2) How do we know? Kindly read *John 2:5*.
(5) Thus, to your closing question, the answer is only *No*.

(3) As to your quote "out of His mind", the link you provided does not mention Mary. You may go as far as *https://www.biblegateway.com* and see it in other Versions. I checked A*uthorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition, Expanded Bible, New International Version* – the result was same.
The above-mentioned *John 2:5* does not agree with your assumption.

(4) *Acts 1:14* says in favor of Mary's (and Disciples') *Knowledge* about (following their *Hope* in) Jesus' Resurrection & Ascension as per *Acts 1:9*.
What you put as "the only mention of Mary" might be explained that her Mission as a Mother of Christ was over. The rest of her life was that of an ordinary Christian, not compulsory a Leader.
You say, "But it doesn't say anything about what she believed about her son." Well, who & what would she believe in after witnessing Resurrection & Ascension of Christ? See my argument in chapter 52 about Faith & Knowledge.
Since you name yourself *Agnostic*, I stop at this. It is written,

> *... the natural man receiveth not the things of the Spirit of GOD:*
> *for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them,*
> *because they are spiritually discerned. (1Corinthians 2:14)*

Thanks for the question.
Kindly see the Index section for mote references.

Q: Where was Lazarus' soul before Jesus' Miracle?.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: Far as I understand, there were two options only, *Paradise* and *hell*.

Regarding *hell*, see chapter 8 of this book. The Biblical research (on which that chapter stands) gives me a reason to believe that there is no way back from *hell*. Note *Luke 16:26*.
So, the remaining option is *Paradise*.

The story of Saint Lazarus is in the *Gospel of John, Chapter 11*.
There, in Verse 11, Lord Jesus called him *Friend*:

... Our Friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.

(To be "awaken out of a sleep", I take as coming back to *physical* Life *bodily*. That "waking up" is in the Power of the Holy Ghost.)

Now, who are His Friends?

Ye are My Friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you. (John 15:14)*

So, my answer to your question is *Paradise*. See also chapter 243.
* In this regard, *Matthew 26:50* may mean only the sorrowful "ex-Friend".

Q: Who were "Sons of GOD" and "daughters of men" in *Genesis*?
(Signed: *Atheist, Secular Humanist*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, June 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: Both companies were human beings. It is written,

... the Sons of GOD saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose. And the LORD said, My Spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh ... (Genesis 6:2-3)

... Marriage is a thing too Sacred to allow that men should be induced to it by the lust of the eyes. (John Calvin, Commentary on Genesis)

See also our Index section for *Marriage forbidden*.

759

Q: Why is a woman pregnant with Jesus Christ again
in the *Book of Revelation* (*Chapter 12* specifically)?.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: *Revelation 12* is not all about a repetition of the Birth of Christ.
In this Book, you can read about the past, present, and future of our World.
The following is just a brief account.

Verses 1, 2, & 5 – the Birth of Christ and the Beginning of the Church of GOD.
Verses 3, 4, & 12-17 – Satan, his demons, and human puppets.
Verses 6, 13, & 14 – the Ministry of Mary, the mother of Jesus.
Verses 7-9, & 13-17 – the Spirit War of GOD's Servants vs Satan's servants.
Verses 10-12 – our Christian Victory & Salvation.

Thanks for the question. Kindly see the References for good Commentaries and Index for the relevant "Q & A" chapters.

Q: (1) If this ("corona") virus ends up killing millions of people, why does the Bible fail to mention it? That is the perfect kind of scenario where the Prophecy could really shine and save a lot of unbelievers.
Q: (2) Though, if it is not mentioned doesn't that lead way to the conclusion that the Bible may be flawed?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020. Edited.)

A: Our Holy Bible mentions everything.
To find out why the Prophecies "shine" or not in human minds, kindly note the blinding factor of the devil, well-spoken of in *2Corinthians 4:4*.
See the Prophecy mentioned in your first question in this Scripture:

For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. (Matthew 24:7)

You may also consider *Ecclesiastes 1:9.*
Kindly read *Deuteronomy Chapter 28* with attention to *Verses 59 & 61*.
Show it to your neighbors. Does it shine, even to the point of Repentance?
Thanks for the question.
Kindly visit the Index section for more references.

760

Q: On Salvation..
As far I understand, I need to open my heart to Jesus and accept Him as my Lord and Savior to be saved and make it to Heaven.
The problem within myself (as I see it) is lack of sincerity. For right now, I do not believe that God exists. So, I should try to believe in the existence of God and claim to believe it, but how can I "open my whole heart" and "not bear a false witness against myself"?
Q: How do I get myself to believe completely enough to be saved?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: When Lord Jesus was asked a similar question, this was His Answer:

> *... sell all that thou hast, and distribute unto the poor, and thou shalt have Treasure in Heaven: and come, follow Me. And when he heard this, he was very sorrowful: for he was very rich. And when Jesus saw that he was very sorrowful, He said, How hardly shall they that have riches enter into the Kingdom of GOD! For it is easier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the Kingdom of GOD. (Luke 18:18-25)*

And this conversation followed:

> *Then Peter said, Lo, we have left all, and followed Thee. And He said unto them, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the Kingdom of GOD's sake, who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the World to come Life Everlasting. (Luke 18:28-30)*

Can *you* comprehend these Words?
We spoke about the subject of Giving in chapter 56. Can *you* stand that test?
The subject of *GOD First* was discussed in chapter 15. Can He be First to *you*?
Read the end of chapter 133. What kind of Proof would *you* believe?
In chapter 461, many Christian Ministries are outlined. What can be *yours*?

Thanks for your question.

Please see the References for good books & movies.
You can find the relevant "Q & A" chapters (on Salvation inclusive) in the Index.

Q: Why did God send bears to maul 42 *innocent* children to death when they pointed out some guy's head was bald or censor any question like this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: Obviously, you mean the sad story told in *2Kings 2:23-24*, don't you?

> *And he went up from thence unto Beth-el: and as he was going up by the way, there came forth little children out of the city, and mocked him, and said unto him, Go up, thou bald head; go up, thou bald head. And he turned back, and looked on them, and cursed them in the Name of the LORD. And there came forth two she bears out of the wood, and tare forty and two children of them. (2Kings 2:23-24)*

From a *Christian* viewpoint, mocking the Holy Prophet of GOD doesn't make anybody (those *forty-two* children and their parents inclusive) *innocent*.
Let me guess, could there be some other *bald* person(s) of their 42 dads, 84 grand-dads, and no lesser a bunch of uncles to make fun of ("to point *that* out")?

> As for "censoring" other (no less stupid) questions, you may kindly see *Isaiah 55:8* & *Ecclesiastes 9:4*.

Q: Do Christians still have to circumcise their kids? Thanks for answering.
(Signed: *Agnostic*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, June 2020)

A: Negative on that. And thank you back. It is a good question.
Please read our relevant chapter 149 (Circumcision).
There I mentioned the Scriptures a Christian would do well to stand upon.
Let me repeat here the first of them,

Circumcise therefore the foreskin of your heart, and be no more stiffnecked. (Deuteronomy 10:16)

Q: Can you be Taoist *and* Christian? Taoism is technically a religion but has no concept of God, just moral philosophy.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Condensed.)

A: Negative on that. There is no Truth without GOD –

I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life ... (John 14:6)

761

Q: What happens to the *free will* of others when God answers your Payers?.
Q: Whether it is a job opportunity, getting into the university of your dreams, a promotion, or a medical miracle for your aunt – all of these things create ripples. If you win because of God's actions, others lose and have no say in the same. Prayers working have consequences. (?)
Q: If God intervened, someone didn't get into that school. If God cleared the path for you to get that job, someone didn't get that job. Promotions and raises are dependent on decision-makers, but if God played a role in your promotion, that decision-maker doesn't have *free will*. (?)
Q: What if your dying aunt wants to pass on, but you pray for her healing?
Q: Where is her *free will* in this equation? Remember, I'm specifically discussing God intervening in the path of life like you asked Him to do.
Q: If you think that God's actions don't violate *free will*, then what was His involvement in your Prayers being answered?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: A Prayer is our Christian Communion with the LORD, our GOD.
This subject is quite complicated to a human mind, and the less we have Faith & Understanding the harder it is to get the picture of that Communion.
The same Understanding is required to comprehend our Free will.
There are only two chief ways in human Life – Salvation for Life Eternal or condemnation to the second death – and we are indeed *free* to choose.

Prayers do "create ripples" (as you put it), but that doesn't affect either human Free will or the Holy Will & the Perfect Justice of GOD.

Trust the LORD with all thine heart;
and lean not unto thine own understanding. (Proverbs 3:5)

And to "win" in the long run, we have to put our Free will under the Holy Will of GOD. Therefore, Good Prayers & Intercessions are those which include the Words "Thy Will be done". Compare *Matthew 6:10 & 26:39* with your examples.

And this is the Confidence that we have in Him,
that, if we ask any thing according to His Will, He heareth us:
And if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask,
we know that we have the Petitions that we desired of Him.
(1John 5:14-15)

Q: I've been having an extended amount of nightmares lately. I haven't done anything abnormal. No *new medications*, no tragic things have happened, no abnormal amount of stress – I've just been extremely paranoid and having bad dreams. I cannot sleep well anymore. Please help.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/helpme*, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

Thou wilt keep him in Perfect Peace,
whose mind is stayed on Thee: because he trusteth in Thee. (Isaiah 26:3)

So, take GOD on His Word. Read the Bible and think about the Verses read. Try to avoid *all medications*, whether new or old. Please, see chapter 487.

Q: How are Passages like *Ephesians 6:5-9* & *Exodus 21:20-21*, which green-lit *slavery*, explained during this time?
Q: There are a few more passages, like *Leviticus* on how to buy slaves.
Q: *Regardless* of your interpretation of those Passages (*I* find them very clear), *I* think it is apparent that the Bible is *not* saying, "don't own slaves".
Q: How can people denounce racism?
Q: Do you think these Passages have an ill-effect on our culture?
Q: Do these Passages affect our society because of their repercussions hundreds of years ago?
Q: Do you believe if the Bible said, "*do not own slaves"* that fewer slaves would be owned?
Q: Do you think these passages are an indoctrination to dehumanization persevered until recently? Thanks for your answers.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: Far as *I* understand, the Holy Word of GOD does not "green-lit slavery", as *you* misunderstood it. The LORD did not create slaves & their masters. Neither did He advocate slavery. *Humans* did that and reaped their due.

Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition (taken for our "Q & A") uses the (spiritual) term "slave(s)" a couple of times as reproach. Yet, such words as "prisoner(s)" & "servant(s)" abound as fruits of this or that society. Moreover, "during this time", slavery – physical, spiritual, moral, political, etc. – continues as Godly Free will does. That can answer the rest of your questions.
What you found "very clear" and *why* I tried to explain in chapter 29. And what is "clear" might be more so if you read it not as "rules" but "statements of facts". See also the Index section for *Slavery* and *Free will*. Thanks for the questions.

762

Q: Is Jesus not the only one Who ascended to Heaven?.

First, *John 3:13 –*

... no man hath ascended up to Heaven, but He that came down from Heaven, even the Son of Man which is in Heaven.

Second, *2Kings 2:11 –*

And it came to pass, as they still went on, and talked, that, behold, there appeared a Chariot of Fire, and Horses of Fire, and parted them both asunder; and Elijah went up by a Whirlwind into Heaven.

So, isn't it a contradiction?

(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, April 2020. Condensed.)

A: No, it is not. Neither are there any "contradictions" or "discrepancies" in our Holy Bible. You might also add, say, *Genesis 5:24* & *Hebrews 11:5* "versus" *John 3:13*. However, *had* you believed that the Written Word of GOD had no "contradictions", you would not have any doubts about that.

Now, to clarify the matter, kindly go as far as *https://www.biblegateway.com* (or some other right source, such as *American Libraries* on the *Internet Archive*) and see *John 3:13* written in *Geneva Bible (1599)* & *Young's Literal Translation (1898)*. You can look up even more Editions to exclude translation discrepancies.

Most important: switch off your *reason* and tune *Faith* to the maximum.

This way, you would understand *John 3:13* this way –

No man can ascend to Heaven,
but he who belongs to Heaven, even as the Son of Man is.

Thank you for the question. The subject is worth consideration.

Please see chapter 118 as for working with different Bible translations.
You may visit our "Q & A" Index section for references.

763

Q: (1) Do *you* ever wonder why the Bible does not put more emphasis on the present moment?.
Q: (2) Everything that ever has, does, or wills exists is the *present* moment. (?)
Q: (3) It *is* all-consuming and holds the entirety of existence in one piece. (?)
Q: (4) This is not obvious to most people, yet it is the undeniable eternal *truth* of existence staring us in the face every day. (?)
Q: (5) To be is to be *now*. (?)
Q: (6) The *present* moment is omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent on the account of it holding the entirety of existence. (?)
Q: (7) One might ask, *where* is God?
Q: (8) Well, *logic* would tell us that God is in this present moment. (?)
Q: (9) The Bible tells *little & vaguely* about the importance of the present. (?)
Q: (10) Do *you* find this a bit confounding?
Q: (11) Do *you* think the Bible might put more stress on the present?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, April 2020. Edited. The numbers were added to answer every argument.)

A: (1) Negative on that. I don't question what I believe & know. The Bible explains the present and teaches the Right Living thereat. *2Timothy 3:16-17*.
(2) Negative on that. Our present manifests reaping the harvest of the past & sowing seeds for the future. *Galatians 6:7*. "Q & A" chapters 503 & 508.
(3) It is absurd – whether you speak about the present moment or Time as a whole. LORD GOD rules all. Consider *Colossians 1:17 & Hebrews 1:3,10.*
(4) Absurdity again. Truth is in the Written Word of GOD. Note *John 14:6*.
(5) Says who? To worthily be is to be with GOD in Eternity. *John 10:27-28*.
(6) Nonsense. These qualities belong to GOD and cannot be ascribed to a tiny part (moment) of His creature (Time). Read *John 1:3 & Revelation 1:8*.
(7) The LORD, our GOD, is everywhere. *Proverbs 15:3 & Jeremiah 23:24*.
(8) Your logic is false. Our Heavenly Father is Eternal. Read *Revelation 1:8*.
(9) It is a lie. The Bible speaks enough. *Deuteronomy 29:29 & Luke 21:33*.
And if you find something "vague" in our Bible, follow *Jeremiah 33:3*.
(10) I do. *Your logic* is confounding & harmful to you. *Psalms 14:1 & 53:1*.
(11) The present? Kindly go to *Psalms 32:8* & *Isaiah 42:16*. Good luck.

Q: (1) What about the Bible translated?
Q: (2) Different languages have different words, and, barring context, some of these words may have different meanings or even completely change the meaning of a Verse. (?)
Q: (3) So, I question the validity of the Bible based on this fact. (?)

Q: (4) Can anyone provide a clear and concise answer to my dilemma?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: (4) I guess it is a *question* rather than a *dilemma*.
(1-3) Different *translators* might indeed mislead the starters.
In chapter 118 (Different translations), I compared our Bible Study with the "position lines" method in sea navigation. The more lines, the more accurate ship's position is. So, the more Bible Versions at hand, the better our understanding thereof is. In the same chapter, I referred to Master Luther, who differentiated the *Word of GOD* and the (translated) *Bible*.
(3) In chapter 104 (The Promised Teacher), we talked about the Holy Ghost – our best Teacher of the Written Word of GOD.
Yet, this last argument of mine might be acceptable only to Believers.
Kindly read the end of chapter 766 (The Song of Bernadette).
You may go to our Index for *Bible*, *Bible Study*, and *Communion with GOD*.

Q: Are Christians still required to kill homosexuals?
(Signed: *Pagan.*
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, June 2020. Condensed.)

A: Homosexuality is forbidden & condemned to death in *Leviticus 20:13*.
However, *Deuteronomy 16:18* commands that *Judges* & *Officers* must be appointed to execute that way of the LORD's Perfect Justice. Therefore, to begin with, the country we live in should be a *Christian* one. (Please see chapter 55 to understand what it means.) Then and only then, the capital punishment we spoke of in chapter 95 (and you inquire now) can and should be done. Reading *Romans 1:18-32* recognize sinners' *self-punishment*.

Q: Do Christians think *their Laws* can be bent?
Q: For example, if a poor person steals a piece of bread, such a thief won't go to hell for it. (The Eighth Commandment.)
Q: Or if a child was molested by the parents, that child does not have to honor those parents. (The Fifth Commandment.)
Q: Do they assume the Laws of the Bible are absolutely intact?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, November 2020. Edited.)

A: Christians don't have "their Laws", but the Holy Law of their LORD GOD.
And the Final Judgment belongs to Him, not Christians. *1Corinthians 4:5*.
The Law of our GOD is absolute. He prohibits poverty. See chapter 296.
The LORD prohibits sexual crimes. See chapters 79, 126, and the Index.

764

Q: What do you make of *Ecclesiastes 10:8-11*?.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Condensed. *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* quoted.)

A: In *Ecclesiastes*, the Conclusion – *12:13-14* – is the Key to understanding this Book. The Verses you mentioned ought to be seen in that Light.

8 He that diggeth a pit shall fall into it; and whoso breaketh an hedge, a serpent shall bite him.

Don't plan & do any evil (digging *a pit*) to anybody. That is based on the Harvest Law, *Galatians 6:*7, chapters 503 & 508. GOD's Punishment (chapter 64) always follows. The same is True about overstepping the bounds (breaking *an hedge*) – the Holy Law of GOD, the Law of a country, a country's borders, or the limits of personal business. Behold, the devil bites when GOD steps off from the evildoer.

9 Whoso removeth stones shall be hurt therewith;
and he that cleaveth wood shall be endangered thereby.

In the *natural*, the removal of stones a building is built with or splitting logs is a heavy job for a laborer and quite a dangerous business for a newbie. In the *spiritual*, nothing created by LORD GOD should be "reconstructed" or "improved" by whoever.

10 If the iron be blunt, and he do not whet the edge,
then must he put to more strength: but wisdom is profitable to direct.

In the *natural*, any trade (here, it is a cutting of wood) requires knowledge & experience to avoid unnecessary loss of time & power. Likewise, Wisdom cannot be overestimated in *spiritual* matters. See chapter 58 (K & U & W).

11 Surely the serpent will bite without enchantment;
and a babbler is no better.

Unbelieving fools deprived of True Wisdom are easy prey for the superstitions of Satan. No better is following a false teacher (*a babbler*) whose peace is a lie.

I explained my approach to the Holy Scriptures in the chapters named in the *Index / Bible Study*. Please, look it up.

765

Q: (1) Why not question *God* for all the evil things and suffering in the World?
Q: (2) My problem usually comes when I see or hear dreadful news – death of infants, wars killing innocents, terrible accidents claiming many lives, religious terrorism, all the horrible events in the Bible (especially the Old Testament), abuse of women, how non-believers are damned no matter how good they are in the world (a Pastor told me that). (?)
Q: (3) Why not therefore, question the Worth, Actions, and Morality of *God*?
Q: (4) What I am usually told in a Church is to have Faith, believe, not question, for all is in His Plan. But to me, this seems a *lazy* answer that simply shelves the problem without a solution. (?)
Q: (5) God made Man in His Image and, by this Blessing, Man became the only creature in all the World capable of moral & ethical introspection. (?)
Q: (6) To ignore such a capacity and to set aside the problem as a leap of Faith, is a huge disservice to *God*. (?)
Q: (7) What are *your* thoughts on this?

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, May 2020. Edited.)

A: (1) It is okay to ask GOD questions. *Jeremiah 33:3* encourages us for that.
(3) It is wrong to question or doubt Him. *Isaiah 55:8* warns us about that.
(2) It is good to hate evil, yet in the Fear of GOD. *Proverbs 8:13* says so.

The Fear of the LORD is to hate evil: pride, and arrogancy, and the evil way, and the froward mouth, do I hate. Counsel is Mine, and Sound Wisdom: I am Understanding; I have Strength. (Proverbs 8:13)

(2) The horrible events, whether described in the Bible or observed in the World, have their correct Scriptural explanations, starting from *Genesis 1:26-28*.
Please see chapter 1 (Evil) and the Index for *GOD*.
(2) Not all unbelievers are “damned”.
(4 & 6) In *1Corinthians 13:13*, Love is put above Faith. GOD is Love. Jesus – the Way, the Truth, and the Life – is Love.
(1) There are many humans – unbelievers & so-called Believers – worthy of Eternal damnation. However, *Ecclesiastes 9:4* stands on.
(4–7) In your Communion with Christians, especially on such essential matters as you brought up, I strongly advise you to begin from definitions. The latter should stand on the Word of GOD. Otherwise, Truth would remain “out there”.
Don’t underestimate the personal communication with Father GOD via the Bible.
Thank you for your questions. Godspeed.

Q: Touching on the subject of Communion with GOD through Prayer, could you provide a respective summary?

(*The Small Group question.*)

A: I hope the following suggestions may be helpful.
The Scriptures chosen here are but some of many.

The Lord's Prayer (*Matthew 6:6-15*).
Secure time & place for a Prayer (*Matthew 6:6; Luke 5:16*).
Mind your Purity (*Exodus 29:4; Syrach 18:23; Jeremiah 29:13*).
No worldly crowd (*Mark 7:33; Acts 9:40*).
A Prayer Team (*Matthew 18:20, 26:37-38; Mark 14:33-34*).
Forgiving (*Mark 11:25*).
The Third Commandment (*Exodus 20:7; Deuteronomy 5:11; Philippians 2:9-11*).
The Help of the Spirit (*Romans 8:26-27; 1John 5:14*).
Be concise (*Ecclesiastes 5:2; Matthew 6:7-9*).
In the Name of Jesus (*Mark 16:17-18; John 14:14, 15:7*).
Mind the Holy Will of GOD (*Matthew 6:10; Luke 11:2*).
Preaching the Word of Truth (*Luke 5:17*).
Repent of & confess sins (*2Chronicles 7:14; Psalms 38:3; Proverbs 28:13; 2Corinthians 7:10; 1John 1:8-10*).
The Prayer o' Faith (*James 5:14-16*).
Peace in Family *(1Peter 3:7).*
Persevere (*1Kings 17:21-22*).
Patience (*Mark 11:24; Hebrews 10:36,11:6*).
No doubt (*Philippians 4:6-7*).
Trust GOD (*Proverbs 3:5; Isaiah 53:5; Hebrews 10:23*).
Praise GOD (*Deuteronomy 10:21; 1Chronicles 16:28-29; Psalms 22:3, 67:5-6; Ephesians 5:20*).
Fast (*Ezra 8:21; Jeremiah 58; Judith 4:13; Matthew 6:17-18*).
Giving (*Exodus 34:20; Luke 5:14; Mathew 8:4*).

* See *Q & A – 58 (K & U & W).*
See *Q & A – Index – Communion with GOD; Prayer.*

However, the following Scripture remains our best Guidance.

Call unto Me, and I will answer thee,
and shew thee Great and Mighty things, which thou knowest not.
(Jeremiah 33:3)

766

Q: How would you interpret “The Immaculate Conception” – the name of the Vision described in *https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Bernadette_Soubirous**, as well as in the good Christian film *The Song of Bernadette (1943)*?
*The site was last checked on June 2026.

A: I respectfully disagree with the *Catholic* interpretation of that Apparition or Vision. Brothers Catholics accepted *The Immaculate Conception* as one more name (or dogma) for “Saint Mary, the mother of Christ Jesus”.

When Sister *Bernadette Soubirous* asked the *Lady* her name, the answer might be simple: “Mary”. But it wasn’t. And the (heretical) one – “I am the Mother of God” – just couldn’t.
In my humble opinion the Vision was True, most instructive, and needful.
However, it was the Vision, the Message, and not a Messenger.
I think the *Lady* represented the Church of GOD – the Bride of our Lord.
Her Words to Sister Bernadette were those of the LORD’s Revelation.
The Immaculate Conception is the Work of the *Holy Spirit of LORD GOD* only.
Thus “The Immaculate Conception” should be attributed to our Heavenly Father, not His Saint. What could it possibly mean? – The Baptism in the Holy Spirit.

Hereby know we that we dwell in Him, and He in us,
because He hath given us of His Spirit. (1John 4:13)

All subsequently proved cases of Miraculous *physical* Healing were the Gracious Work of the Holy Ghost through that mineral water, not by the latter itself.
And, with all Reverent appreciation of Divine Meeting the physical needs of people, it symbolized the necessity & possibility of Healing *spiritual*.
Please, note that the response of French folks to the Vision of Sister Bernadette, in a way, resembles the one presented to Jewish crowds by the Ministry of Christ.
Because very few tried to understand the Message, seeking *physical* healing only.

That movie – *The Song of Bernadette* – is beautiful and hereby commended.
Its conclusive words could not be better –

For those who believe in God, no explanation is necessary.
For those who do not believe in God, no explanation is possible.

Amen.

767

Q: Did the *Mathew Chapter 24* Prophecies become fulfilled?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian,* July 2020.)

A: Yes.
Please open your Bible on *The Gospel According To Matthew, Chapter 24.*

Verse 2. In the natural, it was fulfilled in 70 AD and, spiritually, even earlier, as the Teaching of Christ crushed the falsehood of Judaism.

> *In A.D. 70, the Romans, finally exasperated by the rebellious intransigence of the Jews, gave up all attempts at pacification and turned to destruction, and Jerusalem and the Temple were laid waste so that Jesus' Prophecy literally came True. (William Barclay)*

Verses 5, 11, 23, & 24. It is being done ever since. Religious falsehood abounds.

Verses 6-7. It is being done too. The falsehood of militarism is going on. The spiritual Power of men over the Earth destroys them & her.

Verses 9-10. That Prophecy is also being done ever since. See the beginning thereof in the *Book Of Martyrs,* by *John Fox*.

Verse 12. Again, the Prediction is being done. The name of the iniquity is "reason", a.k.a., "common sense". See "Q & A" chapter 41.

Verse 14. The Gospel was, is, and will be preached. Truth covered the World. The Time of the End is known to our Father GOD only. *Verse 36*.

Verses 15-22. The Prophecy had been done & continues to be fulfilled.
Kindly see chapter 117 (The abomination of desolation).

Verses 27-31 & 44 speak about the Second Coming of Christ.

Heaven and Earth shall pass away, but My Words shall not pass away.
(Matthew 24:35, Mark 13:31, & Luke 21:33)

You may see the Index section for more references.
Thank you.

768

Q: What did Job's family do to deserve smiting them by God?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, March 2020.)

A: For starters, it was not GOD who smote them. Kindly note chapter 64 of our "Q & A" and read the conversations in *Job 1:11-12 & 2:5-6*. These Scriptures speak with us a Parable-way and had nothing against Job. You can easily clarify who did those strikes – the devil.
As for Job's kin, I believe they were not much different from other people who lived for themselves. Please, consider *Job 1:4-5*.
Here, we encounter the subject of Godly Education in a Family.

Q: (1) Help me understand the Book of Job. God's most Loyal Servant has his family and friends beset with tragedy and killed, his health decimated, and all of his earthly possessions taken or destroyed. (?)
Q: (2) But God won a bet with Satan. (?)
Q: (3) How is this story supposed to encourage Loyalty?
Q: (4) What I gather is tolerating God ruining your life for His Glory. (?)
Q: (5) Is there a way to digest this?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, July 2020. Corrected.)

A: (1) To begin with,

There is no wisdom nor understanding
nor counsel against the LORD. (Proverbs 21:30)

The story of Job resembles *Luke 18:29-30.* The substantial difference is in Job's endurance versus the willing Sacrifice our Lord Jesus taught on.
(2) Kindly note that the LORD Almighty and Satan are too incomparable in their powers to *bet* (if the last is the correct word). What about the "arguments"?
Also, there was (and still is) too much honor for the thrown-away one to stand before the LORD the way presented in the story. It is not yet Judgment Day.
I believe the conversations GOD vs Satan are metaphorical. The Omnipresent Holy Spirit speaks continuously and in very different ways with the Holy Angels of GOD, Satan & his demons, and all human beings, you & me inclusive.
(3) In the *Book of Job*, Loyalty to GOD is taught – best from *Job 32:2* to the end.
(4) The words "GOD ruining your life" are wrong.
Mind the ending Words in the above-quoted *Luke 18:30*.
(5) And "a way to digest this" is *Proverbs 3:5*.
Thanks for your questions. You may find more references in the Index.

769

Q: Let's discuss the *Passover,* stipulated in *Chapter 12* of the *Book of Exodus,* in the Light of pertinence of those Scriptures here & now.

A: Okay. We continue to quote the *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition*. Kindly compare the text with other translations.
In the Index section, you may find the relevant chapters for the key subjects.

Verse 5. Your lamb shall be without blemish ...

The parallel Scripture is *Isaiah 53:9.*
Such was the Ultimate Sacrifice of Jesus, the Christ. He paid by His Purity for our spiritual & moral uncleanness.

Verse 7. And they shall take of the blood, and strike it on the two side posts and on the upper door post of the houses, wherein they shall eat it.

The parallel Scriptures are *Deuteronomy 6:9 & Isaiah 53:5*.
The Holy blood of Lord Jesus is the Price paid for our Justification *in* Him.

Verses 8-10. And they shall eat the flesh in that night, roast with fire, and unleavened bread; and with bitter herbs they shall eat it. Eat not of it raw, nor sodden at all with water, but roast with fire; his head with his legs, and with the purtenance thereof. And ye shall let nothing of it remain until the morning; and that which remaineth of it until the morning ye shall burn with fire.

Here, every word or expression is meaningful.
The *Fire* of our Baptism – *Matthew 3:11-12* – promotes the Understanding of Pure Teaching of Christ. See chapter 310 (Fire Baptism).

Our Bread – *Matthew 6:11* – is to be Unleavened, that is, Purified from worldly reason. In the natural, *bitter herbs* help our better & speedier digestion, especially needful when *time* is of the essence. In the *spiritual,* it may stand for something tasting *bitter* yet proved Healthy. And *time* is essential indeed. See *Verse 11*.

The *raw meat* means the *spiritual poison* of the world. The *Fire* must burn it. *Sodden with water* is the dilution by *common sense*. Eating it up *whole* stands for *total* acceptance of Truth. Nothing *left until morning* is no *delay*. To *burn the rest with fire* means to share nothing with the heathen world. Note *Matthew 7:6*.

Verse 11. And thus shall ye eat it; with your loins girded, your shoes on your feet, and your staff in your hand; and ye shall eat it in haste: it is the LORD's Passover.

The *Passover* is not just a traditional dinner or supper. This *Verse* symbolizes *Vigilance* in and *Preparation* for *Spirit War* against unseen yet real & present enemies. Again, *time* is of the essence. See all "Q & A" chapters titled *Spirit War*.

Verse 13. And the blood shall be to you for a token upon the houses where ye are: and when I see the blood, I will pass over you, and the plague shall not be upon you to destroy you, when I smite the land of Egypt.

In *Verses 12-13*, we can see the foreshadowing of future Judgment. The Blood of Christ is GOD's Token of our Salvation. The Parallel is *Deuteronomy 6:9*.

The subject of the Passover Festival is covered in chapter 157. However, *Exodus 12:43-49*, dealing with its *Holiness* & *Circumcision*, should be noted.

Verse 48. And when a stranger shall sojourn with thee, and will keep the Passover to the LORD, let all his males be circumcised, and then let him come near and keep it; and he shall be as one that is born in the land: for no uncircumcised person shall eat thereof.

Thus said the LORD, our Father unto them & it is written unto us. Circumcision is that of a *heart* with all worldly values cut off – circumcised unto True Faith. No stranger(s) to our Faith, unbelieving passer-by(s), non-Christians, hired heathen worker(s), etc., are to participate. One House in Israel there & then is every Local Congregation in One Indivisible Body of Christ here & now.

The Passover meal is Sacred. It is to be consumed by True Believers only, leftovers burned up, not to be carried out of GOD-Protected House of Worship – no bones are to be broken as it was at the Sacrifice of Christ.

Participating in *Passover* without *Faith* is nothing but a blind tradition, strange to our LORD GOD, and a sin.

O that there were such an heart in them, that they would fear Me,
and keep all My Commandments always, that it might be Well with them,
and with their children for ever! (Deuteronomy 5:29)

770

Q: Abortion *is not* murder.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020. Edited.)

A: It *is* murder as an action directed to stop GOD-given Life.
Let me see your further arguments posted and the Scriptures you provided.

1. A fetus is not considered a human life.

> *If men strive, and hurt a woman with child, so that her fruit depart from her, and yet no mischief follow: he shall be surely punished, according as the woman's husband will lay upon him; and he shall pay as the judges determine. (Exodus 21:22)*

Your conclusion is wrong. "If men strive, and hurt a woman" indicates the hurt is not intentional. The woman just happened to be nearby.

2. The Bible places no value on fetuses or infants less than one-month-old.

> *And if it be from a month old even unto five years old, then thy estimation shall be of the male five shekels of silver, and for the female thy estimation shall be three shekels of silver. (Leviticus 27:6)*

Your conclusion is wrong. *Leviticus 27* is a matter of Vows & Sanctification as well as a general estimation of usefulness.

3. Fetuses and infants less than one-month-old are not considered persons.

> *Number the children of Levi after the house of their fathers, by their families: every male from a month old and upward shalt thou number them ... Number all the firstborn of the males of the children of Israel from a month old and upward, and take the number of their names.*
> *(Numbers 3:15-16,40)*

Negative on that. By your logic, "females are not considered persons" here. It's a mess. It was counting males who outlived one month's age, as simple as that.

4. God sometimes approves of killing fetuses.
(Some non-virgin women could have been pregnant and killed along with their unborn fetuses.)

> *... Behold, these caused the children of Israel, through the counsel of Balaam, to commit trespass against the LORD in the matter of Peor, and there was a plague among the Congregation of the LORD. Now therefore kill every male among the little ones, and kill every woman that hath known man by lying with him. (Numbers 31:16-17)*

You demonstrated the same incompetency. The reason was identical to killing the Canaanites when conquering the Promised Land. See "Q & A" chapter 26.

> *... Give them a miscarrying womb and dry breasts ... Yea, though they bring forth, yet will I slay even the beloved fruit of their womb ... Samaria shall become desolate; for she hath rebelled against her GOD: they shall fall by the sword: their infants shall be dashed in pieces, and their women with child shall be ripped up. (Hosea 9:14,16; 13:16)*

It is the Conversation with the LORD, our Father, about murderers & idolaters in His Land. You may see chapter 64 about GOD's Punishment.

5. God sometimes kills newborn babies to punish their parents.

> *... David said unto Nathan, I have sinned against the LORD. And Nathan said unto David, The LORD also hath put away thy sin; thou shalt not die. Howbeit, because by this deed thou hast given great occasion to the enemies of the LORD to blaspheme, the child also that is born unto thee shall surely die. (2Samuel 12:13-14)*

"Kills" is the wrong word. Again, refer to chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment).
The above Scripture says, "... *the child ... shall surely die* [in the natural]."

6. God sometimes causes abortions by cursing unfaithful wives.

> *... And he shall cause the woman to drink the bitter water that causeth the curse: and the water that causeth the curse shall enter into her, and become bitter ... and the woman shall be a curse among her people. And if the woman be not defiled, but be clean; then she shall be free, and shall conceive seed. (Numbers 5:27-28)* See the complete discourse in *5:12-31*.

In your comment, the word "abortions" is strange.
"Childlessness" is the correct one.

7. God's Law sometimes requires an execution (by burning to death) of a pregnant woman.

> *... Tamar thy daughter in law hath played the harlot; and also, behold, she is with child by whoredom. And Judah said, Bring her forth, and let her be burnt. (Genesis 38:24)*

Kindly note: a *man* said so, not the Holy Law of GOD.
See chapter 95 and check out *Leviticus 21:9*, saying, "Priest's daughter".

8. The Psalmist prays that his enemies are aborted.

> *... let every one of them pass away: like the untimely birth of a woman, that they may not see the Sun. (Psalms 58:8)*

Again, not "aborted" but "the untimely birth", i.e., *miscarried*.
You can see *Webster's Dictionary* regarding the difference between the two.

To sum up, the Holy Bible neither approves nor excuses abortion.
And, once it is so, I present here some Scriptures that prohibit that evil.

At the Beginning of our human race, the LORD, our GOD, said:

Therefore shall a Man leave his father and his mother,
and shall cleave unto his Wife: and they shall be One flesh. (Genesis 2:24)

The Seventh Commandment of the Law – *Exodus 20:14* & *Deuteronomy 5:18* – says:

Thou shalt not commit adultery.

That, in my opinion, stops dead taking GOD's Institution of the Family lightly and the very idea of abortion.

Also. it is written:

Know ye not that ye are the Temple of GOD, and that the Spirit of GOD dwelleth in you? If any man defile the Temple of GOD, him shall GOD destroy; for the Temple of GOD is Holy, which Temple ye are. (1Corinthians 3:16-17)

And how would you see the abortion in the Light of this Word?

771

Q: (1) What is the meaning of *Matthew 21:20-22 & Mark 11:23-24*?.
(2) If the Bible does not mean what it says, then what does it mean, and why did they write that?
(3) If the Bible *does* mean what it *literally* says, how do you *logically* avoid the conclusion that Jesus made false promises there?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: It is written,

...Verily I say unto you,
If ye have Faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do this which is done to the fig tree, but also if ye shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; it shall be done. And all things, whatsoever ye shall ask in Prayer, believing, ye shall receive. (Matthew 21:21-22)

... Verily I say unto you,
That whosoever shall say unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou cast into the sea; and shall not doubt in his heart, but shall believe that those things which he saith shall come to pass; he shall have whatsoever he saith. Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them. (Mark 11:23-24)

(1) Our Faith should stand on the Knowledge of GOD's Will in every particular situation. The "show of moving a mountain" might not be what the LORD wills. Even so, note the following –

... this is the Confidence that we have in Him,
that, if we ask any thing according to His Will, He heareth us: and if we know that He hear us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the Petitions that we desired of Him. (1John 5:14-15)

(2) The Bible does mean what it says. The reason why Jesus' Disciples wrote those Scriptures down is the direct Command of the LORD. And that is true regarding all Written Word of GOD –

... Holy Men of GOD
spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2Peter 1:21)

(3) We spoke about the *literal* meaning of the Holy Scriptures in chapter 128 (Q: Literally or figuratively?) Kindly read it. See also the Index section.
Note, Lord Jesus and "false promises" don't mix. Put the satanic "logic" off.

772

Q: *Deuteronomy 21:10-14* is a weird part of the Bible and makes me doubt. Do you have any explanation?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, August 2020.)

A: No such words as “weird” & “doubt”, okay? Try “difficult” & “ponder”. The Scripture says,

> *10 When thou goest forth to war against thine enemies, and the LORD thy GOD hath delivered them into thine hands, and thou hast taken them captive, 11 And seest among the captives a beautiful woman, and hast a desire unto her, that thou wouldest have her to thy Wife; 12 Then thou shalt bring her home to thine house; and she shall shave her head, and pare her nails; 13 And she shall put the raiment of her captivity from off her, and shall remain in thine house, and bewail her father and her mother a full month: and after that thou shalt go in unto her, and be her Husband, and she shall be thy Wife. 14 And it shall be, if thou have no delight in her, then thou shalt let her go whither she will; but thou shalt not sell her at all for money, thou shalt not make merchandise of her, because thou hast humbled her. (Deuteronomy 21:10-14)*

First, let us try to see the above case in the natural.
In human history, a war, being untoward, is not uncommon. And so are P.O.W.
A *beautiful woman* might be seen as a perspective Wife, especially if her beauty is not only outer but inner. For example, she was courageous protecting children, willing to help wounded, and so on. And the less such a Marriage is forced, the better. However, “love at first sight”* might not compulsory lead to a successful Matrimony. After all, by *Verse 10*, she belonged to another culture. So, may she be free, not *sold* to slavery. Don’t be yourself a slave of *mammon*.

Second, we may consider the Scripture from a spiritual standpoint.
Verse 10 is *Spirit War* which we spoke about in chapter 39 (The War outlined). P.O.W. are those who choose Jesus Christ. See, for instance, *Ephesians 4:1*.
Verse 11 – the above-mentioned “love at first sight”* can happen.
Verses 12-13 – the Beginning of a *Christian Family* might be under way.
Verse 14 – after some time passed, the devil caught her back to him (see *Verses 5-7* in *Matthew 13:3-9*). When all is said & done, and you got sure that *Christian Home* could not stand, the couple might part. See chapter 98 (Facing divorce).
At that time, any financial interest should never cross your mind.
* Let us prayerfully seek the Holy Will of our Heavenly Father. *1John 5:14-15*.

773

Q: (1) What is the *difference* between Earning Heaven (by the Old Testament) and being Reborn in Christ (by the New Testament)?.
Q: (2) The Old Testament teaches on Sacrifices & Righteousness as your Way to Heaven, but what I'm confused about is *accepting* and *believing* in Jesus.
Q: (3) According to the Scripture, please explain to me the *difference* between what Jesus says in *John 3:1-21* and being Righteous & Earning Heaven.
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: Before talking about the difference, let's clarify the *similarity*: it was always possible to earn Heaven, even under both Covenants.

(1) That difference is best explained by Apostle Paul.
You may refer to *Hebrews 7:19,26-28; 9:11-17;* etc.
Also, kindly find chapters on the subject of *Salvation* in the Index section.
(2) Regarding *Sacrifices* & *Righteousness*, see *Giving* and *Righteousness* in the same Index. And see there chapters dedicated to *Jesus* as well.
(3) Let us study the Lord Jesus' Words in *John 3:1-21*.

> *Verse 3. ... Verily, Verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the Kingdom of GOD.*

Once we are to get *born again*, our previous life without Father GOD & His Christ cannot lead us to Him. Kindly read *John 14:6*.

> *Verse 5. ... Verily, Verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of Water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the Kingdom of GOD.*

The Teaching is the same as under *Verse 3*, but the stress is made on the *Baptism*. You may see the latter in the Index.

> *Verse 6. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit.*

Here, the Lord clarified the point of our spiritual Rebirth, which is the Promised New heart (spirit) –

A new heart also will I give you,
and a new spirit will I put within you: and I will take away the stony heart out of your flesh, and I will give you an heart of flesh. (Ezekiel 36:26)

Verse 7. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again.

To understand the Word of GOD, we should trust Him, not our *worldly reason*. So, *marvel not*. Read *Proverbs 3:5*. Take a look at chapter 41 (Common sense).

Verse 8. The wind bloweth where it listeth, and thou hearest the sound thereof, but canst not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: so is every one that is born of the Spirit.

Once born again, we don't belong to this unbelieving world.
Read *John 15:19 & 17:14,16*. So often, we don't understand why LORD GOD commanded us this or that or where His Command would lead us, let alone what the unbelievers can figure out by watching our Christian Works.

Verses 9 & 10. ... How can these things be? ... Art thou a Master of Israel, and knowest not these things?

These Words addressed the Shepherds – Pastors, Teachers, Ministers, etc. – who, notwithstanding their Credentials & Certificates, are not yet Worth to be such.
See *Christian Leadership* in the Index.

Verses 11 & 12. Verily, Verily, I say unto thee, We speak that we do know, and testify that we have seen; and ye receive not our Witness. If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how shall ye believe, if I tell you of Heavenly things?

You may kindly see chapter 58 (*K & U & W*). Christians preach & teach per the *Knowledge* received from the Holy Ghost and personal *Testimony*. We explain the *earthly things* by the *Understanding* got from the same Spirit and *in* Him. When encountering unbelief, we *marvel not* but shut up, minding *Matthew 7:6*.

*Verse 13. And no man hath ascended up to Heaven, but He that came down from Heaven, even the Son of Man which is in Heaven. **

Here, Lord Jesus spoke the Truth rejected by many. Note *1Corinthians 6:17*, and remember that we *belong* where our Lord does. * See also chapter 762.

Verses 14 & 15. And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up: that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Eternal Life.

Christ Jesus' death & Resurrection (the Cross & Ascension) are sure Signs of our Salvation by Faith in Him. Believe it.

> *Verses 16-17. For GOD so loved the World, that He gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in Him should not perish, but have Everlasting Life. For GOD sent not His Son into the World to condemn the World; but that the World through Him might be saved.*

See here the incomprehensible Love, Compassion, and Mercy of LORD GOD, the Power surpassing & washing off all dirty evils & ugly sins of humankind.

> *Verse 18. He that believeth on Him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the Name of the only begotten Son of GOD.*

One may find the chapters covering the subjects of *Faith*, *Jesus*, and *Cross of Christ* in our "Q & A" Index. Please also note that *believing* in Christ Jesus, His Name, and His Cross is not all about ignorant traditional "accepting" Him.

> *Verse 19. And this is the condemnation, that Light is come into the World, and men loved darkness rather than Light, because their deeds were evil.*

In the same Index, you can find many chapters dealing with *GOD's Judgment*.
See there also *Satan* and *Spirit War* – all relevant to this Verse.

> *20 For every one that doeth evil hateth the Light, neither cometh to the Light, lest his deeds should be reproved.*

Note well *Genesis 1:4*.
Have a look at chapter 40 on the subject of *compromise*.

> *21 But he that doeth Truth cometh to the Light, that his deeds may be made manifest, that they are wrought in GOD.*

James 1:17 should be noted. We are not supposed to ascribe to ourselves the Works (wrought *in* GOD), which the Holy Spirit of the LORD did, does, and will do *through* us as His Instruments. *Ad Majorem Dei Gloriam* – chapter 677.

To compare Two Covenants, you may see relevant chapters 16, 17, and 18.
Thank you.

774

Q: Was Cain's sacrifice deemed unworthy by GOD through any fault of Cain?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020. Condensed.)

A: It is written,

... And Abel was a keeper of sheep,
but Cain was a tiller of the ground. 3 And in process of time it came to pass, that Cain brought of the fruit of the ground an offering unto the LORD.
4 And Abel, he also brought of the firstlings of his flock and of the fat thereof. And the LORD had Respect unto Abel and to his Offering: 5 But unto Cain and to his offering He had not Respect. And Cain was very wroth, and his countenance fell. 6 And the LORD said unto Cain, Why art thou wroth? and why is thy countenance fallen? 7 If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted? and if thou doest not well, sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire, and thou shalt rule over him. 8 And Cain talked with Abel his brother: and it came to pass, when they were in the field, that Cain rose up against Abel his brother, and slew him. (Genesis 4:2-8)

Here, the key-Verse is seventh. Please see it in other translations:

If you do what is Right, will you not be accepted? But if you do not do what is Right, sin is crouching at your door; it desires to have you, but you must rule over it. (Genesis 4:7, New International Version)

If you do Well [believing Me and doing what is acceptable and pleasing to Me], will you not be accepted? And if you do not do Well [but ignore My Instruction], sin crouches at your door; its desire is for you [to overpower you], but you must master it. (Genesis 4:7, Amplified Bible)

The following Scripture helps us better understand the Judgment of GOD.

... for the LORD seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)

Verse 8 confirms the Warning & Guidance given by our LORD GOD in *Verse 7*. *Genesis 4:5* is GOD's Divine Seeing the heart of Cain. And every sinful heart.
Please read the words of Master Luther quoted in chapter 288 (Christians first), and our conversation, touching the matter in chapter 123 (What if?).
Thank you.

775

Q: Why was Zechariah so severely punished for asking, “how will I know?” of Gabriel (*Luke 1:18-20*), but Abram left unpunished for the same by God in *Genesis 15:8*?.

Q: It seems that questioning the Will of God was the *crux* of Zechariah’s punishment. Why was Abram spared for that?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: It is written,

*5 And He brought him forth abroad, and said, Look now toward Heaven, and tell the Stars, if thou be able to number them: and He said unto him, So shall thy Seed be. 6 And he believed in the LORD; and He counted it to him for Righteousness. 7 And He said unto him, I am the LORD that brought thee out of Ur of the Chaldees, to give thee this land to inherit it. 8 And he said, LORD GOD, whereby shall I know that I shall inherit it? * ... 18 In the same day the LORD made a Covenant with Abram, saying, Unto thy seed have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the Great river, the river Euphrates ... (Genesis 15:5-8,18)*

** But he said, “O LORD GOD, how am I to know that I shall possess it?” (Genesis 15:8, English Standard Version)*

13 ... the Angel said unto him, Fear not, Zacharias: for thy Prayer is heard; and thy Wife Elisabeth shall bear thee a son, and thou shalt call his name John. ... 18 And Zacharias said unto the Angel, Whereby shall I know this? for I am an old man, and my wife well stricken in years. 19 And the Angel answering said unto him, I am Gabriel, that stand in the Presence of GOD; and am sent to speak unto thee, and to shew thee these Glad Tidings.
20 And, behold, thou shalt be dumb, and not able to speak, until the day that these things shall be performed, because thou believest not my Words, which shall be fulfilled in their season. (Luke 1:13,18-20)

Considering *Genesis 15:5-18,* we can see that Brother Abram *believed in the LORD* (*Verse 6*), and, therefore, his question to GOD (*Verse 8*) was not a matter of unbelief. It was more of Communion with his Heavenly Father.

Comparing *Verses 13 & 18* of *Luke Chapter 1*, one can conclude, *Zacharias’* question testified to his doubt in the Answer of GOD to his Prayer. Thus, His Correction (*Verses 19-20*) followed. I would not call it “severe punishment”.

776

Q: Who or what are the *Twenty-Four Elders* worshiping God in *Revelation 4*?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: The following are the respective opinions for us to consider.

> *These are evidently Heavenly Beings, "a pattern" after which David arranged his twenty-four Courses of the Sons of Aaron (1Chronicles 24:3-5).*
> *(E.W. Bullinger, Companion Bible)*

These are generally allowed to have been the emblematic representatives on the whole Church of God, both under the Old and the New Dispensations. ... The number of these Elders may refer to the twenty-four Courses, into which the Priests were divided (1Chronicles 24); or to the Twelve Patriarchs, and Twelve Apostles, as the Heads of the Old and the New Testament Churches.
(Thomas Scott, Holy Bible ... Explanatory Notes ... Revelation)

... everything here decisively declares that they are Saints, and Saints alone ... The very word "Elders" naturally implies this. ... these Thrones and Crowns certify to us also another thing that these are Saints, not only Redeemed, but Glorified. (F.W. Grant, The Numerical Bible ... Revelation)

We remember that this is a Vision, not of what yet is, but of what shall be; and the Twenty-Four Elders stand as Representatives of the whole Church which one day in Glory will worship in the Presence of God Himself.
(W. Barclay, The Daily Study Bible)

One of the most common suggestions derives the number from the Twelve Patriarchs of Israel (i.e., the twelve sons of Jacob) combined with the Twelve Disciples of Jesus. This view is supported by a reference to 21:12-14, John's description of the Wall of the New Jerusalem, which states that "on the Gates are inscribed the names of the Twelve Tribes of the Israelites" and on the Twelve Foundations of the Wall "are the twelve names of the Twelve Apostles of the Lamb". ... On the other hand, human beings seem out of place in this Heavenly scene amidst the Throne of God and the Four Living Creatures. The Elders are probably best understood as Angelic Attendants for God. ... They are Heavenly Exemplars of the Pure Worship of God, Models for the Churches on Earth to follow. (Mitchell G. Reddish, Smyth & Helwys Bible Commentary)

777

Q: (1) Did Jesus' Personality change or develop over time?. Most 33-year-olds see the World very differently from how they did it in 23, 13, or 3.
Q: (2) Did Jesus grow up and develop maturity over time, as mortals must?
Q: (3) Did His Personality change with new experiences, like all mortals?
Q: (4) Or was He born with the Divine and Perfect Personality, which never needed to change?
Q: (5) The process of learning from mistakes and developing wisdom through trial, error, and experience is quite a part of becoming a person. So, when God incarnates Himself as a Man, He could include that part. But Jesus was born Perfect, lived Perfect, and died Perfect, which perhaps deprived Him of those experiences. What do you think?
Q: (6) Or maybe a Perfect kid is different from a Perfect adult, and Jesus had to transition from one to the other?
Q: (7) The vast middle of Jesus' Life is undocumented, making it impossible to answer this empirically. Can your answer be inferred from a theological understanding of Jesus' nature?

(Signed: Jewish Reconstructionist. Edited. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, September 2020.)

A: (1 – 2) It is written,

He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant,
and as a root out of a dry ground ... (Isaiah 53:2)

From these Words, I deduce that Jesus *grew up* just like every human, yet Right *before* GOD. His Godly Personality developed by hearing the Scriptures (read in a Synagogue) and observing the corrupted life (*dry ground*) of the World.
(3 – 4) It is written on,

He is despised and rejected of men; a Man of sorrows,
and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from Him;
He was despised, and we esteemed Him not. (Isaiah 53:3)

Per this Scripture, Lord Jesus' Living, yet Free of errors (*Isaiah 53:2*), was not acceptable to His neighbors. His Life Experience was that of a Righteous Man.
(5) I agree with your reasoning regarding Jesus' Perfection. The latter is from the LORD, our Father. Please read "Child of the Holy Ghost" in *Matthew 1:18*.
(6 – 7) You can also read *John 21:25*, as to why the Bible says so little about the Lord's earthy Life. I think it is so in favor of His Teaching. And the latter is GOD Himself. Kindly note *John 1:14*. Thank you for your good question.

778

Q: (1) Please explain *Matthew 5:22*.

(Signed: *Christian*. *https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020. Condensed. Edited.)

A: It is written,

> *21 Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the Judgment: 22 But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his Brother without a cause shall be in danger of the Judgment: and whosoever shall say to his Brother, Raca*, shall be in danger of the Council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire. 23 Therefore if thou bring thy Gift to the Altar, and there rememberest that thy Brother hath ought against thee; 24 Leave there thy Gift before the Altar, and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy Brother, and then come and offer thy Gift. (Matthew 5:21-24)*

* By *Smith's Bible Dictionary*, *"Raca" denotes a certain looseness of life and manners, while "fool" in the same passage – Matthew 5:22 – means a downright wicked and reprobate person.*

Now, we can consider your other questions.

Q: (2) What is this Verse condemning?

A: The beginning of *Verse 22* is the answer.

> *... whosoever is angry with his Brother without a cause shall be in danger of the Judgment ...*

The Verse condemns those who let *the evil of anger* in their hearts.
You may kindly refer to chapter 293, covering this subject.

To be *angry without a cause* means to hate a *human* instead of a *demon* ruling him (her). See chapter 251 (Hatred & murder).
We also ought to define the term *Brother*, which is to mean, first of all, *Christian* (Brother or Sister).
See, for instance, "Q & A" chapter 21 and *Deuteronomy 17:15* quoted there.

Q: (3) Is it not allowed to insult your brother at all?

A: We should avoid insulting a human – the LORD's Creature.
It is written,

... thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself: I am the LORD.
(Leviticus 19:18)

In the Light of this Scripture, we can speak roughly with our Brothers *if* we are no less strict with ourselves, and our point is not to insult but rather, correct & bring back to the Christian way, which is lost.

Note how many times the term *fool* is used in the Bible. Every time it is spoken by our Heavenly Father, we get His Teaching. But spoken by men, it is so often the unwise insult.

Q: (4) Should I assume this extends to all family members or close neighbors?

A: Yes, you should, extending it even more. Kindly see the answer to your question (2). Generally, the term *Brother* may broad to every human – per *Malachi 2:10* – not only kin & friends.

Q: (5) Does it specifically has to do with questioning intelligence?

A: It has, especially if we define *intelligence* as Knowledge & Understanding. See chapters: 58 (K & U & W), 141 (criticism), & 605 (anger & criticism).

Q: (6) Or shall we connect it specifically with an *insult*?

A: Yes, because an *insult* is so often the cause of responsive *hostility.*
The latter, in turn, is the aim of the devil. Thus, the earlier mentioned chapter 251 (hatred & murder) is relevant again.

Q: (7) Or else, does it presume the above context of insulting a person when one is so angry at him (her) *without a cause*?

A: Please, go back to the answer to your question (2). The connection is clear. When we are *angry without a cause*, the insulting is always ready at hand.

Q: (8) But does it mean it is all right with a Just cause?

A: Kindly read the words of Brother Martin Luther at the end of chapter 293.

Q: (9) What is an insult?

A: *The Oxford Dictionary of Current English (1993)* shortly defined "insult" thus: *(verb) 1 speak to or treat with scornful abuse. 2 offend the self-respect or modesty of. (noun) insulting remark or action.*
You may kindly look it up in other sources, say, *Webster's Dictionaries*.
Within the meaning of *Matthew 5:22*, insult has a form of verbal offense and includes criticism & lie (chapter 177). See also chapter 132 (tongue).

Q: (10) Is it just pointing out a deficiency that could potentially be a problem?

A: Sometimes, *a problem* is in the eye of the beholder. Note *Matthew 7:3-5*.
Again, kindly have a look at chapter 141 (the evil of criticism).

Q: (11) I am under the assumption that this Text is saying: you should not insult someone purely out of anger or malice, and especially not to their face.

A: I would say we should *try* to avoid insulting anyone at all. *Romans 12:18*.
Your words, "especially not to their face" require clarification, as they might allow one to speak something wrong behind the back, secretively.
You may refer to chapter 31 (Speaking the Truth in Love).

Q: (12) Am I mistaken, and this Text is alluding to something more specific?

A: You are certainly not mistaken in your Bible Study.
What I may add to your assumptions is seeing *Verse 22* as linked up with *Verse 21*. It presumes the evil way of *anger – murder*.
Again, you may read chapter 251 (Hatred & murder).

Speaking on about *Matthew 5:21-24*, we may find another connection with the subsequent *Verses 23 & 24*, even how the absence of Love & Peace stands in the Way of Sincere Giving. Kindly mind *Genesis 4:3-8* discussed in chapter 774.
Our Heavenly Father wants the Purity of our hearts. Remember *Matthew 5:8*.
In this "Q & A", you may find chapter 116 (Pure in heart).
The Gift Desired per *Matthew 5:24 i*s the one corresponding to the Scripture –

Hath the LORD as Great Delight in Burnt Offerings and Sacrifices,
as in Obeying the Voice of the LORD? Behold, to obey is better than Sacrifice,
and to hearken than the fat of rams. (1Samuel 15:22)

779

Q: *A feast is made for laughter, and wine maketh merry:*
but money answereth all things. (Ecclesiastes 10:19)

Any clarification about what Solomon means in this Verse?
(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, October 2020.)

A: Let us first check it out with another translation.

For mirth they are making a feast, and wine maketh life joyful, and the silver answereth with all. (Ecclesiastes 10:19, Young's Literal Translation)

I believe Brother Solomon, led by the Holy Ghost (Kindly mind *2Peter 1:20-21*.) sketched what he observed in contemporary society.
He also (heard from the Spirit and) wrote this –

The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be;
and that which is done is that which shall be done:
and there is no new thing under the Sun. (Ecclesiastes 1:9)

We can see *Ecclesiastes 10:19* from two angles – worldly and Godly.
Worldly folks make a feast, whether national or personal, for many reasons – to rest from work, meet friends, follow a tradition, etc. Wine or other strong drink is usually present to promote joy, especially if the latter cannot come over otherwise to some characters. You may see chapter 589 (The evil of alcoholism).
In a heathen society, money is crucial because, besides being the *lawful* remuneration for a job done, it *unlawfully* "helps" to solve or avoid problems.

They will sow wheat but reap thorns;
they will wear themselves out but gain nothing.
They will bear the shame of their harvest because of the LORD's Fierce Anger.
(Jeremiah 12:13, New International Version)

In our "Q & A" You may refer to chapters 297 (The evil of corruption) & 438 (The evil power named mammon).
In the Church of GOD, the Feasts are subject to the Holy Bible. We touched on that subject in chapter 157 (The Feasts).
Wine is not prohibited when ruled by the spirit. Read *Ephesians 5:18*.
Money indeed matters in Giving. See chapter 56 (The Test of Giving).

780

These questions came up at our Small Group meeting.
(*Non-denominational Christian Church* "The Word of Life".)

Q: What's the meaning of those many descriptions given in *Exodus 25 – 30*?
Q: Should we follow them (and how?) or take them as outdated?

A: In chapter 128 (*Literally or figuratively*), we spoke about those two meanings and the term *Scripturally* was found appropriate.
Chapter 104 (*Our Promised Teacher*) directs us to the *Holy Ghost*.
Chapter 102 (*The Strategy*) advises seeing the *Spiritual* meaning first.

So, look for the *Spiritual* meaning of those descriptions, all to be followed.
Besides, the parallel Verses are always very helpful. Remember the Scripture:

Seek ye out of the book of the LORD, and read: no one of these shall fail,
none shall want her mate: for My Mouth it hath commanded,
and His Spirit it hath gathered them. (Isaiah 34:16)

Don't wear clothes causing sweat for the Church Services – *Ezekiel 44:18.*
The outfit of a Priest has a spiritual meaning –
Apocrypha: Wisdom 18:21-25; Sirach 45:7-12; & 50:11.

Our Spiritual Clothes –
See *Genesis 1:4* in conjunction with *Numbers 15:37-41 & Deuteronomy 22:12*.
The outfit of Salvation & Righteousness – *Isaiah 61:10; & Revelation 16:15.*
The Wedding Garment – *Matthew 22:11-13* (chapter 207); & *Revelation 19:8.*
The White Raiment – *Revelation 3:5,17-18; & 7:14.*

By *Exodus 19:10*, the Sanctification & clean clothes are inseparable.
Ezekiel 42:14 & 44:19 require the *Separation* of the Priest's Holy Clothes.
See the same in *Exodus 40:12-15* & *Leviticus 16:23-24*.
Job 38:3 & 40:7 command that our clothes should be neat.

Kindly note that nothing in the Holy Bible is "outdated".
In chapters 15 (GOD First), 71 (Prayer Veil), and 544 (Our Dress Code), we discussed the implementation of the Scriptures describing the Holy clothes.

The same approach will help us to understand all details of the old Tabernacle and, later on, the First Temple built by King Solomon.

781

Q: Jacob used striped branches to get speckled flocks. Did Jacob cast a spell?

And Jacob took him rods of green poplar, and of the hazel and chesnut tree; and pilled white strakes in them, and made the white appear which was in the rods. And he set the rods which he had pilled before the flocks in the gutters in the watering troughs when the flocks came to drink, that they should conceive when they came to drink. And the flocks conceived before the rods, and brought forth cattle ringstraked, speckled, and spotted.
(Genesis 30:37-39)

It seems a strange husbandry technique and more like *witchcraft*.
I don't see in the Bible where *God* told him to do this to get Blessed.
(Signed: *Christian*.
https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian, November 2020.)

A: If one doesn't see something, it doesn't mean the thing is absent.
Kindly consider the following Scripture –

So Naaman came with his horses and with his chariot, and stood at the door of the house of Elisha. And Elisha sent a messenger unto him, saying, Go and wash in Jordan seven times, and thy flesh shall come again to thee, and thou shalt be clean. But Naaman was wroth, and went away, and said, Behold, I thought, he will surely come out to me, and stand, and call on the Name of the LORD his God, and strike his hand over the place, and recover the leper. Are not Abana and Pharpar, rivers of Damascus, better than all the waters of Israel? May I not wash in them, and be clean? So he turned and went away in a rage. And his servants came near, and spake unto him, and said, My father, if the Prophet had bid thee do some great thing, wouldest thou not have done it? How much rather then, when he saith to thee, Wash, and be clean? Then went he down, and dipped himself seven times in Jordan, according to the saying of the Man of GOD: and his flesh came again like unto the flesh of a little child, and he was clean. (2Kings 5:9-14)

The above Words have the same relevance to medicine as *Genesis 30:37-39* to the husbandry. So, other than by the Command from the Holy Ghost, hardly that trick with striped sticks might be reasonable & profitable. And so much was jumping into the waters of Jordan river.

Trust the LORD with all thine heart;
and learn not unto thine own understanding. (Proverbs 3:5)

782

I have a few questions on *Genesis 3*.

Q: (1) In *Genesis 3*, God expelled Adam and Eve from Eden to prevent them from eating from the Tree of Life in order for them to not live forever. (?)

A: That is *your* understanding of *Genesis 3:22-24*.
But kindly read the rest of the Holy Bible, and the LORD will reveal you more to that. In particular, Eternity, the Love of GOD, the Law of Harvest.

Q: (2) From what I've seen in other online explanations, this seems to avoid them both physically and spiritually living forever away from God and in a state of sin (as we are today). Is it so?

A: You can say that. However, "other online explanations", with all respect, are not compulsorily the Source of Truth. The diligent Bible Study is.

Q: (3) However, (and although without physical immortality) separation from God (hell, the second death, etc.,) is also a sequence of rejecting Jesus, yes?

A: That's correct. "Physical immortality" started & stopped at Adam & Eve.
You may put "sinful attitude" instead of "etc."

Q: (4) Does that mean the (only?) difference between the two situations is the opportunity to choose for the second time (i.e., first: not to eat versus eat, and second: Jesus versus living in sin)?

A: Hardly you can find any "differences" or "variations" with the LORD, our GOD & His Perfect Judgment.
Please, read *Ecclesiastes 9:4* & *Malachi 3:6*.
See also our discussion in chapter 537 (A second chance).

Q: (5) What did God mean when He said,

"The Man has now become like one of Us, knowing good and evil."?

A: In chapters 128, 221, 266, 342, and 440, the subject of *GOD's Sarcasm* is mentioned. You may kindly take a look.
I also provide here the words of *Master Luther*.

These Words contain Sarcasm and most bitter Derision. Some inquire, therefore, why it is that GOD here deals so harshly with the miserable Adam? How it is that, after he had been robbed of all his Glory, and had fallen into sin and death, he is goaded, in addition to all this, by his Maker, with this most bitter Reflection passed upon him. Was it not enough, they ask, that he should wear this visible Sign which should perpetually remind him of his lost Glory and his present calamity, but he must bear also, in addition, this audible Word from the LORD GOD? To all which I reply – Adam had the Promise of Mercy given to him ; and with that he ought to have lived content. But in order that he might the more deeply fear, and the more carefully guard against all future sin, there is spoken to him this bitter Memorial Word also. For GOD foresaw what kind of men Adam's posterity would be ; and, therefore, He puts this Word into his mouth, that he might preach it to his posterity ; and might teach them, as a Warning, that by his wishing to become like GOD, he became like unto the devil ; in order that they also, being thus warned, might not add to that sin of their first parents, their own sins, and so depart still farther from GOD.

(Martin Luther, The Creation:
A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis,
Originally published at Witenberg in the year of our Lord 1544; and now
first translated into English, by Henry Cole, Edinburgh, 1858, pp 296-297.)

Q: (6) Did He mean it the way the *serpent* did a few Verses back?

A: Hey, you please watch the comparisons you make, okay?

Q: (7) Is Eve's understanding in *Genesis 3:2-3* incorrect?
Q: (8) If yes, whose fault is it?

A: Our understanding & obedience might mismatch. That is *our* fault.

Q: (9) And why did a form of misunderstanding exist in Perfect Creation?
Q: (10) If not, is this a poetic language or a deeper understanding of what God said initially?

A: The Perfect Creation of GOD included His Image & Likeness in us and our Free Will. Misconstruction, misconduct, &c., are *our* faults, not LORD's.
For "poetic language", you may go to poetry.
As for "deeper understanding", please see the answer to your question 2.

(*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*, December 2020. Edited.)

783

Q: Brother, how to implement *Leviticus 7:15-18* & *19:5-8* today?

A: It is written:

> *15 ... the flesh of the Sacrifice of his Peace Offerings for Thanksgiving shall be eaten the same day that it is offered; he shall not leave any of it until the morning. 16 But if the Sacrifice of his Offering be a Vow, or a Voluntary Offering, it shall be eaten the same day that he offereth his Sacrifice: and on the morrow also the remainder of it shall be eaten: 17 But the remainder of the flesh of the Sacrifice on the third day shall be burnt with fire. 18 And if any of the flesh of the Sacrifice of his Peace Offerings be eaten at all on the third day, it shall not be accepted, neither shall it be imputed unto him that offereth it: it shall be an abomination, and the soul that eateth of it shall bear his iniquity. (Leviticus 7:15-18)*

> *5 ... if ye offer a Sacrifice of Peace Offerings unto the LORD, ye shall offer it at your own will. 6 It shall be eaten the same day ye offer it, and on the morrow: and if ought remain until the third day, it shall be burnt in the fire. 7 And if it be eaten at all on the third day, it is abominable; it shall not be accepted. 8 Therefore every one that eateth it shall bear his iniquity, because he hath profaned the Hallowed thing of the LORD: and that soul shall be cut off from among his people. (Leviticus 19:5-8)*

First. Let us remember that *Animal Sacrifices* were forever discontinued by the Substitutional Sacrifice of Christ, but our *Sacrificial Giving* to GOD remained.

Second. We ought to pay attention to *Leviticus 19:5*.

> *If ye offren a Sacrifice of Pesible thingis to the LORD, that it be quemeful* (Placable, Forgiving). *(Leviticus 19:5, John Wycliffe Bible)*
> This translation is well in line with Forgiving per *Matthew 5:23-24*.

> *Now when you offer a Sacrifice of Peace Offerings to the LORD, you shall offer it so that you may be accepted. (Leviticus 19:5, The Amplified Bible)*
> And this translation reminds us of Giving Acceptable per *Genesis 4:7*.

Third. Once the literal meaning of *Leviticus 7:15-18* & *19:5-8* is not befitting, the word "*eaten*" has the spiritual idea only – *to be fed by the Truth of GOD* – so that the Sincerity of our Giving would be *proved* and *accepted* (cf., *Malachi 3:10*).

784

Q: Please take the following Verses on which to base your meditations:
Psalm 139:21; Mark 8:31; & Acts 4:12.
(*https://www.forwardmovement.org* – April 2021.)

A: Roger that.

Do not I hate them, O LORD, that hate Thee?
and am not I grieved with those that rise up against Thee? (Psalm 139:21)

May this Scripture be our sincere Statement to the LORD, our GOD.

Hardly atheists can *hate* Who they don't believe in. The same can be said about those who follow some other gods or deities.
To indeed *hate* the LORD, our Heavenly Father, means to think, speak, and talk contrary to what He teaches us in His Written Word.

For Christians, to *hate* the enemies of GOD does not mean a mere worldly enmity toward folks who are sinners, unbelievers, blasphemers, compromisers, etc. We are supposed to hate *the evil one* rather than his human puppets.
But how to fight evil?
Firstly, avoid becoming those enemies yourselves –

For many walk, of whom I have told you often, and now tell you even weeping,
that they are the enemies of the Cross of Christ: whose end is destruction,
whose god is their belly, and whose glory is in their shame,
who mind earthly things. (Philippians 3:18-19)

And, secondly, by following our Great Commission as per *Matthew 28:19-20.*

***

And He began to teach them, that the Son of Man must suffer many things,
and be rejected of the Elders, and of the Chief Priests, and Scribes, and be killed,
and after three days rise again. (Mark 8:31)

There & then, that Prophecy was indeed a Revelation for the first Disciples of Christ Jesus. It was hard for them to believe that the Officials mentioned were capable of such evil –

Who then can be saved? (Matthew 19:25)

However, the days were to come when personal experience and sufferings well supported the Words of Lord Jesus –

They shall put you out of the Synagogues: Yea, the time cometh,
that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service. (John 16:2)

The same we read in the Blessed *Book of Martyrs*, written by Brother John Fox.

To follow the Example of our Lord Jesus and His Disciples, don't look for persecutions. They will find you, Satan will see to it. Remember *Matthew 10:22.*
But shall we forget the Words of Jesus?

... If any man will come after Me, let him deny himself, and take up his Cross,
and follow Me. For whosoever will save his life shall lose it:
and whosoever will lose his life for My sake shall find it. (Matthew 16:24-25)

***

Neither is there Salvation in any other: for there is none other name
under Heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved. (Acts 4:12)

To obtain our Promised Salvation, even by the Name of Jesus, we should believe in that Name wholeheartedly. Please mind *Acts 10:43*. See chapter 577.
But how to do it any other way than by following the Teaching of our Blessed Lord per *John 8:31-32* as well as asking yourself "What would Jesus do?" whatever hard circumstances & conditions we may find ourselves in?

But as many as received Him, to them gave He Power
to become the Sons of GOD, even to them that believe on His Name:
which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man,
but of GOD. (John 1:12-13)

By *Mark 16:17-18,* in the Name of Jesus, we should cast out devils.
So, pray & give Thanks to our Father GOD in this Precious Name for all Good Works done by Him through ourselves (*Colossians 3:17*).
And simply call *Jesus* when the End of the World or that of your Life comes.

And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the Name of the Lord
shall be saved. (Acts 2:21)

785

Q: How can we possibly implement *Deuteronomy 7:1-5* nowadays?

A: It is written:

1 When the LORD thy GOD shall bring thee into the Land whither thou goest to possess it, and hath cast out many nations before thee, the Hittites, and the Girgashites, and the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites, seven nations greater and mightier than thou; 2 And when the LORD thy GOD shall deliver them before thee; thou shalt smite them, and utterly destroy them; thou shalt make no covenant with them, nor shew mercy unto them:
3 Neither shalt thou make marriages with them; thy daughter thou shalt not give unto his son, nor his daughter shalt thou take unto thy son. 4 For they will turn away thy son from following Me, that they may serve other gods: so will the Anger of the LORD be kindled against you, and destroy thee suddenly. 5 But thus shall ye deal with them; ye shall destroy their altars, and break down their images, and cut down their groves, and burn their graven images with fire. (Deuteronomy 7:1-5)

Verse 1.
Those seven nations stand for a large mass of people in this heathen world serving Satan. Those folks are indeed greater in number than Christians – statistically five times, actually even more. They are mighty, for there is no one Christian state on the face of Earth. See "Q & A" chapter 55 (Christian Country).

Verse 2.
But Christians are Powerful, as their LORD GOD is with them. Note *John 16:33.* We are commissioned to fight the evil world being armed per *Ephesians 6:10-17.* Any *via media* with the world is forbidden. See chapter 40 (Compromise).

Verses 3-4.
Christians should not build families with unbelievers. Such a household would never follow the LORD and the Wroth of our Father GOD will surely follow.
See chapters 60 (Christian Family) & 64 (GOD's Punishment).

Verse 5.
We should jettison from our lives all the values of this world, viz., everything contradicting the Written Word of GOD. You may consider chapter 287 (We are not of the world) and every chapter subtitled "Spirit War".

786

Q: How should we implement *Chapter 14* of the Book of *Deuteronomy*?

A: Please open your Bible on that Scripture.

Verses 1-2.
We should not follow the customs & traditions of unbelievers.
As for honoring our dead by whatever memorials, no disrespect, may the funerals be decent, but would it not be much better to look after our loved ones while they are still with us?
Kindly remember *Ecclesiastes 9:4* & *Hebrews 3:13*.
Please see also "Q & A" chapters 12 (Funeral) & 426 (The house of mourning).

Verse 3.
Right *spiritual* food should have our due attention, whereas the spiritual poison of the world must be rejected.
You may see these chapters: 102 (The Strategy), 106 (Feeding our spirit), and 107 (Feeding our soul).

Verses 4-20.
The reason why, in addition to rich *vegetarian* food given per *Genesis 1:29-30*, later on by *Genesis 9:3*, *non-vegetarian* food was allowed too and, by these Verses furthermore divided into *clean* and *unclean*, was our human *sinfulness* affecting our natural bodies and wildlife.
Kindly consider chapter 74 (Shall we eat flesh?)

Verse 21.
Again, *spiritual* meaning goes first. We should not consume the *spiritual* food of the unbelieving world – books, magazines, newspapers, TV programs, etc. – as being *spiritually* dead, unclean, and poisonous. Repudiate heathen cruelty.

Verses 22-29.
Our Sacrificial Giving to the LORD, our GOD, and His Charitable Works – supporting Christian Ministries, widows & orphans, foreigners, and all people in need – by Tithes & Offerings are hereby reminded. A part of our Offerings may be spent on personal Christian Education.
Please, refer to chapter 476 (the question on *Deuteronomy Chapter 12*).

You are welcome to our Index section for all references.

787

Q: Speaking of the *Book of Deuteronomy*, how to implement its *23rd Chapter*?

A: Kindly open your Bible on *Deuteronomy 23*.
Please, go to <*https://www.biblegateway.com*> for different translations.

Verse 1 deals with transgender perverters. It is the last letter in "LGBT".
Please see chapter 712 (The synagogue of Satan) and the second discussion (about gender transition) in chapter 182 (Sexual perversions).

Brother Thomas Scott thus commented on this Verse –

... This would tend to discourage parents from thus mutilating their children; a practice which was exceedingly common in those ages and countries. To this, they might often be induced by the custom which prevailed, of employing eunuchs in the houses of the great and the courts of princes: so that they often rose to the highest posts of honour & authority (2Kings 20:17-18 & Daniel 1:3-7).

Verse 2 speaks about & to every non-Christian born from non-Christian parents.
Verses 3 – 8 are about those who followed false religions.

Verse 9 reminds us about Holiness as our Mighty Spiritual weapon.
Verses 10 – 14 teach us physical & spiritual hygiene.

Verses 15 & 16 command us to be hospitable to refugees from other countries.
Verse 17 reminds us of the Seventh Commandment of the Holy Law of GOD.

Verse 18 demands us to offer to our Father GOD only what is Honestly earned.
Verses 19 – 20 remind us about the Eleventh Commandment and forbid usury.

Verses 21 – 23 warn us to be careful about our Vows to the LORD, our GOD.
Verses 24 – 25 remind us about the Eighth Commandment of the Holy Law.

Notwithstanding the Prohibitions, which *Verses 1 – 8* imposed upon all non-Christians, as well as regarding those mentioned in *Verses 15 & 16*, all who proved their Repentance and come to our Lord Jesus are welcome by Him.

... if any man be in Christ, he is a New Creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become New. (2Corinthians 5:17)

788

Q: Brother, let us consider *Chapter 26* of the *Book of Deuteronomy* from the same standpoint of implementation we did previously.

A: Kindly open your Bible on *Deuteronomy 26* and see <*https://www.biblegateway.com*> for different translations.

Verses 1-4.
Here & now, the First Fruits of the Promised Land brought by Israelites to those ancient places of Worship ought to continue by Christians. Why so? See it as the foreshadow & symbols of the spiritual First Fruits we bring to our Local Christian Churches, especially if it is our first Acts of Giving to our LORD GOD.

Verses 5-11.
In these Scriptures, you & I may recognize our coming to Christ Jesus in answer to His Calling us through His Servants, the Preachers. For that was our Exodus from that heathen Egypt – the world of unbelievers. And such was our first Christian Testimony, followed by many others.

> *If a man rise from poverty to aflluence, and forget his former state, he becomes proud, insolent, and oppressive. If a Christian Convert forget his former state, the rock whence he was hewn, and the hole of the pit whence he was digged, he soon becomes careless, unthankful, and unholy.*
> *(Adan Clarke, Commentary, The Old Testament, Vol.1, 1843)*

Verse 12.
It reminds us of Tithing and their right directions – to the Full-time Servants of the LORD GOD and those in need. Kindly refer to "Q & A" chapter 6 (Tithes).

Verses 13-15.
Here is our Communion with the LORD, even Prayers for our Sacrificial Giving to be accepted and taken Care of, lest they might be misused or dissipated.

Verses 16-19.
And here we read about our Covenant with LORD GOD, our Heavenly Father.

So,

Keep all the Commandments which I command you this day.
(Deuteronomy 27:1)

789

Q: Let us also consider the Guidance of *Deuteronomy 28* for here & now.

A: Okay, kindly get your Bible ready.

Verse 1. Here as well as in many other relevant Verses of the Holy Bible, the "if" reminds us that all Promises of the LORD, our Father, are Conditional. The Condition can be worded this simple way: our Faithfulness & Obedience to Him.

Verse 2. The Blessings from our Father GOD far exceed our understanding.

Verse 3. Our every walk of Life would be backed by the LORD GOD.

Verses 4, 11, 12, & 13. Those Blessings cover our children, land, and animals.

Verse 5. Blessed are our income and home.

Verse 6. A Husband will be loved by his Wife (leaving for his work & coming back from it in Peace). See "Q & A" chapter 60 (Christian Family).

Verse 7. We can see here the Spirit War matters. For in *one way* – aiming at our weakest point – the devil may approach our mind. But, met by the Power of Faith, he will surely flee in *seven ways*, say, defeated in such areas as Health & Healing, Prosperity & Fruitfulness, Knowledge & Understanding & Wisdom, Righteousness & Justice, Peace & Joy, Love & Mercy, Charity & Giving.

Verse 8. Our needs are met and business is successful. We feel comfortable in our land. See "Q & A" chapters 53 (The Peace of GOD) & 55 (Christian Country).

Verse 9. We belong among the Holy People of GOD and His Church.

Verse 10. Our country is politically safe (regardless of her military if any).
This Power is determined only by our Faithfulness to LORD GOD.

Verses 11-13. In every way, we are the most Prosperous in the World.

Verse 14. No compromises. See chapter 40 (Compromise).

Verses 15 & 45. As in *Verses 1–2*, the Warnings of LORD GOD are Conditional too. Disobedient to His Word, we get cursed above our reasoning accordingly.

Verses 16–24. Obstinate & godless, we get cursed in our every work, finances, home, family, children, life-stock, and land. We are deprived of Love, Peace, & Health. Nature is cursed around us. We have no peace with our neighbors.

Verses 25, 26, 49, 50, & 51. We lose our spirit battles and get the terror of wars.

Verses 27, 28, & 29. We are lost to physical & mental illnesses and impoverished.

Verses 30, 31, 32, 33, & 41. In every possible way – family, home, business – we and our children are slaves in this evil world. Here, we can see spiritual reasons above natural ones. For old Babylonian captivity had come and passed away so long ago altogether with those ancient Jews, but satanic captivity is still present all around the World. Thus the Harvest Law works. See chapters 64, 503 & 508.

Verses 34 & 35. Reaping our due, we are spiritually & physically broken.

Verses 36, 37, 43, 44, 47, & 48. We and our country are no more stable, strong, and independent. We are lost to slavery. See chapter 539 (Freedom and slavery).

Verses 38, 39, 40, & 42. Our land becomes a fruitless desert. Chapter 44 (B & C).

Verse 46. Not only at those times & to old Israel but at all times, everywhere, and to everybody disobedience to our LORD GOD and evil consequences thereof serve as Signs & Wonders. You may consider chapter 58 (K & U & W).

Verse 52–57. Disobedience to GOD makes us brutal beasts. That happened when Jerusalem had fallen in AD 70. And the more we would search history, the more fearful examples of evil fruits of disobedience to GOD can be found there.

Verses 58-68. The worst thing is that evil way makes us the enemies of GOD. Sadly enough, all these Fearful Verses had come true in the history of the people of Israel as well as all the nations which had never followed the Way of Truth.

Verses 59 & 61. Meet the bloody “corona” virus – for the same spiritual reason.

Verse 68. Unemployment is mentioned. I know what it means. Do you?

My People are destroyed for lack of Knowledge:
because thou hast rejected Knowledge, I will also reject thee ... (Hosea 4:6)

790

Q: Let us discuss *Chapter 7* of the *Book of Joshua*.

A: Kindly open your Bible on that Chapter.

In *Joshua 6:17-19*, our LORD GOD by His Servant Joshua commanded:

> *... the city shall be accursed, even it, and all that are therein, to the LORD: only Rahab the harlot shall live, she and all that are with her in the house, because she hid the messengers that we sent. And ye, in any wise keep yourselves from the accursed thing, lest ye make yourselves accursed, when ye take of the accursed thing, and make the Camp of Israel a curse, and trouble it. But all the silver, and gold, and vessels of brass and iron, are consecrated unto the LORD: they shall come into the Treasury of the LORD.*

By that Scripture, we are warned to be Holy & separated from the heathen world, welcoming from the latter only those who proved friendly to Christians. We are to distance ourselves from the treasures of the world. See *Philippians 3:8*.
You may see parallel chapters 40 (Compromise), 121 (How to make Friends?), 287 (We are not of the world), & 438 (The evil power named mammon).

Chapter 7 of the *Book of Joshua* teaches us what happens when we act contrary to the Holy Will & the Written Word of GOD.
Consider relevant chapter 87 (Discipline in the Church).

Verse 1.
It took only one person to listen to the lying voice of the devil,

> *... and the Anger of the LORD was kindled against the Children of Israel.*

Behold, our Heavenly Father sees His Church as One Body. Even so, we should look after the Local Christian Congregation we are Members of.
See chapter 531 (Our Congregational Unity).

Verses 2-5.
We are not supposed to underestimate our enemy – the demonic forces of Satan. Nor should worldly reason be allowed to horn in on spiritual matters where it does not belong.
See chapters 39 *(*The War outlined) & 41 (Common sense).

Verses 6-9.
Searching the Written Word of GOD, our Shepherds ought to seek His Holy Will and the Guidance of the Holy Spirit well before an important step to be taken by the Church, not after her failure. Kindly see chapter 436 (The Shepherds).

Verses 10-12.
Our Heavenly Father reminds us that our spiritual Battles are His and our Faithfulness to the LORD Almighty is crucial to winning therein.
See chapter 90 (Faithfulness to GOD).

Verses 13-21.
The reason for whatever spiritual defeat we should see in ourselves rather than in LORD GOD. The best way for such a search is the Sacrament of Confession.
That sincere Christian conversation – Confession – always opens the eyes of Believers to the evil done by them.
In the Index, you may find the relevant chapters for *Confession*.

Verses 22-26.
There & then, even though the sorrow was shown by that sinner, the death penalty commanded by the LORD, our GOD, was justified.
Kindly refer to chapter 95 (Capital punishment).

... Yea, let GOD be True, but every man a liar;
as it is written, That thou mightest be justified in Thy Sayings,
and mightest overcome when Thou art judged. (Romans 3:4)

Far as I can comprehend, every Verdict of our Father GOD is Just –

... for the LORD seeth not as man seeth;
for man looketh on the outward appearance,
but the LORD looketh on the heart. (1Samuel 16:7)

See the Index – *GOD's Judgment & Justice* – open any chapter mentioned there.

Here & now, the compulsory disciplinary measure is the excommunication of a sinner from a Local Church, Prayer Team, or Christian Ministry.
Kindly consider chapters 461 (Discover your Ministry) & 465 (A Prayer Team).

Last but not least, our every error, especially not repented of and confessed, negatively affects our entire Congregation.

791

Q: Brother, is there any reasonable explanation to *Joshua 10:12-13*?

A: Nothing in the Holy Bible has “any reasonable explanation”.
Please see chapter 41 (Common sense) and try to keep *worldly reason* within those simple matters where it belongs.
It is written:

And God said, Let there be light:
and there was light. (Genesis 1:3)

12 Then spake Joshua to the LORD in the day when the LORD delivered up the Amorites before the children of Israel, and he said in the sight of Israel, Sun, stand thou still upon Gibeon; and thou, Moon, in the valley of Ajalon. 13 And the Sun stood still, and the Moon stayed, until the people had avenged themselves upon their enemies. Is not this written in the Book of Jasher? So the Sun stood still in the midst of Heaven, and hasted not to go down about a whole day. (Joshua 10:12-13)

If I’m not much mistaken, that was in Syria in 1983. In broad daylight, I saw “two Suns in the sky” at about 30 degrees from one another. It was impossible to look straight at any of them – the real one and the fake – so bright they were.
That phenomenon is known as *parhelion* and is explained as a bright spot appearing in the sky on either side of the Sun, caused by the refraction (bending) of light through ice crystals in a high cloud. You can find a short article on the subject written by Mr. John Neville (last checked on June 2026) –
<https://www.quora.com/Why-am-I-seeing-two-suns-in-our-sky?share=1>.

That “fake sun”, I think, can be presumed as one of many a way for our LORD GOD to keep daylight more than its usual length there & then without making any changes to the movement of the Sun, Earth, and Moon. The light from the Sun, which is “beyond the horizon” (geometrically), might be thus sent to a high cloud and reflected down on Earth.

Yet this guess of mine in no way questions the interpretations given by Brothers John Calvin, Thomas Scott, Adam Clarke, and others. (One can find them in the Reference section of this “Q & A”.)
They (and I) Rightfully stand on what is written –

... with GOD all things are possible. (Matthew 19:26)

792

Q: Brother, what are your thoughts on *Psalm 2*?

A: The first thought crossing my mind is the Psalm well describes our present.

> *1 Why do the heathen rage, and the people imagine a vain thing? 2 The Kings of the Earth set themselves, and the Rulers take counsel together, against the LORD, and against His Anointed, saying, 3 Let us break their bands asunder, and cast away their cords from us.*

Most (if not all) modern countries are non-Christian. See chapter 55 (Christian Country). Their policies are Satan-inspired. See chapter 36 (The power of Satan).

> *4 He that sitteth in the Heavens shall laugh: the LORD shall have them in Derision. 5 Then shall He speak unto them in His Wrath, and vex them in His Sore Displeasure. 6 Yet have I set My King upon My Holy Hill of Zion.*

All Written Word of GOD backs these Verses. Chapter 64 (GOD's Punishment). Recognized & worshipped or not – *Jesus is Lord*. See the Index for "Jesus".

> *7 I will declare the Decree: the LORD hath said unto Me, Thou art My Son; this day have I begotten Thee. 8 Ask of Me, and I shall give Thee the heathen for Thine Inheritance, and the uttermost parts of the Earth for Thy Possession. 9 Thou shalt break them with a Rod of Iron; Thou shalt dash them in pieces like a potter's vessel.*

Behold the Words our Father GOD gave to our Lord Jesus Christ, His Church, and every Christian. *Inheritance* & *Possession* have their spiritual interpretation. Mind well *1Corinthians 6:17*.

> *10 Be Wise now therefore, O ye Kings: be Instructed, ye Judges of the Earth. 11 Serve the LORD with Fear, and rejoice with trembling. 12 Kiss the Son, lest He be Angry, and ye perish from the way* (or, *the Way*), *when His Wrath is kindled but a little. Blessed are all they that put their Trust in him.*

These lines are self-explanatory. And sad they are, since the Seeds of Wisdom mostly fall on a hard ground of unbelief, worldly reason, and other foolishness.

> *The fool hath said in his heart, There is no God. (Psalms 14:1 & 53:1)*

Q: Let's talk about the *Tenth Psalm*. What about the implementation?

A: Good question. Please have several Bible translations at hand.

> *1 Why standest Thou afar off, O LORD? Why hidest Thou Thyself in times of trouble?*

Verse 1. This or that way, the question is repeated in many *Psalms* and well pictures our lack of Understanding. We are those who do nothing and hopelessly wait that our Heavenly Father will do our job.

> *2 The wicked in his pride doth persecute the poor: let them be taken in the devices that they have imagined. 3 For the wicked boasteth of his heart's desire, and blesseth the covetous, whom the LORD abhorreth. 4 The wicked, through the pride of his countenance, will not seek after GOD: GOD is not in all his thoughts. 5 His ways are always grievous; Thy Judgments are far above out of his sight: as for all his enemies, he puffeth at them.*
> (Expanded Bible: ... *they make fun of their enemies*.)

Verse 2. The spiritually blind servants of Satan are doomed. *Revelation 20:14-15*.
Verse 3. The Parallel is *Genesis 1:4* – the spiritual division as per the Bible.
Verse 4. The evil of pride changes a human being. See respective chapter 176.
Verse 5. Thinking they are "free", the wicked are led to the slaughter.

> *6 He hath said in his heart, I shall not be moved: for I shall never be in adversity. 7 His mouth is full of cursing and deceit and fraud: under his tongue is mischief and vanity. 8 He sitteth in the lurking places of the villages: in the secret places doth he murder the innocent: his eyes are privily set against the poor. 9 He lieth in wait secretly as a lion in his den: he lieth in wait to catch the poor: he doth catch the poor, when he draweth him into his net. 10 He croucheth, and humbleth himself, that the poor may fall by his strong ones. (Expanded Bible: The poor are crushed and thrown down; they are defeated because the others are stronger.) 11 He hath said in his heart, GOD hath forgotten: He hideth His Face; He will never see it.*

Verse 6. The devil's slaves think the thoughts they bought cheap of demons.
Verse 7. It cannot be otherwise. *Matthew 12:34* well explains that.
Verse 8. Sinners make their traps as first trapped by the devil.
Verse 9. Their "secrets" are for whosoever but our Omniscient Father GOD.
Verse 10. Those "falls" & "defeats" are all in the World. The Judgment follows.
Verse 11. Fooled by Satan, it is evildoers who are ignorant, not LORD GOD.

12 Arise, O LORD; O GOD, lift up Thine Hand: forget not the Humble.

Verse 12. Thus we pray to our GOD to hurry up. Yet, it is we who should fight Satan and not forget the Weapons the LORD blessed us with. *Ephesians 6:10-18*.

13 Wherefore doth the wicked contemn GOD? he hath said in his heart, Thou wilt not require it.

Verse 13. Is it not our job to make our countries Christian? And to teach our children never to grow up those wicked? Consider relevant chapters 55 & 60.

14 Thou hast seen it; for Thou beholdest mischief and spite, to requite it with Thy Hand: the poor committeth himself unto Thee; Thou art the Helper of the fatherless. 15 Break Thou the arm of the wicked and the evil man: seek out his wickedness till Thou find none.

Verse 14. Note well *1Samuel 16:7 (... the LORD seeth not as man seeth ...)*.
Verse 15. So, let us pray to Almighty GOD to use us as His Good Instruments for exterminating sin, crime, corruption, and every other evil, *till Thou find none.*

16 The LORD is King for ever and ever: the heathen are perished out of His Land.

Verse 16. It is a Statement of fact. *Matthew 6:13 (... Thine is the Kingdom, and the power, and the glory)*.

17 LORD, Thou hast heard the desire of the Humble: Thou wilt prepare their heart, Thou wilt cause Thine Ear to hear: 18 To judge the fatherless and the oppressed, that the man of the Earth may no more oppress.

Verse 17. So, let us be those Humble to be heard by the LORD, our Father. And, having our hearts prepared, may our desires be in line with His Holy Will.
See *1John 5:14-15 (... if we ask any thing according to His Will ...)*.
Verse 18. As the People of GOD, we are supposed to be One with Him and thus United, follow His Will to do His Justice.

In chapter 102, I recommended, “when it comes down to people described in the Bible, within the spiritual Meaning ... see yourself literally in every negative & erring human.” No more seeing yourself in the above-mentioned wicked person, see yourself as a Servant of GOD and act accordingly. *Tertium non datur*.

793

Brother, we read the term "Selah" three times in short *Psalm 3*.

Q: What is the meaning thereof each time?

Q: And what are the Parallels?

A: In chapter 136, we talked about the term "Selah" as "the lifting of the heart, the serious considering and Meditating on the thing that is spoken".
Let us consider *Psalm 3*.

1 LORD, how are they increased that trouble me! Many are they that rise up against me. 2 Many there be which say of my soul, There is no help for him in GOD. Selah.

The Parallel is –

Behold, they shall surely gather together, but not of Me: whosoever shall gather together against thee shall fall for thy sake ... No weapon that is formed against thee shall prosper ... (Isaiah 54:15,17)

So, as it is written in the Word of GOD more than once, *Fear not*.

3 But Thou, O LORD, art a Shield for me; my Glory, and the Lifter up of mine head. 4 I cried unto the LORD with my voice, and He heard me out of His Holy Hill. Selah.

The Parallel is *Psalm 23 – The LORD is my Shepherd* – remember that.
Read about the Shield o' Faith in *Ephesians 6:16*.

5 I laid me down and slept; I awaked; for the LORD sustained me. 6 I will not be afraid of ten thousands of people, that have set themselves against me round about. 7 Arise, O LORD; save me, O my GOD: for thou hast smitten all mine enemies upon the cheek bone; Thou hast broken the teeth of the ungodly. 8 Salvation belongeth unto the LORD: Thy Blessing is upon Thy People. Selah.

In chapter 298, we considered the term "O my GOD". Kindly have a look.
Value indeed our being One with GOD, our Father! *1Corinthians 6:17* says so.
Specifically, *Psalm 3* encourages us to Prayer, the Parallel Scripture being –

Let us therefore come boldly unto the Throne of Grace, that we may obtain Mercy, and find Grace to help in time of need. (Hebrews 4:16)

794

Q: Brother, *Fourth Psalm* could also be divided as the previous one, yet *Selah* appeared only twice. Why is it so?

A: Well,

There is no wisdom nor understanding nor counsel
against the LORD. (Proverbs 21:30)

Remember that.
Now, let us study *Fourth Psalm.*

> *1 Hear me when I call, O GOD of my Righteousness: Thou hast enlarged me when I was in distress; have Mercy upon me, and hear my Prayer. 2 O ye sons of men, how long will ye turn My Glory into shame? How long will ye love vanity, and seek after leasing? Selah.*

So, He is GOD of our Righteousness. When acting unrighteously, we do not belong to Him anymore. See relevant "Q & A" chapters 173, 447, 604, & 714.
Further on, as *Jerusalem Bible* put it, ... *when am in trouble, You come to my Relief* ... That makes us doubt what we call "trouble". Was it such indeed if we are One with the LORD, Almighty GOD, as in *1Corinthians 6:17*?

Verse 2 is the Answer of our LORD GOD to the end of *Verse 1* –
... have Mercy upon me, and hear my Prayer.

How can a mere human manage to *turn the Glory of GOD into shame?*
To understand that, we ought to recall such an appearance of *the Glory of GOD* as His Image & Likeness in us per *Genesis 1:26-27*.
As for the *shame*, here, it is nothing else but *mammon*, which reminded us of and condemned by the second rhetorical question of *Verse 2.*
So, think about that, even as it is written: *Selah*.

> *3 But know that the LORD hath set apart him that is Godly for Himself: the LORD will hear when I call unto Him. 4 Stand in Awe, and sin not: commune with your own heart upon your bed, and be still. Selah.*

In the Holy Bible, there are many Scriptures parallel to *Verse 3*.
E.g.,

The LORD is far from the wicked:
but He heareth the Prayer of the Righteous. (Proverbs 15:29)

You may visit <*https://www.biblegateway.com*> and see how different are translations to *Verse 4*.
With all due respect to other Versions, I found only these two translations in line with my humble understanding of the matter –

> *Tremble ye, and do not sin; say ye [thus] in your heart on your bed,*
> *and be ye silent. Selah. (Psalms 4:4, Young's Literal Translation)*

> *Stand before the LORD in Awe, and do not sin against Him.*
> *Lie quietly upon your bed in silent Meditation. (Psalms 4:4, The Living Bible)*

Because, far as I may interpret our *King James Version*,

> *"Stand in Awe"* means *"Fear GOD"*.
>
> *"and sin not"* well correspond to *"prove your Fear"*.
>
> *"commune with your own heart upon your bed"*
> conveys: *"at the time of rest, instead of harboring useless worries and wicked ideas, listen to you conscience"*.
>
> *"and be still"* implements *"listen to the Holy Ghost"*.

Again, our consideration is called for: *Selah*.

> *5 Offer the Sacrifices of Righteousness, and put your Trust in the LORD.*
> *6 There be many that say, Who will shew us any good? LORD, lift Thou up the Light of Thy Countenance upon us. 7 Thou hast put Gladness in my heart, more than in the time that their corn and their wine increased. 8 I will both lay me down in Peace, and sleep: for Thou, LORD, only makest me dwell in Safety.*

Verse 5. We are reminded of Giving. In this "Q & A", see chapters 56 & 486.

Verse 6. In our weakness, we ask the LORD, our Father, for Encouragement.

Verse 7. The People of GOD do not belong to this world. See chapter 287.

Verse 8. And our Peace is so different from the peace of the world of unbelievers.
Kindly consider chapters 53, 603, & 678 – The Peace of GOD.

795

Q: What makes *Psalm 1* the beginning of the *Book of Psalms*?

A: We may call it *the first among equals*.
Let us read the *First Psalm*.

> *1 Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful.*

Irrespective of whatever circumstances & conditions we may find ourselves in, every Blessing of the LORD, our GOD – all of them corroborating our Unity with Him – is the real Treasure.
The counsel of the ungodly teaches every attitude contradicting the Law of GOD.
The way of sinners is every action and walk of life condemned by the Holy Bible.
The seat of the scornful is where atheistic lie inspires and justifies ungodliness.

> *2 But his Delight is in the Law of the LORD; and in His Law doth he meditate day and night. 3 And he shall be like a tree planted by the rivers of water, that bringeth forth his Fruit in his season; his Leaf also shall not wither; and whatsoever he doeth shall prosper.*

The Holy Law of GOD is our delight, as the meditation therein is Communion with the LORD Himself. Fed by the Living Water of the Written Word of GOD, we bring Fruits of Righteousness. Kindly read the Warning of *Matthew 3:10*.

> *4 The ungodly are not so: but are like the chaff which the wind driveth away. 5 Therefore the ungodly shall not stand in the Judgment, nor sinners in the Congregation of the Righteous. 6 For the LORD knoweth the Way of the Righteous: but the way of the ungodly shall perish.*

There are many Parables of our Lord Jesus condemning the worldly ungodliness and sinners in the Church. Read, say, *Matthew 22:11-14* or *Luke 13:24-30*.

What & how the way of *the ungodly shall perish*? – Every satanic deed, from breaking a family to great military slaughter, leads the guilty person(s) to hell.

Why this one comes first in the *Book of Psalms*? – What about the Introduction? Here, as in all other Psalms, we read about Good vs evil, the Truth of GOD vs the lie of Satan, and Righteousness vs unrighteousness. And make our choices.

796

Q: What is the main point of *Psalm 5*?
Q: And what are the Parallels to it?

A: The point is Communion with our LORD GOD by Prayer.
As in many other Scriptures, there are several Lessons in this Psalm.

But let us consider it from the standpoint of Prayer. And find the Parallels.

> *1 Give Ear to my words, O LORD, consider my Meditation. 2 Hearken unto the voice of my cry, my King, and my GOD: for unto Thee will I pray. 3 My voice shalt Thou hear in the morning, O LORD; in the morning will I direct my Prayer unto Thee, and will look up.*

Verse 1: We may thus invite the Holy Spirit of GOD either to our Meditation on His Written Word or to help us find a Godly solution to a problem at hand.
Verse 2: If it is the time of need, you & I come to our Father GOD (rather than to the world) and are supposed to get His Answer.
Verse 3: Our morning Prayer – e.g., the Lord's Prayer – is the best way to be prepared for the day ahead and whatever encounters with the evil one.
Here, our "looking up" may stand for waiting for the Answer to come.
The Parallel is *Psalms 139:23-24*.

> *4 For Thou art not a God that hath pleasure in wickedness: neither shall evil dwell with Thee. 5 The foolish shall not stand in Thy Sight: Thou hatest all workers of iniquity. 6 Thou shalt destroy them that speak leasing: the LORD will abhor the bloody and deceitful man.*

Verse 4: Every sinful attitude drives us far from the LORD. Only Righteousness keeps the People of GOD One with Him.
Verse 5: Our Prayers are to be sincere. Nobody can hide an ungodly or compromising position from our Omniscient LORD GOD.
Verse 6: Lying, mammonish, and bloodthirsty servants of Satan doomed by the Holy Law & Justice of Almighty GOD.
The Parallels are *Genesis 1:4 & Revelation 21:8*.

> *7 But as for me, I will come into Thy House in the multitude of Thy Mercy: and in Thy Fear will I worship toward Thy Holy Temple. 8 Lead me, O LORD, in Thy Righteousness because of mine enemies; make Thy Way straight before my face.*

Verse 7: When we, in whatever adversity, first of all, pray to our Heavenly Father, we worship toward His Holy Temple.
Kindly see chapter 144 (Fear of GOD) and find “Priorities” in the Index.
Verse 8: And what better Answer Christians may ever get other than the Way shown to them by the Holy Ghost?
The Parallel is *Hebrews 4:16*.

> *9 For there is no Faithfulness in their mouth; their inward part is very wickedness; their throat is an open sepulchre; they flatter with their tongue. 10 Destroy thou them, O GOD; let them fall by their own counsels; cast them out in the multitude of their transgressions; for they have rebelled against Thee.*

Verse 9: Taught by our Father GOD and attentive to the Voice of His Holy Spirit, we can hear as *Learned* according to *Isaiah 50:4*.
Verse 10: Asking the LORD for His Justice, we do not pray for the physical or eternal death of the sinners. No. They should get free from the deadly grip of the devil and stop sinful living as our foes. Please see “Second chance” in the Index.
The Parallel is *Matthew 6:10 – Thy will be done ...*

> *11 But let all those that put their Trust in Thee rejoice: let them ever shout for Joy, because Thou defendest them: let them also that love Thy Name be Joyful in Thee. 12 For Thou, LORD, wilt bless the Righteous; with Favour wilt Thou compass him as with a shield.*

Verse 11: Our Joy is in the Peace & Justice of Father GOD.
Kindly read about the *Peace of GOD* in “Q & A” chapter 53.
In the Index, you may see many chapters on the subject of *GOD’s Judgment & Justice*. Take your pick.
In the Book of Martyrs, we can read about *Joy*, which the Blessed Saints found in torches & death for Christ.
Verily, we are not of the world. See the relevant chapter 287.
Verse 12: That Favor is Grace. You can find “GOD’s Grace” in the Index.
The Parallel is *Psalms 91:14-16*.

Kindly note that in the Holy Bible, there are a lot more Parallels to Fifth Psalm than I mentioned. You can also find the parallel Scriptures in those “Q & A” chapters I found relevant to our discussion and referred to.
You are welcome to see “Prayer” in the Index section.

797

Q: Please explain *Psalm 6*.

A: Like in preceding *Psalm 5* and so many others, here, we learn on Communion with the LORD, our Father, through Prayer, in particular, when something wrong has been done by us. This Lesson is worth noting.

Psalm 6 can be divided into two parts: *Verses 1 – 7,* which describe our desperate Petition, and *Verses 8 – 10,* telling us about the needful Backup received.

> *1 O LORD, rebuke me not in Thine Anger, neither chasten me in Thy Hot Displeasure. 2 Have Mercy upon me, O LORD; for I am weak: O LORD, heal me; for my bones are vexed. 3 My soul is also sore vexed: but Thou, O LORD, how long? 4 Return, O LORD, deliver my soul: oh save me for Thy Mercies' sake. 5 For in death there is no remembrance of Thee: in the grave who shall give Thee Thanks? 6 I am weary with my groaning; all the night make I my bed to swim; I water my couch with my tears. 7 Mine eye is consumed because of grief; it waxeth old because of all mine enemies.*

Verse 1. Recognize the Anger of the LORD due to your error. Ask to be forgiven.
Verse 2. Confess your physical & spiritual weakness when *separated* from Him.
Verse 3. Admit the failing of your soul too. Beg for Reconciliation with GOD.
Verse 4. Pray to be delivered from your evil, as in *Matthew 6:13*.
Verse 5. Moreover, beg to be saved from hell. (Consider "Q & A" chapter 8.)
Verse 6. Repent. Mourn while alive to be comforted by GOD per *Matthew 5:4*.
Verse 7. Pray for the Mighty Backup of your LORD GOD.

> *8 Depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity; for the LORD hath heard the voice of my Weeping. 9 The LORD hath heard my Supplication; the LORD will receive my Prayer. 10 Let all mine enemies be ashamed and sore vexed: let them return and be ashamed suddenly.*

Verse 8. The Scriptures – *Matthew 5:4; 7:23; Luke 13:27;* etc. – cross the mind.
Verse 9. The Written Word of GOD is the best assurance that He hears us.
Verse 10. Our enemies are different. Some foes feel dishonored by the Victory of our Heavenly Father through us but stay on as such. Others get ashamed for being the enemies of Him and come to Repentance. In that last case, our Victory is even weightier. Please, note *Matthew 9:13*.
Welcome to find "Prayer" in the Index.

798

Q: The *Expanded Bible* (*https://www.biblegateway.com*) presents *Psalm 7* thus:

A Shiggaion [a musical or literary term of uncertain meaning] of David which he sang to the LORD about Cush, from the tribe of Benjamin [an unknown person, but the tribe of Benjamin, Saul's tribe, resisted David's Kingship at first; 2Samuel 3-4].

King James Version also runs:

Shiggaion of David, which he sang unto the LORD, concerning the words of Cush the Benjamite.

Could you please, explain these annotations along with *Seventh Psalm*?

A: Regarding the annotations, you better go to the authors thereof.
You may see chapter 136 (Selah & Higgaion) for those terms.
In chapter 103, I explained my seeing the Holy Bible as our Guide here & now rather than a mere account of what happened there & then.

Therefore, let us consider the Guidance of Psalm 7.

1 O LORD my GOD, in Thee do I put my Trust: save me from all them that persecute me, and deliver me: 2 Lest he tear my soul like a lion, rending it in pieces, while there is none to deliver.

Verse 1. We should differentiate between Eternal *Salvation* and the *rescue* from a physical danger encountered now & again. With all due regard to the second, kindly prioritize the first.
Verse 2. For what more can the devil achieve but tearing *like a lion* our Faith and dragging our souls to hell & the death eternal where *there is none to deliver?*

3 O LORD my GOD, if I have done this; if there be iniquity in my hands;
4 If I have rewarded evil unto him that was at peace with me; (Yea, I have delivered him that without cause is mine enemy): 5 Let the enemy persecute my soul, and take it; Yea, let him tread down my Life upon the Earth, and lay mine honour in the dust. Selah.

Verses 3-5. Be ready to confess the evil done, if any. In such a case, boldly accept the Punishment by adverse circumstances. *Thy will be done ... (Matthew 6:10)*

6 Arise, O LORD, in Thine Anger, lift up Thyself because of the rage of mine enemies: and awake for me to the Judgment that Thou hast commanded.
7 So shall the Congregation of the People compass Thee about: for their sakes therefore return Thou on High.

Verses 6-7. However, when we are sure that there is no guilt on our part in the Eyes of the LORD, we have a Right to seek His Protection. The Holy Word of GOD is full of Precious Promises to that effect. E.g., *Joshua 1:9 & Isaiah 54:10*.

8 The LORD shall judge the people: judge me, O LORD, according to my Righteousness, and according to mine Integrity that is in me. 9 Oh let the wickedness of the wicked come to an end; but establish the Just: for the Righteous GOD trieth the hearts and reins. 10 My Defence is of GOD, which saveth the Upright in heart. 11 GOD judgeth the Righteous, and GOD is Angry with the wicked every day.

Verses 8-11. See the Parallels – *Job 36:8-12; Psalms 33:5; 89:14; Isaiah 33:22; Jeremiah 32:18-19; Lamentations 3:25; &c., &c.*
Take a look at any chapter named in the Index for "GOD's Judgment & Justice".

12 If he turn not, He will whet His Sword; He hath bent His Bow, and made it ready. 13 He hath also prepared for him the instruments of death; He ordaineth His Arrows against the persecutors.

Verses 12-13. The subject of GOD's Punishment was discussed in chapter 64.

14 Behold, he travaileth with iniquity, and hath conceived mischief, and brought forth falsehood. 15 He made a pit, and digged it, and is fallen into the ditch which he made. 16 His mischief shall return upon his own head, and his violent dealing shall come down upon his own pate.

Verses 14-16. In the Index, see the relevant chapters for "Harvest, the Law of".

17 I will praise the LORD according to His Righteousness: and will sing Praise to the Name of the LORD Most High.

Verse 17. Please see the Index for "GOD's Name & Praise" and "Righteousness".

Thank you.

799

Q: Brother, what is the Lesson given to us in the *Eighth Psalm*?

A: The Psalm teaches us several aspects of our Faith.

I quote here *Eighth Psalm* by *Authorized King James Version Pure Cambridge Edition* (abbreviated as *KJPC*) and *Miles Coverdale Bible (1535)* (as *MCB*).
In chapter 118, we clarified the reason for honoring the old translations.

> *1 O LORD our Lord, how Excellent is Thy Name in all the Earth! Who hast set Thy Glory above the Heavens. (KJPC)*
>
> *1 O LORDE oure Gouernoure: how Wonderfull is Thy Name in all the Worlde! How Excellent is Thy Glory aboue the Heauens! (MCB)*

In chapters 22 & 691, we spoke about the Name Most Holy. To what was said there, we can add that *Verse 1* is the Statement of Faith and fact. For the Greatness of Creation best testifies to the Glory of LORD GOD, our Creator.

> *2 Out of the mouth of babes and sucklings hast Thou ordained Strength because of thine enemies, that Thou mightest still the enemy and the avenger. (KJPC)*
>
> *2 Out of the mouth of the very babes & sucklinges Thou hast ordened Prayse, because of Thine enemies, yt Thou mightest destroye the enemie and the auenger. (MCB)*

In this Scripture, per our two sources, *Strength* & *Praise* are the same.
Why? Have a look at *Psalms 22:3* –

But Thou art Holy,
O Thou that inhabitest the Praises of Israel.

Our Lord Jesus referred to *Psalms 8:2* in *Matthew 11:25-26 & 21:16*.
In chapter 166, we pointed out what our little children ought to be learned.

> *3 When I consider Thy Heavens, the Work of Thy Fingers, the Moon and the Stars, which Thou hast ordained; 4 What is man, that Thou art Mindful of him? and the son of man, that thou visitest him? 5 For Thou hast made him a little lower than the Angels, and hast crowned him with Glory and Honour. (KJPC)*

3 For I considre thy Heauens, euen the Worke off Thy Fyngers: the Moone and the Starres which Thou hast made. 4 Oh what is man, yt Thou art so Myndfull of him? Ether the sonne of man that thou visitest him? 5 After Thou haddest for a season made him lower the the Angels, Thou crownedest him with Honor & Glory. (MCB)

Verses 3-5 teach us to value the Precious & Glorious Unity with our Father GOD. Why? – Those *Honor & Glory* are His only. Kindly remember *Matthew 6:13*.

6 Thou madest him to have Dominion over the Works of Thy Hands; Thou hast put all things under his feet: 7 All sheep and oxen, Yea, and the beasts of the field; 8 The fowl of the air, and the fish of the sea, and whatsoever passeth through the paths of the seas. (KJPC)

6 Thou hast set him aboue the Workes off Thy Hondes: Thou hast put all thinges in subieccion vnder his fete. 7 All shepe and oxen, Yee and the beastes of the felde. 8 The foules of the ayre: the fysh of the see, and what so walketh thorow the wayes of the see. (MCB)

Verses 6-8 stand on *Genesis 1:26,28*.
Our spiritual Authority is covered by chapters 36, 312, 313.

9 O LORD our Lord, how Excellent is Thy Name in all the Earth! (KJPC)

9 O LORDE oure Gouernoure, how Wonderfull is Thy Name in all the Worlde! (MCB)

Psalm 8 begins & ends with these words, even *Verses 1 & 9* – the Statement of Faith and fact. This repetition made the stress upon the Glory of the LORD GOD. Even so,

Get thee hence Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the LORD thy GOD, and Him only shalt thou serve. (Matthew 4:10. See the same in *Luke 4:8)*

Wherefore be ye not unwise, but understanding what the Will of the Lord is. ... Speaking to yourselves in Psalms and Hymns and Spiritual Songs, singing and making melody in your heart to the Lord; giving Thanks always for all things unto GOD and the Father in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ ... (Ephesians 5:17-20)

800

Q: How the *Ninth Psalm* indeed helped you?

A: It did & does the same as all the Written Word of GOD, even reminding me some Good things we, Christians, forget now & again.

Let us consider the *Ninth Psalm* Verse by Verse.

> *1 I will praise Thee, O LORD, with my whole heart; I will shew forth all Thy Marvellous Works. 2 I will be glad and rejoice in Thee: I will sing Praise to Thy Name, O Thou Most High.*

Verse 1. To praise GOD *with my whole heart* means to do it always, knowing that when I am One with Him, He is in control over my every situation, not any person(s) “mighty of this world”. *Thy Marvellous Works* well proves that.
Verse 2. That is the chief reason for my Joy and for giving Him Glory.

> *3 When mine enemies are turned back, they shall fall and perish at Thy Presence. 4 For Thou hast maintained my Right and my Cause; Thou satest in the Throne judging Right. 5 Thou hast rebuked the heathen, Thou hast destroyed the wicked, Thou hast put out their name for ever and ever. 6 O thou enemy, destructions are come to a perpetual end: and Thou hast destroyed cities; their memorial is perished with them.*

Verse 3. That *turn back*, at best, is Repentance unto Salvation and, at worst, the eternal condemnation on Judgment Day. Kindly consider *Matthew 22:12*.
Verse 4. GOD is at my side only when I am at His. See *Zechariah 2:8*.
Verse 5. Staying the enemy of GOD, a person is doomed to eternal death.
Verse 6. All “great constructions” built for “the glory of humans” will be burned.

> *7 But the LORD shall endure for ever: He hath prepared His Throne for Judgment. 8 And He shall judge the World in Righteousness, He shall minister Judgment to the people in Uprightness. 9 The LORD also will be a Refuge for the oppressed, a Refuge in times of trouble. 10 And they that know Thy Name will put their Trust in Thee: for Thou, LORD, hast not forsaken them that seek Thee.*

Verse 7. Be united with Eternal LORD and belong to His Kingdom to live with Him forever. Value the Right Standing with Him. *Psalms 89:14 & Matthew 6:33.*
Verse 8. There is no misjudgment with GOD. Mind *Psalms 33:5; 103:17-19*.

Verse 9. The *Refuge* of LORD GOD is the Mighty Presence of the Holy Ghost. Your *trouble* is possible only in the natural. Mind the Blessed *Book of Martyrs*.
Verse 10. Walk the Way written in *Luke 15:20*.
See also "Q & A" chapters 151 (How to seek the LORD?), 486 (Faith & Trust), and 691 (The Name Most Holy).

> *11 Sing Praises to the LORD, which dwelleth in Zion: declare among the people His Doings. 12 When He maketh inquisition for blood, He remembereth them: He forgetteth not the cry of the Humble.*

Verse 11. Praise GOD. Declare His Doings to those willing to hear. *Matthew 7:6*.
Verse 12. Do not think that your Heavenly Father is blind & deaf.

> *13 Have Mercy upon me, O LORD; consider my trouble which I suffer of them that hate me, Thou that liftest me up from the gates of death: 14 That I may shew forth all Thy Praise in the Gates of the Daughter of Zion: I will rejoice in Thy Salvation. 15 The heathen are sunk down in the pit that they made: in the net which they hid is their own foot taken. 16 The LORD is known by the Judgment which He executeth: the wicked is snared in the work of his own hands. Higgaion. Selah.*

Verse 13. I pray for Grace, even the Power to stay Christian. See chapter 322.
Verse 14. It means my Christian Testimony in the Body of Christ. The Words "*I will rejoice in Thy Salvation"* denote my Hope. Refer to chapters 138 & 557.
Verse 15. See chapters 8 (Hell) and 503 & 508 (The Harvest Law).
Verse 16. That Judgment is known, especially in Eternity. Chapters 305 & 573.
You may see chapter 136 (Selah & Higgaion).

> *17 The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget GOD.*

Verse 17. The sad subject of *hell* is covered by "Q & A" chapter 8.

> *18 For the needy shall not alway be forgotten: the expectation of the poor shall not perish for ever. 19 Arise, O LORD; let not man prevail: let the heathen be judged in Thy Sight. 20 Put them in fear, O LORD: that the nations may know themselves to be but men. Selah.*

Verse 18. Our naiveness is shown. Omniscient LORD, our GOD, forgets nothing.
Verse 19. Our simplicity again: can a human prevail other than for a short while?
Verse 20. I pray for Fear of GOD, even by His Holy Will, as per *Matthew 6:10*.

Q: Please explain the disaccord between the anxiety seen in the first two Verses and the assurance of the last two Verses of *Psalm 13*.

A: This "disaccord" we can observe in the manifold of our conversations with GOD through Prayers. Let us study the *Psalm*.

1 How long wilt Thou forget me, O LORD? For ever? How long wilt Thou hide Thy Face from me? 2 How long shall I take counsel in my soul, having sorrow in my heart daily? How long shall mine enemy be exalted over me? 3 Consider and hear me, O LORD my GOD: lighten mine eyes, lest I sleep the sleep of death; 4 Lest mine enemy say, I have prevailed against him; and those that trouble me rejoice when I am moved.
5 But I have trusted in Thy Mercy; my heart shall rejoice in Thy Salvation.
6 I will sing unto the LORD, because He hath dealt Bountifully with me.

Verse 1. It is a negative example of our thinking. Omnipresent & Omniscient GOD cannot "forget" anybody. And His Face always turned to His People.

Verse 2. Our taking counsel of the soul is also wrong. We should converse with the Holy Ghost. Welcome *Him* in your heart, not the sorrow of the demon. The latter is "exalted" by successfully firing his evil thoughts at you. *Ephesians 6:16*.

Verse 3. Surely we ought to ask our Heavenly Father to lighten our eyes so that we might see as the Learned, not defeated.

Verse 4. What the enemy says ought not to be our concern. The "joy" of the puppets of Satan is their defeat in the long run. So, do not be moved.

Verse 5. See here our Due Trust in the Answer of the LORD, our GOD, Who strengthens our Faith.

Verse 6. For even before, in the natural, our circumstances & conditions become more comfortable, we rejoice to know the LORD is with us.

Thank you.

The Grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the Love of GOD,
and the Communion of the Holy Ghost, be with you all.
Amen. (2Corinthians 13:14)

Afterword

I guess the Readers of Q & A wouldn't support every reasoning thereof. Well, the more issues, the more different opinions are expected. If the opposition would have got to go as far as the *Holy Bible*, we achieved our purpose. Not to mention the objections hold the evidence of reading & thinking.

Do you or your friends have questions not yet answered? Please, ask.
GOD willing, our Communion will continue.

If my answers have not made any things clear or you, Christians, disagree with me, let's discuss it together, as together we ought to be. We are One, remember?

Then they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a Book of Remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon His Name. And they shall be Mine, saith the LORD of Hosts, in that Day when I make up My Jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth his own son that serveth him. Then shall ye return, and discern between the Righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth GOD and him that serveth Him not.
(Malachi 3:16-18)

May GOD bless you.

Igor Evgen
igorevgen@yahoo.com

Christian Mind Ministry
https://christian498979569.wordpress.com

References

The Holy Bible Editions

The Electronic Bible Versions

The Bible Commentaries

Biblical & Theological Dictionaries

Common Dictionaries

Book of Martyrs

Christian Handbooks

Other Christian Publications

Other Common Publications

Helpful Library sites

Other Helpful Sites

Christian & Charitable Movies

Christian Cinema Sites

About the Writer

Index

To our Publishers

The Holy Bible Editions

Biblia, The Byble, that is the Holy Scrypture of the Olde and New Testament, faythfully translated in to Englysh, 1535 (a.k.a., *Miles Coverdale Version*)

The Byble, which is all the Holy Scripture: In which are contayned the Olde and Newe Testament, truly and purely translated into Englysh by Thomas Matthew, 1537 (a.k.a., *Thomas Matthew Bible*)

The Most Sacred Bible, whiche is the Holy Scripture, conteyning the Old and New Testament, Translated into English... by Richard Taverner, printed at London, 1539 (a.k.a., *Richard Taverner Bible*)

The Byble in Englyshe, that is to saye the content of al the Holy Scrypture, both of y Olde, and Newe Testamet ... made by the Reverende Father in GOD, Thomas Archbyshop of Cantorbury ... MDXL (a.k.a., *The Great Bible*)

The Holie Bible. conteynyng the Olde Testament and the Newe. ... 1568 (a.k.a., *The Bishop's Bible*)

The Bible. And Holy Scriptvres Conteyned In The Olde And Newe Testament. Translated According to Ebrue and Greke ... At Geneva. Printed By Iohn Crispin. 1569 (a.k.a., *Geneva Bible*)

The Holy Bible, Conteyning the Old Testament, and The New: Newly Translated out of the Original tongues ... Appointed to be read in Churches. Imprinted at London by Robert Barker to the Kings most Excellent Maiestie. Anno Dom. 1611. (a.k.a., *King James Bible*)

The Holy Bible, Containing the Old and New Covenant, Commonly called the Old and New Testament: translated from the Greek. By Charles Thomson, Philadelphia ... 1808.

The Septuagint Version of the Old Testament, according to the Vatican Text, translated into English, by Sir Lancelot Charles Lee Brenton, London: Samuel Bagster & Sons, 1844

The Holy Bible, Containing The Old and New Testaments, with the Apocryphal Books ... made from the Latin Vulgate by John Wycliffe and His Followers; edited by the Rev. Josiah Forshall & Sir Frederic Madden, Oxford, at the University Press, 1850 (a.k.a., *Wycliffe Bible*)

The Pronouncing Edition of The Holy Bible,
Containing The Authorized and Revised Versions of
The Old and New Testaments, Philadelphia: A.J. Holman, 1872

William Tyndale's Five Books Of Moses, Called The Pentateuch,
being a Verbatim Reprint of edition of 1530. By the Rev. J.I. Mombert, D.D.,
New York: Anson D.F. Randolph & Co. 1884

The Holy Bible, translated according to The Letter of Idioms of the Original
Languages. By Robert Young, Revised Edition, Edinburgh: G.A. Young & Co.,
Bible Publishers, 1898 (a.k.a., *Young's Literal Translation*)

The Holy Bible, Containing The Old And New Testaments,
Translated out of the Original Tongues, being the Version Set Forth A.D. 1611...
Newly Edited by the American Revision Society, A.D. 1901, Standard Edition,
New York, Thomas Nelson & Sons (a.k.a., *American Standard Version*)

The Old Covenant commonly called The Old Testament: translated from
The Septuagint, By Charles Thomson, London: Skeffingston & Son, 1904

The Holy Bible. Translated from the Latin Vulgate. Diligently compared with
the Hebrew, Greek, and other editions in divers languages. The Old Testament
was first published by English College at Douay, A.D.1609 and The New
Testament was first published by English College at Rheims, A.D.1682 ...
John Cardinal Farley, Archbishop of New York. Maurice Fitzgibbon, Iowa, 1911

The Emphasised Bible ... Designed to set forth the exact meaning,
the proper terminology, and the graphic style of the Sacred originals ...
emphasised throughout ... by Joseph Bryant Rotherham ... Cincinnati ... 1897 ...
Reprinted in the United States by The Standard Publishing Company, 1916

Authorized King James Version, Pure Cambridge Edition,
Digital Electronic Text, Australia,
<https://www.soulwinning.info/bible/kjb/pce.htm> (June 2026)

The Jerusalem Bible, Reader's Edition, Alexander Jones,
ISBN: 0-385-01189-x, USA, 1968

The Living Bible Translation, by Kenneth Taylor, Coverdale House Publishers,
London and Eastbourne, England, 1971

Holy Bible, New International Version, 1973,
<https://www.thenivbible.com> (June 2026)

The Revised English Bible, with the Apocrypha,
Oxford University Press, Cambridge University Press, 1989

The Holy Bible, Revised Standard Version / Second Catholic Edition,
Translated From The Original Tongues, Being The Version Set Forth A.D. 1611,
Old and New Testaments Revised A.D. 1881-1885 and A.D. 1901
(Apocrypha Revised A.D. 1894), ... This Edition was Revised according to
Liturgiam Authenticam, Ignatius Press, San Francisco, 2002

Wycliffe's Old Testament, Translated by John Wycliffe and John Purvey,
A modern-spelling edition ... by Terence P. Noble (Editor and Publisher),
2010, Canada

The Amplified Bible, ISBN-10: 0310439310, 2011

Hebraic Roots Bible, with Study notes, Word of Truth Publications, 2012,
Congregation of YHWH, Jerusalem

The Electronic Bible Versions

Amplified Bible, Expanded Bible, Young's Literal Translation, &c.
<www.biblegateway.com/versions/Expanded-Bible-EXB> (June 2026)

e-Sword – the Sword of the LORD with an electronic edge,
<https://www.e-sword.net> (June 2026) – for Windows OS.

The Bible Commentaries

The Creation: A Commentary on the First Five Chapters of the Book of Genesis. By Martin Luther. Originally published at Witenberg in the year of our Lord 1544; and now first translated into English, by Henry Cole, Edinburgh, 1858

Commentary on the Sermon on the Mount by Martin Luther, translated by Charles A. Hay, Philadelphia, Lutheran Publication Society, 1892

A Commentary on Saint Paul's Epistle to the Galatians. By Martin Luther. Ney York ... Ribert Carter ... 1844.

Luther's Works, vol.1, Lectures on Genesis, ch.1-5, edited by Jaroslav Pelican, Saint Louis MO, Concordia Publishing House, 1958

Commentaries On The First Book Of Moses Called Genesis. By John Calvin... Edinburgh: Printed For The Calvin Translation Society. 1850

Harmony of the Law. John Calvin.
Christian Classics Ethereal Library. <www.ccel.org> (June 2026).

Commentary on the Book of Psalms. By John Calvin ...
Edinburgh: Printed For The Calvin Translation Society. 1849.

Commentary on Jeremiah and Lamentations. John Calvin ...
Christian Classics Ethereal Library. <www.ccel.org> (June 2026).

Commentary on the Book of Daniel. By John Calvin ...
Edinburgh: Printed For The Calvin Translation Society. 1852.

Commentary on Isaiah. By John Calvin ...
Christian Classics Ethereal Library. <www.ccel.org> June 2026).

Commentary on Ezekiel. By John Calvin ...
Christian Classics Ethereal Library. <www.ccel.org> (February 2025).

Commentary on the Twelve Minor Prophets. By John Calvin ...
Edinburgh: Printed For The Calvin Translation Society. 1846.

Commentary on Matthew, Mark, and Luke. John Calvin
Christian Classics Ethereal Library. <www.ccel.org> (June 2026).

Commentary on a Harmony of the Evangelists, Matthew, Mark, and Luke, by John Calvin, Translated by the Rev. William Pringle, Edinburgh: Printed for The Calvin Translation Society, 1845-1846

John Calvin, Commentary on the Gospel According to John, A New Translation from the Original Latin, by the Rev. William Pringle ... Edinburgh: printed for The Calvin Translation Society, 1847

Commentary upon the Acts of the Apostles. By John Calvin... Edited by Henry Beveridge ... Edinburgh: Printed For The Calvin Translation Society. 1844.

Commentary on the Epistle to the Romans. By John Calvin... Translated by Francis Sibson ... Edinburgh: Printed For The Calvin Translation Society. 1834.

Commentary on Corinthians. By John Calvin. Christian Classics Ethereal Library. <www.ccel.org> (June 2026).

Commentary on Galatians and Ephesians. John Calvin. Christian Classics Ethereal Library. <www.ccel.org> (June 2026)

Commentaries on The Epistles of Paul The Apostle to The Philippians, Colossians, and Thessalonians. By John Calvin. Translated by John Pringle... Edinburgh: Printed for The Calvin Translation Society. 1851.

Commentaries on the Epistles to Timothy, Titus and Philemon. By John Calvin. Translated from the Original Latin, by the Rev. William Pringle ... Edinburgh: Printed for The Calvin Translation Society, 1856

Commentaries On The Epistle Of Paul The Apostle To The Hebrews. By John Calvin. Translated and edited by the Rev. John Owen ... Edinburgh: Printed for The Calvin Translation Society, 1853

Commentaries on the Catholic Epistles. By John Calvin. Translated and edited by the Rev. John Owen ... Edinburgh ... 1855.

Concise Commentary on the Bible, Matthew Henry, <www.ccel.org> (June 2026).

The New Testament of our Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ,
with a Commentary and Critical Notes, by Adam Clarke ...
New York: published by Peter D. Myers, 1835

The Holy Bible containing the Old and New Testaments ...
with a Commentary and Critical Notes ... by Adam Clarke ...
New-York: published by G. Lane & P.P. Sandford ... 1843

The Holy Bible; containing the Old and New Testaments, according to the Authorized Version; with Explanatory Notes, Practical Observations, and Copious Marginal References, by the late Rev. Thomas Scott ... London, 1866

The New Testament for English Readers: Containing the Authorized Version ...
and a Critical and Explanatory Commentary; by Henry Alford ...
In two volumes. Second Edition ... Deighton, Bell, and Co., 1868.

F.W. Grant, The Numerical Bible: being a Revised Translation
of the Holy Scriptures with expository notes, arranged, divided, and briefly characterized according to the principles of their numerical structure.
New York: Loizeaux Bros., 1882

The Daily Study Bible, The Gospel of Matthew, by William Barclay,
The Westminster Press, Philadelphia, 1956

William Barclay's Daily Study Bible,
*<https://www.studylight.org> (*June 2026*).*

The First Epistle of Paul to the Corinthians, by James Moffatt, Hon.D.D. ...
Harper and Brothers Publishers, New York and London, (the date unknown)

GOD's Victorious Army Financial Breakthrough Spiritual Warfare Bible,
Containing The Old and New Testaments, Featuring Commentaries
by Morris Cerullo, King James Version, USA, 1996

Smyth & Helwys Bible Commentary ... Smyth & Helwys Publishing, Inc.
2000... Printed in the United States of America

Biblical & Theological Dictionaries (chronologically)

A Dictionary of the Holy Bible, the Third Edition, by John Brown, in two volumes, Edinburgh, 1789

A Theological Dictionary, by Charles Buck, Philadelphia: Published by Joseph J. Woodward, 1826, 1850

Calmet's Dictionary of the Holy Bible, American Edition, Boston: published by Crocker and Brewster, 1832

Biblical and Theological Dictionary, By Richard Watson, Published by Lane & Scott, New York, 1833, 1851

John Robinson, A Theological, Biblical and Ecclesiastical Dictionary, London. 1835

A Dictionary of the Bible, edited by Sir William Smith and Rev. J.M. Fuller, London: John Murray, 1863, 1893

A Dictionary of the Bible, edited by Philip Schaff, Fourth Edition, Philadelphia : American Sunday-School Union, New York, 1880, 1885

Easton's Bible Dictionary (1897)
Christian Classics Ethereal Library <www.ccel.org> (June 2026).

A Dictionary of the Bible, including the Biblical Theology, edited by James Hastings, M.A., D.D., New York, 1911

Dictionary Of Bible Proper Names, Compiled by Cyrus A. Potts, The Abingdon Press, New York, 1922

An Encyclopedia of Religion, edited by Vergilius Ferm, New York, 1945

Zondervan Compact Bible Dictionary, Zondernan Publishing House, Grand Rapids, Michigan, ISBN 0-310-48981-4, 2001

The Harper Collins Bible Dictionary, Revised Edition, Harper Collins Publishers, New York, 1996, ISBN 0-06-060037-3

Common Dictionaries

Samuel Johnson's Dictionary of the English Language, London, 1756

Webster's Dictionary, Based upon the Unabridged Dictionary of Noah Webster, Syndicate Publishing Company, New York, 1911

Webster's Seventh New Collegiate Dictionary, G. & C. Merriam Company, Publishers, Springfield, Massachusetts, U.S.A., 1963

Webster's Unabridged Dictionary of the English Language,
RHR Press, New York, 2001

Book of Martyrs

Book Of Martyrs, originally composed the Rev. John Fox, and now improved by important alterations and additions by Rev. Charles A. Goodrich, Middletown, 1832 <https://archive.org/details/americana> June 2026)

Book Of Martyrs, <http://www.ccel.org/f/foxe/martyrs/home.html>
(February 2025*)*

Fox's Book of Martyrs, The John C. Winston Co., Gutenberg Project, 2007, EBook #22400, ISO-8859-1

Christian Handbooks

... Complete Concordance to the Holy Scriptures on the basis of Cruden. Edited by John Eadie ... American Tract Society, New York, 1850

Cruden's Concordance to the Holy Scriptures. Edited by John Eadie... Wholly revised ... expressly for Hitchcock's Complete Analysis of the Holy Bible ... 1869

The Comprehensive Concordance to the Holy Scriptures by Rev. J.B.R. Walker, Boston and Chicago, U.S.A. 1894

Systematic Theology, by Augustus Hopkins Strong, New York, A.C. Armstrong and Son, 1889

Nave's Topical Bible, A Digest of the Holy Scriptures ... By Orville J. Nave ... Lincoln, Nebraska, Topical Bible Publishing Company, 1903

The Companion Bible, by E.W. Bullinger (Sample of the Original Printed Edition), PDF, <http://www.companionbiblecondensed.com/Bullinger/CB.htm> (June 2026).

Other Christian Publications

A.W. Tozer, The Pursuit Of GOD,
Christian Publications inc., Camp Hill, PA, 1982, 1993

A.W. Tozer, GOD's Pursuit of Man,
Previously titled "The Divine Conquest" and "The Pursuit of Man,"
1950, renewed 1978 by Lowell Tozer, ISBN: 978-1-60066-278-2

Jane Eyre, by Charlotte Bronte (Currer Bell), New York and London,
Harper & Brothers Publishers, 1890

C.S. Lewis, Mere Christianity,
Harper Collins, first published 1952, USA, ISBN 10:0060652926

Danelle Ice, Dangerous But Good: A no-nonsense Guide to casting out demons & evil spirits, published by IS World Media Books, Fairbanks, AK, 2011

Daniel D. Busby, Kent E. Barber, Robert L. Temple,
The Christian Guide To Worry-free Money Management,
Zondervan Publishing House, 1994, USA, ISBN 0-310-46231-2

Grant R. Jeffrey, The Signature of GOD,
ISBN 0-921714-28-9, Harmony Printing Limited, Canada, 1996

Grant R. Jeffrey, The Handwriting of GOD, ISBN 0-921714-38-6,
Harmony Printing Limited, Canada, 1997

Kenneth E. Hagin, Why Tongues?
ISBN 0-89276-051-6, Faith Library Publications, USA, 1975, reprinted 1994

Kenneth E. Hagin, Seven Vital Steps to Receiving the Holy Spirit,
ISBN 0-89276-003-6, Faith Library Publications, USA, 1980, reprinted 1995

Kenneth E. Hagin, Casting Your Cares Upon The LORD, ISBN 0-89276-023-0,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1981, 20th printing, 1995

Kenneth E. Hagin, A Commonsense Guide to Fasting,
ISBN 0-89276-403-1, Faith Library Publications, USA, 1981,
13th printing, 1995

Kenneth E. Hagin, Understanding the Anointing, ISBN 0-89276-507-0,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1983, Third printing, 1985

Kenneth E. Hagin, The Ministry Gifts, ISBN 0-89276-087-7,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1992, Fourth Edition

Kenneth E. Hagin, Praying To Get Results, ISBN 0-89276-013-3,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1983, 2nd Edition, 21st Printing, 1995

Kenneth E. Hagin, The Interceding Christian, ISBN 0-89276-030-4,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1983, 3rd Edition, 4th Printing, 1995

Kenneth E. Hagin, The Believer's Authority, ISBN 0-89276-406-6,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1984, 2nd Edition, 22nd printing, 1996

Kenneth E. Hagin, The Gift Of Prophecy, ISBN 0-89276-015-X,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1985, reprinted 1995

Kenneth E. Hagin, The Real Faith, ISBN 0-89276-017-6,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1985, reprinted 1995

Kenneth E. Hagin, Healing Belongs To Us, ISBN 0-89276-016-8,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1986, reprinted 1995

Kenneth E. Hagin, Right And Wrong Thinking, ISBN 0-89276-004-4,
Faith Library Publications, USA, 1986, reprinted 1995

Kenneth E. Hagin, The Glory Of GOD,
ISBN 0-89276-271-3, Faith Library Publications, USA, 1987

Kenneth Copeland, You Are Healed!, ISBN 0-88114-733-8,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1979, reprinted 1996

Kenneth Copeland, Now Are We In Christ Jesus, ISBN 0-938458-03-5,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1980, reprinted 1991

Kenneth Copeland, The Miraculous Realm of GOD's Love, ISBN 0-88114-784-2,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1980, reprinted 1993

Kenneth Copeland, Our Covenant With GOD, ISBN 0-88114-742-7,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1980, reprinted 1994

Kenneth Copeland, Freedom From Fear, ISBN 0-938458-05-1,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1980, reprinted 1995

Kenneth Copeland, The Power of The Tongue, ISBN 0-88114-732-X,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1980, reprinted 1995

Kenneth Copeland, Sensitivity Of Heart, ISBN 0-88114-711-7,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1983, reprinted 1994

Kenneth Copeland, Prayer – Your Foundation For Success,
ISBN 0-88114-704-4, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas,
1983, reprinted 1995

Kenneth Copeland, The Force Of Faith, ISBN 0-938458-14-0,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1983, reprinted 1996

Kenneth Copeland, How To Discipline Your Flesh, ISBN 1-57562-116-9,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1984, reprinted 1996

Kenneth Copeland, The Force of Righteousness, ISBN 0-938458-12-4,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1984, reprinted 1994

Kenneth Copeland, Sorrow Not!, ISBN 0-88114-813-X,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1985, reprinted 1995

Kenneth Copeland, Love Never Fails,
ISBN 0-88114-792-3, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1987

Kenneth Copeland, Six Steps To Excellence In Ministry, ISBN 1-57562-104-5,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1987, reprinted 1995

Kenneth Copeland, Honor – Walking In Honesty, Truth, And Integrity,
ISBN 0-89274-913-X, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1992

Kenneth Copeland, Faith And Patience – The Power Twins, PDF,
ISBN 978-1-60463-074-9, Kenneth Copeland Publications,
Fort Worth, Texas, 1992

Kenneth Copeland, The Power To Be Forever Free, ISBN 0-88114-787-7,
Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1992, reprinted 1993

Kenneth & Gloria Copeland, From Faith To Faith – A Daily Guide To Victory, ISBN 0-88114-829-6, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1991

Kenneth & Gloria Copeland, Healing Promises, ISBN 0-88114-949-7, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1995

Gloria Copeland, GOD's Will For You, ISBN 0-938458-10-8, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1973, reprinted 1995

Gloria Copeland, Walk In The Spirit, ISBN 0-88114-280-8, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1986, reprinted 1994

Gloria Copeland, Love – The Secret Of Your Success, ISBN 0-88114-798-2, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1986, reprinted 1996

Gloria Copeland, GOD's Will Is The Holy Spirit, ISBN 0-88114-826-1, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1990, reprinted 1996

Gloria Copeland, Harvest Of Health, ISBN 0-88114-841-5, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1992, reprinted 1994

Gloria Copeland, Walk With GOD, ISBN 0-88114-985-3, Kenneth Copeland Publications, Fort Worth, Texas, 1995

Morris Cerullo, Knowing GOD's Will For Your Life, Morris Cerullo World Evangelism, San Diego, CA, 1990

Morris Cerullo, Christ, Your Healer, Morris Cerullo World Evangelism, San Diego, CA, 1993

Morris Cerullo, Giving And Receiving, Battle Books, East Sussex, UK, 1995

Morris Cerullo, Son, Build Me An Army; MCWE, San Diego, CA, 1999

Roland H. Bainton, Here I Stand, A Life Of Martin Luther, Abingdon – Cokesbury Press, New York, 1950

Lee Strobel, The Case For Christ, ISBN: 0-310-22646-5 (hardcover) - ISBN 0-310-20930-7 (paperback) 91 Zondervan Publishing House, Grand Rapids, Michigan 49530, USA

Alex & Stephen Kendrick, The Love Dare, B&H Books,
1st edition, 2008, ISBN-10: 0805448853; ISBN-13: 978-0805448856

Daniel D. Busby, Kent E. Barber, Robert L. Temple,
The Christian Guide To Worry-free Money Management,
Zondervan Publishing House, USA, 1994, ISBN 0-310-46231-2

Pat Robertson, Answers To 200 Of Life's Most Probing Questions,
CBN Partners, USA, 1987, ISBN 0840754655

Confession & Holy Communion,
The Excerpts from N.I. Pestov, "The Modern Practice of Orthodox Piety"
& St. Ignaty Brechaninov, "The Help to Confessionists",
The Kormcha Publishing Group, Ukraine, 2006.

Common Publications

Brian Carter, Jack
ISBN 10: 0712609466 / ISBN 13: 9780712609463

Christopher Berry-Dee & Robin Odell, Dad, Help Me Please
(The story of Derek Bentley hanged for a murder he did not commit)
The Readers Digest Association Limited, Berkeley Square House London, 1992

James Bowen, A Street Cat Named Bob
Published by St. Martin's Griffin on October 7, 2014;
ISBN-10: 1250048672; ISBN-13: 978-1250048677

James Bowen, A Gift From Bob
Published by Hodder & Stoughton Ltd, UK, 2014; ISBN 978 1 483 60579 4

John Grisham, The Street Lawyer,
Published by Belfry Holdings Inc., USA, 1998, ISBN 0-440-22570-1

Richard Carlson, Don't Sweat The Small Stuff... And It's All Small Stuff,
ISBN 0-7868-8185-2, Hyperion, New York, 1961, reprinted 1997

Helpful Library Sites

Bible Gateway
<*https://www.biblegateway.com*> (June 2026).

Christian Classics Ethereal Library
<*http://www.ccel.org*> (June 2026).

Forgotten Books
<*https://www.forgottenbooks.com*> (June 2026).

Internet Archive / American Libraries
<*https://archive.org/details/americana*> (June 2026).

Original Bibles, <*https://www.originalbibles.com*> (June 2026).

Other Helpful Sites

Ask a Christian, <*https://www.reddit.com/r/AskAChristian*> (June 2026)

Got Questions <*https://www.gotquestions.org/questions*> (June 2026)

Christian & Charitable Movies

90 Minutes In Heaven
(directed by Michael Polish, produced by Randall Emmett, Emmet/Furia Films, Family Christian Entertainment, Giving Films, USA, 2015)

Acts (a.k.a., The Visual Bible: Acts, Acts Of The Apostles)
(directed by Regardt van den Bergh, Visual Bible International, USA, 1994)

After the Promise
(directed by David Greene, Tamara Asseyev Productions, New World Television, USA, 1987)

All Saints
(directed by Steve Gomer, produced by Marc Bienstock, Martha Chang, Autumn Pictures, Affirm Films, Provident Films, USA, 2017)

A Man Called Peter
(directed by Henry Koster, Cinematography by Harold Lipstein, USA, 1955)

A Man For All Seasons
(directed & produced by Fred Zinnemann, Highland Films, UK, 1966)

A Matter of Faith
(directed by Rich Christiano, Five & Two Pictures, USA, 2014)

Amazing Grace
(directed by Michael Apted, produced by Patricia Heaton, FourBoys Films, Walden Media, Bristol Bay Productions, UK, USA, 2007)

Amazing Love
(directed by Kevin Downes, Five & Two Pictures, USA, 2012)

Another Perfect Stranger
(directed by Jefferson Moore, USA, Kelly's Filmworks, 2007)

A Street Cat Named Bob
(directed by Roger Spottiswoode, produced by Adam Rolston, Stage 6 Films, Shooting Script Films, UK, 2016)

Barabbas
(directed by Richard Fleischer, produced by Dino de Laurentiis,
Dino de Laurentiis Cinematografica, Columbia Pictures, Italy, 1961)

Breakthrough
(directed by Roxann Dawson, produced by DeVon Franklin,
Fox 2000 Pictures, Franklin Entertainment, USA, 2019)

Children Of Lesser God
(directed by Randa Haines, Paramount Pictures, USA, 1986)

Christmas Candle
(directed by John Stephenson, Pinewood Studios, UK, USA, 2013)

Clancy
(directed by Jefferson Moore, USA, Kelly's Filmworks, 2009)

Courageous
(directed by Alex Kendrick, Affirm Films, Provident Films, Sherwood Pictures,
Albany, Georgia, USA, 2011)

Do You Believe?
(directed by Jon Gunn, 10 West Studios, Believe Entertainment,
Pure Flix Entertainment, Toy Gun Films, USA, 2015)

End Of The Harvest
(directed & written by Rich Christiano, Christiano Film Group, USA, 1998)

Escape From Hell
(directed & produced by Danny Carrales, DRC Films, USA, 2000)

Facing The Giants
(directed by Alex Kendrick, produced by Stephen Kendrick, Sherwood Pictures,
Provident Films, Kendrick Brothers Group, Caramel Entertainment, USA, 2006)

Final Exit
(Produced & directed by Danny R. Carrales, DRC Productions, USA, 1995)

Fireproof
(directed by Alex Kendrick, Albany, Georgia, USA, Sherwood Pictures, 2008)

Flywheel
(directed by Alex Kendrick, Albany, Georgia, USA, Sherwood Pictures, 2003)

Francis Of Assisi
(directed by Michael Curtiz, produced by Plato A. Skouras, Perseus Productions, Twentieth Century Fox Film Corporation, USA, 1961)

Genesis: Paradise Lost
(directed by Ralph Strean, Sevenfold Films, Creation Today, Kingdom Works Studios, Resurrection Pictures, USA, 2017)

GOD Bless The Broken Road
(directed & produced by Harold Cronk, 10 West Studios, Great Basin Entertainment, Really Good Home Pictures, USA, 2018)

GOD Of Wonders
(hosted By John Whitcomb, Eternal Productions, La Barge Media, USA, 2008)

GOD Is Not Dead (God's Not Dead)
(directed by Harold Cronk, Greg Jenkins Productions, Pure Flix Entertainment, Red Entertainment Group, USA, 2014)

GOD Is Not Dead 2 (God's Not Dead 2)
(directed by Harold Cronk, Pure Flix Entertainment, USA, 2016)

GOD Is Not Dead (God's Not Dead): A Light In Darkness
(directed by Michael Mason, produced by A.R. White, Pure Flix, USA, 2018)

GOD's Outlaw (God's Outlaw)
(directed by Tony Tew, Evangelishe Omroep, Gateway Films, Grenville Film Productions, Mezzo Two, UK, 1986)

Hacksaw Ridge
(directed by Mel Gibson, produced by Bill Mechanic, David Permut, Summit Entertainment, Cross Creek Pictures, USA, Australia, 2016)

Hachi: A Dog's Tale
(directed by Lasse Hallstrom, Hachiko LLC Grand Army Entertainment, USA, UK, 2009)

Heaven Is For Real
(directed by Randall Wallace, Roth Films, USA, 2014)

Highway to Heaven
(directed by Michael Landon, Victor French, Dan Gordon,
Michael Landon Productions, USA, 1984-1989)

I am Gabriel
(directed by Mike Norris, cinematography by Philip Thomas, Echo Light Studios, USA, 2012)

Ignatius of Loyola
(Ignacio de Loyola – directed Paolo Dy, produced by Pauline Mangilog-Saltarin & Ernestine Tamana, Jesuit Communications, Philippines, 2016)

In the Blink of an Eye
(directed by Michael Sinclair, producer Byron M. Jones,
Pure Flix Entertainment, USA, 2009)

Jane Eyre
(TV Serial, directed by Julian Amyes, distributed by BBC, 1983)

Jesus (a.k.a., The Jesus Film)
(directed by Peter Sykes, John Krish, produced by John Heyman,
Genesis Project, USA, 1979)

Jimmy
(written by Robert Whitlow, directed by Mark Freiburger,
produced by Gary Wheeler, USA, 2013)

Joshua
(directed by Jon Purdy, Crusader Entertainment, Epiphany Films LLC, Feelmax, USA, 2002)

Letters To GOD
(directed by David Nixon & Patrick Doughtie, Possibility Pictures, USA, 2010)

Let There Be Light
(directed by Kevin Sorbo, produced by Dan Gordon,
LTBL Productions, Wildfire Films, USA, 2017)

Like Arrows
(directed by Kevin Peeples, produced by David Cook,
Pro-Family Films, Kendrick Brothers Group, USA, 2018)

Love Saga:
Love Begins, Love's Everlasting Courage, Love Comes Softly,
Love's Enduring Promise, Love's Long Journey, Love's Abiding Joy,
Love's Unending Legacy, Love's Unfolding Dream, Love Takes Wing,
Love Finds Home, Love's Christmas Journey
(directed by Michael Landon Jr., Hallmark Channel, USA, 2003-2011)

Luther
(directed by Eric Till & Marc Canosa, R.S., Germany, USA, 2003)

Matthew, the Gospel according to
(a.k.a., Jesus the Christ, directed by Regardt van den Bergh, Visual Bible,
South Africa, 1993)

Me & You, Us, Forever
(directed by Dave Christiano, Dave Christiano Films, Five & Two Pictures,
USA, 2008)

Miracles From Heaven
(directed by Patricia Riggen, Affirm Films, Roth Films, Franklin Entertainment,
USA, 2016)

Nikki And Perfect Stranger
(directed by Jefferson Moore, USA, Kelly's Filmworks, 2013)

Overcomer
(directed by Alex Kendrick, Produced by Aaron Burns,
Kendrick Brothers Productions, Provident Films, USA, 2019)

Pamela's Prayer
(directed by Dave Christiano, USA, Dave Christiano Films, 1998)

Paul, Apostle Of Christ
(directed by Anfrew Hyatt, Affirm Films, ODB Films, USA, 2018)

Pay it Forward
(directed by Mimi Leder, Bel Air Entertainment, Tapestry Films, Pathe, USA, 2000)

Road To Emmaus
(directed by Steve Boettcher, USA, Boettcher Trinklein Productions, 2009)

Robber Of The Cruel Streets
(written & directed by Crawford Telfer, Christian Television Association, Christian History Institute ERF Germany, UCB Television, UK, 2006)

Same Kind Of Different As Me
(directed by Michael Carney, written by Ron Hall & Denver Moore, produced by Cale Boyter, Paramount Pictures, USA, 2017)

Samson
(directed by Bruce MacDonald, Produced by David White, Pure Flix, Boomtown Films, USA, South Africa, 2018)

Schindler's List
(directed & produced by Steven Spielberg, Amblin Entertainment, USA, 1993)

Seven Pounds
(directed by Gabrielle Muccino, produced by Todd Black, Relativity Media, Overbrook Entertainment, Escape Artists, USA, 2008)

Silence
(directed by Martin Scorsese, Sharp Sword Films, Al Film, Emmet/Furla/Oasis Films, USA, Taiwan, Mexico, UK, Italy, Japan, 2016)

Silent Night
(directed by Rodney Gibbons, produced by Rory J. Aylward, Artisan Canada, Hallmark USA, 2002)

Standing Firm
(directed by Kyle Prohaska, USA, Praise Pictures, 2010)

The Apostle
(written, directed, produced & starred by Robert Duvall, co-produced by Steven Brown & Rob Carliner, USA, October Films, 1997)

The Book Of Daniel
(directed by Anna Zielinski, USA, Pure Flix Entertainment, 2013)

The Case For Christ
(directed by Jon Gunn, USA, Pure Flix Entertainment, 2017)

The Encounter
(directed by David A. R. White, USA, God & Country Entertainment, 2011)

The Fourth Wise Man
(directed by Michael Ray Rhodes, Paulist Productions, USA, 1985)

The Help
(directed by Tate Taylor, produced by Chris Columbus, DreamWorks Pictures, Reliance Entertainment, USA, 2011)

The Gospel of John
(directed by Philip Saville, produsedby Garth Drabinsky,
Visual Bible International, UK, USA, Canada, 2003)

The Grace Card
(directed by David Evans, Grace Works Pictures, Provident Films, USA, 2010)

The Green Mile
(directed by Frank Darabont, Castle Rock Entertainment, USA, 1999)

The Guardian
(directed by Andrew Davis, produced by Armyan Bernstein,
Touchstone Pictures, Beacon Communications, Flash Film Works, USA, 2006)

The Island (Russian: “Ostrov”)
(directed by Pavel Lungin, Pavel Lungin's Studio, Russia, 2006)

The Lost And Found Family
(directed by Barnet Bain, Sony Pictures Home Entertainment, USA, 2009)

The Messiah: Prophecy Fulfilled
(directed by Giacomo Moncada, Kingdom Entertainment Inc., Canada, 2004)

The Nun's Story
(directed by Fred Zinnermann, produced by Henry Blanke, Warner Brothers, USA, 1959)

The Perfect Gift
(directed by Jefferson Moore & Shane Sooter, Kelly's Filmworks, USA, 2009)

The Perfect Stranger
(directed by Jefferson Moore & Shane Sooter, Kelly's Filmworks, USA, 2005)

The Second Chance
(directed by Steve Taylor, Triumph Releasing Corporation, USA, 2006)

The Secrets Of Jonathan Sperry
(directed by Rich Christiano, Five & Two Pictures, USA, 2008)

The Song Of Bernadette
(directed by Henry King, 20th Century Fox, USA, 1943)

The Stranger TV Series
(directed by Jefferson Moore, USA, Kelly's Filmworks, 2007)

The Ten Commandments
(directed & produced by Cecil B. DeMille, Cecil B. DeMille Production, Paramount Pictures, USA, 1956)

Undercover Angel
(directed by Bryan Michael Stoller, Canada, USA, 1999)

Unplanned
(directed by Cary Solomon & Chuck Konzelman, produced by Chris Jones, Soli Deo Gloria, Pure Flix, USA, 2019)

War Room
(directed by Alex Kendrick, Affirm Films, Provident Films, Kendrick Brothers Productions, North Carolina, USA, 2015)

WWJD – What Would Jesus Do? (directed by Thomas Makovski, Nasser Group, Raymond, California, USA, 2010)

Christian Cinema Sites (last checked on June 2026)

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/List_of_Christian_films

http://www.affirmfilms.com

https://www.christiancinema.com

https://www.christianmovies.com

https://www.fiveandtwopictures.com

http://providentfilms.org

About the Writer

How can I call myself “the author”? For the LORD our GOD is.
I can be only *His Scribe* and, as such, hope to hear my GOD clearly and write correctly. To reason Scripturally, we are supposed thus hear.
Writing & reading a Christian book, both Writer & Reader ought to experience the same Peace. Otherwise, at least one of them is wrong.

Sometimes, the question at hand seems to be hard for me to answer.
Then I remember His Word –

Fear thou not; for I am with thee: be not dismayed; for I am thy GOD:
I will strengthen thee; Yea, I will help thee; Yea, I will uphold thee
with the Right Hand of My Righteousness. (Isaiah 41:10)

So, prayerfully, I start my writing, and the parallel Scriptures come to mind.
The same may explain the reason why Christian Writers correct & amend the books written.

... Heare Me, and I will instruct thee, hearken to the thing that I say,
& I shal tell thee more.
(Apocrypha, 2nd Esdras 5:32, King James Version, 1611)

I have been a Christian since 1994.
The *Christian Mind* is my Ministry, and this “Q & A” book is a long-term project.

Igor Evgen

Index

The important subjects and pertinent chapters to look up.

A

Abomination(s) – 117, 698.
Abortion – 125, 271, 609, 692, 770.
Abraham – 166, 261, 599, 775.
Absolution – 34.
Absurd, absurdities – 341. See also all chapters titled *The unbelievers ask*.
Abuse – 87, 508.
"Accepting" (GOD, Christ, &c.) – see *Jesus, "accepting."*
Account, Accountability – see *Responsibility*.
Act(s) of GOD – 33.
Acts, the Book of, *Chapter 2* – 358, 375, 385.
Chapter 3 – 344, 345, 378, 383, 396.
Chapter 4 – 399, 784.
Chapter 5 – 351, 379.
Chapter 6 – 368.
Chapter 16 – 358.
Chapter 20 – 347.
Adam & Eve – 260, 268.
Addictions – 174, 294, 501, 589, 590.
Ad Majorem Dei Gloriam – 677.
Adoption – 495.
Adultery – 32, 96, 126, 187, 572, 655, 676. See also *Fornication, Lust.*
Afterlife – 195, 403, 707. See also *Death – eternal, second*.
See also *Life – Eternal*.
Agnosticism, agnostic(s) – See *Unbelievers*.
Alcoholism – 332, 589.
Alien, extraterrestrial – 261, 649.
Amen – 301.
American Atheists – 348, 349, 352, 354, 356, 358, 359, 362, 365, 367, 368, 369, 376, 379, 395.
See also chapters "*Contradictions*" and *The unbelievers ask*.
Amos, the Book of – 178.
Anarchy – 670.
Anathema – 675.

Angel(s) – 37, 280, 401, 460, 473, 748.
Anger – 293, 334, 605, 778.
Animal(s) – 28, 120, 213, 289, 306, 335, 562, 628, 644, 657.
See also *Cat(s)*, *Spiritual Authority*.
Anointing – 69.
Answer from GOD – see GOD's Answer.
Antichrist – 256, 574, 649.
Antisemitism – 247.
Antiscience – 48.
Anxiety – 239.
Apocrypha – 230.
Apostle – 169.
Apostles' Creed – 52.
Appearance outward – 427.
Ark of Covenant – 152, 252.
Ark of Noah – 334, 335.
Artificial intelligence, character – 510, 716.
Ascension – 53.
Ashes – 578.
Astrology – 61.
Astronomy – 290.
Atheism, atheist(s) – 177, 328, 572, 701. See also *Unbelievers*.
Atonement – 4.
Attitude – 746.
Authority, Christian – 502, 586.
human – 3, 261, 312, 313.
worldly – 418, 439.
See also *Christian Leadership*, *Spiritual Authority*.

B

Babel, city, tower – 303, 326.
Backup – see *Prayer*.
Baptism, Approach to – 672.
child – 45, 672, 736.
Fire – 310.
in the Holy Spirit – 65.
in the Name of Jesus – 316.
Threefold – 66, 400, 672.
Water – 20.
Barclay, William – 173 (get prepared), 292 (interpretations).

Beast, the mark of – 537 (false).
Beatitudes (*2Peter 1:5-7*) – 468.
Beggar(s) – 744. See also *Poverty*.
Bible – Guidance – 67, 751.
Interpretations – 292.
Rules – 282.
Translations – 118, 464, 763.
Truthfulness – 10, 273, 281, 335, 397, 514, 598, 667, 719.
Value – 104, 611.
Verses & Chapters – 148.
Bible Study: approach – 29, 328, 689, 692.
beginning – 102.
errors – 103.
evaluation – 105.
interconnections – 526.
interpretation – 292 (William Barclay), 723, 726.
languages – 674.
notes – 569.
outline – 401.
Parallel(s) – 617.
researches – 122.
Revelations – 32, 41, 83.
Strategy – 102.
Teacher – 104, 118, 723.
Timing – 101
See also all chapters named “Bible Study” in Contents.
“Big Bang” theory – 256, 713. See also *Science*.
Birth control – 281, 668. See also *Christian Family*.
Blasphemy – 12, 263, 298, 492, 622, 685, 748.
See also *Tongue*.
Blessing(s) – 44.
Borrow, borrowing – 545, 546.
Bread of Life – 128.
Buddhism, Buddhist(s) – 656. See also *Unbeliever(s*).
Burial – see *Funeral*.
Business – 90, 453.

C

Cain – 123, 774.
Call, called – 73.

Calvin John, Teacher – 8 (hell), 34 (Washing feet), 57 (the Lord's Prayer), 119 ("contradictions"), 138 (Hope), 140 (*Matthew 23:9*), 175 (*Matthew 25:1-13*), 209 (*Matthew 7:24-27*), 222 (*Luke 16:19-31*), 288 (Jews), 310 (Baptism), 411 (*Romans 3-4*), 517 (conscience), 613 (the Truth of GOD), 758 (Marriage).
Cancer – 257, 331, 726.
Capitalism – 228.
Capital punishment – 95, 456, 763. See also *Christian Justice*, *Executioner*.
Career – 596.
Cat(s) – 306, 562. See also *Animals*.
Catholic Roman, Church – 230, 422. See also *Denomination(s)*.
Celibacy – 462.
Census – 113.
Character, personality – 23, 82, 184, 663.
Charity – 135, 205, 336, 429, 644.
Children – 85, 166, 532, 647, 684. See also *Birth control*, *Christian Family*.
Chosen People – 59, 73, 362. See also *GOD's People*.
Christ (Messiah) – Baptism, Ministry, Sacrifice – 459.
definition – 600.
Resurrection – 755.
See also *Jesus*.
Christian Beginning – 67, 133, 199, 214, 317, 319, 506.
behavior – 618. See also *Christian Morality*.
Conversation – 571, 681, 682, 715, 733.
Country – 55, 95, 567.
Counseling – 479.
Courage – 570.
Disciple(ship) – 128, 210, 231, 498, 611, 679.
Education – 70, 85, 724, 734.
Family – 13, 60, 271, 276, 307, 446, 452, 530, 536, 549, 597, 606, 717, 724. See also *Christian Marriage*.
Fight(er) – Prayer – 609.
It is written – 735.
Heart – 481.
Home – 13, 499, 694.
Joy – 737.
Justice – 328, 623, 763. See also *GOD's Judgment & Justice*.
Leadership – 13, 206, 436, 595, 626, 637.

Living – 406 – Meeting the past.
410 – Our countries.
412 – Our values.
701 – Our Way.
731 – Our Works.
See also every chapter named “Christian Living” in Contents.
See also *Charity*, *Divorce*, *Parents*.
Marriage – 74, 287, 549, 606, 717. See also *Christian Family*.
Ministry – 24, 291, 461, 509.
Morality – 661.
Movie(s) – 454, 766.
Name – 261, 321.
Unity – see *Unity of Saints.*
Christianity – 109, 139, 263, 277, 282, 642, 647, 700.
Chronicles, the First Book of – 113.
Church (Local) Membership – 27.
Offices – 436, 637.
registration – 511.
Rules – 160.
Service(s) – 424, 446, 467.
singing – 54, 610.
switching – 242.
yours – 488, 694, 724.
Circumcision – 149, 359, 760.
Civic duties – 87.
Civility – 708.
Cloning – 340.
Clothes – see *Dress*.
Colossians, the Epistle to – *Chapter 1* – 355, 383, 725.
Chapter 2 – 371, 387.
Chapter 3 – 394, 603.
Chapter 4 – 368.
Comfort – 719.
Commandments: First – 93, 129.
Second – 94.
Third – 22.
Fourth – 91. See also *Sabbath*.
Fifth – 79, 625.
Sixth – 125, 339.
Seventh – 126.
Eighth – 127.

Ninth – 129.
Tenth – 130.
Eleventh – 80, 550.
Twelfth – 43, 483, 496, 550, 647, 685, 695.
Commentaries to the Bible – 451, 475.
Common sense (worldly reason) – 41, 166, 407, 440, 491, 650, 675.
See also *Reason*.
Communications – 593.
Communion Holy – 35, 278.
of Saints – see *Small Groups*.
with GOD – 32, 48, 271, 419, 615, 623, 643, 649, 719.
See also *Worship*.
Communism – 449. See also *Russia*.
Compassion – 150.
Complacency – 245.
Compromise – 40, 407.
Confession: Cleansing spiritual – 19, 116, 608.
Common – 609.
Confessing crimes – 22. 405, 506.
Confidentiality – 46.
Help – 276, 409.
Parable of the Pharisee and the Tax Collector – 219.
Witnessing – 42, 309.
Washing feet – 34.
Confessional, Confessionalist, Confessor – 46.
Conflict – 7.
Confucius – 401.
Conscience – 32, 162, 178, 517, 522.
Consolation(s) – 469, 532.
"Contradictions" in the Bible – 29, 82, 96, 119, 745, 762.
See the *Contents* for "Contradictions" and "The unbelievers ask."
Conversion – 560.
Corinthians, the First Epistle to – *Chapter 1* – 360.
Chapter 2 – 384, 391.
Chapter 3 – 375.
Chapter 6 – 623.
Chapter 7 – 536.
Chapter 11 – 71, 623.
Chapter 13 – 534.
Chapter 14 – 623.
Chapter 15 – 342, 361, 369, 377.

Chapter 16 – 31.
Corinthians, the Second Epistle to, *Chapter 5* – 366, 752.
Chapter 6 – 743.
Chapter 9 – 373.
Chapter 12 – 397, 473.
"Corona" virus – 487, 759, 789.
Corruption – 297, 586.
Counseling – 42, 452, 479, 487, 501, 505, 506.
See also *Confession*.
Courage – 99, 570, 668.
Covenant(s) – see *GOD's Covenant*.
Covid – see *"Corona" virus*.
Creation – see *GOD's Creation*.
Credit, creditor – 546.
Creed, Jewish – 161.
Cremation – 469.
Crime – 405.
Criminal code – 196.
Criticism – 2, 141, 219, 264, 605, 711, 738.
Cross of Christ – 4, 520, 720, 740.
of ours – 76, 99, 668, 703.
Crowd – 264.
Cruelty – 1, 249, 299, 493, 726.
Curse(s) – 7, 44, 190, 493, 638, 753.

D

Damnation – 765. See also *GOD's Judgment & Justice*, *Hell*.
Daniel, the Book of – *Chapter 7* – 302, 574.
Chapter 8 – 575.
Chapter 11 – 576.
Darkness, spiritual – 641.
Dating – 70, 615. See also *Christian family*.
David – 113.
Dead to sin – 754.
Death, eternal, second – 167, 222, 247, 318, 558, 573, 721, 739.
and Free will – 528.
penalty – see *Capital punishment*.
physical – 167, 317, 429, 528, 532, 686, 708, 739, 742.
& sin – 18.
See also *Hell*.

Debate – 6, 735.
Debt, debtor – 545.
Deceit – see *Falsehood, Lie*.
Defilement – 569.
Definition(s) – 6, 586.
Deja vu – 280.
Deluge – see *Flood*.
Demon(s), fallen angels – 39, 245, 249, 280, 497.
"Demoniations" – 634.
Demonic possession – 745.
See also *Satan*, *Spirit war*, *Unbelievers*.
Denominations, denominationalism – 5, 84, 422, 473, 604, 634, 649.
See also *Unity*.
Dependence, dependency – 511.
Depression – 92.
Destiny – 177.
Deuteronomy, the Book of – *Chapter 6* – 161, 372.
Chapter 7 – 394, 785.
Chapter 12 – 476.
Chapter 14 – 388, 786.
Chapter 23 – 787.
Chaoter 25 – 307.
Chapter 26 – 788.
Chapter 28 – 789.
Devil – see *Satan*.
Dinosaurs – 257, 289, 335, 455.
Disabilities – 676.
Disagreements – 649. See also *Denominations*.
Disappointment – 220.
Disasters natural – 653.
Disciple(ship) – see *Christian – Disciple(ship)*.
Discipline – 87, 517, 639.
See also *Church–Rules*.
"Discrepancies" in (translations of) the Bible – 748, 762.
See also "*Contradictions" in the Bible.*
Discussion – 6.
Diseases – 614. See also *Healing*.
Dispute – see *Debate*.
Divorce – 98, 446, 639, 772.
Doctor(s) – 62, 487.
Domestication – 704.

Donations – 285. See also *Giving*.
Doubt(s) – 133, 716, 736, 765, 657.
Dream(s) – 10, 32, 51. See also *Nightmare(s)*.
Dress code – 15, 71, 544, 780.
Sign – 594.
Drugs – 294. See also *Medicine(s)*.
Dry Law – 649.
Dust, shaking off – 524.

E

Earrings – 513.
Earth, age – 352, 568.
before Satan – 259.
the Center of the Universe – 290, 514, 713.
Ecclesiastes, the Book of – *Chapter 1* – 83, 430.
Chapter 3 – 519.
Chapter 7 – 426.
Chapter 8 – 427.
Chapter 9 – 351.
Chapter 10 – 428, 764, 779.
Chapter 11 – 429.
Eden – 103. See also *Paradise*.
Education – 336, 573. See also *Christian Education*.
Elders, Twenty-Four – 776.
Elect of GOD – 62.
Election – see *Voting*.
Elisha, the Prophet – 781.
Employment – 542.
Emptiness (folly, foolishness, stupidity, etc) – see *Spiritual*.
End of the World, End times – 145, 368.
Enemy – 36, 38, 39, 112, 416, 530.
See also *Satan*.
Environment – 321.
Envy – 130, 201, 404.
Ephesians, the Epistle to – *Chapter 1* – 385.
Chapter 2 – 353.
Chapter 3 – 383, 398.
Chapter 4 – 356, 361, 389, 392, 393.
Chapter 6 – 397, 444.
Epitimia – 34.

Eschatology – 256.
Eternal death – see *Death*.
Eternal Life – see *Life*.
Eternity – 59, 305, 334, 573, 585.
Eucharist – see *Communion Holy*.
Evangelio – 637.
Evangelist(s) – 43, 343, 346, 524, 618, 647, 695.
Evangelization, Evangelizing – as a Ministry – 24, 647.
– answering unbelievers' questions – 470.
See chapters *The unbelievers ask*.
– example – 199.
– Work of Local Churches – 283.
– Parable of a Sower – 225.
– Twelfth Commandment – 43.
Evidence – 486, 656. See also *Proof*.
Evil(s) – 1, 109, 155, 512. See also *Sin*.
Evolution, the theory of – 273, 657, 661.
Excommunication – 517.
Executioner – 131, 705.
Existence – 259.
Exodus, the Book of – *Chapter 4* – 646.
Chapter 12 – 769.
Chapter 21 – 211, 358, 418.
Exorcism – 745.
Experience – 25, 52, 65, 89, 184, 285, 579, 716, 735.
See also *Faith, Knowledge, Knowledge of GOD, Testimony*.
Extrasensory – 180.
Extraterrestrial – see *Alien*.
Eye (*An eye for an eye*.) – 146, 358.
Ezekiel, the Book of – *Chapter 1* – 553.
Chapter 3 – 548.
Chapter 4 – 551.
Chapter 8 – 554.
Chapter 20 – 559.
Chapter 33 – 565.
Chapters 38-39 – 566.
Prophecies – 564.

F

Faith – and Knowledge – 52, 254.
and Righteousness – 714.
and Works – 68, 348, 352.
defended – 652, 653.
defined – 217, 237, 468, 486, 557.
exercising – 86, 432, 670, 714, 771.
Life of – 265, 420, 442.
matter of – 86.
measure of – 327, 630, 714.
testing – 218, 331.
vs reason – 133.
Faithfulness to GOD – 43, 90, 209, 217, 292.
Fall – 611.
Falsehood – 1, 109, 272, 279, 324, 543, 607, 631, 642, 665, 711.
See also *Lie(s), Mormons, NPP.*
False witnessing – see *Lie*.
Family – See *Christian Family*.
Fast – 73, 477, 578.
Father, title – 140.
Fear of GOD – 144.
of death – 99, 114, 195, 520.
worldly – 172, 757.
Feast(s) – 157, 779.
Female Ordination – 467, 736. See also *Woman*.
Fire – see *Spiritual*.
First Fruits – 157, 788.
Flood (Deluge) – 262, 623, 739.
Food, spiritual & physical – 50, 106, 107, 128, 476.
See also *Spiritual Food*.
Fool, foolishness – 750, 778. See also *Spiritual*.
Footprints, free verse – 317.
Forgiving, Forgiveness – 19, 38, 228.
Fornication – 572. See also *Adultery, Lust.*
Four Carpenters – 592.
Four horsemen – 567.
Freedom – 158, 215, 560, 572, 710.
Free will – 257, 268, 280 (*C.S. Lewis*), 320, 441, 516, 650, 651, 663, 739, 741 (*M. Cerullo*), 761.
Friend(s) – 87, 121, 218, 286, 496.

Fruit(s) & fruitlessness – see *Spiritual*.
Fun – 737. See also *Christian Joy*.
Funeral – 12.

G

Galatians, the Epistle to – *Chapter 2* – 325, 364.
Chapter 3 – 377.
Chapter 4 – 373, 374, 380.
Chapter 5 – 359, 371.
Chapter 6 – 344, 420.
Gambling – 554.
Gehenna – 605 (by the Expanded Bible).
Genesis, the Book of – *Chapter 1* – 328, 329, 330, 341, 388.
Chapter 2 – 329, 331, 332, 440.
Chapter 3 – 147, 333, 475, 782.
Chapter 4 – 22.
Chapter 5 – 375.
Chapter 6 – 330, 335.
Chapter 7 – 334, 336.
Chapter 8 – 337, 338.
Chapter 9 – 339, 340, 388.
Chapter 11 – 303.
Chapter 17 – 359, 371, 380.
Chapter 29 – 41.
Chapter 32 – 356.
Chapter 38 – 560.
Genocide – 258.
Gentile(s) – 288, 377.
Geography – 666.
Giants – 257.
Gideon – 126.
Gift(s) of the Spirit – 24.
Giving – 56, 100, 221, 240, 314, 373, 431, 504, 628, 744, 783.
See also *Donations*, *Sacrifice*, *Tithing*.
Gladkov B. I., Russian Scholar – 598.
Glory – see *GOD's Glory*
GOD First – 15.
God Holy Spirit – blasphemy against – 263.
Fellowship (Relationship) with – 292, 649.
indwelling our heart – 23, 212, 603, 614.

Mediator – 271, 481.
Obedience to – 694.
of Peace – 53, 603.
Part of the Holy Trinity – 459.
Promised Teacher – 104.
Spirit of Truth – 475.
Spirit of Unity – 582.
Understanding (Credentials) of – 694.
Godlessness – 572.
Godliness – 21, 439, 468.
Godparents – 45.
GOD's Answer – 383, 398, 414, 465, 525.
See also *Prayer answered*.
Appearance – 561.
Control – 261, 718.
Covenant (Testament), Old & New – 16, 17, 18, 192, 516, 538, 748.
Creation – 28, 257, 267, 273, 281, 329, 330, 441, 510, 512, 646, 663, 730, 746.
Design – 709.
Faithfulness – 177, 261.
Fear – see *Fear of GOD*.
Forgiveness – 263.
Freedom & Free Will – 645.
Glory – 75, 553, 677, 686, 799.
Grace – 144, 192, 322 (explained), 352, 743.
Image & Likeness – 93, 330, 412, 433, 510, 578.
Jealousy – 441.
Judgment & Justice – 26, 95, 96, 119, 206, 269, 278, 320, 339, 412, 472, 507, 508, 516, 535, 584, 642, 645, 677, 697, 706, 725, 741, 754, 760.
Kingdom – 238.
Law – 144, 185, 189, 190, 192, 198, 372, 412, 559, 583, 763.
Love (Kindness, Mercy, Grace) – 59, 135, 213, 278, 559, 561, 564, 711.
Mercy – see *Mercy*.
Message – 271. See also *Bible*.
Name – 22, 83, 279, 691.
Omnipotence – 320, 630, 645. See also *GOD's Power*.
Omnipresence – 282. See also *God Holy Spirit*.
Omniscience – 619, 645, 707. See also *GOD's Wisdom*.
Oneness – 255.
Patience (Longsuffering) – 621.

Peace – 53, 168, 482, 603.
People – 59, 362, 666.
Plan(s) & Purpose(s) – 11, 650.
See also *GOD's Will*.
Pleasure – see *GOD's Will*.

Power – 86, 320, 349, 791.
See also *GOD's Omnipotence*.
Praise – 75, 200, 518.
Presence – 478.
Promises – 395.
Property – 639.
Provision – 292.
Punishment – 60, 64, 337, 508, 650, 714, 741.
Responsibility – 653.
Revelation(s) – 83.
Sarcasm – 128, 221, 266, 342, 440, 552, 782.
Silence – 478.
Sorrow – 746.
Temple(s) – 586.
Test, testing – 218, 279, 351, 601.
Testament – see *GOD's Covenant*.
Trinity – 93, 459, 512, 602, 690, 746.
Voice – 181, 643, 719.
Warning(s) – 203, 204, 207, 209, 215, 221–224, 228, 230, 584.
Will – 24, 140, 335, 529, 695.
See also *GOD's Plan(s) & Purpose(s)*.
Wisdom – 97. See also *GOD's Omniscience*.
Word – see *Bible*.
Wrath – 334.
Gods – 578.
Gog & Magog – 566, 567, 718.
Golden Rule – 610.
Good person(s) – 58, 280, 336.
Good sense – see *Understanding*.
Grace – see *GOD's Grace*.
Grace Ambassadors – 342–401.
doctrine – 391.
See also chapters "Contradictions".
See also *Falsehood, NPP*.
Grandparents – 505, 606. See also *Christian family*.

Great Commission – see *Commandments – Twelfth*.

H

H & P & R – Holy, Perfect, Righteous – 220.
Happiness – 336, 657.
Harmony of the Word – 625.
Harvest, the Law of – 1, 44, 222, 300, 320, 503, 508, 714, 722.
Hatred – 251.
Healing, devilish – 81.
medical – 487.
Ministry – 432, 611.
Miracle – 64, 432, 630.
Promises – 67.
Health physical – 174.
Hebrews, the Book of – *Chapter 10* – 350.
Chapter 7 – 500.
Hearing spiritual – see *Spiritual hearing*.
Heathen – see *Unbeliever(s)*.
Heaven – 159 (defined), 473 (First, Second, Third)
the Kingdom of – 124, 153, 250, 267, 307, 677, 707, 708.
See also *Life–Eternal, Salvation*.
Hell – 8, 331, 490, 552, 660, 674, 707.
See also *Death – eternal, second*.
Help – 98.
Heresy, heretic(s) – 483.
Hermaphrodite – 642.
Hexagram – 588.
Higgaion (Hyggaion, Shiggaion) – 136.
History – 103, 262, 265, 646, 648, 649.
Hitler – 129, 337.
Holiness, Holy – 330, 523.
Holy Ghost, Holy Spirit – see *God Holy Spirit*.
Holocaust – 31, 751.
Home – see *Christian – Home*.
Home Group(s) – see *Small Group(s)*.
Homeland – 417, 484.
Homosexuality – 695, 712, 763. See also LGBT, Perversions.
Honesty – 2, 430, 452.
See also *Responsibility*.
Honor – 658.

Hope – 138, 537, 557, 622, 676.
Hospitality – 15, 461.
Human body – 709.
Humanity – 273, 663. See also *GOD's Image & Likeness*.
See also *Spiritual Authority*.
Human sacrifices – 26, 50, 367, 457. See also *Idolatry*.
Humility – 229.
Hygiene (physical & spiritual) – 633.
Hypocrisy – 129, 448.
Hypothetical (& sophistical) questions – 45, 123, 255, 259, 267, 271, 276, 330, 336, 419, 653, 722, 730.
See also *The unbelievers ask*.

I

Idolatry – 50, 94, 403, 554. See also *Human sacrifices*.
Ignorance – 332, 696.
Imagination – 51.
Immaculate Conception – 766.
Implication – 753.
Imprecating – 112. See also *Enemy*, *Satan*.
Incest – 339, 362, 748.
Indoctrination – 177.
Infant – 642.
Inheritance spiritual – 529.
Innocence – 715.
Insult – 778.
Intelligence, IQ – 256, 701.
Intercession – 578. See also *Prayer*.
Interpretation – 255, 290, 292, 356, 586, 753.
Intersex – 235.
Intuition – 147.
Islam, Islamist(s) – see *Unbelievers*.
Isaiah, the Book of – *Chapter 5* – 437.
Chapters 13-15 – 443.
Chapter 28 – 455.
Chapter 29 – 456.
Chapter 30 – 457.
Chapter 39 – 463.
Chapter 40 – 464.
Chapter 42 – 466.

Chapter 45 – 441.
Chapter 47 – 472.
Chapter 53 – 475, 777.
Chapter 55 – 476.
Chapter 58 – 477.
Chapter 60 – 480.
Chapter 61 – 481.
Chapter 62 – 482.
Chapter 64 – 384.
Chapter 65 – 397.
Israel – 437, 471, 607, 666. See also *GOD's People, Promised Land*.
It is written – 51.

J

Jacob (Israel) – 471, 781.
James, the Letter of – *Chapter 2* – 348, 352, 354.
*Chapte*r *4* – 558.
*Chapte*r *5* – 368.
Jeremiah, the Book of – *Chapter 10* – 518.
Chapter 13 – 521.
Chapter 14 – 523.
Chapter 17 – 527.
Chapter 31 – 399.
Jerusalem – 323, 482, 579. See also *Spiritual Leadership*.
Jesus, Advocate – 643.
"accepting" – 17, 66, 77, 165, 466, 622, 684, 732.
Ancestry – 166.
Baptism of – 600.
Birth – 600, 655.
Blood of – 725.
Body (physical) – 263.
Bread of Life – 684.
Christ – 100, 475, 671, 691.
See also *Cross of Christ, Messiah*.
Following – 225, 620.
See also *"Accepting."*
God – 73, 124, 237, 281, 334, 682 (Q 25).
High Priest – 500.
in Him – 220, 372, 433, 447, 458, 523, 725.
Interest secular in – 331.

Man – 73, 114, 730, 777.
Ministry – 4, 114, 600.
Name – 118, 316, 415, 577, 584, 667.
See also *Yeshua*.
Prayers – 73, 124, 690.
Sacrifice of – 264, 330, 520, 731.
Second Coming – 267.
Teaching – 145, 613, 773.
Testing & Training – 601.
Three days after the crucifixion – 114.
Transfiguration – 244.
Jew(s) – 59, 288, 328, 515, 555, 632, 666.
See also *GOD's People*.
Job, the Book of – *Chapter 2* – 365, 768.
Chapter 7 – 396.
Job (employment, work) – see *Employment*.
Joel, the Book of – *Chapter 1* – 584.
Chapter 2 – 395, 584.
Chapter 3 – 386, 584.
John the Baptist – 165, 450.
John, the Apostle & Martyr – 76.
the First Epistle by – *Chapter 1* – 387.
Chapter 2 – 393.
Chapter 4 – 212.
Chapter 5 – 459.
the Gospel by – *Chapter 1* – 114.
Chapter 3 – 773.
Chapter 4 – 378.
Chapter 5 – 396.
Chapter 6 – 684.
Chapter 8 – 96.
Chapter 9 – 123.
Chapter 15 – 400.
Chapter 17 – 287.
Chapter 20 – 355
the Third Epistle by – 482.
Jonah, the Book of – 119, 587.
Joshua, *Chapter 7* – 790.
Chapter 10 – 791.
Joy – 584. See also *Christian Joy*.
Judas Iscariot – 89, 683.

Jude, the General Epistle of – 145, 580.
Judges, the Book of – the Teaching – 120.
Chapter 7 – 140.
Chapter 11 – 367, 419.
Judgment Day – see *GOD's Judgment & Justice*.
Justice – 328. See also *Christian Justice*

K

King(s) – 276, 439, 566, 576.
Kings, 2nd Book of – 760.
Kingdom of Heaven, of GOD – see *GOD's Kingdom, Heaven*.
Knowledge – 52, 58, 624, 719, 741.
and Faith – 52, 254.
See also chapters named "*Bible Study*" in the Contents.
Knowledge of GOD – 52, 270. See also *Experience*.
Korah – 278.

L

Lamentations of Jeremiah – 569.
Language(s) – 326.
Law of GOD – see *GOD's Law*.
Lazarus – 758.
Laziness – 295.
Legality – 710. See also *Christian Justice*.
Lend, lending – 546.
Lenin, the servant of Satan – 115.
Letter of the Law – 196, 583.
Leviathan – 629. See also *Satan*.
Levit(s) – 42.
Leviticus, the Book of – *Chapter 7* – 783.
Chapter 12:1-8 – 699.
Chapter 16 – 350.
Chapter 19 – 586, 699, 783.
Chapter 21 – 569.
Chapter 22 – 157.
Chapter 23 – 752.

Lewis C.S. – 4 (reminding), 5 (divisions), 6 (Giving), 184 (temptation), 185 (Love), 220 (Christians), 280 (Free will), 299 (cruelty), 303 (pride), 419 (Education), 635 (reason)
LGBT – lesbian, gay, bisexual, transgender – 276, 712.
See also *Perversions sexual*.
Liberty – see *Freedom.*
Lie(s) & liar(s) – 129, 177, 202, 231, 311, 351, 591, 634, 646, 664.
ancient – 340.
See also *Falsehood.*
Life, Eternal – 167, 207, 251, 384, 613, 650.
healthy – 174.
human, physical – 82.
meaning, purpose – 452, 707.
of Faith – see *Faith – Life of*.
unborn, aborted, born dead – 739.
See also *Afterlife, Heaven, Salvation*.
Light – see *Spiritual*.
Loan – 545, 658.
Logic – 704, 735.
Lord's Prayer – see *Prayer*.
Lost – 282.
Lot, Saint – 123.
Lot, casting – 170.
Love – 135, 153, 185, 534, 624, 717, 765.
See also *Widowhood.*
Lucifer – see *Satan*.
Luke, the Gospel by – *Chapter 2* – 394.
Chapter 8 – 435.
Chapter 9 – 346, 347, 498.
Chapter 10 – 353, 363, 391, 524.
Chapter 11 – 435.
Chapter 12 – 389, 394.
Chapter 13 – 673.
Chapter 18 – 346.
Chapter 21 – 367, 368.
Chapter 22 – 363, 367.
Chapter 23 – 243.
Chapter 24 – 383.
Lust – 126, 452. See also *Fornication, Adultery.*
Luther Martin, Master, Brother – 118. See his words throughout this book.

M

Mammon (love of money) – 137, 221, 285, 438.
Man & Woman – 594. See also *Christian Family*.
Mark, the Gospel by – *Chapter 1* – 343, 361.
Chapter 3 – 357.
Chapter 5 – 171.
Chapter 8 – 784.
Chapter 9 – 241.
Chapter 13 – 370.
Chapter 16 – 360, 743.
Maran-atha – 675.
Marriage forbidden – 7, 758.
interracial – 611.
See also *Christian Marriage*.
Martial arts – 15.
Martyrs – 125.
Mary, the mother of Jesus – 273, 758, 759.
Mass – 278.
Materialism – 682 (Q 27).
Matthew, the Gospel by – *Chapter 2* – 598, 757.
Chapter 3 – 359, 361, 599, 600.
Chapter 4 – 601, 654.
Chapter 5 – 128, 145, 241, 434, 524, 602, 603, 604, 605, 743, 778.
Chapter 6 – 57, 356, 390, 395, 746.
Chapter 7 – 40, 391.
Chapter 9 – 162.
Chapter 10 – 168, 362, 432, 743.
Chapter 11 – 612, 613.
Chapter 12 – 87.
Chapter 13 – 212, 757.
Chapter 15 – 377.
Chapter 17 – 244.
Chapter 19 – 504.
Chapter 20 – 349.
Chapter 21 – 397, 448.
Chapter 22 – 173.
Chapter 23 – 304, 373, 375.
Chapter 24 – 97, 376, 386, 392, 767.
Chapter 26 – 367, 431.

Chapter 27 – 757.
Chapter 28 – 364.
Media – 49, 270, 456, 563.
Medication(s), medicine(s) – 62, 487.
Meditation – 32, 669.
Meek, Meekness – 602.
Melchizedek – 500.
Memory – 8, 340, 428.
Mental challenge – 488.
disorder(s) – 332, 731.
Mercy – 192, 213, 228, 243, 278, 322, 560.
Mercy Ships International – 141, 240.
Message(s) – 51. See also *GOD's Message*.
Messenger(s) – 125. See also *Angel(s)*.
Messiah – see *Christ*.
Micah, the Book of – *Chapter 3* – 586.
Chapter 4 – 386.
Migrant life – 417.
Military – 9, 154, 248.
Mind – 234, 270, 370, 702. See also *Dreams, Thoughts*.
Minister(s) – see *Levite(s)*, *Priest(s)*.
Ministry – 27, 461, 548, 616, 724, 734.
See also *Work(s)*.
Miracle(s) – 244, 276, 630, 643, 648 (defined), 652, 756, 791.
See also *Sign(s)*.
Misogyny – 340.
Mistake – 125.
Monasticism, Monk(s) – 462.
Money – 545, 546, 779.
See also *Giving*, *Loan*, *Mammon, Usury*.
Morality – 330, 620, 644, 661 (defined), 710.
See also all chapters named "Christian Living" in Contents.
"Moral robots" – 280.
Mormons (a.k.a., Latter Days Saints) – 84, 423.
See also *Falsehood*.
Moses – 111.
Mourning – 426, 602, 797.
Murder – 125, 251, 633.
Music – 658.
Muslim(s) – 328. See also *Unbelievers*.

N

Nahum, the Book of – 587.
Name(s) – 61.
Nature – 134, 562. See also *Spiritual Authority*.
Neanderthals – 709.
Near-death experience (NDE) – 86.
New – Heaven & Earth – 16.
Newness of Spirit – 196.
Nineveh, the city of – 119, 587.
Nightmare(s) – 761. See also *Dreams*.
Non-Christian(s) – 266. See also *Unbeliever(s)*.
NPP – "New Perspective on Paul" – 665.
See also *Grace Ambassadors*, *Falsehood*.
Number 153 – 402.
666 – 137.
144.000 – 408.
Numbers, the Book of, *Chapter 5* – 105, 129.
Chapter 8 – 115.
Chapter 6 – 463.
Chapter 15 – 374.
Chapter 16 – 278.
Chapter 17 – 111.
Chapter 18 – 42.
Chapter 19 – 587.
Chapter 20 – 111.
Chapter 21 – 432.
Chapters 22-24 – 552.
Chapter 25 – 437.
Chapter 31 – 560.
Chapter 35 – 45, 456.
Nun(s) – see *Monasticism*.
NWT – New World Translation of the Holy Scriptures – 617.

O

Obedience – 18, 143, 153, 185, 448, 746.
Occult – 530. See also *Paranormal*.
OCD (Obsessive-compulsive disorder) – 288.
Opinion(s) – 445.

Orthodox Church – 422. See also *Denomination(s)*.

P

Pagan(s) – 268. See also *Unbeliever(s)*.
Parables (the reason why) – 72.
defined – 474.
of Jesus – 173, 175, 178, 203–230.
Paradise, Eden – 243, 473, 573.
Parallel(s) – 617.
Paranormal, supernatural, occult – 324.
Parent(s) – 45, 60, 164, 321, 406, 625.
unbelieving – 79, 96.
Parhelion – 791.
Passover – 769.
Past – 406, 571.
Pastor(s) – see *Priest(s)*.
Patching up – see *Spiritual*.
Patience – 191.
Patriot, patriotism – 50, 154, 332.
Pawn shop – 545.
Paul – see his *Epistles* & *Letters* in this Index.
Peace – 603, 678, 743. See also *GOD's Peace*.
Pentagram – 588.
Pentateuch – 686. See also *Bible*.
Perfection – 330, 504, 540.
Persecution(s) – 603, 644.
Personality – see *Character*.
Perversions, sexual – 182, 639, 657, 712. See also *LGBT*.
Peter – 88, 637.
the First Epistle of – *Chapter 1* – 396.
Chapter 3 – 512.
Chapter 5 – 377, 521.
the Second Epistle of – *Chapter 1* – 468.
Chapter 2 – 196.
Chapter 3 – 473.
Pet(s) – see *Animals*.
Philippians, the Epistle to – *Chapter 3* – 395.
Plants – 562, 742. See also *Nature*.
Politeness – 708.
Politics – 261, 332.

Poor in spirit – 115.
Pope – 436.
Pornography – 10, 182, 331, 590. See also *Mind*.
Poverty – 296, 513, 744.
P.O.W., prisoner(s) of war – 772.
Prayer, answered – 24, 151, 175, 194, 271, 338, 339, 397, 398, 458, 478, 525, 761, 796. See also *GOD's Answer*.
Approach – 414, 702, 704.
Backup – 232, 619, 752.
Definition – 578.
Example of – 14.
Faith, of – 26, 253.
Heathen's – 255.
House of – 161.
Intercessory, Backup – 112, 232, 329, 439, 578.
Lord's – 57, 112, 183, 238, 252, 284, 690.
Personal – 269, 485.
Reason – 279, 414.
Repentance, of – 156, 309.
Summary – 765.
Team – 465.
Tongue(s) unknown – 146, 179.
Veil – 71.
Ways – 693, 717.
Preacher, preaching – 25, 30, 236, 481, 632, 659.
Predestination – 507, 723.
Preparation – 173.
Present moment – 763. See also *Time*.
Presuppositions – 726.
Pride – 176, 303, 326, 560, 607, 624.
Priest(s) – 42, 569.
Priorities, sorting out – 15, 216, 226, 227, 425, 591.
Progress – 648.
Promised Land – 341. See also *Israel*.
Proof, proving – 86, 339, 352, 663. See also *Evidence, Science, Testing*.
Property – 639.

Prophecy, exemplified – 273, 757, 759.
Gift of – 146, 180, 528.

time – 302.
True and false – 608.
Prophet(s) – 9, 565, 632, 760.
Prosperity – 6, 540.
Prosperity Preachers – 742.
Protest(s) & protester(s) – 405.
Proverbs, the Book of – *Chapter 6* – 315, 389.
Chapter 9 – 315.
Chapter 14 – 315.
Chapter 15 – 315.
Chapter 16 – 315.
Chapter 17 – 315.
Chapter 24 – 483.
Chapter 25 – 416, 418.
Chapter 26 – 749.
Chapter 27 – 417.
Chapter 30 – 419.
Psalms, the Book of – *Psalm 1* – 795.
Psalm 2 – 792.
Psalm 3 – 793.
Psalm 4 – 794.
Psalm 5 – 796.
Psalm 6 – 797.
Psalm 7 – 798.
Psalm 8 – 799.
Psalm 9 – 800.
Psalm 10 – 792.
Psalm 11 – 116.
Psalm 13 – 800.
Psalm 51 – 156, 392.
Psalm 122 – 323.
Psalm 139 – 784.
Psychological disorders – 150, 288, 731.
Punishment, capital – 95, 131.
GOD's – see *GOD's Punishment*.
Purification, Purity – 116, 462, 560, 587, 699.

Q

Quarrels – 549.
Questioning GOD – 765. See also *Communion with GOD*.

R

Rabbi – see *Teacher*.
Rape – 644.
Rapture – 70, 150.
Rationality – 272.
Ratting – see *Report*.
Reagan, Ronald Wilson – 567.
Reason Godly vs worldly – 133, 635. See also *Common sense*.
Reconciliation – 524.
Regret, remorse – 673.
Rejecting GOD – 657.
Relationship with GOD – 414, 461, 724. See also *Communion*.
Religion(s) – 110, 268, 650, 661, 716.
Remnant of GOD – 555.
Repentance, personal – 7, 44, 155, 156, 214, 220, 243, 277, 309, 318, 319, 352, 584, 593, 673, 714, 723.
family – 597.
national – 163.
See also *Salvation*.
Report (vs ratting) – 46.
Responsibility – 1, 7, 31, 45, 48, 97, 626, 653, 711.
See also *Honesty*.
Resurrection(s) – 246, 250, 253, 307, 396, 459, 755, 758.
See also *GOD's Judgment, Messiah*.
Revelation(s) – see *GOD's Revelation(s)*.
Revelation, the Book of – *Chapter 12* – 408, 759.
Chapter 4 – 776.
Chapter 14 – 37.
Chapter 21 – 751, 776.
Chapter 22 – 751.
Prophecies – 256, 529.
Revenge – 193.
Revival – 449.
Revolution – 449, 567.
Reward – 212.
Righteousness – 173, 447, 458, 466 (Scriptures), 483, 603, 604, 714.
Right Sector – 26, 131.
Rock to build on – 209, 627.
Rod of Correction – 78.
Romans, the Epistle to – *Chapter 1* – 697.

Chapter 3 – 186.
Chapter 5 – 357, 359, 396, 400.
Chapter 4 – 348, 351, 354.
Chapter 7 – 196, 372.
Chapter 8 – 397.
Chapter 10 – 237, 372.
Chapter 11 – 378, 515.
Chapter 14 – 385.
Chapter 15 – 399.
Chapter 16 – 345, 389.
Rules – see *Church*.
Russia – 26, 449, 567. See also *Communism*.

S

Sabbath – 331, 348. See also *Commandments / Fourth*.
Sackcloth – 578.
Sacrifice(s) – 120, 185, 275, 414, 520, 746. See also *Giving*.
Saints – 324.
Samuel, the Second Book of – 113, 202.
Salt – see *Spiritual*.
Salvation: Beginning – 319, 760.
Lost – 680.
Parable of Laborers in Vineyard – 211.
Parable of Prodigal Son – 220.
Possible – 680.
Way of – 58, 68, 77, 116, 247.
See also *Heaven, Repentance*.
Sarcasm – see *GOD's Sarcasm*.
Satan – 3, 36, 50, 94, 159, 234, 270, 280, 293, 329, 331, 334, 341, 370, 489, 585, 615, 629, 646, 662, 727.
See also *Demon(s), Lie(s), Spirit War, Unbelievers*.
Satanist – 667.
Scar(s) – 235.
Science, scientist(s) – 103 (defined), 149, 276, 279, 290, 642, 663, 713.
See also *Anti-science*.
Scriptural (the meaning) – 272, 280, the article "*About the Writer*".
Seaman, seamen – 159.
Second chance – 320, 537, 548, 561, 641.
Second Coming of Christ – 716.
Sect, sectarian(s) – see *Denomination(s)*.

Seeking GOD – 151, 239, 732.
Selah – 136, 793, 794.
Self-pity – 195.
Self-righteousness – 219, 447, 607.
Servant, serving – 211.
Seventh Day Adventist – 121.
Sex – 403, 452, 643, 712.
Shalom – see *GOD's Peace*.
Shame – 197, 635.
Shepherd(s) – 206. See also *Christian Leadership*.
Shiggaion – see *Higgaion*.
Sickness – 11, 62, 235, 653.
Sign(s) – 51, 244, 270.
See also *Miracle(s)*.
Silence, to be silent – 76.
Simplicity – 166.
Sin(s) – 2, 109, 123, 182, 265, 317, 382, 405, 636, 703, 742.
& death – 18.
See also *Evil*.
Sinner, sinful attitude – 137, 277, 593.
Singing in Churches – see *Church / singing*.
Slavery – 211, 539, 560, 700, 736, 748, 761.
Sleep – 246.
Small Group(s) – 47, 286, 413, 445, 531, 569, 595, 606.
Smoker(s), smoking – 501.
Society, social affairs – 261, 737.
Sodom & Gomorrah – 725.
Sola Scriptura – 550.
Solomon – 137, 430.
Song of Songs (the Song of Solomon) – 433.
Songs – 658.
Sons of GOD – 758.
Sophism – 336.
Sorrows – 114, 318, 683.
Soul – 23, 107, 510, 738.
Soviet Union – 449.
Spam & spammer(s) – 494.
Spirit, Holy – see *God Holy Spirit*.
Spirit, human – 23, 106, 115, 116, 171, 510, 640.
Spiritual, Authority, Dominion – 1, 36, 261, 289, 312, 313, 584.
being(s) – 171.

Bread – 551.
captivity – 559.
Cleansing – see *Confession*.
Clothes – 780.
Emptiness (folly, foolishness, stupidity, etc) – 311.
Fire – 310 (Fire Baptism). See also 8 (Hell).
Food – 476.
Fruits & fruitlessness – 203, 223, 638.
Growth – 178, 214.
Hearing – 181, 237, 612, 719.
hunger – 236, 237, 687. See also *Spiritual starvation*.
Leadership – see *Christian Leadership*.
Light – 434, 435.
Power – 274.
patching up – 162, 240.
poison – 551.
Purity – 116.
Salt – 241, 434.
starvation – 171. See also *Spiritual hunger*.
Training – 654.
Vigilance – 463.
Violence – 450.
Washing feet – 34.
Weapons – 367, 444, 634, 654, 750.
wilderness – 558.
World – 159 (defined)
Spirit War – 36, 39, 146, 184, 267, 311, 421, 517, 529, 574, 750, 772.
See also every chapter named "Spirit War" in the Contents.
Sponsor(s) – 54.
Sport(s) – 63.
Stalin – 632.
Stars – 628.
Statement of Faith – 550.
Statistics – 256.
Stealing – 127.
Stranger(s) – 533.
Studying Bible – see *Bible–Study*.
Stupidity – 575 (symbols of).
Suffering(s) – 260, 657, 673, 706.
Suicide – 89, 278.
Supernatural – see *Paranormal*.

Superstitions – 547.
Supplication – 578.
Swearing – 142.
Sword, spiritual – See *Spiritual Weapons*.

T

Taoism – 760.
Talmud – 633.
Tattoo – 537, 669.
Taxes – 513.
Teacher(s) – 104, 139, 304.
Teens – 340, 639.
Temple – 554, 639.
Temptation(s) – 184, 252, 351, 601, 640, 650.
See also *GOD's Test(s)*.
Tertium non datur – 6, 18, 23, 792.
Test(s) – see *GOD's Test*. See also *Temptation(s).*
Testament – see *GOD's Covenant*.
Testimony – 199, 282, 306, 556. See also *Experience*.
Personal – 199, 233, 306, 577.
Testing (proving) – 528, 650. See also *Proof.*
Thanks for meals – 48.
Theft – see *Stealing*.
Theology – 110.
Thessalonians, the First Epistle to – *Chapter 1* – 386.
Chapter 4 – 395.
Thessalonians, the Second Epistle to – *Chapter 3* – 391.
Thomas – 133.
Thought(s) – 32, 36. See also *Mind.*
Threshold – 747.
Time & timing – 30, 68, 101, 413, 585, 621, 646, 673.
Timothy, the First Epistle to – *Chapter 1* – 369, 372.
Chapter 2 – 340, 349.
Chapter 4 – 367, 388, 399.
Chapter 5 – 390, 392, 398.
Timothy, the Second Epistle to – *Chapter 2* – 393.
Chapter 3 – 370.
Tithe(s), Tithing – 6, 42. See also *Giving*.

Titus, the Epistle to – *Chapter 1* – 368.
Chapter 2 – 362.
Chapter 3 – 352.
Tomb – 754.
Tongue – 31, 88, 100, 132, 332, 419, 614.
See also *Blasphemy, Criticism, Lie*.
Tongues, Prayer in – see *Prayer / Tongues*.
Tornado – 233.
Torture – 276. See also *Hell*.
Toxic (plants, berries, mushrooms) – 742.
Transfiguration – see *Jesus*.
Transhuman(ism) – 660.
Translation(s), Bible – 118, 762.
See also *Wording*.
Treasure(s) – 334, 746.
Tree of knowledge of good and evil – 153, 440.
Trinity of GOD – see *GOD's Trinity*.
Human – 108.
Trumpets – 737.
Trust, Faith in action – 486.
Truth – 5, 177, 411, 624, 656.

U

Ugliness – 742.
Ukraine – 26.
“Ultimatum” – 549.
Unbelief, unbelievers – 254, 491, 572, 714.
See also *Damnation*.
See also Contents for “The unbelievers ask.”
Understanding, Good sense – 58, 208, 315, 383, 420, 451, 493, 579, 586, 630.
See also Contents for “Christian Understanding”.
Unemployment – 789.
Unfaithfulness – 98.
Unity of Saints – 43, 80, 84, 124, 531, 581, 582, 743.
See also *Denominationalism*.
with GOD – 739.
Unintentional evil – 155. See also *Evil, Sin*.
Universe – 331, 514.
Usury – 658.

V

Value (human) – 703.
Vegetarian(s) – 74.
Veil – see *Prayer Veil*.
Victory – 53, 592.
Video games – 667.
Virginity – 319.
Virtue(s) – 458. See also *Righteousness*.
Vision(s) – 8, 153, 553.
Voice of GOD, hearing – 181.
Voting – 21, 670.
Vulgarity – 271.

W

War(s) worldly – 9, 300, 576, 678.
War in Heaven – 408. See also *Spirit War*.
Warriors – 411.
Washing feet – see *Spiritual*.
Watchman – 565.
Watchtower Witnesses (a.k.a., J-Witnesses) – 141, 423.
See also *Denomination(s)* & *Falsehood*.
Wealth – 438. See also *Mammon*.
Wife – 147, 452, 540, 588. See also *Christian Family*, *Woman*.
Widowhood – 27, 307, 596.
Wine – 628, 779.
Wisdom – 58, 123, 166, 431, 466, 541, 613.
See also Contents for “Christian Living”.
Witchcraft – 11, 62, 81, 96, 730.
Witness(es) – 125.
Woman, women – 147, 623, 657, 659.
– & Man – 594.
See also *Christian Family*, *Female Ordination*, *Wife*
Wording – 72.
See also *Translation*.
Work(s) – 10, 68, 270, 348, 352, 353, 354, 390, 391, 466.
See also *Employment*, *Ministry*.
Worldliness – 217, 218, 227.
Worldview – 328.

Worship – 537, 631, 643, 654. See also *Communion with GOD*.
Writer – 25, 624.
See also the note “About the Writer” preceding the Index.
WWJD – *What Would Jesus Do?* – 207, 681, 693, 704.

Y

Yeshua – 118.

Z

Zechariah, the Book of – *Chapter 1* – 592.
Chapters 5 & 6 – 594.
Chapter 13 – 753.
Chapter 14 – 741.
Zechariah, Saint – 775.
Zion – 455. See also *Jerusalem*.

To our Publishers

The Reference book *"Q & A – Christian Communion in Questions & Answers"* is not fiction but written down by me, Igor Evgen, following the Guidance of the Holy Ghost and dedicated personally to Christ Jesus.

On this ground, our "Q & A" book is neither copyrighted nor chargeable.

You can, however, issue a *Charity* edition, duly marked as such, the cost of a book copy being a reasonable multiple of 10 in whatever currency.
Kindly avoid pricing ending by .99, .95, and alike.
The world teaches that thus it looks cheaper, but that doesn't sit well with the Law of GOD, the Ninth Commandment in particular.
All the profit received (and remained after all claimed wages paid and expenses made up for) should go to Charity.

The capitalization throughout the text should stay as it is.
Same for the text layout.
Kindly note, in our book, every chapter begins at page top, and not a single phrase got cut at the page break.

Take the most comfortable text size.
Set page margins as you find best.

At the end of this "Q & A" book, leave some pages blank for our readers' notes.

GOD bless you.
Igor Evgen